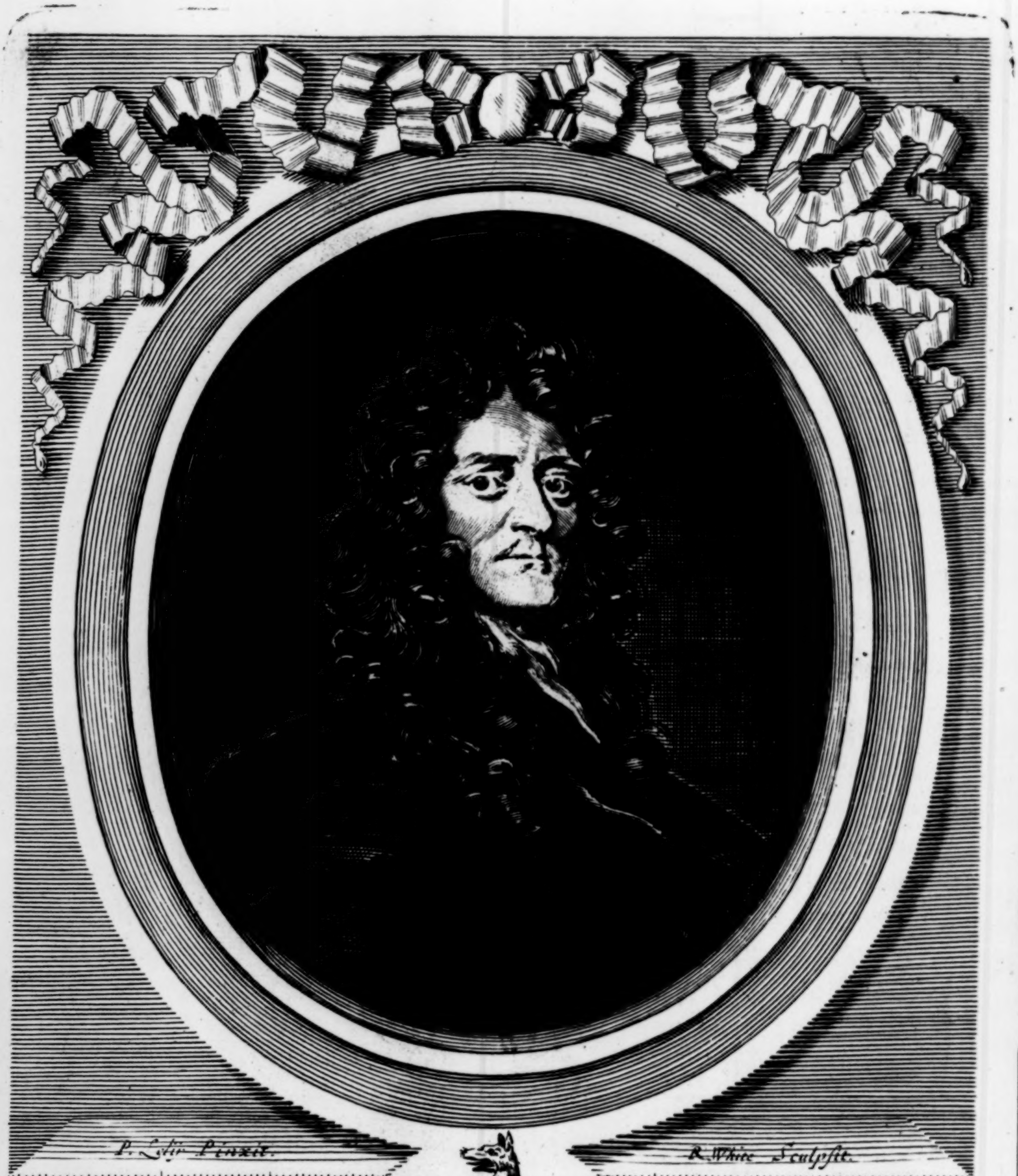
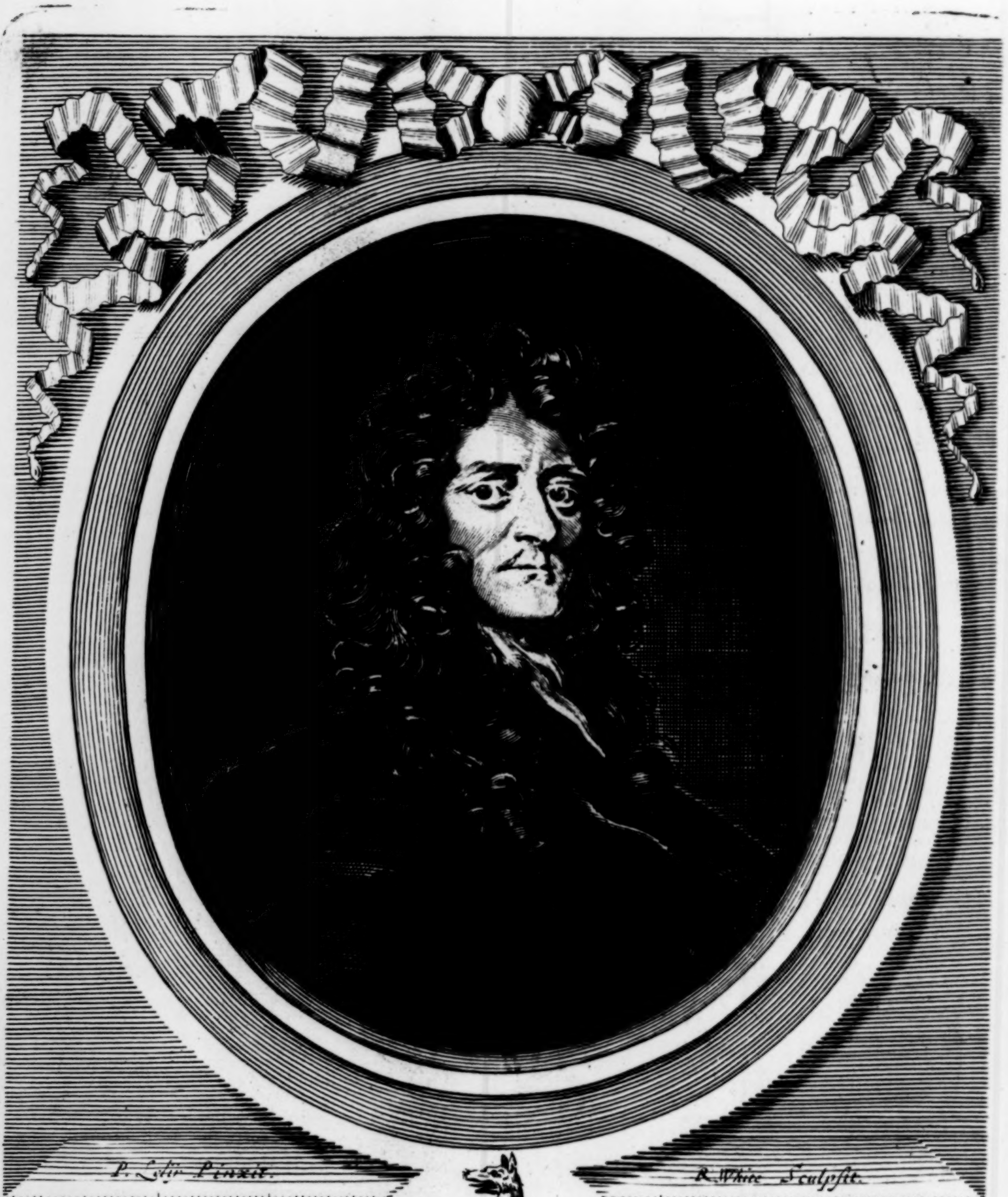


P. Lely Pinxit. R. White Sculpſit.

Sr. Paul Rycaut late Conſul
of Smyrna & Fellow of
the Royall Societie


P. Lely Pinxit.
R. White Sculpsit.

Sr. Paul Rycaut late Consul
of Smyrna & Fellow of
the Royall Societie

THE LIVES OF THE POPES,

From the time of our

Saviour Jeſus Chriſt,

TO THE

REIGN

OF

SIXTUS IV.

Written Originally in Latin, By

BAPTISTA PLATINA, Native of *Cremona*,

And Tranſlated into ENGLISH.

And the ſame Hiſtory continued from the Year 1471. to this
preſent time; wherein the moſt remarkable Paſſages
of Chriſtendom, both in Church and State,
are Treated of and Deſcribed.

By Sir **PAUL RYCAUT**, Kt.

The Second Edition, Corrected.

LONDON,
Printed for *C. Wilkinſon*, and are to be Sold by *A. Churchil*
at the *Black Swan* in *Ave-Mary lane*, 1688.

TO THE

READER.

T*HE Hiſtory of* Platina *of the Lives of the Popes, being rendred into Engliſh by an unknown hand, was delivered to me by the Bookſeller; and conſidering that* Platina *was an Author of good Reputation and Authority in the World, I often wiſhed that he had lived in that Age, in which he might have deduced his Hiſtory from ancient, to the preſent times; or that ſome other of our Learned Men would have continued the ſame in the Language of our own Country; for ſince our Tongue is ſo well refined, and ſo copious, it ought juſtly to comprehend all thoſe Hiſtories, Sciences and Arts, which are related and made known in foreign Languages. But obſerving that this Work was neglected, and not thought worthy the labour of better Pens, I eſſayed to do it in my own rude and plain Style, without affectation or Ornament, more than what the ſimplicity of naked Truth would afford me; in ſearch of which, I have always had recourſe to the beſt, and to the moſt impartial, Authors, who have neither diſguiſed the Vices of Men by flattery, nor out of prejudice branded thoſe Actions with ſhame and obloquy, which might have admitted of a fairer Character. Nor have I mixed any thing of Religion in this Hiſtory, but where the nature of the Relation could not ſubſiſt without it: For in regard the Court, and not the Church of* Rome, *is the ſubject on which I treat, I have made the Points of Religion accidental only to the following Diſcourſes.*

But as to Platina *himſelf,* Trithemius, *in his Treatiſe of Eccleſiaſtical Writers, gives him this Character.*

He was born (ſays he) at Cremona, *was Breviary to the Pope, and a Man learned in all Sciences, he was an excellent Philoſopher, and a famous Orator, of an acute and ready Wit, and perſuaſive Eloquence; he was couragious, and ſo conſtant to his Principles, that under Pope* Paul II. *he was deprived of his Eſtate, and Preferments, and after having endured the Rack or Torture, he was cruelly caſt into Priſon, where he remained during the Reign of this* Paul II. *afterwards he was ſet at liberty by* Sixtus IV. *to whom he Dedicated this following Hiſtory of the Popes. He died at* Rome *of the Plague, Aged 60 years,* A. D. 1481. Frederick III. *being Emperor, and* Sixtus IV. *being Pope.*

AN INTRODUCTION
To the following
HISTORY.

THIS continuation of *Platina* (the ſubject of which is the Lives and Reigns of the Popes,) is a Treatiſe purely Hiſtorical, collected from ſeveral *Latin*, *French*, and *Italian* Authors: Whoſe Deſign being ſolely to tranſmit matter of Fact to Poſterity, did not intermeddle with points of Religion, but as they accidentally occurred in the connexion of Hiſtory, there being a vaſt difference between the Church of *Rome*, and the Court of *Rome*.

To this later Notion, which conſiſts of a Pope, who is Sovereign, and of Seventy Cardinals, or more, who are his Counſellors, beſides a great number of Prelats, we ſhall confine our Diſcourſe. And whereas the Pope is a Prince, who hath a Temporal Dominion under his Government, and Juriſdiction; it is no wonder if he, and the Creatures, and Confidents who attend him in all his Counſels, ſhould act by Maximes purely Civil, and Political: Whence it is, that Popes are approached with ſo much more awe, and profound Reverence, than is performed towards Kings and Emperors, becauſe the Spiritual comes in to maintain and uphold the Authority of the Temporal, and both,being united,do mutually ſupport each other: Hence proceed all the flatteries uſed in that Court, all the contrivances which Ambition can ſuggeſt to raiſe Families, and make thoſe great who are in Authority. And in ſhort, nothing is omitted, which the Wit of Man, and the Artifices of the moſt refined Heads in the World, (ſuch as thoſe are at *Rome*) can deviſe,to conſerve and exalt the Intereſt and Authority of that Court.

The Original of Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction.

The Original of this Juriſdiction, which is increaſed to ſuch a degree of Power and Greatneſs, as is become ſuſpected by Kings, and formidable to its People, ſprang at firſt from thoſe words of our Saviour to his Apoſtles, *Whoſe ſins ye ſhall forgive on Earth ſhall be forgiven in Heaven, and whoſe ſins ye ſhall bind on Earth ſhall be bound in Heaven :* The which large and extenſive priviledge was attended with a Commiſſion to feed Chriſt's Flock, to preach the Goſpel, and to adminiſter the Sacraments, and with an exhortation to all the faithful to love one the other, and to pardon and forgive each other their offences. The Primitive Church, which was always zealous to reconcile the Brethren, and procure pardon of the Offender, from the Perſon Offended, did ordain, according to the Epiſtle of S. *Paul* to the *Corinthians*, that the Saints or Chriſtians ſhould not maintain a proceſs of Law one againſt the other at the Bar, or Tribunals, of Infidels, but that they ſhould rather appoint and conſtitute ſome of the Faithful, who were Men of approved Wiſdom and Integrity, to hear, and examine, and determine all their differences. This manner of Trial was certainly ſubmitted unto with great charity of the both parties, and with an unbiaſſed ſentence of the Judg; for the firſt had no power over them to enforce execution, unleſs the conſtraint of their own Conſciences, which bore witneſs that the adjudgment was from God: Nor did the Eccleſiaſtical Judg pronounce Sentence without regret, ſorrow, and grief for the Delinquent, as appears by the words of St. *Paul*, 2 *Cor. Chap.* 2. where the ſorrow of the Offender is ſaid to be ſo great, as to require Comfort; and that the Judg alſo did partake in the like affliction and anguiſh of heart with him.

1 Cor. cap. 6.

This diſpenſation of the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures, being a work of great Charity, was an Office only proper for ſuch as had attained to a good eſteem for Piety, and to the degree and dignity of a Biſhop. But as the Faithful increaſed, and the Churches became numerous, ſo the deliberations on Cauſes were too heavy and burdenſom for the Biſhop alone; and therefore, though the Bills and Proceſſes at Law were received by the hands of the Biſhop, they were yet afterwards transferred to the conſideration of the Ancients, who were called *Presbyters*, which being digeſted by them, received their ultimate determination and ſentence from the General Aſſembly of the Church; the which practice was in uſe in the year of our Lord 250. as appears by the Epiſtles of St. *Cyprian*, wherein he writes to the Presbyters of his Dioceſs of *Carthage*, that he intended not to act in any thing without the Counſel and Advice of them, and Conſent of the People, and that he would examine the Cauſes, and the Merits thereof in their Preſence: And moreover, he reproves certain Prieſts for their irregular Proceedings in caſes of Judgment, threatning to give an account thereof unto the People. This Charity and Plain dealings of the Biſhops gained them ſuch reputation, that their Advice and Sentence was almoſt in all matters followed, and admitted by the People, whoſe charity in after-Ages growing cold, and careleſs of the mutual good and benefit each of other, came by degrees to caſt off this burdenſom Office of Judgment, and to remit it ſolely to the Incumbence of the Biſhop, who, alſo degenerating from the primitive Humility, eaſily gave way to the allurements of Ambition, and under the diſguiſe of Charity and Virtue embraced the Authority of paſſing Sentence without the aſſiſtence, or conſultation with co-ordinate Judges. So ſoon as the perſecutions ceaſed, great loads of buſineſs, Caſes, and Trials at Law devolved upon the Biſhop, ſo that then he was forced to erect a Tribunal of Juſtice, and contrive Methods, and Rules for Judicial proceedings: Howſoever, in thoſe times of ſimplicity and innocence, things were not ſo wholly corrupted, but that though the ancient Diſcipline of remitting matters to the determination of the Church did ceaſe, yet ſincerity and uprightneſs in paſſing Sentence ſtill continued. The which when *Conſtantine* the Emperor obſerved, and conſidered the great difference there was between the captious and litigious proceedings of ſecular Advocates and Proctors, who made Law-ſuits and wranglings their benefit and Trade, and the honeſt and conſcientious methods, and determinations of the Clergy; he ordained, that the Sentence of the Biſhop ſhould be definitive and without Appeal, with power to grant an Injunction to all proceedings at Common-Law, in caſe the party aggrieved ſhould deſire to have recourſe to the Epiſcopal Judgment, and Juriſdiction in his Caſe.

Hence it came to paſs, that the Sentence of the Biſhop was made a Judgment of Court, and put in execution by the hands of the ſecular Magiſtrate: And this Juriſdiction was farther amplified and increaſed in the year 365. by the Decree of the Emperor *Valens*. But the extent of this Authority, eſtabliſhed

The degrees by which the greatneſs of the Clergy did ariſe.

ed by the Law of *Conſtantine*, being afterwards abuſed by the corruption of ſucceeding Biſhops, was recalled by the Emperors *Arcadius* and *Honorius*, and confined to Cauſes purely Religious, without Courts or formal Proceſſes of Law, and without Power to intermeddle in Civil differences, unleſs the parties concerned ſhould on both ſides agree to remit their caſe by way of Arbitration, or compromiſe, to the Sentence of the Biſhop. But in regard the Biſhops of R*ome* had for a long time been powerful in that City, little notice was taken of this Injunction until in the year 452. it was again enforced, and renewed by *Valentinian* the Emperor. But not long afterwards, the ſucceeding Emperors reſtored part of that Authority which had been taken from them, and *Juſtinian* again erected their Courts of Judicature, to which he aſſigned all Cauſes about Religion, complaints and differences between the Clergy, Eccleſiaſtical Fines and Forfeitures, with power to determine Caſes between Lay-perſons, who ſhould by way of Umpirage, or Arbitration, refer themſelves to the Epiſcopal Court: And in this manner did that charitable correction, and that plain and ſincere way of ending and compoſing differences between Brethren, inſtituted by Chriſt Jeſus, begin to degenerate into that Dominion, which our Saviour had forbidden to his Apoſtles.

And farther to ſtrengthen and confirm this Epiſcopal Authority, ſo ſoon as the Empire was divided and that the Weſtern Provinces were ſeparated from the Eaſtern Dominions; then were many of the Biſhops taken into the Councils of Princes, whereby the Secular Power being annexed to their Spiritual Capacity, ſerved much to advance and raiſe the reputation, and Authority of the Epiſcopal Dignity: So that two hundred years had not paſſed in this manner, before the Biſhops arrogated to themſelves a Power to judge the Clergy in all Caſes both Criminal, and Civil; and to extend their Juriſdiction farther, they framed a Term called *Mixed Actions*, in which the Biſhop, as well as the Secular Magiſtrate might grant Proceſs; that is, in matters where the Judge had not been diligent, or cold, and remiſs, or dilatory in his proceedings, then the Biſhop might take the Cauſes out of his hands: By which pretence and uſurpation little buſineſs remained for the Secular Courts. And farther, by virtue hereof they eſtabliſhed a general, ſtanding Rule, as unalterable, as a fundamental of Faith: That in Caſes where the Magiſtrate was remiſs, or delayed to do Juſtice, thoſe Cauſes did *ipſo facto* devolve to the cognizance of the Biſhop. Had the Prelats ſtuck at this point, and not proceeded farther, it had been pretty tolerable; for then a Power might have remained ſtill in the hands of the Civil Magiſtrate, to moderate and retrench the exceſſes of Eccleſiaſtical encroachments, as occaſion ſerved: But thoſe, who had impoſed this yoak on the People, thought fit for their own ſecurity, to rivet it in ſuch manner about their necks, that it could never be ſhaken off again; having to that purpoſe forged a principle in their own Shops, under the Title of a Fundamental point of Faith. That *the Biſhops Power of judging in Cauſes, as well Temporal as Spiritual, took not its Original and Authority from the Decrees, or connivence of Emperors, or from the Will and Pleaſure of the People, or by Cuſtom, or Preſcription; but from a right inherent in the Epiſcopal Dignity, and conferred thereupon by the inſtitution of Chriſt himſelf.* As appears in the Hiſtory of the Council of *Trent* wrote by Father *Paul Sarpi.*

This was certainly a bold and an hardy Aſſertion, which could ſo eaſily have been refuted by thoſe, who had read the Codes of *Theodoſius*, and *Juſtinian*, with the Capitularies of *Charles* the Great, and Conceſſions and Ordinances of ſucceeding Princes, both of the Eaſtern and Weſtern Empire: In Reading and Conſidering which, a Man muſt be ſtrangely blind, or ſtupid, who cannot obſerve, by what ways and methods, the exceſs and exorbitance of Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction was introduced into the World. And indeed, it is ſtrange to conſider, that on the bare foundation of that Spiritual Power to bind and looſe, given by Chriſt to his Church; and by that Ordinance of St. *Paul* to compoſe differences between the Brethren and prevent their going to Law before Infidels, ſhould by a long tract of time, and by ſeveral Artifices, and ſubtil Contrivances, be erected a Temporal Tribunal, the moſt extenſive, and moſt conſiderable of any that ever was in the World, and that, in the midſt of divers Kingdoms and Principalities of *Europe*, there ſhould be another State eſtabliſhed, independent on the Publick; which is ſuch a Model and form of Political Government, as never any of the Antient Legiſlators could ever fancy, or imagine to be conſiſtent with the Sovereignty of a Temporal Prince.

But

The difficulties which the Clergy met in making themſelves great.

But ſuch a Government as this, was long in growing, and required much time to bring it to a maturity, becauſe many difficulties interpoſed in the way. For in the firſt place, the very foundation of Chriſtianity, which was Humility, was diametrically oppoſite to Grandeur and Dominion: Then the Popes were choſen by the People, to whom they were accountable for all their adminiſtrations, and to the Clergy for their ſoundneſs in Faith, and Orthodox Doctrine; for which reaſon Pope *Eugenius* the firſt was Interdicted by the Clergy from celebrating Divine Service in *Santa Maria Maggiore*, until he had diſclaimed publickly the Hereſie he held of one Operation or Will in Chriſt; the Aſſertors of which were called *Monothelites*; and this choice of the People required a confirmation from the Emperor, before the Pope could be legally inveſted in his Authority; the which is apparent in all Hiſtory; and in regard the Seat of the Emperors was far diſtant, a Power was delegated to the Exarch of *Ravenna*, to confirm the Suffrages of the People, in caſe the Perſon they had choſen was not obnoxious, or diſpleaſing to the Emperor: And ſo it was, when *Severinus* was made Pope, that *Iſaacius*, the Exarch of *Italy*, made a Journey to *Rome* to Confirm him, though before his departure he plundered the *Lateran* of its Treaſures: In which attempt, though he was oppoſed by ſome of the Clergy, yet his Soldiers being too ſtrong for them, he carried away his prize, upon a pretence that it was unreaſonable the Clergy ſhould grow rich, and the State poor; and that they ſhould amaſs vaſt ſums into their Coffers, when the Soldiers, who were their defence, and guard, were miſerably neceſſitous, and in a ſtarving condition.

Nor had the See of *Rome* leſs difficulty in its advancement, by reaſon of the long diſputes and contentions between That, and the Church of *Conſtantinople* for precedency; to which ſeveral Princes gave encouragement, who aſſerted, that the Supremacy ought to be lodged at that place, which was accounted and eſteemed the Capital Seat of the Empire: On the other ſide, the *Roman* Biſhops termed *Conſtantinople* but a Colony of *Rome*, ſince the *Greeks* themſelves ſtyled their Prince Τῶν Ῥωμαίων Αὐτοκράτορα, the Emperor of the *Romans*; and the *Conſtantinopolitans* themſelves even in that age were called *Romans*, and not *Greeks*: The which Controverſie remained undecided until the time of *Boniface* the third, who, by great interceſſion, and a powerful intereſt, obtain'd of the Emperor *Phocas*, that the See of *Rome* ſhall be acknowledged, and ſtyled the Head of all the Churches.

The Popes depended on the Emperor.

But notwithſtanding this priviledg given to the See of *Rome*, the Popes continued ſtill in their dependence on the Emperor's Confirmation, without which, their Election was not valid. And though in the time of *Mauritius* the Emperor, *Pelagius* the 2d. was made Biſhop of *Rome* without the Imperial Conſent and Confirmation; and though the ſame was excuſed by a cauſe of neceſſity occaſioned by the Siege which the *Lombards* had laid to the City; yet the Emperor was much diſpleaſed with this encroachment upon his Prerogative, until ſuch time as *Gregory* a Deacon, a Perſon of great Piety and Learning, was ſent to *Conſtantinople* to appeaſe his anger.

In this manner the Popes depended on the Emperor's pleaſure for their Confirmation, until about the year 705. when *Benedict* the 2d. was created Pope, a Perſon of ſo much Piety and Virtue, and of Compaſſion towards the Poor, that he gained an Eſteem and Veneration from all People of what degree ſoever; and ſo great was his Renown, that the report of his Virtue and Devotion reaching the Ears of the Emperor; he conceived ſuch an high Opinion of his Sanctity, that he ſent him a Decree, whereby he ordained and eſtabliſhed, that for the time to come, He whom the Clergy and People of *Rome* ſhould chuſe Pope, ſhould be immediately acknowledged, without recourſe to the Authority of the Emperour, or his Exarchs, according to former Cuſtom, when the Confirmation of the Emperor, or his Lieutenant in *Italy*, was eſteemed neceſſary to the eſtabliſhment of a Pope.

How the Temporal Power was derived to the Popes.

But whence this Temporal Power was derived in its firſt Original to the Popes, hath been an enquiry of divers Authors: There are thoſe, who pretend a Donation from the Emperor *Conſtantine*, by which the City of *Rome* itſelf, moſt part of *Italy*, *Africa*, and all the Iſlands of the *Mediterranean* Seas were conferred upon them. But this Opinion is exploded by *Guicciardin*, an Author without exception in this caſe. And moreover, in all Hiſtory theſe particulars are very clear and apparent, as namely, That during the Exarchate, the Popes had nothing to do with the Temporal Sword, but lived as Subjects to the Emperor. That after the overthrow of the Exarchate, the Emperors neglecting *Italy*, the *Romans* began to be Governed by the Advice and Power of the Popes. That

Pepin of *France* having ſubdued the Kingdom of the *Lombards*, gave unto Pope *Gregory* the 3d. and his Succeſſors *Ravenna*, *Urbin*, *Ancona*, *Spoleto*, with many other Towns and Territories about *Rome*: In Teſtimony and Remembrance of which there remains unto this day, a Marble Stone ingraven in *Latin*, with this Inſcription thereupon, and Engliſhed thus: *Pepin the moſt pious King of* France *was the firſt who gave example to Poſterity, how, and in what manner, the Power and Authority of Holy Church was to be amplified and increaſed.* After which, *Charlemagne*, or *Charles* the Great, the Son of *Pepin*, having made his entrance into *Rome* in the time of Pope *Adrian* the firſt, confirmed by Oath, and amply enlarged the Donation which his Father *Pepin* had made to *Gregory* the 3d. which, as our *Platina* ſaith, *contained in* Liguria, *all that reaches from the long ſince demoliſhed City* Luna *to the* Alps, *the Iſle of* Corſica, *and the whole Tract between* Luca *and* Parma, *together with* Friuli, *the Exarchate of* Ravenna, *and the Dukedoms of* Spoleto *and* Beneventum. And though the Popes having this Temporal Power began to ſet up for themſelves, maintaining, That the Pontifical Dignity was to give Laws to the Emperors, and not to receive them: Yet this Doctrine was not openly aſſerted, during the Reign of *Charlemagne*, who challenged and exerciſed the Antient and Original Power to Govern the Church, to call Councils, and to order the Papal Election. The which Power continued for a long time in his Poſterity, and ſo afterwards remained, ſo long as wiſe and valiant Princes Ruled; but when weak Princes, who were diſtracted with great and dangerous Wars Governed, then the Popes prevailed, who were ſtrong in their Councils, being for the moſt part compoſed of ſubtil and deſigning Men: Howſoever, theſe turns of Fortune were carried in ſucceeding times with various changes and ſucceſſes: The Emperor ſomtimes tugging, and plucking from the Pope, and the Pope from the Emperor, winning, or loſing ground, as they were endued with Abilities, Courage, and Underſtanding; or as the circumſtances of the World were ordered and diſpoſed in different times. So *Hadrian* the 3d. was a Man of ſo great a Spirit, that immediately upon his advance to the Popedom, *Anno* 895. He propoſed to the Senate and People, that a Law ſhould paſs, that no regard ſhould be hereafter given to the Authority of the Emperor in the creation of a Pope: Taking, as *Platina* ſaith, an advantage when the Emperor

ror *Charles* was marched with his Army out of *Italy* againſt the rebellious *Normans*. This muſt have been *Charles le Gros*, and the year 885. according to thoſe Authors who have written the Hiſtory of *France*.

Charles the *Bald* reſigns the power of Election of the Emperor to the Pope.

But that which muſt have given this Pope courage herein, was the weakneſs of *Charles the Bald*, a Prince bold in his undertakings, but unable in the execution of them, for ſo ſoon as he received information of the death of the Emperor *Lewis* the 2d. he reſolved to ſeize the Empire, which at that time was confined to the narrow compaſs of *Rome*, and all *Italy*; becauſe his two Uncles had miſerably rent the *French* Monarchy in pieces, and divided between them after the death of *Lotharius* thoſe two Kingdoms which belonged unto him. But to be ſhort, *Charles the Bald*, in order to his deſign, raiſed all the Troops he was able, and on a ſudden paſſing the *Alps*, he ſo ſurprized the *Lombards*, that, not being provided of a Force to reſiſt, they preſently yielded themſelves unto him; and therewith the Treaſure of *Lewis* deceaſed, which he ſo well employed at *Rome*, that he corrupted therewith both the Senate and the Magiſtrates, and promiſed great matters to Pope *John* the 8th, if by his means he might obtain the Imperial Crown. This Pope, whom we call Pope *Joan*, (the Story of whom, being a Woman, and with Child, is related by divers Authors, and not wholly diſbelieved by our *Platina*) acting according to the falſe Wiſdom of this World, as appears in many particulars, of which *Baronius* accuſes him, (or her,) thought fit to make advantage of this ambition of *Charles*, that thereby he might for the future procure a right to Popes to Elect and Create Emperors. But our *Platina* ſaith, it was *John* the *9th*. but be it *John* the 8th, or the 9th. he conferred with the Barons and principal Lords of *Rome* on this point, who being already prepared by the bribes of *Charles*, and overjoyed to become Electors, eaſily concurred with the Pope in the propoſal he made to them in favour of *Charles*; who being accordingly invited to *Rome*, made his entry there, on the 18*th* of *December*, in the year of our Lord 856, and on the 25*th* day following, being *Chriſtmas* day, the Pope Proclaimed and Crowned him Emperor in *St. Peter's* Church, with the conſent of the Prelates, Chief of the Clergy, and all the People of *Rome*.

Pepin of *France* having ſubdued the Kingdom of the *Lombards*, gave unto Pope *Gregory* the 3d. and his Succeſſors *Ravenna*, *Urbin*, *Ancona*, *Spoleto*, with many other Towns and Territories about *Rome*: In Teſtimony and Remembrance of which there remains unto this day, a Marble Stone ingraven in *Latin*, with this Inſcription thereupon, and Engliſhed thus: *Pepin the moſt pious King of* France *was the firſt who gave example to Poſterity, how, and in what manner, the Power and Authority of Holy Church was to be amplified and increaſed.* After which, *Charlemagne*, or *Charles* the Great, the Son of *Pepin*, having made his entrance into *Rome* in the time of Pope *Adrian* the firſt, confirmed by Oath, and amply enlarged the Donation which his Father *Pepin* had made to *Gregory* the 3d. which, as our *Platina* ſaith, *contained in* Liguria, *all that reaches from the long ſince demoliſhed City* Luna *to the* Alps, *the Iſle of* Corſica, *and the whole Tract between* Luca *and* Parma, *together with* Friuli, *the Exarchate of* Ravenna, *and the Dukedoms of* Spoleto *and* Beneventum. And though the Popes having this Temporal Power began to ſet up for themſelves, maintaining, That the Pontifical Dignity was to give Laws to the Emperors, and not to receive them: Yet this Doctrine was not openly aſſerted, during the Reign of *Charlemagne*, who challenged and exerciſed the Antient and Original Power to Govern the Church, to call Councils, and to order the Papal Election. The which Power continued for a long time in his Poſterity, and ſo afterwards remained, ſo long as wiſe and valiant Princes Ruled; but when weak Princes, who were diſtracted with great and dangerous Wars Governed, then the Popes prevailed, who were ſtrong in their Councils, being for the moſt part compoſed of ſubtil and deſigning Men: Howſoever, theſe turns of Fortune were carried in ſucceeding times with various changes and ſucceſſes: The Emperor ſomtimes tugging, and plucking from the Pope, and the Pope from the Emperor, winning, or loſing ground, as they were endued with Abilities, Courage, and Underſtanding; or as the circumſtances of the World were ordered and diſpoſed in different times. So *Hadrian* the 3d. was a Man of ſo great a Spirit, that immediately upon his advance to the Popedom, *Anno* 895. He propoſed to the Senate and People, that a Law ſhould paſs, that no regard ſhould be hereafter given to the Authority of the Emperor in the creation of a Pope: Taking, as *Platina* ſaith, an advantage when the Emperor *Charles* was marched with his Army out of *Italy* againſt the rebellious *Normans*. This muſt have been *Charles le Gros*, and the year 885. according to thoſe Authors who have written the Hiſtory of *France*.

Charles the *Bald* reſigns the power of Election of the Emperor to the Pope.

But that which muſt have given this Pope courage herein, was the weakneſs of *Charles the Bald*, a Prince bold in his undertakings, but unable in the execution of them, for ſo ſoon as he received information of the death of the Emperor *Lewis* the 2d. he reſolved to ſeize the Empire, which at that time was confined to the narrow compaſs of *Rome*, and all *Italy*; becauſe his two Uncles had miſerably rent the *French* Monarchy in pieces, and divided between them after the death of *Lotharius* thoſe two Kingdoms which belonged unto him. But to be ſhort, *Charles the Bald*, in order to his deſign, raiſed all the Troops he was able, and on a ſudden paſſing the *Alps*, he ſo ſurprized the *Lombards*, that, not being provided of a Force to reſiſt, they preſently yielded themſelves unto him; and therewith the Treaſure of *Lewis* deceaſed, which he ſo well employed at *Rome*, that he corrupted therewith both the Senate and the Magiſtrates, and promiſed great matters to Pope *John* the 8th, if by his means he might obtain the Imperial Crown. This Pope, whom we call Pope *Joan*, (the Story of whom, being a Woman, and with Child, is related by divers Authors, and not wholly disbelieved by our *Platina*) acting according to the falſe Wiſdom of this World, as appears in many particulars, of which *Baronius* accuſes him, (or her,) thought fit to make advantage of this ambition of *Charles*, that thereby he might for the future procure a right to Popes to Elect and Create Emperors. But our *Platina* ſaith, it was *John* the *9th.* but be it *John* the 8th, or the 9th. he conferred with the Barons and principal Lords of *Rome* on this point, who being already prepared by the bribes of *Charles*, and overjoyed to become Electors, eaſily concurred with the Pope in the propoſal he made to them in favour of *Charles*; who being accordingly invited to *Rome*, made his entry there, on the 18*th* of *December*, in the year of our Lord 856, and on the 25*th* day following, being *Chriſtmas* day, the Pope Proclaimed and Crowned him Emperor in *St. Peter's* Church, with the conſent of the Prelates, Chief of the Clergy, and all the People of *Rome*.

But leſt this aſſumption of *Charles* to the Empire ſhould ſeem to proceed from a right of Succeſſion, and not of Election, like the other three *French* Emperors his Predeceſſors: The Pope deſigning to put the matter out of diſpute, that ſo the Emperor might own his Title to be derived from him, and his Nobles, and no other; he held an Aſſembly at *Pavia*, compoſed of Biſhops and Counts, where having firſt ſhamefully flatter'd him with praiſes of notorious falſity, extolling him above *Charlemagne*; he declared, that his Election was an effect of his Merit and Piety, and agreeable to the Will of God, which had long before been revealed to Pope *Nicolas*, by Divine inſpiration: And in purſuance hereof, the Act of Election was Signed, and Confirmed by the whole Aſſembly, and regiſtred in the Books of that Court. In this manner the right of thoſe who were deſcended from *Charlemagne*, and the Sovereignty which the Emperors had until that time exerciſed in *Rome*, and in all the Lands of the Eccleſiaſtical State, was ſurrendred up into the hands, and power of the Pope: In Virtue of which, as it is moſt certain, that ſeveral ſucceeding Popes did challenge a right of creating Emperors, or at leaſt to the confirmation of them, by that right which they had to Crown them: So alſo it is apparent, that there have been Emperors, who after this time have exerciſed a Sovereign Power in *Italy*, and without regard to the baſe condeſcenſion of *Charles* the *Bald*, have made themſelves Maſters of *Rome*, and of the Pope himſelf. An example whereof we have in *Otho* the Emperor, who recovered three advantageous points, which the *Greek* and *French* Emperors had enjoyed, and which *Charles* the *Bald* had loſt and betrayed to the Pope. Namely, 1. The Sovereign Power in *Rome* itſelf. 2. The Right of Succeſſion of his Children to the Empire. 3dly. A Power to Elect a Pope, or, what amounts to the ſame thing, a Right to hinder any from being choſen, who was not agreeable to his good Will or Pleaſure: Nay farther, it is apparent in Hiſtory, that the Popes themſelves, as well as others, did take the Oath of Fidelity, as it was adminiſtred to them, by the Emperor's Commiſſioners: And it is as certain, that from the time that *Juſtinian* recovered *Rome* from the *Goths*, the Emperors were ever Maſters of the Election in ſuch manner, as that either it could not paſs without his permiſſion, or, being done, required his confirmation. Accordingly *Otho* the 3d. cauſed *Bruno* his near Kinſman, Son of *Otho*, Duke of *Franconia* and *Suabia*, his own Couſin-German, to be choſen Pope, who took upon himſelf the Name of *Gregory* the 5th. But at length, by other turns of Fortune, *Hildebrand*, who was *Gregory* the 7th in the Year 1073. raiſed the Papacy to the higheſt pitch of Power and Honour that ever it was in. Upon conſideration of which whole matter, it is certain, that the Pope had ſome Right in the Election of the Emperor: For when the Kingdom of *Italy*, with *Rome* it ſelf, was united to the *Teutonick* or *German* Kingdom, and that, by the Donation of *Pepin*, the Popes were Maſters of the Exarchate, *Urbin*, *Ancona*, *Spoleto*, and other Towns and Countries, and confirmed by *Charles*, his Son; then the Pope himſelf, repreſenting the people of *Rome*, by his Legats with the Princes, Lords, and Deputies of the Towns of *Italy*, had a privilege of giving his Votes at thoſe Elections: and on no other Foundation than this could the Pope pretend to a Right of Electing Emperors, nor in any other manner than as he was Prince over a Dominion which had a Right of Election in concurrence with other States, Princes, and Feudataries of the Empire. But when, and in what manner, and by what Methods afterwards this power of Election came to be transferred to the ſeven Electors, is not very clear in Hiſtory, there being many and various Conjectures thereupon. *Maimbourg*, in his Hiſtory called *La Decadence de l'Empire*; concludes, That this Inſtitution was eſtabliſhed by the Authority of *Gregory* the 10th, in the Year 1274. And farther he proceeds to ſay.

How the Election of Emperours was transferred to the ſeven Electors.

That the ſecond Pope, from whom we may conjecture that this Authority was derived, was *Leo* the 8th, who, by a Decree, made by and with the Conſent of the Clergy and People of *Rome*, gives and grants unto the Emperor *Otho* the firſt, and to thoſe who ſhould ſucceed him, a Right for ever to chuſe a Succeſſor: And certainly he could not mean a Succeſſor to the Kingdom of *Germany*, which was hereditary, and independent of the *Roman* See, and therefore it can only have Reference to the Imperial Dignity. Now, whereas, by the Deceaſe of *Otho* the 3d, who died without Iſſue, this Right of the Emperor devolved to the States, who ſucceeded to the Sovereign Authority; for it is a ſure Maxim, That the King cannot die: They therefore challenged and appropriated to themſelves the ſame Right of chuſing Emperors, the which afterwards they reſigned, and transferred to the ſeven Electors, who exerciſe the ſame power unto this day; three of which, *viz. Mentz*, *Triers*, and *Colen* are Eccleſiaſticks, being Archbiſhops and Arch-Chancellours, to ſhew and keep in remembrance, that the Eccleſiaſtical State had once a Right in the Election of Emperors. But Hiſtorians are ſo much at variance in this point, and relate it with ſuch variety, that we ſhall not ſearch farther into this matter, but proceed to our purpoſe of the Election of Popes, and of the formality therein uſed in this Age.

We have, in our foregoing Diſcourſe, mentioned, that Popes were antiently choſen by the Nobility, Clergy, and People of *Rome*, which was certainly the original Cuſtom. Though the Book of the Sacred Ceremonies uſed in the Church of *Rome*, tells us, , That St. *Peter* named *Clemens* for his Succeſſour, ‘provided, that it might ſo ſeem good to the Senators of the ‘*Roman* Church, that is, to the *Presbyters*; of which St. *Peter* ‘had conſtituted a College of Twenty four before his Death, ‘with Power and Authority to decide and determine all ‘Matters of Difficulty ariſing in the Church. The which ‘*Presbyters*, having little or no regard to the Nomination, ‘and Appointment of St. *Peter*, choſe *Linus*, and after him ‘*Cletus*, and then *Clemens* ſucceeded, who was rather recommended than choſen by St. *Peter*; that ſo it might more ‘plainly appear, that Popes had not a Right to elect their ‘Succeſſours; for if that privilege was denied to St. *Peter*, ‘much more ought it to be unto thoſe who ſucceeded him. ‘Theſe Twenty four *Presbyters* were, in the time of Pope *Sylveſter* the Firſt, called *Cardinals*, that is, Princes in the Church; ‘on whom *Innocent* the 4th, at the Council of *Lions*, beſtowed ‘the red Hat, as a Mark and Badge of their Dignity: Afterwards, Schiſms and Diſſenſions ariſing amongſt the Senators, ‘the Clergy and People of *Rome* were admitted to be preſent ‘at the Election, but to have no Voice, or Suffrage therein: ‘Afterwards, the Force and Violence of the People was ſuch, ‘that they would have a Voice, and concur with others in ‘their Votes. This popular way of Election cauſed ſuch ‘heats and diſturbances, that the Emperors were conſtrained ‘for keeping the Peace, to interpoſe by their Authority, and to ‘Order, That no Election ſhould ſtand good, until it was confirmed by the Imperial Approbation. The Kingdom of the ‘*Lombards* being overthrown in the year 776, the *Roman* Em-

Presbyters called *Cardinals*, and when

‘pire was tranſlated from the *Greek* to the *German* Princes, and then *Charles* the Great aſſumed and exerciſed this Power of electing, or what is all one, the confirming of Popes. Afterwards a Series of pious Emperors ſucceeding, and conſidering, That the ſupreme Biſhop was Inſtituted and Ordained by Chriſt himſelf to be a Shepherd to the Emperor, as well as to feed his other Flock, and to purge, and ſpiritually to judge them, they renounced the power of confirming Popes, and entirely transferred it to the *Roman Presbyters*, the Clergy and the People. This popular manner of Election produced Parties, Schiſms, and Contentions, which often broke forth into Blood and Wounds; ſo that there was ſcarce a Regular Election for a long time, the ſtrongeſt always poſſeſſing the Chair, until he was ſubverted by another more powerful than himſelf: So that in the ſpace of few Years, Nine ſeveral Men ſeized on the Papal Chair; namely, *Benedict* the 9th, *Silveſter* the 3d, *Gregory* the 6th, *Clement* the 2d, *Damaſus* the 2d, *Leo* the 2d, *Victor* the 2d, *Stephen* the 9th, and *Benedict* the 10th. To which laſt, *Nicolas* the 2d ſucceeding, a Perſon of unparallel'd Sanctity and Wiſdom, did in the year 1051 ſtudy to cure and prevent theſe riotous courſes for the future, which upon the choice of every Pope were ready to bring and precipitate every thing into Confuſion. For a Remedy whereunto, he eſtabliſhed a Law, which was afterwards confirmed by the Council of *Lateran*, That the Election of the Popes ſhould entirely reſt and remain in the power of the Cardinals; the which Law or Canon was afterwards confirmed by *Alexander* the 3d, and by *Gregory* the 10th, in the Council of *Lions*, and at *Vienna*, by *Clement* the 6th. The which happy Conſtitution has tended much to the Peace and Quiet of the Church; and as a Rule hereof, *Alexander* the 3d inſtituted at a General Council, That he only ſhould be eſteemed to have been Canonically Elected, who had obtained his Choice by at leaſt two Thirds of the College of Cardinals.

Election of Popes by Cardinals, and when begun.

This power of Election hath, ever ſince that time, reſted in the power of the Cardinals, who, after the *Octaves* appointed for ſolemnizing the Funerals of the deceaſed Pope, have, on the 9th or 10th day, entered the Conclave, in order to a new Election. The *Conclave* is for the moſt part held at the *Vatican* Palace: Where, in a long Gallery, are erected ſmall Apartments, or Cells made of boards, covered with purple Cloath for every Cardinal, which place is appointed for the more convenient Conference each with the other. To every Cardinal is allowed no more than 2 Servants, which are called his *Conclaviſts*, unleſs in caſe of ſickneſs, or other infirmity, when 3 may be admitted. The Cardinals being entred, the *Conclave* is ſtrictly guarded with the City Militia, to hinder all commerce and intercourſe of Letters from without. The Gallery alſo is very cloſely watched, being kept by a Maſter of the Ceremonies; ſo that when the Cardinals have their Diſhes ſerved up to them, they are viſited and inſpected by him, leſt any Letters or Advices ſhould be concealed within the Meat. According to this firſt Inſtitution, the Cardinals have a free uſe of ſeveral Diſhes of Meat for the firſt 3 days: and whilſt they are eating, or doing any thing elſe in their Cells, the outward Curtains are to be open, and undrawn, unleſs in the Night when they ſleep, or at other times, that they take their repoſe; when great care is taken, that no undecent noiſe, or diſturbance be given. It hath been accuſtomary of late years, for the Cardinals to premiſe certain particular points & Articles neceſſary and convenient for the better government of the Church, which are ſubſcribed by the whole Community, and every one takes an Oath to obſerve them, in caſe he ſhould prove to be the perſon choſen and promoted to the Pontifical Dignity. After which matters are performed, they proceed to an Election.

The form and manner of Electing Popes.

The ſeveral ways by which Popes are Elected, and the methods and forms thereof.

There are three ways by which Popes are choſen, namely, by Scrutiny, by Acceſs, or by Adoration: The firſt is, when every Cardinal writes, in a Scroll of Paper, the Name of that perſon whom he deſigns to be elected, folding it into five ſeveral pages, or columns: On the firſt of which he writes theſe words, *Ego eligo in ſummum Pontificem Reverendiſſimum Dominum meum Cardinalem*--the which is written by the hand of the *Conclaviſt*, that the Cardinal may not be diſcovered by his own writing. On this fold two others are doubled down, and ſome Wax dropped thereupon, and ſealed with ſome private Seal made for that purpoſe; on the 4th page the Cardinal writes his own Name, and covers the ſame with the 5th folding. Then all the Cardinals, ſitting in their Order on Benches in the Chapel, with the Scrolls they have prepared in their hands, take their turns to aſcend unto the Altar, before which a Table is placed, covered with a purple Cloth, and a Chalice, with a *Patina*, or Plate, ſet thereupon: On the right ſide of which, ſits the firſt Cardinal

nal Biſhop, and on the left the firſt Cardinal Deacon, then every one kneeling, makes a ſhort Prayer, and ariſing, puts his Scroll into the Chalice; which being done, and all the Cardinals returned to their places; the firſt Cardinal Biſhop takes the Chalice with his right hand, and turns out all the Scrolls upon the *Patina*, or Plate, which he holds in his left: Then ſetting the Chalice again on the Altar, he takes the Scroll which comes firſt to hand, and gives it to the Deacon Cardinal, who reads it with an audible Voice; the Cardinals noting with their pen and Ink, or Table-book, how many Voices every Perſon hath; and the Papers being read, the Maſter of the Ceremonies comes in with a pan of Coals, and burns all the Papers or Scrolls, ſo that no Man is known for which Perſon he hath given his Vote. In caſe any perſon hath gained two thirds of the number there preſent, the Election is good, and he is preſently declared Pope. And this is the way of Scrutiny which is the moſt commonly uſed and practiſed in the election of Popes. When the choice is not determined by Scrutiny, it is then tried and proved by Acceſs, or *Acceſſus*, which is performed in this manner; All the Cardinals ſitting in their places, one ariſes, and goes to the Cardinal, whom he deſigns to have Elected, and ſays, *Ego accedo ad Reverendiſſimum Dominim meum talem*, the which is noted by the other Cardinals, as are the names of thoſe, who make the Acceſs, and thoſe to whom they are made. If two thirds agree in their Acceſs to one perſon, the Election is determined by Acceſs: If not, the next day they proceed again to the Scrutiny, for it cannot be made twice in a day. This way of Acceſs ſeems to reſemble the antient manner of giving Votes in the Senate of *Rome*; when thoſe that concurred in the ſame Opinion with another, went from his place to that ſide, where the motion was firſt made, whence came that ſaying; *Ire in ſententiam*; and ſomthing we have like it in our Parliaments, when the Houſe divides itſelf.

The third way, by Adoration, is performed almoſt in the ſame manner as that by Acceſs; the Cardinal approaching him, whom he deſires to have created Pope, with a profound reverence, and lowly bowing: But both the Acceſs, and the Adoration are to be proved, and confirmed, by the Scrutiny.

The ways of Election by Compromiſe and Inſpiration.

There was antiently another way of Election which was called by Compromiſe, which was, when the diviſions were high, and ſcarce determinable by the *Conclave*, that then the

Cardinals with common conſent referred all their Votes to the choice of three or five Cardinals, giving them power to elect any perſon, whom all, or the major part ſhould chuſe; promiſing, and obliging themſelves to reſt, and remain ſatisfied with ſuch choice by them made, provided, that the ſaid Election were concluded, and determined within the time, that a Candle lighted by the common conſent of all the *Conclave* did laſt and continue. Hereupon, if any Election were made during ſuch time, the Perſon ſo choſen was acknowledged for Pope, and Univerſal Biſhop.

Moreover, there is another way of Election, called by *Inſpiration*; that is, when the Cardinals are Aſſembled in the Chappel, and that every one hath taken his place according to his Degree, and Order. Then the firſt Biſhop ariſes, and in a ſhort Speech exhorts the Fathers to provide ſuch a Perſon for Government of the Church, as by his Wiſdom and Sanctity may be capable to ſuſtain ſo great a burden. Then he demands of them, the manner, by which they are pleaſed to proceed, whether by Compromiſe, or by Scrutiny: Telling them, that if his Opinion and Vote might prevail, he would chuſe no other than ----and accordingly did elect him for Supreme Biſhop, and Head of the Univerſal Church. If in caſe all then preſent, or at leaſt two thirds of the number, did concur in ſuch Perſon ſo nominated; he was then without farther Proceſs, or Scrutiny, Canonically elected Pope. Which manner of election was frequently practiſed amongſt the Antients, and was called, by Inſpiration, or Deſignation of the Holy Ghoſt.

The Pope being legally choſen by any of the foregoing Methods, he is conducted into the *Sacriſtia* or Veſtry; where being diſrobed by the Cardinal-Deacons of his own Habit, he is cloathed in his Pontificalibus, or Papal Veſtments, and being thence brought forth with his Mitre on his Head, adorned with Gold, and Jewels, into the Chapel, he is ſeated on the Altar; where the Cardinals perform the Ceremony of Adoration to him, every one in his order, kiſſing his Feet, Hands, and Mouth.

Whilſt theſe Ceremonies are performing, all the Doors, and Gates of the *Conclave* are opened; at which, a multitude of People appearing, the Pope ſhews himſelf, and bleſſes them. And then the firſt Deacon Cardinal proclaims with a loud Voice to the People in theſe words: *Annuntio vobis gaudium magnum, Papam habemus; Reverendiſſimus Dominus Cardinalis–electus eſt* *in ſummum Pontificem, & elegit ſibi nomen.* This being ſaid, the Pope deſcends into S. *Peter's* Church, the Cardinals leading the way with a Croſs carried before them; and going directly to the High Altar, he takes off his Mitre, kneels and prays awhile, and returns thanks to God, and the Bleſſed Apoſtles; and then ariſing ſits upon the Altar; and the firſt Biſhop kneels and ſings *Te Deum*: And then again the Cardinals perform their Act of Adoration, kiſſing the feet, hand and mouth of the Pope. Which, and the ſhort Office being finiſhed, the Pope bleſſes the People again; and then in the ſame order returns to his Apartment to take his repoſe, and the Cardinals to their reſpective Lodgings.

Why Popes changed their Names, and ſince that time.

The Pope being choſen, for the moſt part changes his Name, it having been an ancient cuſtom ſo to do, and obſerved unfortunate to thoſe Popes, who have retained their own Baptiſmal Names without alteration. Our *Platina* ſaith, 'That 'the firſt who began this Form, was *Sergius* the Second, who 'came to the Popedom at the ſame time, that *Michael* Empe'ror of *Conſtantinople* died. This *Sergius*, 'tis ſaid, was Sir'named *Bocca di Porco*, or Hog's Snout, which for ſhame he 'changed into *Sergius*, Anno 843. And from thence came 'the cuſtom down to our times, that when any one is made 'Pope, he laid by his own Name, and took one of ſome of his 'Predeceſſors, though all have not obſerved it. Thus far are the words of *Platina.* And ſince that time the Popes have commonly out of gratitude taken the Name of that Pope, by whoſe Favour he was firſt created Cardinal.

In all Hiſtories we read of great Diviſions and Factions in the Elections of Popes, even in the firſt times, when the popular tumults proceeded to the height of Rage and Sedition; cauſing ſometimes ſuch difficulties in the Elections, that after the Deceaſe of *Nicolas* the Firſt, *Platina* reports, that ſome Authors ſay, *That the See of* Rome *was vacant eight years, ſeven months and nine days*; and then *Hadrian* the 2d. was choſen in the year 868. Afterwards, in the year 1051. when *Nicolas* the Second had cured theſe riotous courſes, by transferring the whole power of Election into the hands of the Cardinals, the Elections were then carried on more ſmoothly indeed, and with leſs noiſe; but the Factions were not abated, but oftentimes kept up with ſuch Art and Intereſt, that after the Deceaſe of *Clement* the Fourth, the Differences held for the ſpace of two years before the Election of *Gregory* the Tenth, who was the next Succeſſor, came to be determined. And now, even in theſe days, many Intrigues are managed in the *Conclave* before an Election can be perfected: For the Emperor, and the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, muſt firſt be conſulted; and every Cardinal hath ſome Patron or Friend, or Intereſt of his own to advance; every one takes his meaſures of the perſon, that may beſt ſuit and agree with his deſigns. And now of late years, ſince the Monarchy of *France* hath over-topped all the other Soveraignties of Chriſtendom which depend on the Papal See, that King muſt firſt be conſulted, and his aſſent taken, before the Pope can be created; as appears by the Election of this preſent Pope *Innocent* the XI.

The Solemnities uſed at the Coronation of Popes.

In ſome convenient time after the Election, or upon the firſt great Feſtival enſuing, a day is appointed for the Pope's Coronation. It would perhaps be very long and tedious, in a Preface of this nature, to deſcribe diſtinctly all the Ceremonies thereof, the particulars of which take up the ſpace of a whole day from Morning until Night; ſo that in the midſt of them, the Pope and Cardinals are conſtrained to take a ſhort repoſe and refreſhment, to ſupport the labour of the day. For in the Morning early the Pope goes from his Bedchamber into the Chamber called *Papagalli*; where he is clothed by the Cardinal-Deacons, Sub-Deacons and other Officers belonging to that Chamber, with a white Caſſock girt about with a long Girdle; over it he wears his Stole and *Pluvial*, or Robe of Scarlet colour, with a rich Mitre on his Head ſet with many precious Stones: And in this Habit, having the train of his Robes carried up by the Emperor, or ſome King then preſent; or in their abſence by one of the chiefeſt Princes then attending at that Ceremony; and a Canopy of State over his Head, ſupported by eight Ambaſſadors or Nobles, and the Cardinals in their Habits walking before with a Croſs for their Banner, they orderly proceed to *S. Peter's* Church; where being entered, and having laid aſide his Mitre, and prayed awhile, he ariſes and goes to the Chappel of S. *Gregory*, otherwiſe called the Chappel of S. *Andrew*, where being ſat, in a Chair placed there for that purpoſe, he receives all the Cardinals with their Caps on their Heads, to kiſs his Hand, and other Prelates to kiſs his Feet; then the Pope ariſing ſtands up, and bleſſes the People: After which the Sub-Deacon reads the Epiſtle, and all the reſt of the Office for the Coronation, which being performed, the Pope veſts himſelf with the Pontifical Habit, according to the method preſcribed for thoſe Rites. According to the ancient conſtitution, it belonged only to the Biſhop of *Hoſtia* to conſecrate the Pope; but of la e years, the firſt Cardinal Biſhop performs that Function: When the Pope is conſecrated, he is anointed with Oil on his Head, and on the palms of his Hands; but the day of his Conſecration is not always the day of his Coronation. All the Ceremonies, as we have ſaid, being finiſhed, and the Pope himſelf having celebrated the Maſs; they proceed then to the Solemnities of the Coronation: And, in the firſt place, the Pope goes to the Stairs aſcending to the Altar of St. *Peter* and St. *Paul*, where a Throne is erected for him, on which, being ſeated, he is encompaſſed by his Prelats, and the people commanded to withdraw at ſome diſtance; then the Dean-Cardinal takes off the Mitre from the Head of the Pope, and places it on the left Hand; and, having the *Triara* ready, or the Triple Crown, he ſets it on his Head, the people making a loud Acclamation with a *Kyrie Eleiſon*, or, *Lord have mercy upon us.* Then the Dean publiſhes the Indulgences, which the Pope is pleaſed to grant; and, when he proclaims them on the right Hand, he recites them in *Latin*; and on the left, in the vulgar Language.

After which, a Dinner is prepared for the Pope and Cardinals, at the Palace of the Arch-Presbyter of *St. Peter's*; and for the other Prelats, at the Houſes of the Canons: And, having taken their repaſt, the Cardinals mount on their Mules, and the Pope on his Horſe; and, with a Noble Train of all the Officers and Nobles, in their due Rank and Order, they march in ſolemn proceſſion to the *Lateran*; where the Pope, alighting from his Horſe, is met by the chief Canon of the Church, who offers the Croſs to be kiſſed by him, which the Dean-Cardinal taking from his Hands, puts it to the Mouth of the Pope. Then the Triple Crown being taken from off his Head, is delivered to the Cuſtody of the Auditor of the *Rota*, who is one of the chief Juſtices; and the Mitre is again planted on the Pope's Head; for the burthen of the Triple Crown is ſo heavy, with the Gold and Jewels, that it is not born on the Head without much trouble. *Platina* ſaith, 'That *Paul* the Second 'ſo delighted to ſee his Triple Crown ſtudded with precious

'Stones, that he exhauſted the Treaſury of the Church to pur-'chaſe Jewels at any rate; which, being fixed in his Crown 'and Mitre, he look'd like the picture of a *Cybele* with Turrets 'on her Head; and were ſo weighty, and ſo burthenſom on 'his Brow, that they put his groſs Body into a violent heat, 'and ſweat, which produced an Apoplexy, of which, ſoon 'after, he died. But to proceed; The Pope, wearing his Mitre, is conducted to the *Sedes ſtercoraria*, on which he ſeems rather to lie than to ſit; from whence, being raiſed with honour by the Cardinals, the Hymn is ſung; *He hath put down the mighty from their Seats, and hath exalted the humble and meek; he hath raiſed the needy from the duſt, that he may ſet him amongſt the Princes of his People.* After which, ſeveral other Ceremonies being performed, and the Pope receiving again the Adoration of the Cardinals and Prelats, returns towards the Evening to his Palace of *Monte-cavallo.* This is in ſhort the ſum of thoſe Ceremonies practiſed at the Coronation of Popes, which we have extracted from the Book entitled, *The Sacred Ceremonies uſed in the* Roman *Church.*

Popes very aged before they are Elected.

The Popes Elected and Crowned, (as we have ſaid,) are, for the moſt part, old and decrepit with age, or of a weak and tender conſtitution, that ſo they may not live long to the diſappointment of others, who live, and breath paſſionate deſires after this Sublime Exaltation: And, being thus decayed with Years, and unable to ſupport the weight of Government, have commonly called to their Aid, ſome Nephew, or near Relation, with the Title of *Cardinal-Nephew*, or *Cardinal-Patron*, on whoſe Wit, and dexterous management of Affairs, the Fortune and Succeſs of the Papal Dominion doth depend. And indeed a Perſon under ſuch Circumſtances had need to be qualified with great Endowments of Mind and Body; for being always obliged to afford his perſonal Attendance on the Pope, who is to ſee and hear, with his Eyes and Ears, he can never be at leiſure, or free from Thoughts and Buſineſs, either relating to the Palace within, or direction of Affairs without. He is ever the Chief, or Preſident, of Councils; he aſſiſts at all Congregations; he appoints the days for Conſiſtories, of Chapels, Viſits, Audiences, and regulates every thing which relates to the Spiritual and Temporal Government.

The

Popes uſually advance their Families.

The Pope being eſtabliſhed in his Throne, begins at firſt to caſt about by what way and means to raiſe and eſtabliſh his Family, by ſtrong Alliances with Princes and Noble Houſes. He alſo divides the great Offices of the Church amongſt his Kindred: One is made Governor in one place, and another in another. The chief Favourite is made General of the Forces of the Church; another, General of the Gallies; a third, Governor of the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*; and in like manner, all the Preferments are diſpenſed amongſt the Relations, according to that degree and quality, that every one poſſeſſes in the good will, and eſteem, of the Pope.

The great Art of the Cardinal-Nephew, is how to comport himſelf towards Foreign Miniſters.

But the great *Atlas* of State is the Cardinal-Nephew, whoſe Wiſdom is moſt exerted in his comportment towards the Miniſters of Foreign Princes, and eſpecially in taking true meaſures of Intereſt between *France* and *Spain*: Which is of ſuch great concernment, that in a Book called *Il Livello Politico*, it is affirmed, 'That the Glory and Happineſs of the Popedom, 'the Security and Honour of the Cardinal-Nephew, the Grandeur and Proſperity of the Church of *Rome*, conſiſts in this one 'point, of a happy correſpondence with Foreign Ambaſſadors, the failure in which hath produced many unhappy 'Events: Witneſs the Government of the *Barberini*, who, for 'not knowing the true means and methods, how, and in what 'manner, to maintain a right and good underſtanding with 'Chriſtian Princes, and eſpecially with thoſe of *Italy*, reduced '(as is notorious to all the World,) the Church unto a moſt 'unhappy and turbulent Eſtate.

'And farther, in caſe we reflect with ſerious thoughts on 'the Reigns of divers Popes in theſe later Ages, we ſhall 'find the truth of this Aſſertion proved by plain and manifeſt experience: We ſhall find the Reigns of ſome Popes full 'of Luſtre and Glory, as thoſe of *Paul* the Second, and *Clement* 'the Eight, others buried in obſcurity, and abaſed with 'ſordid meanneſs, as thoſe of *Adrian* the Sixth, and *Gregory* 'the Thirteenth. Others have paſſed away in a quiet, ſilent and 'ſmooth, current of Affairs, as thoſe of *Celeſtine*, and *Clement* 'the 9th. Others have been engulfed in a thouſand troubles 'and intrigues, as were the Reigns of *Alexander* the 6th, *Clement* the 7th, of *Paul* the 3d and 4th, and *Urban* the 8th. 'And if we will ſearch into the depth hereof, we ſhall find, 'that the Ambition, Covetouſneſs, and Exorbitances, of the Car-

'dinal-Nephews to be the Original cauſe of all the Troubles 'and Misfortunes, which have rendered the Lives of ſome 'Popes inglorious, or perhaps infamous. Though indeed to ſpeak true, it is almoſt impoſſible for a Cardinal-Nephew to hold the ballance of his deportment towards Foreign Repreſentatives reſiding in the Court of *Rome*, ſo equal, as not to give a cauſe, or occaſion, of offence to ſome one or other; conſidering, that what is pleaſing and acceptable to one, diſſatisfies, and interferes, with the Intereſt of another. Howſoever, there are ſome Men ſo dexterous and happy, in their Negotiations, that they carry all with a good Air, and, if they are enforced to diſoblige ſome, it is done with ſuch circumſtances, and in ſuch manner, as takes off much of the anger and acrimony of the perſon offended.

The Reaſons for which the Chriſtian Princes maintain their Miniſters.

Moſt Princes of Chriſtendom, who are of the *Roman* Religion, maintain their Ambaſſadors, Reſidents, or Agents, at the Court of *Rome:* And though many of theſe Princes have no great Zeal, or Kindneſs, for that Court, being diſobliged perhaps by ſome Action of the Cardinal-Nephew, or ſome other prejudice taken againſt the Pope; yet, it may be, that, on ſome ſcore of Intereſt of State, or of their Clergy, or for the ſake, or ſupport, of Monaſteries, or for the determination of Differences, which ariſe between them and their Subjects, which are to be decided at the Spiritual Judicatures, it is neceſſary for them to conſerve an Agent, or Reſident, at *Rome*.

The Emperor hath ſeldom maintained an Ambaſſador at that Court; becauſe he ordinarily makes uſe of a Protector of the *German* Nation, to manage his Affairs: And in caſe any matter of great Importance occurs, which is to be addreſſed unto the Pope, it is performed by ſome Cardinal, in whom his Imperial Majeſty repoſes a great confidence, unleſs he diſpatches an Expreſs.

The King of *Poland* follows almoſt the ſame Maxim; but yet profeſſes a profound Obedience to the Papal See, and exerciſes the Power and Intereſt he hath there with ſuch modeſty and caution, that though, like other Kings, he might pretend to a Right of nominating Cardinals of his own Nation, yet he ſeldom impoſes any, but ſuch as the Pope ſhall offer of his own accord unto him.

Portugal for the moſt part maintains a Reſident at *Rome.*

The State of *Venice*, and the G. Duke of *Tuſcany* make greater applications, than the other Princes of *Italy*, to that Court; perhaps from a ſenſe of the Pope's Temporal power, whoſe Dominions border upon theirs, rather than out of an affection to his Spiritual capacity.

But, it is certain, that amongſt all the Chriſtian Princes none ſo warmly intereſt themſelves in the Affairs of the *Roman* Court, as *France* and *Spain*, the Kings of which do always maintain and keep up the honour of their reſpective Embaſſies with ſplendid Equipage. And yet theſe two Kings do in a different manner depend on the Court. *France* hath no great Obligation or dependency upon *Rome*, unleſs it it be in ſome reſpects to the priviledges of the *Gallican* Church. But *Spain* is engaged in a kind of Partnerſhip with *Rome* in Government and Juriſdiction, and is beholden thereunto for a great part of its Revenue. The Income of the *Cruſada*, granted by the Popes to the Kings of *Spain*, is one of the chief branches of the Royal Revenue: The Tribunals of the *Inquiſition* are abſolutely conſtituted by the Eccleſiaſtical Authority, which gives ſuch an unlimited power to the Nuntios, Judges and Officers of the Pope within the Catholick Dominions, as doth very much eclipſe and diminiſh the greatneſs of that Monarch: Whereunto, when we add the Tribute yearly paid by that King to the Pope for the Kingdom of *Naples*, it ſeems as if they two held the reins of Government in partnerſhip together; only with this difference, that though the Pope hath intermixt his power with the Temporal, yet the King dares not interpoſe in matters Eccleſiaſtical.

Hence we may ſee, how dangerous it is, for Kings to admit Partners with them in their Thrones: Never was the Monarchy of *Spain* more abaſed and rendered inglorious, than when the Inquiſition was ſet up, and another power introduced to allay and attemper the Soveraign Authority: Wherefore *France*, having no need of ſuch dependencies, hath always kept up and aſſerted the Right of Monarchy, not ſuffering it to be debaſed by the Conceſſions of *Regalia*, or other mean Compliances.

And indeed, how much more happy now is the Crown of *Great Britain*, than in the time of King *John*, who was forced to yield that of *England* to the Pope and his Succeſſors: And how conſiderable and flouriſhing hath it been, ſince it hath diſowned all dependencies on Forein power either in Church or State: In defence of which, may his Sacred Majeſty King *James* the Second, who is the Supream Moderator and Governor thereof, upon Earth, live long and Reign happily; and when it ſhall pleaſe the Kings of Kings to tranſlate Him from a fading to an Immortal Crown, there may never fail one of his Royal Line to ſit upon His Throne, and defend His Loyal People againſt all the Encroachments and Uſurpations of Forein Juriſdiction.

An Alphabetical

TABLE

OF THE

POPES,

Whoſe Lives were written by *B. Platina*.

A.

Adeodatus, P. 114
Adrian I. 145
II. 169
III. 172
IV. 240
V. 281
Agapetus I. 90
II. 183
Agatho, 117
Alexander I. 15
II. 206
III. 242
IV. 269
V. 341
Anacletus, 12
Anaſtaſius I. 66
II. 83
III. 179
IV. 240
Anicetus, 21
Anterus 33

B.

Benedict I. 97
II. 120
III. 166
IV. 177
V. 186
VI. 188
VII. 189
VIII. 196
IX. 199
X. 204
XI. 298
XII. 310
Boniface I. 72
II. 89
III. 102
IV. 103
V. 105
VI. 174
VII. 189
VIII. 294
IX. 330

C.

Caius, 43
Caliſtus I. 28
II. 231
III. 383
Celeſtine I. 73
II. 236
III. 252
IV. 265
V. 293
Chriſtopher, 178
Clemens I. 11
II. 201
III. 251
IV. 275
V. 299
VI. 312
Cletus, 9
Conon, 122
Conſtans,
Conſtantine, 128
Cornelius, 35

D.

Damaſus I. 61
II. 201
Deus-dedit, 104
Dionyſius, 40
Donus I. 115
II. 188

E.

Eleutherius, 24
Euariſtus, 14
Eugenius I. 112
II. 155
III. 238
IV. 357

Euſebius, 48
Eutychianus, 42

F.

Fabianus, 34
Felix I. 41
II. 59
III. 80
Formoſus, 173

G.

Gelaſius I. 81
II. 228
Gregory I. 99
II. 130
III. 134
IV. 157
V. 192
VI. 200
VII. 207
VIII. 250
IX. 260
X. 278
XI. 320
XII. 339

H.

Hadrian V. *Adrian.*
Hilarius, 78
Honorius I. 196
II. 233
III. 258
IV. 288
Hormiſda, 85
Hyginus, 19

I.

Innocent I. 68
II. 234
III. 254
IV. 265
V. 280
VI. 315
VII. 336
John I. 86
II. 90
III. 95
IV. 109
V. 121
VI. 125
VII. 127
VIII. 165
IX. 170
X. 176
XI. 180
XII. 182
XIII. 184
XIV. 187
XV. 190
XVI. 191
XVII. ibid.
XVIII. 193
XIX. 195
XX. ibid.
XXI. 198
XXII. 282
XXIII. 305
XXIV. 343
Julius I. 56

L.

Landus, 179
Leo I. 76
II. 119
III. 149
IV. 162
V. 177
VI. 181
VII. 182
VIII. 186
IX. 202
Liberius, 56
Linus, 7
Lucius I. 37
II. 237
III. 247

M.

Marcellinus, 44
Marcellus, 47
Marcus, 55
Martin I. 111
II. 171
III. 183
IV. 285
V. 347
Miltiades, 49

N.

Nicolas I. 167
II. 205
III. 283
IV. 290
V. 373

P.

Paſchal I. 154
II. 220
Paul I. 141
II. 401
Pelagius I. 91
II. 98
S. Peter, 1
Pius I. 20
II. 389
Pontianus, 31

R.

Romanus, 175

S.

Sabinianus, 101
Sergius I. 123
II. 160
III. 178
IV. 196
Severinus, 108
Simplicius, 79
Siſinnius, 128
Sixtus I. 16
II. 39
III. 74
Soter, 23
Stephen I. 38
II. 138
III. 142
IV. 153
V. 172
VI. 174
VII. 181
VIII. 183
IX. 204
Sylverius, 91

Sylveſter I. 50
II. 194
III. 199
Symmachus, 84
Syricius, 64

T.

Teleſphorus, 18
Theodore I. 110
II. 175

U.

Valentine, 157
Victor I. 25
II. 203
III. 215
Vigilius, 92
Vitalianus, 113
Urban I. 30
II. 216
III. 248
IV. 273
V. 319
VI. 323

X.

Xiſtus V. *Sixtus*.

Z.

Zacharias, 136
Zephyrinus, 26
Zozimus 70

A TABLE Of thoſe POPES Names, whoſe Lives are written in the Continuation.

A.

Adrian VI. created Pope, *Jan*. 9. 1522. Page 40
Alexander VI. created Pope, *Auguſt* 11. 1492. p. 12
Alexander VII. created Pope, *April* 7. 1655. p. 320

C.

Clement VII. created Pope, *November* 19. 1523. p. 46
Clement VIII. created Pope, *January* 30. 1592. p. 211
Clement IX. created Pope, *June* 20. 1667. p. 344
Clement X. created Pope, *April* 29. 1670. p. 357

G.

Gregory XIII. created Pope, *May* 13. 1572. p. 163
Gregory XIV. created Pope, *December* 15. 1590. p. 207
Gregory XV. created Pope, *Febr*. 21. 1621. p. 267

I.

Innocent VIII. created Pope, *Auguſt* 29. 1684. p. 8

Innocent IX. created Pope, *October* 29. 1591. p. 210
Innocent X. created Pope, *September* 15. 1644. p. 293
Innocent XI. created Pope, *September* 21. 1676. p. 376
Julius II. created Pope, *November* 1. 1503. p. 20
Julius III. created Pope, *Febr.* 17. 1550, p. 88

L.

Leo X. created Pope, *March* 11. 1513. p. 29
Leo XI. created Pope, *April* 1. 1605. p. 225

M.

Marcellus II. created Pope, *April* 9. 1555 p. 107

P.

Paul III. created Pope, *October* 12. 1534. p. 67
Paul IV. created Pope, *May* 23 1555. p. 109
Paul V. created Pope, *May* 16. 1605. p. 227
Pius III. created Pope, *Septemb.* 22. 1503 p. 19
Pius V. created Pope, *Decemb.* 24. 1559. being *Christmas Eve*, p. 119
Pius VI. created Pope, *January* 7. 1566. p. 157

S.

Sixtus IV. created Pope, *August* 9. 1471, p. 1.
Sixtus V. created Pope, *April* 24. 1585. p. 172

U.

Vrban VII. created Pope, *September* 15. 1590. p. 205
Vrban VIII. created Pope, *August* 6. 1623. p. 271

THE LIVES OF THE BISHOPS and POPES OF ROME.

S. PETER *the Apoſtle.*

AFTER the Death and Reſurrection of Chriſt, and the Completion of the days of Pentecoſt, the Diſciples received the Holy Ghoſt; and being filled with the Spirit, they publiſhed the wonderful works of God in divers Tongues, though moſt of them, eſpecially *Peter* and *John*, were look'd upon as utterly illiterate Men. Their manner of living was meaſur'd by the common Good; none of them challenged any propriety in any thing; and whatſoever Religious Oblation was laid at their feet, they either divided it between themſelves for the ſupply of the neceſſities of Nature, or elſe diſtributed it to the Poor. Theſe Diſciples had each of them his Province aſſigned to him; to St. *Thomas* was allotted *Parthia*, to St. *Matthew Æthiopia*, to St. *Bartholomew India* on this ſide *Ganges*, to St. *Andrew Scythia*, and *Aſia* to St. *John*; who, after a long ſeries of toil and care, died during his abode at *Epheſus*. But to St. *Peter*, the chief of the Apoſtles, were aſſigned *Pontus*, *Galatia*, *Bithynia* and *Cappadocia*; who being by Birth a *Galilean*, of the City of *Bethſaida*, the Son of *John*, and Brother of *Andrew* the Apoſtle, ſate firſt in the Epiſcopal See of *Antioch* for ſeven years in the days of *Tiberius*.

This Emperour was Son-in-law and Heir to *Auguſtus*, and for the ſpace of Twenty three years, his Adminiſtration of the Government had ſo much of change and variety in it, that we cannot reckon him altogether a bad, or abſolutely a good, Prince. He was a Man of great Learning, and weighty Eloquence: His Wars he managed not in Perſon, but by his Lieutenants; and ſhew'd a great deal of Prudence in ſuppreſſing any ſudden commotions. Having by arts of flattery enticed ſeveral Princes to his Court, he never ſuffered them to return home again; as particularly *Tiberius.*

larly among others, *Archelaus* of *Cappadocia*, whoſe Kingdom he made a Province of the Empire. Many of the Senators were baniſh'd, and ſome of them ſlain by him. *C. Aſinius Gallus* the Pleader, Son of *Aſinius Pollio*, was, by his Order, put to death with the moſt exquiſite Torments: And *Vccienus Montanus Narbonenſis*, one of the ſame Profeſſion, died in the *Baleares*, whither *Tiberius* had confined him. Moreover, Hiſtorians tell us, That his Brother *Druſus* was poiſoned at his Command. And yet upon occaſion he exerciſed ſo much Lenity, that when certain Publicans and Governours of Provinces moved him to raiſe the publick Taxes, he gave them this Anſwer, *That a good Shepherd does indeed ſhear, but not flea, his Sheep.*

Tiberius dying, *C. Cæſar*, who, with a jocular reflection upon his Education in the Camp, had the Sirname of * *Caligula*, ſucceeded him in the Empire: He was the Son of *Druſus*, (Son-in-law to *Auguſtus*,) and Nephew to *Tiberius*. The greateſt Villain in the World, and one who never did any worthy Action either at home or abroad. His Avarice put him upon all manner of Oppreſſion; his Luſt was ſuch, that he did not forbear to violate the Chaſtity of his own Siſters; and his Cruelty was ſo great, that he is reported oftentimes to have cried out, *Oh! That all the People of* Rome *had but one Neck!* At his Command, all, who were under proſcription, were put to death; for having recalled a certain Perſon from Baniſhment, and enquiring of him, What the Exiles did chiefly wiſh for? The Man imprudently anſwering, That they deſired nothing more than the Death of the Emperour; he thereupon gave order, that every Man of them ſhould be executed. He would often complain of the condition of his Times, That they were not rendred remarkable by any publick Calamities, as thoſe of *Tiberius* had been; in whoſe Reign no leſs than 20000 Men had been ſlain by the fall of a Theatre at *Tarracina*. He expreſs'd ſo much envy at the renown of *Virgil* and *Livy*, that he was very near taking away their Writings and Images out of all the Libraries; the former of which he would cenſure as a Man of no Wit, and little Learning; the later as a verboſe and negligent Hiſtorian. And it was his common by-word concerning *Seneca*, *That his Writings were like a Rope of Sand*. *Agrippa*, the Son of King *Herod*, who had been caſt into Priſon by *Tiberius* for accuſing *Herod*, was by him ſet at Liberty, and made King of *Judæa*; while *Herod* himſelf was confin'd to perpetual Baniſhment at *Lyons*. He cauſed himſelf to be tranſlated into the number of the Gods, and ordered the ſetting up Images in the Temple of *Jeruſalem*: At laſt he was aſſaulted and ſlain by ſome of his own Officers, in the Third Year, and Tenth Month, of his Empire. Among his Writings were found two Rolls or Liſts, one of which had a Dagger, the other a Sword, ſtamp'd upon it for a Seal; they both contain'd the Names and Characters of certain principal Men, both of the Senatorian, and Equeſtrian, Order, whom he had deſigned to ſlaughter. There was found likewiſe a large Cheſt, fill'd with ſeveral ſorts of Poiſons, which being, at the Command of *Claudius Cæſar*, not long after, thrown into the Sea; 'tis reported, that the Waters were ſo infected thereby, that there died abundance of Fiſh, which the Tide caſt up in vaſt numbers upon the neighbouring Shores.

* *Caliga* ſignifying a Common Soldier's Hoſe.

I thought good to give this account of theſe Monſters of Men, that thereby it might the better appear, that God could then have ſcarce for-born deſtroying the whole World, unleſs he had ſent his Son and his Apoſtles; by whoſe blood, Mankind, though equal to *Lycaon* in impiety, was yet redeem'd from deſtruction. In their Times lived that St. *Peter*, whom our Saviour (upon his acknowledgment of him to be the Chriſt,) beſpake in theſe words; *Bleſſed art thou, Simon Bar Jona: for fleſh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in Heaven*; and, *Thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build my Church; and I will give unto thee the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and the Power of binding and looſing*. This Apoſtle being a Perſon of moſt unwearied induſtry, when he had ſufficiently ſetled the Churches of *Aſia*, and confuted the Opinion of thoſe who maintained the neceſſity of *Circumciſion*, came into *Italy* in the Second year of *Claudius*.

Claudius. This *Claudius*, who was Uncle to *Caligula*, and had been all along very contumeliouſly treated and buffoon'd by his Nephew, being now Emperor, making an Expedition into *Britain*, had the Iſland ſurrendred up to him; an Enterpriſe which none before *Julius Cæſar*, nor any after *Claudius*, durſt undertake: He alſo added the Iſles of *Orkney* to the Roman Empire. He baniſh'd, out of the City of *Rome*, the ſeditious *Jews*, and ſuppreſs'd the tumults in *Judæa*, which had beed rais'd by certain falſe Prophets. And while *Cumanus* was appointed by him Procurator of *Judæa*, there were cruſhed to death in the Porches of the Temple of *Jeruſalem*, during the days of Unleavened Bread, to the number of Thirty thouſand *Jews*. At the ſame time alſo there was a great dearth and ſcarcity of proviſion throughout the whole World, a Calamity which had been foretold by *Agabus* the Prophet. Being ſecure of any Hoſtilities from abroad, he finiſh'd the Aquæduct that had been begun by *Caligula*, whoſe ruines are yet to be ſeen in the *Lateran*. He attempted alſo to empty the Lake *Fucinus*, being prompted thereto by the hope of getting, not only Honour and Reputation, but Profit and Advantage by it; ſince there was a certain Perſon, who proffered to undertake that work at his own private charge, upon condition, that the Land, when it was drein'd, might have been granted to him for his reward; The Mountain being partly undermin'd, partly cut through, the length of three Miles, the Paſſage was, at the end of eleven years, with much ado, finiſh'd, there being no leſs than 30000 Labourers continually employ'd in it. It was he likewiſe that made the Harbour of *Oſtia*, by drawing an Arm of the Sea on each hand, and ſo breaking the violence of the Waves; a Work, the Footſteps of which are not to be ſeen at this day without wonder. Having put to death his Wife *Meſſalina* for Adultery, he afterwards, againſt all Law, both Human and Divine, married *Agrippina*, the Daughter of his Brother *Germanicus*, by whom, in the Fourteenth Year of his Empire, he was poiſon'd with Muſhrooms prepared by her for that purpoſe.

Simon Magus. In his Time St. *Peter* came to *Rome*, the principal City of the World, both becauſe he judg'd it a Seat beſt accommodated to the Pontifical Dignity; and becauſe likewiſe he underſtood that *Simon Magus*, a certain *Samaritan*, had planted there, who, by his Sorceries, had ſo far ſeduced the People, that they believed him to be a God. For his Statue had been already erected at *Rome*, between the two Bridges, with this Latin Inſcription, *Simoni Deo Sancto* i. e. to *Simon* the Holy God. This Man, while he ſtay'd in *Samaria*, pretended Faith in Chriſt ſo far as to obtain *Baptiſm* from *Philip*, one of the Seven Deacons; which, afterwards abuſing to ill ends, he laid the foundation of divers Hereſies. To him was join'd one *Sebene*, a ſhameleſs Strumpet, who was his Companion and Partner in Villany: To ſuch an heighth of impudence did this lewd fellow arrive, that he challenged St. *Peter* to work Miracles with him; and particularly he undertook to raiſe to life a dead Child, which, indeed, at firſt, ſeem'd ſomewhat to move at his Charms: But it being manifeſt preſently, that the Child nevertheleſs continued dead ſtill, at St. *Peter*'s command, in the Name of *Jeſus*, it immediately aroſe. *Simon* being enraged hereat, profered, as a further tryal which of them was the more Holy Man, and more beloved of God, to fly from the Capitol to the *Aventine*, in the ſight of all the People, provided *Peter* would follow him: While he was yet flying, at the Prayer of *Peter*, who, with Hands lift up to Heaven, beſeeched God not to ſuffer ſo great a multitude to be deluded with Magical Arts, down he fell and broke his Leg, with grief of which Miſadventure, he not long after died at *Aricia*, whither his Followers had conveighed him after this foul diſgrace. From him the Hereticks called *Simoniaci* had their original, who pretended to buy and ſell the Gift of the Holy Ghoſt, and who aſſerted the Creatures to proceed from a certain ſuperiour Power, but not to be from God.

S. *Mark.*

After this, St. *Peter*, applying himſelf both by Preaching and Example to the propagating of the Word of God, was, by the Chriſtian *Romans*, earneſtly deſired: That *John*, Sirnamed *Mark*, who was his Son in *Baptiſm*, and a Perſon of a moſt approved Life and Converſation, might be employed by him in writing a Goſpel. St. *Hierom* ſaith, that he being a Prieſt in *Iſrael*, a Levite according to the Fleſh, after his Converſion to the Chriſtian Faith, wrote his Goſpel in *Italy*; ſhewing, what he owed to his own Parentage and Extraction, and what to Chriſt. Which Goſpel, as we now have it, was approved by the Teſtimony of St. *Peter*. Being afterwards ſent into *Egypt*, as *Philo* the *Jew*, a Famous Writer, tells us; after that, by Preaching and Writing, he had well form'd the *Alexandrian* Church, being a Man very eminent both for his Life and Learning, in the Eighth Year of the Emperour *Nero* he dyed, and was buried at *Alexandria*; in whoſe place ſucceeded *Anianus*.

James.

The Year before died *James*, Sirnamed *Juſtus*, the Brother of our Lord, being the Son of *Joſeph* by another Wife; or, as ſome will have it, Siſter's Son to *Mary* Chriſt's Mother. *Egeſippus*, who lived near the Apoſtles Times, affirms of him, that he was Holy in his Mother's Womb: That he drank neither Wine nor ſtrong Drink, nor ever taſted Fleſh: That he neither ſhaved, nor bathed, nor anointed, himſelf; nor ever wore any other but Linen Garments. He was often accuſtomed to enter into the Holy of Holies, where he continued ſo inceſſantly in his Prayers for the Welfare of the People, that his Knees were grown hard and callous like thoſe of Camels. But *Feſtus* leaving the Government of *Judæa*, before *Albinus* his Succeſſor arrived there, the High Prieſt *Ananus*, the Son of *Ananus*, requiring *James* publickly to deny Chriſt to be the Son of God, upon his refuſal, he gave order he ſhould be ſtoned to Death; who, after he had been thrown down headlong from a Pinacle of the Temple, continuing yet half alive, and with Hands ſtretch'd forth towards Heaven, praying for his Perſecutors, was at laſt kill'd outright with a blow of a Fuller's Club. *Joſephus* reports him to have been a Man of ſo great Sanctity, that it was the general belief, that his Murder was the cauſe of the deſtruction of *Jeruſalem*. This is that *James*, whom our Lord appeared to after his Reſurrection, and to whom, having bleſſed Bread and broken it, he ſaid, *Brother, eat thy Bread, becauſe the Son of Man is riſen.* He preſided over the Church of *Jeruſalem* Thirty Years, that is, to the Seventh Year of *Nero.* His Sepulchre, with an Inſcription, hard by the Temple from which he had been caſt down, was yet in being in *Adrian*'s Time.

Barnabas.

Paul.

It is evident likewiſe, that *Barnabas*, by Birth a *Cypriot*, Sirnamed *Joſes*, a Levite, died before St. *Peter*'s Martyrdom; he being choſen, together with *Paul*, an Apoſtle of the *Gentiles*, wrote only one Epiſtle of matters concerning the Church, and that too is reckoned Apocryphal. There hapning to be a difference between him and *Paul*, occaſioned by *Mark* a Diſciple; he, accompanied with the ſaid *Mark*, went to *Cyprus*, where, Preaching the Faith of Chriſt, he was crowned with Martyrdom. *Paul*, firſt called *Saul*, was deſcended of the Tribe of *Benjamin*, of a Town of *Judæa*, called *Giſcalis*, which being taken in War by the *Romans*, he, with his Parents, removed to *Tarſus*, a City of *Cilicia*; and being ſent thence to *Jeruſalem*, to ſtudy the Law, he had his Education under the learned *Gamaliel*: After this, receiving Letters from the High Prieſt, he became a Perſecutor of thoſe that profeſſed Chriſt to be the True God; and particularly, was preſent, and aſſiſtant, at the Death of St. *Stephen* the Protomartyr. But as he was going to *Damaſcus*, being, by the Divine Spirit, wonderfully converted to the Faith, he became a *choſen Veſſel*; and from that time took the Name of *Paul*, from a Proconſul of *Cyprus*, whom, by his Preaching, he had converted to Chriſtianity. After this, he, together with *Barnabas*, having travelled through divers Cities, upon his return to *Jeruſalem*, was, by *Peter*, *John*, and *James*, choſen an Apoſtle of the *Gentiles*. In the Twenty fifth Year after the Death of Chriſt, which was the Second of the Emperour *Nero*, and the Time when *Feſtus* ſucceeded *Felix* in the Procuratorſhip of *Judæa*, he, with his Fellow-captive *Ariſtarchus*, was as a free Denizen ſent bound to *Rome*; where, continuing the ſpace of two Years, under very little Confinement, he was daily engaged in Diſputation with the *Jews*. Being at length ſet at Liberty by *Nero*, he both preached and wrote many things. We have at this day Fourteen of his Epiſtles, One to the *Romans*, two to the *Corinthians*, one to the *Galatians*, one to the *Epheſians*, one to the *Philippians*, one to the *Coloſſians*, two to the *Theſſalonians*, two to *Timothy*, one to *Titus*, and one to *Philemon*; that to the *Hebrews* is generally ſaid to be his, though, becauſe of the difference of Style and Phraſe from the reſt, it be uncertain whether it were ſo or no; and there have been anciently divers, who have entituled it, ſome to *Luke*, ſome to *Barnabas*, ſome to *Clemens*. St. *Peter* alſo wrote two General Epiſtles, though the later be by many denied to be his, for the ſame reaſon of the difference of Style. But being ſo taken up with Praying and Preaching, that he could not attend any other great variety of buſineſs, he conſtituted two Biſhops, *viz. Linus* and *Cletus*, who might exerciſe the Sacerdotal Miniſtery to the *Romans* and other Chriſtians. The Holy Man, applying himſelf entirely to theſe things, gained thereby ſo great and univerſal a Reputation, that Men were ready to worſhip him as a God. The Emperour *Nero* being diſpleaſed hereat, began to contrive his death; whereupon, St. *Peter*, with the advice of his Friends, that he might avoid the Emperour's Envy and Rage, departed out of the City by the *Via Appia*; and at the end of the firſt mile he travelled, to uſe the words of *Egeſippus*, meeting with Chriſt in the way, and falling down and worſhipping him, he ſaid, *Lord, whither goeſt thou?* To whom Chriſt replyed, *I go to* Rome *to be crucified again.* There is yet remaining a Chappel built on the ſame place where theſe words were ſpoken. Now St. *Peter* believing this Saying of our Saviour to relate to his own Martyrdom, becauſe Chriſt might ſeem to be ready to ſuffer again in him, went back to the City, and forthwith conſecrated *Clemens* a Biſhop, and in theſe words recommended to him his Chair, and the Church of God; *I deliver to thee the ſame power of binding and looſing, which Chriſt left to me; do thou, as becomes a good Paſtor, promote the Salvation of Men, both by Prayer and Preaching, without regard to any hazard of Life or Fortune.* Having ſet theſe things thus in order, at the Command of *Nero*, in the laſt Year of the Empire, he was put to death, together with St. *Paul*, though the kinds of their Puniſhment were different. For St. *Peter* was crucified with his Head towards the Ground, and his Feet upwards, for ſo he deſired it might be, ſaying, That he was unworthy to undergo the ſame kind of death with his Saviour. He was buried in the *Vatican*, in the *Via Aurelia*, near *Nero*'s Gardens, not far from the *Via Triumphalis* which leads to the Temple of *Apollo*: He continued in the See 25 Years. But St. *Paul*, being on the ſame day beheaded, was interred in the *Via Oſtienſis*, in the 37th Year after the death of Chriſt. This is confirmed by the Teſtimony of *Caius* the Hiſtorian, who, in a Diſputation againſt one *Proculus* a Montaniſt, has theſe words; *I*, ſays he, *can ſhew you the Victorious Enſigns of the Apoſtles; for you cannot paſs the* Via Regalis, *that leads to the* Vatican, *nor the* Via Oſtienſis, *but you will find the Trophies of thoſe Hero's that eſtabliſhed this Church:* Where certainly he refers to theſe Two, St. *Peter* and St. *Paul*. In the fore-mentioned Gardens of *Nero*, were repoſited the Aſhes of a multitude of Holy Martyrs. For a Fire hapning in the time of *Nero*, which, raging for ſix days together, had waſted a great part of the City, and devoured the Subſtance of many wealthy Citizens, the blame of all which was laid upon the Emperour: He, as *Tacitus* tells us, being very deſirous to quell the rumour, ſuborn'd falſe Witneſſes to accuſe, and lay all the blame of that Calamity upon, the Chriſtians; whereupon ſo great a number of them were ſeiz'd and put to death, that, it is ſaid, the flame of their empaled Bodies ſupplied the room of Lights for ſome Nights together. There are thoſe who ſay this Fire was kindled by *Nero*, either that he might have before his Eyes the Reſemblance of burning *Troy*; or elſe becauſe he had taken offence at the irregularity of the old Houſes, and the narrowneſs and windings of the Streets; neither of which are improbable of ſuch a Man as he, who was profligately ſelf-will'd, intemperate and cruel, and in all reſpects more lewd and wicked than his Uncle *Caligula*. For he both put to death a great part of the Senate, and alſo, without any regard to Decency, would, in the ſight of the People, ſing and dance in the publick Theatre. His diſſolute Luxury was ſuch, that he made uſe of perfum'd cold Baths, and fiſh'd with golden Nets, which were dragg'd with Purple Cords. Yet he took ſuch care to conceal all theſe Vices in the beginning of his Empire, that Men had generally great hopes of him. For being put in mind to ſign a Warrant, according to Cuſtom, for the execution of one that was condemn'd to die, *How glad,* ſays he, *ſhould I be that I had never learnt to write.* He was very ſumptuous in his Buildings both in the City and elſewhere; for the Baths, called by his Name, and the *Aurea Domus*, and the *Portico*, three Miles long, were finiſh'd by him, with wondrous Magnificence. Beſides which, he was at a vaſt Expence to make the Haven at *Antium*, at the ſight of which, I my ſelf, not long ſince, was wonderfully pleaſed. I return to his Cruelty, which he exerciſed towards his Maſter *Seneca*, towards *M. Annæus Lucanus* the famous Poet, towards his Mother *Agrippina*, and his Wife *Octavia*, towards *Cornutus* the Philoſopher, *Perſius*'s Maſter, whom he baniſhed, towards *Piſo*, and in a word towards all thoſe who were in any reputation among the Citizens. In the end, he ſo highly provok'd the rage and hatred of the people againſt him, that moſt diligent ſearch was made after him to bring him to condign puniſhment; which puniſhment was, that, being bound, he ſhould be led up and down with a Gallows upon his Neck; and being whipp'd with Rods to Death, his Body ſhould be thrown into the River *Tyber*. But he making his Eſcape four Miles out of the City, laid violent hands upon himſelf in the Country-houſe of one of his Freemen, between the *Via Salaria* and *Nomentana*, in the Thirty ſecond Year of his Age, and of his Reign the Fourteenth.

S. LINUS.

LINUS, by Nation a *Tuſcan*, his Father's Name *Herculeanus*, was in the Chair from the laſt year of *Nero* to the Times of *Veſpaſian*, and from the Conſulſhip of *Saturninus* and *Scipio*, to that of *Capito* and *Rufus*.

In this ſpace of time there were no leſs than three Emperours, *Galba*, *Otho*, and *Vitellius*, each of them reigning but a very little while.

Galba, a Perſon deſcended of the moſt ancient Nobility, being created *Galba.* Emperour by the Soldiers in *Spain*, aſſoon as he heard of the Death of *Nero*, came immediately to *Rome*. But rendring himſelf obnoxious to all Men, by his Avarice and Sloth, through the Treachery of *Otho*, he was ſlain at *Rome*, near *Curtius*'s Lake, in the Seventh Month of his Reign, together with *Piſo*, a Noble Youth, whom he had adopted for his Son. He was doubtleſs a Man, who, before he came to the Empire, was very eminent in the management both of Military and Civil Affairs; being often Conſul, often Proconſul, and ſeveral times General in the moſt important Wars. That which makes me ſpeak this in his praiſe, is the Learning of *M. Fabius Quintilianus*, whom *Galba* brought with him out of *Spain* to *Rome*.

Otho, a Man of better Extraction by his Mother's, than by his Fa- *Otho.* ther's, ſide, who, while he led a private Life, was very looſe and effeminate, as being a great and intimate Friend of *Nero*'s, in the midſt of Tumults and Slaughters, as I hinted before, invaded the Empire. But being engaged in a Civil War againſt *Vitellius*, who had been created Emperour in *Germany*, though he got the better in three ſmall Skirmiſhes, One at the *Alps*, another at *Placentia*, the third at *Caſtor*; yet loſing the day in the laſt and moſt conſiderable, which was at *Bebriacum*, he thereupon fell into ſo deep a melancholy, that, in the Third Month of his Empire, he ſtabb'd himſelf.

Vitellius.

Vitellius, concerning whoſe Extraction there are different Opinions, coming to *Rome*, and obtaining the Empire, ſoon degenerated into all manner of Lewdneſs, Cruelty and Gluttony, being uſed to make ſeveral Meals in a day, and ſome of them to ſuch an height of Luxury, that there have been at one Supper no leſs than Two thouſand Fiſhes, and Seven thouſand Fowl, ſerv'd up to his Table. But having intelligence that *Veſpaſian*, who had been created Emperour by the Army in *Judæa*, was advancing with his Legions, he at firſt determined to quit the Empire, yet being afterwards encouraged by thoſe about him, he took up Arms, and forc'd *Sabinus*, *Veſpaſian*'s Brother, with his *Flavian* Soldiers, into the Capitol, which being ſet on fire, they were all burnt. Hereupon being ſurpriz'd by *Veſpaſian*, and having no hope of Pardon left him, he hid himſelf in a private Chamber in the Palace, from whence he was moſt ignominiouſly dragg'd and carried naked through the *Via Sacra* to the *Scalæ Gemoniæ*, where being quartered he was thrown into the River *Tyber*.

Philo Judæus.

Joſephus.

During this time *Linus* was Succeſſor to St. *Peter*, though there are ſome who place *Clemens* here, and wholly leave out *Linus* and *Cletus*, who yet are ſufficiently confuted, not only by Hiſtory, but alſo by the Authority of St. *Hierom*, who tells us, That *Clemens* was the Fourth Biſhop of *Rome* after *Peter*, for *Linus* was accounted the Second, and *Cletus* the Third, notwithſtanding that moſt of the *Romans*, immediately after *Peter*, reckon *Clemens*. To whom, though St. *Peter* had, as it were, by Will, bequeath'd the Right of Succeſſion, yet his Modeſty was ſo great, that he compelled *Linus* and *Cletus* to take upon them the Pontifical Dignity before him, leſt any ambition of preheminence might be of ill example to After-Ages. This *Linus*, by Commiſſion from St. *Peter*, Ordained, that no Woman ſhould enter the Church but with her Head veiled. Moreover, at two Ordinations, which he held in the City, he made Eighteen Presbyters and Eleven Biſhops. He wrote alſo the Memoirs of St. *Peter*, and particularly the Contention he had with *Simon Magus*. In his time lived *Philo*, a *Jew*, by Nation of *Alexandria*, in whoſe Writings there is ſo much Wit and Judgment, that, from the likeneſs there appears between them, he deſerv'd to have it proverbially ſaid, Either *Plato* does *Philonize*, or *Philo* does *Platonize*. By his Learning and Eloquence he corrected the raſhneſs of *Appion*, who had been ſent Ambaſſadour from the *Alexandrians* with Complaints againſt the *Jews*. While he was at *Rome*, in *Claudius*'s time, he contracted an acquaintance with St. *Peter*, and thereupon wrote ſeveral things in praiſe of the Chriſtians. *Joſephus* alſo, the Son of *Matathias*, a Prieſt at *Hieruſalem*, being taken Priſoner by *Veſpaſian*, and committed to the Cuſtody of his Son *Titus* till that City was taken, coming to *Rome* during the Pontificate of *Linus*, preſented to the Father and the Son Seven Books of the *Jewiſh* War, which were laid up in the publick Library, and the Authour himſelf, as a reward for that performance, had, moſt deſervedly, a Statue erected to him. He wrote likewiſe Twenty four other Books of Antiquities, from the beginning of the World to the Fourteenth Year of the Emperour *Domitian*. As for *Linus* himſelf, though he had gain'd a mighty reputation by the ſanctity of his Life, by his Power of caſting out Devils, and raiſing the Dead, yet was he put to Death by *Saturninus* the Conſul, whoſe very Daughter he had diſpoſſeſs'd; and was buried in the *Vatican*, near the Body of St. *Peter*, on the twenty firſt day of *September*, when he had ſat in the Pontifical See eleven years, three months, and twelve days. There are ſome who affirm that *Gregory* Biſhop of *Oſtia*, did, according to a Vow which he had made, remove the Body of this holy Biſhop to that place, and ſolemnly inter it in the *Church* of St. *Laurence*.

S. CLETUS.

CLETUS, born in *Rome* in the *Vicopatrician** Region, Son of *Æmilianus*, through the perſuaſion of *Clemens*, unwillingly took upon him the burden of the Pontificate, though for his Learning, Life and Quality he was a Perſon of very great eſteem and Authority among all that knew him. He lived in the time of *Veſpaſian* and *Titus*, from the ſeventh Conſulſhip of *Veſpaſian*, and the fifth of *Domitian*, to *Domitian* and *Rufus Coſ.* according to *Damaſus*.

* One of the Diviſions of the City of *Rome*, anſwering to one of our Wards in *London*.

Veſpaſianus.

Veſpaſian, as I ſaid before, ſucceeding *Vitellius*, committed the management of the *Jewiſh* War, which had been carrying on two years before, to his Son *Titus*, which he, within two years after, with great reſolution finiſhed. For all *Judea* being conquer'd, the City *Hieruſalem* deſtroyed, and the Temple levelled to the ground, it is reported that no leſs than ſix hundred thouſand *Jews* were ſlain; nay, *Joſephus* a *Jew*, who was a Captive in that War, and had his life given him becauſe he foretold the death of *Nero*, and that *Veſpaſian* ſhould, in a ſhort time, be Emperor, relates that eleven hundred thouſand periſhed therein by Sword and Famine, and that a hundred thouſand were taken Priſoners, and publickly expoſed to ſale. Nor will it ſeem improbable, if we conſider that he tells us this happened at the time of the Feaſt of Unleavened Bread, when they came from all parts of *Judea* to *Jeruſalem*, as into a publick Priſon; and eſpecially on the day of the Paſſeover, upon which they crucified Chriſt: Being now to undergo the deſerved puniſhment, both of their frequent revolts from the *Roman* Government; and alſo of their villany and perfidiouſneſs in putting to death the innocent Jeſus. Upon this Victory over the *Jews*, the Father and Son were honoured with a Triumph, both riding in the ſame Chariot, and *Domitian* upon a white Horſe following them. The Monuments of this Triumph remain ſtill in the *Via Nova*, where are to be ſeen engraven the Candleſticks and the Tables of the Old Law, that were taken out of the Temple, and triumphantly brought away. Yet *Veſpaſian* exerciſed ſo much Humanity towards the *Jews*, even when they were conquered, that for all thoſe whom he found among them remaining of the Houſe of *David*, as being of Royal deſcent, he had a very good eſteem. And indeed he always uſed his Power with great Moderation, being of ſo mild and merciful a Temper, as to diſcharge even Traytors with no other than a verbal Correction, and to ſlight the Diſcourſes of inſolent and talkative people, and in general to be forgetful of Faults and Injuries. He was look'd upon as too much enclin'd to Avarice; and yet he uſed no oppreſſion for the getting of Money, and what he had he employed in Bounty and Magnificence. For he both finiſh'd the Temple of Peace adjoyning to the *Forum*, that had been begun by *Claudius*; and began that Amphitheatre, a part of which is yet to be ſeen with admiration. He had ſo great an Opinion of the Bravery and Merit of his Son *Titus*, that upon occaſion of certain tumults, rais'd by ſome ambitious Men who aſpir'd to the Empire, he ſaid publickly, *That either his Son, or no Man, would be his Succeſſor in the Empire.* And good ground he had to ſay ſo, for that *Titus*, both for his Courage and Integrity, was accounted the Darling and Delight of Mankind. He was endued with an Eloquence excellently ſuited to the times of Peace, and with a Courage to thoſe of War: He was very merciful to Offenders, and ſo kind and bountiful to all, that he never denied any Man any thing. Upon which occaſion when ſome of his Friends took the liberty to find fault with him as too profuſe, he told them, *It was not fit that any Man ſhould depart ſad out of the Preſence of a Prince.* And remembring at a certain time that he had not conferr'd any benefit in a whole day, he thereupon cried out to thoſe about him, *My Friends, I have loſt a Day.* Never any Emperour was ſuperiour to him in Magnificence; the Amphitheatre, together with the Baths near adjoyning, being perfectly compleated and dedicated, and an Hunting of five thouſand wild Beaſts exhibited by him. He recall'd from Exile *Murſonius Rufus*, a famous Philoſopher, and was much pleaſed with the Converſation of *Aſconius Pædianus*, a moſt learned Man. He died in the ſecond year of his Empire, and was carried to his Sepulchre with ſo great and univerſal a Lamentation, as if every Man had loſt a Father. *Titus.*

There are ſome who write, that *Cletus* ſucceeded *Linus* in the ſecond year of *Veſpaſian*, who held the Empire ten years. Whether that were ſo or no, 'tis certain that *Cletus* was a moſt holy and good Man, and that he left nothing undone that might contribute to the enlargement and increaſe of the Church of God. In his time lived *Luke*, a Phyſitian of *Antioch*, one extraordinarily well skilled in the *Greek* Language, a Follower of St. *Paul* the Apoſtle, and his conſtant Attendant and Companion in his Travels. He penn'd the Goſpel, which is commended by St. *Paul*, and which St. *Paul* for a good reaſon calls *his Goſpel*. He wrote alſo the *Acts of the Apoſtles*, being himſelf an Eye-witneſs of them. He lived eighty four years, was married in *Bithynia*, and buried at *Conſtantinople*, whither his Bones, together with thoſe of *Andrew* the Apoſtle, were, in the tenth year of *Conſtantius*, conveyed out of *Achaia*. At the ſame time likewiſe *Philip*, returning out of *Scythia*, which, by his Example and Preaching, he had kept ſtedfaſt in the Faith for twenty years together, into *Aſia*, died at *Jeruſalem*. As for *Cletus* himſelf, having ſetled the Church as well as the Times would bear, and Ordain'd, according to St. *Peter*'s command, twenty five Presbyters, he was crown'd with Martyrdom in the Reign of *Domitian*, and buried near the Body of St. *Peter* in the *Vatican*, *April* 27. There were many other Martyrs about the ſame time, among whom is reckoned *Flavia Domicilla*, Siſters Daughter to *Flavius Clemens* the Conſul, who was baniſh'd into the Iſland *Pontia* for the profeſſion of Chriſtianity. *Cletus* ſate in the Chair twelve years, *Luke.* *Philip.*

one Month, eleven Days; and by his Death the See was vacant twenty Days.

S. CLEMENS.

CLEMENS, born in *Rome*, in the Region of *Mons Cœlius*, his Fathers Name *Fauſtinus*, lived in the time of *Titus* his Succeſſor, *Domitian*.

Domitian.

Who was more like to *Nero* or *Caligula*, than to his Father *Veſpaſian*, or his Brother; yet at the beginning of his Empire he kept within ſome tolerable bounds, but ſoon after he broke out into very great enormities of Luſt, Idleneſs, Rage and Cruelty; Crimes which brought upon him ſo great an *Odium*, as almoſt quite deface'd the Memory and Renown of his Father and his Brother. Many of the Nobility he put to death, whereof moſt were, by his order, aſſaſſined in the places whither he had baniſh'd them. He was ſo induſtriouſly idle, as to ſpend the time of his privacy and retirement in killing Flies with a Bodkin; for which reaſon when a certain Perſon coming out of his preſence was asked, Whether any one were with *Cæſar*, he anſwer'd merrily, *No, not ſo much as a Fly*. He arriv'd to ſuch an heighth of Folly and Arrogance, as to expect Divine Honours, and to command that in all Diſcourſes and Writings concerning him, the Title of *Lord* and *God* ſhould be given him. He was the ſecond from *Nero*, that rais'd a Perſecution againſt the Chriſtians. Moreover, he gave order that all thoſe of the Linage of *David* among the *Jews*, ſhould, by Interrogatories and racking them to Confeſſion, be diligently ſearch'd after, and, being found, utterly deſtroy'd and extinguiſh'd. In the end, the Divine Vengeance overtaking him, he was, in the fifteenth Year of his Empire, ſtabb'd to death in the Palace by his own Servants. His Body was carried out by the common Bearers, and ingloriouſly buried by *Philix*, at her Country-houſe in the *Via Latina*.

Clemens was now (as I have ſaid) the fourth Biſhop of *Rome* from St. *Peter*, *Linus* being accounted the ſecond, and *Cletus* the third, though the *Latins* generally reckon *Clemens* next after *Peter*; and that he was deſign'd ſo, appears from his own Letter to *James* Biſhop of *Jeruſalem*, wherein he gives him the following account of that matter: *Simon Peter, being apprehenſive of his approaching Death, in the preſence of ſeveral Brethren, taking hold of my Hand, This*, ſays he, *is the Perſon, whom, having been my Aſſiſtent in all Affairs ſince I came to* Rome, *I conſtitute Biſhop of that City; and when I ſhewed my willingneſs to decline ſo great a Burden, he expoſtulated with me in this manner, Wilt thou conſult only thine own Convenience, and deny thy Aſſiſtence to the poor fluctuating Church of God, when it is in thy power to ſteer it?* But he, being a Perſon of wonderful modeſty, did freely prefer *Linus* and *Cletus* to that Dignity before himſelf undertook it. He wrote in the Name of the *Roman* Church a very uſeful Epiſtle to the *Corinthians*, not differing in ſtyle from that of the *Hebrews*, which is ſaid to be St. *Pauls*. This Epiſtle was formerly read publickly in ſeveral Churches; there is another bearing his Name, which the Ancients did not think authentick; and *Euſebius* in the third Book of his Hiſtory, does find fault with a long Diſputation between St. Peter and *Appion*, ſaid to be written by our *Clement*. St. John. 'Tis certain, that *John* the Apoſtle, Son of *Zebedee*, and Brother of *James*, lived till this time, who was the laſt Penman of the Goſpel, and confirmed what had been before written by *Matthew*, *Mark* and *Luke*. The reaſon why he wrote laſt is ſaid to be, that he might confront and defeat the Hereſie of the *Ebionites*, who impudently denied Chriſt to have had a being before his Birth of the Bleſſed Virgin; and accordingly we find him very particular in demonſtrating the Divinity of our Saviour. He wrote ſeveral other things, and among the reſt his *Revelation*, during his Baniſhment into the Iſland *Patmos* by *Domitian*; who being afterwards ſlain, and his Acts, for their exceſſive ſeverity, reſcinded by the Senate, he returned to *Epheſus* in the time of *Nerva*; where he continued till the Reign of *Trajan*, ſupporting the Churches of *Aſia* by his Counſel and Writings, till at laſt, being worn out with Age, he reſted in the Lord the ſixty eighth Year after the Paſſion of Chriſt. Our *Clemens*, by his Piety, Religion and Learning, made daily many Proſelytes to Chriſtianity; whereupon *P. Tarquinius* the High Prieſt, and *Mamertinus* the City Præfect, ſtirr'd up the Emperour againſt the Chriſtians; at whoſe command *Clement* was baniſh'd to an Iſland, where he found near two thouſand Chriſtians condemn'd to hew Marble in the Quarries. In this Iſland there being at that time a great ſcarcity of Water, which they were forced to fetch at ſix miles diſtance, *Clement*, going to the top of a little Hill hard by, ſees there a Lamb, under whoſe right Foot flowed miraculouſly a plentiful Spring, with which all the Iſlanders were refreſh'd, and many of them thereupon converted to the Chriſtian Faith. At which *Trajan* being enraged, ſent ſome of his Guards, who threw *Clement* into the Sea, with an Anchor tied about his Neck. But his bleſſed Body was not long after caſt on the ſhore, and being buried at the place where this miraculous Fountain had ſprung up, a Temple was built over it. This is ſaid to have happened *September* 14, in the third Year of the Emperour *Trajan*. He was in the Chair nine Years, two Months, and ten Days: He divided the Wards of the City among ſeven Notaries, who were to regiſter the Acts of the Martyrs; and at the Ordinations which he held according to cuſtom in the Month of *December*, he made ten Presbyters, two Deacons, and fifteen Biſhops. By his death the See was vacant two and twenty Days.

S. ANACLETUS.

ANACLETUS, an *Athenian*, Son of *Antiochus*, was Succeſſor to *Clement* in the time of *Trajanus*.

Nerva. This *Trajans* Predeceſſor *Nerva Cocceius*, was an excellent Perſon both in his private and publick capacity, juſt and equal in all his proceedings, and one whoſe Government was very advantageous to the Republick. Through his procurement the Acts of *Domitian* being repeal'd by Decree of the Senate, Multitudes thereupon return'd from baniſhment, and ſeveral, by his bounty, had the Goods of which they had before been plundered, reſtor'd to them. But being now very old, and drawing near to the time of his Death, out of his care of the Publick Weal, he adopted *Trajan*, and then died in the ſixteenth Month of his Reign, and of his Age the ſeventy ſecond year.

Trajanus.

Trajan himſelf, a *Spaniard*, ſurnamed *Ulpius Crinitus*, coming to the Empire, ſurpaſſed the beſt of Princes in the Glory of his Arms, the Goodneſs of his Temper, and the Moderation of his Government. He extended the Bounds of the Empire far and wide, reduced that part of *Germany* beyond the *Rhine* to its former ſtate, ſubdued *Dacia*, and ſeveral other Nations beyond the *Danow*; recovered *Parthia*; gave a King to the *Albanians*; made Provinces beyond *Euphrates* and *Tygris*; overcame and kept *Armenia*, *Aſſyria*, *Meſopotamia*, *Seleucia*, *Cteſiphon* and *Babylon*; and proceeded as far as the Borders of *India*, and the *Red Sea*, where he left a Fleet to infeſt thoſe Borders.

Ignatius.

The Eccleſiaſtical Laws and Conſtitutions of *Anacletus* were as followeth: *viz.* That no Prelate, or other Clerk, ſhould ſuffer his Beard, or Hair, to grow long: That no Biſhop ſhould be Ordained by leſs than three other Biſhops: That the Clergy ſhould be admitted into holy Orders in publick only: And that all the Faithful ſhould, after Conſecration, Communicate, or be put out of the Church. By this means the Chriſtian Intereſt encreas'd, that *Trajan*, fearing leſt the *Roman* State might be impaired thereby, gave allowance to a third Perſecution of the Chriſtians, in which multitudes were put to Death, and particularly *Ignatius*, the third Biſhop of the Church of *Antioch* after St. *Peter*. Who being taken, and condemn'd to ſuffer by wild Beaſts, as he was carried to *Rome* by his Guards, whom he called his Ten Leopards, he all along, in his paſſage, encourag'd and confirm'd the Chriſtians, by Diſcourſe with ſome, and by Epiſtle to others; declaring his readineſs to ſuffer in this manner; *Come Croſs, come Beaſts, come Wrack, come the Torture of my whole Body, and the Torments of the Devil upon me, ſo I may enjoy Chriſt.* And upon the occaſion of his hearing the Lions roar, *Corn*, ſays he, *I am, let me be ground by the Teeth of theſe Beaſts, that I may be found fine Bread.* He died in *Trajan*'s Eleventh Year, and his Bones were afterwards buried in the Suburbs of *Antioch*. But *Plinius Secundus*, who was then Governour of that Province, being moved with compaſſion to ſee ſo many executed, wrote to the Emperour *Trajan*, informing him that incredible Numbers of Men were daily put to Death, who were Perſons of an unblameable Life, and who in no point tranſgreſſed the *Roman* Laws, ſave only that before day-break, they would ſing Hymns to Chriſt their God; but that Adulteries, and the like Crimes, were diſallowed and abominated by them. Hereupon *Trajan* gave order, that the Magiſtrates ſhould not make ſearch after the Chriſtians, but only puniſh thoſe who voluntarily offered themſelves. During this Perſecution, *Simeon*, the Kinſman of our Lord, Son of *Cleophas*, and Biſhop of *Jeruſalem*, was crucified in the hundred and twentieth year of his Age. Theſe things which we have ſpoken, were acted in the time of this Biſhop, and not of *Cletus*, as *Euſebius* in the third Book of his Hiſtory would have it; for *Damaſus* makes out, that *Cletus* and *Anacletus* differed both as to their Country and manner of Death, *Cletus* being a *Roman*, and ſuffering under *Domitian*, but *Anacletus* an *Athenian*, and ſuffering under *Trajan*. Our *Anacletus* having erected an Oratory to St. *Peter*, and aſſigned places of burial for the Martyrs diſtinct from thoſe of other Men, and at one *Decembrian* Ordination made five Presbyters, three Deacons, and ſix Biſhops; upon his Martyrdom the See was vacant thirteen days, after he had ſat in it nine years, two months and ten days.

S. EVARISTVS.

EVARISTVS, by Birth a *Grecian*, his Father a *Jew*, named *Juda*, of the City of *Bethleem*, lived in the time of *Trajan*.

Trajan.

A Prince whom I take delight to mention, becauſe of his ſingular Juſtice and Humanity. Who behav'd himſelf ſo acceptably towards all Men, that, as far as the times of *Juſtinian*, the uſual acclamation of the People at the Creation of an Emperour was this, *Let him be more proſperous than* Auguſtus, *and better than* Trajan. He was of a temper ſo courteous and condeſcending in viſiting the Sick, in ſaluting his Friends, in keeping Feſtivals, and being preſent at Collations to which he was invited, that the fault which ſome found with him for that very reaſon, gave the occaſion of that worthy noble ſaying of his, *That a Prince ought to be ſuch to his Subjects, as he deſires they ſhould be to him.* He impartially diſtributed Honours, Riches, and Rewards to all that deſerved well; never oppreſs'd any Man to fill his own Exchequer; granted advantageous Immunities to poor Cities; repaired the High-ways, and made the paſſages of Rivers ſecure; made a high large Mole at the Haven of *Ancona*, to break the violence of the Waves; and indeed neither acted nor deſigned any thing in his whole life but what tended to the publick Good. Having gain'd ſuch Renown both in War and in Peace, he died of a Flux, at *Seleucia* a City of *Iſauria*, in the eighteenth year and ſixth month of his Reign. His Bones were afterward convey'd to *Rome*, and there buried in an Urn of Gold, in the *Forum* which himſelf had built, under the winding Pillar of an hundred forty foot high, which is yet to be ſeen.

Papias.

Quadratus.

But we return to *Euariſtus*, who, as *Damaſus* tells us, divided the City of *Rome* among the Presbyters into Pariſhes; ordained that ſeven Deacons ſhould attend the Biſhop, whenever he preached, to be witneſſes of the truth of his Doctrine; and moreover, that the accuſation of a Layman ſhould not be admitted againſt a Biſhop. He held *Decembrian* Ordination, at which he made ſix Presbyters, two Deacons, and five Biſhops. In his time lived *Papias*, Biſhop of *Hierapolis*, an Auditor of *John*, a Perſon who took not ſo much delight in the Records of the ancient Diſciples of our Lord, as in the living Converſation of *Ariſtion* and *John* the Elder. And it is manifeſt, from the order he obſerves in ſetting down the names of theſe two after the mention of almoſt all the Apoſtles, that the *John* whom he places among the Apoſtles, was a diſtinct Perſon from this *John* the Aged, whom he reckons after *Ariſtion*. He was certainly a very learned Man, and followed by many, as particularly *Irenæus*, *Apollinarius*, *Tertullian*, *Victorinus Pictavienſis*, and *Lactantius Firmianus*. Now alſo *Quadratus*, a Diſciple of the Apoſtles, did, by his Induſtry and Courage, ſupport the Church of God as much as might be in ſuch dangerous times. For when *Adrian*, who now paſſed the Winter at *Athens*, and was admitted a Prieſt to the Goddeſs *Eleuſina*, began to perſecute the Chriſtians, *Quadratus* with his own hand preſented to him a very honeſt and rational Book of the Excellency of the Chriſtian Religion. The like did *Ariſtides*, an *Athenian* Philoſopher, converted to Chriſtianity; who at the ſame time with *Quadratus*, preſented to *Adrian* a Treatiſe, containing an account of our Religion. The effect of which Apologeticks was, that *Adrian* being convinc'd of the injuſtice of putting the Chriſtians to death without their being heard, wrote to *Minutius Fundanus* the Proconſul of *Aſia*, ordering, that no Chriſtian ſhould be executed, unleſs his guilt were proved by a credible Witneſs. As for our *Euariſtus*, ſome tell us that he was Martyr'd in the laſt year of *Trajan*; but they are more in the right, who are of opinion that he ſuffered under *Adrian*, before his being reconciled to the Chriſtians. For he was in the Chair nine years, ten months, two days, and was buried in the *Vatican*, near the Body of St. *Peter*, *October* the twenty ſeventh. The See was then vacant nineteen days.

Ariſtides.

S. ALEXANDER I.

ALEXANDER, a *Roman*, Son of *Alexander*, a Perſon of Wiſdom and Gravity far exceeding his years, held the Pontificate in the time of *Ælius Adrianus*.

Adrian.

This *Adrian*, who was Son to *Trajan*'s Coſin-German, at his firſt coming to the Empire, proved an Enemy to the Chriſtians, but afterwards (as ſhall be ſaid anon) upon knowledge of their Religion and Devotion, became very kind and propitious to them. From the great benefits which the *Roman* State receiv'd by his Government, he was called the Father of his Country, and his Wife had the Title of *Auguſta*. He was excellently well skill'd both in the *Roman* and *Greek* Languages, made many Laws, erected a goodly Library at *Athens*, being mightily pleas'd with the Learning and Converſation of *Plutarch*, *Sixtus*, *Agathocles*, and *Oenomaus* the Philoſopher; and at the requeſt of the *Athenians* compiled Laws for them according to the Model of *Draco* and *Solon*. But being admitted to the *Eleuſinian* Myſteries, he was very bountiful to the Citizens of *Athens*, and repair'd their Bridge broken down by an Inundation of the River *Cephyſus*. He built alſo a Bridge at *Rome*, called by his own Name, remaining to this day, and a ſtately Sepulchre in the *Vatican* near the River *Tyber*, which the Popes now make uſe of for a Citadel. Moreover, he made that moſt ſumptuous and ſtately *Villa*, now called *Old Tyber*, to the ſeveral parts of which he gave the Names of *Provinces*, and the moſt celebrated parts of the World. Coming to *Peluſium*, he was at great expence in adorning *Pompey*'s Tomb, and in *Britain* he built a Wall of ſixty miles to ſever the *Romans* from the Natives. And becauſe *Septicius Clarus*, the Captain of his Guards, and *Suetonius Tranquillus* his Secretary, with ſeveral others, had, without his leave, converſed ſomewhat more familiarly with his Empreſs *Sabina* than the Reverence of a Court admitted of, he remov'd them all, and put others into their Offices.

But to return to our *Alexander*, He was the firſt who, for the remembrance of Chriſts Paſſion at the Communion, added thoſe words, *Qui pridie quàm pateretur*, to the Clauſe *Hoc eſt corpus meum*. He ordained likewiſe that the Holy Water (as it is called) mix'd with Salt, and conſecrated by Prayer, ſhould be kept in Churches and in private Houſes, as a guard againſt Evil Spirits. Moreover, he inſtituted that Water ſhould be mingled with the Wine, at the Conſecration of the Elements, to ſignifie the Union of Chriſt with his Church; and that the Hoſt ſhould not be of leavened Bread as was formerly uſed, but of unleavened only, as being the more pure, and by which all occaſion of cavilling would be taken away from the *Ebionite* Hereticks, who were very much addicted to Judaiſm. In his time lived *Agrippa Caſtor*, who learnedly and effectually confuted the Books which *Baſilides* the Heretick wrote againſt the Holy Goſpel; expoſing to deriſion his Prophets *Barcabas* and *Barthecab*, and his great God *Abraxas*, Names invented by him to amuſe and terrifie the ignorant. This *Baſilides* died at that time when the Chriſtians were very much perſecuted and tormented by *Cochebas*, the Head of the Jewiſh Faction. But *Adrian* ſoon repreſs'd the pertinacy of this Rebel, and the whole Nation of the *Jews*, by an almoſt incredible ſlaughter of them; and then commanded that no *Jew* ſhould be ſuffered to enter *Jeruſalem*, permitting only Chriſtians to inhabit that City, and having repaired the Walls and Buildings of it, he called it after his own Name *Ælia*; *Marcus* being, after the expulſion of the *Jews*, choſen the firſt Gentile Biſhop of it. In the time of this Biſhop alſo *Sapphira* of *Antioch*, and *Sabina* a *Roman* Lady ſuffer'd Martyrdom for the Faith of Chriſt; and *Favorinus*, *Palæmon*, *Herodes Athenienſis*, and *Marcus Byzantius*, were famous Rhetoricians. Our *Alexander* having at three *Decembrian* Ordinations made five Presbyters, three Deacons, five Biſhops, was, together with his Deacons *Euentius* and *Theodulus*, crowned with Martyrdom, on the third day of *May*, and buried in the *Via Nomentana*, where he ſuffered, ſeven miles from the City. He was in the Chair ten years, ſeven months, two days. After his Death the See was vacant twenty five days.

Agrippa Caſtor.
Baſilides.

S. SIXTUS I.

SIXTUS a *Roman*, the Son of *Paſtor*, or, as others will have it, of *Helvidius*, held the Pontificate in the time of *Adrian*, to the Conſulſhip of *Verus* and *Anniculus*.

Which *Adrian* is reckoned in the number of the good Emperours, upon the account of his Liberality, Splendour, Magnificence and Clemency; an eminent inſtance of the laſt of which good qualities was this, That when a Servant run madly upon him with his Sword, he took no farther notice of the Action, than to order him a Phyſician to cure his Phrenzy. He viſited the Sick twice or thrice in a day; at his own charge he repair'd *Alexandria*, when it had been ruined by the *Romans*; he rebuilt the *Pantheon* in *Rome*, and made Aromatick Preſents to the People. Being at the point of Death, he is ſaid to have uttered theſe Verſes;

Animula, vagula, blandula,
Hoſpes, comeſq; corporis,
Quæ nunc abibis in loca,
Pallidula, rigida, nudula;
Nec, ut ſoles, dabis jocos?

He died of a Dropſie in the Two and twentieth year of his Reign, and was buried at *Puteoli* in *Cicero's Villa*.

Sixtus, out of his care of the Church, ordained, that the Elements and Veſſels of the Altar ſhould not be touched by any but the Miniſters, but eſpecially not by Women; and that the *Corporal*, as it is called, ſhould be made of Linen-cloth only, and that of the fineſt ſort. That no Biſhop who had been cited to appear before the Apoſtolick See, ſhould at his return be received by his Flock, unleſs he brought with him Letters Communicatory to the People. At the Celebration he inſtituted the Hymn, *Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of Sabbaoth*. Anciently the Office of the Communion was performed in a plain manner, and unclogg'd with human mixtures. *St. Peter* after Conſecration uſed the *Paternoſter*; *James* Biſhop of *Jeruſalem* added ſome Rites, *Baſil* more, and others more ſtill. For *Celeſtine* brought in the *Introitus* of the Maſs, *Gregorie* the *Kyrie Eleyſon*, *Teleſphorus The Glory be to God on High*, *Gelaſius, the Firſt, the Collects*, and *Hierom* the Epiſtle and Goſpel. The *Alelujah* was taken from the Church of *Jeruſalem*, the *Creed* was inſtituted by the Council of *Nice*, *Pelagius* introduced the Commemoration of the Dead, *Leo* the Third the *Incenſe*, *Innocent* the Firſt, the *Kiſs of Peace*, and *Sergius* ordered the *Agnus Dei* to be ſung. During the time of *Sixtus*, the Perſecution being ſo ſharp, that few had courage enough to own the Profeſſion of Chriſtianity, and the Chriſtian *Gauls* deſiring a Biſhop, to them he ſends *Peregrine* a Citizen of *Rome*, who having confirmed them in the Faith, at his return ſuffered Martyrdom in the *Via Appia*, at the place where Chriſt appeared to *Peter* as he was leaving the City. His Body was by the Faithful carried into the *Vatican*, and buried near *St. Peter*. *Aquila* alſo by Birth a *Jew* of *Pontus*, who with his Wife *Priſcilla* had been baniſh'd by the Edict of *Claudius*, is ſaid by ſome to have lived till this time; he was the ſecond Tranſlator of the Old Teſtament, after the Seventy, who lived in the time of *Ptolomy Philadelphus*. As for *Sixtus*, having at three *Decembrian* Ordinations, made Eleven Presbyters, eleven Deacons, and four Biſhops, he was Crowned with Martyrdom, and Buried in the *Vatican* near *S. Peter*, having been in the Chair Ten years three months, and one and twenty days. Upon his Death, the See was vacant only two days.

S. TELESPHORUS.

Antoninus Pius.

TELESPHORUS, a *Grecian*, the Son of an *Anchorete*, lived in the time of *Antoninus Pius*.

This Emperor was by his Fathers ſide a *Ciſalpine* Gaul, and, together with his Sons *Aurelius* and *Verus*, he ruled twenty two years and two Months, with ſo much moderation and Clemency, that he deſervedly gain'd the name of *Pius*, and Father of his Country. He was never ſevere or rigorous towards any Man in the recovery of his own private Debts, or the exaction of publick Taxes, but would ſomtimes wholly remit them by burning the Bonds of his Debtors. What ſhall I need ſay more of this Prince, who in the opinion of all good Men, was for Religion, Devotion, Humanity, Clemency, Juſtice, and Modeſty equal to *Numa Pompilius* himſelf? When the River *Tiber* had by an inundation much impaired many private and publick buildings, he was at vaſt expence to aſſiſt the Citizens in reſtoring the City to its former ſtate again. Moreover, it was he who carried on thoſe prodigious Works which appear to this day, for improving the Havens of *Tarracina* and *Cajeta*; and I believe that the famous winding Pillar, from which the principal Ward of the City is denominated, was built at his charge.

As for our *Teleſphorus*, he ordained that a *Quadrageſimal* Faſt ſhould be obſerved before *Eaſter*; and that on the Feaſt of the Nativity of our Lord, there ſhould be three Maſſes; one at Midnight, at which time Chriſt was born in *Bethlehem*, another at break of Day, when he was diſcovered to the Shepherds; the third, at that hour wherein the Light of Truth, and our Redemption ſhone in the World (*i. e.* when our Saviour was Crucified) whereas at other times, the celebration of the Maſs was forbidden till the third hour, or between the hours of nine and twelve a clock, the time when, as *St. Mark* tells us, he was faſtned to the Croſs. He alſo appointed that the Hymn, *Glory be to God on High*, ſhould be Sung before the Sacrifice. In his time *Juſtinus* a Philoſopher of *Neapolis*, a City of *Paleſtine*, labour'd ſucceſsfully in the defending Chriſtianity; preſented to *Antoninus* and his Sons, a Book which he had written againſt the *Gentiles*; and held a Dialogue with *Tryphon* a principal *Jew*. He wrote alſo very warmly againſt *Marcion*, who, adhering to the Hereſie of *Cerdo*, affirmed, that there were two Gods, the one Good, the other Juſt, as two contrary Principles of Creation and Goodneſs. He oppoſed likewiſe *Creſcens* the Cynick, as a Perſon gluttonous, fearful of Death, given over to Luxury and Luſt, and a Blaſphemer of Chriſt. But being at length by this Mans treacherous practices betray'd, he ſuffered in the cauſe of Chriſtianity. *Euſebius* writing of this Cynick, allows him only to have been a vain-glorious Pretender, but not a Philoſopher. At the ſame time the *Valentinian* Hereticks prevail'd, who were the followers of one *Valentinus* a Platoniſt; and held that Chriſt took nothing of the Body of the Virgin, but paſſed clean through her, as through a Pipe. Now alſo *Photinus* Biſhop of *Lyons*, a Man of ſingular Learning and Piety, as *Iſidore* tells us, ſuffered Martyrdom with great reſolution, being ninety years old. *Teleſphorus* having at four

Juſtin Martyr.

Decembrian Ordinations, made Fifteen Presbyters, Eight Deacons, Thirteen Biſhops, died a Martyr, and was buried in the *Vatican* near *S. Peter*. He was in the Chair Eleven Years, Three Months, Twenty two days. By his death the See was vacant Seven days.

S. HYGINUS.

HYGINUS an *Athenian*, Son of a Philoſopher, ſucceeded *Teleſphorus*, during the Empire of *Antoninus Pius*,

Whoſe extraordinary Merit compels me to add ſomthing farther in his praiſe, before I come to give an account of *Hyginus*. He was ſo far from the vanity of valuing himſelf upon the glory of his Arms, that he made it his buſineſs rather to defend the Provinces of the Empire, than to increaſe them; and had often that ſaying of *Scipio* in his Mouth, *That he had rather ſave one Citizen, than deſtroy a thouſand Enemies*: Being herein of a quite contrary temper to that of *Domitian*, who, from a conſcientiouſneſs of his own cruelty, did ſo hate and fear a multitude, that he would expoſe the *Roman* Army to the fury of its Enemies, on purpoſe that it might return home thinner, and leſs formidable. Moreover, *Pius* was ſo famous for his Juſtice, that ſeveral Princes and Nations did, at his Command, ceaſe their Hoſtilities, making him the Arbitrator of their differences, and ſtanding to his determination, as to the juſtice of their Pretenſions. For theſe admirable qualities, the *Romans*, after his much lamented death, in honour to his Memory, appointed Cirque-ſhews, built a Temple, and conſtituted a *Flamen*, with an Order, called by his Name.

Antoninus Pius.

At this time *Hyginus* prudently ſetled and confirm'd the ſeveral Orders and Degrees of the Clergy; and ordain'd the Solemn Conſecration of Churches, the number of which he would not have increas'd, or diminiſh'd, without leave of the Metropolitan, or Biſhop. He forbad alſo, that the Timber, or other Materials prepared for the building any Church, ſhould be converted to prophane uſes; yet allowing, that with the Biſhop's conſent, they might be made uſe of towards the erecting any other Church, or Religious Houſe. He likewiſe ordained that at leaſt one Godfather, or one Godmother ſhould be preſent at Baptiſm; and that no Metropolitan ſhould condemn, or cenſure, any Biſhop of his Province, until the Cauſe were firſt heard and diſcuſſed by the other Biſhops of the Province; though ſome make this later an Inſtitution of *Pelagius*, not *Hyginus*. In his time lived *Polycarp*, a Diſciple of *St. John* the Apoſtle, and by him made Biſhop of *Smyrna*; the moſt celebrated Man for Religion and Learning in all *Aſia*. He coming to *Rome*, reduc'd to the Orthodox Faith multitudes, who had been ſeduc'd into the Errors of *Marcion* and *Valentinus*; the former of which by chance meeting him, and asking *whether he knew him*; *Polycarp* anſwered, *That he knew him to be the firſt-born of the Devil.* For this Heretick denied the Father of our Bleſſed Saviour to be God the Creatour, who by his Son made the World. But afterwards in the time of *M. Antoninus*, and *L. Aurelius Commodus*, who raiſed the Fourth Perſecution, *Poly-*

Polycarp.

carp was burnt at *Smyrna* by order of the Proconſul. *Melito* alſo an *Aſian*, Biſhop of *Sardis*, and a Diſciple of *Fronto* the Oratour, preſented to *M. Antoninus* a Book written in defence of the Chriſtian Doctrine. *Tertullian* highly extolls his Parts, and ſays, that moſt of the Chriſtians look'd upon him as a Prophet. Moreover, *Theophilus* Biſhop of *Antioch* wrote a Book againſt the Hereſie of *Hermogenes*, who aſſerted an uncreated Eternal matter, coeval to God himſelf. As for *Hyginus* himſelf, having deſerved well of the Church, and, at three *Decembrian* Ordinations, made fifteen Presbyters, five Deacons, ſix Biſhops, he died, and was buried in the *Vatican* by *S. Peter, January* 11. He was in the Chair four years, three Months, four days. The See was then vacant four days.

S. PIVS I.

PIVS, an *Italian* of *Aquileia*, Son of *Ruffinus*, lived to the time of *M. Antoninus Verus*, who, together with his Brother *L. Aurelius Commodus* joyntly exercis'd the Government nineteen years.

Verus and *Commodus.*

Theſe two Princes undertook a War againſt the *Parthians*, and manag'd it with ſuch admirable courage and ſucceſs, that they had the honour of a Triumph decreed to them. But not long after *Commodus* dying of an Apoplexy, *Antoninus* was ſole Emperor; a Perſon who ſo excell'd in all good qualities, that it is more eaſie to admire than to deſcribe him; for both becauſe from his very youth no change of his Fortune made any alteration in his Mind or his Countenance, and becauſe it is hard to determine, whether the ſweetneſs of his natural temper, or the knowledge he learnt from *Cornelius Fronto*, were more conſpicuous in him, he deſervedly gain'd the Sirname of *Philoſopher*. And indeed (as *Capitolinus* tells us) he was often wont to uſe that ſaying of *Plato*, *That then the World would be happy, when either Philoſophers were Princes, or Princes would be Philoſophers.* He was ſo great a lover of Learning, that even when he was Emperor, he would be preſent at the Lectures of *Apollonius* the Philoſopher, and *Sextus Plutarch*'s Nephew; and he ſet up the Statue of his Tutour *Fronto* in the Senate-Houſe, as a Teſtimony of the Honour he had for him.

Hermes.

At this time *Pius* maintain'd a ſtrict Friendſhip and Familiarity with *Hermes*, who wrote the Book called *Paſtor*; in which Book he introduces an Angel in the form of a Shepherd, who commanded him to perſuade all Chriſtians to keep the Feaſt of *Eaſter* on a Sunday, which *Pius* accordingly did. Moreover, he ordained, that every Convert from the *Cerinthian* Hereſie, ſhould at his reception into the Church be baptized. At the requeſt of *Praxedes* a devout Woman, he Dedicated a Church at the Baths of *Novatus* to her Siſter S. *Pudentiana*; to which himſelf made ſeveral Donations, oftentimes celebrated Maſs in it, and built a Font, which he Bleſſed and Conſecrated, and at which he Baptized a great number of Proſelytes. He alſo appointed a puniſhment upon thoſe who were negligent in handling the Body and Blood of Chriſt. If through the Prieſts careleſneſs, any of the Cup had fallen upon the ground, he was to undergo a Penance of Fourty days; if it fell upon the Altar, of three days; if upon the Altar-cloth, of Four days; if upon any other Cloth, of Nine days. Whitherſoever it fell, he was to lick it up if he could, if not, the Board or Stone to be waſh'd or ſcraped, and what of it could be recovered thereby, either burnt, or laid up in the Sacrary. In his time, *Apollinaris* Biſhop of *Hierapolis* in *Aſia* was much eſteem'd, who wrote an excellent Apology for Chriſtianity, and preſented it to *Antoninus* the Second. He wrote alſo againſt the *Montaniſts*, who, with their two fanatick Propheteſſes *Priſcilla* and *Maximilla*, pretended, that the deſcent of the Holy Ghoſt was not upon the Apoſtles, but themſelves; an Opinion which they had learn'd from their Leader *Montanus*. At this time alſo the Learned *Tatianus* was in good reputation, ſo long as he ſwerved not from the Doctrine of his Maſter *Juſtin Martyr*; but afterwards being puff'd up with a great conceit of himſelf, he became the Author of a new Hereſie, which being propagated by one *Severus*, the followers of it were from him call'd *Severians*. They drank no Wine, ate no Fleſh, rejected the Old Teſtament, and believed not the Reſurrection. Moreover, *Philip* Biſhop of *Crete* now publiſhed an excellent Book againſt *Marcion* and his followers, whoſe Errors were the ſame with thoſe of *Cerdo*. *Muſanus* alſo wrote a Book againſt the Hereticks, called *Encratitæ*, or the *Abſtemious*, who agreed in Opinion with the *Severians*, looking upon all carnal copulation as filthy and unclean, and condemning thoſe Meats which God hath given for the uſe of Mankind. But to return to *Pius*, having at Five *Decembrian* Ordinations made Nineteen Presbyters, Twenty one Deacons, Ten Biſhops, he died, and was buried in the *Vatican*, near *S. Peter*, *July* 11. He was in the Chair Eleven years, Four Months, Three days; and by his death the See was vacant Thirteen days.

Apollinaris.

Tatianus.

S. ANICETUS.

ANICETUS, a *Syrian*, the Son of one *John de Vicomurco*, lived in the time of *Antoninus Verus*, concerning whom we have ſpoken in the Life of *Pius*.

Which *Antoninus*, though he were a great Philoſopher, yet neglected not the perſuit of Military Glory. For together with his Son *Commodus Antoninus*, he did with great courage and ſucceſs gain a Victory and a Triumph over the *Germans*, *Marcomanni*, *Quadi*, and *Sarmatæ*. At his firſt enterprizing this War, his Exchequer being ſo low, that he had not Money to pay his Soldiers, he expos'd to publick Sale, in the *Forum Trajani*, all the Furniture of his Palace, and all the Jewels of his Empreſs: But afterwards returning home victoriouſly, to thoſe who were willing to reſtore the Goods they had bought, he refunded what they paid for them; but uſed no force againſt thoſe who refus'd to relinquiſh their bargains. Upon this Victory, he was very liberal to all who had done any good ſervice to the Publick; to ſome Provinces he remitted their accuſtomed Tribute; he cauſed to be publickly burnt in the *Forum* the Writings by which any Man was made a Debtor to the Exchequer; and by new

Conſtitutions moderated the ſeverity of the old Laws. By this means he became ſo much the darling of the People, that any Man had a particular brand of Infamy ſet upon him, who had not *Antoninus* his Effigies in his Houſe.

Egeſippus.

Anicetus, that the reputation of the Church might not ſuffer by the extravagancy of a few Men, ordained, that no Clergyman ſhould, upon any pretence, wear long Hair; and that no Biſhop ſhould be Conſecrated by fewer than three of the ſame Order, (a Conſtitution which was afterwards confirmed by the Council of *Nice*;) and that at the Conſecration of a Metropolitan, all the Biſhops of the Province ſhould be preſent. Moreover, he ordained, (as *Ptolomy* tells us) that no Biſhop ſhould implead his Metropolitan, but before the Primate, or the See Apoſtolick; (this being alſo a Conſtitution, which was afterwards confirm'd by the Council of *Nice*, and ſeveral ſucceeding Biſhops of *Rome*;) and that all Arch-Biſhops ſhould not be called *Primates*, but only thoſe of them who have a particular Title to that denomination; the Primates having alſo the ſtyle of *Patriarchs*, whereas the others are ſimply Arch-Biſhops, or Metropolitans. In his time *Egeſippus* was a great propugner of the Chriſtian Faith; who, as an imitator of their manner of ſpeaking, of whoſe Lives he had been a diligent obſerver, in a very plain unaffected ſtyle, wrote a Hiſtory of Eccleſiaſtical Affairs from the Paſſion of our Lord, to the Age in which he lived. He ſays of himſelf, that he came to *Rome* in the time of *Anicetus*, whom he calls the Tenth Biſhop from *S. Peter*, and that he ſtaid there to the time of *Eleutherius*, who had been Deacon to *Anicetus*. He inveighed much againſt Idolaters for building ſumptuous Monuments and Temples to the Dead; as particularly, *Adrian* the Emperor, who, in honour to his Darling *Antinous*, had inſtituted ſolemn Games and Prizes at the City which he built, and called by his Name *Antinoe*, and alſo erected a Temple, and appointed Prieſts for his Worſhip. Some ſay that *Dionyſius* lived in the Pontificat of *Anicetus*; but Writers are in this place very confuſed in their Chronology, ſome placing *Pius* firſt, others *Anicetus*, and ſo they are in their Hiſtories too. However, in an Hiſtory of things ſo remote, and of which through the negligence of the Ancients, we have ſo ſlender an account, it will be better to ſay ſomthing of the matters themſelves, though it be ſome time before or after they were tranſacted, than altogether to paſs them by in ſilence. As for *Anicetus*, having, at five *Decembrian* Ordinations, made nineteen Presbyters, four Deacons, nine Biſhops, he received a Crown of Martyrdom, and was buried in the Sepulchre of *Caliſtus*, in the *Via Appia*, *April* the ſeventeenth. He was in the Chair eleven years, four months, and three days, and by his Death the See was vacant ſeventeen days.

S. SOTER.

SOTER a *Campanian* of *Fundi*, Son of *Concordius*, lived in the time of *L. Antoninus Commodus*.

Commodus.

This *Commodus* was (as *Lampridius* plays upon his Name) very incommodious and hurtful to all his Subjects; being in nothing like his Father, ſave that he alſo, thanks to the Chriſtian Soldiers for it, fought ſucceſsfully againſt the *Germans*. In that War, when the Army of *Commodus* was in great ſtraits for want of Water, 'tis ſaid, that at the Prayers of the Chriſtian Legion, God ſupplied, and refreſhed the *Romans* with Rain from Heaven, and at the ſame time deſtroyed the *Germans* with Thunder-ſhot. The truth of which the Emperor himſelf teſtified by his Letters. But at his return to *Rome*, he utterly renounced all Virtue and Goodneſs, and ſhamefully gave himſelf up to all manner of Luxury and Uncleanneſs. He uſed, in imitation of *Nero*, to combate with the Gladiators, and oftentimes encountred with wild Beaſts in the Amphitheatre; many of the Senators he put to death, and thoſe eſpecially whom he obſerved to be more conſpicuous for extraction or merit.

Soter, diverting his mind from the contemplation of this wretched Scene of things to the care of Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, decreed, That no Deaconeſs ſhould touch the Altar-cloth, or put the Incenſe upon the Cenſer, at the time of Celebration. There is extant an Epiſtle of his concerning that matter, written to the Biſhops of *Italy*. He ordained likewiſe that no Woman ſhould be accounted a lawful Wife, but She whom the Prieſt had formally Bleſſed, and whom her Parents had with the uſual Chriſtian Solemnities given to her Husband. This Conſtitution he made, to remove the danger and ſcandal that was incident to new-married Perſons, from the juggling Magical tricks of lewd Fellows. Indeed *Gratian* aſcribes this Decree to *Euariſtus*, but whoſe due it is, I leave the Reader to judge, for it matters not much, whether it be attributed to the one, or the other. During the Pontificat of *Soter*, as *Euſebius* tell us, lived *Dionyſius* Biſhop of *Corinth*, a Perſon of ſo great Parts and Induſtry, that he inſtructed not only the People of his own City and Province, but alſo by his Epiſtles, the Biſhops of other Cities and Provinces; For being throughly acquainted with the Writings of *St,Paul*, he could the more eaſily keep others within the bounds of their Duty, by the Authority which his Learning and Sanctity had gained him. *Theodotion* alſo an *Aſian*, Scholar to *Tatianus*, wrote ſeveral things in defence of our Religion; and in particular, he very handſomly expoſed *Apelles* the Heretick, for worſhipping a God whom he profeſſed he did not know; for he denied Chriſt to be truly a God, and affirmed him to be only in appearance a Man. Some ſay, that the *Cataphrygian* Hereſie was at this time ſet on foot by *Montanus*. Moreover, *Clemens* a Presbyter of *Alexandria*, and Maſter to *Origen*, was now a great Writer; among other things, he was Author of *Strom. lib.9. Hypotypoſeω, lib.8.* and one Book againſt the *Gentiles*. There are ſome who make *Pinytus*, a Perſon of admirable Eloquence; *Oppian*, a fa-

Apelles.

Cataphrygæ.

mous Poet, who wrote the *Halieutics*, or Books concerning Fiſhes; and *Herodian* the Grammarian, Contemporaries to our Biſhop *Soter*; who having at five *Decembrian* Ordinations made eight Presbyters, nine Deacons, eleven Biſhops, he died, and was buried in the *Via Appia*, in the Sepulchre of *Caliſtus*. He was in the Chair nine years, three months, twenty one days. And the See was vacant twenty one days.

S. ELEUTHERIUS.

ELEUTHERIUS, a *Grecian* of *Nicopolis*, Son of *Habundius*, lived alſo in the Reign of *L. Antoninus Commodus*.

Commodus.

For whoſe flagitious Life the City of *Rome* ſmarted ſorely; for in his time the Capitol, being fired with Lightning, together with the famous Library, which had coſt the Ancients ſo much care in collecting, were conſumed; nor did the neighbouring Houſes eſcape the ſame calamity. Not long after another Fire brake forth, in which the Temple of *Veſta*, the Palace, and a good part of the City were burnt to the ground. He was of ſo raſh and freakiſh a humour, that he cauſed the Head of a vaſt *Coloſſe* to be taken off, and that of his own Statue to be placed in the room of it; and in imitation of *Auguſtus*, he would needs have a Month of his own name, ordering *December* to be called *Commodus*. But theſe things were ſoon changed after his Death, and himſelf adjudged an Enemy to Mankind, ſuch an hatred and deteſtation did all Men entertain of his Villanies. He was ſtrangled in the Twelfth year and ſeventh month of his Reign.

Lucius Rex

Eleutherius, ſoon after his entrance upon the Pontificate, received a Meſſage from *Lucius* King of *Britain*; wherein he expreſſed a deſire, that he and his Subjects might become Chriſtians. Hereupon *Eleutherius* ſends *Fugatius* and *Damianus*, two very Religious Men, to that Iſland, to Baptize the King and his People; there were at that time in *Britain*, Twenty five Heathen Prieſts called *Flamens*, and among them three, ſtyled *Arch-flamens*, in the place of which, as *Ptolomy* ſays, were conſtituted three Arch-biſhops; the ancient Church being wont to fix Patriarchs there, where, in the time of Gentiliſm, *Proto-flamens* had been ſeated. Furthermore, *Eleutherius* ordained, that no Perſon ſhould Superſtitiouſly abſtain from any ſort of Meat which was commonly eaten: And that no Clergy-man ſhould be degraded before he were legally found guilty of the Crime laid to his Charge; following herein the example of our Saviour, who ſo patiently bore the fault of *Judas*, being not yet convicted, though really guilty, that whatſoever he acted in the mean time by virtue of his Apoſtleſhip, remained firm and valid. He alſo prohibited the paſſing Sentence againſt any Perſon accuſed, unleſs he were preſent to make his Defence; which was afterward confirmed by *Damaſus*, and the Pontifical Laws. In his Pontificate the Church enjoy'd Peace and Tranquillity, and Chriſtianity was wonderfully propagated in the World, but eſpecially at *Rome*, where many of the beſt quality with their Wives and Children received the Faith, and were Baptized. Only

Apollonius.

Apollonius, a great Oratour, was now a Martyr, having firſt in the

Senate made an excellent Speech in favour of Chriſtianity, the doing of which was then a capital Crime. *Apollonius* being dead, ſeveral Hereſies very much prevailed. For the Sect of the *Marcionites* was divided into ſeveral Parties; ſome of them owning but one Principle, or God; others two; others three; thereby utterly undermining the credit of the Prophets, and other Diſcoverers of revealed Religion. Moreover, *Florinus* and *Blaſtus* ſet up new Figments againſt the Truth, aſſerting God to be the Author of all kinds of evil, in contradiction to that Text, that *every thing which God made was good.* Gen. 1. Oppoſite to theſe were the *Quotiliani*, who denied God to be the Author of any kind of evil, in equal contradiction to that other Text, *I the Lord create evil.* Eſay 45. Some are of opinion, that *Galen* of *Pergamus*, the famous Phyſician, and *Julian* the great Lawyer, and *Fronto* the Rhetorician, lived at this time; though whether they did or no, in ſo great a confuſion of time and Story, I ſhall neither affirm nor deny. But I dare be confident concerning *Modeſtus* and *Bardeſanes*, the former of which wrote againſt *Marcion*, the later againſt *Valentinus*, being now as ſtrenuous an Oppoſer, as he had been formerly a zealous Follower, of that Heretick. St. *Hierom*, upon the peruſal of his Books, tranſlated out of the *Syriack* Language into *Greek*, affirms this *Bardeſanes* to have been a wonderfully briſk ingenious Writer; *And if*, ſays he, *there be ſo much ſmartneſs in the Tranſlation, how much more ſhall we judge to be in the Original?* As for *Eleutherius*, having, at three *Decembrian* Ordinations, made twelve Presbyters, eight Deacons, fifteen Biſhops, he died, and was buried near St. *Peter* in the *Vatican*, *May* 26. He was in the Chair fifteen years, three months, two days, and the See was vacant five days.

S. VICTOR I.

VICTOR, an *Aſian*, Son of *Felix*, was, as I believe, in the time of *Ælius Pertinax*.

Ælius Pertinax.

Which *Ælius* being ſeventy years of Age, was, from the Office of City-præfect created Emperour, by a Decree of the Senate. Being afterwards deſired to declare his Lady *Auguſta*, and his Son *Cæſar*, he refuſed both, ſaying, It was enough that he himſelf was Emperour againſt his Will. But undergoing the reproach of that unprincely Vice, Covetouſneſs, being ſo ſordid as to cauſe the half of a Lettuce or Artichoke to be ſerved up to his Table, he was, without any oppoſition, ſlain in the Palace by *Didius Julianus* the Lawyer, in the ſixth month of his Reign. *Julianus.* This is that *Julian*, who made the perpetual Edict, and who, in the ſeventh month after his coming to the Empire, was vanquiſhed and ſlain in a Civil War by *Severus* at *Pons Milvius*.

Victor, out of his care of the Affairs of the Church, decreed, that, according to a former conſtitution of *Eleutherius*, as *Damaſus* tells us, *Eaſter* ſhould be kept upon the *Sunday*, which fell between the fourteenth and twenty firſt day after the Phaſis, or appearance of the Moon in the firſt Month. *Theophilus*, Biſhop of *Cæſarea Paleſtinæ*, was obedient to this Decree, and wrote againſt thoſe who obſerved that Feaſt, as the *Jews* did their Paſſover, always upon the fourteenth day of the Moon, whatever day of the Week it happened to be. But *Polycrates*, Biſhop of *Epheſus*, very hotly declaimed againſt this Conſtitution, ſtifly contending, that according to ancient Cuſtom it ought to be celebrated preciſely on that day on which the *Jews* kept their Paſſover. For he maintain'd, that herein he followed the Example of St. *John* the Apoſtle, and others the Ancients. We, ſays he, obſerve the exact day, neither anticipating nor protracting it. Thus did *Philip*, who died at *Hierapolis*; thus did *John*, who leaned on our Lords Boſom; thus did *Polycarp*, *Thraſeas*, *Melito* and *Narciſſus*, Biſhop of *Hieruſalem*. Hereupon ſome tell us, that a Council was held in *Paleſtine*, at which were preſent *Theophilus*, *Irenæus*, *Narciſſus*, *Polycarp*, *Bacchylus*, all Biſhops of great Note in *Aſia*. But the whole matter was afterwards referr'd to the Council of *Nice*, in which it was decreed, that *Eaſter* ſhould be kept on the *Sunday* following the fourteenth day of the Moon, to avoid all appearance of Judaizing. *Victor* alſo ordained, that in caſes of neceſſity, Proſelytes might, at their deſire, be baptized in any kind of Water, or at any time of the Year. During his Pontificate there flouriſhed many learned Men. As for inſtance, *Appion*, who wrote the *Hexaëmeron*, or account of the ſix days work of Creation; *Paulus Samoſatenus*, who, together with *Theodotus*, held our Saviour to have been a mere Man; *Sixtus*, who wrote of the Reſurrection; and *Arabianus*, who publiſhed ſeveral Treatiſes of Chriſtian Doctrine. Now alſo one *Judas* wrote a Chronology to the tenth year of *Severus* the Emperour; wherein yet he is guilty of a miſtake, in aſſerting that Antichriſt would come in his time; an Errour into which I ſuppoſe him to have fallen, from the Obſervation he had made of the Cruelty, and other Vices, of the Age, which he ſaw now grown to ſuch an heighth, that he thought Almighty God could not bear with Mankind any longer. By which very thing *Lactantius* and St. *Auſtin* themſelves were after deceived. Our *Victor*, having firſt written ſome Books concerning Religion, died, and was buried near St. *Peter* in the *Vatican*, whoſe Feaſt we obſerve on the twenty eighth of *July*. He was in the Chair ten years, three months, ten days; and the See was vacant twelve days.

S. ZEPHYRINUS.

ZEPHYRINUS a *Roman*, Son of *Habundius*, lived in the time of *Severus* the Emperour.

Severus. Who being by birth an *African*, of the Town of *Leptis*, upon the death of *Julian* ſucceeded in the Empire, and took the Sirname of *Pertinax*. He was firſt an Officer of the Exchequer, then a Colonel in the Army, till, by ſeveral ſteps, he advanced himſelf to the Dignity of Imperator. He was of a very frugal temper; the cruelty of his Nature was heightened by the many Wars he had been engaged in; and he exerciſed great Valour in defending, and great Care in governing his Subjects. He was eminent not only for his skill in Arms, but in Letters too, taking very much delight in the ſtudy of Philoſophy. He conquer'd the *Parthians* and *Adiabeni*, and made *Arabia Interior* a Province of the *Roman* Empire. For this Atchievement he triumphed, and upon the Arch, erected to him in the Capitol, he was ſtyled *Parthicus, Arabicus* and *Adiabenicus*. Moreover, he adorned the City with publick buildings. For he made thoſe which from his own Name are called the *Severian* Baths, and erected the famous *Septizonium*; that part of which noble Pile that is now remaining, hardly eſcaped being pull'd down ſome years ago by order of Pope *Paul* the Second, to make the beſt of the ſtones.

But Biſhop *Zephyrinus* being more intent upon Eccleſiaſtical, than ſecular, Affairs, decreed, That every Deacon and Prieſt ſhould be Ordained in the preſence of the Faithful, both Clergy and Laity: Which was afterwards confirm'd in the Council of *Chalcedon*. He decreed likewiſe, that the Wine at the Communion ſhould not be conſecrated, as had been before uſed, in a Wooden Chalice, but in Glaſs. Though this Conſtitution was altered in following times; wherein order was given that it ſhould neither be in Wood, becauſe of its ſpongineſs, whereby ſome of the Sacrament might ſoak into it; nor of Glaſs, becauſe of its brittleneſs, and the danger of its being broken; nor of any ordinary courſe Metal, by reaſon of the ill taſte it might contract from it; but only in Veſſels of Gold or Silver, or at leaſt of Pewter; as appears in the Canons of the Councils of *Triburia* and *Reims*. He alſo ordained, that all Chriſtians of fourteen years of Age ſhould communicate every year upon *Eaſter-day*, which in after-times *Innocent* the Third extended not only to Communion, but Confeſſion too. He commanded likewiſe, that no Biſhop, being accuſed by his Patriarch, or Primate, or Metropolitan, ſhould have ſentence paſs'd againſt him but by the Authority of the See Apoſtolick. Laſtly, he ordained, that when the Biſhop celebrated, all his Presbyters ſhould be preſent. In his time flouriſhed *Heraclius*, who *Heraclius.*
wrote a Comment upon the Apoſtle; *Maximus*, who in a large Book *Maximus.*
decided the great Controverſie of this Age, (*viz.* concerning the Author of Evil, and the Original of Matter;) *Candidus*, who compoſed *Candidus.*
an *Hexaëmeron*; and *Origen*, who in the tenth year of *Severus Pertinax*, *Origen.*
a great Perſecution being rais'd againſt the Chriſtians, and his Father *Leonidas* put to death for his Religion, whom he himſelf being yet a Youth, did very much confirm in his conſtancy and Reſolution, was left with his Mother a Widow and ſix Brethren, in a very low condition; all his Fathers Eſtate being confiſcated, becauſe they owned Chriſt to be the true God. Hereupon he was forced to teach a Grammar-School, to get a Livelihood for himſelf and his Relations; and among others he had for his Scholar *Plutarchus*, who afterwards became a Martyr. Not long after, applying himſelf wholly to Religion, he undertook the Office of a Catechiſt, or Preacher. He was a Perſon of very great Parts, and skill'd in all Languages, and kinds of Learning. He was wonderfully temperate and abſtemious as to Meat and Drink, and all other things; imitating the poverty of Chriſt, and for many years walking bare-foot; and moreover in his younger days he made himſelf an Example of that paſſage in the Goſpel, *There be Eunuchs which have made* Mat. 19. 12.
themſelves Eunuchs for the Kingdom of Heavens ſake. Many were ſo

encouraged in Religion by his Pattern, that they did with great conſtancy lay down their lives for Chriſtianity; and particularly a Woman named *Potamiena*, who was put to death by pouring ſcalding Pitch upon her Head. As for *Zephyrinus*, having at four *Decembrian* Ordinations, made thirteen Presbyters, ſeven Deacons, thirteen Biſhops, he died in the time of *Severus*, and was buried in the *Via Appia*, not far from the Sepulchre of *Caliſtus*, *Auguſt* the 26th. He was in the Chair eight years, ſeven months, ten days; and the See was vacant ſix days.

S. CALISTUS I.

CALISTUS, an *Italian* of *Ravenna*, Son of *Domitius*, lived in the time of *Severus*, an Emperour whoſe Fortune changed with his mind:

Severus.

For no ſooner did he raiſe the fifth Perſecution againſt the Chriſtians, but he was preſently expoſed to a multitude of dangers, and engaged in ſeveral Wars; on the one ſide by *Piſcennius Niger*, who was the cauſe of great Commotions in *Syria*; on the other by *Clodlus Albinus*, whom yet he vanquiſh'd with great ſlaughter in *Gaul*. But paſſing over from thence into *Britain*, being deſerted of his Friends, and accompanied only with calamities, he died at *York* in the fifth year of his Empire, leaving behind him two Sons, *Baſſianus* and *Geta*; the later of which was look'd upon, and put to death, as a publick Enemy, both becauſe of his abominably diſſolute life, but eſpecially becauſe he had with his own hand ſlain *Papinian*, the great *Aſylum* of the Civil Law. But *Baſſianus* receiving from the Senate the Name of *Antoninus*, became poſſeſs'd of the Empire; and took the Sirname of *Caracalla* from a kind of long Veſts, which he beſtow'd, by way of Largeſs, among the People. He was of a Nature more cruel than his Father; and ſo impotently vitious, that there was no kind of Villany which he was not guilty of. He is ſaid to have ſlain his Brother *Geta*, and to have married his own Step-mother. He left behind him nothing great and magnificent to perpetuate his Memory, ſave only the *Antoninian* Baths, (which bore his Name as being begun by him, but were indeed finiſh'd by the Emperour *Alexander Severus*) and the Cauſey he made in the *Via Nova*. He made it Capital for any to wear Amulets about their Necks for the cure of Quartan or Tertian Agues. But at length, undertaking a War againſt the *Parthians*, he was ſurprized by his Enemies between *Edeſſa* and *Charræ*, and ſtabb'd in the ſeventh year of his Reign, as he was alighting off his Horſe to eaſe Nature.

Caracalla.

But, during the moſt confuſed ſtate of things, and under the Government of the moſt diſſolute Emperours, *Caliſtus* was not at all diverted from his purpoſe of Eſtabliſhing a ſolemn Faſt three times in the year, to be obſerved on the Sabbath, or *Saturday*, particularly to implore a bleſſing upon the Fruits of the Earth, Corn, Wine and Oyl; *viz.* in the fourth month, the ſeventh and the tenth, beginning the year according to the cuſtom of the *Jews*. Though afterwards he changed his opinion, and appointed it at the four ſeaſons of the year, *viz.* Spring, Summer, Autumn, and Winter; at which times, in ſucceeding Ages, holy Orders were conferr'd, which before was uſed to be only in the Month of *December*. He alſo ordained, that Accuſations againſt Clergymen ſhould not be admitted of in any Court, if the Informers were either infamous, or liable to juſt ſuſpicion, or avowed Enemies of the Accuſed. Moreover, he adjudged thoſe to be Hereticks, who maintained, That Prieſts, after they were once convicted of any notorious Crime, were not to be reſtored to their former Dignity, though they ſhewed never ſo great ſigns of their repentance. *Damaſus* tells us, that he built Saint *Maries* Church in *Traſtevere*; but I cannot imagine that of his founding to be the magnificent vaſt one, which continues there at this time, ſince in thoſe days of frequent Perſecution, all things were carried ſecretly, and the Chriſtians had only ſmall Chappels, and thoſe private and hidden, and for the moſt part under-ground. He likewiſe built a Burial-place, called by his own Name, in the *Via Appia*, at the very place where the Aſhes of a multitude of Martyrs had been formerly repoſited; ſo that the Reader muſt not think it ſtrange that we have already ſaid of ſeveral that they were buried in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus*, though it had not that Name till now. I my ſelf, with ſome of my Friends, have religiouſly went to view it, wherein the Aſhes and Bones of the Martyrs are yet to be ſeen, and Oratories and Chappels in which the Chriſtians privately communicated, when, through the Edicts of ſome Emperours, they could not do it publickly. In his time lived *Tertullian*, an *African*, the Son of a *Proconſular* Centurion, whom St. *Hierom* reckoneth next to *Victor* and *Apollonius*, the principal of the *Latin* Writers. He was a Man of excellent Parts, and wrote a multitude of Books. I have ſeen (ſaith *Hierom*) at *Concordia*, a little Town in *Italy*, one *Paul*, who ſaid, that when he was very young, he was at *Rome* acquainted with St. *Cyprian*'s *Amanuenſis*, who aſſured him, that St. *Cyprian* never paſſed a day without the reading of *Tertullian*. But having continued half his life-time a Presbyter at *Rome*, through the Envy and Reproaches of the *Roman* Clergy, he afterwards turn'd *Montaniſt*, and wrote ſeveral Pieces againſt the Orthodox Doctrine, particularly thoſe *de Pudicitiâ*, *de Monogamiâ*, and *de Jejuniis*. He alſo compoſed ſix Books againſt *Apollonius*. At the ſame time likewiſe *Origen* flouriſhed, and did great Service for the Church. For he oppoſed the Hereſie of the *Ebionites*, who aſſerted our Saviour to be a mere Man, the Son of *Joſeph* and *Mary*, and preſs'd the Obſervation of Moſaical Rites; both which Errours were maintained by *Symmachus*. Moreover, by his Learning he brought over to the Orthodox Faith one *Ambroſius*, who had been (as *Euſebius* tells us) a *Valentinian*, or (as *Hierom* will have it) a *Marcionite*; to whom, with *Protoctetus* a Presbyter, he dedicated his Book *de Martyrio*. *Porphyry*, that violent Oppoſer of Chriſtianity, and who was *Origen*'s profeſſed Adverſary, cannot yet ſometimes forbear commending him; calling him the moſt learned and Prince of Philoſophers, acknowledging that he was profoundly skill'd in Platoniſm, and finding no fault in him but his being a Chriſtian. St. *Hierom* himſelf ſays that he wrote ſix thouſand Volumes; though that Father, and St. *Auſtin* too, tell us, that he was erroneous in moſt of them, and particularly in his Book of *Government*, entituled Περὶ ἀρχῶν; yet *Pamphilius* the Martyr, and *Euſebius*,

Tertullian.

Origen.

ſebius, and *Ruffinus* a Prieſt of *Aquileia*, appear very much in his Praiſe and Defence. As for *Caliſtus*, having at five *Decembrian* Ordinations, made ſixteen Presbyters, four Deacons, eight Biſhops, he was crown'd with Martyrdom, and was buried in the Cœmetery of *Calepodius*, in the *Via Aurelia*, three miles diſtant from the City, *Octob.* 14th. He was in the Chair ſix years, ten months, ten days. The See was then vacant ſix days.

S. VRBANVS I.

VRBANVS, a *Roman*, Son of *Pontianus*, was Biſhop of *Rome* in the time of the Emperor *M. Aurelius Antoninus*, *Anno Dom.* 226. *V. C.* 970.

Antoninus.

This *Antoninus*, ſuppoſed to be the baſe Son of *Caracalla*, coming to *Rome*, and being advanced to the Empire not without an univerſal expectation of good from him, took the Name of *Heliogabalus* from the Sun, ſo called by the *Phœnicians*, to which he built a Temple, and was himſelf a Prieſt of it. But he led a life ſo contrary to the hopes and opinion Men had entertain'd of him, that he has left no other memory of himſelf, than that of his exorbitant Villanies, and all kinds of Debauchery. For he violated the Chaſtity of the *Veſtal* Virgins, made his Palace no better than a Stews, and in a rage commanded *Sabinus*, a Man of conſular dignity, (and to whom *Ulpian*, the famous Civilian, wrote) to be immediately put to death. He conferred all Places of Truſt and Honour upon the vileſt of Men, with whom he was wont ſometimes to make himſelf ſport after this manner: He would make them lie down with him at Supper, but it ſhould be upon large Bellows, which being raiſed and diſtended, they would all of a ſudden tumble down under the Table. He had ſuch a loud and undecent way of laughing, that, in a full Theatre, his Voice might be heard above all the Company. He was the firſt, among the *Romans*, who wore Velvet, and uſed Tables, and other Utenſils, of Silver. When ſome of his Friends adviſed him to beware that by his luxury he did not reduce himſelf to want; *Can I do better*, ſays he, *than to make my ſelf my own and my Wives Heir?* He was once ſo extravagantly freakiſh as to cauſe a Collection to be made of Ten thouſand pound weight of Spiders, from whence he pretended an eſtimate might be taken of the bigneſs of the City of *Rome*; and to get together ten thouſand Mice, and as many Weazels, and Rats. Theſe mad pranks, by degrees, rendred him ſo contemptible in the Eyes of all Men, that himſelf and his Mother were both ſlain in a Military Tumult. 'Tis ſaid, that ſome *Syrian* Prieſts having told him, that he ſhould undergo a violent Death; he thereupon fairly provided himſelf of a decent Scarlet Silken Halter to do his own work withal. He died in the fourth year of his Reign, at the time when the City of *Nicopolis* in *Paleſtine* (formerly called *Emmaus*) was built; *Africanus* the Hiſtorian, and Chronologer, undertaking an Embaſſie to promote that Affair.

Vrban, who lived in the time of this Monſter, not of *Diocleſian*, (as ſome would have it) by his eminent Piety and Learning, proſelyted multitudes to the Chriſtian Faith; and, among others, particularly *Valerianus*, an excellent Perſon, and contracted to St. *Cecilia*, with his Brother *Tiburtius*, both which afterwards ſuffered Martyrdom with great conſtancy of Mind; as did alſo the eſpouſed Virgin her ſelf, in her Fathers Houſe, which was, at her requeſt, conſecrated and made a Church by *Vrban*. The ſame *Vrban* alſo ordained, that the Church might receive Eſtates in Land or Houſes, given and bequeathed to her by any of the Faithful, but that the Revenues of them ſhould not be any ones property, but, for the common good, be diſtributed among the whole Clergy, to every one his ſhare; a Conſtitution long ſince antiquated through the Covetouſneſs and Rapacity of following Ages. Some attribute to him the diſtinction of the four ſtated annual Times of Faſting, or *Ember-Weeks*, which, through Mens Ignorance, were before kept very confuſedly. In his time lived *Tryphon*, one of *Origen*'s Diſciples, remarkable for the Book he compoſed concerning the *Red Heifer* in *Deuteronomy*. *Minutius Fœlix* alſo, a famous Pleader at *Rome*, wrote a Dialogue, in which he introduces a Chriſtian and an Heathen diſputing; beſides another Book againſt the Mathematicians, of which *Lactantius* makes mention. Moreover, *Alexander*, Biſhop of *Hieruſalem*, at this time founded the famous Library there, by which he has gained ſo great a Reputation. As for *Vrban* himſelf, having, at five *Decembrian* Ordinations, made nine Presbyters, five Deacons, nine Biſhops, he received a Crown of Martyrdom, and was buried in the Cœmetery of *Pretexatus*, in the *Via Tiburtina*; having been in the Chair four years, ten months, twelve days. And the See was vacant thirty days.

Tryphon.

Minutius Fœlix.

Alexander.

S. *PONTIANVS.*

P*ONTIANVS*, a *Roman*, Son of *Calphurnius*, lived in the time of the Emperour *Alexander*, in the Year Nine hundred ſeventy four from the building of *Rome*, and the Year of our Lord Two hundred forty five.

But between the Reign of *Heliogabalus* and *Alexander*, there are reckoned three other Emperours, *Macrinus*, *Diadumenus*, and *Albinus*; whoſe Names I intended to have left out, not only becauſe they governed but a very little while, but chiefly becauſe they did nothing memorable: Only *Albinus* became notorious to Poſterity for his Gluttony, eating, if we may believe the Authority of *Cordus*, an hundred large Peaches, ten choice Melons, five hundred dryed Figs, and four hundred Oyſters at one Meal. But to paſs by theſe Monſters of Men, I come to *Alexander*, a ſingular pattern of Virtue, who, being created Emperour by the favour of the Senate and the Army, immediately applyed himſelf to the ſetling of the Commonwealth, which had been very much impaired by the miſcarriages of former Princes. To which end he made uſe of *Julius Frontinus*, a very learned Man, and *Vlpian* and *Paul*, two excellent Civilians, as Aſſiſtants and Coadjutors

Alexander Severus.

in that Affair. He was ſo upright in all his dealings, that no man could ever complain of any Injury receiv'd from him: And ſo far removed from any kind of Vanity or Oſtentation, that he appear'd but once in the coſtly Robes belonging to his Office, while he was Conſul. All thoſe who, in their Addreſſes to him, were ſneakingly obſequious in their carriage, or affectedly complaiſant in their words, he would reject as fawning Fellows; for he was ſo wiſe and diſcerning, that no Man could impoſe upon him; one inſtance of which was his proceeding with *Turinus*, to whom, for his taking Bribes upon the appearance of his being the Emperour's mighty Favourite, he allotted this remarkable puniſhment, that being bound to a Stake in the Tranſitory *Forum*, a place of greateſt Concourſe, and the moſt publick thorow-fare, he ſhould be ſuffocated with ſmoak; the common Cryer in the mean time proclaiming theſe words, *He that ſold ſmoak, is puniſh'd with ſmoak.* Though his Mother *Mammæa*, as ſhe was a Woman, had a great love for Money, yet he was altogether above it; and for Jewels, he ſlighted them, as Feminine Trifles, being often wont to ſay, that in *Virgil* (whom he called the *Plato* of the Poets) there were more, and more precious Gems to be found. The Revenue which aroſe from Bawds, and Whores, and *Catamites*, he forbad to be laid up in the ſacred Treaſury, and judg'd it more fit to be aſſign'd to the defraying ſome publick Charge, as the repairing of the Theatre, the Cirque, the Amphitheatre, and the Stadium. Having, after great ſearch, gotten a Collection of the Images of Famous Men, he caus'd them to be ſet up in the Tranſitory *Forum*; and likewiſe finiſh'd and beautified thoſe which are, at this time, call'd the *Antonian Baths*, having been begun by *Antoninus Caracalla*. He had it in his deſign to acknowledge our Saviour to be a God, and build a Temple to him; and did actually ſet up the Effigies of Chriſt, and *Abraham*, and *Orpheus*, in his Domeſtick Chappel. Being renowned for ſo many excellent qualities, and created Emperor while he was very young, he immediately engag'd in a War againſt the *Perſians*, and bravely vanquiſh'd their King *Xerxes*. In reforming the Military Diſcipline he was ſo ſtrict, that he caſhier'd ſome whole Legions at once; which ſeverity of his was the occaſion of his being ſlain in a tumult of the Soldiers at *Mentz*.

Pontianus being now Biſhop of *Rome*, at the inſtigation of the Idol-Prieſts, both he, and *Philip* a Presbyter, were, at the Emperours Command, tranſported from the City of *Rome*, to the Iſland *Sardinia*, much about that time when *Germanns*, a Presbyter of *Antioch*, and *Beryllus*, a Biſhop of *Arabia*, were converted to the Truth by *Origen*. The Hereſie of *Beryllus* was his denial that Chriſt had any Being before his Incarnation. He wrote ſome ſmall Pieces, and particularly certain Epiſtles, in which he returns thanks to *Origen* for his ſound Doctrine. There is extant likewiſe a Dialogue between them, wherein *Origen* convicts *Beryllus* of Hereſie. As for *Origen* himſelf, he was a Perſon of ſo great Wit and Learning, that ſeven *Amanuenſes*, taking their turns, were ſcarce ſufficient for him. He had alſo as many Tranſcribers, and young Women well-ſkill'd in Writing, all which he wearied out with the copiouſneſs and fertility of his Inventions. Being ſent for from *Antioch* to *Rome* by *Mammæa*, the pious Emperours Mother, he was in great eſteem with her; and, having fully inſtructed her in the Chriſtian Faith,

Origen.

he return'd to *Antioch*. But ***Pontianus***, having ſuffered divers calamities and ſevere Torments for the Faith of Chriſt, at length died in *Sardinia*; his Body being afterward, at the requeſt of the whole Clergy, brought back with great Veneration to *Rome* by Biſhop ***Fabian***, and interred in the *Via Appia* in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus*. At the Ordinations which he held twice in the month of *December*, he made ſix Preſbyters, five Deacons, and ſix Biſhops. He was in the Chair nine years, five months, two days, and from his Martyrdom the See was vacant ten days.

S. ANTERVS.

ANTERVS, a *Grecian*, the Son of *Romulus*, was made Biſhop of *Rome* in the time of *Maximine*; who, *Anno V. C.* 987. having fortunately managed the War in *Germany*, was Elected Emperor by the Army, without any Authority of the Senate.

Maximine.

He was a Man of a mighty Stature, being above eight foot high; and had a Foot of ſuch a magnitude, that it is ſince become Proverbial, when Men ſpeak of a tall ſilly Fellow, to ſay, *He needs* Maximine'*s Hoſe*. His Wives Bracelet ſerved him only for a Ring; and his Appetite was ſo large, that he would drink a Rundlet of nine Gallons of Wine at a Sitting. He raiſed the Sixth Perſecution againſt the Chriſtians, but in the third year of his Reign, himſelf, together with his Son *Maximine* was ſlain by *Pupienus* at *Aquileia*, a City which he beſieged, and ſo an end was put to his Life and that Perſecution together; by which means *Mammea* a Chriſtian Lady, and the famous *Origen*, the Blood of both which he very much thirſted for, eſcaped his Cruelty. 'Tis reported, that during this Siege of *Aquileia*, when their Bow-ſtrings failed, the Women of the City ſupplied that want with their Hair; for which reaſon, in honour to thoſe Matrons, the Senate Dedicated a Temple to *Venus* the Bald.

Anterus was the firſt, who, for the ſake of one *Maximus* a Martyr, ordained, that the Acts of the Martyrs diligently ſearch'd after, ſhould be committed to Writing by certain Notaries appointed to that purpoſe, and being written ſhould be repoſited in the Treaſury of the Church, that ſo the memory of Good Men might not periſh with their Lives. He ordered likewiſe, that no Biſhop ſhould be Tranſlated from his firſt Biſhoprick to another, for his private Need or Benefit, but only for the ſake of the Flock committed to him, and by the leave of the Supreme Biſhop. A Conſtitution, which at this day is made void by common Practice; for now the Prelates, being intent upon their own Profit and Pleaſure, are always looking out for a fatter; Not that they are at all inquiſitive how they may feed a larger Flock, but the great Enquiry is, how much any See may be made worth yearly. There is very little diſcourſe among them concerning the care of Souls, but very much concerning the increaſe of their Revenues; that thereby they may be able to keep more Horſes, and have a greater Retinue of uſeleſs lubberly Servants. In his time flouriſhed *Julius Africanus*, an

Julius Africanus.

eminent Writer, who, as *Euſebius* tell us, founded a famous Library at *Cæſarea*. This *Julius* in the Reign of *M. Aurelius Antoninus*, undertook an Embaſſie for the re-building the City of *Emmaus*, which, as I have already ſaid, was afterwards called *Nicopolis*. He wrote alſo an Epiſtle to *Origen*, ſhewing that the Story of *Suſanna* was not received among the *Jews*; againſt whom *Origen* afterwards penn'd a large Epiſtle upon that Argument. At this time likewiſe flouriſhed *Geminus*, a Preſbyter of the Church of *Antioch*, and *Heraclas* Patriarch of the Church of *Alexandria*. As for *Anterus* himſelf, having conſecrated only one Biſhop, he ſuffered Martyrdom, and was interr'd in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*, on the third of *January*. He was in the Chair eleven years, one month, twelve days, and the See was then vacant thirteen days.

S. FABIANVS.

FABIANVS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Fabius*, continued from the Reign of *Gordianus* and *Philip*, to that of the Emperor *Decius*.

Gordianus. *Gordianus* getting the Empire, and having given a mighty defeat to the *Parthians* that made head againſt him, in his return home to Triumph, was ſlain by the two *Philips*. His chief commendation was, that he is reported to have ſixty two thouſand Books in his Library.

Philip. *Philip*, *Anno V.C.* 997. having brought home his Army out of *Syria* into *Italy*, Reigned together with his Son, whom he joyned to him as a Partner in the Empire five years. He was the firſt Chriſtian Emperor, and 'tis ſaid of him, that he never preſumed to go to the Holy Myſteries, before he had confeſſed. After the third year of his Reign, the thouſandth year from the building of the City being compleated, he cauſed to be celebrated the Secular Games, which were wont to be repeated every hundredth year. They were firſt inſtituted by *Valerius Poplicola* after the expulſion of the Kings, and had their name from the Latin word *ſeculum*, which ſignifies the ſpace of an hundred years. But by the fraud of *Decius*, both the *Philips* were ſlain, though in divers places; the Father being put to death at *Verona*, the Son at *Rome*.

Fabianus diſtributed the ſeveral Regions of the City among the ſeven Deacons, by whom the Acts of the Martyrs written by the Notaries were to be collected, and digeſted, for the example of others, who profeſſed the Faith of Chriſt. He alſo built Monuments in the Cœmeteries for the honour of the Martyrs. Further, he ordained, that every year at ſome Sacrament the *Chriſm*, or Holy Oyl, ſhould be new conſecrated, and the old burnt in the Church. In his time ſprang up the *Novatian* Hereſie. *Novatianus.* For *Novatianus* a Presbyter of the City of *Rome*, out of an eager deſire of being Biſhop, put all things into a great diſorder, that the Pontificat might not come into the hands of *Cornelius*, who was Succeſſor to *Fabianus*. Having ſeparated himſelf from the Church, he gave to himſelf and his followers, the Denomination of the *Pure*; and denied, that Apoſtates, though truly penitent, ought to be received into the Church. Upon this occaſion a Council of ſixty Biſhops, as many Presbyters, and ſeveral Deacons was held at *Rome*, in which the opinion of *Novatianus* was condemned as falſe, for that, according to the example of our Saviour, Pardon is to be denied to no man that repents. At the ſame time *Origen* oppoſed the Heretical Doctrine of certain Perſons, who affirmed, that the Souls of Men died with their Bodies, and were both together to be raiſed again at the Reſurrection; as alſo, that of the *Helcheſaites*, who altogether rejected the Apoſtle *St. Paul*, and aſſerted, that though a Man in his Torments ſhould outwardly deny Chriſt, yet he might be free from Guilt, provided his Heart were upright. The ſame Author wrote againſt *Celſus* an Epicurean, who oppoſed the Chriſtians; and ſent Letters concerning Religion to the Emperor *Philip* and his Wife *Severa*; and wrote alſo many things concerning the order of Faith to *Fabianus*. *Alexander* Biſhop of *Cappadocia*, having, from a deſire to ſee the Holy Places, made a Journy to *Jeruſalem*, was there compell'd by *Narciſſus* Biſhop of that City, and now grown Old, to be his Aſſiſtent in the adminiſtration of that Biſhoprick. But the perſecution under *Decius* growing hot, at the ſame time that *Babylas* ſuffered Martyrdom at *Antioch*, he being carried to *Cæſarea*, was there put to death for the Faith of Chriſt. As for *Fabianus*, (concerning whom it is commonly believed, that, when enquiry was made for a Succeſſor to *Anterus*, a Dove lighted upon his Head in the ſame ſhape with that, which deſcended upon the Head of *Jeſus* at *Jordan*) he received a Crown of Martyrdom, after that at five Ordinations, which he held in the Month of *December*, he had ordained twenty two Preſbyters, ſeven Deacons, eleven Biſhops; and was interr'd in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*, *Jan.* the 19th. He was in the Chair fourteen years, eleven months, eleven days, and by his death the See was vacant ſix days.

S. CORNELIUS.

CORNELIUS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Caſtinus*, lived in the times of the Emperour *Decius*,

Who being born at *Buda* in *Hungary*, upon the death of the two *Philips*, aſſumed the Empire, proving a bitter Enemy to the Chriſtians, becauſe thoſe *Philips* had been favourers of their Religion. But having with his Son *Caſar* Reigned only two years, he was ſo ſuddenly cut off by the *Goths*, that not ſo much as his dead Body was ever found. A juſt Judgment upon him, who, raiſing the ſeventh Perſecution, had put to death a multitude of moſt Holy Men. *Decius.*

During the Pontificat of *Cornelius*, whoſe judgment was, that Apoſtates upon their Repentance, ought to be received, *Novatus* irregularly ordained *Novatianus* and *Nicoſtratus*; upon which occaſion the Confeſſors, who had fallen off from *Cornelius*, being of the ſame Opinion with *Maximus* the Presbyter and *Moyſes*, reconciled themſelves to the Church again, and thereby gained the name of *Confeſſors* indeed. But not long after, theſe Hereticks preſſing hard upon him, *Cornelius* is baniſhed to *Centumcellæ*; to him *Cyprian* Biſhop of *Carthage*, being himſelf impriſon'd, wrote Letters, by which he came to underſtand, both the calamity of his Friend, and the confirmation of his own Exile. There are extant alſo other Epiſtles of *Cyprian* to *Cornelius*, full of Religion and Piety, but the choiceſt of them is accounted to be that, wherein he accuſes and condemns *Novatus*, a certain Diſciple of his. Concerning the ſame Hereſie, *Dionyſius* B. of *Alexandria*, who had once been Scholar to *Origen*, wrote to *Cornelius*; and in another Epiſtle reproves *Novatianus*, for having deſerted the Communion of the *Roman* Church, and pretending that he was forced againſt his Will, to take the Pontificat upon him; to whom he thus replies, That thou wert, (ſays he,) O *Novatian*, choſen to that Dignity againſt thy Will, will appear when thou doſt voluntarily leave it. *Cornelius* before he went into baniſhment, at the Inſtance of *Lucina* a Holy Matron, by night removed the Bodies of *St. Peter* and *St. Paul* out of the publick Burial places, where they ſeemed to be leſs ſecure; that of *S. Paul* was by *Lucina* herſelf repoſited in ground of her own, in the *Via Oxienſis*, near the place where he ſuffer'd, and that of *Peter* was by *Cornelius* laid near the place where he alſo was Martyr'd, not far from the Temple of *Apollo*. But when *Decius* came to underſtand, that *Cornelius* had received Letters from *Cyprian*, he cauſed him to be brought from *Centumcellæ* to *Rome*; and in the Temple of *Tellus*, the City Prefect being preſent, he thus expoſtulates with him, *Are you* (ſays he,) *reſolv'd to live thus contumaciouſly, that neither regarding the gods, nor fearing the commands and threatning of Princes, you keep a correſpondence tending to endanger the publick Weal?* To whom *Cornelius* replied, *That the Letters which he receiv'd, and return'd, were only concerning the Praiſes of Chriſt, and the deſign of the Redemption of Souls, but contain'd nothing in them tending to the Diminution of the Empire.* At this *Decius* being enraged, gave order, that the Holy Man ſhould firſt be ſcourged with a kind of Whips, that had ſmall globes of Lead faſtned to the end of them; that afterwards he ſhould be carried to the Temple of *Mars* to pay Adoration to his Image, and upon his refuſal ſo to do, that he ſhould be put to death. The good Man, as they were leading him to Puniſhment, diſpoſed of what he had to *Stephen* the Arch-deacon; and afterwards upon the fifth of *May* was beheaded. *Lucina*, with ſome of the Clergy, buried his Body by night in a Grotto of hers, in the *Via Appia*, not far from the Cemetery of *Caliſtus*. There are ſome who write, that the Biſhop ſuffered under *Gallus* and *Voluſianus*, but I rather give credit to *Damaſus*, who affirms *Decius* to have been the Author of his Martyrdom. *Cornelius* held two Ordinations in the Month of *December*, in which he made four Presbyters, four Deacons, ſeven Biſhops. He ſate in the Chair Two years three days, and by his death the See was vacant Thirty five days.

S. LVCIVS I.

Gallus.

Æmilianus.

Valerianus.

Gallienus.

LVCIVS, by Birth a *Roman*, his Father's Name *Porphyrius*, was choſen Biſhop, when *Gallus Hoſtilianus* was Emperor. *Gallus* aſſociated to himſelf in the Goverment, his Son *Voluſianus*; in whoſe times there aroſe ſo great a Plague to revenge the cauſe of Chriſtianity, that there were few Families, much leſs Cities and Provinces, which had not their ſhare in the publick Calamity. But while *Gallus* and *Voluſianus* were engaging in a Civil War againſt *Æmilianus*, who had attempted an alteration of the Government, they were both kill'd at *Terani*, before they had compleated the ſecond year of their Empire. *Æmilianus*, a Perſon of obſcure Birth, was ſlain e're he had poſſeſs'd his uſurped Power three months; and ſoon after *Valerianus* and *Gallienus* were choſen Emperors, the former by the Army in *Rhetia* and *Noricum*, the later at *Rome* by the Senate. Their Goverment proved very pernicious to the *Roman* State, by the means of their own Puſillanimity and the Cruelty they exerciſed againſt the Chriſtians. For both the *Germans* had marched forward as far as *Ravenna*, laying all waſte wherever they came with Fire and Sword: and alſo *Valerianus* himſelf making War in *Meſopotamia*, was taken priſoner by the *Parthians*, and forced to live in the moſt ignominious ſervitude; for *Sapores* King of *Perſia* made uſe of him for a Footſtool when he got up on Horſeback. A puniſhment which juſtly beſell him for this reaſon, that as ſoon as he was ſeiz'd of the Empire, he was the Eighth from *Nero* who commanded that the Chriſtians ſhould be put to Tortures, be made to worſhip Idols, or upon their refuſal be put to death. *Gallienus* being terrified by this manifeſt Judgment of God, ſuffered the Chriſtians to live quietly. But it was now too late, for by the Divine permiſſion, the *Barbarians* had already made Inroads upon the *Roman* borders; and certain pernicious Tyrants aroſe, who overthrew at home what was left undeſtroyed by the Foreign Enemy. *Gallienus* hereupon leaves the care of the Publick, and ſpending his time very diſſolutely at *Milain*, was there ſlain.

S. Cyprian.

Lucius upon the death of *Voluſianus*, being releaſed from baniſhment, at his return to *Rome*, ordained, that every Biſhop ſhould be accompanied wherever he went with two Presbyters, and three Deacons, as witneſſes of his Life and Actions. In his time ſuffered Saint *Cyprian*; who was firſt a Profeſſor of Rhetorick, and afterward, as *St. Hierom* tells us, at the perſuaſion of *Cæcilius* the Presbyter, from whom he took his Sir-name, becoming a Chriſtian, he gave his Eſtate to the Poor. Having been firſt ordained a Presbyter, and then Biſhop of *Carthage*, he was put to death under *Gallus* and *Voluſianus*. His Life and Martyrdom were excellently well writ by *Pontius*, a Presbyter and his Companion in Exile. And it ought not to be forgotten, that *Cyprian* before he died, was reconciled to the Opinion of the Church of *Rome*, that Hereticks were not to be re-baptized, but to be receiv'd without any further Ceremony, than that of Impoſition of Hands; a matter about which there had been formerly a great Controverſie between him and *Cornelius*. But to return to *Lucius*; before his Martyrdom, which he ſuffered at the Command of *Valerianus*, he delivered up his Eccleſiaſtical Power to *Stephanus* the Arch-deacon. He conferred Holy Orders thrice in the Month of *December*, ordaining four Presbyters, four Deacons, ſeven Biſhops. He was interred in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*, *Aug.* the 25th. He was in the Chair three years, three months, three days, and by his death the See was vacant thirty five days.

S. STEPHANUS I.

STEPHANUS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Julius*, was choſen Biſhop, when the *Roman* Empire ſeem'd to be utterly ruin'd; and particularly, at the time when *Poſthumus* exerciſed his Uſurped Power in *Gallia*, though not without great advantage to the Publick.

Poſthumus.

Victorinus.

For he Governed very well ten years together, freed the Country from Hoſtility, and reſtored that Province to its ancient Form. But being afterwards kill'd at *Mentz* in a tumult of the Soldiers, *Victorinus* ſucceeded him, who was indeed an excellent Soldier, but being exceſſively incontinent and adulterous, was ſlain at *Cologne*.

Malchion Presbyter.

Stephanus applying himſelf to the regulation of the Church, ordained, that the Prieſts and other Miniſters ſhould not uſe their Sacred Veſtments any where but in the Church, and during the performance of Divine Offices; leſt otherwiſe they ſhould incur the Puniſhment of *Belſhazzar* King of *Babylon*, for touching the Holy Veſſels with prophane hands. Concerning the Re-baptization of thoſe who returned to the Faith, he was of the ſame Judgment with *Cornelius* his Predeceſſor, and thought it by no means lawful to communicate with thoſe who re-baptized them; Whereupon *Dionyſius*, who had formerly concurred in Opinion about the matter with thoſe of *Carthage* and the *Eaſt*, both his and their Sentiments of it being now altered, writes to *Stephen*, and encourages him from the aſſurance that both the *Aſian* and *African* Churches were now reconciled to the Judgment of the *Roman* See, concerning it. About the ſame time *Malchion* a Presbyter of *Antioch*, a Perſon of extraordinary Eloquence, became very uſeful to the Church of God, in writing againſt *Paulus Samoſatenus* the Biſhop of that place, who endeavoured to revive the Opinion of *Artemon*, affirming Chriſt to have been a mere Man, and that he had no Exiſtence till he was conceived by the Virgin *Mary*. An Opinion which being afterwards condemned in the Council of *Antioch* by general conſent; this *Malchion* in the name of the Synod wrote a large Epiſtle to the Chriſtians concerning it. As for *Stephanus*, when he had by his Example and Perſuaſion converted a multitude of *Gentiles* to Chriſtianity, being ſeized by *Gallienus*, as ſome ſay, or elſe by thoſe, who upon the Edict of *Decius* were appointed to perſecute the Chriſtians, he himſelf, together with many others his Proſelytes, was hurried away to Martyrdom; and having ſuffered, he was interred in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the

Via Appia, *Auguſt* the 2d, after that he had at two *Decembrian* Ordinations, made ſix Presbyters, five Deacons, three Biſhops. He was in the Chair ſeven years, five months, two days; and the See was vacant two and twenty days.

S. *SIXTUS* II.

SIXTUS, an *Athenian*, of a Philoſopher became a Chriſtian, the *Decian* and *Valerian* Perſecution yet continuing.

But it will not be foreign to our preſent purpoſe to go on, as we have begun, to give ſome account of the other Tyrants, till we come to the true Succeſſor. *Victorinus* therefore being ſlain in *Gallia*, *Tetricus* a Senator, being at that time Governor of *Aquitain*, was in his abſence choſen Emperor by the Soldiers. But while theſe things were tranſacting in *Gallia*, *Odenatus* overcomes the *Perſians*, defends *Syria*, and ſeizeth *Meſopotamia* as far as *Cteſiphon*.

At this time in *Ptolemais*, anciently called *Barce*, a City of *Pentapolis*, there was broach'd a Doctrine, full of Blaſphemies againſt God the Father, and againſt Chriſt, whom it denied to be the Son of the moſt high God, and the Firſt-born of every Creature, and againſt the Holy Ghoſt, whoſe Being it diſowned. The Aſſertors of it were called *Sabellians*, from *Sabellius* the Author of this perverſe Sect. What ſhall I ſay of that carnal Opinion of *Cerinthus*? who affirmed, that Chriſt ſhould perſonally Reign upon the Earth a thouſand years, (from whence, by the *Greeks*, he was called a *Chiliaſt*.) Being himſelf a Man of unbounded Luſt and Luxury, he feigned a great plenty of delicious Viands and a great variety of beautiful Women to be the principal Ingredients of the happineſs of that Kingdom. Of the ſame Opinion likewiſe was *Nepos*, a Biſhop in ſome parts of *Egypt*, who affirmed, that the Saints were to Reign with Chriſt on the Earth, in the higheſt enjoyment of all ſenſual Delights and Pleaſures; (from whom his brutiſh followers were called) *Nepotiani*. *Sixtus* had it ſome time in his mind to baffle and ſuppreſs theſe Opinions, but being accuſed for Preaching the Faith of Chriſt, contrary to the Emperor's Edict, he was taken and led to the Temple of *Mars*, where he muſt either offer Sacrifice to the Idol, or upon his refuſal be put to death. As he was going forth to puniſhment, *Laurence* his Arch-deacon thus beſpake him; *Whither art thou going, O my Father, without thy Son? Whither, O beſt of Biſhops, art thou haſtning without thy Attendents?* To whom *Sixtus* anſwered, *I do not forſake thee, O my Son; there are yet greater conflicts behind, which thou art to undergo for the Faith of Chriſt; within three days, thou, as a dutiful Deacon, ſhalt follow me thy Biſhop; in the mean time, if thou haſt any ſtock lying by thee, diſtribute it all to the Poor.* On the ſame day with *Sixtus*, which was the eighth of *Auguſt*, there were executed ſix Deacons, *viz. Feliciſſimus*, *Agapetus*, *Januarius*, *Magus*, *Innocentius*, *Stephanus*. And on the third day after, *Auguſt* the tenth, the ſame *Lawrence*, with *Claudius* the Sub-deacon, and *Severus* the Presbyter, and *Creſcentius* the Reader, and *Romanus* the Door-keeper, were

Sabellius.

Cerinthus.

Nepos.

all put to death together, though with ſeveral kinds of Tortures; among which, it is ſaid, that *Laurence* was broiled upon a Gridiron, *Vincentius* who had been Scholar to *Sixtus*, being gone into *Spain*, could not be preſent at this Martyrdom. *Sixtus*, during his Pontificate having at two *Decembrian* Ordinations made four Presbyters, ſeven Deacons, two Biſhops, his Body was interred in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*. The other Martyrs lye in the Cœmetery of *Prætextatus* in the *Via Tiburtina*. *Sixtus* ſat in the Chair two years, ten months, twenty three days. And the See was vacant thirty five days.

S. DIONYSIVS.

DIONYSIVS, whoſe original *Damaſus* could not trace, being of a Monk advanced to the Pontifical Dignity, forthwith allotted to the ſeveral Presbyters in the City of *Rome* their ſeveral Churches and Cœmeteries, and to others elſe-where diſtributed their reſpective Pariſhes and Dioceſſes; that ſo every one might be confined within his own bounds and limits.

Claudius.

His contemporary Emperor I take to have been *Claudius*, who when by conſent of the Senate, he had undertaken the Goverment, made War upon, and with incredible ſlaughter defeated the *Goths*, who had for fifteen years together waſted *Illyricum* and *Macedonia*. Hereupon it was decreed by the Senate, that in the Council-houſe a golden Shield, in the Capitol a golden Statue, ſhould be erected to his Honor. But falling ſick at *Sirmium*, he died before the ſecond year of his Empire was compleated. Upon his death, *Quintillus* his Brother was ſtraightway choſen Emperor by the Army; a Perſon of ſingular moderation, and the only Man who deſerved to ſucceed his Brother; but he alſo Governed a very little time, being ſlain in the ſeventeenth day of his Reign.

Quintillus.

Paulus Samoſatenus.

During the Pontificate of *Dionyſius*, *Paulus Samoſatenus*, deſerting the Orthodox Faith, revived the Hereſie of *Artemon*. This *Paul* being made Biſhop of *Antioch*, in the room of *Demetrianus*, behaved himſelf with exceſſive haughtineſs and affectation; for as he paſſed along, he affected to read and dictate Letters, a great throng of Attendants going before, and following him; ſo that for the ſake of his Arrogance, multitudes were very ſtrongly prejudiced againſt the Chriſtian Religion. But had they lived in our times, wherein Pride and Pomp, not to ſay Luxury it ſelf, are at their heighth; what would they think, to ſee Prelates led on by ſo many young Sparks, and brought up by a crowd of Presbyters, all mounted upon high-fed and gay-trapped Horſes? Certain I am, they would abhor and execrate them, and ſay, that they were falſe and hypocritical pretenders to the Religion of the bleſſed Jeſus. But I return to *Paul*, whom I may more ſecurely reprove. He was highly ſelf-opinionated and ambitious, and denied our Saviours Eternal Generation, or that he had a Being till his Conception of the Bleſſed Virgin. For this reaſon at the Council of *Antioch*, he was publickly condemned by the conſent of all the Biſhops that were preſent; but eſpecially by the Sentence of *Gregory* Biſhop of *Cæſarea*, a moſt holy man, who was preſent at the Council, and afterwards ſuffered Martyrdom for the faith of Chriſt. *Malchion* alſo, a Presbyter of *Antioch*, diſputed and wrote much againſt this *Paul*, for the reaſon that I have already mentioned. *Dionyſius* himſelf could not be at this Council becauſe of his great Age; but of all the tranſactions there he had full intelligence given him by *Maximius* Biſhop of *Alexandria*. *Dionyſius* dying, was buried in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus*; after that at two *Decembrian* Ordinations he had made twelve Presbyters, ſix Deacons, ſeven Biſhops. He ſat in the Chair ſix years, two months, four days; and the See was vacant ſix days.

S. *FELIX* I.

FELIX, a *Roman*, Son of *Conſtantius*, lived in the time of *Aurelianus*,

Aurelianus.

Who came to the Empire *A. V. C.* 1027, and being an excellent Soldier gain'd a great Victory over the *Goths* at the River *Danow*. From thence paſſing into *Aſia*, at a place not far from *Antioch*, by the terror of his Name rather than by fighting, he overcame *Zenobia*, who from the time that her Husband *Odenatus* had been ſlain was poſſes'd of the *Eaſtern* Empire. Her he led in Triumph, together with *Tetricus*, by his defeating of whom at *Chaalons*, *Gallia* was again recovered. Yet by the Humanity and Clemency of *Aurelianus*, *Zenobia* lived all her time very honourably in the City, from whom the *Zenobian* Family, in *Rome*, derives its Original; and *Tetricus* being ſaved, was afterwards made Governor of the *Lucani*. The Emperor now applying himſelf to works of peace, repaired the Temple of *Apollo*, and the Walls of the City with great Magnificence. But not long after raiſing the ninth Perſecution againſt the Chriſtians, the Divine Vengeance meeting with him, he was ſlain at a ſmall Fort between *Conſtantinople* and *Heraclea*, called *Zenophrurium*.

Felix, out of the great regard he had to the honour of the Martyrs, ordained, that upon their account Maſſes ſhould be celebrated yearly; and that the Sacrifice of the Maſs ſhould be celebrated by no other perſons but ſuch as were in holy Orders, and in no places but ſuch as were conſecrated, caſes of neceſſity being always excepted. But if through the age or loſs of Records it were doubtful concerning any Church, whether it had been conſecrated or no, he commanded that it ſhould be conſecrated anew; ſaying, that nothing could properly be ſaid to be repeated, of which it is uncertain whether ever it were once done at all. During his Pontificate, one *Manes* a *Perſian* had the Impudence to profeſs himſelf to be the Chriſt, and that he might gain the greater credit to his Impoſture, he aſſociated to himſelf twelve Diſciples. But as that *Manes* was deteſted and abhorred for his pride and blaſphemy, ſo *Anatolius* the Biſhop of *Laodicea* was as much extolled and magnified for his Religion and Learning. At the ſame time al-

Manes.

ſo *Saturninus*, relying upon the aſſiſtance of his Army, enterpriz'd the building of a new *Antioch*; but when it appeared that he deſigned to invade the Empire too, he was ſlain at *Apamæa*. *Felix*, after that, at ſeveral *Decembrian* Ordinations, he had made nine Presbyters, ſeven Deacons, five Biſhops, ſuffered Martyrdom, and was buried in the *Via Aurelia*, *May* the 30th. in a Church which he had built, two miles diſtant from the City. He ſat in the Chair four years, three Months, fifteen days; and the See was vacant ſeven days.

S. EVTYCHIANVS.

EVTYCHIANVS, a *Tuſcan*, his Fathers Name *Maximus*, was in the time of the Emperor *Aurelianus*.

Tacitus.

Florianus.

Who being ſlain, was ſucceeded by *Tacitus*, a man who both for his Valour and Juſtice, was certainly very fit for Government, but he was ſlain in *Pontus*, in the ſixth month after he came to the Empire; as was alſo his Succeſſor *Florianus* in *Tarſus*, before he had reigned three months.

Dorotheus.

Anatolius.

Eutychianus ordained, that the Fruits of the Earth, as Beans and Grapes, *&c.* ſhould be bleſſed upon the Altar; and alſo that no perſons ſhould bury the Martyrs in any but Purple Veſtments, unleſs with his knowledge and leave. Some write, that in his time *Dorotheus* the Eunuch flouriſhed, a man queſtionleſs of very great skill in the *Greek* and *Hebrew* Language; and with whoſe Learning, 'tis ſaid, the Emperor *Aurelianus* was wonderfully delighted. For in the beginning of his Reign, he was ſuch a Favourer of the Chriſtians, that he ſeverely cenſured the Sect of *Paulus Samoſatenus*. But being afterwards corrupted by evil Counſels; and, as hath been ſaid, raiſing a Perſecution againſt the Chriſtians, having ſent Diſpatches concerning that Affair to the ſeveral Governors of Provinces, he was cut off by the Divine Hand. *Euſebius* when he was young, was an Auditor of *Dorotheus* at his Expoſitions of Scripture. At this time alſo *Anatolius*, an *Alexandrian* Biſhop of *Laodicea*, a man of great Learning, wrote ſeveral excellent things in Mathematicks and Divinity; and was very ſevere againſt the *Manichæan* Hereſie, which then very much prevailed. Theſe *Manichees*, to their other Errors, brought in two Subſtances, the one good, the other evil; and held, that Souls flowed from God, as from a Fountain. The Old Teſtament they altogether diſown'd, and received but ſome parts of the New.

Eutychianus, after that, at ſeveral Ordinations, he had conſecrated fourteen Presbyters, five Deacons, nine Biſhops, was crowned with Martyrdom, and buried in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus*, *July* the 25th. He ſat in the Chair one year, one month, one day; and by his Death the See was vacant eight days. There are ſome who ſay, he lived in the Pontificate eight years, ten months; but I rather give credit to *Damaſus*, who is the Author of the former Aſſertion.

S. CAIVS.

CAIVS, a *Dalmatian*, the Son of *Caius*, a kinſman of the Emperor *Diocleſian*, lived in the times of *Probus*, *Carus* and *Carinus*.

Probus. *Carus.*

Probus, a perſon renowned for Military skill, having undertaken the Government, was very ſucceſsful in recovering *Gallia* that had been poſſeſs'd by the *Barbarians*. He alſo vanquiſh'd *Saturninus*, who was attempting to uſurp the Empire in the *Eaſt*, and *Proculus* and *Bonoſus* at *Cologne*. But this Valiant and Juſt man was notwithſtanding ſlain in a Tumult of the Soldiers at *Sirmium*, in the ſixth year of his Reign. After whom *Carus Narbonenſis* entred upon the Empire, and held it two years. He having admitted his two Sons *Carinus* and *Numerianus* to a ſhare in the Government, and having in the *Parthian* War taken *Celænæ* and *Cteſiphon*, two famous Cities, was in the Camp ſlain by a Thunderbolt. *Numerianus*, who was returning with his Father, was murthered by the fraud of his Father-in-law *Arrius Aper*. But *Carinus*, a perſon moſt diſſolutely lewd, was overcome, after a ſharp and doubtful Engagement, by *Diocleſian* in *Dalmatia*; and at length ſuffered the juſt puniſhment of his Villanies.

Victorinus. *Pamphilus.*

Caius ſtated the ſeveral Orders in the Church, by which, as by certain ſteps and degrees, the Clergy were to riſe to the Epiſcopal Dignity. Theſe were the Door-keeper, the Reader, the Exorciſt, the Acolythus, the Sub-deacon, the Deacon, the Presbyter and the Biſhop. He alſo, as *Fabianus* had done before him, allotted ſeveral Regions to the Deacons, who were to Regiſter and compile the Acts of the Martyrs. He ordained likewiſe, that no Laick ſhould commence a Suit of Law againſt a Clergy-man, and that no Pagan or Heretick ſhould have power to accuſe a Chriſtian. In his time lived *Victorinus* Biſhop of *Poictiers*, who wrote divers Commentaries on the Scriptures; and was very ſharp and ſevere againſt the Hereſies than prevailing, though he had greater skill in the *Latin* than the *Greek* Tongue, as *Hierom* will have it, who tells us, that the Senſe of his Writings was great, but the Style mean. *Pamphilus* alſo a Presbyter, and the intimate Friend of *Euſebius* Biſhop of *Cæſarea*, was ſo eagerly greedy of divine Learning, that with his own hand he tranſcribed a great part of *Origen*'s Books; which Books *Euſebius* affirms himſelf to have ſeen in the Library of *Cæſarea*, with as great ſatisfaction as if he had gained the Riches of *Cræſus*. The ſame *Pamphilus* wrote the Defence of *Origen*, as *Euſebius* himſelf alſo did not long after.

But in the Reign of *Diocleſian*, there ariſing againſt the Chriſtians a Perſecution ſharper than ever was before, *Caius* lay a long time concealed in certain Grotts and Vaults underground; but being at length diſcovered and taken from thence by the Perſecutors, together with his Brother *Gabinius* and his Niece *Suſanna*, he was crowned with Martyrdom, and buried in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*, *April* the 22d. Some write, that *Lucia*, *Agatha*, and *Agnes* became Martyrs not long after. *Caius* ſat in the Chair eleven years, four months, twelve days; in which time at four ſeveral *Decembrian* Ordinations, he made twenty five Presbyters, eight Deacons, five Biſhops; and by his death the See was vacant eleven days.

S. MARCELLINVS.

MARCELLINVS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Projectus*, was in the times of *Diocleſian*, a *Dalmatian* of obſcure birth, and *Maximian*.

Dioclet ian.

Diocleſian, *A. V. C.* 1041. being elected Emperor by the Army, ſlew that *Aper* who had murthered *Numerianus*. But a Commotion ariſing in *Gallia*, which was a Sedition rather than a War, thither *Diocleſian* ſent *Maximianus Herculeus*, by whom the Peaſants were ſoon quell'd. But Wars breaking out on every ſide, *Diocleſian* not being able ſingly to bear the Choque of ſo many dangers, aſſociates *Maximian* by the name of *Auguſtus*, and *Conſtantius*, and *Maximian Galerius* by the name of *Caſars*. *Maximian Herculeus*, after that *Carauſius* was kill'd by the treachery of *Alectus*, in ten years time makes himſelf Maſter of *Britain*. And *Conſtantius*, after one unſucceſsful Engagement in *Gallia*, renewing the Fight a ſecond time, ſlew ſeveral thouſand *Germans*, who were Mercenaries there, and thereby reſtored peace to that Province. In the mean time *Diocleſian* took *Alexandria*, which being bravely defended by *Achilleus*, held out a Siege of eight months, and gratified his Soldiers with the plunder of it. But *Maximian Galerius* having behaved himſelf gallantly in two Fights againſt *Naſeus*, was at length routed between *Galietium* and *Carræ*; and his Forces being ſcattered and loſt in that unfortunate Battel, he is forced to fly to *Diocleſian*, who received him with ſuch diſdain, that it is ſaid, he ſuffered him in his Imperial Habit to run on Foot ſeveral miles before his Chariot. *Maximian* being netled at ſo foul a diſgrace, undertakes the War afreſh, and in the end becomes Victorious.

Affairs being thus ſetled, *Diocleſian* in the *Eaſt*, and *Maximian Herculeus* in the *Weſt*, commanded that the Churches ſhould be deſtroyed, and the Chriſtians tortured and put to death; and ſo raiſed the tenth Perſecution, which laſted longer, and was more vehement and bloody than any before. For now Bibles were publickly burnt; all Chriſtians who were in any Office ignominiouſly caſhier'd; Servants who continued conſtant to their Profeſſion, cut off of all hope of being ever made Free, and the Chriſtian Soldiers compell'd either to offer up ſacrifice to Idols, or elſe to lay down their Arms and their Lives together; by an Imperial Edict publickly affix'd in the *Forum*. This Edict, a certain perſon being ſo hardy as to pull down and tear in pieces, he was thereupon ordered to be fley'd, and to have Vinegar mix'd with Salt poured upon his raw fleſh till he died; which he patiently endured, being confirmed and encouraged in his Sufferings by *Dorotheus* and *Gorgonius*, two very eminent men. At the ſame time the Royal Palace at *Nicomedia* happening to be on fire, the Emperor groundleſly ſuſpecting it to be caus'd by the Chriſtians, commanded multitudes of them to be put to the ſword, and ſeveral others to be thrown alive into the flames. The ſame ſeverity was exerciſed againſt them in *Mitylene*, *Syria*, *Africa*, *Thebais* and *Egypt*, by the ſeveral Governors of thoſe Provinces, and in *Paleſtine* and *Tyre*, great numbers of them were expos'd to be devoured by wild beaſts. Indeed there was no kind of Torment could be invented, which the Chriſtians did not undergo. Some had their fleſh ſcraped and torn off with Potſherds, to others ſharp Reeds were thruſt under their Nails, and to the Women run up into their Privities. A certain City in *Phrygia* was ſet on fire and burnt to the ground, becauſe the Citizens, who were kept conſtant to the Faith by *Adauctus* a pious *Roman*, refuſed to offer ſacrifice to Idols. In the end their inhuman Tormentors came to ſuch a height of Cruelty, that they would firſt burn out their Eyes with ſearing-Irons, and then wreak the remainder of their fury and rage againſt them. At this time were alſo put to death, for the profeſſion of Chriſtianity, *Anthimus* Biſhop of *Nicomedia*, and *Lucianus* the Learned Presbyter of *Antioch*, and *Pamphilius* of *Cæſarea*, and *Philaas* an *Ægyptian* and Biſhop of *Thymis*; this laſt being beheaded, becauſe he had written aBook in the praiſe of the Martyrs, and had courage enough to tell his unjuſt Judges their own. I need not enumerate more Inſtances, ſince *Damaſus* affirms, that there were no leſs than ſeventeen thouſand Perſons of both Sexes, who ſuffered Martyrdom through the ſeveral Provinces in the ſpace of thirty days. I ſhall not mention thoſe who were baniſh'd to the Iſlands, or condemn'd to work in the Mines or melting-Houſes, or to dig Sand, or to hew Stones, or to other the like kinds of Servitude, whoſe numbers were almoſt infinite.

But our *Marcellinus*, being carried to the Heathen Sacrifices, and his Tormentors with menaces urging him to offer, he being overcome with fear, ſubmitted to their importunities, and join'd with them in their Idolatries. But not long after a Council of an hundred and eighty Biſhops being held at *Sinueſſa*, a City of *Campania*, thither goes *Marcellinus* clothed in Sackcloth, with all the marks of an humble penitent, and beſeeches them to inflict upon him the juſt puniſhment of his Cowardize and Inconſtancy. Yet in ſo numerous a Council there was not a man who would paſs any Sentence againſt him, they all agreeing that he had laps'd only after the ſame manner that *S. Peter* himſelf did, and that by his Tears and Sorrows he had already ſufficiently ſuffered for his Fault. To *Rome* returns *Marcellinus* full of Reſentment, haſtens to *Diocletian*, and boldly reproves him for cauſing him to ſacrifice to falſe Gods. Hereupon, by *Diocleſian*'s order, he was forthwith led to Execution, together with *Claudius*, *Cyrinus* and *Antoninus*, three other aſſertors of Chriſtianity. As he went along, he admoniſhed *Marcellus*, his Presbyter, not to ſubmit to the command of *Diocleſian* in matters appertaining to Religion; and forbad him to ſuffer his Body to be buried, ſaying, that ſince he had denied his Saviour, he was unworthy of the leaſt acts of Humanity. Though indeed by *Diocleſians* order the bodies of all theſe four Martyrs lay unburied in the High-way the ſpace of thirty ſix days. Afterwards at the Command of S. *Peter* the Apoſtle, who appeared to *Marcellus* in a Dream, they were buried in the *Via Salaria*, in the Cœmetery of *Priſcilla*, near the body of S. *Creſcention*, *May* the 27. After ſo long a ſeries of Miſeries, God at length, as *Euſebius* words it, opened his Eyes, and to free the Chriſtians from ſuch a

Plague, ſo wrought upon *Diocleſian*'s mind, that he voluntarily reſign'd the Empire and retired to a private Life. The ſame did alſo *Maximian*, his Partner in the Government, and as violent a Perſecutor as himſelf, who ſome years after being afflicted with divers diſeaſes, and after inceſſant Torment being ſmitten with diſtraction, and haunted with the reflections on his guilt, at laſt laid violent hands upon himſelf. It is the judgment of *Euſebius*, that this Calamity befel the Chriſtians, by Gods permiſſion, as a juſt judgment for the great corruption of manners, which the liberty and indulgence that they before enjoy'd, had occaſion'd among them all in general, but eſpecially among the Clergy, to the hypocriſie of whoſe Looks, the fraud of their Words, and the deceit of their hearts, the Divine Juſtice deſign'd to give a check, by this Perſecution. Indeed the Envy, Pride, Animoſity and Hatred, with which they ſtrove among themſelves, was grown to ſuch an heighth, that it ſeemed rather a Contention between haughty Tyrants than humble Churchmen: And having forgotten all true Chriſtian Piety, they did not ſo much perform as prophane the Divine Offices. But what Calamity ſhall our preſaging minds prompt us to expect in our Age, in which our Vices have encreas'd to ſuch a magnitude, that they have ſcarce left us any room for Gods mercy. It would be to no purpoſe for me to mention the great Covetouſneſs of the Clergy, eſpecially of thoſe who are in Authority; their Luſt, their Ambition, their Pomp, their Pride, their Idleneſs, their Ignorance of themſelves and of the Doctrine of Chriſtianity, their little Piety, and that rather feign'd than true, and their great Debauchery, ſo great, that it would be abominable even in the prophane; (for ſo they ſuperciliouſly call the Laicks,) this I ſay, it would be to no purpoſe for me to tell, ſince they themſelves do avow their ſins ſo openly, that one would think they judg'd Vice to be a laudable quality, and expected to gain Reputation by it. The *Turk*, (believe me, though I wiſh I may prove a falſe Prophet,) the *Turk* is coming, whom we ſhall find a more violent Enemy to Chriſtianity than *Diocleſian* or *Maximian*. He is already at the gates of *Italy*; while we idly and ſupinely wait the common ruin, every one conſulting rather his one private pleaſure, than the publick Defence. I come now again to *Marcellinus*, whom I would to God we might at laſt imitate, and return to a better mind. For he, as I ſaid before, finding his Error in falling away from his Profeſſion, came to himſelf, and did with great conſtancy ſuffer Martyrdom for the Faith of Chriſt; after that at two *Decembrian* Ordinations, he had made four Presbyters, two Deacons, five Biſhops. He was in the Chair nine years, two months, ſixteen days; and by his death the See was vacant twenty five days.

S. *MARCELLUS*.

MARCELLUS, a *Roman*, of the Region called *Via lata*, the Son of *Benedict*, was in the Chair from the time of *Conſtantius* and *Galerius*, to *Maxentius*.

Conſtantius and *Galerius*.

For *Diocleſian* and *Maximian* having laid down their Authority, *Conſtantius* and *Galerius* undertake the Government, and divide the Provinces between them. *Illyricum*, *Aſia*, and the *Eaſt*, fell to the ſhare of *Galerius*; but *Conſtantius* being a perſon of very moderate deſires, was contented with only *Gallia* and *Spain*, though *Italy* alſo was his by Lot. Hereupon *Galerius* created two *Cæſars*, *Maximinus* whom he made Governor of the *Eaſt*, and *Severus* to whom he intruſted *Italy*; he himſelf holding *Illyricum*, as apprehending that the moſt formidable Enemies of the *Roman* State would attempt their paſſage that way. *Conſtantius*, a man of ſingular meekneſs and clemency, ſoon gain'd the univerſal love of the *Gauls*, and the rather for that now they had eſcaped the danger they had been in before from the craft of *Diocleſian*, and the cruelty of *Maximian*. But in the thirteenth year of his Reign, he died at *York* in *England*, and by general conſent of all men was placed in the number of the Gods.

Marcellus being intent upon the affairs of the Church, and having perſuaded *Priſcilla* a *Roman* Matron to build at her own charge a Cœmetery in the *Via Salaria*, conſtituted twenty five Titles or Pariſhes in the City of *Rome*, for the more advantageous and convenient adminiſtration of Baptiſm to thoſe *Gentiles*, who daily in great numbers were converted to the Faith, having a regard likewiſe to the better proviſion which was thereby made for the Sepulchres of the Martyrs. But *Maxentius* underſtanding that *Lucina*, a *Roman* Lady, had made the Church her Heir, was ſo incenſed thereat, that he baniſhed her for a time, and ſeizing *Marcellus*, endeavoured, by Menaces, to prevail with him to lay aſide his Epiſcopal Dignity, and renounce Chriſtianity; but finding his Commands deſpis'd and ſlighted by the good man, he ordered him to be confined to a Stable, and made to look after the Emperors Camels and Horſes. Yet this ignominious uſage did not ſo diſcourage the good Biſhop, but that he kept conſtantly to ſtated times of Prayer and Faſting; and though he was now diſabled in perſon, yet he neglected not, by Epiſtle, to take due care for the regulating of the Churches. But before he had been there nine Months, his Clergy, by night, reſcued him from this loathſom reſtraint; whereupon *Maxentius*, being yet more enraged, ſecured him the ſecond time, and condemned him to the [illegible] filthy drudgery again, the ſtench and naſtineſs of which, at length, occaſioned his death. His body was buried by *Lucina*, in the Cœmetery of *Priſcilla*, in the *Via Salaria*, on the ſixteenth of *January*. In time following, when Chriſtianity flouriſhed, a Church was built upon the ground where this Stable ſtood, and dedicated to S. *Marcellus*, which is to be ſeen at this day. We read moreover, that *Mauritius*, together with his whole Legion of Chriſtian Soldiers, ſuffered themſelves to be tamely cut off near the River *Rhone*; to whom may be added *Marcus*, *Sergius*, *Coſmas*, *Damianus*, with multitudes more who were ſlain in all places. *Marcellus* being in the Chair five years, ſix months, twenty one days, at ſeveral *Decembrian* Ordinations made twenty ſix Presbyters, two Deacons, twenty one Biſhops; and by his Death the See was vacant twenty days.

It is

S. EVSEBIVS.

EVSEBIVS, a *Grecian*, Son of a Phyſician, entred upon the Pontificate, when *Conſtantius* and *Maxentius* were Emperors.

Conſtantine. For *Conſtantius*, Grandſon to *Claudius*, dying, *Conſtantine*, his Son by *Helena*, whom yet he afterwards divorc'd to gratifie *Herculeus*, was, with univerſal conſent, made Emperor of the *Weſt*. But in the mean time the Prætorian Guards at *Rome*, in a tumultuary manner, declare for *Maxentius*, Son to *Maximian Herculeus*, and give him the Title of *Auguſtus*. Hereupon *Maximian* himſelf being rais'd to ſome hopes of recovering the Empire, leaves his Retirement in *Lucania*, and comes to *Rome*, having by Letter endeavoured to perſuade *Diocleſian* to do the ſame. To ſuppreſs theſe Tumults, *Galerius* ſends *Severus* with his Army, who beſieged the City, but being deſerted by the treachery of ſome of his Soldiers who favoured *Maxentius* his pretenſions, was forced to fly to *Ravenna*, and there ſlain. And indeed *Maximian* himſelf did very narrowly eſcape the Revenge of his Son *Maxentius*, who eagerly ſought his Fathers life, for endeavouring by promiſes and bribes to gain the good will of the Soldiers for himſelf. But going into *Gallia* to his Son in-law *Conſtantine*, he there laid a deſign to enſnare and circumvent him too, till his Plot being diſcovered by his Daughter *Fauſta*, who revealed the whole matter to her Husband, he betook himſelf to flight, but was taken and put to death at *Marſeilles*, thereby ſuffering the juſt puniſhment of his Villanies; or, as others tell us, his condition being deſperate, he laid violent hands upon himſelf.

Inventio Crucis. During the Pontificate of *Euſebius*, on the third of *May*, the Croſs of our Saviour was found, and very much adorn'd, and had in great veneration by *Helena*, *Conſtantine*'s Mother; *Judas* alſo, who found it, was baptized, and his Name being thereupon changed, was afterwards called *Cyriacus*. This Biſhop admitted Hereticks to the Communion of the Church, upon their retractation, by the impoſition of Hands only. Moreover he ordained, that no Laick ſhould commence a Suit againſt a B[illegible]p. *Lactantius.* In his time lived *Lactantius Firmianus*, a Scholar of *Arnobius*. Who being a Profeſſor of Rhetorick at *Nicomedia*, and diſcontented that he had ſo few Scholars in a City of *Greece*, he thereupon betook himſelf to Writing, wherein he became ſo excellent, that he gain'd a Reputation next to that of *Cicero* himſelf. He wrote many things, but his works that are chiefly extant, are thoſe againſt the Gentiles, concerning the Creation of Man, and the Anger of God. In his old Age he was Tutor *Euſebius.* to *Conſtantine*'s Son, *Cæſar Criſpus*, in *Gallia*. *Euſebius* alſo Biſhop of *Cæſarea* in *Paleſtine*, a Partner with *Pamphilus*, in the diligent ſearch after divine Learning, wrote a vaſt number of Books; particularly thoſe *de Præpar. Evangelicâ*; an Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory againſt *Porphyry*, a violent oppoſer of the Chriſtians; ſix Apologies for *Origen*; and three Books of the Life of *Pamphilus* the Martyr, whoſe Name he added to his own for a Sirname, as a Teſtimony of the ſtrict Friendſhip there had been between them. But our *Euſebius*, the Biſhop of *Rome*, having, at one *Decembrian* Ordination, made Thirteen Presbyters, Three Deacons, Fourteen Biſhops, died at *Rome*, and was buried in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*, *October* the Second. He ſat in the Chair Six Years, one Month, three Days, and by his Death the See was vacant one day.

S. MILTIADES.

MILTIADES, an *African*, was Con-temporary with *Maxentius*, *Maximine*, and *Licinius* a *Dacian*, who, for his being an excellent Soldier, was admitted, by *Galerius*, to a Partnerſhip in the Empire.

Theſe being ſenſible, that *Conſtantine* was well belov'd, and highly eſteem'd, by all Men, did, for that reaſon, ſeem leſs enraged againſt the Chriſtians. Yet *Maxentius* ſent his Soldiers about with private Inſtructions to maſſacre all they could ſecretly meet with: And taking delight in Magick, at the performance of the helliſh Rights belonging to that black Art, he would ſend for Great-bellied Women, eſpecially Chriſtians, and rip them up for the ſake of their unborn Infants, whoſe Aſhes he made uſe of in his Sorceries, thereby ſhewing, that Tyranny might be ſupported and kept up even by Villany. *Maximine* alſo exercis'd the like Rage and Cruelty in the *Eaſt*, giving Rewards and Preferments to the Profeſſours and Teachers of Witchcraft and Sorcery; and being himſelf very much enclin'd to give credit to Auguries and Divinations, became the more bitterly incens'd againſt the Chriſtians, becauſe they deſpis'd ſuch Superſtitions. He commanded likewiſe that the decay'd Idolatrous Temples ſhould be repaired, and Sacrifices offered to the Gods in them after the ancient manner. Againſt them *Conſtantine* advancing with his Army, gain'd ſo perfect a Victory over *Maxentius* at *Pons Milvius*, that his grief, to be ſo ſhamefully defeated, cauſed him to forget the Snares which himſelf had laid, and ſo paſſing over a Bridge which he had deceitfully contriv'd to entrap his Enemies, he himſelf, with the greateſt part of his Guards, were drown'd in the River. Having alſo, both by Sea and Land, overcome his Siſter's Husband *Licinius*, he forced him at *Nicomedia* to yield himſelf, and to live privately at *Theſſalonica*; a Confinement which he juſtly deſerved, becauſe, having apoſtatiz'd from the Faith merely through Envy, he had been a grievous Perſecutor of the Chriſtians, for the good will they bare to *Conſtantine*. As for *Maximine*, he became manifeſtly the Object of Divine Vengeance; his Bowels and Entrails being on a ſudden ſo ſwoln and putrefied, that there appear'd no difference between him and a putrid Carkaſs; Worms in great abundance breeding in his Fleſh, and rottenneſs, with intolerable ſtench, overſpreading his Body. This dreadful Puniſh-

Maxentius.

Maximine.

Licinius.

ment had been long call'd for by his wicked practices; for he had forbidden the Chriſtians to aſſemble at the Sepulchres of the Martyrs, and had given out, that, at *Antioch*, an Image had ſpoke and proclaim'd aloud, That the Chriſtians muſt be baniſh'd out of the Cities, when indeed they were certain knaviſh Prieſts whom himſelf had ſuborn'd, who, from their adjoining privy receſſes, had uttered theſe words: And moreover, he had diſtributed Rewards, through the ſeveral Provinces, to the Idol-Prieſts, who were active againſt the Chriſtians. But at length, the Phyſician plainly telling him the danger of his condition, the Tyrant began to relent, and by a publick Edict, forbad all Perſons to moleſt or injure the Chriſtians, and ſuffered them to enjoy their Liberty. But this forced Repentance ſtood him in no ſtead, for having been a long time afflicted with grievous pain and diſeaſe, at laſt died this cruel and inconſtant Man, who had been ſometimes an Encourager, ſometimes a Perſecutor, of the Chriſtians. During theſe Calamities, multitudes of Chriſtians were put to death, and particularly *Dorothea*, a moſt virtuous and beautiful Virgin, who choſe rather to die than to yield to the Tyrant's Luſt. *Sophronia* alſo having been oftentimes ſolicited by *Maxentius*, like the Noble *Lucretia*, ſlew her ſelf to avoid the danger her Chaſtity was in from him.

Miltiades ordained, That no Chriſtian ſhould keep a Faſt upon a *Sunday* or *Thurſday*, becauſe thoſe days were obſerved and kept holy by the Pagans; and the *Manichæan* Hereſie being at that time very prevalent in the City of *Rome*, he made ſeveral Conſtitutions concerning Oblations. Theſe things being ſetled, he was, by *Maximine*'s Order, crowned with Martyrdom; as were alſo *Peter* Biſhop of *Alexandria*, *Lucianus* a Presbyter of *Antioch*, a Man eminent for Piety and Learning, *Timothy* a Presbyter of *Rome*, and divers others both Biſhops and Prieſts. *Miltiades* was buried in the Cœmetery of *Caliſtus* in the *Via Appia*, *December* the Tenth. During his Pontificate, he did, at one Ordination, make Seven Presbyters, ſix Deacons, twelve Biſhops. He ſat in the Chair Four Years, ſeven Months, nine Days; and by his death the See was vacant Seventeen Days.

S. SYLVESTER.

S*YLVESTER*, a *Roman*, the Son of *Ruffinus*, was Biſhop in the time of *Conſtantine*, *A. V. C.* 1091. *Anno Dom.* 339.

Conſtantine.

Under this Prince, the Chriſtians, who had been continually harraſſed by Tyrants, began to have ſome reſpite. For *Conſtantine* was equal to the beſt of Princes in all endowments of Body and Mind, very deſirous of Military Glory, ſucceſsful in War, and yet freely granting Peace to them who asked it. When his other great Affairs permitted, he took very much delight in the ſtudy of the Arts: By his Bounty and Goodneſs he gained the love of all Men: Many good Laws he enacted, repeal'd thoſe that were ſuperfluous, and moderated thoſe that were too rigorous. Upon the Ruines of *Byzantium* he built a City of his own Name, and endeavouring to make it equal in ſtatelineſs of

Buildings to *Rome* her ſelf, he ordered it to be call'd *New Rome*, as appears from the Inſcription under his Statue on Horſe-back.

This great Prince, well weighing and conſidering all things, when he came to underſtand the Excellency of the Chriſtian Religion, how it obliges Men to be moderate in their Enjoyments, to rejoice in Poverty, to be gentle and peaceable, ſincere and conſtant, *&c.* he thereupon heartily imbraced it; and when he undertook any War, bore no other Figure on his Standard but that of the Croſs, the form of which he had ſeen in the Air, as he was advancing with his Forces againſt *Maxentius*, and had heard the Angels near it, ſaying to him, Ἐν τῦτῳ νίκα, by this do thou overcome; which accordingly he did, freeing the necks of the People of *Rome*, and the Chriſtians, from the Yoak of Tyranny, and particularly defeating *Licinius*, who had expell'd the Chriſtians from City and Camp, and perſecuted them with Baniſhment, Impriſonment, and Death it ſelf; expoſing ſome of them to the Lions, and cauſing others to be hung up and cut to pieces Limb by Limb, like dead Swine.

Sylveſter, having ſo potent and propitious a Prince on his ſide, leaves the Mountain *Soracte*, whither he had been baniſhed by the Tyrants; or, as ſome ſay, had voluntarily retired, and comes to *Rome*, where he ſoon prevailed with *Conſtantine*, who was before well inclined towards the Chriſtians, to be now very zealous in deſerving well of the Church. For as a particular Teſtimony of the Honour he had for the Clergy, he allowed to the Biſhops of *Rome* the uſe of a Diadem of Gold ſet with precious Stones. But this *Sylveſter* declined, as not ſuiting a Perſon devoted to Religion, and therefore contented himſelf with a white *Phrygian* Mitre. *Conſtantine*, being highly affected with *Sylveſter*'s Sanctity, built a Church in the City of *Rome*, in the Gardens of *Equitius*, not far from *Domitian*'s Baths, which bore the name of *Equitius* till the time of *Damaſus*. Upon this Church the Munificent Emperour conferr'd ſeveral Donations of Veſſels both of Gold and Silver, and likewiſe very plentifully endowed it.

Arius.

While theſe things were tranſacting at *Rome*, at *Alexandria* a certain Presbyter, named *Arius*, (a Man more remarkable for his Perſon, than the inward Qualifications of his Mind, and who ſought more eagerly after Fame and Vain-glory than after Truth,) began to ſow diſſention in the Church; for he endeavoured to ſeparate the Son from the Eternal and ineffable Subſtance of God the Father, by affirming that there was a time when he was not; not underſtanding that the Son was Co-eternal with the Father, and of the ſame Subſtance with him, according to that aſſertion of his in the Goſpel, *I and my Father are one.* Now *Alexander*, Biſhop of *Alexandria*, having in vain attempted to reclaim *Arius* from this his Errour, by *Conſtantine*'s Appointment, and at his great Charge, a General Council was called at *Nicæa*, a City of *Bithynia*, at which Three hundred and eighteen Biſhops were preſent: The Debates on either ſide were long and warm; for divers Perſons, ſubtil at arguing, were Favourers of *Arius*, and Oppoſers of the ſimplicity of the Goſpel; though one of theſe, a very learned Philoſopher, being inwardly touched by the Divine Spirit, all on a ſudden changed his Opinion, and immediately embraced the ſound and Orthodox Doctrine, which before he had pleaded againſt. At length the matter being throughly diſcuſs'd in the Council, it was concluded, that the Son ſhould be ſtyled ὁμούσιος, *i. e.*

The Council of *Nice.*

Photinians and *Sabellians.*

acknowledg'd to be of the ſame ſubſtance with the Father. Of thoſe who were of *Arius*'s Opinion, affirming the Son of God to be created, not begotten of the very Divinity of the Father, there were ſeventeen. But *Conſtantine*, coming to underſtand the Truth of the Controverſie, confirmed the Decree of the Council, and denounc'd the Puniſhment of Exile to thoſe who contradicted it: Hereupon *Arius*, with only ſix more, were baniſhed, the reſt of his Party coming over to the Orthodox Opinion. In this Council the *Photinians* were condemned, who had their name from *Photinus*, a Biſhop of *Gallogracia*, who, taking up the Hereſie of the *Ebionites*, held, that Chriſt was conceived of *Mary* by the ordinary way of Generation; as were likewiſe the *Sabellians*, who affirmed, that the Father, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, were but one Perſon. In this Council alſo, the Biſhops, according to cuſtom, gave in Bills of Complaint to *Conſtantine*, wherein they accuſed each other, and deſired Juſtice from him; but the good Emperour burnt all their Accuſations, and told them, that they muſt ſtand or fall by the Judgment of God only, and not of Men. In this Council moreover, it was decreed, That no Perſon, who, upon pretence of allaying the heat of his Luſt, had caſtrated himſelf, ſhould be admitted into Orders: That no new Proſelyte, without a very ſtrict Examination, ſhould be ordained; and being ſo, that it ſhould not be lawful for him to cohabit with any other Women, than his Mother, or Siſter, or Aunt: That none ſhould be promoted to the Order of a Biſhop, unleſs by all, or at leaſt by three Biſhops of the Province; and that one Biſhop ſhould not receive any Perſon, whether Clerk or Laick, who ſtood excommunicated by another. It was decreed likewiſe, and that very ſacredly, to prevent all oppreſſion, that there ſhould be a Provincial Synod held every Year, whither any, who thought themſelves injured by the Biſhop, might appeal; and I cannot ſee, why this wholeſome Inſtitution ſhould be aboliſhed by the Prelates of our Age, unleſs it be becauſe they dread the Cenſures of the pious and Orthodox. It was decreed alſo, that they, who, in time of Perſecution, fell away before they were brought to the Torture, ſhould, from thenceforward, continue five Years among the *Catechumens*. Finally, it was decreed, that no Biſhop ſhould, upon the account of Ambition or Covetouſneſs, leave a ſmaller Church for a greater: A Canon which is quite laid aſide in our days, wherein, with eager Appetites, like hungry Wolves, they all gape after fatter Biſhopricks, uſing all Importunities, Promiſes, and Bribes, to get them. The Conſtitutions of *Sylveſter* himſelf were reckon'd theſe that follow, *viz.* That the Holy Oyl ſhould be conſecrated by the Biſhop only: That none but Biſhops ſhould have the power of Confirmation; but a Presbyter might anoint any Perſon baptized upon the occaſion of imminent death. That no Laick ſhould commence a Suit againſt a Clergyman: That a Deacon, while he was doing his Office in the Church, ſhould uſe a Cope with Sleeves: That no Clergyman ſhould plead for others or himſelf before a Secular Judge. That a Presbyter ſhould not conſecrate the Elements upon a Pall of Silk or dyed Cloth, but only upon white Linen, for the nearer reſemblance of the fine white Linen in which the Body of Chriſt was buried. He alſo fix'd the ſeveral degrees in the Orders of the Church, that every one might act in his own ſphere, and be the Husband of one Wife. But *Conſtantine*, being deſirous to promote the Chriſtian Religion, built the *Conſtantinian*

Church, (called the *Lateran*) which he beautified and enriched with ſeveral great Donations, the Ornaments and Endowments, which he conferred upon it, being of a vaſt value. Among other things, he ſet up in it a Font of *Porphyry*-ſtone, that part of it which contains the Water, being all Silver; in the middle of the Font was placed a Pillar of *Porphyry*, on the top of which ſtood a Golden Lamp, full of the moſt precious Oyl, which was wont to burn in the Night during the *Eaſter* Solemnities. On the edge or brink of it ſtood a Lamb of pure Gold, through which the Water was conveyed into it: Not far from the Lamb was the Statue of our Saviour, of moſt pure Silver. On the other ſide ſtood the Image of *John Baptiſt*, of Silver likewiſe, with an Inſcription of theſe words, *Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the Sins of the World.* There were beſides ſeven Harts placed round about it, and pouring Water into it. For the maintenance of this Font he gave ſeveral Eſtates in Land and Houſes. Moreover, *Conſtantine*, at the motion of *Sylveſter*, built and dedicated a Church to St. *Peter*, the chief of the Apoſtles, in the *Vatican*, not far from the Temple of *Apollo*, where he very ſplendidly repoſited the Body of that Apoſtle, and covered his Tomb over with Braſs and Copper. This Church likewiſe he magnificently adorn'd, and very largely endow'd. The ſame Emperor alſo, at the inſtance of *Sylveſter*, built a Church, which he enrich'd and endow'd as he had done the former, in the *Via Oſtienſis*, in honour to St. *Paul*, whoſe Body he entomb'd after the ſame manner with that of St. *Peter*. By his Order alſo, a Church was built in the *Seſſorian Atrium*, by the name of *S. Croſs of Jeruſalem*, wherein he repoſited a part of the Holy Croſs, which was found out by his Mother *Helena*, a Lady of incomparable Piety and Devotion. Who, being prompted thereto, partly by the greatneſs of her own Mind, and partly by Viſions in the Night, went to *Jeruſalem* to ſeek after the Croſs upon which Chriſt was crucified. To find it was a very difficult task, becauſe the ancient Perſecutors had ſet up the Image of *Venus* in the ſame place, that ſo the Chriſtians might, by miſtake, worſhip her in ſtead of their Saviour: But *Helena*, being animated with Zeal, proceeded on to dig and remove the rubbiſh, till at laſt ſhe found Three Croſſes lying confuſedly one among another; on one of which was this Inſcription in Three Languages, *Jeſus of Nazareth, King of the Jews*. *Macarius*, the Biſhop of that City, was at firſt miſtaken in his Opinion which was the right; but at length all doubt concerning it was removed, by an Experiment upon the Body of a dead Woman, who was raiſed to Life at the application of the true One. From the ſenſe of ſo great a Miracle, *Conſtantine* publiſh'd an Edict, forbidding any Malefactor to be from thenceforward puniſh'd by Crucifixion. *Helena*, having firſt built a Church upon the ground where this Croſs was found, return'd, and brought the Nails with which our Saviour's Body was faſtned to it, as a Preſent to her Son. Of one of thoſe Nails he cauſed to be made the bit of the Bridle with which he manag'd the Horſe he us'd in War; the other he wore on the Creſt of his Helmet; and the third he threw into the *Adriatick* Sea to ſuppreſs the rage and tempeſtuouſneſs of it. That part of the Croſs, which the devout Lady brought along with her in a Silver Caſe ſet with Gold and precious Stones, was placed in this *Seſſorian* Church. To which *Conſtantine* was very liberal and munificent. Some tell us, that the Church of St. *Agnes* was built at *Conſtantine*'s Command, upon the Requeſt of his Daughter *Conſtantia*, and a Font ſet up in it, where both

Inventio Crucis.

his Daughter and his Siſter of the ſame Name, were baptized, and which in like manner he largely preſented and endowed. The ſame Emperour built alſo the Church of St. *Laurence* without the Walls, towards which he was not wanting to expreſs his uſual Beneficence. Moreover, in the *Via Lavicana* he built a Church to the two Martyrs, *Marcellinus* the Presbyter, and *Peter* the Exorciſt: Not far from which he built a ſtately Monument in honour to his Mother, whom he buried in a Sepulchre of *Pophyry*. This Church alſo received ſignal Teſtimonies of his exemplary Bounty. Beſides theſe Churches in the City of *Rome*, he built ſeveral others alſo elſewhere. At *Oſtia*, not far from the Port, he built a Church in honour to St. *Peter* and *Paul* the bleſſed Apoſtles, and *John Baptiſt*; near *Alba* he built a Church peculiarly dedicated to *John Baptiſt*: At *Capua* alſo he built in honour to the Apoſtles, that which they called the *Conſtantinian Church*, all which he enriched as he had done the former. At *Naples* he built another, as *Damaſus* tells us, but it is uncertain to whom he dedicated it. And that the Clergy of *New Rome* alſo might be Sharers in the Emperour's Munificence, he built likewiſe two Churches at *Conſtantinople*, one dedicated to *Irene*, the other to the Apoſtles, having firſt quite deſtroy'd the *Delphick Tripods*, which had been the occaſion of a great deal of miſchief to ſuperſtitious People, and either demoliſhed the Pagan Temples, or elſe transferr'd them to the uſe and benefit of the Chriſtians. Beſides all the foregoing Inſtances of *Conſtantine*'s Munificence, he diſtributed moreover among the Provincial Churches and the Clergy, a certain Tribute or Cuſtom, due to him from the ſeveral Cities, which Donation he made valid and perpetuated by an Imperial Edict. And that Virgins, and thoſe who continued in *Celibacy*, might be enabled to make Wills, and ſo to bequeath by Teſtament ſomething to the Clergy, (from whence I believe the Patrimony of the Church to have received a great increaſe:) He repealed a Law which had been made for the propagating of Mankind, by which any Perſon was rendred uncapable of entring upon an Eſtate, who had lived unmarried till Five and twenty years of Age; a Law upon which the Princes had founded their *Jus trium liberorum*, the Right or Privilege of having Three Children, of which they often took advantage againſt thoſe who had no Iſſue. All theſe things are exactly and fully delivered to us by *Socrates* and *Zozomen* the Hiſtorians. In the time of *Sylveſter* flouriſhed ſeveral Perſons of extraordinary Note, by whoſe Labour and Induſtry many Countries and Nations were converted to Chriſtianity; and particularly by the preaching of *Julianus*, *Frumentius* and *Ediſius*, whom certain Philoſophers of *Alexandria* had carried thither. The *Iberi* alſo, a remote People, were brought to the Knowledg and Belief of Chriſtianity, by a certain captive Woman, through the Aſſiſtance and Perſuaſion of their King *Bacurius*. At this time likewiſe the Authority of *Anthony* the Holy Hermite did much towards the Reformation of Mankind; *Helena* did oftentimes both by Letter and Meſſengers recommend her ſelf and her Sons to his Prayers: He was by Country an *Egyptian*; his manner of living ſevere and abſtemious, eating only Bread and drinking nothing but Water, and never making any Meal but about Sun-ſet; a Man wholly wrapp'd up in Contemplation. His Life was written at large by *Athanaſius* Biſhop of *Alexandria*. As for *Sylveſter* himſelf, having, at Seven *Decembrian* Ordinations, made Forty two Presbyters, Thirty ſix Deacons, Sixty five Biſhops; he dyed and was buried

Anthony Hermite.

ried in the Cœmetery of *Priſcilla*, in the *Via Salaria*, three Miles diſtant from the City, on the laſt day of *December*. He was in the Chair Twenty three Years, ten Months, eleven Days; and by his death the See was vacant fifteen Days.

MARCVS I.

MARCVS, a *Roman*, Son of *Priſcus*, lived alſo in the Reign of *Conſtantine* the Great, concerning whom Hiſtorians differ in their Writings.

For ſome affirm, that *Conſtantine*, towards the later end of his Reign, recalled *Arius* from Baniſhment, and became a Favourer of his Hereſie, through the Perſuaſion of his Siſter, who always inſiſted, that it was nothing but Envy that had cauſed his Condemnation. Theſe I believe to be deceiv'd by the nearneſs of their Names, and ſo to aſcribe that to the Father, which was the act of the Son. For it is not probable, that that wiſe Prince, who had all along before diſapproved of the *Arian* Opinion, ſhould now begin to incline to it in that part of his Age, wherein Men are uſually moſt judicious and diſcerning. They write moreover, that *Conſtantine* was baptiz'd by *Euſebius*, an *Arian*, Biſhop of *Nicomedia*. But that this is a miſtake, appears both from the Emperour's great bounty towards the Orthodox, and alſo from that ſtately Font upon that occaſion, erected with wonderful Magnificence at *Rome*; at which, after he had been ſucceſsful in expelling the Tyrants, he, with his Son *Criſpus*, were inſtructed in the Faith, and baptiz'd by *Sylveſter*. They who are of the other Opinion tell us, that *Conſtantine* deferred ſo great an Affair, till the time that he might come to the River *Jordan*, in which he had a great deſire to be baptiz'd, in imitation of our Saviour; but that in an Expedition againſt the *Parthians*, making Inroads upon *Meſopotamia*, in the Thirty firſt Year of his Reign, and of his Age the Sixty ſixth, he died on the way at *Nicomedia*, before he could reach the River *Jordan* for the purpoſe he deſign'd, and was there baptiz'd at the point of Death. But let theſe Men confound and perplex the matter as they pleaſe, we have reaſon to believe, according to the general Opinion, that *Conſtantine*, who had ſo often overcome his Enemies under the Standard of the Croſs, who had built ſo many Churches to the Honour of God, who had been preſent at Holy Councils, and who had ſo often joined in Devotion with the Holy Fathers, would deſire to be fortifi'd againſt the Enemy of Mankind by the Character of Baptiſm, as ſoon as ever he came to underſtand the excellency of our Religion. I am not ignorant what *Socrates*, and *Zozomen*, and moſt other Writers, ſay concerning it; but I follow the Truth, and that which is moſt agreeable to the Religion and Piety of this excellent Prince. The vulgar Story of his having been overſpread with Leproſie, and cured of it by Baptiſm, with a previous fiction concerning a Bath of the Blood of Infants before preſcribed for his Cure, I can by no means give credit to, having herein the Authority of *Socrates* on my ſide, who affirms, that *Conſtantine*, being now Sixty five Years of Age, fell ſick, and left the City of *Conſtantinople* to go to the hot Baths, for the recovery of his Health, but ſpeaks not a word concerning any Leproſie. Beſides, there is no mention made of it by any Writer, either Heathen or Chriſtian; and certainly, had there been any ſuch thing, *Oroſius*, *Eutropius*, and others, who have moſt accurately written the Memoirs of *Conſtantine*, would not have omitted it. One thing more concerning this great Prince is certain, *viz.* That a Blazing Star or Comet, of extraordinary magnitude, appear'd ſome time before his Death.

Juvencus Hiſpanus.

Marcus applying himſelf to the care of Religion, Ordained, That the Biſhop of *Oſtia*, whoſe place it is to conſecrate the Biſhop of *Rome*, might uſe a Pall. He appointed likewiſe, that upon ſolemn days, immediately after the Goſpel, the *Nicene* Creed ſhould be rehears'd with a loud voice, both by the Clergy and People. He built alſo two Churches at *Rome*, one in the *Via Ardeatina*, in which he was buried, the other within the City; theſe Churches *Conſtantine* preſented and endowed very liberally. In the time of this Emperour and Biſhop, lived *Juvencus*, a *Spaniard* of Noble Birth, and a Presbyter, who, in Four Books, tranſlated almoſt *verbatim* into Hexametre Verſe the Four Goſpels; he wrote alſo ſomething concerning the Sacraments in the ſame kind of Metre. Our *Marcus* having, at two *Decembrian* Ordinations, made Twenty five Presbyters, ſix Deacons, Twenty eight Biſhops, died and was buried in the Cœmetery of *Balbina*, in the *Via Ardeatina*, *Octob.* the fifth. He was in the Chair Two Years, eight Months, twenty Days, and by his death the See was vacant twenty days.

JVLIVS I.

Conſtantius.

IVLIVS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Ruſticus*, lived in the time of *Conſtantius*, who, ſharing the Empire with his two Brethren *Conſtantine* and *Conſtans*, reigned Twenty four Years.

Among the Succeſſours of *Conſtantine* the Great, is ſometimes reckoned *Delmatius Cæſar* his Nephew, who was certainly a very hopeful young Gentleman, but was ſoon cut off in a Tumult of the Soldiers, though by the Permiſſion, rather than at the Command, of *Conſtantius*. In the mean time, the *Arian* Hereſie mightily prevailed, being abetted by *Conſtantius*, who compelled the Orthodox to receive *Arius*. In the Second Year of his Reign therefore a Council was called at *Laodicea*, a City of *Syria*, or, as others have it, at *Tyre*: Thither reſort both the Catholicks and *Arians*; and their daily debate was, Whether Chriſt ſhould be ſtyled ὁμοούσιος, of the ſame ſubſtance with the Father, or no. *Athanaſius*, Biſhop of *Alexandria*, aſſerted it, and preſs'd hard upon them with his Reaſons and Arguments for it; which, when *Arius* found himſelf not able to anſwer, he betook himſelf to Reproach and Calumny, accuſing the Holy Man of Sorcery, and to procure credit to his Charge, producing out of a Box the pretended Arm of *Arſenius*, whom he falſly aſſerted, that *Athanaſius* had kill'd, and was wont to make uſe of that dead Arm in his Incantations. Hereupon *Athanaſius* was violently run down and condemned by the Emperour, but making his eſcape, he lay concealed in a dry Ciſtern for ſix years together, without ſeeing the Sun; but being at length diſcovered by a certain Servant Maid, when his Enemies were juſt ready to ſeize him, by Divine Admonition he fled to the Emperor *Conſtans*, who by Menaces compelled his Brother *Conſtantius* to receive him again. In the mean time *Arius*, as he was going along in the Streets, attended with ſeveral Biſhops and multitudes of People, ſtepping aſide to a place of Eaſement, he voided his Entrails into the Privy, and immediately died, undergoing a death agreeable to the filthineſs of his Life.

Our Biſhop *Julius*, having been very uneaſie amidſt this confuſion of things, at length after ten months baniſhment returns to *Rome*; eſpecially having receiv'd the news of the death of *Conſtantine* the younger, who making War upon his Brother *Conſtans*, and fighting unwarily near *Aquileia*, was there ſlain. But notwithſtanding the preſent face of things, *Julius* deſiſted not from cenſuring the Oriental Biſhops, and eſpecially the *Arians*, for calling a Council at *Antioch*, without the command of the Biſhop of *Rome*, pretending it ought not to have been done without his Authority, for the preheminence of the *Roman* above all other Churches. To which they of the *Eaſt* returned this Ironical Anſwer, That ſince the Chriſtian Princes came from them to the *Weſt*, for this reaſon their Church ought to have the preference, as being the fountain and ſpring from whence ſo great a Bleſſing flowed. But *Julius* laying aſide that Controverſie, built two Churches, one near the *Forum Romanum*, the other in that part of the City beyond *Tyber*. He erected alſo three Cœmeteries, one in the *Via Flaminia*, another in the *Via Aurelia*, the third in the *Via Portuenſis*. He conſtituted likewiſe, that no Clergy-man ſhould plead before any but an Eccleſiaſtical Judge. He appointed likewiſe, that all matters belonging to the Church ſhould be penned by the Notaries or the Protonotary, whoſe Office it was to commit to writing all memorable Occurrences. But in our age moſt of them (not to ſay all) are ſo ignorant, that they are ſcarce able to write their own Names in Latin, much leſs to tranſmit the actions of others. Concerning their Morals, I am aſhamed to ſay any thing, ſince Pandars and Paraſites have been ſomtimes preferr'd to that Office. During the Reign of *Conſtantine* and *Conſtantius*, *Marcellus* Biſhop of *Ancyra* was a man of conſiderable Note, and wrote ſeveral things, particularly againſt the *Arians*. *Aſterius* and *Apollinarius* wrote againſt him, and accuſed him of the *Sabellian* Hereſie, as did likewiſe *Hilarius*, whom while *Marcellus* is confuting, his very Defence ſhews him to be of a different Opinion from *Julius* and *Athanaſius*. He was oppoſed likewiſe by *Baſilius* Biſhop of *Ancyra* in his Book *de Virginitate*; which *Baſilius*, together with *Euſtathius* Biſhop of *Sebaſtia*, were the principal Men of the *Macedonian* Party. About this time alſo *Theodorus* Biſhop of *Heraclea* in *Thrace*, a Perſon of terſe and copious Eloquence, was a conſiderable Writer, as particularly appears by his Commentaries upon *S. Matthew*, *S. John*, the *Pſalms* and Epiſtles. As for *Julius* himſelf, having, at three *Decembrian* Ordinations, made eighteen Presbyters, three Deacons, nine Biſhops; he died, and was buried in the *Via Aurelia* in the Cœmetery of *Calepodius*, three miles from the City, *Aug.* the 12th. He ſat in the Chair fifteen years, two months, ſix days, and by his death the See was vacant twenty five days.

LIBERIVS I.

LIBERIVS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Auguſtus*, lived in the times of *Conſtantius* and *Conſtans*.

Conſtantius & Conſtans.

For *Conſtantine*, as I ſaid before, engaging unadviſedly in a War againſt his Brother *Conſtans*, was therein ſlain. And *Conſtans* himſelf, having fought with various ſucceſs againſt the *Perſians*, being forced by a Tumult in the Army to joyn Battle at midnight, was at laſt routed, and deſigning afterwards to make an example of his ſeditious Soldiers, he was by the fraud and treachery of *Magnentius* ſlain at a Town called *Helena*, in the ſeventeenth year of his Reign, and the thirtieth of his age.

Conſtans being dead, the old *Boutefeaus* of the *Arian* Hereſie began afreſh to make head againſt *Athanaſius*. For in a Council held at *Milain*, all thoſe that favoured *Athanaſius* were baniſh'd. Moreover, at the Council of *Ariminum*, becauſe the ſubtil, crafty, *Eaſtern* Prelates were too hard at Argument and Diſputation for the honeſt well-meaning Biſhops of the *Weſt*, it was thought good to let fall the Debate for a time; the Orientaliſts denied Chriſt to be of the ſame ſubſtance with the Father. This, becauſe Biſhop *Liberius* did at firſt oppoſe, and becauſe he refuſed to condemn *Athanaſius* at the Emperor's Command, he was baniſh'd by the *Arians*, and forced to abſent from the City for the ſpace of three years. In which time the Clergy being aſſembled in a Synod, in the place of *Liberius*, made choice of *Felix* a Presbyter, an excellent Perſon, and who immediately after his choice, did in a Convention of forty eight Biſhops excommunicate *Vrſatius* and *Valens*, two Presbyters, for being of the Emperor's Opinion in Religion. Hereupon, at their Requeſt and Importunity *Conſtans* recalls *Liberius* from Exile: Who being wrought upon by the kindneſs of the Emperor, though he became, as ſome tell us, in all other things heretical, yet in this particular Tenent he was on the Orthodox ſide, that Hereticks returning to the Church ought not to be re-baptized. 'Tis ſaid, that *Liberius* did for ſome time live in the Cœmetery of *St. Agnes*, with *Conſtantia* the Emperor's Siſter, that ſo, through her aſſiſtence and interceſſion, he might procure a ſafe return to the City; but ſhe being a Catholick, and apprehending he might have ſome ill deſign, utterly refuſed to engage in it. At length *Conſtantius*, at the inſtance of *Vrſatius* and *Valens* depoſed *Felix*, and reſtor'd *Liberius*. Upon which there aroſe ſo fierce a perſecution, that the Presbyters and other Clergy were in many places murthered in their very Churches. Some tell us, that they were the *Roman* Ladies at a Cirque-ſhew, who by their intreaties obtained of the Emperor this Reſtauration of *Liberius*. Who, though he were of the *Arian* Opinion, yet was very diligent in beautifying Conſecrated places, and particularly the Cœmetery of *St. Agnes*, and the Church which he built and called by his own Name, near the Market-place of *Livia*. During theſe calamitous times lived *Euſebius* Biſhop of *Emiſſa*, who wrote very learnedly and elegantly againſt the *Jews*, *Gentiles*, and *Novatians*. *Triphyllius* alſo Biſhop of *Ledra* or *Leutheon* in *Cyprus*, wrote a large and

Donatus.

Aſterius.

Lucifer.

exact Commentary upon the *Canticles*. Moreover, *Donatus* an *African* (from whom the Sect of the *Donatiſts* are denominated,) was ſo induſtrious in writing againſt the Catholick Doctrine, that he infected almoſt all *Africa* and *Judea* with his falſe Opinions. He affirmed the Son to be inferior to the Father, and the Holy Spirit inferior to the Son, and rebaptized all thoſe whom he could pervert to his own Sect. Several of his Heretical Writings were extant in the time of *St. Hierom*, and particularly one Book of the Holy Spirit, agreeing exactly with the *Arian* Doctrine. And that the *Arians* might neglect no ill Arts of promoting their Opinions, *Aſterius* a Philoſopher of that Faction, at the Command of *Conſtantius*, compiled divers Commentaries upon the Epiſtle to the *Romans*, the Goſpels and the Pſalms, which were diligently read by thoſe of that Party to confirm them in their Perſuaſion. Moreover, *Lucifer* Biſhop of *Cagliari*, together with *Pancratius* the Presbyter, and *Hilarius* the Deacon, were ſent in an Embaſſie from the Biſhop to the Emperor; and being by him baniſhed for refuſing to renounce the *Nicene*, under the name of the *Athanaſian*, Faith, he wrote a Book againſt *Conſtantius*, and ſent it to him to read. But notwithſtanding this provocation, he lived till the time of *Valentinian*. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that *Fortunatus* Biſhop of *Aquileia*, had been tampering with *Liberius* juſt before his baniſhment, and endeavouring to bring him over to the *Arian* Hereſie. *Serapion* likewiſe, who for his great parts had deſervedly given him the Sirname of *Scholaſticus*, compiled an excellent Book againſt *Manichæus*, nor could all the Menaces of the Emperor make him deſiſt from the open Confeſſion of the Truth; but on the contrary, hoping to have rendred *Conſtantius* more favourable to *Athanaſius* the Great, (ſo called from the conſtant, and unwearied Oppoſition, which he always kept up againſt Pagans and Hereticks) into his Preſence he boldly goes, nor did the Threats of ſo great a Prince cauſe him to ſtir one ſtep backward from his Conſtancy and Reſolution. As for *Liberius*, having, at two Ordinations held in the City of *Rome*, made eighteen Presbyters, five Deacons, nineteen Biſhops; he dyed, and was buried in the Cœmetery of *Priſcilla* in the *Via Salaria*, *April* the 23d. He ſat in the Chair ſix years, three months, four days, and by his death the See was vacant ſix days.

FELIX II.

FELIX the Second, a *Roman*, the Son of *Anaſtaſius*, was Biſhop of *Rome* in the Reign of *Conſtantius*,

Conſtantius.

Who by the death of *Conſtans*, ſlain by *Magnentius*, becoming now ſole Emperor, ſent into *Gallia*, to ſuppreſs a Sedition ariſen there, his Coſin-German *Julian*, whom he had created *Cæſar*; who in a ſhort time by his great Valour and Conduct reduc'd both the *Gauls* and *Germans*, whereby he gained ſo much the Affections of the Army, that by univerſal conſent they made him Emperor. At the News of this, *Conſtantius*, who was engaged in a War with the *Parthians*, ſuddenly ſtrikes up a Truce with them, and forthwith marches forward to oppoſe *Julian*; but in his March being ſeiz'd with an Apoplexy, he died between *Cilicia* and *Cappadocia*, at a Town called *Mopſocrene*, in the 24th year of his Reign, and of his Age the 45th. The Phyſicians were of Opinion, that the exceſſive grief and anxiety of Mind which the Rebellion of *Julian* had brought upon him, was the occaſion of that fatal diſtemper to him. He was (excepting always the Caſe of the Chriſtians, againſt whom he was unjuſt and cruel) a Perſon of ſo great moderation and clemency, that, according to the ancient cuſtom, he deſerv'd an Apotheoſis. Upon his firſt undertaking the Government, at his entring triumphantly by the *Via Flaminia* into the City of *Rome* in his Golden Chariot, he did with wonderful condeſcenſion take notice of, and ſalute, the Citizens that went out to meet him, affirming that of *Cyneas* the Ambaſſador of *Pyrrhus* to be true, that he ſaw at *Rome* as many Kings as there were Citizens. In one thing only he was the occaſion of laughter to the People, *viz.* That as he paſſed through the lofty Gates of the City, and the ſtately Triumphal Arches, though he were a Man of a very little ſtature, yet, as though he feared to hit his Head againſt the tops of them, he bow'd it down low, like a Gooſe, ſtooping as ſhe goes in at a Barn-door. Being conducted to view the Rarities of the City, and beholding with admiration the *Campus Martius*, the Sepulchre of *Auguſtus Cæſar*, adorned with ſo many Statues of Marble and Braſs, the *Forum Romanum*, the Temple of *Jupiter Capitolinus*, the Baths, the Porticoes enlarged like ſo many Provinces, the Amphitheatre built with *Tiburtine* Stone, of ſo vaſt a height, that a Mans Eye could ſcarce reach to the top of it; the *Pantheon* built with ſtately Arches of a wonderful Altitude, the Temple of Peace, *Pompey*'s Theatre, the great Cirque, the *Septizonium* of *Severus*, ſo many Triumphal Arches, ſo many Aquæducts, ſo many Statues erected here and there throughout the City for Ornament; beholding all this, I ſay, he at firſt ſtood aſtoniſhed, and at length declared, that certainly Nature had laid out all her ſtock upon one City. At the ſight of the famous Horſe of Braſs ſet up by *Trajan*, he deſired of *Hormiſda* an excellent Workman, whom he had brought along with him, that he would make ſuch another for him at *Conſtantinople*, to whom *Hormiſda* replied, that the Emperor ought then to build ſuch another Stable, (meaning the City of *Rome*.) The ſame *Hormiſda* being asked by *Conſtantius*, what he thought of the City of *Rome*, returned an Anſwer becoming a Philoſopher, That all which pleaſed him in it was, *That he underſtood, that there alſo Men were wont to dye.*

Felix, who, as we have ſaid, was put into the place of *Liberius* by the Orthodox, (though *Euſebius* and *St. Hierom*, which I much wonder at, affirm it to have been done by the Hereticks) preſently after his entrance upon the Pontificate, pronounces *Conſtantius*, the Son of *Conſtantine* the Great, a Heretick, and re-baptized by *Euſebius* Biſhop of *Nicomedia*, in a little Town called *Aquilo*, not far from *Nicomedia*. And hereby may be diſcovered the error of thoſe who accuſe *Conſtantine* the Great himſelf of this Hereſie; an Imputation, which certainly, as appears by Hiſtory, neither ought, nor can be faſtned upon that Great Prince, and great favourer of the Chriſtian Religion. While this great Contention which we have ſpoken of between *Liberius* and *Felix* laſted, the *Arian* Hereſie branched itſelf into two Factions. For on the

Eunomius

Macedonius.

one ſide *Eunomius*, (from whom they were called *Eunomians*) a Man Leprous both in Body and Mind, and who had a Falling-ſickneſs, as well within as without, affirmed, that in all things the Son was unequal to the Father, and that the Holy Spirit had no Community of Eſſence with the Father or the Son. On the other ſide *Macedonius*, whom the Orthodox had made Biſhop of *Conſtantinople* before he became erroneous in his Opinions, was renounced by the *Arians*, for holding the Son to be equal with the Father, though he uttered the ſame Blaſphemies againſt the Holy Spirit that themſelves did. 'Tis ſaid, that *Felix* held a Council of Forty eight Biſhops, in which it was decreed, that all Biſhops ſhould attend in perſon at every General Council, or elſe by Letter give a good account why they could not; which Decree was afterwards renewed in the Council of *Carthage*. In his time lived *Acacius*, for his having but one Eye, called *Monophthalmus*, Biſhop of *Cæſarea* in *Paleſtine*, who wrote largely upon *Eccleſiaſtes*, and who by his fair Speech and ſwimming carriage, had gained ſuch an Aſcendent over *Conſtantius*, that he himſelf undertook to appoint *Felix* an *Arian* to be Biſhop in the room of *Liberius*; this S. *Hierom* tells us, though I much marvel at it, ſince, as we have already ſaid, it is evident that *Felix* was a Catholick, and a conſtant oppoſer of the *Arians*. At length, after *Felix* had done all that in him lay for the propagation and defence of the true Faith, he was ſeized by his Enemies, and together with many other Orthodox Believers was ſlain, and buried in a Church which himſelf had built in the *Via Aurelia*, , two miles from the City, *Novemb.* the 20th. He was in the Chair only one year, four months, two days, through the means of a Sedition raiſed by *Liberius*, (whom I have inſerted into the number of Biſhops, more upon the Authority of *Damaſus*, than for any deſerts of his own.)

DAMASVS I.

DAMASVS, a *Spaniard*, Son of *Antonius*, lived in the Reign of *Julian*,

Julian.

Who was certainly an extraordinary Perſon, if we regard his fitneſs either for Civil or Military Affairs. He had his Education under *Eubulus* the *Sophiſt*, and *Libanius* the Philoſopher, and made ſuch proficiency in the liberal Arts, that no Prince was his Superior in them. He had a capacious memory, and a happy Eloquence, was bountiful towards his Friends, juſt to Foreiners, and very deſirous of Fame. But all theſe qualities were at laſt ſullied by his Perſecution of the Chriſtians, which yet he managed more craftily than others had done; for he did not perſecute at firſt with Force and Torture, but by Rewards and Honours, and Careſſes, and Perſuaſions, he ſeduc'd greater numbers of them, than if he had exerciſed any manner of Cruelties againſt them. He forbad the Chriſtians the ſtudy of Heathen Authors, and denied acceſs to the publick Schools, to any but thoſe who worſhipp'd the *Gentile* Gods. Indeed he granted a Diſpenſation to one Perſon, named *Prohæreſius*, a moſt Learned Man, to teach the Chriſtians publickly; but he with diſdain refuſed to accept of that Indulgence. He prohibited the conferring Military Offices upon any but Heathens, and ordered, that no Chriſtians ſhould be admitted to the Government or Juriſdiction of Provinces, upon pretence that the Laws of their Religion forbad them the uſe of their own Swords. He openly oppoſed and baniſhed *Athanaſius*, at the inſtigation of his Sorcerers and Southſayers, with whoſe Arts he was wonderfully pleaſed, they complaining to him that *Athanaſius* was the cauſe why their Profeſſion was in no greater eſteem. At a certain time as he was ſacrificing to *Apollo* at *Daphne* in the Suburbs of *Antioch*, near the *Caſtalian* Fountain, and no Anſwers were given him to thoſe things concerning which he enquired; expoſtulating with the Prieſts about the cauſe of that ſilence; the Devils replied, that the Sepulchre of *Babylas* the Martyr was too near, and therefore no Reſponſes could be given. Hereupon *Julian* commanded the *Galileans*, for ſo he called the Chriſtians, to remove the Martyrs Tomb farther off. This they applyed themſelves to with wondrous exultation and chearfulneſs, but rehearſing at the ſame time that of the Pſalmiſt *Confounded be all they that ſerve graven Images, that boaſt themſelves of Idols*; They hereby ſo heightned the rage of *Julian*, that he forthwith commanded multitudes of them to be put to death, which he did not before intend. I much wonder that *Julian* ſhould act after this manner, having had before experience of the vanity of Diabolical Arts. For entring once into a Cave in company with a Magician, and being ſorely affrighted when he heard the Demons howl, in the ſurprize he uſed the ſign of the Croſs, at which the Demons immediately fled. Upon this, telling his Companion, that certainly there muſt needs be ſomthing miraculous in the Sign of the Croſs, the Sorcerer made him this Anſwer, That indeed the Demons themſelves did dread that kind of puniſhment. By this ſlight account of the matter, *Julian* became more obſtinate than before, ſo ſtrangely was he addicted to Magical deluſions, though he had formerly, to decline the diſpleaſure of *Conſtantius*, feignedly embraced the Chriſtian Religion, publickly read the Holy Scriptures, and built a Church in honour to the Martyrs. Moreover, this Emperor on purpoſe to ſpite the Chriſtians, permitted the *Jews* to rebuild their Temple at *Hieruſalem*, upon their declaring that they could not ſacrifice in any other place. By which Conceſſion they were ſo mightily puffed up, that they uſed all their endeavours to raiſe it more magnificent than the former. But while they were carrying on the Work, the new Fabrick fell down in an Earthquake, by the fall of which, multitudes of the *Jews* were cruſh'd to death, and the Propheſie a ſecond time verified, *That there ſhould not be left one ſtone upon another.* On the following day, the very Iron Tools with which the Workmen wrought were conſumed by fire from Heaven; a Miracle, by which many of the *Jews* were ſo wrought upon, that they became Proſelytes to Chriſtianity. After this, *Julian* undertakes an Expedition againſt the *Perſians*, of whom he had Intelligence, that they were endeavouring a change in the Government; but before he ſet forth, he ſpared not to threaten what havock he would make among the Chriſtians at his return. But having vanquiſhed the Enemy, and returning Conqueror with his Army, though in ſome diſorder, he dyed of a Wound given him near *Cteſiphon*. Whether he received it from any of his own Men, or from the Enemy, is uncertain;

though ſome tell us, that he was pierced through with an Arrow ſent no Man knew from whence; as alſo, that when he was juſt expiring, with his hand lift up to Heaven, he cried out, *Thou haſt overcome me, O Galilean*, for ſo in contempt he was wont to call our Saviour, the *Galilean*, or the *Carpenters Son*; upon which was grounded that Anſwer of a young Man to *Libanius* the *Sophiſt*, asking him by way of deriſion What he thought the *Carpenter's Son* was doing; To whom the youth, replied, That he was making a Coffin for *Julian*; a witty and Prophetick Reply; for ſoon after his ſaying ſo, *Julian*'s dead Body was Coffin'd up and brought away. We are told, that this Emperor had once been in Holy Orders, but that afterwards he fell away from the Faith, for which reaſon he is commonly called the *Apoſtate*. He died in the twentieth month of his Reign, and in the thirty ſecond year of his Age.

Jovinian. Him *Jovinian* ſucceeded, who, being voted Emperor by the Army, refuſed to own that Title, till they ſhould all with a loud voice confeſs themſelves to be Chriſtians. This they having done, and he having commended them for it, he took the Goverment upon him, and freed his Army out of the hand of the Barbarous, with no other compoſition but that of leaving *Niſibis*, and part of *Meſopotamia*, free to *Sapores* the *Perſian* King. But in the eight month of his Reign, whether from ſome crudity upon his Stomach, as ſome will have it, or from the faint and ſuffocating ſteam of burning Coals, as others, or by what means ſoever, certain it is that he died ſuddainly.

Damaſus being choſen to the Pontificate, was ſoon rivall'd in that Dignity by *Urſicinus* a Deacon, whoſe Party having aſſembled themſelves in a Church, thither alſo *Damaſus*'s Friends reſorted, where the Competition being manag'd, not only by Vote, but by Force and Arms, ſeveral Perſons on both ſides were ſlain in the very Church. But not long after the matter was comprimis'd, and by the conſent both of the Clergy and People, *Damaſus* was confirmed in the Biſhoprick of *Rome*, and *Urſicinus* was made Biſhop of *Naples*. But *Damaſus* being afterwards accuſed of Adultery, he made his Defence in a publick Council, wherein he was acquitted and pronounced Innocent, and *Concordius* and *Caliſtus*, two Deacons, his falſe Accuſers, were condemn'd and excommunicated. Upon which a Law was made, That if any man did bear falſe witneſs againſt another, he was to undergo the ſame puniſhment that the perſon accuſed ſhould have done, if he had been guilty. The Affairs of the Church being at length ſetled, *Damaſus* taking great delight in Study, wrote the Lives of all the Biſhops of *Rome* that had been before him, and ſent them to *St. Hierom*. Notwithſtanding which, he neglected not to increaſe the number of Churches, and to add to the Ornaments of Divine Worſhip. For he built two Churches, one near *Pompey*'s Theatre, the other at the Tombs in the *Via Ardeatina*, and in elegant Verſe wrote the Epitaphs of thoſe Martyrs whoſe Bodies had been there buried, to perpetuate their Names to poſterity. He alſo dedicated a Marble Table with an Inſcription to the memory of *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*, at the place where their Bodies had once lain. Moreover, he enriched the Church which he had built in Honour to *St. Laurence*, not far from *Pompey*'s Theatre, with very large Donations. He ordained likewiſe, that the Pſalms ſhould be ſung alternately in the Church; and that at the end of every Pſalm the *Gloria Patri* ſhould be added. And whereas formerly the Septuagint only had been in vogue, *Damaſus* firſt gave Authority to *Hierom*'s Tranſlation of the Bible, which began to be read publickly, as alſo his Pſalter faithfully rendred from the *Hebrew*, which before, eſpecially among the *Gauls*, had been very much depraved. He commanded alſo, that at the beginning of the Maſs, the Confeſſion ſhould be uſed as it is at this day. But having at five Ordinations made thirty one Presbyters, eleven Deacons, ſixty two Biſhops, he died, and was buried with his Mother and Siſter in the *Via Ardeatina*, in the Church built by himſelf, *December* the 11th. He ſat in the Chair nineteen years, three months, eleven days, and by his death the See was vacant twenty one days.

SIRICIVS I.

Valentinian.

SIRICIVS, a *Roman*, Son of *Tiburtius* lived in the time of *Valentinian*,

Who, for his being a Chriſtian, had been very unjuſtly dealt withal, and caſhier'd from a conſiderable Command in the Army by *Julian*. But upon the death of *Jovinian*, being by the univerſal conſent of the Soldiers elected Emperor, he admitted his Brother *Valens* his Collegue in the Empire, and aſſign'd to him the Goverment of the *Eaſt*. Afterwards in the third year of his Reign, at the perſuaſion of his Wife and her Mother, he created his young Son *Gratian*, *Auguſtus*. And whereas one *Procopius* had rais'd a Sedition, and ſet up for himſelf at *Conſtantinople*, him, with his Adherents, the Emperor very ſuddenly overthrew and put to death.

Valens.

But *Valens* having been Baptized by *Eudoxius* an *Arian* Biſhop, and becoming a bigotted Heretick, preſently fell to perſecuting and baniſhing the Orthodox, eſpecially after the death of *Athanaſius*, who while he lived was a mighty ſupport to the Chriſtian State for forty ſix years together. *Lucius* alſo another Heretical Biſhop was extremely violent and outragious againſt the Orthodox Chriſtians; nor did he ſpare ſo much as the *Anchorets* and *Eremites*, but ſent parties of Soldiers to invade their Solitudes, who either put them to death, or elſe ſent them into Exile. Amongſt this ſort of Men, they who at that time had the greateſt Eſteem and Authority, were the two *Macarii* in *Syria*, the Diſciples of *Anthony*, one of which lived in the upper, the other in the lower, Deſert; as alſo *Iſidorus*, *Panucius*, *Pambus*, *Moſes*, *Benjamin*, *Paulus Apheliotes*, *Paulus Phocenſis*, and *Joſeph* in *Egypt*. While *Lucius* was intent upon the baniſhment of theſe Men, a certain inſpired Woman went about crying aloud, that thoſe good Men, thoſe Men of God, ought by no means to be ſent into the Iſlands. Moreover, *Mauvia*, Queen of the *Saracens* having by frequent Battels very much impaired the *Roman* Forces, and haraſſed their Towns on the borders of *Paleſtine* and *Arabia*, refuſed to grant the Peace which they deſired at her hands, unleſs *Moſes*, a Man of moſt exemplary Piety, were conſecrated and appointed Biſhop to her People. This *Lucius* willingly aſſented to; but when *Moſes* was brought to him, he plainly told him, that the multitudes of Chriſtians condemn'd to the Mines, baniſh'd to the Iſlands and impriſon'd through his cruelty, did cry loud againſt him, and that therefore he would never endure the impoſition of his polluted hands. Hereupon certain Biſhops being recalled from Exile to conſecrate him, he was preſented to the Queen, and thereby a Peace concluded. But *Valens* and *Lucius* continued ſtill to wreak their fury againſt the Orthodox, though *Valens* was rendred ſomewhat more favourable towards them by the Letters of *Themiſtius*, the Philoſopher. *Athanaricus* alſo, King of the *Goths*, exerciſed very great cruelty againſt thoſe of his people which were Chriſtians, many of which ſuffered Martyrdom for their Religion.

In the mean time *Valentinian*, by his Valour and Conduct, ſubdued the *Saxons* and *Burgundians*. But while he was making preparations for a War againſt the *Sarmatians*, who had ſpread themſelves through the two *Hungaries*, he died at a little Town called *Brigio*, through a ſudden effuſion of Blood. At this time the *Goths*, being driven out of their own Country, had poſſeſs'd themſelves of all *Thrace*; againſt them *Valens* marches with his Army, (having firſt, though now too late, recall'd from Exile the Biſhops and Monks, and forced them to ſerve in the War with him,) but his Army was utterly routed, and himſelf burnt in an obſcure Cottage. An overthrow which proved very fatal to the *Roman* Empire and all *Italy*.

While theſe things were tranſacting, *Siricius* ordained, that thoſe Monks, whoſe Life and Manners were approved of, ſhould be capable of admiſſion into any Eccleſiaſtical Office, from the loweſt to the higheſt, even the Epiſcopal Dignity it ſelf. That the ſeveral degrees of holy Orders ſhould not be conferr'd at once, but at certain diſtances of time. Moreover, he forbad the *Manichees*, who lurked in the City, the Communion of the faithful; but withal provided, that upon their Repentance and return to the Orthodox Faith, they ſhould be received into the Church, upon condition they would undertake a Monaſtick courſe of living, and devote themſelves to Faſting and Prayer all their life; upon which, if it appear'd that their Converſion were ſincere, they might at the approach of Death receive the Bleſſed Sacrament as their *Viaticum*. He ordained likewiſe, that none but a Biſhop ſhould have power to ordain a Presbyter; that whoſoever married a Widow, or ſecond Wife, ſhould be degraded from his Office in the Church, and that Hereticks, upon their Repentance, ſhould be received with only the Impoſition of Hands. In his time lived *Hilarius*, Biſhop of *Poictiers*, who wrote twelve Books againſt the *Arians*, and one againſt *Valens* and *Urſatius*; but not long after he died at *Poictiers*. *Victorinus* alſo an *African*, who had once been a Profeſſor of Rhetorick at *Rome*, but afterwards, being very Ancient, was converted to Chriſtianity, wrote ſeveral Books after the Dialectick manner againſt *Arius*. Moreover, *Gregorius Bæticus*, Biſhop of *Illiberis*, wrote at this time divers Tracts, ſhewing the excellency of the Chriſtian Religion. But *Photinus* a *Galatian*, the Scholar of *Marcellus*, Biſhop of *Ancyra*, endeavoured now to revive the Hereſie of *Ebion*, who held Chriſt to be a mere man, born in the ordinary way of Generation. Being baniſhed by the Emperor *Valentinian*, he wrote divers Treatiſes, and eſpecially againſt the *Gentiles*. *Didymus* of *Alexandria*, who had been blind from his very Childhood, and thereby utterly ignorant of the firſt rudiments of Learning, became yet afterwards in his

Hilarius.

Victorinus.

Gregorius. Bæticus.

Photinus.

Didymus.

old Age ſo great a Proficient in thoſe Arts which moſt require the aſſiſtance of ſight, particularly in Logick and Geometry, that he wrote ſome excellent Treatiſes in the Mathematicks. He publiſhed alſo Commentaries on the *Pſalms*, and the Goſpels of *Matthew* and *John*, and was a great oppoſer of the *Arians*. Moreover *Optatus*, an *African*, Biſhop of *Mela*, compiled ſix Books againſt the *Donatiſts*; and *Severus Aquilius* a Spaniard, who was kinſman to that *Severus* to whom *Lactantius* penned two Books of Epiſtles, wrote one Volume called *Cataſtrophe*. As for our *Siricius*, having ſetled the Affairs of the Church, and at five Ordinations, made twenty ſix Presbyters, ſixteen Deacons, thirty two Biſhops; he died and was buried iu Cœmetery of *Priſcilla*, in the *Via Salaria*, *Febr.* 22. He was in the Chair fifteen years, eleven months, twenty days, and by his Death the See was vacant twenty days.

Optanus Milevitanus.

ANASTASIUS I.

Gratianus.

ANASTASIUS, a *Roman*, the Son of *Maximus*, was made Biſhop of *Rome* in the time of *Gratian*.

This *Gratian* was a young Prince of eminent Piety, and ſo good a Soldier, that in an Expedition againſt the *Germans*, that were now harraſſing the *Roman* Borders, he did in one Battel at *Argentaria*, cut off thirty thouſand of them, with very little loſs on his own ſide. Returning from thence to *Italy*, he expelled all thoſe of the *Arian* Faction, and admitted none but the Orthodox to the execution of any Eccleſiaſtical Office. But apprehending the Publick-weal to be in great danger from the attempts of the *Goths*, he aſſociated to himſelf as a Partner in the Government, *Theodoſius* a Spaniard, a perſon eminent for his Valour and Conduct; who vanquiſhing the *Alans*, *Huns* and *Goths*, re-eſtabliſhed the Empire of the *Eaſt*, and entred into a League with *Athanaricus* King of the *Goths*, after whoſe Death and magnificent Burial at *Conſtantinople*, his whole Army repaired to *Theodoſius*, and declared they would ſerve under no other Commander but the good Emperor. In the mean time, *Maximus* uſurped the Empire in *Britain*, and paſſing over into *Gaul*, ſlew *Gratian* at *Lions*; whoſe Death ſo terrified his younger Brother *Valentinian*, that he forthwith fled for refuge to *Theodoſius* in the *Eaſt*. Some are of opinion, that thoſe two Brethren owed the Calamities which befel them to their Mother *Juſtina*, whoſe great Zeal for the *Arian* Hereſie made her a fierce Perſecutor of the Orthodox, and eſpecially of S. *Ambroſe*, whom againſt his will the people of *Milain* had at this time choſen their Biſhop. For *Auxentius* an *Arian*, their late Biſhop, being dead, a great Sedition aroſe in the City about chuſing his Succeſſor. Now *Ambroſe*, who was a man of Conſular dignity, and their Governor, endeavouring all he could to quell that diſorder, and to that end going into the Church, where the People were in a tumultuary manner aſſembled, he there makes an excellent Speech, tending to perſuade them to Peace and Unity among themſelves; which ſo wrought upon them, that they all with one conſent cried out, that they

S. Ambroſius.

would have no other Biſhop but *Ambroſe* himſelf. And the event anſwered their deſires; for being as yet but a *Catechumen*, he was forthwith baptized, and then admitted into holy Orders, and conſtituted Biſhop of *Milain*. That he was a perſon of great Learning and extraordinary Sanctity, the account which we have of his Life, and the many excellent Books which he wrote do abundantly teſtifie.

Our *Anaſtaſius* decreed, that the Clergy ſhould by no means ſit at the ſinging, or reading of the holy Goſpel in the Church, but ſtand bowed and in a poſture of Veneration; and that no Strangers, eſpecially thoſe that came from the parts beyond the Seas, ſhould be receiv'd into holy Orders, unleſs they could produce Teſtimonials under the hands of five Biſhops. Which later Ordinance is ſuppos'd to have been occaſion'd by the practice of the *Manichees*, who having gained a great eſteem and authority in *Africa*, were wont to ſend their Miſſionaries abroad into all parts, to corrupt the Orthodox Doctrine by the infuſion of their Errors. He ordained likewiſe, that no perſon infirm of body, or maimed, or defective of any Limb or Member, ſhould be admitted into holy Orders. Moreover, he dedicated the *Creſcentian* Church, which ſtands in the ſecond Region of the City, in the *Via Mamurtina*. The Pontificate of this *Anaſtaſius*, as alſo that of *Damaſus* and *Siricius* his Predeceſſors, were ſignaliz'd not only by thoſe excellent Emperors, *Jovinian*, *Valentinian*, *Gratian* and *Theodoſius*, but alſo by thoſe many holy and worthy Doctors, both *Greek* and *Latin*, that were famous in all kinds of Learning. *Cappadocia*, as *Euſebius* tells us, brought forth *Gregory Nazianzen*, and *Baſil* the Great, both extraordinary Perſons, and both brought up at *Athens*. *Baſil* was a Biſhop of *Caſarea* a City of *Cappadocia*, formerly called *Mazaca*. He wrote divers excellent Books againſt *Eunomius*, one concerning the Holy Ghoſt, and the Orders of a Monaſtick life. He had two Brethren, *Gregory* and *Peter*, both very learned Men, of the former of which ſome Books were extant in the time of *Euſebius*. *Gregory Nazianzen*, who was Maſter to S. *Hierom*; wrote alſo many things; particularly in praiſe of *Cyprian*, *Athanaſius* and *Maximus* the Philoſopher; two Books againſt *Eunomius*, and one againſt the Emperor *Julian*, beſides an Encomium of Marriage and ſingle Life in Hexametre Verſe. By the ſtrength of his reaſoning and the power of his Rhetorick, in which he was an imitator of *Polemon*, (a man of admirable Eloquence,) he brought off the Citizens of *Conſtantinople* from the Errors with which they had been infected. At length being very aged, he choſe his own Succeſſor, and led a private life in the Country. *Baſil* died in the Reign of *Gratian*, *Gregory* of *Theodoſius*. About the ſame time flouriſhed *Epiphanius* Biſhop of *Salamine* in *Cyprus*, a ſtrenuous oppugner of all kinds of Hereſies; as did alſo *Ephrem* a Deacon of the Church of *Edeſſa*, who compoſed divers Treatiſes in the *Syrian* Language, which gain'd him ſo great a Veneration, that in ſome Churches his Books were publickly read after the Holy Scriptures. *Anaſtaſius*, having, at two *Decembrian* Ordinations, made eight Presbyters, five Deacons, ten Biſhops, died and was buried *April* 28. He was in the Chair three years, ten days; and by his Death the See was vacant twenty one days.

Baſilius.

Greg. Nazianzen.

Epiphanius.

Ephrem.

INNOCENTIUS I.

Theodoſius.

INNOCENTIVS, an *Alban*, Son of *Innocentius*, was Biſhop in part of the Reign of *Theodoſius*,

Who with great Conduct and ſingular Diſpatch overcame the Uſurper *Maximus*, and at *Aquileia*, whither he had fled, retaliated upon him the Death of *Gratian*. A fate which the good Biſhop *Martinus* had foretold to *Maximus* himſelf, when he was going againſt all Right and Juſtice to invade *Italy*, having dreined *Britain* of its Military Forces, and left it an eaſie Prey to the *Scots* and *Picts*. Moreover, *Theodoſius*, relying wholly upon the Divine aid, in a very ſhort time defeated not only *Andragatius Maximus*'s General, and *Victor* his Son, bnt *Angobaſtus* and *Eugenius*, two other Uſurpers; which was the occaſion of that ſtrain of the Poet *Claudian* upon this Emperors Succeſs.

O nimium dilecte Deo, tibi militat Æther,
Et conjurati veniunt ad claſſica Venti!

Engliſhed,

Darling of Heaven, with whom the Skies combine,
And the confederate Winds in Battel join!

He was not only a great Soldier, but a very pious and devout man; as appears by his carriage upon the repulſe he found at the Church of *Milain*; for being forbidden entrance by *Ambroſe* the Biſhop of it, till he ſhould have repented of a certain Crime committed by him, he ſo well reſented the Biſhop's plain dealing with him, that he frankly gave him thanks for it, and completed his courſe of Penance for the Fact that had been the occaſion of it. By his Empreſs *Flaccilla* he had two Sons *Arcadius* and *Honorius*. Being once in a great tranſport of rage againſt the Citizens of *Theſſalonica*, for their having kill'd a Soldier, or, as others ſay, a Magiſtrate of his, all the Clergy of *Italy* were ſcarce able to keep him from deſtroying the whole City upon that provocation. But afterwards coming to himſelf, and underſtanding the matter better, being convinced of his Error, he both bewailed the Fact which he had only willed but not executed; and alſo made a Law, that the punitive Decrees of Princes ſhould be deferr'd for three days, that ſo they might have ſpace left for compaſſion or retractation. It is reported of him, that when at any time he was in a ſudden heat of Anger, he would force himſelf to repeat over diſtinctly all the Letters of the Alphabet, that ſo in the mean time his Anger might evaporate. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that he contracted a great Friendſhip with one *John* an *Anchorete*, whoſe advice he always uſed both in War and Peace. But in the fiftieth year of his Age he died at *Milain*.

Innocentius, improving the opportunity of ſuch a peaceable ſtate of Affairs, and ſo propitious a Prince, made ſeveral Conſtitutions concerning matters of the Church. He appointed, that every *Saturday* ſhould be a Faſt, becauſe our Bleſſed Saviour lay in the Grave, and his Diſciples faſted on that day. He made certain Laws concerning the *Jews* and *Pagans*, and for the regulation of Monks. By the conſent of *Theodoſius* he baniſh'd from the City and confin'd to a Monaſtick life the *Cataphrygian* Hereticks of the gang of *Montanus*, *Priſcilla* and *Maximilla*. Moreover, he condemned the Hereſie of *Pelagius* and *Celeſtinus*, who preferr'd Free-will before the Divine Grace; and aſſerted, that men by their own natural ſtrength were able to perform the Laws of God; againſt whom S. *Auſtin* wrote largely. But *Pelagius* perſiſting obſtinately in his opinions againſt all Conviction, went into *Britain* and infected the whole Iſland with his Errors, being aſſiſted by *Julian* his Companion and Confederate in that wicked Deſign. He alſo conſecrated the Church of *Gervaſius* and *Protaſius*, erected and beautified at the Coſt of a Lady named *Veſtina*, whoſe Goods and Jewels, bequeathed by Will, were ſold according to a juſt appraiſement, and employed to that purpoſe. This Church was endowed with ſeveral Eſtates both in Houſes and Land within and without the City, and the Cure of it, and that of S. *Agnes*, given to *Leopardus* and *Paulinus* two Presbyters. In his time lived *Apollinarius* Biſhop of *Laodicea*, (from whom the *Apollinarians* had their Name and Original,) a man vehement and ſubtil at Diſputation; who maintained, that our Saviour at his Incarnation took only a Body, not a Soul; but being preſs'd hard with Arguments to the contrary, he at length granted that he had indeed an animal Soul but not a rational one, that being ſupplied by his Divinity. An Opinion which had been before exploded by *Damaſus* and *Peter* Biſhop of *Alexandria*. But *Martianus* Biſhop of *Barcellona*, a man eminent for his Chaſtity and Eloquence, was very Orthodox in matters of Faith, and a great oppoſer of the *Novatian* Hereſie. *Cyril* alſo Biſhop of *Hieruſalem*, who before had been ſeveral times depoſed, and as often reſtored; at length under *Theodoſius* the Emperor, held his Epiſcopal Dignity peaceably and without interruption eight years together, and became a great Writer. *Euzoius*, who in his youth had been Condiſciple to *Gregory Nazianzen* at *Cæſarea* under *Theſpheſius* the Rhetorician, took a vaſt deal of pains in amending and rectifying the corrupted Copies of the Works of *Origen* and *Pamphilus*, and was himſelf a conſiderable Author. At the ſame time *Hieronymus*, a Presbyter, living in *Bethlehem*, was a very ſucceſsful propagator of Chriſtianity, as appears by his Writings. Now alſo the Synod of *Bourdeaux* condemned the Doctrine of *Priſcillian*, an Hereſie patch'd up out of the Tenents of the *Gnoſticks* and *Manichees*, of whom we have ſpoken above. Our *Innocentius*, having at four Ordinations made thirty Presbyters, twelve Deacons, fifty four Biſhops, died and was buried *July* the 28th. He ſat in the Chair fifteen years, two months, twenty five days, and by his Death the See was vacant twenty two days.

Apollinariſts.

Cyril.

ZOSIMUS.

ZOSIMVS.

ZOSIMVS, a *Grecian*, his Fathers name *Abraham*, lived during the Reign of *Arcadius* and *Honorius*, who ſucceeded their Father *Theodoſius* in the Empire.

Arcadius and *Honorius.*

Theſe divided the Government between them, *Arcadius* ruling in the *Eaſt*, and *Honorius* in the *Weſt*. Though *Theodoſius* had left them to the Tuition of three of his Generals, who, as their Guardians and Protectors, were to manage their Affairs in their Minority; *Ruffinus* in the *Eaſt*, *Stilico* in the *Weſt*, and *Gildo* in *Africa*. But they moved with Ambition, and athirſt after greatneſs, and not doubting to get the advantage of the young Princes, ſet up every one for himſelf. Againſt *Gildo*, who was engag'd in a Rebellion in *Afrique*, his injured and incenſed Brother *Maſcezel* is ſent with an Army, and ſoon defeats and puts him to flight, who not long after dieth either through grief or by poiſon. And *Maſcezel* himſelf, being ſo puffed up with this ſucceſs, that he falls into a great contempt of God and cruelty towards men, is killed by his own Soldiers. *Ruffinus* alſo, who endeavoured to poſſeſs himſelf of the Empire of the *Eaſt*, is ſurpriz'd and puniſh'd by *Arcadius*. At this time *Rhadaguiſus*, King of the *Goths*, invaded *Italy*, and laid all waſte with fire and Sword where ever he came; but by the *Roman* Army, under the Command of *Stilico*, he was vanquiſh'd and ſlain on the Mountains of *Fieſoli*. Him *Alaricus* ſucceeded, whom *Stilico*, to work his own ambitious deſigns, very much countenanced and aſſiſted when he might have conquer'd him. But in the end *Alaricus* being now at *Polentia*, on his way to *Gaul*, part of which *Honorius* had granted to him and his followers to inhabit, had diſturbance given him by one *Saul*, an *Hebrew* by birth and Religion, whom *Stilico*, to the foul breach of Articles, had ſent with a party for that purpoſe. It was an eaſie matter to ſurprize and diſorder the *Goths*, who little ſuſpected any ſuch Practices, and were peaceably celebrating the Feaſt of *Eaſter*. But the day following *Alaricus* engaging with them, ſlew *Saul*, and made an univerſal ſlaughter of his men, and then changing his former courſe towards *Gaul*, moves againſt *Stilico* and the *Roman* Army. Theſe he overcame, and then afther a long and grievous Siege, takes the City of *Rome* itſelf, *Anno* U. C. MCLXIIII. A. C. CCCCXII. Nothwithſtanding this Succeſs, *Alaricus* exerciſed ſo much Moderation and Clemency, that he commanded his Soldiers to put as few to the Sword as might be, and particularly to ſpare all that ſhould fly for refuge to the Churches of S. *Peter* and S. *Paul*. After three days Plunder he leaves the City, (which had ſuffered leſs damage than was thought for, very little of it being burnt,) and marches againſt the *Lucani* and *Bruti*, and having taken and ſacked *Coſenza*, he there dies. Whereupon the *Goths* with one conſent made his kinſman *Athaulphus* his Succeſſor, who returning to *Rome* with his Army, was ſo wrought upon by the Emperor *Honorius*'s Siſter *Galla Placidia*, whom he had married, that he reſtrained his Soldiers from committing any farther outrages, and left the City to its own Government. He had it certainly once in his purpoſe to have razed to the ground the then City of *Rome*, and to have built a new one, which he would have called *Gotthia*, and have left to the enſuing Emperors his own Name, ſo that they ſhould not any longer have had the Title of *Auguſti*, but *Authaulphi*. But *Placidia*, not only brought his Mind off from that project, but alſo prevailed with him to enter into a League with *Honorius* and *Theodoſius* the ſecond, the Son of *Arcadius* deceaſed.

Zoſimus, notwithſtanding all theſe diſturbances, made ſeveral Eccleſiaſtical Conſtitutions ; allowed the bleſſing of Wax-Tapers on the *Saturday* before *Eaſter* in the ſeveral Pariſhes ; forbad the Clergy to frequent publick Drinking-houſe, (though allowing them all innocent liberty among themſelves,) or any Servant to be made a Clergy-man, becauſe that Order ought to conſiſt of none but free and ingenuous perſons. Whereas now not only Servants and Baſtards, but the vile off-ſpring of the moſt flagitious Parents are admitted to that Dignity ; whoſe Enormities will certainly, at long-run, prove fatal the Church. 'Tis ſaid that *Zoſimus* at this time ſent *Fauſtinus*, a Biſhop, and two Presbyters of the City to the Council of *Carthage*, by them declaring, that no Debates concerning Eccleſiaſtical Affairs ought to be managed any where without permiſſion of the Church of *Rome*. During his Pontificate lived *Lucius* a Biſhop of the *Arian* Faction, who wrote certain Books upon ſeveral Subjects. *Diodorus* alſo Biſhop of *Tarſus*, during his being a Presbyter of *Antioch*, was a great Writer ; following the ſenſe of *Euſebius*, but not able to reach his Style for want of skill in ſecular Learning. *Tiberianus* likewiſe, who had been accuſed together with *Priſcillian*, wrote an Apology to free himſelf from the ſuſpicion of Hereſie. *Euagarius*, a man of ſmart and brisk parts, tranſlated into *Latin* the Life of S. *Anthony*, written in *Greek* by *Athanaſius*. *Ambroſius* of *Alexandria*, a Scholar of *Didymus*, wrote a large Volume againſt *Apollinarius*. At this time flouriſhed thoſe two famous Biſhops, *Theophilus* of *Alexandria*, and *John* of *Conſtantinople*, for the greatneſs of his Eloquence, deſervedly ſirnamed *Chryſoſtom* ; who ſo far prevailed upon *Theodorus* and *Maximus*, two Condiſciples of his, that they left their Maſters *Libanius* the Rhetorician, and *Andragatius* the Philoſopher, and became Proſelytes to Chriſtianity. This *Libanius* lying now at the point of death, being asked whom he would leave ſucceſſor in his School ; made anſwer, that he deſired no other than *Chryſoſtom*, were he not a Chriſtian. At this time the Decrees of the Council of *Carthage* being ſent to *Zoſimus*, were by him confirmed, and thereby the *Pelagian* Hereſie condemned throughout the World. Some tell us, that *Petronius* Biſhop of *Bononia*, and *Poſſidonius* an *African* Biſhop, had now gain'd a mighty reputation for Sanctity ; that *Primaſius* wrote largely againſt the Hereſies to Biſhop *Fortunatus* ; and that *Proba*, Wife to *Adelphus* the Proconſul, compoſed an Hiſtorical Poem of our Saviours Life, conſiſting wholly of *Virgilian* Verſe ; though others attribute the honour of this performance to *Eudocia* Empreſs of *Theodoſius* the younger. But certainly the moſt learned perſon of the Age he lived in, was *Auguſtinus*, Saint *Ambroſe* his Convert, Biſhop of *Hippo* in *Africa*, a moſt ſtrenuous Defender of the Chriſtian Faith both in Diſcourſe and Writing. As for *Zoſimus*, having ordained ten Presbyters, three Deacons, eight Biſhops, he died and was buried in the *Via Tiburtina*, near the body of Saint *Laurence* the Martyr, *December* 26th.

He ſat in the Chair one year, three months, twelve days, and by his Death the See was vacant eleven days.

BONIFACIVS I.

Honorius. BONIFACE, a *Roman*, Son of *Jucundus* a Presbyter, was Biſhop in the time of *Honorius*.

At this time a great diſſention aroſe among the Clergy; for though *Boniface* was choſen Biſhop in one Church of the City by one Party, yet *Eulalius* was elected and ſet up againſt him by a contrary Faction in another. This, when *Honorius*, who was now at *Milain*, came to underſtand, at the Solicitation of his Siſter *Placidia*, and her Son *Valentinian*, they were both baniſh'd the City. But about ſeven months after *Boniface* was re-call'd, and confirmed in the Pontifical Dignity.

In the mean time *Athaulphus* dying, *Vallias* was made King of the *Goths*, who, being terrified by the Judgments inflicted on his People, reſtored *Placidia*, whom he had always uſed very honourably, to her Brother *Honorius*, and entred into a League with him, giving very good Hoſtages for the confirmation of it; as did alſo the *Alanes*, *Vandals* and *Suevians*. This *Placidia Honorius* gave in marriage to *Conſtantius*, whom he had declared *Cæſar*, who had by her a Son named *Valentinian*; but ſhe being afterwards baniſh'd by her Brother, went into the *Eaſt* with her Sons *Honorius* and *Valentinian*.

Our *Boniface* ordained, that no Woman, though a Nun, ſhould touch the conſecrated Pall or Incenſe; and that no Servant, or Debtor, ſhould be admitted into the Clergy. Moreover he built an Oratory upon the ground where S. *Felicitas* the Martyr was buried, and very much adorned her Tomb. During his Pontificate flouriſhed divers famous men, *S. Hierom.* eſpecially *Hierom* a Presbyter, Son of *Euſebius*, born at a Town called *Stridon*, ſeated in the Confines of *Dalmatia* and *Hungaria*, but demoliſhed by the *Goths*. It is not to my purpoſe to rehearſe, how great benefit the Church of God reaped from his Life and Writings, ſince he is known to have been a perſon of extraordinary Sanctity, and his Works are had in ſo great honour and eſteem, that no Author is more read by learned Men than he. He died at *Bethlehem* on the laſt day of *September*, in the ninety firſt year of his Age. Beſides him there were alſo *Gelaſius*, Succeſſor to *Euzoius* in the Biſhoprick of *Cæſarea Palæſtinæ*, a man of excellent Parts; *Dexter*, Son of *Pacianus*, who compiled an Hiſtory inſcribed to S. *Hierom*; *Amphilochius*, who wrote concerning the Holy Ghoſt in an elegant ſtyle; and *Sophorinus*, commended by S. *Hierom* for his learned Book of the Deſtruction of *Serapis*. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that at this time *Lucianus* a Presbyter, directed by a divine Revelation, found out the Sepulchres of S. *Stephen* the Protomartyr, and *Gamaliel* S. *Paul's* Maſter, of which he gave an account to all the Churches by an Epiſtle in *Greek*, which was afterwards tranſlated into *Latin* by *Abundus* a *Spaniard*, and ſent to *Oroſius*. Some likewiſe tell us, that *John Caſſianus* and *Maximine*, two very learned Men, lived in this Age; but though it be

doubtful

*

doubtful of them, it is not ſo concerning *Eutropius* S. *Auſtin*'s Scholar, who in a handſome ſtyle Epitomiſed the *Roman* Hiſtory from the building of the City to his own times; and who, moreover, wrote to his two Siſters, Recluſes, concerning Chaſtity, and the love of Religion; to whom we may add *Juvenal* the Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, and *Heros*, a Diſciple of S. *Martin*, the wrongfully depoſed Biſhop of *Arles*, both Men of great Reputation for Sanctity. As for *Boniface* himſelf, having at one Ordination made thirteen Presbyters, three Deacons, thirty ſix Biſhops, he died *October* the 25th, and was buried in the *Via Salaria*, near the Body of S. *Felicitas* the Martyr. He ſat in the Chair three years, eight months, ſeven days; *Boniface* being dead, ſome of the Clergy recall'd *Eulalius*, but he neither through indignation at his former repulſe, or from contempt of Worldly Greatneſs, diſdained the revocation, and died the year following. The See was then vacant nine days.

CELESTINVS I.

CELESTINE, a *Campanian*, lived in the times of *Theodoſius* the younger,

Theodoſius ſecundus.

This *Theodoſius*, upon the death of that excellent Prince *Honorius*, creates the Son of his Aunt *Placidia*, *Valentinian*, *Cæſar*, and commits to his charge the *Weſtern* Empire. Who being immediately by the univerſal conſent of all *Italy* acknowledged their Emperor, and actually entring upon the Goverment at *Ravenna*, was wonderfully proſperous in ſubduing the Enemies of the *Roman* State, and particularly *John* the Uſurper. In the mean time the *Vandals*, *Alemans*, and *Goths*, a barbarous and ſalvage People, paſſing over out of *Spain* into *Africa*, under the conduct of their King *Genſericus*, not only miſerably depopulated and haraſſed that Province with Fire and Sword, but alſo corrupted the Catholick Faith there with the mixture of *Arianiſm*, and baniſh'd ſome Orthodox Biſhops; during which Troubles S. *Auguſtin* Biſhop of *Hippo* died in the third month of the Siege of that City, *Auguſt* 28. in the ſeventy ſeventh year of his age. The *Vandals* having taken *Carthage*, ſail'd to *Sicily*, and made the like havock in that Iſland, as alſo did the *Picts* and *Scots* in the Iſland of *Britain*. In this Extremity, the *Britains* implored the aid of *Aetius* a *Patrician*, and a famous Soldier, but he not only denied them his aſſiſtance; but having other ambitious Deſigns to carry on, ſolicited the *Huns* to invade *Italy*. The *Britains* being thus deſerted by *Aetins*, call over the *Saxons* or *Engliſh* to their help, whom they ſoon found more their Enemies than Aſſiſtants; for being in a little time over-run by them, they loſt both their Country and their Name. While theſe things were tranſacting, *Theodoſius* dying at *Conſtantinople* in the twenty ſeventh year of his and his Uncle *Honorius*'s Reign, *Bleda* and *Attila* two Brothers, Kings of the *Huns* invading *Illyricum*, laid waſte, and burn'd all places to which they came.

Notwithſtanding, our *Celeſtine* ordained ſeveral Rites appertaining to Divine Worſhip; as that, beſides the Epiſtle and Goſpel, before the Maſs the Pſalms of *David* ſhould be ſung by all alternately. *Martinus Caſſinas* tells us, that the Pſalm *Judica me, Deus, Give ſentence with me, O God, and defend my cauſe, &c.* which is uſed at the beginning of the Sacrifice, was introduced by him; as likewiſe the Gradual is aſcribed to him. Many other Eccleſiaſtical Conſtitutions he made, to be ſeen in the Archives of the Church. He alſo dedicated and enriched the *Julian* Church; *Neſtorius.* At this time *Neſtorius* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople* endavoured to ſow a new Error in the Church, aſſerting, that Chriſt was born of the Virgin *Mary* a mere Man, and that the Divinity was conferred upon him of Merit. To this impious Doctrine *Cyril* Biſhop of *Alexandria* and our *Celeſtine* oppoſed themſelves very ſtrenuouſly. For, in a Synod of two hundred Biſhops held at *Epheſus*, *Neſtorius* himſelf and the Hereſie denominated from him, together with the *Pelagians* who were great favourers of the *Neſtorian* Party, were by univerſal conſent condemned in thirteen Canons levell'd againſt their fooliſh Opinions. Moreover, *Celeſtine* ſent *Germanus* Biſhop of *Auxerre* into *England*, to oppoſe the *Pelagian* Hereſie, and reduce the Inhabitants to the Orthodox Faith; and *Palladius*, whom he had made a Biſhop to the *Scots*, who deſired to be inſtructed in the Chriſtian Religion. And indeed it cannot be denied, but that by his endeavours, and the induſtry of thoſe whom he employed to that purpoſe, a great part of the *Weſt* were converted to Chriſtianity. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time the Devil aſſumed human ſhape, and pretended himſelf to be *Moſes*, and impoſed upon a multitude of *Jews*, by undertaking to conduct them out of the Iſland of *Crete* into the Land of Promiſe, through the Sea as upon dry Land, in imitation of the ancient Miracle wrought for that People at the red Sea. Many of them follow'd this falſe *Moſes*, and periſhed in the Waters; thoſe only being reported to have been ſaved, who preſently own'd Chriſt to be the true God. Our *Celeſtine* having, at three *Decembrian* Ordinations, made thirty two Presbyters, twelve Deacons, ſixty two Biſhops, died, and was buried in the Cœmetery of *Priſcilla* in the *Via Salaria*, *April* the 6th. He ſat in the Chair eight years, ten months, ſeventeen days, and by his death the See was vacant twenty one days.

SIXTUS III.

Valentinian. SIXTUS the Third, a *Roman*, Son of *Sixtus*, lived in the time of *Valentinian*.

Who, being Governor of the *Weſtern* Empire, entred into a League with *Genſericus* King of the *Vandals*, whom he permitted to inhabit part of *Africa*, confining themſelves within certain Boundaries agreed upon between them. *Genſeric*, being afterwards inſtigated by the *Arians*, became very zealous in propagating their Errors, and violently perſecuted the Orthodox Biſhops. And *Valentinian* going to *Conſtantinople*, and there marrying *Theodoſius*'s Daughter, the *Vandals* in the mean time, under *Genſeric*'s Conduct, re-took, and ſack'd *Carthage* in the five hundred eighty fourth year ſince its firſt being in the hands of the *Romans*. While theſe things were tranſacting in *Afric*, *Attila* King of the *Huns*, not contented to have invaded the two *Hungaries*, miſerably haraſſes *Macedonia*, *Myſia*, *Achaia*, and the *Thraces*; and then, that he might have no ſharer in the Kingdom, puts to death his Brother *Bleda*. Soon after, his growing ambition prompts him to endeavour the gaining of the *Weſtern* Empire; and therefore getting together in a very little time a great Army, he begins his March upon that deſign. This *Aetius* having intelligence of, forthwith ſends Ambaſſadors to *Tholouſe* to King *Theodorick* to ſtrike up a Peace; with whom ſo ſtrict a League was concluded, that they both joyntly engage in the War againſt *Attila*, at a common Charge, and with equal Forces. The *Romans* and *Theodorick* had for their Auxiliaries, the *Alanes*, *Burgundians*, *Franks*, *Saxons*, and indeed almoſt all the People of the *Weſt*. At length *Attila* comes upon them in the Fields of *Catalaunia*; and Battel is joyn'd with great Valour and Reſolution on either ſide. The Fight was long and ſharp, a Voice being over-heard, none knowing from whence it came, was the occaſion of putting an end to the Diſpute. In this Engagement were ſlain on both ſides eighteen thouſand Men; neither Army flying, or giving ground. And yet 'tis ſaid, that *Theodorick*, Father of King *Thuriſmond*, was killed in this Action.

Sixtus had not long enjoyed the Pontificate, before he was publickly accuſed by one *Baſſus*; but in a Synod of Fifty ſeven Biſhops, he made ſuch a Defence of himſelf, that he was by them all with one conſent acquitted. *Baſſus*, his falſe Accuſer, was, with the conſent of *Valentinian* and his Mother *Placidia*, excommunicated and condemn'd to baniſhment, but with this compaſſionate Proviſion, that at the point of death the *Viaticum* of the Bleſſed Sacrament ſhould not be denied him; the forfeiture of his Eſtate was adjudged not to the Emperor, but to the Church. 'Tis ſaid, that in the third month of his Exile he died, and that our Biſhop *Sixtus* did with his own hands wrap up and embalm his Corps, and then bury it in *St. Peters* Church. Moreover, *Sixtus* repaired and enlarged the Church of the Bleſſed Virgin, which was anciently called by the name of *Liberius*, near the Market-place of *Livia*, then had the name of *St. Mary* at the Manger, and laſt of all was called *St. Maries the Great*. That *Sixtus* did very much Beautifie, and make great Additions to it, appears from the Inſcription on the Front of the firſt Arch in theſe words, *Xyſtus Epiſcopus Plebi Dei*; for according to the Greek Orthography the name begins with *X* and *y*, though by cuſtom it is now writen *Sixtus* with *S* and *i*. To this Church this Biſhop was very liberal and munificent; among other inſtances adorning with *Porphyry* ſtone the Ambo or Deſk, where the Goſpel and Epiſtles are read. Beſides what he did himſelf, at his perſuaſion the Emperor *Valentinian* alſo was very liberal in works of this nature. For over the Confeſſory of *S. Peter*, which he richly adorned, he placed the Image of our Saviour of Gold ſet with Jewels, and renewed thoſe Silver Ornaments in the *Cupola* of the *Lateran* Church which the *Goths* had taken away. Some are of an Opinion, that in his time one *Peter* a *Roman* Presbyter, by Nation a *Sclavonian*, built the Church of *S. Sabina* upon the *Aventine*, not far from the Monaſtery of *S. Boniface*, where S. *Alexius* is interred. But I rather think this to have been done in the Pontificate of *Celeſtine* the firſt, as appears from an Inſcription in Heroick Verſe, yet remaining, which expreſſes as much. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that at this time flouriſhed *Euſebius* of *Cremona* and *Philip*, two Scholars of *St. Hierom*, both very elegant Writers; as alſo *Eucherius* Biſhop of *Lyons*, a Man of great Learning and Eloquence; and *Hilarius* Biſhop of *Arles*, a pious Man, and of no mean parts. Our *Sixtus*, having employed all his Eſtate in the building and adorning of Churches, and relieving the Poor, and having made twenty eight Preſbyters, twelve Deacons, fifty two Biſhops, died, and was buried in a Vault in the *Via Tiburtina*, near the Body of *St. Laurence*. He was in the Chair eight years, nine days, and by his death the See was vacant twenty two days.

LEO I.

LEO, a *Tuſcan*, Son of *Quintianus*, lived at the time when *Attila*, having return'd into *Hungary* from the Fight of *Catalonia*, and there recruited his Army, invaded *Italy*, and firſt ſet down before *Aquileia*, a frontier City of that Province, which held out a Siege of three years. Deſpairing hereupon of ſucceſs, he was juſt about to raiſe the Leaguer, when obſerving the Storks to carry their young ones out of the City into the Fields, being encouraged by this Omen, he renews his Batteries, and making a fierce Aſſault, at length takes the miſerable City, ſacks and burns it, ſparing neither Age nor Sex, but acting agreeably to the Title he aſſum'd to himſelf of being God's Scourge. The *Huns* having hereby gain'd an Inlet into *Italy*, over-run all the Country about *Venice*, poſſeſſing themſelves of the Cities, and demoliſhing *Milain* and *Pavia*. From hence *Attila* marching towards *Rome*, and being come to the place where the *Menzo* runs into the *Po*, ready to paſs the River, the Holy Biſhop *Leo*, out of a tender ſenſe of the calamitous ſtate of *Italy*, and of the City of *Rome*, and with the advice of *Valentinian*, goes forth and meets him, perſuading him not to proceed any farther, but to take warning by *Alaricus*, who, ſoon after his taking that City, was by the Judgment of God removed out of the World. *Attila* takes the good Biſhops Counſel, being moved thereunto by a Viſion which he ſaw while they were diſcourſing together, of two Men (ſuppoſed to be *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*) brandiſhing their naked Swords over his Head, and threatning him with death, if he were refractory. Deſiſting therefore from his deſign, he returns into *Hungary*, where not long after he was choaked with his own Blood, violently breaking out at his Noſtrils, through exceſs of drinking.

Leo, returning to the City, applies himſelf wholly to the defence of the Catholick Faith, which was now violently oppoſed by ſeveral kinds of Hereticks, but eſpecially by the *Neſtorians* and *Eutychians*. *Neſtorius* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, affirmed the Bleſſed Virgin to be Mother not of God, but of Man only, that ſo he might make the Humanity and Divinity of Chriſt to be two diſtinct Perſons, one the Son of God, the other the Son of Man. But *Eutyches* Abbot of *Conſtantinople*, that he might broach an Hereſie in contradiction to the former, utterly confounded the Divine and Human Nature of Chriſt, aſſerting them to be one, and not at all to be diſtinguiſhed. This Hereſie being condemned by *Flavianus* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, with the conſent of *Theodoſius*, a Synod is called at *Epheſus*, in which, *Dioſcorus* Biſhop of *Alexandria* being Preſident, *Eutyches* was reſtored, and *Flavianus* cenſured. But *Theodoſius* dying, and his Succeſſor *Marcianus* proving a Friend to the Orthodox Doctrine, *Leo* calls a Council at *Chalcedon*, wherein by the Authority of ſix hundred and thirty Biſhops, it was decreed as an Article of Faith, that there are two Natures in Chriſt, and that one and the ſame Chriſt is God and Man; by which conſequently, both *Neſtorius* and *Eutyches*, the peſtilent Patron of the *Manichees*, were condemned. Moreover, the Books of the *Manichees* were publickly burnt; and the Pride, and Heretical Opinions, of *Dioſcorus* diſcountenanced and ſuppreſs'd. In the mean time *Valentinian* being treacherouſly murthered, *Maximus* uſurps the Empire, and againſt her Will Marries *Eudoxia* the Widow of *Valentinian*. Upon this occaſion the *Vandals* being called out of *Afric*, *Genſeric* being their Leader, force their entrance into the City of *Rome*, throw the Body of *Maximus*, who had been kill'd in the Tumult by one *Urſus* a *Roman* Soldier, into the River *Tyber*, plunder and burn the City, pillage the Churches, and refuſe to hearken to Biſhop *Leo*, begging them, whatever ſpoils they carried away, only to ſpare the City itſelf and the Temples. However, on the fourteenth day from their entrance into *Rome*, they left it, and taking away with them *Eudoxia* and her Daughter, with a great number of other Captives, they return'd into *Africa*. *Leo*, being now very intent upon making good the damages ſuſtain'd from this People, prevailed upon *Demetria*, a pious Virgin, to build upon her own ground in the *Via Latina* three miles from the City, a Church to *St. Stephen*; and did the ſame himſelf in the *Via Appia* in honour to *S. Cornelius*. The Churches which had been in any part ruined, he repaired; and thoſe of the Sacred Veſſels belonging to them, which had been bruiſed and broken, he cauſed to be mended, and thoſe which had been taken away to be made anew; Moreover, he built three Apartments in the Churches of *S. John*, *S. Peter*, and *S. Paul*; appointed certain of the *Roman* Clergy, whom he called *Cubicularii*, to keep and take charge of the Sepulchres of the Apoſtles; built a Monaſtery near *S. Peters*; introduced into the Canon of the Maſs, the Clauſe, *Hoc ſanctum ſacrificium*, this Holy Sacrifice, *&c.* and ordained, that no Recluſe ſhould be capable of receiving the Conſecrated Veils, unleſs it did appear, that ſhe had preſerv'd her Chaſtity ſpotleſs for the ſpace of forty years. But while the Good man was employed in theſe things, there ſtarted up of a ſudden the Hereſie of *Acephali*, ſo called, becauſe they were a company of fooliſh undiſciplin'd Schiſmaticks, or, if it be not a quibble, becauſe they wanted both Brains and Head. Theſe Men decried the Council of *Chalcedon*, denied the propriety of two Subſtances in Chriſt, and aſſerted, that there could be but one Nature in one Perſon. But our *Leo* abundantly confuted their abſurd Doctrines in his elegant and learned Epiſtles written to the Faithful upon that Argument. Men of Note in his time, were *Paulinus* Biſhop of *Nola*, *Proſper* of *Aquitain*, a learned Man, and *Mamercus* Biſhop of *Vienne*; who, as 'tis ſaid, was the firſt that appointed Proceſſionary Supplications, or Litanies, upon the occaſion of the frequent Earthquakes, with which *Gaul* was at that

Acephali

time very much afflicted. To conclude, *Leo* having ordained eighty one Presbyters, thirty one Deacons, and eighty one Biſhops, died, and was buried in the *Vatican* near S. *Peter*, *April* the 10th. He ſat in the Chair twenty one years, one month, thirteen days, and by his death the See was vacant eight days.

HILARIVS I.

Leo Emperor.

HILARIVS, a *Sardinian*, the Son of *Criſpinus*, continued in the Chair till the time of the Emperor *Leo*.

Who being choſen Emperor upon the death of *Marcianus*, creates his Son of his own name, *Auguſtus*. During his Reign the *Roman* State ſuffered very much, by reaſon of certain ambitious Men who endeavoured to get the Goverment into their own hands. And *Genſeric* the *Vandal* King being tempted with ſo fair an opportunity, ſails out of *Afrique* into *Italy* with deſign to gain the Empire for himſelf. *Leo* having intelligence thereof, ſends *Baſilicus* a *Patrician*, with a mighty Fleet, to the aſſiſtence of *Anthemius* the Emperor of the *Weſt*; Theſe two with joint Force and Courage meet *Genſeric* near *Populonia*, and force him to an Engagement at Sea, in which, being routed with a great ſlaughter of his Men, he was glad to make an inglorious flight into *Africa* again. In the mean time *Ricimer* a *Patrician*, having on the Mountains of *Trent* conquer'd *Biorgus* King of the *Alanes*, and being puff'd up with that Victory, was purpoſed to attempt the City of *Rome*, had not *Epiphanius* Biſhop of *Pavia* made him and *Anthemius* friends.

Hilary, notwithſtanding this confuſed ſtate of things, did not neglect the care of Eccleſiaſtical Affairs. For he ordained, that no Biſhop ſhould chuſe his own Succeſſor; (a Conſtitution, which belongs as well to all other Eccleſiaſtical Degrees, as that of Epiſcopacy) he alſo made a Decretal which he diſperſed throughout Chriſtendom; and wrote certain Epiſtles concerning the Catholick Faith, by which the three Synods of *Nice*, *Epheſus* and *Chalcedon* were confirmed, and the Hereticks *Eutyches*, *Neſtorius*, and *Dioſcorus*, with their Adherents, condemned. In the Baptiſtery of the *Lateran* Church he built three Oratories, which were adorned with Gold and precious Stones, their Gates of Braſs, covered with wrought Silver; thoſe he Dedicated to S. *John Baptiſt*, S. *John Evangeliſt*, and S. *Croſs*. In the laſt of theſe was repoſited ſome of the wood of the Croſs, incloſed in Gold, and ſet with Jewels; and a Golden Agnus upon a Pillar of *Onyx*. He added moreover the Oratory of S. *Stephen*, built two Libraries adjoyning, and founded a Monaſtery. I ſhall not here recite the almoſt numberleſs Donations which he made to ſeveral Churches, of Gold, Silver, Marble, and Jewels. Some tell us, that *Germanus* Biſhop of *Auxerre*, and *Lupus* Biſhop of *Troyes* lived in his time, both great ſupporters of the Chriſtian Cauſe, which was now very much undermined by the endeavours of the *Gentiles* and *Pelagians*. *Gennadius* alſo Biſhop of *Conſtantinople* did great ſervice to the Church by the integrity of his Life, and the excellency of his Parts and Learning. During the Pontificate of our *Hilary*, *Victorinus.*

Victorinus of *Aquitain*, a famous Arithmetician, reduced the *Eaſter* account to the courſe of the Moon; far out-doing *Euſebius* and *Theophilus*, who had attempted it before him. And among thoſe that flouriſhed at this time, by ſome is reckoned *Merline* the famous Engliſh *Bard*, concerning whom we are told more than enough. As for *Hilary* himſelf, having performed the Duty of a good Biſhop, both in building and adorning of Churches, and alſo in Teaching, Admoniſhing, Cenſuring, and giving Alms where need required; and having alſo ordained twenty five Presbyters, five Deacons, twenty two Biſhops; he died, and was buried in the Sepulchre of *St. Laurence*, near the Body of Biſhop *Sixtus*. He ſat in the Chair ſeven years, three months, ten days, and by his death the See was vacant ten days.

Merline.

SIMPLICIUS I.

SIMPLICIUS, Son of *Caſtinus*, born at *Tivoli*, was Biſhop during the Reigns of *Leo* the Second, and *Zeno*.

Leo II. and *Zeno*.

For *Leo* the firſt falling ſick, makes choice of *Leo* the ſecond, Son of *Zeno Iſauricus*, and his own Nephew by *Ariadne* his Siſter, to be his Succeſſor; who not long after being ſeiz'd by a violent Diſtemper, and apprehending himſelf to be at the point of death, leaves the Empire to his Father *Zeno*. In the mean time *Odoacer*, invading *Italy* with a great Army of his *Heruli* and *Turingians*, conquers and takes priſoner *Oreſtes*, a Noble *Roman* near *Pavia*, and then cauſes him to be put to death in the ſight of his whole Army at *Placentia*. Hereupon, *Zeno*, pitying the calamitous ſtate of *Italy*, ſpeedily ſends *Theodoric* King of the *Goths*, a Man whom he had before very much eſteem'd, with a mighty Force to oppoſe him, who having in a pitch'd Battel not far from *Aquileia*, near the River *Sontio*, overcome *Odoacer*'s Captains, and having oftentimes the like ſucceſs againſt *Odoacer* himſelf, at length he beſieg'd him three years together in *Ravenna*, and reduc'd him to that extremity, that, with the advice of *John* the Biſhop of that City, he conſented to admit *Theodoric* as his Partner in the Empire. But the day following, both *Odoacer* and his Son were, contrary to Promiſe and Agreement, ſlain; by which means *Theodoric* poſſeſs'd himſelf of the Goverment of all *Italy* without any oppoſition.

In the mean time *Simplicius* Dedicated the Churches of *St. Stephen* the Protomartyr on *Mons Cælius*, and that of S. *Andrew* the Apoſtle not far from *St. Maries* the Great; in which there appear to this day ſome footſteps of Antiquity, which I have many a time beheld with ſorrow for their neglect, to whoſe charge ſuch noble piles of Building, now ready to fall, are committed; That this Church was of his Founding, appears by certain Verſes wrought in *Moſaick* work, which I have ſeen in it. He Dedicated alſo another Church to S. *Stephen* near the *Licinian* Palace, where the Virgins Body had been buried. He alſo appointed the Weekly-waitings of the Presbyters in their turns at the Churches of S. *Peter*, and S. *Paul*, and S. *Laurence* the Martyr, for the receiving of Penitents, and baptizing of Proſelytes. Moreover, he divided the City among the Presbyters, into five Precincts or Regions; the firſt of S. *Peter*, 2. S. *Paul*, 3. S. *Laurence*. 4. S. *John Lateran*. 5. S. *Maria Maggiore*. He alſo ordained, that no Clergy-man ſhould hold a Benefice of any Lay-man, a Conſtitution which was afterwards confirm'd by *Gregory* and other Popes. At this time the Biſhop of *Rome*'s Primacy was countenanced by the Letters of *Acacius* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, and *Timothy* a Learned Man, in which they beg him to cenſure *Peter Mog* Biſhop of *Alexandria*, an aſſertor of the *Eutychian* Hereſie. Which was accordingly done, but with Proviſo, that he ſhould be receiv'd into the Communion of the Church again, if within a certain time prefix'd he retracted his Errors. Some ſay, that during his Pontificate lived *Remigius* Biſhop of *Reims*, who (as Hiſtory tells us) Baptized *Clodoveus* the *French* King. Now alſo *Theodorus* Biſhop of *Syria* wrote largely againſt *Eutyches*, and compiled ten Books of Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, in imitation of *Euſebius Cæſarienſis*. At this time almoſt all *Egypt* was infected with the Heretical Doctrine of *Dioſcorus*, concerning whom we have already ſpoken; and *Huneric* King of the *Vandals*, a Zealot for the *Arian* Faction, raiſed a Perſecution againſt the Orthodox Chriſtians in *Afrique*. Upon this, *Eudocia* Niece to *Theodoſius*, a Catholick Lady, and Wife to *Huneric*, left her Heretical Husband upon pretence of a Pilgrimage to *Hieruſalem* to perform a Vow which ſhe had made; but upon ſo long a Journy, the effect of which prov'd intolerable to the tenderneſs of her Sex, ſhe there ſoon died. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time were found the bones of the Prophet *Eliſha*, which were carried into *Alexandria*; as alſo the Body of S. *Barnabas* the Apoſtle, together with the Goſpel of S. *Matthew*, written with his own hand. As for *Simplicius* himſelf, having by his Conſtitutions and Donations very much promoted the intereſt of the Church of *Rome*, and having at ſeveral Ordinations made fifty eight Presbyters, eleven Deacons, eighty ſix Biſhops, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church on the ſecond day of *Match*; He was in the Chair fifteen years, one month, ſeven days, and by his death the See was vacant twenty ſix days.

FELIX III.

FELIX, by birth a *Roman*, Son of *Felix* a Presbyter, was Biſhop from the time of *Odoacer*, whoſe power in *Italy* laſted fourteen years, till the Reign of *Theodoric*.

Theodoric. Who, though he made *Ravenna* the ſeat of the Empire, yet the City of *Rome* was much indebted to his Bounty. For he re-built the Sepulchre of *Octavins*, exhibited Shews to the People according to ancient cuſtom, repaired the publick Buildings and Churches, and indeed neglected nothing that became a good and generous Prince. And to confirm and eſtabliſh the Empire, he Married *Andefleda* Daughter of *Clodoveus* King of *France*, and gave in Marriage his Siſter to *Huneric* King of the *Vandals*, and one of his Daughters to *Alaric* King of the *Viſigoths*, and the other to King *Gondibate*.

Felix, now fully underſtanding that *Peter Mog* the *Eutychian*, who had been baniſhed for his heretical Opinions upon the complaint, and at the deſire, of *Acacius*, was, by the ſame *Acacius*, recall'd from Exile, ſuſpected that there was a private Agreement between them, and therefore excommunicated them both by the Authority of the Apoſtolick See, which was confirm'd in a Synod of the Orthodox. But three years after the Emperour *Zeno* teſtifying that they were penitent, *Felix* ſends two Biſhops, *Meſſenus* and *Vitalis*, with full power, upon enquiry into the truth of their repentance, to abſolve them. Theſe Legates, arriving at the City *Heraclea*, were ſoon corrupted with bribes, and neglected to act according to their Commiſſion. Whereupon *Felix*, out of a juſt indignation, having firſt called a Council upon that occaſion, excommunicates them too, as *Simoniacks* and betrayers of the truſt repoſed in them. Though *Meſſenus*, who confeſs'd his fault, and begg'd time to evince the ſincerity of his repentance, had it accordingly granted him. The ſame *Felix* alſo built the Church of S. *Agapetus*, near that of S. *Laurence*, and ordained that Churches ſhould be conſecrated by none but Biſhops. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time *Theodorus* a *Greek* Presbyter, wrote againſt the Hereticks a Book of the Harmony of the Old and New Teſtament; and ſome reckon among the Men of Note in this Age, the Learned and famous Divine *John Damaſcene*, who wrote the Book of *Sentences*, imitating therein *Gregory Naziannene*, *Gregory Nyſſene*, and *Didymus* of *Alexandria*, and compiled alſo certain Treatiſes of Medicin, in which he gives an account of the Cauſes and Cure of Diſeaſes. Our *Felix*, having at two *Decembrian* Ordinations made twenty eight Presbyters, five Deacons, thirty Biſhops, died, and was buried in the Church of S. *Paul*. He ſate in the Chair eight years, eleven months, ſeventeen days, and by his death the See was vacant five days.

GELASIVS I.

Theodoric.

GELASIVS, an *African*, Son of *Valerius*, was Biſhop of *Rome* at the time when *Theodoric* made War upon his Wives Father *Clodoveus* the *French* King, for that he had ſlain his Daughters Husband *Alaric* King of the *Viſigoths*, and ſeiz'd *Gaſcoigne*. They were both allied to him by marriage; but the cauſe of *Alaric* ſeem'd to him the more juſt, and therefore he preferr'd his Son-in-law before his Father-in-law. And gaining the Victory over the *French* in a very important Battel, he recovers *Gaſcoigne*, and undertakes the preſent Government of it, till *Almaric*, the Son of *Alaric*, ſhould come to Age. The ſame *Theodoric* to his Conqueſt of *Italy* added that of *Sicily*, *Dalmatia*, *Liburnia*, *Illyricum*, *Gallia Narbonenſis*, and *Burgundy*. He alſo walled round the City of *Trent*, and to ſecure *Italy* from a Foreign Invaſion, upon the Frontiers of it near *Aoſt* placed the *Heruli*, whoſe King being yet a Minor, he made his adopted Son.

Gelaſius in the mean time condemns to baniſhment all the *Manichees* that ſhould be found in the City, and cauſes their Books to be publickly burnt near S. *Mary*'s Church. And being ſatisfied of the repentance of

Meſſenus, who had given in his Retractation in Writing, at the requeſt of the Synod he abſolved him, and reſtored him to his Biſhoprick. But having intelligence that ſeveral Murthers, and other notorious Outrages, were committed in the *Greek* Churches by the factious followers of *Peter Mog* and *Acacius*, he forthwith ſends his Legates thither, with Commiſſion to Excommunicate for ever all thoſe who did not immediately recant their Errors; a new and unuſual ſeverity, whereas the Primitive Church was wont to wait long, in hopes that Separatiſts would at length return to her Boſom. At this time *John*, Biſhop of *Alexandria*, an Orthodox Prelate, and who had been very much perſecuted by theſe ſeditious people, fled for refuge to the Biſhop of *Rome*, who very kindly and courteouſly received him. The Churches which *Gelaſius* conſecrated were, that of S. *Euphemia* the Martyr in *Tivoli*, that of S. *Nicander* and *Eleutherius* in the *Via Labicana*, and that of S. *Mary* in the *Via Laurentina*, twenty miles from *Rome*. He had a great love and honour for the Clergy, and was very liberal and charitable to the poor. He delivered the City of *Rome* from many dangers, and particularly from that of dearth and ſcarcity. He compoſed Hymns in imitation of S. *Ambroſe*, publiſhed five Books againſt *Eutyches* and *Neſtorius*, and two againſt *Arius*, made very elegant and grave Orations, and wrote weighty and learned Epiſtles to his Friends of the Houſhold of Faith; all which Works of his are at this time to be ſeen in the publick Libraries. Some tell us, that he Excommunicated *Anaſtaſius*, Succeſſor to *Zeno* in the *Eaſtern* Empire, for favouring *Acacius* and other Hereticks; which is an argument as clear as the Sun, that the Biſhop of *Rome* has power to Excommunicate any Prince who is erroneous in the Faith, if he continue refractary after Admonition. The ſame courſe likewiſe he took with the *Vandals* and their King, who, being infected with the *Arian* Hereſie, proved now very cruel and barbarous Perſecutors of the Orthodox. At the beginning of his Pontificate lived *Germanus* and *Epiphanius*, the later Biſhop of *Pavia*, the former of *Capua*; Men, who, by the Authority which the Sanctity of their Lives had gain'd them, and by their humble and obliging deportment, wrought ſo much upon the minds of the barbarous Invadors, that afflicted *Italy* fared the better for their ſakes. At the ſame time alſo *Lannociatus*, Abbat of *Chartres*, with *Aurelianus* and *Mezentius* of *Poictiers*, Perſons of great Piety and Learning, gain'd ſo much ground in *Gaul*, that they perſuaded *Clodoveus*, the *French* King, and his Queen *Crocildis*, to become Chriſtians, and to undertake the protection of the Catholick Faith throughout their Dominions; though ſome attribute this honour to *Remigius*, as hath been already ſaid. *Gelaſius*, having ordained thirty two Presbyters, two Deacons, ſixty ſeven Biſhops, died, and was buried in S. *Peter's* Church, *November* 21. He was in the Chair four years, eight months, ſeventeen days, and by his death the See was vacant ſeven days.

ANASTA-

ANASTASIUS II.

Anaſtaſius.

ANASTASIUS the Second, a *Roman*, Son of *Fortunatus*, was Contemporary with the Emperor *Anaſtaſius*.

At which time *Tranſamund*, King of the *Vandals*, ſhut up the Churches of the Orthodox Clergy, and baniſhed one hundred and twenty Biſhops into the Iſland of *Sardinia*. 'Tis reported alſo that one *Olympius*, an *Arian* Biſhop, having publickly, in the Baths at *Carthage*, declared his deteſtation of the Doctrine of the Trinity, was immediately ſmitten, and his Body burnt with three flaſhes of Lightning. And when *Barbas*, another Biſhop of the ſame Faction, was going to baptize a certain perſon in this form of words, *Barbas baptizeth thee in the Name of the Father, by the Son, and in the Holy Ghoſt*, 'tis ſaid, the Water diſappeared; which Miracle ſo wrought upon the Man who was to be baptized, that he immediately came over to the Orthodox.

Fulgentius.

Egeſippus.

It was this Biſhop *Anaſtaſius*, as ſome Writers tell us, who Excommunicated the Emperor *Anaſtaſius* for favouring *Acacius*; though afterwards being himſelf ſeduced by the ſame Heretick, and endeavouring privately to recal him from Exile, he thereby very much alienated the Minds of his Clergy, who, for that reaſon, and alſo becauſe, without the conſent of the Catholicks, he communicated with *Photinus*, a Deacon of *Theſſalonica*, and an Aſſertor of the *Acacian* Hereſie, withdrew themſelves from him. 'Tis generally reported, that the Divine Vengeance perſuing him for this Apoſtacy, he died ſuddenly, and ſome ſay, that the particular manner of his death was, that, going to eaſe Nature, he purg'd out his Bowels into the Privy. In his time *Fulgentius*, an *African*, Biſhop of *Ruſpe*, though he were, among the other Orthodox Biſhops of *Africa*, baniſh'd into *Sardinia* by *Tranſamund*, yet neglected nothing that might contribute to the propagating of the Catholick Faith, whether by Exhortation, Preaching, or Admonition. He likewiſe publiſhed ſeveral Books of the Trinity, of Free-will, and the Rule of Faith; and beſides the ſeveral elegant and grave Homilies he made to the people, he wrote againſt the *Pelagian* Hereſie. The Learned *Egeſippus* alſo, who compoſed Monaſtical Conſtitutions, and, in an elegant ſtyle wrote the Life of S. *Severinus* the Abbat, was at this time very ſerviceable to the Church. Moreover, *Fauſtus*, a *Gallican* Biſhop, was now a conſiderable Writer; but among all his Works, the moſt in eſteem was his Tract againſt *Arius*, wherein he maintains the Perſons in the Trinity to be Co-eſſential. He wrote alſo againſt thoſe who aſſerted any created Being to be incorporeal, demonſtrating both by the Judgment of the Fathers, and from the Teſtimonies of holy Writ, that God only is purely and properly incorporeal. But I ſhall here conclude the Pontificate of *Anaſtaſius*, who at one *Decembrian* Ordination, having made twelve Presbyters, and ſixteen Biſhops, was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, *Novemb*. 19. He ſate in the Chair one year, ten months, twenty four days, and by his death the See was vacant four days.

SYMMACHUS I.

SYMMACHUS, a *Sardinian*, Son of *Fortunatus*, ſucceeded *Anaſtaſius*, though not without great Controverſie, and after a long bandying of two contrary Factions. For while one part of the Clergy chuſe *Symmachus* in the Church of S. *John Lateran*, another part of them in S. *Maria Maggiore* make choice of one *Laurence*; whereupon the Senate, and People of *Rome*, being divided into two Parties, the diſſention roſe to ſuch an heighth, that to compromiſe the buſineſs, a Council was, by mutual conſent, called at *Ravenna*; where the whole matter being diſcuſs'd in the preſence of *Theodoric*, he, at length, determined on the ſide of *Symmachus*, and confirmed him in the Pontificate, who, by a ſingular act of Grace, made his very Competitor *Laurence* Biſhop of *Nocera*. Yet, about four years after, ſome buſie and factious Clergy-men, being countenanced and aſſiſted by *Feſtus* and *Probinus*, two of the Senatorian Order, ſet up for *Laurence* again; upon which King *Theodoric* was ſo highly diſpleas'd, that he ſends *Peter*, Biſhop of *Altino*, to *Rome*, to depoſe them both, and poſſeſs himſelf of the Chair. But *Symmachus* called a Synod of an hundred and twenty Biſhops, wherein, with great preſence of Mind, he purg'd himſelf of all things laid to his Charge, and, by a general ſuffrage, obtained the baniſhment of *Laurence* and *Peter*, who had occaſion'd all this miſchief. Hereupon ſo great a Sedition aroſe in the City, that multitudes, both of the Clergy and Laity, were ſlain in all parts, not ſo much as the Monaſtick Virgins eſcaping. In this Tumult *Gordianus* a Presbyter, and a very good Man, was kill'd in the Church of S. *Peter ad Vincula*: Nor had an end been put to Slaughter here, had not *Fauſtus* the Conſul, in compaſſion to the Clergy, appear'd in Arms againſt *Probinus*, the Author of ſo great a Calamity.

After this, the Chriſtians having ſome ſmall reſpite, *Clodaveus* baniſhing the *Arian* Hereticks, reſtores the Orthodox, and Conſtitutes *Pari* the Capital City of his Kingdom.

Symmachus at this time expell'd the *Maniches* out of the City, and cauſed their Books to be burn'd before the Gates of S. *John Lateran*. Several Churches he built from the ground, and ſeveral others he repair'd and beautifi'd. That of S. *Andrew* the Apoſtle, near S. *Peters*, he entirely built, enriching it with divers Ornaments of Silver and Gold; and he adorn'd S. *Peters* it ſelf, and its Portico, with chequer'd Marble, making the Steps of Aſcent into it more, and larger, than they were before. Moreover, he erected Epiſcopal Palaces. He built alſo the Church of S. *Agatha* the Martyr, in the *Via Aurelia*, and that of S. *Pancrace*. He repaired and adorn'd with Painting the *Cupola* of S. *Pauls*; and built from the Foundations the Church of *SS. Silveſter* and *Martin*; the Altars of which he very richly adorned. He made alſo the Steps that lead into the Church of S. *John* and S. *Paul*, and enlarged S. *Michaels*. He built from the ground the Oratories of *Coſmus* and *Damianus*, being aſſiſted in that work by *Albinus* and *Glaphyras*, two Men of principal Note. Beſides this, near the Churches of S. *Peter* and S. *Paul*, he builded two

Hoſpitals, making proviſion of all things neceſſary for the poor, who ſhould dwell in them. For he was in all reſpects very charitable, and ſent ſupplies of Money and Cloaths to the Biſhops, and other Clergy, in *Africa* and *Sardinia*, who had ſuffered baniſhment for the profeſſion of the true Religion. He repaired the Church of S. *Felicitas*, and the *Cupola* of that of S. *Agnes*, which was decay'd, and almoſt ready to fall. He alſo, at his own charge, redeemed multitudes of Captives in ſeveral Provinces. He ordained that on *Sundays*, and the *Birth-days of the Martyrs, the Hymn, *Glory be to God on high*, ſhould be ſung; and indeed, left nothing undone which he thought might tend to the Glory of Almighty God. In his time *Gennadius*, Biſhop of *Marſeille*, a great Imitator of S. *Auguſtine*, did good ſervice to the Church. He wrote one Book againſt Hereſies, wherein he ſhews what is neceſſary to every Man in order to his Salvation; and another, *De Viris Illuſtribus*, in imitation of S. *Hierom*. As for *Symmachus*, having, at ſeveral Ordinations, made ninety Presbyters, ſixteen Deacons, one hundred twenty two Biſhops, he died, and was buried in S. *Peters* Church, *July* the 19th. He ſate in the Chair fifteen years, ſix months, twenty two days; and by his death the See was vacant ſeven days.

* The days on which they ſuffered were anciently ſo called.

HORMISDA I.

HORMISDA, the Son of *Juſtus*, born at *Fruſino*, lived in the time of *Theodoric* and *Anaſtaſius*, as far as to the Conſulſhip of *Boethius* and *Symmachus*.

Theſe two, upon ſuſpicion of deſigning againſt his Government, were, by *Theodoric*, at firſt baniſh'd, and afterwards impriſoned. *Boethius*, during his confinement, wrote ſeveral things extant to this day, and tranſlated and made Commentaries upon the greateſt part of *Ariſtotles* Works. He was throughly skill'd in the Mathematicks, as his Books of Muſick and Arithmetick clearly demonſtrate. But at length, both he, and *Symmachus*, were put to death by the order of *Theodoric*. Some tell us, that the cauſe of *Boethius* his ſufferings was the zeal he ſhewed in oppoſing the *Arians*, who were favoured by *Theodoric*; but I think the former Opinion to be more probable.

Boethius.

Hormiſda, with the advice of *Theodoric*, held now a Provincial Synod at *Rome*, in which the *Eutychians* were again condemn'd by univerſal conſent. He alſo ſent Letters and Meſſengers to *John*, Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, admoniſhing him to renounce that Hereſie, and to believe there are two Natures in Chriſt, the Divine and Humane. But *John* continued refractary, truſting to the intereſt he had with the Emperor *Anaſtaſius*, who, not long after, was ſtruck dead by a Thunderbolt, which was believ'd to be a juſt Judgment upon him, both for his patronizing ſo pernicious an Hereſie, and eſpecially for his ill uſage of the Legates ſent to him by *Hormiſda*, whom, contrary to the Law of Nations, he treated very contumeliouſly, and ſent them home in a ſhattered leaky Veſſel, ordering them to return directly into *Italy*, without touching at any ſhore in *Greece*. 'Tis ſaid, that he bid them tell the Biſhop, that he

Juſtinus.

muſt know it to be the part of an Emperor to Command, not to obey the Dictates of the Biſhop of *Rome*, or any other. Theſe Legates were *Euodius* Biſhop of *Pavea*, *Fortunatus* Biſhop of *Catina*, *Venantius* a Preſbyter of *Rome*, and *Vitalis* a Deacon. *Anaſtaſius* dying in the twenty ſeventh year of his Reign, *Juſtine*, a Patron of the Catholick Faith, ſucceeds him, who forthwith ſends Ambaſſadors to the Biſhop of *Rome*, to acknowledge the Authority of the Apoſtolick See, and to deſire the Biſhop to interpoſe his Eccleſiaſtical Power for the ſetling the peace of the Church. Whereupon *Hormiſda*, with the conſent of *Theodoric*, ſends *Germanus* Biſhop of *Capua*, *John* and *Blandus* Presbyters, and *Felix* and *Dioſcorus* Deacons, his Legates to *Juſtine*, by whom they were receiv'd with all imaginable Expreſſions and Teſtimonies of Honour and Reſpect, *John*, the Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, with multitudes of the Orthodox Clergy, and other Perſons of principal Note, going forth in Complement to meet them, and congratulate their Arrival. But the Followers of *Acacius* dreading their coming, had ſhut themſelves up in a very ſtrong Church, and upon Conſultation what to do, ſent Meſſengers to the Emperor, declaring that they would by no means ſubſcribe to the Determination of the Apoſtolick See, unleſs an account were firſt given them, why *Acacius* was Excommunicated. But *Juſtine* ſoon forc'd them out of the Church, and City too; and *Hormiſda* dealt in the ſame manner with the *Manichees*, who began to ſpring up afreſh in *Rome*, whoſe Books he cauſed to be burn'd before the Gates of S. *John Lateran*.

About this time, *Tranſamund*, King of the *Vandals*, dying in *Afric*, his Son *Ilderic*, whom he had by the Captive Daughter of *Valentinian*, ſucceeded him in the Kingdom. He inherited none of his Fathers Errours, but following the Counſel of his religious Mother, re-call'd all the Catholicks whom *Tranſamund* had baniſh'd, and permitted them the free exerciſe of their Religion. At this time alſo ſeveral rich Preſents were ſent to *Rome*, for the Ornament of the Churches there, by *Clodoveus* King of *France*, and *Juſtine* the Emperor. King *Theodoric* alſo richly adorn'd the Church of S. *Peter*; nor was *Hormiſda* himſelf behind theſe Princes in bounty and munificence to the Church. Having ſetled things according to his Mind, and ordained twenty one Presbyters, fifty five Biſhops, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, *Auguſt* the 6th, in the Conſulſhip of *Maximus*. He ſate in the Chair nine years, eighteen days, and by his death the See was vacant ſix days.

JOHN I.

JOHN, by birth a *Tuſcan*, Son of *Conſtantius*, was in the Chair from the Conſulſhip of *Maximus* to that of *Olybrius*, in the tmie of King *Theodoric*, and the Emperor *Juſtine*:

Who out of his great Zeal for the Orthodox Faith, and that he might utterly extinguiſh the name of *Hereticks*, baniſh'd the *Arians*, and gave their Churches to the Catholicks. This was ſo highly reſented by *Theodoric*, that he ſends *John* himſelf with *Theodorus* and the two *Agapeti* his Ambaſſadors to *Juſtine*, to adviſe him to reſtore the *Arians*, or, upon his refuſal, to let him know that he would pull down all the Catholick Churches in *Italy*. Theſe Ambaſſadors were, at firſt, very kindly and honourably received: But, having given an account of their Embaſſie, and finding *Juſtine* wholly averſe to grant what they deſired, they betook themſelves to Tears and Prayers, humbly beſeeching him to prevent the ruine of *Italy*, and all the Orthodox Chriſtians in it; by which means the good Prince was prevailed upon to recal the *Arians*, and to grant them a Toleration. Some write, that it was in this Biſhops time that *Symmachus* and *Boethius* were brought back from Exile, impriſon'd, and ſlain by the cruelty and rage of *Theodoric*. However, certain it is that they were put to death by *Theodoric*'s order; and it matters not much whether it were in the Pontificate of *Hormiſda* or *John*. Which *John* returning from *Conſtantinople*, *Theodoric* was ſo highly incens'd againſt him for his agreement with the Emperor *Juſtine*, both in Faith and Manners, that it was a chance that he had not taken away his life immediately; but throw him into Priſon he did at *Ravenna*, where, through ſtench and naſtineſs, and want of neceſſary proviſion, the good Man at length died. A Cruelty for which the Divine Vengeance ſorely puniſhed *Theodoric* not long after, for he died ſuddenly of a fit of an Apoplexy, and his Soul (if you will take the word of a devout Hermit who reported it,) was caſt into the Flames of the Iſland *Lipara*.

Theodoric was ſucceeded in the Kingdom by his Daughter *Amalaſuntha*, with her Son *Athalaric*, whom ſhe had by her Husband *Eucherius*. A Woman, who, with a prudence above her Sex, rectified her Fathers ill Decrees, reſtored the confiſcated Eſtates of *Boethius* and *Symmachus* to their Children, and cauſed her Son to be inſtructed in all kinds of good Literature, though ſhe were herein oppoſed by the *Goths*, who cried out, That their King was not to be bred a Scholar, but a Soldier. Much about this time died *Juſtine*, being very Aged, leaving the Empire to his Siſters Son *Juſtinian*; and *Clodoveus* King of *France*, leaving four Sons his Succeſſors in that Kingdom. Perſons of Note and Eſteem at this time were *Benedict* of *Nurſia*, who ſetled among the *Italians* the Rules and Canons of the Monaſtick life; and *Bridget*, a devout Virgin of *Scotland*, and *John Presbyter* of *Antioch*, who wrote much againſt thoſe that held that Chriſt ſhould be worſhipped in one Nature only. To theſe *Iſidore* adds one *Cyprignius*, a *Spaniſh* Biſhop, who wrote elegantly upon the *Apocalypſe*.

Benedict.
Bridget.

Our *John*, before he went to *Conſtantinople*, had repaired three Cœmeteries, namely that of *Nereus* and *Achilleus* in the *Via Ardeatina*, that of the Martyrs SS. *Felix* and *Adauctus*, and that of *Priſcilla*. He alſo adorn'd the Altar of S. *Peters* with Gold and Jewels. He likewiſe brought with him from *Conſtantinople* a Paten of Gold, and a Chalice of Gold ſet with precious Stones, the Preſents of the Emperor *Juſtine*; but theſe, I ſuppoſe, to have been loſt together with his Life. At ſeveral Ordinations he conſecrated fifteen Biſhops. 'Tis ſaid, that his Body was brought from *Ravenna* to *Rome*, and buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, *July* the 27th, *Olybrius* being then Conſul. He ſate in the Chair two years, eight months, and by his death the See was vacant fifty eight days.

FELIX IV.

FELIX the fourth, a *Sammite*, the Son of *Caſtorius*, lived in the time of the Emperour *Juſtinian*,

Whoſe General *Beliſarius* was victorious over the *Perſians*, and paſſing into *Afric*, by his ſingular Courage and Conduct, ſubdued, and almoſt quite rooted out the *Vandals*, whoſe King *Gilimer* he took Priſoner, and brought him home with him in Triumph. About this time *Amalaſuntha*, having a long time lived very uneaſily with her male-contented *Goths*, and having buried her wayward and unruly Son *Athalaric*, aſſociates her kinſman *Theodatus* in the Government. This *Theodatus* was ſo great a Proficient in *Greek* and *Latin* Learning, that he wrote an elegant Hiſtory of his own times, and was throughly ſkilled in the Platonick Philoſophy. And though he were not naturally of an active Martial temper, yet at the deſire of *Amalaſuntha*, he undertook a War againſt the *Burgundians* and *Alemanni*, and manag'd it very ſucceſsfully.

Felix, in the mean while, being careful of the affaires of the Church, excommunicated the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople* for Hereſie, and built in the *Via Sacra*, near the *Forum Romanum*, the Church of St. *Coſmus* and *Damianus*, as appears from the Verſes yet remaining, wrought in *Moſaick* Work. He alſo re-built the Church of S. *Saturninus* in the *Via Salaria*, which had been conſumed by Fire. Some write, that in this Age lived *Caſſiodorus*, who, while he was a Senator, wrote ſeveral things in Politicks, and, when he became a Monk, compoſed a Comment upon the *Pſalms*. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that *Priſcian* of *Cæſarea*, the famous Grammarian, now wrote his Book of Grammar. *Arator* likewiſe, a Sub-Deacon of *Rome*, Tranſlated the Goſpels into Hexameter Verſe; and *Juſtinian*, Biſhop of *Valence*, was had in great eſteem for what he preach'd and wrote concerning the Chriſtian Faith. As for *Felix* himſelf, having ordained fifty five Presbyters, four Deacons, twenty nine Biſhops, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, *October* the 12th. He was in the Chair four years, two months, thirteen days; and by his death the See was vacant three days.

Caſſiodorus.

Priſcian.

BONIFACE II.

BONIFACE the Second, a *Roman*, Son of *Sigiſmund*, was alſo in the time of *Juſtinian*,

A Prince whoſe vaſt Parts and Learning qualified him for that great Work, which, for the publick Good, he undertook, of Collecting and Methodizing the ſcattered *Roman* Laws, and retrenching thoſe which were uſeleſs and ſuperfluous: Yet herein he made uſe of the Advice and Aſſiſtance of *John* a *Patrician*, *Trebonianus*, *Theophilus*, and *Dorotheus*, Men of great Learning and Authority: With their help, an immenſe number, of near Two thouſand Volumes of Decrees, made from the building of the City to this time, confuſedly heaped together, were digeſted under their reſpective Titles into fifty Books, which are ſometimes called *Digeſts*, and ſometimes *Pandects*, becauſe they contain the whole Civil Law. He made alſo an Epitome of the Laws, in Four Books, which go under the Name of *Inſtitutes*, or *Juſtinian*'s *Code*. Moreover, ſome tell us, that *Juſtinian* wrote certain Books concerning the Incarnation of our Lord. And that at his own Charge he built the Temple of St. *Sophia*, than which there is not a more Noble and Magnificent Pile of Buildings in the World.

In his Reign *Boniface* was made Biſhop of *Rome*, though not without ſome oppoſition; for the Clergy being divided, one Party of them choſe *Dioſcorus* into the place of *Felix* deceaſed: The Contention about this matter laſted Twenty eight Days, but the Death of *Dioſcorus* put an end to the Controverſie. Things being quiet, *Boniface* applyed himſelf to the ſetling of the Church, and decreed, That no Biſhop ſhould appoint his own Succeſſor; which was afterwards confirm'd by ſeveral following Biſhops of *Rome*. He decreed alſo, That upon the deceaſe of any Biſhop of *Rome*, another ſhould be choſen to ſucceed him, if it might be, within three Days, to prevent any bandying or diſſention which might be occaſioned by delay. He ordained likewiſe, That the Clergy ſhould be ſeparated and placed diſtinct from the Laity at the time of Celebration. At the ſame time many of the *Roman* Nobility were ſo wrought upon by the Sanctity of *Benedict*, that they retired to Mount *Caſſino*, and became Monks there; among whom the more eminent were *Maurus* and *Placidius*: Other Men of Note and Eſteem, were *Dionyſius* the Abbat, famous for the extraordinary Skill and Judgment which he ſhewed in his *Paſchal Cycle*; *Facundus*, whoſe Writings againſt certain *Eutychians* then ſpringing up, were very much commended; and *Martin*, who, by his Preaching and Writings, converted the People of *Soiſſons* from the *Arian* Hereſie to the Truth. But *Boniface*, having ſat in the Pontifical Chair Two Years, two Days, died and was buried in St. *Peter*'s Church; the See was then vacant two Months.

JOHN II.

JOHN the Second, a *Roman*, Son of *Projectus*, lived in the time of *Juſtinian*, and ſoon after his entrance upon the Pontificate, condemned *Anthemius* an *Arian* Biſhop; ſome ſay that he had been Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*. *Juſtinian*, to ſhew his reſpect to the *Roman* See, ſent *Hypatius* and *Demetrius*, Two Biſhops, to *Rome*, both to complement *John* in his Name, and to make to St. *Peter*'s Church ſeveral rich Preſents. During this Embaſſie, *Mundus*, *Juſtinian*'s General, took the ſtrong City of *Salona*, and gain'd a Victory over the *Goths*, though not without great loſs on the Conquering ſide; for *Mundus* himſelf, together with his Son, a valiant and brave Young Gentleman, was ſlain in that Engagement; the news of which misfortune was extreamly laid to heart by *Juſtinian*, he having always had a great value for that Leader's Courage and Fidelity. Our Biſhop *John*, of whom Hiſtorians ſay very little, having, at one Ordination, made Fifteen Presbyters, Twenty one Biſhops, died, and was buried in St. *Peter*'s Church, *May* 27; he ſat in the Chair Two Years, four Months, and by his Death the See was vacant Six Days.

AGAPETUS I.

AGAPETUS, a *Roman*, Son of *Gordianus*, a Presbyter of the Church of St. *John* and St. *Paul*, being created Biſhop by *Theodatus*, was by him forthwith ſent to the Emperor *Juſtinian*, who was highly incens'd againſt that King for his having firſt baniſh'd *Amalaſuntha*, the Mother of *Athalaric*, into the Iſland of the Lake of *Bolſena*, and afterwards cauſed her to be put to death there: For ſhe was a Woman ſo well acquainted with *Greek* and *Latin* Learning, that ſhe durſt engage in Diſputation with any profeſs'd Scholar. Moreover, ſhe was ſo throughly skill'd in the Languages of all the barbarous Invaders of the *Roman* Empire, that ſhe could diſcourſe any of them without an Interpreter: Her Death *Juſtinian* ſo highly reſented, that he threatned to make War upon *Theodatus* for that reaſon. Hereupon *Agapetus* was ſent to him, who being receiv'd with great Honour and Affection, and having obtain'd the Peace he was ſent to ſue for, he was then practis'd with to confirm the *Eutychian* Opinions: But *Juſtinian* finding that the good Man utterly deteſted any ſuch propoſal, from deſiring and requeſting he fell to Threats and Menaces: Upon which *Agapetus* told him, That he ſhould have been glad to be ſent to *Juſtinian*, a Chriſtian Prince, but that he found a *Diocleſian* an Enemy and Perſecutor of the Chriſtians. By this boldneſs of Speech, and God's Appointment, *Juſtinian* was ſo wrought upon, that he embraced the Catholick Faith, and having depos'd *Anthemius*, Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, who patroniz'd the *Eutychian* Hereſie, put into his place *Menas*, one of the

Orthodox, who was conſecrated by *Agapetus* himſelf: But not long after *Agapetus* died at *Conſtantinople*, and his Body, being wrapp'd up in Lead, was convey'd to *Rome*, and buried in S. *Peter*'s Church; he ſat in the Chair Eleven Months, Twenty one Days; and by his Death the See was vacant one Month, Twenty nine Days.

SYLVERIVS.

SYLVERIVS, a *Campanian*, Son of Biſhop *Hormiſda*, was choſen Biſhop of *Rome*, at the command of *Theodatus*, though till this time, the Emperors only, not the Kings, had interpoſed their Authority in that matter: But the menaces of *Theodatus* prevailed, who had threatned to put to death every Man of the Clergy, who would not ſubſcribe his Name to the choice of *Sylverius*.

For this reaſon, and that he might alſo revenge the Death of *Amalaſuntha*, *Juſtinian* ſends *Beliſarius*, a *Patrician*, with an Army into *Italy*. In his Paſſage thither, he firſt put in at *Sicily*, and brought that Iſland to the Emperor's Devotion. In the mean time, *Theodatus* dying, and the *Goths* having choſen themſelves a King againſt the will of *Juſtinian*, *Beliſarius* quits *Sicily*, that he might deliver *Italy* from the Tyranny of the *Goths*. Coming into *Campania*, and the City of *Naples* refuſing to obey the Emperor's Summons, he took it by Storm and plundered it, putting to the Sword all the *Goths* that were in Gariſon there, and a great part of the Citizens, carrying away their Children, and what other ſpoil they could lay their hands on: The Soldiers pillaged the very Churches, violated the Chaſtity of cloiſtered Virgins, and committed all the outrages, which are wont to be acted by an enraged victorious Enemy. Marching haſtily from thence with his Army to *Rome*, and entring the City by night, he ſtruck ſuch a terror into the *Goths*, who defended it, that they all left the Gates and the Walls and fled to *Ravenna*. But *Beliſarius* apprehending, that *Vitiges* might ſurprize him with a mighty Force, which he ſhould not be able to fight in open Field, with all poſſible diſpatch fortified the City with Trenches and Bulwarks, where occaſion was for them. Soon after, *Vitiges*, according to his expectation, coming towards him with a mighty Army, for it conſiſted of an Hundred thouſand Men, *Beliſarius*, who had not above Five thouſand, thought it beſt to keep within the City: *Vitiges* encamped between two Aqueducts, the one of which ran towards the *Via Latina*, the other towards the *Via Præneſtina*, and both met five Miles from the City: And that the City might not be ſupplied with Water, he cut off all the Conduits and Conveyances, which were fourteen. Moreover, he ſent part of his Army, who poſſeſſed themſelves of the Port, and thereby reduced the *Romans* to the double Calamity of War and Famine.

In the mean time, at the motion of *Vigilius*, a Deacon and Surrogate of *Rome*, the Empreſs *Theodora* laid her Commands, joined with Threatnings, upon *Sylverius*, to baniſh *Menas* from *Conſtantinople*, and to reſtore *Anthemius*, who, as we have ſaid, had been depos'd for patronizing the *Eutychian* Hereſie: Which, when he refuſed to do, ſhe writes to *Beliſa-*

rius, ordering him to depoſe *Sylverius*, and to put *Vigilius* into his place. But *Beliſarius* being wholly taken up with the defence of the City, left that Affair to the Management of his Wife *Antonina*, who, upon the depoſitions of certain Witneſſes, ſuborn'd by *Vigilius*, atteſting, That *Sylverius* had a deſign to betray the City into the hands of the *Goths*, not only compell'd him to quit the Pontificate, and to enter into a Monaſtick Life, but alſo baniſh'd him to the Iſland *Pontia*, where he died, not without the Reputation of having been a very Holy Man. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time the *Gauls* diſpatch'd Meſſengers to *Benedict*, deſiring him to ſend to them any one of his Diſciples, to inſtruct them in the Rules of the Monaſtick Life: Upon which, *Benedict* ſent *Maurus*, who, by his own Example, inſtructed them in a good and happy courſe of Living, and alſo ſet up ſeveral Monaſteries among them. *Vigilius*, at the deſire of the *Roman* Clergy, in perſuance of *Antonina*'s Determination, was created Biſhop of *Rome*; *Sylverius*, after his Poſſeſſion of the Chair one Year, five Months, and twelve Days, died, as we have already ſaid, in *Pontia*, and was buried *June* the 20th; upon his Death the See was vacant ſix Days.

VIGILIVS I.

VIGILIVS, a *Roman*, his Father a Man of conſular Dignity, was likewiſe in *Juſtinian*'s Reign created Biſhop of *Rome*, in whoſe time a fifth Synod was held at *Conſtantinople* againſt *Theodorus* and other Hereticks, who held, that the Bleſſed Virgin brought forth Man only, not God-man; in this Synod therefore it was decreed, That the Bleſſed Virgin ſhould be ſtyled Θεοτόκος, *i. e.* the Mother of God.

Beliſarius had now defended the City one whole Year and nine Days, and having in this time received freſh Supplies of Men, he reſolved to march out and to engage the Enemy in a pitch'd Battel; but *Vitiges* diſtruſting his own Force, ſets fire to his Tents, and haſtens, by great marches, to *Ravenna*: *Beliſarius* with all poſſible haſte follows him, and entring the City, takes *Vitiges* himſelf Priſoner, with all his Family, and a great part of his Nobles; and having recovered almoſt all *Italy*, in the Fifth Year from his arrival there, he carries them with him to *Conſtantinople*. The ſame *Beliſarius*, with incredible Expedition, quell'd the *Moors*, who were haraſſing *Africa*, and out of the Spoils of that Victory, he made two very rich Preſents to St. *Peter*'s Church in *Rome*. He built alſo two Hoſpitals for Strangers at his own Charge, one in the *Via Lata*, the other in the *Via Flaminia*; and founded the Monaſtery of St. *Juvenalis*, at a Town called *Orta*, endowing it with an Eſtate in Land for the maintenance of the Monks in it.

At this time *Theodora* was earneſt with *Vigilius* to come to *Conſtantinople*, and according to his Promiſe, to reſtore *Anthemius*. But *Vigilius* denies the doing it, for that unjuſt Promiſes are not to be performed, and he was of Opinion, that the Proceedings of *Agapetus* and *Sylverius* againſt that Heretick were legal, and that therefore their Acts were by no means to be made void by him. *Theodora* being hereat enraged, with the Aſſiſtance of ſome of her Creatures at *Rome*, cauſes *Vigilius* to be impleaded upon two Accuſations; One, That he had fraudulently procur'd the Baniſhment of *Sylverius*: The other, That, by his Order, a certain Youth had been beaten to death by his Nephew *Vigilius*, Son of *Aſterius* the Conſul. And that he might not eſcape with impunity, ſhe ſends one *Anthemius* to *Rome*, with Inſtructions to bring *Vigilius* by force to her, if he refuſed to make his Appearance. He, coming to *Rome*, in purſuance of his Commiſſion, ſeiz'd the Biſhop in the Church of St. *Cæcilia*, as he was, according to cuſtom, diſtributing Gifts to the People on his Birth-day; and being aſſiſted by ſome *Romans*, conveys him to *Conſtantinople*. 'Tis ſaid, that at *Vigilius* his Paſſage down the River *Tyber*, the People followed him with Curſes, pelting him with Sticks and Stones; and particularly uſing this exprobation, Miſchievous haſt thou been to the City of *Rome*, and may miſchief go along with thee. Being arrived at *Sicily*, by the Permiſſion of thoſe who had him in cuſtody, he ordained ſeveral Perſons, and among them *Ampliatus* a Prieſt, and *Valentinus* a Biſhop, who were to have the inſpection of the Clergy and Church of *Rome* in his abſence. Coming near *Conſtantinople*, *Juſtinian*, with a great Retinue, went out to meet him, and they both entred the City together, the Clergy going before them, as far as the Temple of S. *Sophia*. *Theodora* had now opportunity to tamper with *Vigilius*, and perſuade him to the performance of his Promiſe: But he told her, That he had rather ſuffer the greateſt Puniſhment in the World, than change his Reſolution in the caſe: She therefore, and her Attendants, beginning to menace him, and he ſaying, that he was come to a *Diocleſian*, not, as he thought, to *Juſtinian*; he was thereupon ſo roughly handled and beaten, that it almoſt coſt him his Life; and flying from their Rage to the Church of S. *Euphemia*, not far diſtant, he was from thence dragg'd by certain rude People, who put an Halter about his Neck, and led him, like a common Rogue, publickly through the City till the Evening: After this he was impriſon'd, and forced, for ſome time, to live upon nothing but Bread and Water, which yet he bore with ſo much Patience and Temper, that he would often ſay, That he had deſerved worſe than all this, and was not yet puniſhed according to his Demerits. Thoſe of the Clergy, who had accompanied him from *Rome*, were ſome of them baniſh'd, others condemned to dig in the Mines: But at the requeſt of the *Romans*, who had now a better Opinion of him, and upon the importunity of *Narſes*, whom *Juſtinian* had ſent to *Rome* to oppoſe the *Goths*; *Vigilius*, and all the others who were confin'd, had liberty granted them to return into *Italy*; but in their Paſſage thither, being come as far as *Syracuſe* in *Sicily*, *Vigilius*, who had outlived ſo many Calamities and Troubles, died there of the Stone, and his Body was carried to *Rome*, and buried in the Church of S. *Marcellus* in the *Via Salaria*: He lived in the Pontificate at *Rome* and elſewhere Seventeen Years, ſix Months, Twenty ſix Days; and by his Death the See was vacant three Months, five Days.

PELAGIVS I.

Totilas.

Narſes.

PELAGIVS, a *Roman*, lived in the time when *Totilas*, King of the *Goths*, advancing with a great Army from *Treviſo*, over-run and ſpoiled *Italy* in ſuch a manner, that from his ſalvage Cruelty he was call'd *God's Scourge*. Coming as far as Mount *Caſſino*, in his way to *Campania*, though he were in the Habit of a common Soldier, yet he was diſcovered by S. *Benedict*, who ſpared not, by threatning of Divine Vengeance, to terrifie him from raging ſo furiouſly againſt the Chriſtians. Moving thence towards *Abruzzo*, he diſmantled *Beneventum*, beſieged *Naples*, took *Cumæ*, where yet he exerciſed an extraordinary Reſpect and Civility towards the *Roman* Women whom he found in it, permitting them to go to *Rome* to their Friends, without any violence or rudeneſs offered to them. After this, having taken *Naples*, and made himſelf Maſter of all that part of *Italy*, which lies towards *Sicily*, he marches to *Rome*, and having firſt ſeized the Port, by which Supplies ſhould come to the City, he reduced them to ſuch extremity for want of Proviſions, that ſome were forced to feed upon Man's Fleſh: At length, forcing his entrance at the Gate, which leads to *Oſtia*, he poſſeſſed himſelf of the City, which, having plundered, he ſet on fire. Some tell us, that *Totilas* deſigned to ſave the Buildings of the City, and ſent Meſſengers about by Night to publiſh his Pleaſure in that Particular, but his Orders therein were not obeyed: *Juſtinian* having Intelligence of theſe Proceedings, ſpeedily diſpatches *Narſes* the Eunuch with a great Army into *Italy*. 'Tis ſaid, that this *Narſes* was at firſt a Bookſeller, but being advanced to an Office near the Emperor's Perſon, *Juſtinian* finding him to be a Man of great Merit, raiſed him to the Dignity of a *Patrician*. And indeed, in all the Accompliſhments of Religion, and Virtue, and Clemency, and Generoſity, and ſweetneſs of Temper, he was a moſt exemplary and extraordinary Perſon. *Narſes*, with the addition of ſome Auxiliary Forces from *Alboinus*, King of the *Lombards*, advances againſt the *Goths*, routs them, and makes a great ſlaughter in the perſuit of them. *Totilas* loſt his Life ingloriouſly at *Briſſello*; and *Theias*, who was choſen King in his ſtead, though he behaved himſelf bravely, yet was ſlain by *Narſes* not far from *Nocera*. And thus, both the Name and Power of the *Goths* were extinct together, in the Seventy ſecond Year after that their King *Theodoric* firſt entred *Italy*. Not long after died *Juſtinian*, in the Fortieth Year of his Reign; a Prince worthy to have his Memory perpetuated to all Poſterity, and who, according to the cuſtom of preceding Emperors, deſerves the additional Titles of *Alemanicus*, *Gotthicus*, *Wandalicus*, *Perſicus*, *Africanus*, though he only adviſed, but did not act, in the ſucceſsful Expeditions made againſt thoſe Nations.

Pelagius, in the mid'ſt of theſe Diſturbances, not neglecting the Affairs of the Church, ordained, That Hereticks and Schiſmaticks might be ſuppreſſed by the Secular Power, when they would not be reclaim'd by Reaſon and Argument. Being accuſed that he was the occaſion of the Calamities that befel *Vigilius*, as having a greater Intereſt with *Ju-*

ſtinian than *Vigilius* had, in the ſight of the Clergy and People, he laid his Hand upon the Croſs and the Goſpel, and, by a ſolemn Oath, purged himſelf from that Charge. *Narſes* coming to *Rome*, made a Proceſſion from the Church of St. *Pancras* to St. *Peter's*, with Thankſgiving for his late ſucceſs; and ſet himſelf, with all poſſible application, to repair the Damage which the City had receiv'd by the *Goths*. In conjunction with *Pelagius*, he ordained, That no Perſon ſhould be admitted to any Holy Orders, or Eccleſiaſtical Dignity, by the way of Canvaſſing or Bribery. *Pelagius* making his Notary *Valentius*, a very Religious Perſon, Treaſurer of the Church, begins the Building of the Church of SS. *Philip* and *James*. Some tell us, that the learned Monk *Caſſiodorus*, who had been firſt Conſul, then a Senator, and afterwards renouncing all human Greatneſs, embraced a Monaſtick Life, lived to this time. And that *Victor*, Biſhop of *Capua*, now wrote a Book concerning *Eaſter*, in which he particularly diſcovered the miſtakes of *Dionyſius* the *Roman* Abbat, who had, with little care and skill, compoſed a *Paſchal Cycle*. Moreover, *Sabinus*, Biſhop of *Canoſa*, and *Gregory*, Biſhop of *Langres*, and *Vedaſtus*, a Scholar of S. *Remigius*, and Biſhop of *Arras*, were Ornaments to the Pontificate of *Pelagius*; and *Herculanus*, Biſhop of *Perugia*, who had been put to Death by *Totylas*, was Canoniz'd. *Pelagius*, having, at Two *Decembrian* Ordinations, made Twenty ſix Presbyters, eleven Deacons, Thirty nine Biſhops, died, and was buried in St. *Peter's*; he was in the Chair eleven Years, ten Months, Twenty eight Days; the See was then vacant Twenty ſix Days.

Caſſiodorus.

Victor.

JOHN III.

JOHN the Third, the Son of *Anaſtaſius*, deſcended of a Noble Family, lived in the time of *Juſtine*, who ſucceeded *Juſtinian*, but was in nothing like him.

For he was covetous, lewd, rapacious, a Contemner of God and Men to ſuch a degree, that his Vices made him frantick; ſo that his Wife *Sophia* managed all Affairs till the time of *Tiberius* the Second: This Woman, being prompted thereto by ſome envious Perſons who hated *Narſes*, recals him out of *Italy* in theſe reproachful words, *That ſhe would have the Eunuch come home and ſpin.* This he very highly reſenting, as well he might, returns anſwer, *That he would ſpin ſuch a Web, as none of his Enemies ſhould ever be able to unweave*: And he was as good as his word, for he preſently ſends and invites *Alboinus*, King of the *Lombards*, with all his People, then poſſeſſed of *Pannonia*, to come and ſeat themſelves in the more plentiful Country of *Italy*. *Alboinus* complying with the Propoſal of *Narſes*, and entring *Italy* with a vaſt number of Men, with their Wives and Children, firſt poſſeſſes himſelf of *Friuli*, and *Marca Trivigiana*; thence paſſing into *Inſubria*, he takes and ſacks *Milain*, and at length makes himſelf Maſter of *Pavia*, after it had held out a Siege of Three Years. Being thus fluſh'd with Victory, he goes to *Verona*, which he conſtitutes the Capital City of his Kingdom; where being once at an Entertain-

Juſtine.

ment over-heated with Wine, he compelled his Wife *Roſmund* to drink out of a Cup, which he had made of her own Father's Skull, whom he himſelf had ſlain. Now there was in *Alboinus*'s Army, one *Helmechild*, a very handſom young Gentleman, and an excellent Soldier; and who was *Roſmund*'s particular Favourite: Him ſhe diſcourſes privately, and, by propoſing to him the hopes of ſucceeding in the Kingdom, prevailed with him to murther *Alboinus*; but they were both ſo hated for the Fact by the *Lombards*, that they not only failed of their hopes, but were glad to fly for Protection to *Longinus* the *Exarch* of *Ravenna*; where, not long after, they poiſoned each other, and died together. At this time, *Italy*, by reaſon of the Incurſions which the barbarous Nations made into it, was in a very calamitous ſtate, which had been portended by Prodigies, and Apparitions of flaming Armies in the Air, and alſo by an extraordinary Inundation of the River *Tyber*, which had very much damaged the City of *Rome*.

In the mean time, our *John* repaired the Cœmeteries of the Saints, and finiſhed the Church of SS. *Philip* and *James*, which had been begun by *Vigilius*, and drew *Narſes*, who had been an avowed Enemy to the *Romans* for their ill opinion of him, and their miſrepreſenting him to the Empreſs *Sophia*, from *Naples* to *Rome*; where he not long after died, and his Body was conveyed in a Coffin of Lead to *Conſtantinople*. In ſuch a confuſion of things, the State of *Italy* muſt needs certainly have been utterly ruined, if ſome eminently Holy Men had not ſupported and propp'd up the tottering Nation. Among others, *Paul*, Patriarch of *Aquileia*, and *Felix*, Biſhop of *Treviſo*, interceded ſucceſsfully with *Alboinus*, when he firſt entred *Italy*, in the behalf of the Inhabitants. Moreover, *Fortunatus*, a Perſon of extraordinary Learning and Eloquence, very much civiliz'd and poliſh'd the *Gauls* by his Books and Example; compiling a Treatiſe of Government inſcribed to their King *Sigebert*; and writing in an Elegant Style the Life of St. *Martin*. Some write, that at this time lived *Germanus*, Biſhop of *Paris*, a Perſon of wonderful Piety, who kept the Kings of *France* within the bounds of their Duty to ſuch a degree, that each ſtrove to excel the other in Religion and Piety, in Goodneſs and Clemency. So prevalent is the Example of a good Paſtor, ſuch an one as *Germanus* was, in whom they ſaw nothing but what was worthy of their Imitation. After this one farther Remark, that in our *John*'s time the *Armenians* were converted to Chriſtianity, I ſhall ſay no more of him, but that having been in the Chair Twelve Years, eleven Months, Twenty ſix Days, he died, and was buried in St. *Peters*; upon his Death the See was vacant Ten Months, three Days.

* BENEDICT I.

BENEDICT I.

BENEDICT, a *Roman*, the Son of *Boniface*, lived in the time of *Tiberius* the Second, whom *Juſtine* had adopted, and appointed his Heir to the Empire.

Tiberius II.

An Honour which he well deſerved, as being a Perſon adorn'd with all the Princely accompliſhments of Clemency, Juſtice, Piety, Religion, Wiſdom, Reſolution, and unſhaken Fortitude. Among his other Virtues, he was eminent for his Bounty and Liberality towards all, eſpecially the Poor; and God ſupplied him in an extraordinary manner for it. For walking once haſtily in his Palace, and ſpying the Figure of the Croſs upon one of the Marble ſtones in the Pavement, that it might not be trampled under foot, he devoutly cauſed it to be removed from thence, and laid up in a more decent and honourable place. At it's taking up, there was found under it another ſtone with the ſame Figure on it, and then a third, under which he diſcovered ſuch a vaſt heap of Gold and Silver, as was requiſite to furniſh and maintain his large Bounty; a great part of which Treaſure he diſtributed to the Poor. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that he had brought to him out of *Italy* a great Eſtate which *Narſes* had got there, which in like manner he employed in Liberality and Munificence. To *Sigebert* the *French* King, who had ſent Embaſſadors to him, beſides the other Preſents that he made, which were very conſiderable, he ſent certain Medals of Gold of very great weight, on the one ſide of which, was the Effigies of the Emperor with this Inſcription, *Tiberii Conſtantini perpetuo Auguſti*; on the other ſide, was a Chariot with its Driver, and this Inſcription, *Romanorum Gloria*. And to complete his Succeſſes, the Army, which he had ſent againſt the *Perſians* returning victoriouſly, brought away, with twenty Elephants, ſo vaſt a Booty, as no Army had ever done in any Expedition before. Thus ſignally was he rewarded for his good Services to Mankind in general, for his Religion towards God our Saviour, and for his Beneficence particularly to the People of *Rome*; whom he not only protected and defended from their enemies as much as could be by his Arms, but alſo, at the Prayers and Interceſſion of our Biſhop *Benedict*, whom he had a wonderful Love and Eſteem for, he delivered them from Dearth and Famine, by ſending a ſupply of Corn out of *Egypt*. For the *Lombards*, by a long and tedious War, had ſo haraſſed *Italy* far and wide, that from their devaſtations there aroſe a great want and ſcarcity of all things. While things went thus in *Italy*, *John* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, by Reading, Diſputing, Writing, Admoniſhing and Teaching, kept the Oriental Church, as much as might be, right in the Faith, though he met with many oppoſers therein. The ſame did alſo the equally Learned and Eloquent *Leander* Biſhop of *Toledo*, or, as others think, of *Sevil*, who wrote ſeveral Treatiſes both to confirm the Orthodox Doctrine, and to confute the *Arian* Hereſie, which, like a contagious Peſtilence, the *Vandals*, driven out of *Africa* by *Beliſarius*, had brought with them into *Spain*. As for *Benedict*, ſome write, that he laying ſadly to heart the Calamities which now befell *Rome* and all *Italy*, died of grief; after he had been in the Chair four years, one month, twenty eight days. The See was then vacant two months, ten days.

PELAGIVS II.

PELAGIVS, a *Roman*, Son of *Vinigildus*, was from the time of *Tiberius*, to that of his Son in-law the Emperor *Mauritius*.

Mauritius.

To whom, though he were a *Cappadocian*, yet the Empire was committed, upon the account of his great Courage, and Ability in the management of Affairs. At this time, the *Lombards* having after the death of *Alboinus*, for twenty years been Govern'd by Dukes, make *Autharis* their King, whom they alſo called *Flavius*; a Name which was afterwards uſed by all the Kings of *Lombardy*. But *Mauritius*, endeavouring to drive the *Lombards* out of *Italy*, hires *Sigebert* the *French* King to engage in a War againſt them; who forthwith, raiſing a great Army of *Gauls* and *Germans*, fights *Autharis*, but with great loſs is diſcomfited. The *Lombards* being fluſh'd and heightened by this Victory, march'd on as far as to the Streights of *Sicily*, poſſeſſing themſelves all along of the Cities of *Italy*, and at length beſieging for a long time *Rome* itſelf; of which certainly they had made themſelves Maſters, had they not been driven from its Walls by the great Rains, which fell ſo violently and inceſſantly, and made ſuch an Inundation, that Men look'd upon it as a ſecond *Noah*'s Floud.

This was the only cauſe, why *Pelagius* was made Biſhop of *Rome* without the conſent of the Emperor; the City being ſo cloſely beſieged, that none could paſs to know his pleaſure therein. For at this time the *Roman* Clergie's Election of a Biſhop was not valid, unleſs they had the Emperor's approbation. Hereupon, *Gregory* a Deacon, a Man of great Piety and Learning, was ſent to *Conſtantinople* to appeaſe the Emperor; where having effected what he came for, he neglected not to employ his Time and Parts, but both wrote Books of *Morals* upon *Job*, and alſo, at a Diſputation in the Preſence of the Emperor himſelf, he ſo baffled *Entychius* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, that he was forced to retract what he had written in a Book of his concerning the Reſurrection; in which he aſſerted, that our Bodies in that Glory of the Reſurrection ſhould become more thin and ſubtil than the Wind or Air, and ſo not tangible. Which is contrary to that of our Saviour, *Handle me and ſee, for a Spirit hath not fleſh and bones, as you ſee me have.* As for *Pelagius*, having at the requeſt of the Citizens of *Rome* recalled *Gregory*, he turned his Fathers Houſe into an Hoſpital for poor old Men, and entirely built the Cœmetery of *Hermes* the Martyr, and the Church of *Laurence* the Martyr, he died of the Peſtilence, which at that time was very Epidemical throughout *Europe*, after he had been in the Chair ten years, two months, ten days, and was buried in *St. Peters* in the *Vatican*. The See was then vacant ſix months, twenty eight days.

Luke 24.

GREGORY I.

GREGORY I.

GREGORY, a *Roman*, Son of *Gordianus*, one of the Senatorian Order, was againſt his Will unanimouſly choſen Biſhop of *Rome*, *Anno Dom.* 590. Now becauſe, as I have already ſaid, the conſent of the Emperor was required herein, he diſpatches Meſſengers with Letters, beſeeching *Mauritius*, that he would not ſuffer this Election of the Clergy and People of *Rome* to ſtand good. Theſe Letters were intercepted and torn by the City-Præfect; and others written, by which the Emperor was requeſted to confirm him, who was by univerſal ſuffrage thus choſen. There could nothing be more pleaſing and acceptable to the Emperor than the news of this choice, for the converſation of *Gregory*, while he was at *Conſtantinople*, had been very grateful to him, and moreover he had Chriſtned his Son. *Mauritius* therefore ſpeedily ſends back word to *Rome*, that he did confirm the Election of *Gregory*, and that in ſuch a fluctuating ſtate of things they ſhould compel that Holy Man to undertake the Goverment of the Church. He therefore, not conſulting his own inclination, but the benefit of Mankind, and the Honour of God, which, as he was a moſt Devout and Religious Man, he had ever preferred before all other things, without any regard to Riches, or Pleaſures, or Ambition, or Power, takes the burden of the Pontificate upon him. And he behaved himſelf ſo well in it, that no one of his Succeſſors down to our times has been his equal, much leſs Superior, either for Sanctity of Life, or for diligence in managing Affairs, or for his Learning and Writings. He compoſed a Book of the Sacraments; wrote Commentaries upon *Ezekiel*, and, as I have already ſaid, upon *Job*, and Homilies upon the Goſpels; four Books in Dialogue, and that which he called the *Paſtoral*; to *John* Biſhop of *Ravenna* concerning the way of Governing the Church. Moreover, he introduced ſeveral Rites, and made ſeveral Additions to the Offices of the *Roman* Church; and particularly, he firſt inſtituted the greater *Litanies* or *Proceſſions*, and appointed a great part of the *Stations*. And that the good Man might not in any thing be wanting to the Church, he held in S. *Peters* a Synod of twenty four Biſhops, wherein he took away many things which might prove pernicious, and added many which might be beneficial, to Religion. He alſo ſent into *England*, *Auguſtine*, *Melitus*, and *John*, and, with theſe, divers other Monks, all Perſons of approved lives, by whoſe Preaching the *Engliſh* were then firſt entirely converted to Chriſtianity. By his means likewiſe the *Goths* returned to the Union of the Catholick Church. We are told by ſome Writers, that *Gregory* ſent his Dialogues concerning *Morals* to *Theudelinda* Queen of the *Lombards*, by the reading of which ſhe might ſmooth and poliſh the rugged temper of her Husband *Autharis*, and bring him to a better ſenſe of Religion and Morality. She was an excellent Lady, and a zealous Chriſtian, and not only built the Church of S. *John Baptiſt* at *Monza*, a Town ten miles diſtant from *Milain*, but alſo furniſhed it with Veſſels of Gold, and liberally endowed it.

'Tis ſaid, that at the time when *Hermichild* was put to death by his Father *Levigild* King of the *Goths*, becauſe he profeſſed the Catholick Faith, the ſeamleſs Coat of Chriſt, which fell by Lot to one of the Soldiers, was found in the City *Zaphat*, laid up in a Marble Cheſt there; *Thomas* being then Biſhop of *Jeruſalem*, *John* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, and *Gregory* Biſhop of *Antioch*. In the mean time *Mauritius*, having in *Tuſcany* and *Terra di Lavoro*, by his General *Romanus* the *Exarch*, gain'd the better of the *Lombards*, who, from a Confidence grounded upon their former ſucceſſes, were now degenerated into all manner of Vice, makes a Law, that no Perſon who had liſted himſelf in the *Roman* Army, ſhould be at liberty to withdraw, and take upon him a Religious life, till either the War were ended, or the Man himſelf maimed or diſabled. *Gregory* being moved hereat, admoniſhes him not to oppoſe the Religion of that God, by whoſe bounty he had been raiſed from a very mean condition to the higheſt degree of Dignity. Moreover, *John* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, having, in a Synod which he held, procured himſelf to be ſtyled the *Oecumenical*, *i. e.* Univerſal Biſhop, and *Mauritius* hereupon requiring *Gregory* to yield Obedience to *John*; He, being a perſon of great Courage and Conſtancy, returns Anſwer, That the Power of binding and looſing was committed to *Peter* and his Succeſſors, not to the Biſhops of *Conſtantinople*, and therefore warns him to deſiſt from provoking the wrath of God againſt himſelf, by being too buſie in ſowing Diſſention in the Church. But *Mauritius*, not content with the miſchief he had done already, recals his Soldiers which were in *Italy*, and encourages the *Lombards* to aſſault the *Romans*, without any regard to the League they had entred into with them. Hereupon *Agilulphus* moving from *Lombardy*, and laying waſte all *Tuſcany* through which he paſſed, inveſts, and very much annoys the City of *Rome* one whole year; in which time *Severus* Biſhop of *Aquileia* becoming Heretical, was the occaſion of many Evils. For after his Death the Patriarchate of *Aquileia* was divided into two; *Agilulphus* King of the *Lombards* conſtituting *John* of *Aquileia*, and our *Gregory*, *Candianus* of *Grado*, Biſhops to the People of *Friuli*. But *Agilulphus* quitting all hopes of gaining the City, raiſes the Siege, and returns to *Milain*. *Mauritius* now began to treat *Gregory* more reſpectfully, but it proceeded not from a voluntary, but forc'd, Repentance; he having heard that a certain Perſon in the habit of a Monk, with a drawn Sword in his hand, had proclaim'd aloud in the Market-place of *Conſtantinople*, that the Emperor ſhould in a ſhort time die by the Sword. The ſame was confirmed to him by a Dream of his own in which he ſaw himſelf, his Empreſs, and their Children murdered. And accordingly not long after, the Soldiers, being diſcontented for want of Pay, create *Phocas*, who was a Centurion in the Army, Emperor, and aſſaſſine *Mauritius*, in the nineteenth year of his Reign. But *Gregory* having added what Ornaments he could to the Churches in *Rome*, and dedicated, by the name of S. *Agatha* the Martyr, the Church of the *Goths* in *Suburra*, built by *Fl. Ricimerius*, a Man of Conſular Dignity, converted his Father's Houſe into a Monaſtery, wherein he received and entertained Strangers, and ſupplyed with Meat and Drink the Poor, which from all parts flocked to it. He was certainly a Perſon every way praiſ-worthy, whether we regard his Life and Converſation, or his Learning, or his Abilities, in things both Divine and Human. Nor ought we to ſuffer him to be cenſured by a few ignorant Men, as if the ancient ſtately Buildings were demoliſh'd by his Order, upon this pretence which they make for him, leſt Strangers, coming out of Devotion to *Rome*, ſhould leſs regard the conſecrated places, and ſpend all their Gaze upon Triumphal Arches and Monuments of Antiquity. No ſuch reproach can juſtly be faſtned upon this great Biſhop, eſpecially conſidering, that he was a Native of the City, and one to whom, next after God, his Country was moſt dear, even above his Life. 'Tis certain, that many of thoſe ruin'd Structures were devour'd by Time, and many might, as we daily ſee, be pull'd down to build new Houſes, and for the reſt, 'tis probable, that for the ſake of the Braſs uſed in the concavity of the Arches, and the conjunctures of the Marble, or other ſquare Stones, they might be battered and defaced, not only by the barbarous Nations, but by the *Romans* too, if *Epirotes*, *Dalmatians*, *Pannonians*, and other ſorry People, who from all parts of the World reſorted hither, may be called *Romans*. Now *Gregory*, having uſed all means to eſtabliſh the Church of God, died in the ſecond year of the Emperor *Phocas*, having been in the Chair thirteen years, ſix months, ten days; and, the loſs of him being lamented by all Men, was buried in *St. Peter*'s, *March* 12. By his Death the See was vacant five months, nineteen days.

SABINIANUS I.

SABINIAN, *Gregorie*'s Succeſſor, deſerv'd not to have the place of his Nativity remembred; being a Perſon of mean Birth, and meaner Reputation, and one who violently oppoſed the great things which his Predeceſſor had done. Particularly, there being a great ſcarcity during his Pontificate, and the Poor preſſing him hard to imitate the pious Charity of *Gregory*, he made them no other Anſwer but this, That *Gregory* was a Man who deſign'd to make himſelf popular, and to that end had profuſely waſted the Revenues of the Church. Nay, the ill-natured wretch arrived to ſuch a degree of Rage and Envy againſt *Gregory*, that he was within a very little of cauſing his Books to be burn'd. Some tell us, that *Sabinian* was, at the inſtigation of ſome *Romans*, thus highly incenſed againſt *Gregory*, becauſe he had mutilated and thrown down the Statues of the Antients, which had been ſet up throughout the City; but this is a Charge as diſſonant from Truth, as that of his demoliſhing the old Fabricks, concerning which we have ſpoken in his Life; and conſidering the Antiquity of theſe Statues, and the Caſualties which might befal them, and the deſigns which Mens Covetouſneſs, or Curioſity might have upon them, 'tis fairly probable, that they might be mangled or loſt, without *Gregorie*'s being at all concerned therein. But to go on with *Sabinian*, it was he who inſtituted the diſtinction of Canonical hours for Prayer in the Church, and who ordained that Tapers ſhould be kept continually burning, eſpecially in the Church of *St. Peter*. Some tell us, that, with the conſent of *Phocas*, a Peace was now made with the *Lombards*, and their King *Agilulphus*'s Daughter, who had been taken Captive in the War, reſtored to him. At this time appeared divers Prodigies, portending the calamities which enſued. A bright Comet was ſeen in the Air, at *Conſtantinople* a Child was born with four Feet, and at the Iſland *Delos* were ſeen two Sea-monſters in Human Shape. Some write, that in the Pontificate of *Sabinian*, *John* Patriarch of *Alexandria*, and *Latinianus* Biſhop of *Carthage*, both Perſons famous for Piety and Learning, did wonderfully improve the Dignity of thoſe Churches. Moreover, *Severus* a very Learned Man, and an intimate Friend of *Latinianus*, wrote very much againſt *Vincent* Biſhop of *Saragoza*, who had fallen off to the *Arian* Hereſie; he alſo wrote to his Siſter a Book concerning Virginity, Entituled *Aureolus*. But *Sabinian*, having been in the Chair one year, five months, nine days, died, and was buried in the Church of *St. Peter*. By his death the See was vacant eleven months, twenty ſix days.

BONIFACE III.

BONIFACE the third, a *Roman*, with much ado obtained of the Emperor *Phocas*, that the See of S. *Peter* the Apoſtle ſhould by all be acknowledged, and ſtyled the Head of all the Churches. A Title which had been ſtickled for by the Church of *Conſtantinople*, through the encouragement of ſome former Princes, who aſſerted, that the Supremacy ought to reſide there, where the Seat of the Empire was. But the *Roman* Biſhops alledged, that *Rome*, of which *Conſtantinople* was but a Colony, ought to be accounted the chief City of the Empire, ſince the *Greeks* themſelves in their Writings ſtyled their Prince, Τῶν Ῥωμαίων Ἀυτοκράτορες, *i. e.* the Emperor of the *Romans*, and the *Conſtantinopolitans* even in that Age were called *Romans*, not *Greeks*. Not to mention, that *Peter* the chief of the Apoſtles bequeathed the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven to his Succeſſors the Biſhops of *Rome*, and left the Power which God had given him, not to *Conſtantinople*, but to *Rome*. This only I ſay that ſeveral Princes, and particularly *Conſtantine*, had granted to the *Roman* See only, the priviledge of Calling and Diſſolving Councils, and of Rejecting or Confirming their Decrees. And does not a Church, which has, with ſo much Integrity and Conſtancy, baffled and exploded all manner of Hereſies as the *Roman* See hath done, deſerve, think you, the Preference of others? The ſame *Boniface* in a Synod of Seventy two Biſhops, thirty Presbyters, and three Deacons, ordained, that upon pain of Excommunication, no Perſon ſhould ſucceed in the place of any deceaſed Pope or other Biſhop, till at leaſt the third day after the death of his Predeceſſor; and that whoever ſhould, by Bribes, or by making of Parties and Intereſts, endeavour to raiſe themſelves to the Popedom, or any other Biſhoprick, ſhould undergo the ſame Penalty. He decreed likewiſe, that the choice of any Biſhop ſhould be by the Clergy and People, and that the Election ſhould then ſtand good, when it was approved by the Civil Magiſtrate, and when the Pope had interpoſed his Authority, in theſe words, *We Will and Command*. An Inſtitution in part very neceſſary, for our times eſpecially, ſo many corruptions daily creeping in. For it is probable, that, the Election being free, the Clergy and People will chuſe, and the Magiſtrate approve of no other, than ſuch an one as deſerves, and is fit to be Governor in the Church. Though (if I may ſpeak it without offence to any that are good,) the truth is, multitudes do now aſpire to the Dignity of Biſhops, not as they ought to do for the ſake of the publick good, but that they may ſatisfy their own Covetouſneſs and Ambition. For the great Queſtion is, what any Biſhoprick is worth, not how great a Flock there is to take the charge of. But enough of this; I return to *Boniface*, whoſe Decrees, as it appears, were extinct with his Life. He died in the ninth month of his Pontificate, and was buried in the Church of *St. Peter.* The See was then vacant one month, ſix days.

BONIFACE IV.

BONIFACE, the fourth, born in *Valeria* a City of the *Marſi*, the Son of *John* a Phyſician, obtained of the Emperor *Phocas* the *Pantheon*, a Temple ſo called, becauſe it was Dedicated to *Cybele* and all the gods, and having caſt out all the Heathen Images that were in it, he conſecrated it on *May* the 12th. in Honor to the Bleſſed Virgin, and all the Martyrs; whereupon it was afterwards called S. *Maria Rotunda*, and *Virgo ad Martyres.*

At this time the *Perſians*, under the Conduct of their King *Choſdroës*, making an irruption into the *Roman* Provinces, and having routed *Phocas*'s his Army, poſſeſs themſelves of *Jeruſalem*; prophane and pillage the Churches of the Chriſtians, carry away the Wood of our Saviour's Croſs, and take Captive *Zacharias* the Holy Patriarch of that City. Hereupon *Phocas*, falling into contempt with all Men, but eſpecially the Senate, was deprived of his Empire and Life by *Heraclius* General of the Forces, and Governor of the Province of *Afrique*. Now alſo *Caganus* King of the *Avares*, forcing his entrance through *Pannonia* and *Illyricum* into *Italy*, was ſo much too hard for the *Lombards*, that he was very near making himſelf Maſter of the Province itſelf; and through the treachery of *Romilda*, who was enamour'd of him, he did actually take *Friuli*, and ſack'd it in ſuch a manner, that ſcarce any footſteps of it were left remaining. While things went thus in *Italy*, *John* Biſhop of *Girone* proved a great Defence to Chriſtianity, both by his Preaching and Writings. He being a *Goth*, born in *Portugal*, ſo ſoon as he came to the years of diſcretion travelled to *Conſtantinople*, and parted thence ſo well ſkill'd in Greek and Latin Learning, that, at his return into *Portugal*, he was able eaſily to baffle the *Arian* Hereſie which very much prevailed there. For this reaſon he was by the Hereticks confined in *Barcellona*. But afterwards upon the death of King *Lemungildus*, who countenanced thoſe Hereticks, he came back into his own Country, and both wrote very much concerning the Chriſtian Religion, and alſo founded a Monaſtery, and preſcribed Rules of living, which

Johannis Gerundenſis.

the Monks thereof were to guide themſelves by. *Eutropius* alſo, Biſhop of *Valentia*, was now by his Learning and Example very inſtrumental to keep the *Spaniards* ſound in the Faith. Moreover, *Columbanus* an Abbat, a very Holy Man, by deſcent a *Goth*, coming firſt out of *Scotland* into *Burgundy*, built there the ſtately Monaſtery of *Luxevil*; and thence paſſing into *Italy*, built another fair one at *Bobio*. Pope *Boniface*, that he might not be behind-hand in this matter with either of them, converted his Father's Houſe into a Monaſtery, and gave his Eſtate for the maintenance of the Monks in it. But not long after he died, having been in the Chair ſix years, eight months, ſeventeen days, and was buried in the Church of *St. Peter*; in a time of Dearth, Peſtilence, and great Inundation of Waters. By his Death the See was vacant ſeven months, twenty five days.

DEVS-DEDIT I.

DEVS-DEDIT, a *Roman*, Son of *Stephen* a Sub-deacon, being unanimouſly choſen to the Pontificate, proved a great Lover and Encourager of the Clergy. 'Tis reported, that he was a Perſon of ſo great Sanctity, that meeting with a Man who had a Leproſie, he cured him of that Diſeaſe with a Kiſs. He ordained, that the Son ſhould not Marry any Woman to whom his Father had been Godfather.

At this time, *Heraclius* with a great Army recovered ſeveral Provinces which the *Perſians* had poſſeſs'd themſelves of; diſmounted and ſlew their General in a ſingle combat; vanquiſh'd their King *Choſdroës*, and took his Son priſoner, whom having firſt Chriſtned, he releaſed and ſent home again. Entring *Perſia*, he took a ſtrong Tower, in which *Choſdroës*'s Treaſure lay, part of which he diſtributed among his Soldiers, and aſſign'd another part for the repairing of the Churches which the *Perſians* had pillaged and ſpoil'd. Returning to *Jeruſalem* with ſeven Elephants loaded with other great Booty, he brought along with him the Croſs of our Bleſſed Saviour, which the *Perſians* had taken away, and laid it up in the place where it was before. Thoſe of the *Perſians* whom he had taken Priſoners, he ſuffered to return into their own Country. After this, being arrived at *Conſtantinople*, and taking delight in Study, he applied himſelf to Aſtrology. But yet this great Emperor, againſt all Law both Divine and Humane, Married his own Siſters Daughter; and to add one crime to another, as is uſual when Men once become guilty, he falls off to the *Eutychian* Hereſie. This happened at the time when *Anaſtaſius* a *Perſian*, being converted to Chriſtianity, and having entred upon a Monaſtick Life, was ſeized by his own Country-men, and ſuffered Martyrdom for the ſake of his Religion; whoſe Body was afterwards conveyed to *Rome*, and repoſited in the Monaſtery of *S. Paul*. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time *Siſebute*, King of the *Goths*, reduced ſeveral Cities of *Spain*, which had revolted to the *Romans*; and that by Torment he forced all the *Jews* which he diſcovered in his Kingdom to profeſs the belief of Chriſtianity. This, it is reported he did at the requeſt of *Heraclius*, who had been fore-warn'd to beware of the Circumciſed; but yet afterwards, he, being not ſufficiently careful to prevent his Fate, was cruſh'd by the *Saracens*, who obſerved Circumciſion. Thus things went in the *Eaſt*, nor did the *Weſt* want its Aſſertors of the Chriſtian Faith. For *Arnulpus*, Biſhop of *Metz*, by his Piety and Prudence, kept *Dagobert* the *French* King within the bounds of his Duty, being therein aſſiſted by *Amandus*, an excellent Perſon, and a vigorous Defender of the Chriſtian Religion. Among the *Spaniards*, *Iſidore*, Biſhop of *Sevil*, Succeſſor to *Leander*, wrote ſeveral things very beneficial to the State of Chriſtianity; particularly, of the *Chief Good*, of *Famous Men*, of *Grammar*, and *Etymology*; an *Hiſtory* from *Adam* to the times of *Heraclius*, the *Lives of ſeveral Saints*, the *Hiſtory of the Lombards*, and a ſhort *Coſmography*. Some ſay, that this *Iſidore* was a *German*, though the *Spaniards* lay claim to him; but whatever Country-man he were, 'tis certain that he was a moſt excellent Perſon, both for his great Learning, and his great Sanctity.

As for *Deus-dedit*, the time of whoſe Pontificate, beſides what we have already mentioned, was rendred remarkable by an Earthquake, and a Scab ſo near approaching to a Leproſie, that it deformed Men beyond each others knowledge: He died in the third Year, and Twenty third day of his being in the Chair, and was buried in the Church of S. *Peter*, *November* the 8th. By his Death the See was vacant one Month, ſixteen Days.

BONIFACE V.

BONIFACE the Fifth, a *Campanian*, his Father's Name *John*, was choſen Pope at the time when *Eleutherius* a *Patrician*, being ſent by *Heraclius* to *Rome*, and having revenged the Death of *John* the late *Exarch* of *Ravenna*, uſurped the Kingdom of *Italy*. But in his way to *Rome* he was put to death by his own Soldiers, and his Head ſent to *Conſtantinople*. Upon which, *Iſaacius* of *Conſtantinople*, another *Patrician*, was made *Exarch* in his ſtead. *Theudelinda* now after the Death of her Husband *Adoaldus*, governing together with her Son the Kingdom of the *Lombards* very prudently and juſtly, maintained a Peace between her People and the *Italians* for ten Years together, made ſeveral Preſents and Donations to ſeveral Churches, and endowed them with Lands for the better maintenance of the Clergy belonging to them. In the Twelfth Year of *Heraclius*, *Mahomet*, an *Arabian*, as ſome will have him, or as others a *Perſian*, deſcended of a Noble Family, his Father a *Gentile*, his Mother a *Jeweſs*, was the Author of ſo much miſchief to the Chriſtian State, that I am afraid leſt his Sect ſhould utterly extinguiſh the Remains of Chriſtianity; eſpecially in our Age, wherein we are grown liſtleſs and unactive, and ſtand ſtill tamely expecting our own Ruin. His Sect prevails and encreaſes now more than ever; All *Aſia* and *Africa*, and a great part of *Europe* is ſubject to *Mahometan* Princes: The *Turks* preſs hard upon us by Sea and Land, that they may ferret us like Coneys out

Mahomet.

out of the Burrows in *Europe*. In the mean time we ſit idly, looking upon one another, as if the whole State of Chriſtianity were not at all in danger. The Clergy expect, that ſo important and neceſſary a War ſhould be undertaken by the Laity. The Laity expect, that the Clergy ſhould expend their Money to bear the Charge of a War for the Defence of Religion, and not put it to worſe Uſes, as moſt of them are wont to do, laying out their Stock, gotten by Alms and Martyrs Blood, upon huge large Veſſels of maſſy Gold and Silver, while themſelves, in the mean time, carry it arrogantly towards Men, are contemners of God, whom they ſerve only for Gain, and are not at all ſolicitous for the time to come. But I return to *Mahomet*, a Man of ſo wily a Temper, and ſo ſharp a Wit, that having long converſed among the Chriſtians, and acquainted himſelf with all the Sects, that had been before him, he introduced a new kind of Superſtition, which has, as we ſee, almoſt rooted out Chriſtianity. Moreover, having got together a great Army of *Arabians*, he was ſo hardy as to encroach upon the Borders of the *Roman* Empire; but *Heraclius* ſoon put a ſtop to his Motion, having, by Promiſes and Bribes, prevailed with his Solders to make a Revolt from him.

As for Pope *Boniface*, he was a Perſon of ſingular Humanity, Clemency, and obliging Deportment towards all Men, and neglected no part of the Duty of a good Biſhop. He ordain'd, That Criminals, who fled for Refuge to Churches, ſhould not be taken thence by force: That the *Acolythi* ſhould not meddle with the Reliques of the Martyrs, that belonging to Presbyters and Sub-deacons: And that in every place, thoſe, who were guilty of Sacriledge, ſhould be Excommunicated. He built and dedicated the Cœmetery of S. *Nicomedes*, and was in an extraordinary manner liberal and munificent towards thoſe of the Clergy, who led exemplary Lives. At this time, *Gallus*, a Scholar of S. *Columbanus*, lived ſo devoutly, that he deſerved to be canonized a Saint, even in his life-time. *Euſtachius* the Abbat followed his Example, and ſo did S. *Aurea*, in honour to whom, *Eligius* built a Nunnery. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that at this time one *Baſilius* was very famous for his Life and Learning, and in both equal to *Iſidore* himſelf. Our *Boniface* having been in the Chair five Years, ten Days, died, and was buried in the Church of S. *Peter*. By his Death the See was vacant thirteen Days.

HONORIUS I.

HONORIUS, a *Campanian*, Son of *Petronius*, a Man of Conſular Dignity, entred upon the Pontificate at the time when *Theudelinda* died, and her Son *Adoaldus* was depoſed, *Arioaldus* being made King in his ſtead. At which time, *Heraclius*, who had been victorious over the *Perſians*, was very urgent to have all the *Jews*, who were Subjects to the Empire, baptized. Hereupon the *Saracens* and *Arabians* taking up Arms, *Anno Dom.* 623. gain'd ſuch a Victory over *Heraclius*'s Army, that they rendred that ſucceſsful Man the moſt unfortunate. This was done under the Conduct of *Ma-*

homet, who, pretending himſelf to be the great Prophet of God, and deluding the *Aſians* and *Africans* by Magical Arts, put ſuch vigour into the People, who embraced his new Religion, that he was very near to have ruin'd the Empire; having taken *Alexandria*, and ſeveral important Cities of *Syria* and *Cilicia*. He had for his Followers the *Saracens*, ſo called from *Sarah Abraham*'s lawful Wife, as if they were the only legitimate Succeſſors and Heirs of the Divine Promiſe. The crafty Man herein followed the Example of *Jeroboam*, who preſcrib'd diſtinct Rules of Worſhip to his Tribes, that they might not be ſubject to the *Jewiſh* Government. The ſame alſo afterwards did the *Greeks*, who diſſented from the Catholicks, not only for the ſake of Religion, but Empire, upon the ſcore of which, they followed the Errors of the *Neſtorians*, *Jacobites*, and *Ebionites*. But in the end, their pertinacy reduc'd them to that paſs, that their Religion and Government were diſſolved together, and they brought into the vileſt Servitude. But *Mahomet*, (as we ſee in the *Alcoran*,) that he might ſeparate his Diſciples as far as poſſible from Chriſtianity, in compoſing his Laws, followed the Example of ſeveral Hereticks, and eſpecially the *Neſtorians*, collecting here and there, and reducing into one Body, many things repugnant to the Law of *Moſes* and the Goſpel. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time, *Heraclius*, diſtruſting his own ſtrength, ſtruck up an inglorious Peace with the *Saracens*, and, that being impos'd upon, by the Arts of *Pyrrhus*, Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, and *Cyrus*, Biſhop of *Alexandria*, he fell off to the Hereſie of the *Monothelites*, a Sect ſo called from their aſſerting one Will only in Chriſt. But theſe Seducers, at the Inſtance of *Honorius*, who was very diligent to reclaim *Heraclitus*, were afterwards baniſhed. And *Honorius*, having now ſome reſpite from other Cares, by his Learning and Example, proved a great Reformer of the Clergy. The Church of S. *Peter* he covered with Braſs, taken out of the Temple of *Jupiter Capitolinus*; repaired that of S. *Agnes* in the *Via Nomentana*, as appears by an Inſcription in Verſe therein; and likewiſe that of S. *Pancras* in the *Via Aurelia*; built thoſe of S. *Anaſtaſius*, S. *Cyriacus*, ſeven Miles from *Rome* in the *Via Oſtienſis*, and S. *Severinus* in *Tivoli*; all which he made very ſtately, and adorn'd with Gold, Silver, Porphyry, Marble, and all manner of Ornamental Workmanſhip. He repaired alſo the Cœmetery of SS. *Marcellinus* and *Peter* in the *Via Labicana*, and was at the Charge of building other Churches, beſides thoſe before-mentioned. Moreover, he ordained, That every *Saturday* a Proceſſion, with Litanies, ſhould be made from S. *Apollinaris* to S. *Peter*'s; but having been in the Chair Twelve Years, eleven Months, ſeventeen Days, he died, and was buried in the Church of S. *Peter*, *October* the 12th: By his Death the See was vacant one Year, ſeven Months, eighteen Days.

SEVERINUS I.

SEVERINUS, a *Roman*, Son of *Labienus*, being choſen in the place of *Honorius* deceaſed, was confirmed therein by *Iſaacius*, *Exarch* of *Italy*, the Election of the Clergy and People being at this time reckoned null and void, without the Aſſent of the Emperors or their *Exarchs*. Now *Iſaacius* having made a Journy to *Rome*, upon the occaſion of confirming this Pope, that he might not loſe his labour, fairly ſets himſelf to plunder the *Lateran* Treaſury, being aſſiſted in that attempt by ſeveral Citizens, though he were reſiſted for a time, but in vain, by the Clergy of that Church, the principal of which he afterwards baniſhed. The ground of this Action, was *Iſaacius*'s Reſentment, that the Clergy alone ſhould grow rich, without contributing to the Charge of the Wars, eſpecially at a time when the Soldiers were reduc'd to the greateſt want and extremity: Part of the ſpoil he diſtributed among the Soldiers, part he carried away with him to *Ravenna*, and of the reſt he made a Preſent to the Emperor. Thoſe of the *Saracens*, who had been liſted by *Heraclius*, being diſcontented for want of Pay, march'd into *Syria*, and made themſelves Maſters of *Damaſcus*, a City ſubject to the Empire; then joining with the other *Arabians*, and being furniſhed with Proviſions and Arms, and heated by *Mahomet*'s Zeal, they over-run *Phœnicia* and *Egypt*, and put to the Sword all thoſe, who refuſed to ſubſcribe to their Government, and *Mahomet*'s Religion. Advancing thence againſt the *Perſians*, and having ſlain *Hormiſda*, the *Perſian* King, they ceaſed not to commit all manner of Outrages upon that People, till they had entirely reduced them to Subjection. But *Heraclius*, having Intelligence of what Work theſe *Saracens* made, eſpecially upon their taking of *Antioch*, and fearing that they might poſſeſs themſelves of *Jeruſalem* it ſelf, (which they not long after did,) took care to have the Croſs of our Saviour conveyed to *Conſtantinople*, that it might not again come into the hands of the *Agarens*, (for ſo the *Greeks* in contempt call the *Arabians*, as deſcending from *Agar*, *Abraham*'s Servant.) But *Mahomet*, as we are told, dying at *Mecha*, was ſucceeded in the Command by *Calipha*, and he by *Hali*; who being laid aſide for his being too ſuperſtitious, the *Egyptians* make another *Calipha* their Commander. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that, to complete the Calamities of the *Roman* Empire, *Siſebute*, King of the *Goths*, did at this time recover out of the hands of the *Romans* all the Cities of *Spain*; and ſo a period was put to the *Roman* Government in that Country.

As for *Severinus*, who was a Perſon of extraordinary Piety and Religion, a Lover of the Poor, kind to thoſe in Affliction, liberal to all, and in adorning of Churches very munificent; having been in the Chair one Year, two Months, he dyed, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, *Auguſt* the 2d: The See was then vacant Four Months, twenty Days.

JOHN IV.

JOHN the Fourth, a *Dalmatian*, Son of *Venantius*, entring upon the Pontificate, forthwith expreſſed a wonderful Compaſſion, in employing the remainder of the Treaſury of the Church, which *Iſaacius* had left behind him, for the redemption of a multitude of *Iſtrians* and *Dalmatians*, who had been taken captive. In the mean time, *Rhotaris*, who ſucceeded *Arioaldus* in the Kingdom of *Lombardy*, though he were a Perſon eminent for Juſtice and Piety, yet became a Favourer of the *Arians*, and permitted, that in every City of his Kingdom, there ſhould be at the ſame time two Biſhops of equal Authority, the one a *Catholick*, and the other an *Arian*. He was a Prince of great Parts, and reduc'd the Laws, which Memory and Uſe alone had before retain'd, methodically into a Book, which he ordered to be called the *Edict*. His Excellency in Military Skill appear'd, in that he made himſelf Maſter of all *Tuſcany*, and *Liguria*, with the Sea-coaſt as far as *Marſeille*. But in the ſixth Year of his Reign he died, and left the Kingdom to his Son *Rhodoaldus*. 'Tis reported, that a certain Prieſt, entring by Night into the Church of S. *John Baptiſt*, and there opening the Tomb in which the Body of *Rhotaris* lay, robb'd it of all the things of value with which the Bodies of Kings are wont to be interred. Hereupon *John Baptiſt*, a Saint to whom *Rhotaris* had been in his life-time very much devoted, appear'd to the Prieſt, and threatned him with Death, if he ever entred his Church again. The like happened even in our times to Cardinal *Luigi*, Patriarch of *Aquileia*, whoſe Sepulchre was broke open and pillaged by thoſe very Men, whom he himſelf had enriched and raiſed from a mean condition to the Sacerdotal Dignity. *Rhodoaldus*, entring upon the Government of the Kingdom, marries *Gundiberga*, the Daughter of Queen *Theudelinda*, who, imitating her Mother's Devotion, built, and richly adorn'd, a Church, in Honour to S. *John Baptiſt*, at *Terracina*; in like manner as *Theudelinda* had done at *Monza*. But *Rhodoaldus*, being taken in Adultery, was ſlain by the Husband of the Adultereſs. Succeſſor to him was *Aripertus*, Son of *Gudualdus*, and Brother of Queen *Theudelinda*; he built our Saviour's Chappel at *Pavia*, and very much beautified and plentifully endowed it.

Pope *John*, fearing now leſt the Bodies of *Vincentius* and *Anaſtaſius* might, ſome time or other, be violated by the barbarous Nations, took care to have them ſafely conveyed to *Rome*, and, with great Solemnity, repoſited them in the Oratory of S. *John Baptiſt*, near the Baptiſtery of the *Lateran*. We are told, that in his Pontificate, *Vincentius*, Biſhop of *Beauvais*, and *Muardus*, Archbiſhop of *Reims*, were in great eſteem for their Learning and Sanctity. Moreover, *Reginulpha*, a *French* Lady, was very eminent for Piety; and *Renaldus*, Biſhop of *Trajetto*, famous for his Life and Miracles. *Jodocus* alſo was not inferior to any of theſe, who, though he were the Son of a King of the *Britains*, yet, deſpiſing worldly Greatneſs, he became, for ſome time, an Hermit, and died at length in an obſcure Village. Pope *John*, having been in the Chair one Year, nine Months, nine Days, died, and was buried in the Church of S. *Peter*, *October* the 12th: The See was then vacant one Month, thirteen Days.

THEODORVS I.

THEODORVS, a *Grecian*, Son of *Theodorus* a Biſhop, born at *Jeruſalem*, was no ſooner in the Chair, but he applied himſelf, like a good Biſhop, to all thoſe things, which he thought might tend to the Advancement of the Chriſtian Religion; being a Perſon obliging to all Men, but extraordinarily bountiful to the poor.

At this time *Heraclius* died of a Dropſie, in the Thirtieth Year of his Reign, having a little before made *Theodorus*, Sirnamed *Calliopa*, his *Exarch* in *Italy*, in the place of *Iſaacius* deceaſed. *Heraclius* was ſucceeded by his Son *Conſtantine*, who, in the Fourth Month after his coming to the Empire, was poiſoned by the Procurement of his Step-mother *Martina* and her Son *Heracleon*, whom, it is ſaid, *Pyrrhus* the Patriarch prompted to commit that Villany. *Heracleon*, upon the Death of his Brother, takes upon him the Government, at that time particularly, when *Cyrus*, *Sergius*, and *Pyrrhus*, reviving the Hereſie of the *Acephali*, maintained the Opinion of one only Nature in Chriſt, one Operation and one Will. Among theſe, *Pyrrhus*, hearing of the Death of *Heraclius*, and being very deſirous to return out of *Africa*, whither he had been baniſhed, into his own Country, coming to *Rome*, and making an hypocrital Retractation of his Errors, was reſtored by *Theodorus*, and received from him a Form of Belief: But he loſt his Life before he could accompliſh the end, which he ſought to compaſs by ſuch ill means: For the Senate and People of *Conſtantinople*, being acquainted with the cauſe of *Conſtantine's* Death, firſt ſeize *Martina* and *Heracleon*, and having cut off his Noſe, and cut out her Tongue, baniſh them both; then apprehending *Pyrrhus*, who endeavoured to make his eſcape, they put him to Death. *Conſtantius*, the Son of *Conſtantine*, who had been thus treacherouſly murthered, they create Emperor; and in ſtead of *Pyrrhus*, make *Paul* their Biſhop; whom yet *Theodorus* deprived, for being in the like kind Heretical, his pertinacy therein being favoured by *Conſtantius*, who was unadviſedly fallen into the ſame Hereſie. But the Pope laying aſide this Controverſie, and applying himſelf to other Cares, cauſed the Bones of the Martyrs *Primus* and *Felicianus*, to be removed out of a ſandy Grotto in the *Via Nomentana* to *Rome*, where he repoſited them in the Church of S. *Stephen* the Proto-martyr, ſparing no coſt in Ornaments, both of Silver and Gold, upon their Tomb. He alſo built and adorn'd a Church in the *Via Flaminia*, as likewiſe two Oratories, one near the *Lateran* Church, dedicated to S. *Sebaſtian*, the other in the *Via Oſtienſis*, to *Eupolus* the Martyr. Having finiſhed theſe things, and been in the Chair ſix Years, five Months, eighteen Days, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter's*, *May* the 14th: The See was then vacant Fifty two Days.

MARTINUS I.

MARTINUS the Firſt, born at *Todi*, Son of *Fabricius*, ſucceeding *Theodorus*, forthwith diſpatches his Legates to *Conſtantinople*, to admoniſh *Paul* to quit his Errors, and at length to return into the way of Truth: But he not only diſobeyed the Pope's Commands, but alſo, being countenanced therein by *Conſtantius*, offered great Indignities to theſe Legates, and then baniſhed them into ſeveral Iſlands. *Martinus* highly reſenting this Uſage, calls a Synod of an Hundred and fifty Biſhops at *Rome*, wherein he renews the Condemnation of *Cyrus* of *Alexandria*, *Sergius*, and *Pyrrhus*, and excommunicates and deprives *Paul* the Patriarch, with the bittereſt Anathemas imaginable.

While theſe things were tranſacting, the Peace of *Italy*, which had laſted between the *Romans* and *Lombards* thirty Years, began now to be diſturbed; for the *Lombards* took mightily upon them, and impoſed ſuch unjuſt Conditions upon the *Romans*, as they could not ſubmit to; particularly, *Rhotaris*, being himſelf an *Arian*, had ſcarce any City, over which he did not ſet up an *Arian*, as well as a *Catholick*, Biſhop. This was an Evil, which both *Theodorus* and *Martine* had often endeavoured to remedy, but in vain. For this reaſon, and alſo at the inſtance of *Theodorus* the *Exarch*, a War was proclaimed with the *Lombards*; whereupon they take up Arms, and near *Scultenna*, a River of *Modena*, a ſharp Engagement there was on both ſides; but in the end, *Theodorus* was vanquiſhed and routed, and loſt in the Fight near Seven thouſand of his Men. *Rhotaris* being fluſh'd with this Victory, in a ſhort time eaſily made himſelf Maſter of all *Liguria*. Now *Conſtantius* hoping, that the change of his General might change his Fortune too, recals *Theodorus*, and ſends *Olympius* his *Exarch* into *Italy*, with Inſtructions, both to propagate the Sect of the *Monothelites* throughout *Italy*; and alſo, either to put Pope *Martine* to death, or elſe to take care to have him ſent Priſoner to *Conſtantinople*. *Olympius* coming to *Rome*, where there had been already a Synod held againſt this and other the Errors of the Oriental Church, and finding that he could not diſperſe the Contagion as he thought to do, ſends one of his Officers to ſeize *Martine* in the Church of S. *Maria Maggiore*, and either to bring him to him, or elſe to kill him if he refus'd and made reſiſtance: The Officer being juſt ready to execute this Order, was, by Miracle, ſuddenly ſtruck with Blindneſs; and ſo, by Divine Providence, *Martine* eſcaped the danger. The *Saracens* taking heart upon this great Diſſention between the *Eaſtern* and *Weſtern* Church, ſet ſail from *Alexandria* with a great Fleet, and arriving at *Rhodes*, and taking the City, they deſtroyed the famous and celebrated *Coloſs* there, with the Braſs of which, it's ſaid, they loaded Nine hundred Camels; this *Coloſs* being ſeventy Foot high, the Workmanſhip of *Chares*, the Scholar of *Lyſippus*. Afterwards, having poſſeſſed themſelves of ſeveral Iſlands in the *Archipelago*, and thence ſailing to *Sicily*, they very much infeſted the Inhabitants of that Iſland. Hereupon, *Olympius*, at the entreaty of Pope *Martine*, makes an Expedition, and forces them thence, though not without the loſs of many of his Ships and Men, and even that of his own Life too, for he fell ſick in *Sicily* and died there. But *Conſtantius*, who was not in the leaſt battered by all theſe Calamities, commands *Theodorus Calliopa* again into *Italy*, with expreſs Order, that he would forthwith ſend Pope *Martine* bound to him; and to aſſiſt him in that Affair, he joins *Paulus Pellarius* with him, who was to take care to ſee it done. *Theodorus* having been honourably received by the *Romans*, and going, upon pretence of making a Viſit, to the Pope, ſeizes and puts him in Fetters, and ſo ſends him to *Conſtantinople*, from whence he was afterwards baniſhed to the *Cherſoneſe*, the place where *Clemens Romanus* had formerly been an Exile. Now *Martine* being thus compaſſed with Calamities, and pinch'd with extreme want, at length dies in Baniſhment, after he had been in the Chair ſix Years, one Month, Twenty ſix days. And becauſe it was long before there came certain Intelligence of his Death, the See was vacant fourteen Months.

EUGENIUS I.

EUGENIUS, a *Roman*, Son of *Ruffinianus*, ſucceeded *Martine*, about the time that in the place of *Paul* the Heretick, *Peter* was made *Patriarch* of *Conſtantinople*; who, though he were a little more Orthodox than *Paul*, yet did not in all things agree in Doctrine with the *Roman* Church. His Letters ſent to *Rome*, in which he denied Two Operations and Wills in Chriſt, were ſo exploded, that the Clergy took upon them to interdict the Pope's celebrating Maſs in S. *Maria Maggiore*, till he had firſt publickly declared his diſlike of them.

In the mean time, *Grimoaldus*, Duke of *Beneventum*, leaving his Son to govern at home, and marching with a great Army into *Lombardy*, forced *Pertheri* and *Gundibert*, the Two Sons of *Aripertus*, to quit *Pavia* and *Milain*: Of which, *Clodoveus*, the *French* King, having Intelligence, he, out of compaſſion to the young Princes, immediately ſends a conſiderable Force into *Italy*, to recover their Right for them. Beyond the *Po* Battel is join'd, and the Diſpute managed very briskly on both ſides, the young Princes being eager to retrieve their Paternal Poſſeſſions, and he endeavouring as much to keep what he had gain'd by War. At length Fortune inclin'd to *Grimoaldus* his ſide, and the *French* were routed, and driven out of *Italy*. We are told by ſome, that the *French* were outwitted by the Enemy after this manner: The *Lombards* diſſembled a Flight, leaving their Tents furniſhed with plenty of all manner of Proviſions, and eſpecially of Wine; but not far off, they made a halt, watching their opportunity; the *French* entring their Tents, and thinking they had been really fled, fall to feaſting, and eat and drink to ſuch exceſs, that the Enemy coming upon them, and finding them dead aſleep, and lying about like Beaſts, they made ſuch a ſlaughter of them, that there was ſcarce one left alive to carry the News to *Clodoveus*. *Grimoaldus* growing confident upon this Victory, quickly makes himſelf Maſter of the whole Province. As for Pope *Eugenius*, who was a Perſon of very great Piety, Religion, Meekneſs, Humanity and Munificence, having been in the Chair two years, nine months, he died, and was buried in the Church of S. *Peter*, *June* the 2d. The See was then vacant one month, twenty eight days.

VITALIANUS I.

VITALIANUS, born at *Signa* a Town of the *Volſci*, the Son of *Anaſtaſius*, entred upon the Pontificate at the time when *Cæſarea* the *Perſian* Queen, attended only with a few of her Confidents, and without the knowledge of her Husband, came to *Conſtantinople*, in the year 683. She was very honourably received by the Emperor, and not long after baptized, for the ſake of which it was that ſhe came thither. The *Perſian* King, having intelligence hereof, forthwith ſends Ambaſſadors to *Conſtantinople* to demand his Wife of the Emperor. To them the Emperor anſwered, That it was in the Queen's choice to ſtay or go, and therefore they ſhould enquire of her pleaſure. The Queen, being ask'd, made Anſwer, That ſhe would never return into her Country, unleſs the King would become a Chriſtian. Who being acquainted herewith, comes forthwith in a peaceable manner with forty thouſand Men to *Conſtantinople*; where being received by the Emperor with all expreſſions of kindneſs, he together with his Soldiers were baptized, and then he returned with his Queen into his own Kingdom. After this *Conſtantius*, having aſſociated to himſelf in the Government his Son *Conſtantine*, and prepared a great Fleet, ſetting ſail from *Conſtantinople*, arrives at *Tarentum*, bringing with him in Ships of burden a great Force of Land-Soldiers. From thence he advanced by Land into *Abruzzo*, with deſign to beſiege *Beneventum*. But underſtanding, that that City was very ſtrongly Gariſon'd, and plentifully furniſhed with Proviſions by the care of *Rhomoaldus*, he marched to *Lucera*, which he took, and plundered, and then levell'd with the ground. Paſſing from thence to *Acherontia*, and being not able to make himſelf Maſter of ſo well-fortified a place, he again attempts the Siege of *Beneventum*, but ſoon raiſes it, upon intelligence, that *Grimoaldus* would ſuddenly be there with a great Army, to aſſiſt his Son *Rhomoaldus*. Hereupon *Conſtantius* moving firſt towards *Naples*, though very much incommoded in his paſſage, and having left *Saburrus* a *Roman* Citizen with twenty thouſand Men at *Formiæ* to oppoſe the Enemy, at length he comes to *Rome*, the Pope, and Clergy, and People in honour to him going ſix miles out of the City to meet him. And being conducted through the City, with great Acclamations, to the Church of S. *Peter*, he there made a very rich Preſent. In the mean time *Rhomoaldus*, preſuming upon the ſupplies he receiv'd from his Father, joyns Battel with *Saburrus*, conquers him, and puts to the Sword a great number of the *Greeks*. *Conſtantius*, being enraged and growing almoſt deſperate upon this misfortune, on the fifth day after his entrance into the City, falls a plundering, takes away all the Statues of Braſs and Marble ſet up in the principal parts of the City, and the rich Ornaments of the Churches, and lades his Ships with them; and in ſeven days did more damage to

Rome, than the barbarous Nations had done before in two hundred and fifty eight years; ſo that ill Men, ignorant of Hiſtory, have no reaſon to ſay, that the Statues and Monuments of Antiquity were demoliſhed by Pope *Gregory*'s Order. On the twelfth day the vile and perfidious paultry *Greek* leaving *Rome*, with a vengeance to him, goes towards *Naples*, thence to *Sicily*, being ſo ſevere in his exaction of Tribute whereever he came, as to take away Children out of the Embraces of their Parents who could not pay him. But the covetous Wretch, ſtaying ſome time in *Sicily*, as he was bathing for pleaſure at *Syracuſe*, was ſlain; and *Mezentius*, who is thought to have been the Contriver of his Death, was by the Soldiers made Emperor in his ſtead. This *Conſtantius* was a Perſon of a ſtrange variety and inconſtancy of Mind: For at firſt, hearing that *Vitalianus* was choſen Pope, he ſent his Ambaſſadors to congratulate him, and to make a Preſent of the Goſpels, written in letters of Gold, and ſet with Jewels, to S. *Peter*. Whereas afterwards his Mind being changed, he caſt off all regard to God and Man, and turned all things both divine and human topſy-turvy. But *Vitalianus*, being intent upon ſacred things, compoſed Eccleſiaſtical Canons, and regulated ſinging in the Church, introducing Organs to be uſed with the Vocal Muſick. He alſo ſent, with ample Power of binding and looſing, *Theodorus* an Archbiſhop and *Adrian* an Abbat, two very learned and pious Men, into *England*, that by their Preaching and Example they might keep that People ſtedfaſt in the Faith; which the good Men did what they could to perform. This *Theodorus* alſo wrote a Book, ſhewing, by what Penance every ſin may be waſh'd off; though ſome aſcribe that Work to Pope *Theodorus*. Now *Vitalianus*, having govern'd the Church, as well as lay in his power, fourteen years, ſix months, died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s, *January* the 27th. The See was then vacant four months, fifteen days.

ADEODATUS I.

ADEODATUS, a *Roman*, Son of *Jovinian*, was, of a Monk, created Pope, at the time when *Lupus* Duke of *Friuli* endeavoured to poſſeſs himſelf of the Kingdom of *Italy*. For *Grimoaldus* being (as we have ſaid) called by his Son *Rhomoaldus* Duke of *Beneventum* to aid him againſt *Conſtantius* the Emperor, at his departure commended his People to the care of *Lupus*, and ſo, according to the Proverb, left the Sheep to the keeping of the * Wolf. For *Lupus* taking the advantage of *Grimoaldus* his abſence, involves all *Tuſcany*, *Romandiola*, and a great part of *Lombardy*, in tumult and confuſion. Hereupon *Grimoaldus* by gifts and promiſes prevails with *Caganus* to advance with his *Avares* againſt *Lupus*; which he did, and in the firſt Engagement had the worſt of it. But the next day, renewing the Fight, he overcame and ſlew *Lupus*, and then ſack'd and laid waſte all *Friuli*. *Grimoaldus*, upon *Conſtantius* his leaving *Italy*, returns into *Lombardy*, and in his way, on the *Saturday* before *Eaſter*, takes *Forlimpopoli*; puts all the Inhabitants of it to the Sword, plunders it, and then levels it to the ground, upon the ſcore of an injury, which he

* The Author's quibble upon the name of the Tyrant, *Lupus* being the *Latin* word for a Wolf.

he had received there from the people of *Ravenna*, in his paſſage to the Aid of his Son. Now *Arneſites* the Son of *Lupus*, being aſſiſted by the *Dalmatians*, endeavoured to recover his Father's Dukedom; but near the River *Natiſone*, he was vanquiſh'd and ſlain by the *Lombards*. The Inhabitants of *Uderzo* had a ſhare in his Misfortune, being forced to quit their Country for having countenanced him in his pretenſions. At this time *Sicily* alſo was in a bad condition; for Soldiers were ſent thither out of all the Provinces of *Italy* to make head againſt *Mezentius*, by whoſe treachery *Conſtantius* had been murdered. Who being overcome and ſlain, and the Soldiers again diſperſed, the *Saracens*, arriving with a great Fleet, ſurprize *Syracuſe* and poſſeſs themſelves of the whole Iſland. After ſome time, they return to *Alexandria* loaded with ſpoil, and carry away with them thoſe *Ornaments* of the *City* of *Rome*, which *Conſtantius* had brought to *Syracuſe*, with deſign to tranſmit them to *Conſtantinople*. Theſe Miſeries and Calamities had been portended by a Comet, which appeared three months together; by great Rains and frequent Thunders, ſuch as had not been at any time known before. But ſuch is the blindneſs of Mankind, that though they be warn'd of future Evils, yet they do not, as they ought, provide againſt them. 'Tis reported, that all the ſtanding Corn, which had been lodg'd by the continued Rains, grew yet up again, and came to maturity, eſpecially in *Lombardy*. In the mean time, *Adeodatus*, being a perſon of great Piety and Humanity, merciful towards Offenders, bountiful to the Poor, hoſpitable towards ſtrangers, and compaſſionate towards all in Calamity, repaired and dedicated the Church of S. *Peter* in the *Via Portuenſis*. He alſo added to the Building and Revenues of the Monaſtery of S. *Eraſmus* on *Mons Cœlius*, wherein himſelf had been a Monk. Moreover, he appointed frequent Litanies, upon the account of thoſe Prodigies, which, we have ſaid, appear'd at that time. At length having been in the Chair four years, two months, five days, he died, and was with general lamentation buried in S. *Peter's*, *June* the 26th. The See was then vacant four months, twenty days.

DONUS I.

DONUS, a *Roman*, Son of *Mauritius*, was made Pope at the time when *Grimoaldus*, King of the *Lombards*, drawing a Bow high to ſhoot at a Pigeon, and thereby ſtraining his Nerves and Veins, though it were nine days after he had been let Blood in the Arm, yet thereupon it fell a bleeding afreſh, and could not be ſtanch'd till he died. There were in this King ſeveral excellent Endowments both of Body and Mind. He was a Perſon of great Wiſdom and Prudence in all Affairs; and added ſeveral things very uſeful to *Rhotaris* his Edict, which afterwards receiv'd the Form of a Law. He was of a middle Stature, ſtrong Conſtitution, had a bald Head, and long Beard; and was every way fitted for Action. He was buried at *Pavia* in the Church of S. *Ambroſe*, which he had built at his own charge. *Pertharis*, Son of King *Aripertus*, who, as we have ſaid, had been deprived of his Right by *Grimoaldus*, paſſing now, during his Exile, out of *France* into *Britain*, was prompted by a Voice which he knew not from whence it came, that, *Grimoaldus* being dead, he ſhould ſeek to recover his Paternal Inheritance. Encouraged by this Voice, though the Author of it were uncertain, he returned into *Italy*, and, within three months after *Grimoaldus*'s Death, became repoſſeſs'd of his Fathers Kingdom without any oppoſition. About the ſame time died *Dagobert* the *French* King, a ſubtil and crafty Prince, and who was equally fitted for Counſel and Action; whoſe Soul, when it had been carried by Devils almoſt as far as the Iſland of *Lipara*, is reported to have been delivered out of their Clutches, by *Dennis* and *Maurice* the Martyrs, and *Martin* the Confeſſor, Saints for whom as his Patrons he had all his life-time a great Veneration, and had been very liberal in beautifying and enriching their Churches. Now Pope *Donus*, conſulting the honour of the Church, paved the Porch of S. *Peter*'s, called *Baradiſe*, with Marble, which he took, as I ſuppoſe, from the Pyramide over againſt *Caſtel* S. *Angelo*. Moreover, he repaired and dedicated in the *Via Oſtienſis* the Church of the Apoſtles, and in the *Via Appia* that of S. *Euphemia*. He alſo appointed the ſeveral degrees of honour and diſtance to be yielded to the ſeveral Orders of the Clergy. And diſcovering in the *Boethian* Monaſtery a Company of *Syrian* Monks, who were of the *Neſtorian* Hereſie, them he cenſured and diſperſed into divers other Monaſteries, aſſigning their own to *Roman* Monks. By his eminent Learning and Piety, and through the ſubmiſſion of *Theodorus* Biſhop of *Ravenna*, he reduced to Obedience to the Apoſtolick See the Church of *Ravenna*, which had for a conſiderable time ſeparated it ſelf from that of *Rome*, and upon that account had got the Name of *Allocephalis*. Some tell us, that in his time *Projectus*, a Biſhop, underwent the torment and acquired the glory of Martyrdom for the cauſe of Chriſtianity; and that *Mezelindis*, a Woman of incomparable Chaſtity, being ſolicited by her Lover *Ardenius*, and, upon her not yielding to his deſires, put to divers Torments by him, yet prayed ſo fervently even for her Perſecutor, whom God for this Crime had ſtruck with blindneſs, that upon her Prayers his Sight was reſtored to him. Our *Donus*, having been in the Chair five years, ten days, died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s, *April* the 10th. The See was then vacant two months, ſixteen days.

AGATHO I.

AGATHO, a *Sicilian*, was *Anno Dom.* 702. of a Monk made Pope; a Perſon of great Piety, and who cured a Leper, whom he chanced to meet with, only by a kiſs. He was a Man of ſo obliging a temper, that no Perſon went away ſad out out of his Preſence. And being ſo happy as to have a Contemporary Emperor like himſelf, he deſigned to hold a Council upon the account of the *Monothelites*. Only he waited the time till *Conſtantine* ſhould return from the War, who had vanquiſh'd the *Saracens*, and made them Tributary to the *Roman* Empire. But the *Bulgarians* advancing out of *Scythia* into *Thrace*, and the Emperor endeavouring to put a check to their motion, he was with great loſs routed between *Hungary* and *Mæſia*. Hereupon, he found himſelf obliged to ſtrike up a Peace with them upon diſadvantageous Terms, permitting them to inhabit *Hungary* and *Mæſia*; though that Conceſſion in the event proved a great benefit to the State of Chriſtianity. For theſe are the Men, who, for theſe ſeven hundred and ſeventy years ſince, have maintained a continual War, and been the Bulwark of Chriſtendom againſt the *Turks*. Well, a Peace being upon theſe Conditions concluded, Pope *Agatho* ſends to *Conſtantinople* his Legates *John* Biſhop of *Porto*, and *John* a Deacon of *Rome*. Them *Conſtantine* receiv'd with all Expreſſions of reſpect, and very affectionately adviſed them to lay aſide all Cavils and Sophiſtical Wranglings and Controverſies, and ſincerely to endeavour the uniting the two Churches. There were preſent at this Synod two hundred and eighty nine Biſhops; and by the Command of the Emperor there were brought out of the Library of *Conſtantinople* thoſe Books, from whence the Opinions and Determinations of the Ancients might be collected. *Gregory* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, and *Macarius* Biſhop of *Antioch*, perverting the ſenſe of the Fathers, maintain'd only one Will and Operation in Chriſt. But the Orthodox preſſing hard with their Reaſons and Authorities, they thereby reclaimed *Gregory*; and *Macarius* adhering obſtinately to his Opinion, they Excommunicated him and his Followers, and made *Theophanes*, an Orthodox Abbat, Biſhop of *Antioch* in his ſtead. This Affair being thus ſucceſsfully managed, that thanks might be returned to God for this Union of the two Churches in Heart and Mind, *John* Biſhop of *Porto*, on the Octave of *Eaſter*, in the preſence of the Emperor, Patriarch and the People of *Conſtantinople*, in the Church of S. *Sophia* celebrates the Maſs in *Latin*, all that were preſent approving that way, and condemning thoſe that thought otherwiſe. This was the ſixth General Council, conſiſting of two hundred and eighty nine Biſhops, held at *Conſtantinople*, wherein upon the Authority of *Cyril*, *Athanaſius*, *Baſil*, *Gregory*, *Dionyſius*, *Hilary*, *Ambroſe*, *Auguſtine*, and *Hierom*, it was concluded, that there were two Wills and Operations in Chriſt, and their pertinacy was exploded, who aſſerted one Will only, from whence they were called *Monothelites*. The firſt General Council, of three hundred and eighteen Biſhops, was, as we have already ſaid, held at *Nice*, in the Pontificate of *Julius*, and the Reign of *Conſtantine*, againſt *Arius*, who aſſerted ſeveral Subſtances in the Trinity. The ſecond at *Conſtantinople* of an hundred and fifty Biſhops in the Reign of *Gratian* and the Pontificate of *Damaſus*, againſt *Macedonius* and *Eudoxus* who denied the Holy Ghoſt to be God. The third in *Epheſus*, of two hundred Biſhops, in the Reign of *Theodoſius* the Second, and the Pontificate of *Celeſtine*, againſt *Neſtorius* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, who denied the Bleſſed Virgin to be the Mother of God, and made Chriſts Humanity and Divinity two Perſons, aſſerting, ſeparately, one to be the Son of God, the other the ſon of Man. The fourth at *Chalcedon*, a City over againſt *Conſtantinople*, of ſix hundred and thirty Prelates, in the Pontificate of *Leo* and the Reign of *Martian*, againſt *Eutyches* Abbat of *Conſtantinople*, who durſt affirm, that our Saviour after his Incarnation had but one Nature. The fifth at *Conſtantinople*, againſt *Theodorus* and all other Hereticks, who aſſerted the Virgin *Mary* to have brought forth Man only, not Godman; in which Synod it was concluded, that the Bleſſed Virgin ſhould be ſtyled Θεοτόκος, or the Mother of God. Concerning the ſixth Synod we have ſpoken already, in which the Letters of *Damianus* Biſhop of *Pavia*, and *Manſuetus* Archbiſhop of *Milain* were very prevalent; the principal Contents of them theſe, *viz*. The true Faith concerning Chriſt, God and Man, is, that we believe two Wills and two Operations in him; *John* 10.30. Our Saviour ſays with reſpect to his Divinity, *I and my Father are one*; *John* 14.28. but with relation to his Humanity, *My Father is greater than I*. Moreover, as Man, he was found aſleep in the Ship; as God, he commanded the Winds and the Sea. As for our *Agatho*, (in whoſe time after two Eclipſes, one of the Moon, another of the Sun, there followed a grievous Peſtilence,) having been in the Chair two years, ſix months, fifteen days, he died, and was buried in S. *Peters*, *January* the 10th. The See was then vacant one year, five months.

LEO II.

LEO II.

LEO the ſecond, a *Sicilian*, Son of *Paul*, was, as appears by his Writings, a Perſon throughly learned in the *Latin* and *Greek* Languages. Having alſo good skill in Muſick, he compoſed Notes upon the *Pſalms*, and very much improved all Church-Muſick. He ordained likewiſe, that at the Celebration of the Maſs the *Pax* ſhould be given to the People. Moreover, he ſo vigorouſly maintained and aſſerted the ſixth Synod, of which we have ſpoken in the Life of *Agatho*, that he Excommunicated all thoſe, whom in the preſence of *Conſtantine* that Synod had condemned. He alſo repreſs'd the pride of the Biſhops of *Ravenna*, a matter before attempted by Pope *Agatho*, and ordained, that the Election of the Clergy of *Ravenna* ſhould be invalid, unleſs it were confirmed by the Authority of the *Roman* See; whereas before, they, preſuming upon the power of their *Exarchs*, managed all things arbitrarily, owning no ſubjection to any, but mating even the Popes themſelves. He likewiſe ſolemnly decreed, that no Perſon, promoted to the Dignity of an Archbiſhop, ſhould pay any thing for the uſe of the *Pall*, or upon any other ſcore, a Decree, which, I could wiſh, it were obſerved at this day, ſeeing how many Evils have ariſen through Bribery. While *Leo* was buſied in theſe matters, *Rhomoaldus* Duke of *Beneventum*, having raiſed a great Army, poſſeſs'd himſelf of *Tarunto, Brindiſi*, and all *Puglia*, and his Wife *Theodata*, a devout Lady, out of the ſpoils of the War, built a Church in honour to S. *Peter*, not far from *Beneventum*, and a Nunnery. *Rhomoaldus* dying was ſucceeded by his Son *Grimoaldus*, who, deceaſing without Iſſue male, left the Dukedom to his Brother *Giſulphus*.

Our *Leo*, who beſides his great Learning and Eloquence, was alſo an extraordinary Perſon for Devotion and Charity, and by his Doctrine and Example very much promoted Juſtice, Fortitude, Clemency, and Good Will among all Men, having been in the Chair only ten months, died, and *June* the 28th was accompanied to his burial in the Church of S. *Peter* with the tears of all Men, who deplored the loſs of him, as of a Common Father. After his Death, the See was vacant eleven months, twenty one days. The time of his Pontificate was ſhort, but the Reputation he gain'd therein ſo great, that one would think he had lived longer than he did, by the celebrated Name which he had deſervedly acquired in ſo little time.

BENEDICT II.

BENEDICT the Second, a *Roman*, his Fathers Name *John*, being from his Youth brought up to the Clergy, was ſo intent upon the ſtudy of Holy Writ, that he became an extraordinary Proficient in Divinity. He was likewiſe a Perſon of great Compaſſion, Charity, and good Will towards all, eſpecially the Poor; Virtues, by which he ſo won the Hearts of Men, that he was pitch'd upon as the only perſon, who, by general conſent, was fit to ſucceed in the Place of *Leo* deceaſed. The Emperor *Conſtantine*, out of the Veneration he had for this Mans Sanctity, ſent him a Decree, in which it was eſtabliſhed, that for the time to come He, whom the Clergy and People of *Rome* ſhould chuſe Pope, ſhould be forthwith acknowledged Chriſt's true Vicar, without expecting the Authority of the Emperor or his *Exarchs*, according to former uſage, when the confirmation of the Emperor or his Vicegerent in *Italy* was neceſſary to the Creation of a Pope. *Pertheris*, now King of the *Lombards*, in imitation of the Religion and Charity of *Benedict*, built a Monaſtery in honour to S. *Agatha* at *Pavia*; and his Wife *Rhodelinda*, prompted by the Example of her Husband, built the Church of S. *Mary ad Perticas* without the Walls of *Pavia*. This they did out of a Principle of Emulation, underſtanding that Pope *Benedict* had, with vaſt expence, repaired, beautified and enriched the Churches of S. *Peter* at *Rome*, that of S. *Laurence* in *Lucina*, that of S. *Valentine* in the *Via Flaminia*, and that of S. *Mary ad Martyres*. *Pertheris* had deſigned greater things of this Nature, but he was diverted by *Alalchis* Duke of *Trent*, who being puff'd up by a great Victory which he had gain'd over the *Bavarians*, turns his Arms againſt his King. But *Pertheris*, raiſing an Army, at the firſt Engagement routs him, beſieges *Trent* whither he had fled for Refuge, and though *Alalchis* had firſt made his eſcape thence by night, takes the City. However, *Pertheris* was a Prince of ſo great Clemency as to receive him again into favour upon his ſubmiſſion, and to make him Duke of *Breſcia*. Some tell us, that in *Benedict*'s time an extraordinary Star was ſeen, near the *Virgilia*, ſeveral Nights together in a clear Sky between *Chriſtmas* and *Epiphany*. I deny not, but that a Comet then appeared, and portended ſomething; but its Neighborhood to this Conſtellation is incoherent, unleſs we make that prodigious too. For the *Virgilia* riſe at the Vernal Equinox, when the Sun enters the Sign *Aries*, about the twenty fourth of *March*, and begin to ſet at the Autumnal Equinox. But that out of *Veſuvius*, a Mountain in *Campania*, ſo great a Fire did at this time burſt forth, that it burnt up all the places round about it, may ſeem leſs wonderful, conſidering that *Pliny*, the Natural Hiſtorian, leaving the Ships which he commanded under *Trajan*, and approaching too near it out of curioſity to find out the cauſes of its burning, loſt his life by that means. However, 'tis certain, that not long after theſe things, there followed Slaughters, Rapines, Fires, the Death of great Men, and particularly of Pope *Benedict*, who, as he was univerſally beloved in his life-time, ſo after his Death he was famous for his Piety, and the good Offices he had done to Mankind. He was in the Chair only ten months, twelve days, and was buried in S. *Peter's*, *May* the 15th. By his Death the See was vacant two months, fifteen days.

JOHN V.

JOHN the fifth, by Nation a *Syrian*, born at *Antioch*, his Father's Name *Cyriacus*, was created Pope about the time when the Emperor *Conſtantine* died, in the ſeventeenth year of his Reign, and left the Empire to his Son *Juſtinian* the Second. The *Saracens* now invaded *Lybia*, and *Africa*, and poſſeſs'd themſelves eaſily of all the places that lay towards the Sea. But *Juſtinian*, having in ſome meaſure ſetled the affairs of his Empire, and raiſed a competent Army, advancing againſt theſe *Saracens*, ſtruck ſuch a terror into *Abimelech* their Chief, that without engaging he ſued for a Peace, and was glad to reſtore all his Acquiſts in *Africa*. And a Peace, it is ſaid by ſome, was granted them for ten years, but upon condition, that they ſhould pay a thouſand pieces of Gold, and a Slave of their own Nation on Horſeback every day to the Emperor. At this time *John*, a perſon of great Piety and Goodneſs, being by general ſuffrage choſen Pope in the *Conſtantinian* Church, was conſecrated, in the ſame manner with *Leo* the ſecond, by the three Biſhops of *Oſtia*, *Porto* and *Veletri*; a Precedent, which ſo obtained, that it was afterwards conſtantly practiſed. His Pontificate was rendred remarkable by two extraordinary perſons, *Felix* the Uncle of *Flavianus*, and *John* Biſhop of *Bergamo*, men of ſuch eminent Learning and Sanctity, that they received from Princes themſelves marks of the higheſt reſpect and Veneration. Pope *John*, who both before and during his Pontificate was a ſickly man, having written a Book concerning the Dignity of the *Pall*, died in the firſt year after his coming to the Chair, and was buried in S. *Peter's* *Auguſt* the 2d. By his Death the See was vacant two months, nineteen days.

CONON I.

CONON, by Birth a *Thracian*, educated in *Sicily*, and thence entring into Orders at *Rome*, was of a Presbyter made Pope. For there hapning a Controverſie about the Election, the Citizens being for *Peter* an Arch-biſhop, and the Soldiers for one *Theodorus* a Prieſt; at length, after a long contention, both Parties agreed in the choice of *Conon*. And indeed he did every way deſerve ſo great a Dignity, being a man of great Learning and very good Life, pious and devout, of a comely Perſon and moſt Venerable, or, as ſome called it, Angelical Aſpect; of wonderful Simplicity and Sincerity, Modeſty and Juſtice, Reſolution and Prudence. For theſe excellent Endowments of his, all perſons concern'd with mighty acclamations of Applauſe, immediately confirm'd his Election; as did alſo *Theodorus* Exarch of *Ravenna*; who being deceaſed, was not long after ſucceeded in the *Exarchate* by *John Platina*, whom I believe to have given the name to the place of my Nativity called *Platina*, within the Territory of *Cremona*. For there being frequent Wars between the *Exarchs*, and the Kings of *Lombardy*, it is not improbable, conſidering that that place was ſcituated almoſt in the mid-way between *Ravenna* and *Pavia*, one of which was the Seat of the *Lombard* Kings, the other of the *Exarchs*: There might at ſome time be a Battel fought, or a Camp pitched there, from whence we know that Names are oftentimes given to places, as particularly in the ſame Country there is *Vitelliana*, a Town ſo called from *Vitellius*'s encamping there; and *Bebrignano*, not far from *Bebriacum*, famous for the defeat which *Otho* there received. I return to *Conon*, who preſently after his entrance upon the Pontificate falling ſick, *Paſchal* an Arch-deacon and manager of the Church-ſtock, endeavours to bribe *John* the *Exarch*, to procure him to be choſen Pope upon the Death of *Conon*. The *Exarch* took the Money, though he afterwards performed none of the promiſes he had made upon that account. And indeed ſuch a covetous and ambitious Wretch deſerved to be fruſtrated in his Deſigns, who made a Bribe of that Treaſure of the Church, which, according to *Conon*'s Will, ſhould have been laid out in relieving the Poor and repairing of Churches. A Crime to be abhorred in all Men, but moſt deteſtable in an Eccleſiaſtick. Such a breach of Truſt would not have been committed by *Hubert*, who was now a Biſhop in *Bretagne*, of great Note for his Learning and Piety; nor *Leodegarius* the Martyr, Biſhop of *Autun*, who was put to Death by *Theodoric* King of *France*, for his frequent and free Reproofs; nor by *Audoenus* Biſhop of *Roan*, a man who was ſecond to none for Knowledge and Sanctity. Theſe were men removed from Ambition and Avarice, fixing all their truſt in God and Religion, and gaining thereby Reputation among Men in this World, and Eternal Happineſs from God in the other. As for *Conon*, having been in the Chair only eleven months, and three days, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s, *September* the 21ſt. The See was then vacant two months, twenty three days.

SERGIVS I.

SERGIVS, a *Syrian*, born at *Antioch*, Son of *Tiberius*, coming to *Rome* in the time of Pope *Adeodatus*, was admitted into the number of the *Roman* Clergy. Afterwards, through his Induſtry and Improvements in divine Knowledg, advancing gradually he was ordained Pariſh-Prieſt of the Church of S. *Suſanna*. He thereupon beginning more and more to frequent the Cœmeteries, and there to perform ſacred Offices, by this means he gain'd ſo great a reputation, that upon the Deceaſe of *Conon*, he was choſen his Succeſſor, though indeed after a long debate. For the People being divided into two Parties, one ſtood up for *Theodorus*, and the other for *Paſchal* the Arch-deacon. *Theodorus* with his Party had forced his entrance into the inner part of the *Lateran* Palace; the outer, from the Oratory of S. *Sylveſter* to the Church of the houſe of *Julia*, was poſſeſſed by *Paſchal*. But the Contention and debate growing ſo high, that every one thought they would come to blows, each Party reſolving not to give place to the other unleſs by force compelled thereunto, the principal of the Citizens, Clergy and Soldiery, aſſembled together to conſult, what were beſt to be done to lay this Tumult. At length having duly conſidered the whole matter, and judging it not fit to commit the Popedom to either of thoſe, who, to ſatisfie their own ambition, had been the cauſe of ſo great diſorders, by divine direction they make choice of *Sergius* without the leaſt oppoſition; and taking him out of the midſt of the croud upon their ſhouldiers, they carry him firſt into the Oratory of S. *Cæſarius* the Martyr, then into the *Lateran* Palace, breaking open the doors by force, and driving out thoſe who were in it before. *Theodorus*, ſeeing how all agreed in the choice, ſalutes *Sergius* by the name of Pope, and kiſſes him. *Paſchal*, the other Competitor, did the ſame, though ſorely againſt his Will, and being only aw'd thereinto by the armed multitude. For ſecretly and under-hand he did, by Letters, Meſſengers and Promiſes, ſo ſtrongly ſolicite *John Exarch* of *Ravenna* to perform at length what he had promi'sd him for his Money, that the ſaid *John* comes forthwith to *Rome*, without ſending any advice before, that ſo he might have the advantage of coming upon them unprovided, and while they were off their guard. But when he underſtood, that *Sergius* was by univerſal conſent declared Pope, and urg'd the performance of what *Paſchal* had promis'd him, upon *Sergius*'s expreſſing a high diſlike and deteſtation of any ſuch bribery, he violently ſeizes and carries away ſeveral things of value from the Church of S. *Peter*. As for *Paſchal*, the occaſion of this miſchief, he being accuſed and convicted of Sorcery, was deprived of his Arch-Deaconry; and for Penance was confined to a Monaſtery, wherein, after his having continued obſtinate for five years, he died. In the mean time *Juſtinian*, being ſtrangely inconſtant towards God and Men, both attaques the *Saracens* and *Bulgarians* contrary to the Articles of Peace, he had concluded with them; from whom yet it is certain he received more damage, than he did to them ; and alſo returning to *Conſtantinople*, being generally hated by the Citizens for his not reſtraining the cruelty of the City-prefect, he held a Synod, wherein ſome Decrees paſs'd not agreeing with the Orthodox Faith ; which alſo *Sergius* his *Apocriſiary* or *Nuntio*, then reſiding at *Conſtantinople*, very fooliſhly confirmed by his Subſcription. But theſe Decrees being afterwards brought to *Rome* and there exploded by *Sergius*, who held that there were two Natures in Chriſt, and that the Bleſſed Virgin was the Mother of God, *Juſtinian* enraged thereat, ſends *Zacharias Protoſpatharius* (which we may render the Captain of the Guards) to *Rome*, to bring *Sergius* bound to him. Which when the Soldiers of the *Exarchate* of *Italy* underſtood, they immediately took up their Arms, and not only defended the Pope from violence, but were very near having ſlain *Zachary*, had he not ſaved himſelf by flying for refuge to the Pope, who kept him for ſome time in his Bed-chamber, and afterwards ſent him back privately to the Emperor. While theſe things were tranſacted at *Rome*, *Leontius*, encouraged by *Callinicus* the Patriarch, having excited the People of *Conſtantinople* to take up Arms, and broke open all the Priſons of the City, whereby multitudes of Priſoners were ſet at liberty, depoſes *Juſtinian*, and, cutting off his Noſe, baniſhes him to the *Cherſoneſe* of *Pontus*. *Abimelech* Admiral of the *Saracens* having intelligence hereof, and hoping to make his advantage of theſe Tumults, preſently invades *Africa* ; whither *Leontius* with all expedition ſends his Army to check their motion. But not long after a mutiny ariſing among the Soldiers, they create one *Tiberius* a Citizen of *Conſtantinople* Emperor ; who, immediately returning with the Army to *Conſtantinople*, ſeizes *Leontius*, and having retaliated upon him what we have ſaid he did to *Juſtinian*, throws him into Priſon, reſerving him there for future greater ignominy. Moreover, he baniſhed *Philip* the ſon of *Nicephorus a Patrician*, and one who had been aſſiſtant to him in getting the Empire, only becauſe he had told his Companions, how he dreamt that he ſaw an Eagle covering his head with her Wings ; which *Tiberius* fear'd might be a preſage of the Young man's coming to the Empire. While things went thus at *Conſtantinople*, *Pipin* Duke of *Auſtraſia* laid the foundation of gaining the Kingdom of *France*. For underſtanding that one *Bertarius*, a mean fellow, whom King *Theodoric* made uſe of as his chief Miniſter, was generally hated by all People, he marches with a vaſt Army into *France*, and being encountred in his paſſage by *Theodoric* and *Bertarius*, he engages in Battel with them and defeats them. *Bertarius* ſaved himſelf by flight ; but *Theodorick* retreating, by agreement upon a Truce conſtitutes the victorious *Pipin Mayre* of the Palace, and principal Adminiſtrator of his Kingdom. After this, *Pipin* returned to *Auſtraſia*, upon intelligence that the *Germans* and *Sueves* infeſted his People ; and having quell'd them, he ſets forward towards *France* again, upon the News that *Theoderic* being dead, the Kingdom had fallen to his Brother *Childebert*. Arriving there, and being very kindly received by the King, after he had put his Son into the place of *Mayre* of the Palace, he again returns enraged at the *Sueves* and *Germans*, who were now the ſecond time in Arms.

At this time *Sergius*, having ſince the baniſhment of *Juſtinian* enjoyed Peace and Tranquillity, repaired the Church of S. *Peter*, and reſtored to it its ancient Beauty. The Front of it he adorn'd with Moſaick work, made the Candleſticks and other Ornaments of it of Gold and Silver; found a part of our Saviours Croſs in a little braſs Coffer; and becauſe the Body of S. *Leo* had hitherto lain leſs regarded than his Merits required, he repoſited it in a more honourable and celebrated place. The Statues of the Apoſtles defaced with Age he renew'd, and either repaired or made wholly new the Ornaments of many Churches, which it would be tedious to enumerate. Moreover, he ordained that at the breaking of the body of our Lord ſhould be ſung, *O Lamb of God, that takeſt away the ſins of the World, have mercy upon us*; and that on the day of the Annunciation of the Bleſſed Virgin, and of S. *Simon*, there ſhould be yearly a Proceſſion with Litanies through the City, ſetting out at S. *Hadrian*. He made *Damianus* Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna*, and *Berſlauardus* Arch-biſhop of *Britain*. By his Learning and Authority he brought over to the Truth the Church of *Aquileia*, which before conſented not wholly to the fifth Synod. Some tell us, that at this time *Lambertus*, a Perſon of great Sanctity ſuffered Martyrdom at *Liege*, becauſe he was ſo hardy as to reprove *Pipin* for ſlighting his Wive's Bed, and keeping *Alpais* a Whore. The author of his Death is ſaid to have been her own Brother, who afterwards died of the louſie Diſeaſe. 'Tis written alſo, that, by the exemplary Sanctity of *Sergius*, the *Saxons* were now firſt wrought upon to embrace Chriſtianity. The good man having by theſe means gain'd a great reputation; and having been in the Chair thirteen years, eight months, twenty three days, he died, and was with the lamentation of all men, who wept as at the loſs of a common Father, with great Solemnity, buried in the Church of S. *Peter*, *September* the 8th. The See was then vacant one month, twenty days.

JOHN VI.

JOHN the ſixth, a *Grecian*, was elected Pope at the time, when *Theophylact* the *Exarch* in his paſſage to *Italy* arrived firſt at *Sicily*. Which being known to the *Italian* Soldiers, who, having of late time uſually ſided more with the Popes than the Emperors, were afraid that his coming might betoken ſome ill, they reſolved to kill him at his entrance into *Rome*. But by the Authority of Pope *John*, who made himſelf Umpire between them, *Theophylact* was protected, and all things being made up and accommodated, he goes for *Ravenna*. In the mean time, *Giſulphus* Duke of *Beneventum*, taking heart upon this diſagreement of the *Exarch* and Soldiers, invades *Terra di Lavoro*, poſſeſſes himſelf of *Sora* and *Arpino*, burns Villages, makes the Villagers his Priſoners, and drives away their Cattel. The Pope being deeply ſenſible of this Calamity, ſends his Ambaſſadors to *Giſulphus*, to admoniſh him to quit thoſe places which he had no Right to, and to return into *Abruzzo*; which if he refus'd to do, he ſhould ſoon feel the Vengeance of Almighty God upon him. *Giſulphus*, being terrified hereby, reſtores the Towns he had taken, and returns to

Beneventum. Of thoſe which were carried away captive, Pope *John* redeemed all he could find out, as far as the Treaſure of the Church would reach for their Ranſom.

At this time *Juſtinian*, who, as we have ſaid, had been baniſh'd by *Leontius* to the *Cherſoneſe* of *Pontus*, making his eſcape thence comes to *Cacanus* King of the *Avares*, who at firſt treated him with the greateſt reſpect and kindneſs, and promiſed him his Daughter in marriage; but afterwards being corrupted with bribes by *Tiberius*, he deſign'd to betray his Gueſt and Son-in-law into his hands. *Juſtinian*, having notice hereof, flees to *Trebellius* Prince of the *Bulgarians*, by whoſe aid he was in a little time after reſtored to the Empire. While theſe things were tranſacted in *Europe*, the *Saracens* being poſſeſſed of *Lybia* and *Africa*, ſet ſail from *Septa*, and paſſing over into *Spain*, made themſelves Maſters of it all, except that part inhabited by the *Aſturians* and *Biſcains*; who as they had been the laſt People of *Spain*, who were ſubdued to the *Roman* Empire, and the laſt who revolted from it, and the only People who ſhook off the Yoke of the *Viſigoths*; ſo now, having received the Chriſtian Faith, they were the men, who continued ſtedfaſtly with the greateſt reſolution to defend themſelves by Arms againſt the perfidious *Saracens*. So then, *Africa*, which being recovered by *Beliſarius* General to *Juſtinian* the firſt, had been ſubject to the *Roman* Empire an hundred and ſeventy years, and alſo *Granada* in *Hiſpania Bætica*, being at this time ſeiz'd by the *Saracens*, have been obedient to their Laws and Cuſtoms now this ſeven hundred and forty years, to the great reproach of Chriſtianity; the *Spaniards*, who are wont to boaſt of their Wit and Valour, not being able to drive them out of *Europe*. Some tell us, that *Bede*, who lived in theſe times, by Letters written to ſeveral Chriſtian Princes, did very much bewail this Calamity, that thereby he might excite them to enter into a War againſt theſe Enemies of God and Men. This *Bede* was not only extraordinarily well skill'd in the *Greek* and *Latin* Tongues, but alſo for his eminent Piety and Modeſty, gain'd the Sirname of *Venerable*. He wrote many things upon the *Acts of the Apoſtles*, and upon S. *Luke*; he publiſhed a Book of Chronology, and ſeveral Homilies, which are much uſed by the *Gallican* Clergy. Moreover, of *Strabo* and *Haymo*, two very Learned men, ſaid to be *Bede*'s Brethren, one compoſed divers elegant Homilies, and the other commented upon *Geneſis*. As for Pope *John*, having repaired the Church of S. *Andrew* in the *Vatican*, and the roof of that of S. *Mark*, and adorn'd with Pillars on each hand the Altar of S. *Peter*'s, in the third year and third month of his Pontificate he died, as ſome think, a Martyr; but by whom he ſuffered Martyrdom, does not ſufficiently appear. 'Tis ſaid, he was buried in the Cœmetery of S. *Sebaſtian* in the *Via Appia*. By his Death the See was vacant one month, nineteen days.

Bede.

JOHN VII.

JOHN the Seventh, a *Grecian*, Son of *Plato*, entred upon the Pontificate at the time when *Juſtinian* being return'd to *Conſtantinople*, cauſed *Tiberius* and *Leontius*, by whom he had been depoſed, to be publickly put to Death.

Many of his Enemies he cut off by ſundry kinds of Death, and many he impriſoned; ſome one or other of which he would every day order to be kill'd, when the wiping of his Noſe put him in mind of the injury that had been done him. Moreover, having cauſed the Eyes of *Callinicus* the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople* to be put out; he baniſh'd him to *Rome*; and made *Cyrus*, an Abbat, who had maintain'd him in *Pontus*, Patriarch in his ſtead. Being acted by the ſame fooliſh humour, as he had been before his loſs of the Empire in the time of Pope *Sergius*, he ſends to *Rome* two Metropolitans, to perſuade Pope *John* to hold a Synod, wherein they of the *Weſtern* Church might confirm the truth of what thoſe of the *Eaſt* believed concerning the Conſubſtantiality of the Son with the Father; ſending to him the Articles to which he would have him ſubſcribe. The Pope ſends the Men back again to the Emperor without doing any thing in the matter; but yet he did not by his Cenſures and Interdicts correct the erroneous Opinions concerning God, as it was fit he ſhould, and as it would have become a ſteady and reſolute Pope to have done. Some write, though without good authority, that *Arithpertus*, King of the *Lombards*, from a religious Principle, gave the *Cottian Alpes*, and all the Tract that reaches from *Piedemont* to the Coaſt of *Genoa*, to the Church of *Rome*. Others ſay, that this Donation was only confirmed by *Arithpertus*. But ſince there is no certainty concerning the Donation it ſelf, and the Lawyers call it the Chaff, becauſe it yields no Corn, and it appears in no reſpect to have been the Gift of *Conſtantine*, how can there be any evidence of its Confirmation? I return to Pope *John*, a Perſon who ſpake and lived very well, and who built an Oratory in the Church of S. *Peter*, in honour to the Bleſſed Virgin; upon the Walls of which on each hand were wrought in Moſaick Work the Effigies of ſeveral of the holy Fathers. Moreover he repaired the Church of S. *Eugenia*, which had long before been decayed through Age. He adorn'd alſo the Cœmeteries of the Martyrs *Marcellinus* and *Marcus*, and Pope *Damaſus*. Finally, he beautified divers other Churches with the Pictures and Statues of the Saints, wherein the Painters and Statuaries had ſo well imitated the Gravity and Majeſty of his own aſpect, that whoſoever looked upon them thought they ſaw the Pope himſelf. Having been in the Chair two years, ſeven months, ſeventeen days, he died and was buried *October* the 18th. in the Church of S. *Peter*, before the Altar of the Bleſſed Virgin which himſelf had built. The See was then vacant three months.

SISINNIVS.

SISINNIVS, or (as others call him) **Sozimus**, a **Syrian**, his Fathers name *John*, lived in the Pontificate no more than twenty days; in which time, 'tis ſaid, the Body of S. **Benedict** was, by ſtealth, conveyed away from Mount *Caſſino*, by reaſon of the ſolitude of the place, and carried into *France*. Now *Siſinnius*, though he were ſo afflicted with the Gout both in his Hands and Feet, that he could neither walk nor feed himſelf, yet he took ſuch care both of the City and Church of *Rome*, as to leave nothing undone which became a good Pope. He had already prepared all materials for the raiſing the decayed Walls of the City, and the repairing and beautifying of the old ruined Churches; but he died ſuddenly, and was buried iu S. *Peter's*, *February* the 6th. The See was then vacant one month, eighteen days.

CONSTANTINE I.

CONSTANTINE, another *Syrian*, his Father's Name likewiſe *John*, was created Pope at the time when there happen'd to be a Famine at *Rome* which laſted three years; in which exigence he was ſo charitable to all, but eſpecially the poorer ſort, that Men thought him to have been ſent down from Heaven for their relief. In the mean time, *Juſtinian*, out of the hatred he bore to the Name of *Pontus*, ſends **Mauritius** one of the *Patrician* Order, and *Helias* one of his Guards, with a Fleet to the *Cherſoneſe*, where he had been in Exile, with Commiſſion to put all above the age of fourteen to the Sword; which, to glut the Emperors Rage, they accordingly put in execution. And that we may not think, that Cruelty was his only Vice, he became guilty of ſo great Ingratitude, as, in an hoſtile manner, to ſurprize King *Trebellius*, by the Aid of whoſe Forces he had been reſtored to the Empire, at a time when he was engaged in a War with the *Thracians*: But *Trebellius* not only bore the Choque, but alſo forced him to retreat with Loſs. There was no alteration from his former courſe of Life wrought in him by the Calamities he had underwent, in any thing ſave in this, that he now venerated and defended the Apoſtolick See, contrary to what he had formerly uſed to do. For when *Felix*, having been conſecrated Arch-Biſhop of *Revenna* by the Pope, was required, according to cuſtom, to ſend in writing his acknowledgment of the Papal Authority, and Money, to *Rome*, which he ſtifly refuſed to do; *Juſtinian*, upon knowledge of the matter, preſently ſends order to *Theodorus*, a *Patrician*, his Admiral, with the firſt opportunity to leave *Sicily* and go againſt the *Revennates*. He obeying the Emperors Order, and having in Battel gain'd a Victory over them, exerciſes the greateſt cruelty towards them, and ſends *Felix* bound in Chains to *Conſtantinople*; whom *Juſtinian* afterwards baniſh'd into *Pontus*, having firſt deprived him of his Sight, after this manner; He cauſed him to fix his Eyes long upon a red-hot Concave-veſſel of Braſs, out of which there iſſued a fiery Pyramid, which eaſily overcame his Eyes and blinded him. Yet *Conſtantine* did by no means approve of this Cruelty, being more deſirous of his Reformation, than his Puniſhment.

While the Pope and Emperor were thus employed, *Aiſprandus*, endeavouring with the aid of the *Bavarians* to recover the Kingdom of his Anceſtors, comes into *Italy*, and engaging in a pitch'd Battel with *Arithpertus*, vanquiſhes him, and gains the Kingdom of the *Lombards*; *Arithpertus* himſelf by a too fearful and haſty flight being drown'd in a ſwift River. But *Aiſprandus*, not long after dying, did with general approbation leave his Son *Luithprandus* Succeſſor to his Kingdom.

Juſtinian being now very deſirous to ſee Pope *Conſtantine*, having ſent Ships to convey him ſafely, makes it his requeſt that he would come to him. *Conſtantine* yielding thereunto, and approaching now near to *Conſtantinople*, *Tiberius*, *Juſtinian*'s Son with a Princely Retinue, and *Cyrus* the Patriarch with all the Clergy, in honour to him go out eight miles to meet him; and being dreſs'd in his *Pontificalibus*, they conduct him with ſolemn Pomp into the City, and lead him into the Palace. Going from thence to *Nicomedia*, whither alſo the Emperor was to come from *Nice*, he was received there after the ſame manner as at *Conſtantinople*. *Juſtinian* entring the City ſoon after, not only embraced the Pope, but alſo kiſs'd his Feet in ſign of Honour. Having on the days following diſcourſed of ſeveral Affairs between themſelves, and *Juſtinian* having confirmed the Pope's Decrees, *Conſtantine* at his taking leave, adviſes him not to proceed too ſeverely againſt *Philippicus*, then an Exile in *Pontus*, apprehending ſome miſchief might ariſe thereupon, becauſe he underſtood that *Philippicus* was a Perſon of great Fortitude and Prudence. But *Juſtinian* not following the Popes good Counſel, ſends a Fleet to *Pontus* with deſign to diſpatch *Philippicus*; who upon a Revolt of the Soldiers to him, with the ſame Fleet makes towards *Conſtantinople*, and at twelve miles diſtance from the City engaging with *Juſtinian* and *Tiberius*, got the Victory and ſlew them, and with univerſal Acclamation was declared Emperor. This *Philippicus* afterwards baniſhing *Cyrus* the *Patriarch* into *Pontus*, for his conſenting in belief with the Pope, puts one *John* a Monk and an Arch-Heretick into his place; whoſe Opinions he forthwith ſent in writing to *Rome*, requiring all to ſubſcribe their Aſſent to them. But *Conſtantine* holding a Synod, not only condemned the Opinions of *Philippicus* and *John* the Monk, but alſo appointed the Images of thoſe Holy Fathers, who had been preſent at the Councils univerſally approved of, to be painted in the Portico of *St. Peters*, upon intelligence that in a way of Contempt they had been rubb'd off from the Walls of *S. Sophia*, by *Philippicus* his Order. Moreover, the ſame Pope ordained, That the name of no Heretical Emperor ſhould be inſerted in any Publick or Private Writings, or impreſs'd upon Braſs or Silver or Lead. But *Anaſtaſius*, ſirnamed *Arthemius*, by force of Arms depoſes *Philippicus*, in the firſt

Philippicus.

Anaſtaſius.

year and ſixth month of his Empire, and ſeizing him, puts out his Eyes. This *Anaſtaſius* ſends Letters to Pope *Conſtantine*, in which he promiſes to be a zealous Defender of the Catholick Faith, and the ſixth Synod. But he alſo, within three years, being ſlighted by the Soldiers, was depoſed, and compelled by *Theodoſius*, who ſucceeded him, to take Holy Orders, that ſo he might never afterwards pretend or aſpire to the Empire. *Theodoſius*, a Catholick Emperor, forthwith gave Order for the reſtoring of the Images of the Holy Fathers, which, as we have ſaid, had been deſtroyed by *Philippicus*. And *Felix*, who had been baniſhed into *Pontus*, quitting his former obſtinacy, returned home, and was reſtored to his See, of which he had been deprived. At this time alſo it was declared, that the Biſhop of *Pavia* was ſubject only to the See of *Rome*, and not to the Arch-Biſhop of *Milain*; concerning which matter there had been a great and long Controverſie between the two Prelates. Some write, that two Kings of the *Saxons*, under the obligations of a Religious Vow, came now to *Rome*, and that they there died, as I think, of the Peſtilence. Not long after them died *Conſtantine*, having been in the Chair ſeven years, twenty days, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s, *February* the 11th. The See was then vacant one month, eleven days.

Theodoſius.

GREGORY II.

GREGORY the Second, a *Roman*, Son of *Marcellus*, entring into Holy Orders in the time of *Sergius*, was, upon the Reputation of his great Fidelity and Integrity, made the Pope's Almoner and Library-keeper. Being afterwards ordained Deacon, he attended Pope *Conſtantine* to *Conſtantinople*, where, there being a warm Debate concerning ſome Articles of Religion, he diſputed ſo ſmartly, that all Men admired his Learning, Wit, and Eloquence, by which he eaſily confuted thoſe who held any erroneous Opinions. Soon after his being created Pope, he re-built the Walls of the City, which in ſeveral places were fallen down through age; and repaired the decayed Churches of S. *Peter*, and S. *Laurence* without the Walls, laying in the Water anew, by mending the battered and disjoyned Pipes, which formerly had conveyed it into them. He repaired alſo, and enriched with Preſents of Gold and Silver, divers other Churches, which it would be too tedious to enumerate. Yet I will not paſs by in Silence his reviving a Monaſtery in the *Via Oſtienſis* not far from S. *Pauls*, whoſe Ruines are yet to be ſeen, and alſo that of S. *Andrew*, ſetling Monks therein, who were to be continually employed in the exerciſe of Devotion. Moreover, it was the peculiar Commendation of this Pope, that, through his means, the *Germans* were converted to Chriſtianity; he having ſent among them *Boniface* a Monk, to bring them out of darkneſs, by ſetting up the light of the Truth. Of theſe *Germans* a great number came to *Rome*, and were baptized with the Popes own Hands. He alſo by his Authority compelled *Luithprandus*, who at firſt refuſed it, to confirm the Donation of *Arithpertus*, of which we have ſpoken before; which *Luithprandus* did at the beginning of his Reign both poſſeſs himſelf of a great part of *Boiaria*, and alſo beſiege and take *Ravenna*. In the time of this Pope, there was ſuch an Inundation of the River *Tiber*, which flowed into the City through the *Porta del popolo*, that in the *Via Lata* the Water was almoſt a Mans height, and from *Ponte molle* to the ſteps of *St. Peter's* Men rowed about in large Boats. This Inundation continued ſeven days, to the great Loſs and Damage of the Citizens, it having born down Houſes, and rooted up Trees, Corn, Plants and Herbs. The Moon alſo, being now in an Eclipſe, appeared of a bloody colour till Midnight: and there was ſeen a Comet, with its Tail extending towards the North, betokening ſome future Calamity. Whereupon *Gregory*, that he might avert the diſpleaſure of Almighty God from the Chriſtians, ordered frequent Litanies in Proceſſion through the whole City. While the Pope was thus employed at *Rome*, there came advice, that the *Lombards*, under the Duke of *Beneventum*, had ſurpriz'd the Fort of *Cuma*; at which *Gregory* being very much diſturbed, ſends to admoniſh them to reſtore this Fort, which, contrary to the Articles of Peace, they had unjuſtly poſſeſs'd themſelves of; or otherwiſe, they would ſoon feel the Indignation of Almighty God upon them. But after ſeveral Meſſages of the like Nature they not quitting it, he encourages the *Neapolitans*, upon the promiſe of a ſum of Money, and the ſending ſome *Roman* Soldiers for their aſſiſtance, to recover it by Force. *Theodunus* the Arch-Deacon having the management of this Affair, the *Neapolitans* ſet briskly to the Work, and re-take the Fort, killing three hundred of thoſe who were in Gariſon therein, and taking five hundred Priſoners, whom they carried to *Naples*, where the Soldiers forthwith received the Reward which had been promiſed them. *Gregory*, now enjoying Peace, applyed himſelf to Church-work. For he repaired the Church of S. *Croſs* in *Jeruſalem*, which had long lain neglected, and new-Arch'd and Roof'd the Porches on every ſide of it; he built from the Foundations, the Oratory of S. *Suſanna* on Mount *Cælius*; and, after the Death of his Mother, Dedicated his Father's Houſe to the Honor of St. *Agatha*, building it into a Monaſtery, which he plentifully endowed for the maintenance of the Monks therein.

The *Saracens* now, encouraged by the Diſcord they obſerved among the Chriſtians, ſetting ſail from *Septa* in *Afrique*, and arriving in *Spain*, ravage all the Country, except *Granada*, which was inhabited by thoſe of their own Nation already, and at length with their Wives and Children paſs as far as *Aquitain*, deſigning to poſſeſs themſelves of that Province alſo. *Charles Martell* the Son of *Pipin* was at this time famous throughout the World. This *Pipin*, after the death of *Grimoald*, had two other Sons left, *Caroloman* and *Charles Martell*; which *Charles*, this Brother alſo dying, gain'd afterwards to himſelf the Kingdom of *France*, though not without great oppoſition, eſpecially of *Endo* Duke of *Aquitain* and *Chilperic*, whom ſome of the *French*, upon the Death of *Theodoric*, had ſet up to be their King. But *Martell* having paſſed the River *Seine*, and advanced to *Orleans*, at the firſt Attaque puts them to flight, and becomes ſole Poſſeſſor of the Kingdom of *France*. After this he paſſed the *Rhine*, and conquered the *Saxons*, *Alemans*, *Sueves* and *Boi*-

Charles Martell

arians. But having Intelligence, that the *Saracens* had been invited by *Eudo* into *France*, by great Marches he comes forth againſt them, and, obliging them to Fight, gains a mighty Victory not far from *Tours*. Hiſtorians write, that in this Battel there were ſlain of the *Saracens* three hundred and ſixty thouſand, but of the *French* only one thouſand one hundred and fifty, and, 'tis ſaid, that *Eudo* hereupon came over to *Martel*'s ſide. The *Saracens* being by this means, through *Martel*'s Valour, diverted from any farther attempts upon the *Spaniards* and *French*, turn all the Rage and Indignation, which, upon ſo great an Overthrow, had been raiſed in them, upon the *Conſtantinopolitans*, whoſe City they beſieged by Sea and Land the ſpace of three years. But ſuffering all the extremities of War, being pinched with Hunger and Cold, and a Peſtilence moreover raging among them, they raiſed the Siege, and return'd home. 'Tis ſaid, that of this Plague there died in *Conſtantinople* three hundred thouſand. As for the Affairs of *Italy*, the *Lombards* now, under the Conduct of ***Luithprandus***, after a long Siege took and ſack'd *Ravenna*, carrying away from thence to *Pavia* all things of conſiderable value, and amongſt the reſt, as I believe, the famous Statue on Horſeback in Braſs. Thus, according to the uſual Viciſſitude of Human Affairs, it ſo fell out, that what *Theodoric* and other Kings of the *Goths*, and after them the *Exarchs*, had taken from *Rome* and carried to *Ravenna*, was by others afterwards ſcattered about and diſperſed into ſeveral places. In the mean time, there was at *Rome* a Plot laid by ſome ſeditious People againſt the Pope; the Heads of the Conſpiracy being *Baſilius*, *Jordanus* a Notary, *John* a Sub-deacon ſirnamed *Lurion*, and *Marinus* an Officer of the Guards, who at this time was Governor of *Rome* under the Emperor. But upon the Emperor's recalling *Marinus*, the buſineſs was deferred to another time. The Conſpirators tampered alſo with *Paul* the *Exarch*, being willing in a matter of ſo great importance to have him to head them. The whole Deſign being at length diſcovered by the People of *Rome*, they appear in Arms, kill *John Lurion*, and diſſipate the other Conſpirators. *Baſilius* was confined to a Monaſtery, where he died. The forementioned *Paul* being highly enraged at the Pope for prohibiting his levying new Taxes, did, by the Emperor's Order, ſeek all ways, both ſecret and open, of taking away the good Man's Life; but the *Romans* and *Lombards* taking up Arms defended him. The Emperor *Leo* hereupon publiſhes an Edict, commanding all thoſe who were Subjects of the *Roman* Empire to raſe out and take away all the Pictures and Images of Saints, Martyrs and Angels out of their Churches; with deſign, as he profeſſed, thereby to prevent Idolatry; and declaring, that whoſoever refuſed ſo to do ſhould be accounted a publick Enemy. But *Gregory* not only not obeyed this Order, but alſo encouraged all Catholicks to ſtand up ſtoutly againſt it. Whereupon the People of *Italy* were ſo animated, that they were near chuſing another Emperor, had not *Gregory* by his Authority interpoſed to prevent it. Notwithſtanding which, there aroſe ſuch a Diſſention at *Ravenna*, ſome pleading for Obedience to the Emperor, others to the Pope, that *Paul* the *Exarch*, together with his Son, was ſlain in the Tumult. To ſucceed in whoſe place the Emperor ſends *Eutychius* an Eunuch, who by Gifts and Promiſes was to endeavour to break the Friendſhip and Alliance between the *Lombards* and the Pope.

But that attempt, having been often made in vain, was dropp'd for a time; and the Pope, being freed of this trouble, began to viſit the Hoſpitals and Churches, and to repair thoſe of them, which through age or neglect had fallen to decay. Moreover, he made a Peace between the King of the *Lombards* and the Dukes of *Spoleto* and *Beneventum*, which that King had intended to cruſh; but having marched in a peaceable manner as far as *Rome*, to confer with the Pope about the matter, *Gregory*, by his Chriſtian Counſel ſo mollified his Mind, that, laying aſide all thoughts of War, he offered up his Sword, and other Arms, in the Church of S. *Peter*. The Emperor *Leo*, now in another wild Humor, commanded all the Images, either of Wood, Braſs or Marble, to be brought to him, which he forthwith cauſed to be burnt; and ſeiz'd upon and put to Death thoſe who refuſed to bring them. *Germanus* the Patriarch, who vigorouſly oppoſed it, he baniſhed, and put into his place *Anaſtaſius* an Heretick; whom *Gregory* afterwards in a Synod deprived, and interdicted the exerciſe of Sacred Offices, if he refuſed to return to the Catholick Faith. Furthermore, as became a pious Prelate, he oftentimes by Letters admoniſhed the Emperor to quit the erroneous Opinions, into which ſome ill Men had ſeduced him, and at length to embrace the Truth, and to ceaſe the deſtroying of the Images of the Saints, by whoſe Example and Memory Men might be excited to the imitation of their Virtues. Some write, that in this Pope's time *Boniface* came out of *Britain* to *Rome*, and for his Sanctity was of a Monk made a Biſhop, and ſent into *Germany*, that by his Preaching and Example he might confirm that People in the Faith; which he performed ſo well, that he was deſervedly made Biſhop of *Mentz*; but paſſing thence into *Africa*, he was for his preaching the Word of God put to death by the Enemies of Chriſtianity. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that S. *Ægidius*, a *Grecian*, was now famous for the Holy Life he led, and the Miracles he wrought; and that *Petronax*, a Citizen of *Breſcia*, did by Vow repair at his own Charge the Monaſtery of S. *Benedict*, which was almoſt quite left deſolate. As for *Gregory*, who by his good Example excited all Men to the Practice of Piety and Virtue, having been in the Chair fixteen years, nine months, eleven days, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s, *February* the 11th. By his Death the See was vacant thirty five days. He is ſaid to have Conſecrated, during his Pontificate, one hundred forty eight Biſhops.

GREGORY III.

GREGORY the third, a *Syrian*, his Fathers name *John*, was unanimouſly elected Pope in the year ſeven hundred fifty nine. He was a Perſon of ſingular Learning, very well skill'd in the Greek and Latin Tongues and of ſuch an Inſight into the Senſe of Holy Writ, that no Man was more ready at the expounding of the abſtruſe and difficult places in it. Nor did he work upon the People merely by his Preaching and Eloquence, but in all reſpects he gave them ſuch a prevailing Example, that it is difficult to determine, whether he ſpake or lived better. He was ſo valiant a Defender of the Catholick Faith, that he thereby contracted the diſpleaſure and hatred of the greateſt Princes; but by no Force, or Power, or Menace was removed one ſtep from his Reſolution. Finally, his Good Will towards all Men was ſuch, that he cheriſhed and relieved the Poor, redeemed Captives, releas'd inſolvent Debtors, and aſſerted the Cauſe of Widows and Orphans againſt potent Oppreſſors, in ſuch a manner, that he deſerved the Name of a common Father and Paſtor. Soon after his entrance upon the Pontificate, with the conſent of the Clergy of *Rome*, he Excommunicated and Depoſed the Emperor *Leo* for his having raſed the Pictures of the Saints out of the Churches, and deſtroyed their Images; and alſo, for not being Orthodox in Opinion concerning the Conſubſtantiality of the Son with the Father. In the mean time *Luithprandus* King of the *Lombards*, from an ambitious deſire of enlarging his Dominions, having poſſeſs'd himſelf of all the Towns round about, lays Siege to *Rome* itſelf; whereupon *Gregory* forthwith diſpatches Meſſengers by Sea, it not being ſafe for them to paſs by Land, to *Charles* Prince of the *French*, to pray him, that he would ſpeedily aid the diſtreſſed City and Church of *Rome*. Indeed formerly, the Popes, when they were in any great danger from abroad, had been wont to ſeek for ſuccor from the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*; but *Gregory* now declined it, both for the Cauſes we have juſt before mentioned, and alſo eſpecially becauſe *Leo* was now hard put to it to defend *Conſtantinople* itſelf againſt the *Saracens*, and therefore little able to protect others. By which means it came to paſs, that the *Conſtantinopolitan* Emperors being for the time to come unapplied to, the protection of the Church was from henceforward put into other hands. Upon *Gregorie*'s Requeſt, *Charles*, undertaking the Church's Patronage, deſires *Luithprandus*, as his Friend, and particularly upon the account of his Son *Pipin* his near Allie, to quit his Enterprize, and not give the Pope any diſturbance; whereupon *Luithprandus* raiſes the Siege. The Affairs of *Italy* being thus compoſed, *Charles* turns his Army with ſucceſs againſt the *Burgundians*; cruſhes the Idolatrous *Friſon*'s; takes *Lions*, *Arles*, and *Marſeilles* from the *Viſigoths*, who thereupon invite to their aid *Athimus* the King of the *Saracens*. Who, paſſing the *Rhone*, takes *Avignon* by Storm, intending to make uſe of the convenience of that place for a Citadel. But *Charles*, upon Intelligence hereof, haſtens thither with his Army, and retakes *Avignon*, putting to the Sword all the *Saracens* who were in Garriſon in it. From thence he marched to *Narbon*, whither he underſtood that *Athimus* had fled. But having advice that *Amoreus*, another *Saracen* King of, *Spain* was coming with a great Army to the aid of *Athimus*, he quitted the Siege of *Narbonne*, and marched to the Valley of *Corbiere*, not far off, wherein there was a fair Plain very commodious to joyn Battel in. *Amoreus*, thinking that *Charles* having been routed had fled thither, enters the Valley, and prepares to engage; which *Charles* did not decline, though the number of the Adverſaries Army was incredibly great. The Diſpute having continued for ſome time very warm, and *Amoreus* himſelf having been ſlain at the beginning of the Engagement, at length the *Saracens* were forced to betake themſelves to flight, and a great part of them were kill'd in the Fens and Marſhes thereabouts. *Athimus*, as good luck would have it, making his eſcape by Sea towards the farther part of *Spain*, in Rage and Deſpair, laid waſte by Fire and Sword all the Iſlands which he arrived at in his paſſage. Much about this time, the Body of *St. Auguſtine*, which, two hundred and fifty years before, when the *Vandals* waſted *Africa*, had been carried away from *Hippo* into *Sardinia*, was by the care of *Luithprandus* tranſlated thence to *Pavia*, and repoſited in a very Honourable place of Interment. The *Saracens* being now pretty well tamed, kept themſelves within the *Pyrenean* Hills; upon which, all the *Viſigoths*, who poſſeſſed the hither parts of *Spain* and part of *France*, being not able to defend themſelves, were ſubdued by *Charles*; and ſo that People, who had domineer'd for almoſt three hundred years, were utterly extinguiſhed, except ſome few who were ſaved by the People of *Barcelona*. Some write, that *Charles* was in this War aſſiſted by *Luithprandus* with Men, who, after the Victory, returned home laden with Booty. In the mean while, Pope *Gregory*, not neglecting to improve the time of Peace he now enjoyed, applyed himſelf to Church-work. The Altar of *St. Peter*'s he made more ſtately, by erecting a Row of ſix Pillars of Onyx on each hand of it, whereas many of the ſame Magnitude and Figure had formerly ſtood, but were now decayed through Age. Upon theſe Pillars were Architraves gilt with Silver; on which he ſet up the Images of our Saviour and the Apoſtles, at equal diſtances. He built alſo an Oratory in the ſame Church, in which he repoſited ſome of the Reliques of almoſt all the Saints, and ordered Maſs to be therein daily performed, in the Canon of which he added theſe words, which were Engraven upon the Marble round about the Oratory, *Quorum Solennitas in conſpectu tuæ Majeſtatis celebratur, Domine Deus noſter, toto in Orbe terrarum, &c.* i. e. *Whoſe Anniverſaries are celebrated in the ſight of thy Majeſty, O Lord our* God, *throughout all the World*, &c. which Clauſe is not in the general Canon now uſed. Moreover, he gave to this Church ſeveral Veſſels of Silver; and cauſed to be made at his own Charge the Image of the Bleſſed Virgin with our Saviour in her Arms, of Gold, which he placed in the Church of S. *Mary ad Præſepe*. He alſo repaired the roof of the Church of S. *Chryſogonus*, appointing Monks for the daily performance of Divine Service therein, and ſetling an Eſtate for their maintenance. Several Monaſteries he either repaired, or built from the ground, to the Recluſes whereof he preſcribed Rules of ſtrict and Holy living. He re-built alſo the ruined Walls of the City of *Rome*, and, in like manner, thoſe of the almoſt deſolate *Civita Vecchia*. Furthermore, he ordained the Celebration of Maſs in the Church of *St. Peter* almoſt without Intermiſſion, both by the Prieſts in Weekly Attendance, and by the Monks; upon which account we may obſerve the Cells of the Monks and the Houſes of the Secular Prieſts to be in ſeveral places contiguous, each of them ſtriving to out-do the other in diligence at their Devotion. Our *Gregory*, having well diſcharged his Duty towards God and Men, died in the tenth year, eighth month, and twenty fourth day of his Pontificate, and was with general lamentation buried in *S. Peter's*, *November* the 28th. The See was then vacant only eight days.

ZACHARIAS I.

ZACHARIAS a *Grecian*, the Son of *Polychronius*, is reckoned in the number of the beſt Popes. For he was a Perſon of a very mild Diſpoſition, and wonderfully ſweet Converſation; every way deſerving; a Lover of the Clergy, and People of *Rome*; ſlow to Anger, but very forward to exerciſe Mercy and Clemency; rendring to no Man evil for evil, but in imitation of our Saviour overcoming evil with good, and that to ſuch a degree, that after his arriving to the Papal Dignity he preferred and enriched thoſe who had envied and hated him. At the beginning of his Pontificate finding *Italy* enflamed in War, in order to procure a Peace, he forthwith ſends Legates to *Luithprandus* King of the *Lombards*, who now made War upon *Tranſamundus* Duke of *Spoleto*. But theſe Legates not effecting the Deſign, he himſelf goes in Perſon, accompanied with the *Roman* Clergy, into *Sabina*; and 'tis ſaid, that in ſign of Honor the King met him eight miles from *Narni*, and alighting off his Horſe, accompanied him on foot into the City. The day following, while they were at Maſs, the Pope made publickly an Elegant Oration, wherein he ſet forth the Duty of a Chriſtian King both in the time of Peace and War; and 'tis reported that the King was ſo wrought upon by it, that he preſently put the ſole Power of accommodating Matters into the Pope's hands. The King had already depoſed *Tranſamund*, and inveſted *Agrandus*, his Nephew, in the Dukedom. Yet at the Pope's Interceſſion, *Tranſamund* was received into favour; but he quitting all Pretenſions to the Dukedom, entred into Holy Orders. All the Towns which had been taken in *Sabina* were reſtored; as alſo *Narni* and *Ancona*, and whatever places the *Lombards* had for thirty years paſt made themſelves Maſters of in *Tuſcany*. Moreover, all who had been made Priſoners during the War, were ſet at liberty. *Luithprandus* having been treated by the Pope with all imaginable expreſſions of Indearment and Reſpect, marched thence peaceably with his Army, and not long after died, in the thirty ſecond year of his Reign. He was a perſon who deſerved that Kingdom both for his extraordinary Wiſdom and Prudence, and alſo for his Valour and warlike Temper, in which no Man excell'd him; ſo eminent alſo for Juſtice and Clemency, that it is hard to judge, whether of theſe two Virtues were more conſpicuous in him. His Nephew, *Aldeprandus*, ſucceeded him in the Kingdom, which having held only ſix Months he alſo died; and Duke *Rachis*, a Prince whoſe Piety and Integrity deſerve the higheſt Praiſe, was unanimouſly choſen in his ſtead. By him alſo a League was renewed with the Pope, to whoſe Legates the devout and religious King graciouſly granted whatever they deſired. But having reigned Four Years, he quitted his Government, and betook himſelf to a Monaſtick Life, encouraging his Wife and his Sons to do the like. His Brother *Aiſtulphus* ſucceeded him, whoſe crafty and fierce Temper threatned diſturbance to all *Italy*, but eſpecially to the Pope and the *Romans*, whom he deſigned by Force to bring under his Juriſdiction. In the mean time, *Charles Martel*, being ſeiz'd with a violent Sickneſs, at the perſuaſion of his Friends divided his Acquiſts between his two Sons; of whom *Caroloman*, the elder, had *Auſtraſia* and *Suevia*; and *Pipin*, *Burgundy* and part of *France*. And ſo that valiant and wiſe Man died at *Creſſey ſur Serre*, in the Thirty fifth Year of his Office of *Mayre* of the Palace, and was buried at *Paris* in the Church of S. *Dennis*. He had had by a former Wife another Son, named *Grypho*, whoſe rapacious Temper ſuited with his Name; he prevailed with the warlike *Saxons* to aſſiſt him in making War upon his Brethren. But *Caroloman* and *Pipin*, entring *Saxony* with an Army, force their Prince *Theodoric* to ſubmiſſion. After this Expedition, *Caroloman* comes to *Rome*, and there renouncing the Pomp and Glory of Empire, he goes to Mount *Caſſino*, and takes the Habit of a Monk of S. *Benedict*. But *Pipin*, being of an aſpiring Mind, ſends Ambaſſadors to the Pope, deſiring, that by his Authority he would confirm to him the Kingdom of *France*. The Pope, upon the ſcore of former good Services performed by his Family, and the ancient Friendſhip which had been between them and the Popes his Predeceſſors, yields to his Requeſt, and accordingly confirms him, *An. Dom*, 753. and ſo from *Mayre* of the Palace, who was the firſt Officer of the Kingdom, *Pipin* was advanced to the Kingdom of *France* it ſelf, from whom the ſucceeding Kings derive their Original. 'Tis reported, that *Caroloman*, who, as we have ſaid, had taken the Habit of a Monk, came now, with others of the ſame Order, from Mount *Caſſino* to Pope *Zachary*, deſiring that by his mediation they might gain leave to remove the Body of S. *Benedict*, which had by ſtealth been carried away to the Abby of *Fleury* in the Kingdom of *France*. The Pope granted their Deſire, and thereupon ſent a Meſſage to King *Pipin*, who, upon Information in the matter, freely gave way to it. *Zachary*, now enjoying Peace on every ſide, ſet himſelf to the repairing of ſeveral decayed Churches. The Tower and Portico before the *Lateran* Church he built from the ground, made the Windows and Gates of Braſs, and upon the Frontiſpiece of the Portico cauſed a Map of the World to be delineated. He renewed the defaced Images of the Saints; enlarged and beautified the *Lateran* Palace; repaired the *Palatine* Library, and aſſigned to every Church a Revenue for the maintenance of Oyl for their Lamps. He gave to S. *Peter*'s an Altar-Cloth embroidered with Gold and ſet with Jewels, having the Effigies of our Bleſſed Saviour wrought upon it. He built the

Church of S. *George* in *Velabro*, and repoſited the head of that Saint therein; as alſo the Church of S. *Cæcilia*, in the *Via Tiburtina*, ſix miles from the City, and in it, an Oratory in honour to S. *Cyrus* the Abbat; ſetling a maintenance for the Prieſts that miniſtred in it. He re-built the Roof of the Church of S. *Euſebius*, which happened in his time to tumble down. He alſo gave order, that his Servants ſhould daily diſtribute and give out at the *Lateran* Palace Alms to the Poor of all ſorts. Moreover, he forbad the *Venetians*, upon pain of Excommunication, the ſelling of Chriſtian Slaves to *Saracens* and Heathens, which thoſe Merchants were before wont to do. Finally, that we may not think, that his Advancement to ſo great a Dignity made him neglect his Studies, he tranſlated out of *Latin* into *Greek* Four Books of *Gregory* in Dialogue; that ſo the *Grecians* might be inſtructed in the Rules of good living. But having with ſuch Integrity to the Satiſfaction of all Men governed the Church ten Years, three Months, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s, *March* the 15th. By his Death the See was vacant twelve Days.

STEPHEN II.

STEPHEN the Second, a *Roman*, Son of *Conſtantine*, from one Degree in the Church to another, aſcending at length to the Papal Dignity; although upon the Death of *Zachary* the People preſently made Choice of another *Stephen* a Prieſt; who, on the third Day of his Pontificate awaking out of his ſleep, and beginning to ſettle his domeſtick Affairs, was ſuddenly ſeiz'd with a Fit of an Apoplexy, of which he died. After whom our *Stephen*, the Second, (for we reckon not his ſhort-liv'd Predeceſſor of that Name in the Liſt) was unanimouſly elected by the Clergy and People in the Church of S. *Mary ad Præſepe*, and, being highly beloved by all, was carried upon Mens Shoulders to S. *Saviour*'s, called alſo the *Conſtantinian* Church, and from thence into the *Lateran* Palace. He was a Perſon of extraordinary Piety and Prudence, a Lover of the Clergy, a Repairer of Churches, a diligent Preacher and Writer of the Doctrine of Chriſtianity, a Father of the Poor, a zealous Defender of Orphans and Widows, and in going through with any thing he undertook, hardy and reſolute, but not obſtinate. For *Aiſtulphus* now making Inrodes upon the Borders of the *Romans*, he at firſt endeavoured by Perſuaſions and Preſents to bring him off. But that covetous Prince requiring the Payment of a Tribute of ſo much a head yearly from the People, the Pope thereupon was forced to ſeek for help from abroad, and accordingly he ſent Nuntio's to *Conſtantine* the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, to deſire Aid of him againſt *Aiſtulphus*, who gave diſturbance to all *Italy*, and had already taken *Ravenna* the Seat of the *Exarchate*, and a great part of *Romagna*. But finding no hope of ſuccours from him, he reſolves to go to *Pipin* of *France*; and therefore ſends to that King, to deſire that he would prevail with *Aiſtulphus* to permit him ſafe paſſage through his Country; which *Aiſtulphus*, at *Pipin*'s Requeſt, conſented to. *Stephen* now reaching the Borders of the Kingdom of *France*, *Pipin*'s Son *Charles*, who, from his mighty Atchievements, was afterwards ſirnamed the *Great*, in token of honour goes forth an hundred Miles to meet him. *Pipin* himſelf met him three Miles from the City, and alighting off his Horſe kiſs'd his Feet, and led the Horſe upon which he rode by the Bridle till he had conducted him into the City, and brought him to his Apartment. *Aiſtulphus*, now fearing that the Pope was practiſing againſt him, ſends *Caroloman* a Monk to his Brother *Pipin*, to perſuade him not to make War upon the *Lombards* in *Stephen*'s Quarrel; which *Pipin* not only refuſed to grant, but alſo confined the Monk to a Monaſtery in *Vienne*, where not long after he died of Grief. But it not being a fit ſeaſon of the year to undertake an Expedition, and *Pipin* allowing much to the ancient Friendſhip there had been between them, he ſends Ambaſſadors to *Aiſtulphus*, to adviſe him to reſtore the places he had taken, or otherwiſe to let him know, that he ſhould be obliged in a ſhort time to recover them by force of Arms. *Aiſtulphus* hearkned not to this good Counſel; whereupon *Pipin*, the Spring now approaching, advances with an Army againſt the *Lombards*; and having ſent before ſome light-harneſſed Soldiers to force *Aiſtulphus*'s Guards to quit the Paſſes of the *Alps*, he marches down into the Plain of the State of *Milain*, and having without any oppoſition ſacked and haraſſed all places he came to; at length he inveſts *Pavia* the Seat-Royal of the Kings of *Lombardy*, which *Aiſtulphus*, and thoſe that were in Gariſon with him, defended. But *Stephen*, moved with Compaſſion at the numerous Calamities which this obſtinate Man had brought upon himſelf and his People, voluntarily offers *Aiſtulphus* a Peace, upon condition, he would reſtore what he had taken; which *Aiſtulphus* at length conſented to, and promiſed upon Oath more than was demanded. *Pipin*, reckoning that the Pope had now ſatisfaction, raiſes the Siege, and returns into *France*, leaving *Varrenus* the Arbitrator of this Peace between them. *Stephen* and *Varrenus* go to *Rome*, not doubting, but that *Aiſtulphus* would in a little time perform his Promiſe; in ſtead of which he preſently muſtering up from all parts what Forces he could, with a tumultuary Rout rather than a juſt Army, follows them and beſieges *Rome*, laying waſte and burning the Suburbs and places adjacent, inſomuch that the People of *Rome* ſuffered more Damage by the Outrages he then committed, than they had received in Three-hundred forty four years before from the declining of the Empire. Hereupon *Pipin* being again ſued to by the Pope to aid the diſtreſſed City of *Rome* againſt the Perfidiouſneſs and Cruelty of *Aiſtulphus*, he with all poſſible expedition raiſes an Army for that purpoſe. In the mean time, the *Turks*, willing to mend their Quarters, over-run and conquer the *Alanes* firſt, then the *Colchians* and *Armenians*, after them the People of the *Leſſer Aſia*, and laſtly the *Perſians* and *Saracens*, An. Dom. 755. Some Writers tell us, that theſe were of the Race of thoſe *Scythians*, whom *Alexander* the *Great* kept within the *Hyperborean* Mountains with Iron Bars, meaning by that Metaphor, that he had ſhut up that wild Nation there as into a Priſon. But after much miſchief done and received on both ſides, a Peace being concluded between the *Saracens* and *Turks*, it was agreed that the *Turks* which dwelt in *Perſia* ſhould be called *Saracens*; and by this means the *Saracens* did more patiently ſuffer the *Turks* to bear ſway in *Aſia*, eſpecially apprehending moreover that they might ſoon be brought to embrace the *Mahometan* Religion. But we return to *Pipin*, who, coming again with his Army into *Italy*, was met by *Gregory* principal Secretary to the Emperor *Conſtantine* the Fourth; who deſired him, in his Maſter's Name, that if he ſhould prove victorious over the *Lombards*, he would not give the *Exarchate* of *Ravenna* to the Pope or the *Romans*, it belonging of right to the Emperor. To which *Pipin* anſwered, that he came into *Italy* to do the Pope and People a kindneſs, and that he ſhould conſult their advantage to the utmoſt of his power. After this he marched to *Pavia*, and reduced *Aiſtulphus* to ſuch extremity, that he was forced to accept of the former Conditions of Peace. Hereby the *Exarchate* was reſtored to the *Romans*, together with all the Tract contained between the *Po* and *Apennine*, from *Piacentino* to the Gulf of *Venice*, and whatever lies between the River *Iſara*, the *Apennine* and the *Adriatick*, with all that *Aiſtulphus* had taken in *Tuſcany* and *Sabina*. *Pipin* ſtayed at the Foot of the *Alps* till Conditions ſhould be performed, having left *Holcadus* an Abbat with part of his Army to oblige *Aiſtulphus* to perform what he had promiſed, and moved no farther till he underſtood that *Aiſtulphus* had died of an Apoplexy while he was hunting, before the ſurrendry was fully made. Upon his Death, *Deſiderius*, Duke of *Tuſcany*, forthwith raiſes an Army of *Lombards*, with deſign to poſſeſs himſelf of the Kingdom. The ſame alſo did *Rachis*, *Aiſtulphus*'s Brother, who had before, as we have already ſaid, taken the Habit of a Monk; and indeed the *Lombards* generally, except thoſe of *Tuſcany*, were on his ſide. But *Deſiderius*, by making large Promiſes to the Pope and the *Romans*, wrought them into a favour of his Pretenſions; and accordingly they, with all ſpeed, ſent Ambaſſadors, and among them *Holcadus* the Abbat to *Rachis*, to require him to lay down his Arms, and ſubmit to *Deſiderius*. And ſo *Faenza* and *Ferrara* were at laſt delivered to the Pope, and the Name of the *Exarchate*, which had continued from the time of *Narſes* to the taking of *Ravenna* by *Aiſtulphus* an Hundred and ſeventy Years, was extinguiſhed. Things being now peaceably ſetled, and the Juriſdiction of the Church greatly encreaſed, *Stephen* holding a Synod, takes an account of his ſeveral Flocks and their Paſtors; gently chaſtiſes thoſe, who had offended; directs ſuch, as had gone aſtray; teaches and inſtructs the ignorant; and finally ſets before them the Duty of a Biſhop, of a Presbyter, and of all Orders in the Clergy. Moreover, he appointed Litanies for the appeaſing of the Divine Anger; the Proceſſion on the firſt *Saturday* to be to S. *Marie*'s *ad Præſepe*, on the ſecond to S. *Peter*'s in the *Vatican*, on the third to S. *Paul*'s in the *Via Oſtienſis*. He alſo repaired ſeveral Churches, which had been damaged by *Aiſtulphus*, while he layed Siege to the City; yet he did not recover the Reliques of the Saints, which that King had carried with him to *Pavia*, and there repoſited, not diſhonorably, in divers Churches. The good Man having by theſe means proved ſerviceable to God, his Country, and the Church, died in the fifth Year and firſt Month of his Pontificate, and was buried *April* the 26th, with general lamentation, as for the loſs of a common Father. The See was then vacant Thirty two Days.

PAVL I.

PA*V L*, a *Roman*, Son of *Conſtantine*, Brother of *Stephen* the Second, became well skill'd and practiced in all things belonging to a Churchman, by his having been educated in the *Lateran* Palace under Pope *Gregory* the Second, and Pope *Zachary*, by which later he was, together with his Brother, ordained Deacon; and when, upon the vacancy of the Popedom by the Death of *Stephen*, ſome perſons propoſed *Theophylact* the Arch-Deacon for his Succeſſor, yet others ſtood for *Paul*, as one, who, both for the Integrity of his Life, and great Learning, deſerved to ſucceed his Brother in that Dignity. After a long Diſpute therefore *Theophylact* was rejected, and *Paul* by general ſuffrage choſen, in the time of *Conſtantine* and *Leo*. This *Paul* was a perſon of an extraordinary meek and merciful Temper, and who, in Imitation of our Saviour, never returned to any Man evil for evil, but on the contrary by doing good to them, he overcame thoſe ill Men that had oftentimes injur'd him. He was of ſo kind and compaſſionate a Nature, as that he would go about by night with only two or three Attendants to the Houſes of poor ſick people, aſſiſting them with his Counſel, and relieving them with his Alms. He alſo frequently viſited the Priſons, and, paying their Creditors, diſcharged thence multitudes of poor Debtors. The Fatherleſs and Widows, that were overreach'd by the Tricks of Lawyers, he defended by his Authority and ſupported by his Charity. Moreover, having aſſembled the Clergy and people of *Rome*, he did with great ſolemnity tranſlate the Body of S. *Petronilla* S. *Peter*'s Daughter, with her Tomb of Marble upon which was this Inſcription, *Petronillæ Filiæ dulciſſimæ*, from the *Via Appia* into the *Vatican*, and placed it at the upper end of the Church dedicated to her Father. At this time, the Emperor *Conſtantine* having in all places plucked down the Images, and put to death *Conſtantine* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople* for oppoſing him therein, and made *Nicetas* an Eunuch, his Abettor in the Sacriledg, Patriarch in his ſtead, the Pope, conſulting by all means the Intereſt of Religion, ſends Nuntio's to *Conſtantinople*, to adviſe the Emperor to reſtore and ſet up again the Images he had taken away, or, upon his refuſal ſo to do, to threaten him with the Cenſure of Excommunication. But *Conſtantine*, perſiſting obſtinately in what he had done, not only deſpiſed this good Counſel, but alſo granted Peace to *Sabinus* King of the *Bulgarians*, becauſe he alſo made the like havock of Images with himſelf, though he were before engaged in a War againſt him. Having alſo aſſociated to himſelf into part of the Empire his Son *Leo* the Fourth, whom he had married to the moſt beautiful *Athenian* Lady *Irene*, he enters into a League with the *Saracens*; thereby to deſpite and provoke the Orthodox Chriſtians. In the mean time, *Pipin* entirely ſubdues *Taxillo* Duke of the *Bojarians*, and admits of a League with the *Saxons*, but upon this Condition, That they ſhould be obliged to ſend Three hundred Horſemen to his Aſſiſtance, as often as he ſhould have occaſion to make an Expedition. Againſt the *Aquitains*

tains he maintained a tedious War, which at length he committed to the management of his young Son *Charles*, himſelf being ſo worn out with Age, that he could not be preſent at it. This War being ended, *Charles* takes by Storm *Bourbon*, *Clermont*, and ſeveral other Towns of *Auvergne*. But *Pipin*, who, as we have ſaid, was now very old, not long after dies, leaving in the Kingdom his two Sons *Charles* and *Caroloman*. Some tell us, that *Aiſtulphus* King of the *Lombards*, who, as is above declared, had carried away the Bodies of divers Saints from *Rome* to *Pavia*, died at this time; and that he had built Chappels to thoſe Saints, and alſo a Cloiſter for Virgins, in which his own Daughters became Nuns. He was an extraordinary Lover of the Monks, and died in their Arms, in the ſixth Year and fifth Month of his Reign. At the beginning of his Government he was fierce and raſh, in the end moderate; and a Perſon of ſuch Learning, that he reduc'd and form'd the Edicts of the *Lombards* into Laws. He was, as has been ſaid, ſucceeded by Duke *Deſiderius*; the Valour of the *Lombards* beginning now to diſſolve and loſe it ſelf in Luxury. Our *Paul*, having repaired ſome old decayed Churches, died in S. *Paul*'s in the *Via Oſtienſis*, in the tenth Year and firſt Month of his Pontificate; and his Body was with very great Solemnity carried into the *Vatican*. The See was then vacant one Year, one Month.

STEPHEN III.

S*TEPHEN* the Third, a *Sicilian*, Son of *Olibrius*, entred upon the Pontificate, *A. D. 768*, a learned Man, and in the management of Affairs, eſpecially thoſe belonging to the Church very active and ſteddy. Coming to *Rome* very young, by appointment of Pope *Gregory* III. he took Orders and became a Monk in the Monaſtery of S. *Chryſogonus*, where he was inured to the ſtricter way of living, and inſtructed in Eccleſiaſtical Learning. Being afterwards called by Pope *Zachary* into the *Lateran* Palace, and his Life and Learning generally approved of, he was conſtituted Pariſh-Prieſt of S. *Cæcilia*; and for his great Integrity and readineſs in Buſineſs both *Zachary* and his Succeſſors, *Stephen* and *Paul* would always have him near their Perſons. But upon the Death of *Paul*, whom our *Stephen* never deſerted to his laſt Breath, *Deſiderius*, who, as we have ſaid, was by the Aſſiſtance of *Stephen* II. made King of *Lombardy*, being by *Pipin*'s Death rid of all fear, encourages *Toto* Duke of *Nepi* to promote his brother *Conſtantine* to the Pontificate by force of Arms, if he could not compaſs it by canvaſſing and Bribery. He accordingly marches to *Rome* with an Army, and with the Aſſiſtance of ſome, whom he had corrupted and made his Friends by Gifts and Promiſes, gets *Conſtantine* to be elected Pope. Indeed there were thoſe, who ſet up one *Philip* againſt him, but he was preſently forced to quit his Pretenſions, and *Gregory* Biſhop of *Præneſte* compelled to initiate *Conſtantine*, who at the time of his Choice was a Laick, into holy Orders. and then to conſecrate him Biſhop; the hands of which *Gregory* are ſaid thereupon by Miracle to have ſo withered, that he could not reach them to his Mouth. But *Conſtantine*, having perſiſted to exerciſe the Papal Function for one Year, was at length in great Rage and Diſdain depoſed by the People of *Rome*, and *Stephen* unanimouſly choſen in his ſtead. Upon which, *Conſtantine* being brought into S. *Saviour*'s Church, and the ſacred Canons read, he was publickly and ſolemnly diveſted of the Pontifical Habit, and commanded to live a private life in a Monaſtery. After this, *Stephen* being conſecrated by three Biſhops in the Church of S. *Adrian*, and ſaluted, as the true Pope, by all the Clergy and People of *Rome*, applied himſelf to the cenſuring and ſuppreſſing of the Practices of ſome ill Men, who endeavoured to break the Unity of the *Roman* Church. Therefore calling a Council, he writes to *Charles* deſiring him to ſend to *Rome*, as ſoon as might be, ſome Biſhops of *France*, by their Learning and Integrity well qualified for the Affair. The ſame alſo he writes to the other Chriſtian Princes; who all complying with him therein, a Council is held in the *Lateran* Church, where the Fathers having diſcourſed among themſelves divers things tending to the ſetling of the Church, they ordered *Conſtantine* to be brought before them. For the underhand dealings of *Deſiderius* King of the *Lombards*, and *Paul Aphiarta* having occaſioned frequent Tumults among the People; *Deſiderius* endeavouring all he could to alienate the Affections of the *Romans* from *Charles* to the Emperor; hereupon ſeveral were kill'd on both ſides, and *Conſtantine*, the occaſion of all the miſchief, had his Eyes put out by the contrary Faction, though *Stephen* declared againſt it, and did what he could to prevent it; but there is no oppoſing a furious, enraged, Multitude. *Conſtantine*, appearing before the Council, and being accuſed that he had uſurped the Apoſtolick See not being in any holy Orders, lays all the fault upon the People, and eſpecially upon ſome particular Perſons, who forced him againſt his Will to take the Pontificate upon him. Then proſtrating himſelf upon the floor, and humbly begging pardon, the Perſons preſent moved with compaſſion, ordered him to be diſmiſſed, and put off the Debate of his whole Caſe to the next day, intending then more maturely to deliberate what ought to be done in the matter. But the next day *Conſtantine* returning to the Council, was quite of another mind, and remonſtrated that he had Precedents of former Prelates for what he had done; that *Sergius* Archbiſhop of *Ravenna*, and *Stephen* of *Naples*, had been of Laicks conſecrated Biſhops. The Fathers, reſenting this Impudence, cauſed him to be caſt out with diſgrace, and having nulled his Decrees, applied themſelves to the ſetling of the ſtate of Chriſtianity. Among other things, it was unanimouſly decreed by them, That no Laick, but ſuch only as had paſs'd through the ſeveral Degrees in the Clergy, ſhould preſume to take the Popedom, upon pain of Excommunication. It was ordained likewiſe, That thoſe who had attained to the Epiſcopal Dignity in the time of *Conſtantine*, ſhould renounce that Character, and fall back into the ſame Rank and Order which they were of before; but with this Reſerve, That if their Life and Doctrine were approved by the People, it then pleaſed the Council, that, upon their application to the Apoſtolick See, they might be conſecrated anew. The ſame was judged meet concerning Presbyters and Deacons; yet it was forbidden, that any of them ſhould arrive to the greater degrees, upon a Jealouſie, as I believe, leſt ſome Error or Sect might thence ariſe, as from a Seminary of Diſcord and Sedition. Moreover it was decreed, that all the ſacred Offices, which *Conſtantine* had performed, ſhould be deemed null, except only Baptiſm and Confirmation. Finally, having made void the *Conſtantinian* Synod, in which the *Greek* Prelates had decreed, That the Pictures and Statues of the Saints ſhould be defaced and thrown out of Churches: It was ordained, That thoſe Images ſhould be in all places reſtored, and an *Anathema* paſs'd upon that execrable and pernicious Synod, by which the condition of the Immortal God was rendred worſe than that of Men; it being allowed us, to erect the Statues of Men who have deſerved well of the Publick, both for the expreſſing of our Gratitude, and the raiſing our Emulation of their brave Deeds, but forbidden to ſet up the Image of our Saviour, whom we ought, if it were poſſible, to have always before our Eyes, whether we conſider the mighty Obligations he has laid upon Mankind, or the Dignity of his Divine Nature. Theſe things having thus paſs'd according to the Pope's Mind, it was decreed, that, on the following day, there ſhould be a Solemn Proceſſion, both to return thanks to God, and alſo in order to the averting of his Diſpleaſure. This Proceſſion was made from the *Lateran* Church to S. *Peter*'s, with univerſal great Devotion, the Pope himſelf, with all that were preſent, walking Bare-foot. But in our times, Piety and Devotion are grown ſo cold, that ſuch Expreſſions of Humility are not only laid aſide, but Men are ſo proud, as ſcarcely to vouchſafe to pray at all. Even the more eminent and dignified Perſons, in ſtead of weeping at Proceſſion or at Maſs, as theſe holy Fathers were wont to do, are employed in indecent and ſhameleſs Laughter; in ſtead of ſinging Hymns, which they diſdain as a ſervile thing, they are breaking Jeſts, and telling Stories among themſelves to make each other merry. What ſhould I ſay further? The more petulant and full of Buffoonry any one is, the more he is commended in ſuch a corrupt Age. Our preſent Clergy does dread ſevere and grave Men, as being more deſirous to live thus licenciouſly, than to be obedient to good Admonitions, and ſubject to wholeſom Reſtraints; by which means, the Chriſtian Religion does daily ſuffer and decline. I return to *Stephen*, who, when the Proceſſion was over, forthwith cauſed the Acts of the Council to be firſt openly pronounced by his Commiſſary, and then publiſhed in Writing; threatning Excommunication againſt any, who ſhould preſume to oppoſe what the Holy Synod had decreed. But not long after, *Sergius* Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna* dying, *Michael*, Regiſter of that Church, with the Aſſiſtance of King *Deſiderius* and *Maurice* Duke of *Rimini*, whom he had corrupted with Bribes, though a mere Laick, poſſeſſes himſelf of the See, in oppoſition to *Leo* the Arch-deacon, whom the Clergy were very deſirous to chuſe. Yea theſe Abettors of his preſumed ſo far, as to ſend Ambaſſadors to Pope *Stephen* to bribe him into the Confirmation of this *Michael*. But *Stephen* not only refuſed their offers of Money, but alſo publiſhed an Excommunication againſt him, if he reſigned not the See which he had againſt all Right uſurped. However, he forcibly kept poſſeſſion of it ſo long as he had any thing left, either of his own or belonging to the Church, whereof to make a Bribe to greedy *Deſiderius*. Upon which the Pope ſending his Nuntio's tio's, and King *Charles* his Ambaſſadors to *Ravenna* about that Affair, who declared the Pope's pleaſure therein, *Michael* was forthwith depoſed, and *Leo* choſen, and confirmed by the Pope. Who, being for that reaſon ſecretly deſpited and miſchief'd by *Deſiderius*, begs *Charles* to oblige *Deſiderius* to ceaſe injuring him any farther. This *Charles* performed with great diligence, though he were not in a condition to reſtrain the *Lombard* by force, becauſe upon the death of his Brother, who had Reign'd joyntly and amicably with him for two years, he was neceſſarily engaged in ſeveral Wars at once. The *Aquitains*, againſt whom his Father had begun a War, he brought into ſubjection, and ſubdued the *Gaſcons* inhabiting part of *Aquitain*. Then paſſing the *Pyrenean* Hills, he routed the *Saracens*, purſuing them to the River *Betis*, as far as *Granada*, the part of *Spain* wherein the *Saracens* are now ſeated. In the mean time, *Stephen*, a moſt vigilant Paſtor, and true Succeſſor of *Peter*, and imitator of Chriſt, having been in the Chair three years, five months, twenty ſeven days, died and was buried in S. *Peter*'s. The See was then vacant nine days.

ADRIAN I.

ADRIAN the firſt, a *Roman*, Son of *Theodorus* one of the prime Nobility, entring upon the Pontificate, degenerated not at all from his Anceſtors; being a Perſon, who, for his greatneſs of Mind, Prudence, Learning and Sanctity may be compared with the beſt of Popes; and of whoſe Intereſt and Authority *Deſiderius* King of the *Lombards* had ſuch Apprehenſions, that he preſently ſent Ambaſſadors to treat of a Peace and Alliance with him. But *Adrian*, being acquainted with the extreme perfidiouſneſs of that King, deferred the concluding any thing therein to another time. Now after the Death of *Caroloman*, his Relict *Bertha*, out of Envy towards the Grandeur of *Hildegarda* the Great *Charles*'s Conſort, by the Advice of one *Adoarius* flies with her Sons into *Italy* to King *Deſiderius*; who received her very kindly and honourably, both becauſe he thought he ſhould by this means be leſs in danger from the Power of *France*, and alſo reckoned, that the *French* upon ſetting up *Caroloman*'s Sons would the ſooner appear in Arms againſt King *Charles*, if he ſhould give him any diſturbance. But not being able by intreaties to prevail with *Adrian* to anoint theſe Sons of *Caroloman*, Kings, he applies himſelf to forcible means, and invading the State of *Ravenna*, which was under the Popes Juriſdiction, he takes *Faenza* and *Comacchio*. *Ravenna* was at this time under the Government of its Arch-biſhop and three Tribunes, who forthwith deſired Aid of *Adrian*. The Pope at firſt ſends to *Deſiderius*, admoniſhing him to contain himſelf within his own Territories, and not to invade the Rights of the Church. But underſtanding afterwards, that this King had alſo poſſeſs'd himſelf of *Urbin*, *Senigaglia*, and *Eugubio*, he then began to threaten him with the Approach of Divine Vengeance towards him for the Violation of Peace. To which the

Lombard made no other Reply, than that *Adrian* ought to quit the Intereſt of the *French* King, and to be of his ſide. For it was his great Deſign to make a breach between *Charles* and the Pope; which when he could not obtain by Solicitations and Promiſes, he threatned to beſiege *Rome* itſelf within a little time. He was already come to *Spoleto*, with *Aldagaſius Caroleman*'s Son; but intended to march from thence to *Rome*, though in a peaceable manner, and, as he pretended, out of Devotion. But *Adrian*, having cauſed the Reliques of all the Churches without the Walls to be brought into the City, ſends three Biſhops to *Deſiderius* to forbid him entring the Confines of *Rome*, upon pain of Excommunication; who thereupon, fearing leſt he might incur the Divine Diſpleaſure, preſently returned into *Lombardy*. In the mean time, *Charles* receiving from *Adrian* intelligence of the injury which had been done him, ſends Ambaſſadors to *Deſiderius* to perſuade him to reſtore what he had wrongfully taken from the Pope, or otherwiſe to let him know, that he would ſoon viſit him with ſuch an Army as ſhould oblige him to it. *Deſiderius*, notwithſtanding all this, refuſes it; and ſo on both ſides great Armies are prepared. But *Charles*, having ſent ſome part of his Forces before to ſecure the Paſſes of the *Alpes*, with wonderful Expedition leads the main Body of his Army over *Monte Ceniſio* into *Italy*; where, encountring *Deſiderius*, he vanquiſhes and puts him to flight, and then takes and ſpoils his whole Country. *Deſiderius* after ſo great an overthrow, deſpairing to get the better in a pitch'd Battel, retreats to *Pavia*, having ſent his Wife and Children to *Verona*. And the People of *Spoleto*, *Rieti*, and all the *Lombards* inhabiting thoſe Parts, hearing his Misfortune, betake themſelves to *Rome*, and commit their Perſons and Eſtates to the Pope's Protection, taking an Oath of Fidelity to him, and ſhaving their Heads and Beards, which among that People was the greateſt Sign and Token of a perfect Submiſſion to his Power and Juriſdicton. By their Example, thoſe of *Ancona*, *Oſimo*, and *Firmo* did the like. Now to ſuch of theſe *Lombards*, as were unwilling to return into their own Country, the *Vatican* Hill was granted them to inhabit and ſeat themſelves in; whither afterwards there was from all parts a great concourſe of other their Country-men, who choſe to live there. But *Charles*, leaving his Couſin-German *Bernardus* at the Siege of *Pavia*, marches with part of his Army to *Verona*, which City, upon the inclination of *Bertha* and *Caroloman*'s Sons to the *French* ſide, in a little time after ſurrendred to him; though *Aldegiſius*, *Deſiderius* his Son, eſcaping thence, fled to the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*. Almoſt all the Cities of *Lombardy* beyond the *Po*, having in like manner yielded to *Charles*, he goes towards *Rome*, that he might there celebrate the Feaſt of *Eaſter* with the Pope. At his approach to the City, he was in Complement met by three thouſand Judges, as *Anaſtaſius* tels us, calling them Judges who were not Handicrafts men, or did not exerciſe any mean Trades. *Adrian* with his Clergy expected him at the Steps of S. *Peter*, and at his coming embraced him with all imaginable Affection, but could not reſtrain the humble King from kiſſing his Feet. The uſual Salutations and Reſpects having paſs'd on both ſides, they entred the Church, and being come up to the Altar, *Charles* and the Pope, the *Romans* and the *French*, took a mutual Oath to maintain a perpetual Friendſhip, and to be Enemies to the Enemies of each other. After which, *Charles*, making his Entrance into the City, devoutly viſited all the Churches, and made ſeveral Preſents to them. Four days after his being there, he by Oath confirmed, and amply enlarged, the Donation of his Father *Pipin* to *Gregory* the third, containing, according to *Anaſtaſius*, in *Liguria* all that reaches from the long ſince demoliſhed City *Luna* to the *Alpes*, the Iſle of *Corſica*, and the whole Tract between *Luca* and *Parma*, together with *Friuli*, the *Exarchate* of *Ravenna*, and the Dukedoms of *Spoleto* and *Benevent*. Theſe Affairs being thus ſetled, *Charles* taking his leave of *Adrian* returns into *Lombardy*, and becomes Maſter of *Pavia* on the ſixth month after the inveſting of it. Towards *Deſiderius* however he was ſo favourable, as that though he bereft him of his Kingdom, yet he ſpared his Life, and only confined him with his Wife and Children to *Lyons*. Advancing thence again to *Arachis* Duke of *Benevent*, who was Son-in-law to *Deſiderius*, and had been an Abettor of his raſh Proceedings, he ſoon forced him to ſue for a Peace, and received his two Sons for Hoſtages. After this, in his paſſage farther, he Religiouſly viſited Mount *Caſſino*, and confirmed all the Grants which had been made by other Princes to the Monaſtery of *St. Benedict*. And ſo the Affairs of all *Italy* being compoſed, and ſtrong Guards left in the moſt important places of *Lombardy*, he returns with great Spoil and mighty Glory into his Kingdom of *France*, carrying with him his Brother *Caroloman*'s Relict and Sons, whom he always treated with Reſpect and Honour; and alſo *Paul* a Deacon of the Church of *Aquileia*, a Perſon for his Parts and Learning highly belov'd by *Deſiderius*, to whom he gave his Freedom, and had for ſome time a great Eſteem for him. But underſtanding afterwards that the Man was aſſiſting to a Deſign of *Deſiderius*'s flight, he baniſh'd him into the Iſland of *Tremiti*; from whence after ſome years making his eſcape, and coming to *Arachis*, at the Requeſt of *Adelperga* Daughter to *Deſiderius* and the Wife of *Arachis*, he added two Books to the Hiſtory of *Eutropius*, giving an account of what paſſed from the time of the Emperor *Julian* to that of *Juſtinian* the firſt. After the death of *Arachis*, he betook himſelf to the Monaſtery of *Caſſino*, where leading the remainder of his life very devoutly, he oftentimes wrote elegant and obliging Letters to *Charles*, and received again the like from that King, who had preſerved him for the ſake of his Learning. Thus ended the Kingdom of the *Lombards*, in the two hundred and fourth year after their coming into *Italy*, and in the year of our Lord ſeven hundred ſeventy ſix. *Charles* now without any delay marches againſt the idolatrous *Saxons*, who during his abſence in *Italy* had rebelled; utterly ſubdues that People, with whom he had been engaged in War for thirty years before, and compels them to receive Chriſtianity. Then turning his Army againſt the *Spaniards*, who were alſo fallen away from the Faith, he took the Cities of *Pampelona* and *Saragoza*, and permitted his Soldiers to plunder them; not granting a Peace to theſe *Spaniards*, but upon condition they would entirely embrace the Chriſtian Doctrine. After this, returning into *France*, matters having went according to his mind, as he paſſed the *Pyrenean* Hills, he fell into an Ambuſcade of the *Gaſcons*, in engaging with whom, though he gallantly defended himſelf, yet he loſt *Anſelmus* and *Egibardus* two brave Commanders.

manders. Some tell us, that in this Encounter *Rolandus*, *Charles's* Siſter's Son, periſhed, after he had made a great ſlaughter of the Enemy; though whether he died of Thirſt, as is commonly ſaid, or of the wounds he received, is uncertain. At length theſe *Gaſcons* were vanquiſhed by *Charles*, and received from him the deſerved Puniſhment of their Revolt and Perfidy. At this time *Taxillo* Duke of *Bojaria*, *Deſiderius's* Son-in-law, having gained the *Huns* to be on his ſide, made an Attempt of War againſt the *French*, which yet *Charles* by his great Expedition almoſt made an end of before it was quite begun; and to him alſo, upon Hoſtages given, he granted a Peace. While theſe things were tranſacting in *France*, *Conſtantine*, Emperor of the *Eaſt*, was ſeized with a Leproſie, (from whence perhaps aroſe the groundleſs Opinion of the Leproſie of *Conſtantine* the *Great*, through the confuſion of their Names) and dying, left *Leo* the fourth his Succeſſor; who ſo ſtrangely doated upon precious Stones, that robbing the Church of S. *Sophia* of its Jewels, he made with them a Crown of a vaſt weight and value, which he wore ſo often, that either through the weight, or from the coldneſs of the Stones in it, he ſhortly fell ſick and died. The ſame I believe to have happened in our Time to *Paul* the Second, who ſo effeminately prided himſelf in ſuch Ornaments, almoſt exhauſting the Treaſury of the Church to purchaſe Jewels at any rate, that as often as he appeared publickly, inſtead of wearing a plain Mitre, he looked like the Picture of *Cybele* with Turrets on her Head; from whence, what with the weight of the Jewels, and the ſweat of his groſs Body, I am apt to think aroſe that Apoplexy of which he died ſuddenly. After the death of *Leo*, his Relict *Irene* and his Son *Conſtantine* managing the Empire, in a Council of three hundred and fifty Biſhops held the ſecond time at *Nice*, it was decreed, that whoſoever maintained, that the Images of the Saints were to be deſtroyed, ſhould be cenſured with perpetual Excommunication. But young *Conſtantine* through the perſuaſion of ſome ill Men about him, treading in the Footſteps of his Father, ſoon after revoked this Conſtitution, and wholly deprived his Mother of any ſhare in the Adminiſtration of Affairs. Then putting away his Wife, he received to his Bed, and cauſed to be crowned Empreſs, *Theodora* one of her Maids. Moreover, he gave Order to thoſe Commanders he had in *Italy*, to give diſturbance to their Neighbors; but they were at the firſt Meſſage terrified from any Attempts by the prevailing Authority of *Charles*, who at this time was advancing with his Forces againſt the *Sclaves* and *Huns*, (or we may call them *Hungarians*) becauſe by their Incurſions they had moleſted all the Country about the *Danow*; whom having vanquiſhed, he marched into *Franconia*, the Country of his Anceſtors, from whence the *Franks* or *French* derive their Name; which Province he having with eaſe brought to his Devotion, two years after, *Theophylact* and *Stephen* two Biſhops of great Note held a Synod of *Frank* and *German* Biſhops, wherein that which the *Greeks* called the ſeventh Synod, and the *Felician* Hereſie touching the deſtruction of Images, was condemned. *Adrian* being now by the Intereſt and Power of *Charles*, ſecured from the fear of any warlike Incurſions, applies himſelf to the repairing the City, beautifying the Churches, reſtoring the Aqueducts, and ſuch like publick Works, which I need not particularly enumerate, performed at his vaſt Expence. But while he was employed in theſe matters, there happened ſuch an Inundation of the River *Tyber*, as bore down a principal Gate and Bridge, and ſeveral Buildings of the City, and did otherwiſe great Damage. In this extremity, *Adrian* took care to ſend Boats to convey Proviſions to ſuch as, while the Waters were ſo high, could not ſtir out of their Houſes. And afterwards he comforted with his Advice, and ſupported with his Charity, the principal Sufferers in that Calamity; nor did he ſpare any Coſt in repairing the publick Loſs. In ſhort, *Adrian* left nothing undone, that became a good Prince and excellent Pope; defending the Chriſtian Religion, maintaining the *Roman* Liberty, and aſſerting the Cauſe of the Poor, the Orphans and Widows. After he had held the Chair with great Honour, twenty three years, ten months, he died, and was buried in S. *Peters*, *December* the 27th.

LEO III.

LEO the third, a *Roman*, Son of *Azzupius*, was upon the account of Merit advanced to the Pontificate, having been from his Youth ſo throughly educated and inſtructed in Eccleſiaſtical Learning, that he deſerved to be preferred before all others. A modeſt, upright, and well-ſpoken Perſon, and ſuch a favourer of Learned Men, that he encouraged them by the Propoſal of generous Rewards to reſort from all parts to him, and was wonderfully pleaſed with their Converſation. Moreover, to viſit and exhort the Sick, to relieve the Poor, to comfort the dejected, and, to reduce the erroneous by his Preaching and Admonition, in which through his Art and Eloquence, he had gained a great Perfection, was his peculiar Province. He was naturally of a meek Temper, a lover of all Mankind, ſlow to Anger, ready to commiſerate, eminent for Piety, and a vigorous Promoter, and Defender of the Honor of God and his Church. Hereupon he was, (as I have ſaid) unanimouſly elected to the Papal See on S. *Stephen*'s day, and the day following with general Acclamations ſeated in S. *Peter*'s Chair. At this time *Irene*, Mother of *Conſtantine* the Emperor, not being able to bear her Son's ill Courſes, and being inſtigated thereto by certain of the Citizens, returns to *Conſtantinople*, puts out his Eyes, and throws him into Priſon, where as an undutiful Son he miſerably ended his days. In the mean time, *Charles* having diſturbance given him on many ſides, ſends his Son *Pipin* againſt the *Hungarians*, whom having worſted in ſeveral Engagements, he at length totally ſubdued. *Adelphonſus* likewiſe King of *Aſturia* and *Gallicia*, having received Auxiliary Forces from *Charles* vanquiſhed the *Saracens* and took *Lisbon*; upon the hearing of which Victory of his, the Gariſon of *Barcelona* forthwith yielded up to *Charles*. Moreover, the *Bavarians*, who made inroads upon the Inhabitants of *Friuli*, were now overcome by *Henry*, *Charles*'s Lieutenant there. At this time, *Leo*, with the Clergy and People, being employed in the Solemn Proceſſion inſtituted by Pope *Gregory*, he was through the treachery of *Paſchal* and *Campulus* two of the principal Clergy, ſeized near the Church of S. *Sylveſter*, ſtripped of his Pontifical Habit, ſo cruelly beaten and miſuſed, that it was thought he had been deprived both of his Sight and Speech, and then cloſely impriſoned in the Monaſtery of S. *Eraſmus.* From whence yet ſoon after, by the diligence of *Albinus*, one belonging to his Bedchamber, he made his eſcape, and was ſecretly conveyed to the *Vatican*; where he lay concealed till *Vinigiſius* Duke of *Spoleto*, being privately invited thereunto, came, and with a ſtrong Guard of Soldiers to ſecure him on his way from any Violence which his Enemies might offer to him, carried him off ſafely to *Spoleto.* The Factious, being not now able to wreak their malice upon the Perſons of *Leo* and *Albinus*, expreſs their Rage in pulling down their Houſes; nay, ſo hardy and daring were they, as to go to *Charles*, who was now making War upon the *Saxons*, and to whom they underſtood *Leo* had repaired, on purpoſe to complain of and accuſe the Pope. But *Charles*, deferring the debate of the matter to another time, ſends the Pope to *Rome* with an Honourable Retinue, promiſing that himſelf would be there in a little time, in order to the compoſing of the Affairs of *Italy*. *Leo* in his paſſage being come as far as *Ponte molle*, was there in Honour met by the Clergy and People of *Rome*, who congratulated his Return, and introduced him into the City. And *Charles* without making any long ſtay, paſſing through *Mentz* and *Noremberg* into *Friuli*, ſeverely chaſtiſes the Citizens of *Treviſo* for having put to Death *Henry* their Governor; and having conſtituted another to ſucceed him in that Office, he thence goes firſt to *Ravenna*, and preſently after to *Rome*, where his Preſence was earneſtly deſired and expected. At his entrance into the City all imaginable expreſſions of Honour, as good reaſon was, were made to him. On the eighth day of his being there, in the preſence of the People and Clergy, aſſembled in S. *Peter's* Church, he asked all the Biſhops, who had come thither out of all the parts of *Italy* and *France*, what their Opinion was concerning the Life and Converſation of the Pope. But Anſwer was made by all with one Voice, that the Apoſtolick See, the Head of all Churches, ought to be judged by none, eſpecially not by a Laick. Hereupon *Charles* laying aſide any farther enquiry into the matter, Pope *Leo*, who extremely wiſhed that he might be put upon that way of purging himſelf, going up into the Pulpit, and holding the Goſpels in his hands, declared upon his Oath that he was innocent of all thoſe things which were laid to his Charge. This was done on the thirteenth day of *December*, *A. D.* 800. While things went thus at *Rome*, *Pipin* by his Fathers Order advancing againſt the *Beneventans*, who under *Grimoald's* Conduct made Inroads upon their Neighbors, and having given them ſo many Defeats, that at length they were ſcarce able to defend themſelves within the Walls of their City; he left the farther management of that War to *Vinigiſius* Duke of *Spoleto*, and returned to his Father, who was now in a ſhort time to be Crowned Emperor. For the Pope, that he might make ſome requital to *Charles*, who had deſerved ſo well of the Church; and alſo becauſe he ſaw that the Emperors of *Conſtantinople* were hardly able to maintain that Title; upon which account *Rome* and all *Italy* had ſuffered great Calamities; after Maſs in S. *Peter's* Church, with the Conſent, and at the Requeſt of the People of

Rome, declares with a loud Voice the ſaid *Charles* to be Emperor, and put the Imperial Diadem upon his Head, the People repeating thrice this Acclamation, *Long Life and Victory to* Charles Auguſtus, *whom God has Crowned, the Great and Pacifick Emperor.* Then the Pope annointed him, and his Son *Pipin*, whom in like manner he pronounced King of *Italy*. *Charles*, being now inveſted with Imperial Power, gave Order, that *Campulus* and *Paſchal*, the Conſpirators againſt the Pope, ſhould be put to death; But the Pope, who was all Clemency, obtained a Pardon of their Lives, and they were only baniſhed into *France*. After this, there were ſome who would have perſuaded *Charles* to expel all the *Lombards* out of *Italy*. But that not appearing to be a ſafe courſe, becauſe they had mingled in Blood and Affinity with multitudes of Families in *Italy*, it was determined both by *Charles* and *Leo*, that the Name of *Lombard* ſhould remain there only, where that Nation had chiefly had their Seat. *Pipin* being now returned to *Benevent*, and having continued the Siege of that place for ſeveral months without ſucceſs, he turns his Arms againſt the City *Chieti*, of which having, after ſome oppoſition, made himſelf Maſter by Force, he plunder'd and burnt it. Upon the terror whereof, at his marching thence, he had the Cities of *Ortona* and *Luceria* ſurrendred to him, and in the later he took *Grimoald* Duke of *Benevent*; who not long after died of Grief. In the mean time, the Empreſs of *Conſtantinople*, ſending Ambaſſadors into *Italy*, enters into a League with *Charles*, their ſeveral pretenſions to *Italy* being thus adjuſted, *viz.* *Irene* was to have that part which beginning on the one ſide from *Naples*, and from *Siponto* (a City now called *Manfredonia*) on the other, lies extended between the two Seas, Eaſtward, together with *Sicily*; all *Italy* beſide, only excepting always thoſe places which were under the Juriſdiction of the Church, were by the Articles of Peace adjudged to be *Charles's* own. But *Nicephorus*, a *Patrician*, ſtomaching to ſubmit to the Dominion of a Woman, having craftily ſeized *Irene*, and baniſhed her into *Lesbos*, by his Ambaſſadors renews the League before entred into with *Charles*. Which *Charles* at this time compelled the *Saxons*, who had ſo often revolted, to remove with their Wives and Children into *France*, following them cloſe in their paſſage with his Army, to prevent their committing any Diſorders as they went along. Pope *Leo*, being perpetually diſturbed by one Sedition after another, leaving *Rome*, goes to *Mantua*, to ſee the Bloud of Chriſt, which was now in great eſteem for the Miracles ſaid to be wrought there by it. Having been received with great Reſpect and Affection by the *Mantuans*, and approved it to be indeed Chriſt's Blood upon frequent Trial of the miraculous Effects of it, he makes a Journey to *Charles*, who was very deſirous to know the Truth of this matter, that he might certifie him concerning it, and alſo that he might diſcourſe with him about ſetling the Affairs of *Italy*. Returning then to *Rome*, and being aſſiſted by King *Pipin*, who had his Father's Order therein, he proceeded to a gentle puniſhment of ſome of the chief Plotters and Movers of Sedition. *Charles*, being now very aged, having intelligence that *Pipin* was dead at *Milain*, declares *Louis*, his younger Son, King of *Aquitain* and his Succeſſor in the Empire, and *Bernard* his Nephew King of *Italy*, to whom he gave Charge that he ſhould in all things be obedient to *Louis*. To the extent of the Empire he ſet theſe bounds; in *Gallia*, the *Rhine* and the *Loyre*; in *Germany*, the *Danow* and the *Saw*; and to theſe Provinces he added *Aquitain, Gaſcoigne*, a great part of *Spain*, *Lombardy*, *Saxony*, both the *Pannonia*'s, *Iſtria*, *Croatia*, and *Dalmatia*, excepting only thoſe parts of it ſituate on the Sea-coaſt, which were ſubject to the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*. Having thus ſetled Affairs, while he was at *Aken* for the recovery of his Health by the uſe of the hot Baths there, he died of a Feaver and Pleuriſie, in the ſeventy ſecond year of his age, *January* 28. *An. Dom.* 815. His Body was, with all imaginable Pomp and Solemnity, interred in the Church of S. *Mary*, which himſelf had built at *Aken*, with this Inſcription on his Tomb, *MAGNI CAROLI REGIS CHRISTIANISSIMI, ROMANORVMQVE IMPERATORIS CORPVS HOC SEPVLCHRO CONDITVM JACET.* He was indeed, whether we regard his management of Civil or Military matters, ſo illuſtrious and excellent an Emperor, that none of his Succeſſors have either excelled or equalled him. Moreover, when leiſure from other weighty Affairs permitted him, he took ſuch delight in the ſtudy of Learning, that it was he, who, at the perſuaſion of *Alcuinus*, firſt made *Paris* an Univerſity. Of three Tables of Silver which he had, one, on which was engraven the City of *Conſtantinople*, he gave to the Church of S. *Peter*; another, on which the City of *Rome* was deſcribed, to the Church of *Ravenna*; the third, which, ſome tell us, was of Gold, on which was a Map of the whole World, he left to his Sons.

As for Pope *Leo*, having repaired the Roof of S. *Pauls*, which had fallen down in an Earthquake; built from the ground a very capacious Hoſpital for Strangers near S. *Peters*; and ordained Litanies on the three days before Aſcenſion-day; on the firſt of which, the Proceſſion was to be from S. *Maries's ad Præſepe* to the *Lateran* Church; on the ſecond, from the Church of S. *Sabina* to S *Pauls's*; and on the third, from S. *Croſs* to S. *Laurence*'s without the Walls; in the twenty firſt year of his Pontificate he died, which year there appeared a Comet, thought by ſome to have been a Preſage of ſo great a calamity. He was buried in *S. Peters, June* the 12th. and the See was vacant ten days.

STEPHEN IV.

STEPHEN the Fourth, a *Roman*, Son of *Julius*, in the third Month of his Pontificate, went into *France*, to the Emperor *Lewis*; though the reaſon of his Journey is not certainly known. Some conjecture, that it was to ſecure himſelf from the Reliques of the Faction and Conſpiracy of *Campulus*, which, upon the Death of *Leo*, prevailed afreſh. The Emperor *Lewis*, Sirnamed the *Godly*, was now at *Orleans*, who, aſſoon as he had intelligence of the Popes coming, forthwith ſends all the Perſons of Principal Quality to meet him; and among others, particularly *Theudolphus* Biſhop of *Orleans*, with the Clergy, and a great part of the People. And *Louis* himſelf, going forth a whole Mile for the ſame purpoſe, aſſoon as he ſaw him, alighted off his Horſe, and after, mutual Salutations had paſſed between them, introduced him very honourably into the City, the Clergy going before and, aſter repeating the Hymn, called *Te Deum Laudamus*. For *Stephen* was not only a Perſon of Noble Extraction, but of ſuch Learning and Integrity, that he eaſily gain'd a general Veneration for Sanctity, having been well inſtructed by an advantageous Education, under thoſe two pious Popes, *Adrian* and *Leo*. Being entred into the City, ſupported by the Emperor, becauſe of the croud of the People, who preſs'd out of a deſire to ſee him, he was conducted to the Apartment, appointed for him in the Palace; where he often had Conferences with the Emperor, about the compoſure of the Affairs of *Italy*, beſides the other frequent mutual Entertainments and Civilities that paſs'd between them. *Louis* would have detained the Pope longer with him, had he not now been engaged in ſuch important Wars, that it was neceſſary he ſhould oppoſe the Enemy in Perſon. For both the *Gaſcons* had revolted, whom in a ſhort time he reduc'd; and thoſe of *Bretaigne* began to endeavour a change of Government, whom, in like manner, by his Arms he kept in Obedience; and moreover at an Aſſembly held at *Aken*, he granted Peace to the Ambaſſadors ſent from the *Saracens*, inhabiting *Saragoſa*. *Stephen*, being now upon his departure, in Imitation of our Saviour, who ſpared even his Enemies, obtained of *Louis*, that all thoſe whom *Charles* had puniſhed with Baniſhment or Impriſoment for their Conſpiracy againſt *Leo*, might have their Liberty. He alſo carried with him a Croſs of great Weight and Value, made at the charge of *Louis*, and by him dedicated to S. *Peter*. But returning to *Rome*, he died in the ſeventh month of his Pontificate; and was buried in S. *Peter's*; and by his Death, the See was vacant eleven days.

PASCHAL I.

PASCHAL, a *Roman*, Son of *Bonoſus*, was created Pope without any Interpoſition of the Emperors Authority. Whereupon, at his firſt Inveſtiture in that Office, he forthwith ſends Nuntio's to *Louis*, excuſing himſelf, and laying all the blame upon the Clergy and People of *Rome*, who had forcibly compell'd him to undertake it. *Louis* accepting this for Satisfaction from *Paſchal*, ſends to the Clergy and People, admoniſhing them to obſerve the ancient Conſtitution, and to beware how they preſum'd for time to come to infringe the Rights of the Emperor. Alſo, in the Aſſembly held at *Aken*, he aſſociated to himſelf in the Empire his eldeſt Son *Lotharius*, and declared *Pipin*, his ſecond Son, King of *Aquitain*, and *Louis*, his third Son, King of *Bavaria*. But *Bernardus*, King of *Italy*, having, upon the Inſtigation of certain Biſhops and ſeditious Citizens, revolted from the Empire, and compelled ſome Cities and States to ſwear Allegiance to himſelf, *Louis* being hereat incenſed, ſends a ſtrong Army into *Italy*; whoſe Paſſage over the *Alps Bernardus* endeavouring to oppoſe, he was vanquiſhed. The Heads of the Rebellion being taken, were preſently cu[illegible]f, and *Bernardus* himſelf, though he very ſubmiſſively begg'd forgiveneſs, was put to Death at *Aken*. Thoſe Biſhops who had been Authors of the miſchief, were, by a Decree of Synod, confined into ſeveral Monaſteries. This Tumult, for ſo it was rather than a War, being thus compoſed, *Louis* moves with his Army againſt the *Saxons*, rebelling now afreſh, and overcomes and ſlays *Viromarchus* their hardy Chief, who aſpired to the Kingdom. After this, he ſends his Son *Lotharius*, whom he had declared King of *Italy*, to the Pope; by whom he was anointed in the Church of S. *Peter*'s, with the Title of *Auguſtus*. But there ariſing great Commotions in *Italy*, and *Lotharius* ſeeing himſelf unable to withſtand them, he goes to his Father in order to provide greater Force. Upon which, *Theodorus* the *Primicerius*, and *Leo* the *Nomenclator*, having had their Eyes firſt pull'd out, were murdered in a Tumult in the *Lateran* Palace. There were ſome who laid the blame of this Diſorder upon *Paſchal* himſelf; but he, in a Synod of thirty Biſhops, did, both by Conjectures, and by Reaſons, and by his Oath, purge himſelf of it. *Louis* reſted himſelf ſatisfied herewith, and, as *Anaſtaſius* tells us, that no future Diſturbance might ariſe from uncertain Pretenſions, writing to *Paſchal*, he declared in his Letters what Cities of *Tuſcany* were ſubject to the Empire, viz. *Arezzo*, *Volterra*, *Chiuſi*, *Florence*, which had been repaired and enlarged by his Father *Charles* the Great, *Piſtoia*, *Luca*, *Piſa*, *Peragia*, and *Orvieto*; the others he allowed to be under the Juriſdiction of the Church of *Rome*. He added moreover *Todi* in *Umbria*, and *Romagna* beyond the *Appennine*, with the *Exarchate* of *Ravenna*. The ſame *Anaſtaſius* ſays, that *Louis* granted to *Paſchal* a free Power (the ſame which he alſo tells us was given by *Charles* to Pope *Adrian*) of chuſing Biſhops, whereas before, the Emperors were wont to be adviſed, and their conſent and Confirmation deſired in the Caſe. Our

Paſchal, who, for his Piety and Learning, had been, by Pope *Stephen*, made Prior of the Monaſtery of S. *Stephen* in the *Vatican*, being now in the Chair, both cauſed the Bodies of ſeveral Saints, which before lay neglectedly, to be conveyed into the City with great Solemnity, and honourably interred; and alſo, by paying their Creditors, procured the releaſe of divers poor Priſoners. He alſo built from the ground the Church of S. *Praxedes* the B. Martyr, not far from the old one, which, through Age and the Clergies neglect, was run to ruin. This Church having conſecrated, he oftentimes celebrated Maſs in it, and alſo repoſited therein the Bodies of many Saints, which lay about unregarded in the Cœmeteries. In the ſame Church was an Oratory dedicated to S. *Agnes*, which he made very ſtately and ornamental. Moreover, he built the Church of S. *Cecily*, (as appears ſtill by an Inſcription on the Nave of it,) in which he in like manner repoſited the Bodies of that Virgin her ſelf, and her affianced Husband *Valerianus*, as alſo of *Tiburtius* and *Maximus*, Martyrs, and *Urban* and *Lucius*, Biſhops of *Rome*, adorning it with all kinds of Marble, and enriching it with Preſents of Gold and Silver. He alſo repaired the Church of S. *Mary ad Præſepe*, that had been decayed by Age, and alter'd the Nave of it to advantage. In fine, having been very exemplary for Religion and Piety, good Nature and Bounty, after he had been in the Chair ſeven Years, two Months, ſeven Days, he died, and was buried in S. *Peter's*. The See was then vacant only four days.

EUGENIUS II.

EUGENIUS the Second, a *Roman*, Son of *Boemundus*, was, for his Sanctity, Learning, Humanity and Eloquence, unanimouſly choſen into the Pontificate, at that time particularly when *Lotharius*, coming into *Italy*, made choice of a Magiſtrate for the Adminiſtration of Juſtice, and Execution of the Laws among the people of *Rome*, who, after a long and heavy Servitude, had enjoyed ſome Liberty under the Emperor *Charles* and his Sons. In the mean time, *Louis*, after he had, for forty days, been ſpoiling and laying waſte the Country of *Bretagne* with Fire and Sword, having received Hoſtages, he goes to *Roan*, and there gives Audience to the Ambaſſadors of *Michael* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, who came to conſult, what his Opinion was concerning the Images of the Saints, whether they were to be utterly aboliſhed and deſtroyed, or kept up and reſtored again. But *Louis* referred them to the Pope, who was principally concerned to determine in the matter. After this he marched againſt the *Bulgarians*, who were now making Inroads into the *Pannonia*'s, and, at firſt, repelled them; but *Haydo*, Governor of *Aquitain*, upon confidence of Auxiliary Forces from *Abderamann* King of the *Saracens*, having rebelled, he was obliged to quit this War; and ſo the *Bulgarians*, in an hoſtile manner, marched without controul through the middle of the *Pannonia*'s into *Dalmatia*. But, before *Louis* advanced againſt *Haydo*, a great part of *Spain* had revolted to *Haydo*, who ſent out a Fleet, which annoyed the Sea-port Towns all about. Only *Bernardus* Earl of *Barcelona*, though he had diſturbance given him both by Sea and Land, yet continued firm to the Emperor. Our *Eugenius* excelling in the Gifts of Body and Mind, and, deſpiſing the Goods of Fortune, applyed himſelf to Works of Bounty and Munificence, and particularly took ſo much care in the matter of Proviſion, that all ſorts of it, and eſpecially Grain, was no where cheaper than at *Rome*. Moreover, he ſupported the Lives, and defended the Cauſe of the Poor, the Fatherleſs and Widows, in ſuch a manner, that he deſervedly gain'd the name of the Father of the poor. The ſame courſe of living he alſo took before his Pontificate; both while he was a Prieſt of S. *Sabina* in the *Aventine*, which Church, when he came to be Pope, he beautified; and alſo, while he was Arch-Prieſt of the *Lateran* Church, from which place, he was afterwards, for his great Merit, by an unanimous Choice, advanced to the Papal Chair. By his procurement and Interceſſion likewiſe, all the Priſoners and Exiles in *France* returned at length to *Rome*; who, being ſtripp'd of all they had, were relieved and ſupported by his Charity. Nor was it his fault, that *Sico* Duke of *Benevent* did not quit the Siege of *Naples*, which he, at this time, reduced to great ſtraits, and carried from thence the Body of S. *Januarius* to *Benevent*, where he honourably repoſited it in the great Church with *Deſiderius* and *Feſtus*. For the Pope endeavoured to perſuade *Sico* to undertake an Expedition againſt the *Saracens*, who had already poſſeſs'd themſelves of *Palermo* in *Sicily*. The good Man having after this manner continued four years in the Pontificate, died, lamented of all, who grieved for themſelves rather than for him, to whom Death was a welcom Paſſage into Happineſs; and was buried in S. *Peter's*.

VALENTINE I.

VALENTINE I.

VALENTINE, a *Roman*, Son of *Leontius*, being only a Deacon, not a Prieſt, was yet, for his extraordinary Sanctity, deſervedly preferred to the Pontificate. Nor will it appear ſtrange, if we conſider, that having, from his Youth upwards, been inſtructed in Learning and Piety by thoſe good Popes *Paſchal* and *Eugenius*; he did not give his Mind to Pleaſures and Sports, as moſt young Men are wont to do, but applied himſelf to the acquiring of Knowledg by the reading of the Ancients, and the Rule of good Living from the Example of holy Biſhops. He was moreover a Perſon of ſuch ready Parts, and prevailing Eloquence, that he had a great Facility in perſuading to, or againſt, what he pleaſed; without offering any thing that was not ſound, learned, and decent. Finally, both in his private Station, and while he was Pope, he came behind none of his Predeceſſors, in Devotion, Mercy and Charity. For theſe Reaſons he was unanimouſly elected to the Chair; but poſſibly, as a puniſhment upon the ſins of that Age, he died on the fortieth day of his Pontificate, and was buried in S. *Peter's*; all people lamenting, that they were bereft of ſuch a Man, who, if he had lived, would have been an almoſt impregnable Support to the *Roman* Liberty and the Chriſtian Religion. While the See was vacant, *Sicardus* Duke of *Benevent*, who, after his Father's Death, ruled tyrannically, for the want of a Bribe, which he expected, caſt *Deus-dedit*, Abbat of *Monte Caſſino*, into Priſon, where he died with the Reputation of being a Holy Man.

GREGORY IV.

GREGORY the Fourth, a *Roman*, Son of *John*, and Cardinal of S. *Mark*, entred upon the Pontificate at the time when the *Saracens*, poſſeſs'd of *Aſia*, ſhut up the paſſage to the *Holy Land* from the Chriſtians; and the *Moors*, paſſing with their Fleet into *Sicily*, waſted a great part of that Iſland, having (as is already ſaid,) made themſelves Maſters of *Palermo*. Nor could the *Venetians*, though, at the deſire of *Michael*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, they ſailed thither, check their Proceedings; the *Moors* having more Ships and Men than they. The State of *Venice* was now in its Increaſe, having had its Original from the *Veneti*, at the time when *Attila* with his *Huns* took and deſtroyed *Aquileia*, *Concordia*, *Altino*, with other Cities of the Province anciently called *Venetia*; that people having no other defence againſt the Cruelty of the *Barbarians*, but only the Fens and Marſhes. *Juſtinian Patricius* was now Duke of *Venice*, whoſe Name I therefore chuſe to mention, becauſe in his time the Body of

S. *Mark* was by ſome *Venetian* Merchants brought from *Alexandria* to *Venice*, where that Saint is now had in great Veneration, a moſt magnificent Church being, in the principal part of the City, built and dedicated to him, and adorned and enriched with very rich Donations. And from hence it was, that the *Venetians* firſt bore upon their Standards and Banners the Picture of S. *Mark*, as the Patron of their City. But *Gregory*, underſtanding that the *Venetians* were not able to expel theſe *Barbarians* out of the Iſland, ſends to *Louis* and *Lotharius*, deſiring them to ſend Aid to the *Sicilians* at the firſt Opportunity. They were very ſhy of the Buſineſs, alledging, that that War belonged to *Michael* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*; but yet declared themſelves ready to contribute their ſhare of Men and Monies for the undertaking of it. But in the mean time, while Ambaſſadors were ſent from one to the other about that Affair, *Boniface* Earl of *Corſica*, with his Brother *Bertarius*, and the Aſſiſtance of ſome of the people of *Tuſcany*, ſailing into *Africa*, engaged four times with the Enemy between *Utica* and *Carthage*, where he made ſo great a ſlaughter, that the *Moors* were forced, as formerly in *Scipio*'s time, to re-call their Forces from *Sicily* to the Succour of their own Country in diſtreſs, and, by this means, *Sicily* was delivered from them. *Boniface* then returns with his victorious Fleet, laden with vaſt Spoils, from *Africa* into *Corſica*. Some there are that write, that, during this Peace in *Italy*, the Emperor *Lotharius*, envying the preference, that his Father *Louis* did in all matters give to his youngeſt Brother *Charles*, afterwards ſirnamed the *Bald*, he put him in Priſon, but ſoon after ſet him free; and that the *Barbarians*, taking hold of the opportunity, embark'd in a great Fleet from *Africa* for *Italy*, and arriv'd at *Centum-Cellæ*, which City (ſince call'd *Civita Vecchia*,) ſome will have to be demoliſh'd by 'em; and that from thence marching to *Rome*, they took that City: But this is not probable. What is ſaid concerning *Centum-Cellæ*, I ſhall not deny, and I doubt not, but that they attempted the taking of *Rome* it ſelf; but *Guy* Marqueſs of *Lombardy* defended it ſo ſtoutly, that, having burnt the Suburbs and the Churches of SS. *Peter* and *Paul* in the *Via Latina*, they withdrew to *Monte Caſſino*, where they deſtroyed the Town of S. *German* and the Monaſtery of S. *Benet*, which ſtood on the Hill, and going down to the Sea-ſide near the River *Garigliano*, (whither their Fleet was brought from *Oſtia*,) they invaded *Tarentum* and *Sicily*; and, as I ſaid before, were recall'd home by their own Country-men, at that time broken in War by the Valour of *Boniface*. I take it to be about this time, that the Body of the Apoſtle S *Bartholomew* was tranſlated from *Lipari* in *Sicily* to *Beneventum*, by *Sicardus*, Prince of that place, (who was perſonally preſent in this great War,) leſt the Body of the Holy Apoſtle ſhould fall into the hands of the Enemies of the Name of Chriſt. But to return to *Gregory*: He was a Perſon of ſo much Modeſty, that though he were choſen as well by the Clergy as people of *Rome*, yet he would not take upon him the Office of Pope, till he was confirmed by thoſe Ambaſſadors of the Emperor *Louis*, who had been diſpatch'd by him to *Rome*, that they might overſee an Election of ſo great moment. This was not done by *Louis* out of Pride, but with reſpect to the Preſervation of the Imperial Prerogative, he being naturally very kind and gracious, and one that always took care of the Dignity and Privileges of the Church. For he ordain'd, that they who ſhould take upon 'em a Religious Life, ſhould be exempt from all ſecular ſervices, and that every Church ſhould be endowed with ſuch a certain income, as that the Prieſts might live without being forced for want of Neceſſaries to forſake the Divine Service, or to take up any Trade. Beſide, in the Year 830. he held a Synod of a great many Biſhops, deſigned for the honour of God and the advantage of the Church, wherein it was ordained, that neither Biſhops nor Clergy, of what degree ſoever, ſhould be clad in ſumptuous and gaudy Apparel, whether Silk, Scarlet or embroidered; nor that they ſhould wear on their Fingers any precious ſtones, (except Prelates at Maſs) nor that Gold or Silver ſhould be uſed on their Girdles, Shooes or Pantofles, which certainly is far from all Religion, and a manifeſt ſign of great incontinence and vanity. Would to God, *Lewis*, thou mighteſt live in our times. Thy holy Inſtitutions, thy Cenſures are wanting in the Church at this preſent, when the Clergy let themſelves looſe to all manner of luxury and pleaſure. You may ſee now not only the Men in Scarlet and Purple, which perhaps would be no great matter, but even their Horſes and beaſts of Carriage; and when they march in State, a number of Footmen muſt go before them, and they muſt be follow'd by another retinue of Prieſts, not riding upon Aſſes, as Chriſt did, (who was the Author of our Religion, and the only pattern of well living on earth) but upon Steeds pamper'd and betrapped as if they came in triumph from a vanquiſh'd Enemy. 'Twould be to no purpoſe to ſpeak of their Silver Veſſels, their choice Houſhold-ſtuff and Diſhes of Meat, when in compariſon of them the Dainties of *Sicily*, the moſt magnificent Apparel and the Plate of *Corinth* would be thought of no value. What will be the effect of this Exorbitance I ſhall not determine here, leſt I ſhould ſeem to pry into the Decrees of Heaven. I return to *Lewis*, who by theſe means taking care as well for Religion as the Public Weal, died in the 36 year of his Empire, and lies buried in the Church of S. *Arnulphus*. He was not long after follow'd by our Pope *Gregory*, remarkable for his Birth, famous for his Sanctity, notable for Learning and Eloquence, and worthy of admiration for his care and diligence in both Spiritual and Civil Affairs: For he did after an extraordinary manner conſult the good of the People, by containing the Wealthy in their duty, by feeding the Poor, comforting the hopeleſs, and reducing thoſe that went aſtray into the right way by wholſom Admonitions; he alſo reſtor'd many Churches which time had ruined. Thoſe that were admitted to Holy Orders, he kept to their Duty as long as he liv'd by his advice and example. This holy Pope tranſlated the Body of S. *Gregory*, and very much adorning it, he placed it where now it lies, where many people in thoſe times, either out of Devotion, or for the ſake of ſome Vow, were wont to keep watch. 'Tis ſaid that the Bodies of S. *Sebaſtian* and *Tiburtius* were alſo tranſlated by him from the Cemeteries in which they lay before, to the Church of S. *Peter*. Some Authors ſay, that *Gregory*, at the requeſt of *Lewis*, inſtituted the Feaſt of *All-Saints* on the firſt day of *November*, which act of his was much commended both in Proſe and Verſe by *Rabanus* a Monk, a famous Divine; for in both thoſe ways of writing that learned Man was excellent, eſpecially conſidering the Age he liv'd in. The ſame *Rabanus* alſo wrote Commentaries on the Books of *Chronicles* and *Maccabees*. He made eloquent Sermons

mons to the People, but that of his, is chiefly celebrated, which he made upon *All-Saints* day. *Gregory* died in the 16th Year of his Pontificate, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, after which, the See was void Fifteen days.

SERGIVS.

SERGIVS the Second, a *Roman*, whoſe Father was Nam'd *Sergius*, of the Fourth Ward, came to the Popedom, at the ſame time that *Michael* Emperor of *Conſtantinople* died. 'Tis ſaid, that this *Sergius*, was Sirnamed *Bocca di Porco* or *Hogs-mouth*, which for ſhame of it, he changed for *Sergius*, and that from thence came the Cuſtom down to our times, that when any one is made Pope, he laid by his own Name, and took one of ſome of his Predeceſſors; though all have not obſerv'd it. However it was, 'tis certain, that *Sergius* came of a Noble Family, and degenerated not from his Anceſtors, being aſſiſted in his good Inclinations, by *Leo* III. *Stephen* IV. *Eugenius* II. and *Gregory* IV. under whoſe Tuition he lived ſo well, that upon the Death of *Gregory*, he alone was thought worthy of the Pontifical Dignity. At that time there was ſo great a feud, between the Sons of *Lewis*, about the diviſion of the Empire, that *Lewis* and *Charles* gave their Brother *Lotharius* Battel, in the Country of *Auxerre*, near *Fontenay*, where many on both ſides were ſlain; *Lotharius*, loſing the day, fled firſt to *Aken*, but being forc'd from thence, by the purſuing Enemy, he convey'd himſelf, with his Wife and Children to *Vienna*. Hither alſo he was follow'd by his Brother, with their Army, to whom not only many of the great Men of the Empire came, but ſeveral alſo were ſent by Pope *Sergius*, to endeavour to make Peace between them, the chief of whom was *George* Arch-Biſhop of *Ravenna*, who, having been before to make up the matter, was preſent with *Lotharius*, in the Second Battel, and the Victory inclining to *Charles* and *Lewis*, he loſt all his Train there (of 300 Horſemen,) and hardly eſcap'd alone from the Slaughter. But theſe Men, at laſt looking with pity upon the miſery and ruin, under which the whole Empire lay, procur'd a Peace upon theſe Terms, *viz.* That the *Weſtern* part of the Empire, which reach'd from the Britiſh Ocean to the *Maeſe*, ſhould be ſubject to *Charles*; and the Name of *Franks* ſhould continue to the Inhabitants: That all *Germany*, as far as the River *Rhine*, and ſo much on the other ſide of it, as his Father had been poſſeſs'd of, ſhould be allotted to *Lewis*; and that *Lotharius* ſhould, with the Title of Emperor, hold the City of *Rome*, with *Italy*, and that part of *France*, which was formerly call'd, *Gallia Narbonenſis*, now *Provence*. To this they added that Country lying between the Rivers *Scheld* and *Roan*, which, as I ſuppoſe, now took the Name of *Lotharingia*, [Lorain] from *Lotharius*. Matters being thus compoſed, *Lotharius* ſends his Son *Lewis*, whom he had taken into a Partnerſhip in the Empire, into *Italy* with a mighty Army, giving him for Companions, *Drogon* Biſhop of *Metz*, and others of the Clergy, eminent for Prudence and Gravity, by whoſe advice he was to govern himſelf.

But the young man, being puffed up with his great fortune whereſoever he marched, fill'd the Country with ſlaughter, rapine and deſtruction. Yet, when he approach'd the City, and the Citizens of *Rome* came out of reſpect to meet him, laying by his *Gauliſh* fierceneſs, he grew more mild, becauſe contrary to his expectation he found that he might enter the City without force of Arms. The Religious alſo came a mile out of the City to meet him with their Crucifixes, ſinging, *Bleſſed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hoſanna in the Higheſt.* Thus they accompanied him as far as the ſteps of S. *Peter*'s Church, where meeting the Pope, they reciprocally kiſſed and greeted each other, and went together to the Silver Gates which were not opened. Then ſaid the Pope, *If thou cameſt hither with peaceable and friendly intentions, and if thou haſt more regard to the advantage of Chriſtianity than to the pleaſure of exerciſing cruelty and rapine, then with my good will thou mayeſt enter; if thou art otherwiſe minded, touch not theſe Gates, for over thy head hangs a Sword, which will certainly avenge any ſuch wickedneſs.* But when he had given the Pope aſſurance, immediately the Doors were thrown open. Hereupon a multitude of *Romans* and *Franks* entring pel-mel, as ſoon as they came to the Altar of S. *Peter*, they all kneeling down together gave thanks to God Almighty and to the Prince of the Apoſtles, that matters had been carried according to their minds without hurt to any body; this was done upon the Monday after *Whitſon-day*. But ſoon after the Suburbs were ſack'd by the Soldiers, and it wanted little but that they had got into the City for the ſame end, ſo that the eighth day after their coming the Pope anointed *Lewis* with the holy Oil, crown'd him and declar'd him King of *Italy*. Soon after, came *Siconolfus*, Prince of *Beneventum*, to congratulate him, and then the multitude was ſuch, that the Trees were lopt, the Beaſts driven away, and even the Standing-corn cut down, that their Horſes might not want Provender. The Pope therefore eaſily agreed to all their requeſts, if they were reaſonable, that he might the ſooner rid the City of them; and the *Romans*, being now delivered from the fear of their tyrannical Barbarity, celebrated their Pope as the true Vicar of Chriſt and the only Father of his Country. He, betaking himſelf to the beautifying of Churches, reſtor'd that of SS. *Sylveſter* and *Martin*, which time had ruin'd; and in it, together with thoſe of the two Confeſſors, he placed the Bodies of *Fabianus*, *Stephanus*, *Sotherius*, *Aſterius*, *Cyriacus*, *Maurus*, *Smaragdus*, *Anaſtaſius*, *Innocentius*, *Quirinus*, *Leo*, *Arthemius*, *Theodorus* and *Nicander*. He built alſo, near that Church, from the foundation a Monaſtery dedicated to SS. *Peter* and *Paul*, where Maſs was inceſſantly ſung. But at laſt, this holy Pope having managed the affairs of the Church with great integrity and ſucceſs, in the third year of his Pontificate, died and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. The See was vacant upon his Death fifteen days.

LEO IV.

LEO the fourth, a *Roman*, Son of *Radulphus*, was, in the year 848. by a general conſent, elected Pope, and very deſervedly; for he was one that whilſt he liv'd a private life, was very eminent for Religion, Innocence, Piety, Good Nature, Liberality, and eſpecially for Eccleſiaſtical Learning. He was a perſon of ſo much Prudence and Courage, that as the Goſpel directs, he could, when it was neceſſary, imitate either the Wiſdom of the Serpent, or the Innocence of the Dove. So general was the good Report of him, that Pope *Sergius* II. was perſuaded to create this pattern of Virtue a Prieſt from a Sub-deacon, and to give him the Title and Church *Sanctorum quatuor Coronatorum*; from whence, upon the Death of *Sergius*, he was brought to the *Lateran* Church and plac'd in S. *Peter*'s Chair, being univerſally ſaluted as Pope, and all that were preſent, according to ancient Cuſtom, kiſſing his Feet. There are ſome of opinion, that by the prayers of this good Man it was, that God was mov'd to repreſs the rage of the *Saracens*, by drowning their Fleet as they were returning home laden with Spoil. For they, having overcome *Theodoſius*, Admiral to the Emperor *Michael* in a Sea-fight near *Tarentum*, ravaged far and near through *Italy* without oppoſition; and having taken and ſack'd *Ancona*, and harraſs'd the Coaſt of *Dalmatia*, when they were returning triumphantly to their own Country, it pleaſed God they were caſt away at Sea by ſtorm. So that *Leo*, being free from his fear of the *Saracens*, betook himſelf to publick works, and cauſed Benches of Marble to be plac'd in the entrance to the *Lateran* Cloiſter, and finiſhed the Gallery which *Leo* III. had begun. This good Prelate ordain'd, that yearly in the Church of S. *Paul*, on the Birth-day of that Apoſtle, Veſper's ſhould be ſaid by all the Clergy. He prohibited all Lay-men entrance into the Chancel during Divine Service. About this time, at his command, ſolemn Supplications were made to avert Gods anger, which the frequent Earthquakes ſeem'd to threaten. He adorned, after an extraordinary manner, the Croſs which *Charles* the Emperor had given to the *Baſilick Conſtantiniana*, which had been pilfer'd of the precious ſtones that belong'd to it. 'Tis ſure, he was a man of ſo great ſanctity, that, by his Prayers, he drove away out of an Arch in S. *Lucie*'s Church a Baſiliſc, (call'd by the Latins *Regulus*) which with its breath and poiſon had kill'd many; and by the ſign of the Croſs he ſtopp'd a great fire, which had burn'd down the quarter where the *Saracens* and *Lombards* liv'd, and reach'd very near S. *Peter*'s Church. This happened the eighth day after the Aſſumption of our Lady, which day was afterward kept as a Feſtival without the Walls, not far from S. *Laurence*'s Church, where ſtood a Church dedicated to the Bleſſed Virgin, to which this munificent Pope had made many donaries of Gold and Silver. Beſides this, he finiſhed the Moſaick work in the Churches of SS. *Martin* and *Sylveſter in montibus*, and the Pargetting which *Sergius* had begun, as the Inſcription ſhews, which is all that is left; the painting being long ſince periſh'd either for want of care or by time and rottenneſs. He took care alſo that the Croſs of Gold, which uſes to be born before the Pope, was deck'd with precious Stones, and neglected no manner of Ornament that might contribute to the honour of the Chriſtian name. He re-edified the City-Walls and Gates that had ſuffered by Age, and raiſed from the Ground fifteen Forts for the defence of the City; of which two were very neceſſary, one on the right, the other on the left hand of the *Tiber*, below the Hills *Janiculus* and *Aventinus*, to hinder the Ships of any Enemy from entring the Town. He by his diligence found out the Bodies of the *Sancti quatuor coronati*, and built a Church to them after a magnificent manner; and repoſited their Bodies under the Altar, viz. *Sempronianus*, *Claudius*, *Nicoſtratus*, *Caſtorius*; to which he added thoſe of *Severus*, *Severianus*, *Carpophorus*, *Victorinus*, *Marius*, *Feliciſſimus*, *Agapetus*, *Hippolytus*, *Aquila*, *Priſcus*, *Aquinus*, *Narciſſus*, *Marcellinus*, *Felix*, *Apollos*, *Benedict*, *Venantius*, *Diogenes*, *Liberalis*, *Feſtus*, *Marcellus* (the head of S. *Protus*) *Cecilia*, *Alexander*, *Sixtus*, *Sebaſtian*, *Praxedes*. But while he was diligently intent upon theſe Affairs, as became ſo holy a man, news was brought that the *Saracens* were coming with a huge Fleet to ſack the City, and that the *Neapolitans* and the Inhabitants upon that ſhore would come to his aſſiſtance; whereupon, with what forces he could raiſe he marches to *Oſtia*, and ſummoned thither the Auxiliaries, deſigning upon the firſt opportunity to fight the Enemy. But firſt this holy Pope exhorted his Souldiers to receive the Sacrament, which being devoutly perform'd, he prayed to God thus, "O God whoſe right hand did ſupport the "bleſſed *Peter* when he walked upon the Waves, and ſaved him from "drowning, and delivered from the deep his fellow-Apoſtle *Paul* when "he was thrice ſhipwrack'd, hear us mercifully and grant that for their "merits the hands of theſe thy faithful ones, fighting againſt the Ene"mies of thy holy Church, may by thy Almighty Arm be confirmed "and ſtrengthened; that thy holy Name may appear glorious before "all Nations in the Victory that ſhall be gained. Having pronounced this, by making the ſign of the Croſs he gave the ſignal for Battel, and the onſet was made by his Souldiers with great briskneſs, as if they had been ſure of Victory, which after a tedious Diſpute was theirs, the Enemies being put to flight; many of them periſh'd in the fight, but moſt were taken alive and brought to *Rome*; where the Citizens would have ſome of them hang'd without the City for a terror to the reſt, very much againſt the mind of *Leo*, who was very remarkable for Gentleneſs and Clemency, but it was not for him to oppoſe the rage of a multitude. Thoſe that were ſav'd alive *Leo* made uſe of in reedifying thoſe Churches which the *Saracens* had heretofore ruin'd and burnt, and in building the Wall about the *Vatican*, which from his own name he call'd *Urbs Leonina*. This he did leſt the Enemy ſhould with one ſlight aſſault take and ſack the Church of S. *Peter*, as heretofore they were wont. The Gates alſo had his Prayers, for upon that which leads to S. *Peregrin*, this was graven in Marble, "O God, who by gi"ving to thy Apoſtle S. *Peter* the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, didſt "confer upon him the Pontifical Authority of binding and looſing, grant "that by the help of his interceſſion we may be delivered from all "miſchievous Attempts, and that this City which now, with thy aſſiſtance, I have newly founded may be free for ever from thine anger, and may have many and great Victories over thoſe Enemies againſt whom it is built. And on the ſecond Gate near S. *Angelo*, that leads into the fields, were theſe words, “O God, who from the beginning of the World didſt vouchſafe to preſerve and eſtabliſh this holy Catholick and Apoſtolical Church of *Rome*, mercifully blot out the handwriting of our iniquity, and grant that this City which we, aſſiſted by the Interceſſion of the Apoſtles *Peter* and *Paul*, have newly dedicated to thy holy name, may remain ſecure from the evil machinations of its Enemies. The third was on the front of the Gate, by which we go to the *Saxons* School, in theſe words, “Grant, we beſeech thee, almighty and merciful God, that crying to thee with our whole heart, and the bleſſed Apoſtle *Peter* interceeding for us, we may obtain thy favour. We continually beg of thy mercy, that this City, which I thy ſervant *Leo* IV. Biſhop of *Rome*, have dedicated anew and called *Leonina* from my own name, may continue ſafe and proſperous. This City he began in the firſt year of his Pontificate, and finiſh'd in his ſixth, and gave it to be a habitation for the men of *Corſica*, who had been driven out of that Iſland by the *Saracens*, to each of whom alſo he aſſign'd a piece of ground for his maintenance. But I wonder now that another Inſcription is to be read on theſe Gates in dull Hexameter Verſe, which I cannot by any means think to be *Leo*'s, though it go under his name. Of the Spoils of the *Saracens* he made ſeveral donations of Gold and Silver to the Churches of *Rome*. Some write, that 'twas by his command that S. *Mary*'s Church in the new ſtreet and the Tower in the *Vatican* next S. *Peter*'s, now to be ſeen, were built. Beſide, he reſtor'd the Silver-door of S. *Peter* which had been pillaged by the *Saracens*. He held a Synod of 47 Biſhops, wherein *Anaſtaſius* Presbyter, Cardinal of S. *Marcellus*, was by the Papal Canons convicted of ſeveral Crimes, upon which he was condemned and excommunicate, the chief allegation being, that for five years he had not reſided in the Pariſh. Moreover he brought Colonies from *Sardinia* and *Corſica*, (which now upon the repulſe of the *Saracens* had ſome reſpite,) and planted them in *Hoſtia*, which partly by reaſon of the unhealthineſs of the Air, and partly by being ſo often plunder'd was left without Inhabitants. Laſtly, he fully ſatisfied *Lotharius*, who, having been informed that *Leo* was upon a deſign of tranſlating the Empire to the *Conſtantinopolitans*, came himſelf to *Rome*. But the Informers being caught in Lies received condign puniſhment, and the friendſhip was on both ſides renewed. 'Tis ſaid that *Johannes Scotus*, a learned Divine, lived at this time, who coming into *France*, by the command of K. *Lewis*, tranſlated S. *Dionyſius*'s Book *de Hierarchia* out of Greek into Latin, but was ſoon after, as they ſay, ſtabbed with a Bodkin by ſome of his Scholars: But the occaſion of this villanous act is not any where recorded. 'Tis ſaid too, that now *Ethelwolph*, K. of *England*, out of devotion, made his Country tributary to the Church of *Rome*, by charging a penny yearly upon every houſe. Our holy Pope *Leo* having deſerved well of the Church of God, of the City of *Rome*, and of the whole Chriſtian name for his Wiſdom, Gravity, Diligence, Learning and the magnificence of his Works, died in the eighth year, third month and ſixth day of his Pontificate, on the 17 day of *July*, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. The See was then void two months and fifteen days.

JOHN VIII.

JOHN VIII.

JOHN, of Engliſh Extraction, but born at *Mentz*, is ſaid to have arrived at the Popedom by evil Arts; for diſguiſing her ſelf like a Man, whereas ſhe was a Woman, ſhe went when young with her Paramour, a learned man, to *Athens*, and made ſuch progreſs in Learning under the Profeſſors there, that coming to *Rome*, ſhe met with few that could equal, much leſs go beyond her, even in the knowledge of Scriptures; and by her learned and ingenious readings and diſputations, ſhe acquired ſo great reſpect and authority, that upon the Death of *Leo*, as *Martin* ſays, by common conſent, ſhe was choſen Pope in his room. But ſuffering afterward one of her Domeſticks to lie with her, ſhe hid her Big-belly a while, till as ſhe was going to the *Lateran* Church, between the *Coloſſean* Theatre (ſo called from *Nero*'s Coloſs,) and S. *Clement*'s, her Travail came upon her and ſhe died upon the place, having ſat two years, one month and four days, and was buried there without any pomp. Some ſay, the Pope for ſhame of the thing does purpoſely decline going through that ſtreet when he goes to the *Lateran*, and that to avoid the like Error, when any Pope is firſt plac'd in the Porphyry Chair, which has a hole made for the purpoſe, his Genitals are handled by the youngeſt Deacon. As for the firſt I deny it not; but for the ſecond, I take the reaſon of it to be, that he who is plac'd in ſo great authority may be minded that he is not a God but a man, and obnoxious to neceſſities of Nature, as of eaſing his body, whence that Seat hath the name of *Sedes ſtercoraria*. This ſtory is vulgarly told, but by very uncertain and obſcure Authors, and therefore I have related it barely and in ſhort, leſt I ſhould ſeem obſtinate and pertinacious if I had omitted what is ſo generally talk'd; I had better miſtake with the reſt of the World; though it be certain, that what I have related may be thought not altogether incredible. Some ſay, that at this time the Body of S. *Vincent* was brought by a Monk from *Valentia* in *Spain*, to a Village in *Albigeois* in *France*. They ſay too, that *Lotharius* being now aged, taking on him a Monaſtick habit, left the Empire to his Son *Lewis*, who paſſing into *Germany*, by his preſence compoſed matters there which otherwiſe threatned a War.

BENEDICT III.

BENEDICT the third, by Birth a *Roman*, Son of *Peter*; he was deſervedly called *Benedictus* for the Sanctity of his Life, and his knowledge in Divinity. For while he lived under *Gregory*, he was made by him Sub-Deacon, and thenceforward led ſo exemplary a Life, that upon the Death of *Leo*, he only was thought worthy to ſucceed ſo great a Pope. To him therefore they addreſs themſelves, as to a kind Angel by God ſent down to them, and preſently declare him Pope. He weeping and calling God and his holy Saints to witneſs, profeſſed himſelf utterly unworthy of ſo high a dignity. But the Election being univerſally lik'd and applauded, he at laſt unwillingly accepted of the Office, was brought to the *Lateran* and plac'd in S. *Peter*'s Chair, whence he was led upon a white Horſe to the Church of S. *Mary maggiore*, where he ſpent three days in Faſting and Prayer, begging God to grant that he might govern his Church with integrity and holineſs. The third day paſt, the People came thither again, and according to cuſtom, kiſſed his feet, eſpecially thoſe of the faction of *Rhodoardus* Biſhop of *Porto*, who the day before had attempted to ſet up inſtead of *Benedict* one *Anaſtaſius* an obſcure man, who had been turned out of his Biſhoprick by *Leo*; but now finding their error, they asked pardon, and becoming of the right opinion, they alſo made the uſual adoration to this holy man. As likewiſe did the Embaſſadors ſent to *Rome* by the Emperor *Lewis*, to confirm the Election of the Clergy and Laity. The next day he was attended by the People to S. *Peter's* Church, where being, according to cuſtom and ancient tradition, publickly conſecrated, he received the *inſignia* of his Office with unanimous ſhouts and acclamations. For he was a man of ſo ſweet a Temper, and ſo great modeſty both in his Mind and Aſpect, that as well in his publick managements as in his private Station, he gain'd the Love and Reſpect of all men. And now ſetting his mind on the Service of God, he repaired many Churches, almoſt tottering with age, and increaſed their Treaſures. He ordained, that the Pope and Clergy ſhould accompany the Funerals of Biſhops, Prieſts and Deacons, as well to honour their Corps as to pray for their Souls; and that the Clergy ſhould in like manner attend the Funerals of Popes; and what he had thus ordained himſelf obſerved punctually as long as he lived, for he was always preſent at the Burials of Prieſts. He was a frequent viſiter of the Sick, a nurſing father to the Poor, a comforter of the Miſerable and Hopeleſs, a zealous patron of the Widow and Fatherleſs. And in thus doing, having ſpent a moſt holy life, late enough for himſelf, but too ſoon for the people of *Rome*, he died, having ſat two years, ſix months and nine days, and was buried before S. *Peter*'s Church-doors. The See was then vacant fifteen days.

NICOLAS I.

NICOLAS the firſt, a *Roman* born, Son of *Theodoſius*, was ingenuouſly and religiouſly educated from his Childhood, and made firſt Sub-deacon by *Sergius*, then Deacon by *Leo.* In which Order he ſtood, when with great piety and many tears he laid the Body of *Benedict* in the Grave, whoſe Exequies being perform'd, it was neceſſary to think of a Succeſſor, and the People hereupon preſs'd the Divine Majeſty with prayers, watchings and faſtings, that he would vouchſafe them as good a Pope, as him they had loſt. After a long conſultation in the Church of S. *Denys* Pope and Confeſſor, (where they convened for this purpoſe) they choſe this *Nicolas*, Pope; but he was abſent and upon hearing the news fled into the *Vatican*, and there hid himſelf to avoid the Dignity, where at length they found him, brought him to the *Lateran*, and plac'd him, however unwilling, in the Apoſtolical Chair. Being conſecrated in S. *Peter*'s Church, and agreeably to cuſtom having put on the Pontifical Mitre, he concerted ſeveral affairs with the Emperor *Lewis* relating to the Popedom and to the Empire. *Lewis*, afterwards leaving *Rome*, ſtaid at a place the *Romans* call *Quinto*, whither, 'tis ſaid, *Nicolas* went attended by the great men of the City, and was honourably received, for the Emperor came a mile to meet him, and alighting took his Horſe-bridle in his hand and led him into the Camp. And indeed he was a man of ſo great Veneration and Majeſty, and of ſo much Learning and Eloquence, that, like the Deity, he forc'd reſpect from all men. After ſome repaſt, they held a long and private Conference, and then having kiſſed each other, the Pope return'd to *Rome*; which he found ſo overflow'd by an extraordinary riſe of the *Tiber*, that there was no paſſing from ſtreet to ſtreet but in boats. S. *Laurence*'s Church and the Monaſtery of S. *Sylveſter*, with all the low part between *Via lata*, *Campidoglio* and the *Aventine* was ſo much under water, that another deluge was feared; many houſes were born down by it, Trees forc'd up by the roots, and Corn that was ſown was quite waſh'd away; and the ſame happened again the ſame year in *December.* To make up theſe loſſes, or to make them more tolerable, the Pope omitted no manner of good Office or kindneſs to the Citizens. Bt this time *Michael*, Son of *Theophilus*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, ſent Embaſſadors with Preſents to *Rome*, to viſit the Apoſtolick See and his Holineſs. The Preſents were a large Paten and Chalice of Gold with precious Stones of great value. This was that *Michael*, who having taken *Baſilius* to be his Partner in the Empire, was murdered by him, that he might reign alone. His Embaſſadors were kindly received and ſent home with Preſents. *Nicolas*, being earneſtly intent upon the Conſervation of the Pontifical Dignity, deprived *John* Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna*, for refuſing to obey a Citation from the Apoſtolick Chair to anſwer ſome accuſations. Whereupon he goes to *Pavia*, and procures of the Emperor *Lewis* commendatory Letters to the Pope, and to his Embaſſadors, that they ſhould get leave, that Arch-biſhop

ſhop *John* ſhould have a ſafe conduct to come to *Rome* and plead his own Cauſe, which the Pope readily granted: And *John*, in a great convention of Prelates, being allowed liberty of Speech, only confeſſed himſelf guilty, and beg'd pardon of the Pope and of all that were preſent. By which Confeſſion and the Interceſſion of the Auditors, the Pope was perſuaded to receive him into favour upon theſe conditions; That he ſhould recant his Error before the Synod; that he ſhould promiſe to come to *Rome* once a year, if poſſible; that he ſhould not be capable of conſecrating any Biſhop in *Romagna*, however canonically elected, without leave firſt obtain'd from the See Apoſtolick; and that he ſhould not hinder any of thoſe Biſhops from coming to *Rome*, as often as they pleaſed; that he ſhould not introduce any exaction, cuſtom or uſage, contrary to the ſacred Canons; and laſtly, that, under the penalty of *Anathema*, he ſhould not alter or meddle with the Treaſure of the holy Church without the conſent of the Pope, nor ſhould without the ſame allowance receive any thing ſecular. Theſe holy Inſtitutions were ſo highly approved by the whole Synod, that thrice they all ſhouted, "Righteous is the judgment of the Supream Prelate, juſt is the decree "of the Univerſal Biſhop: All Chriſtians agree to this wholſom Inſti"tution. We all ſay, think and judge, the ſame thing. Then *John*, in the ſight of them all, took his Oath and gave it under his hand that he would obſerve the Articles. Thus the Convocation was diſſolved and *John* returned to *Ravenna*. The Pope, having overcome this trouble, rebuilt the Church of our Lady, (then called the *Old*, afterwards the *New*, Church) and adorned it with excellent Paintings. He, by Letters and good Admonitions, converted the King of *Bulgaria* to the Chriſtian Faith with all his Realm, to whom he ſent Biſhops and Prieſts to confirm the young Proſelytes, driving out *Photinus* who had craftily diſſeminated erroneous Opinions among them. He procured a Peace between *Lewis* the Emperor and *Andaliſio* Duke of *Benevent*, and repelled the *Saracens*, who had made an Incurſion as far as the ſame *Benevent*. Laſtly, with the conſent of the Emperor, he decreed, that no Emperor or other Lay-man ſhould thruſt himſelf into any Convocation of the Clergy, except the debate was concerning matters of Faith, and then his Opinion was, that they might reaſonably be preſent. 'Tis ſaid, that at this time S. *Cyril* brought the Body of S. *Clement* from the *Cherſoneſe* in *Pontus* to *Rome*, and placed it in the Church now called S. *Clement*'s, where a little while after, himſelf alſo was buried. *Nicolas* now, who was a great exemplar of all the Virtues one man could be endued with, died the ſeventh year, ninth month, and thirteenth day of his Pontificate, and was buried, according to his laſt Will, in S. *Peter*'s Church-porch. Some Authors ſay, that the See was then vacant eight years, ſeven months, and nine days.

HADRIAN II.

HADRIAN the ſecond, a *Roman*, Son of *Talarus*, a Biſhop, was a familiar friend of Pope *Sergius*, who having once given him forty *Julio*'s, when he came home he gave them to his Steward to give to the Beggers and poor Strangers, that were at his door; which the Steward going to do, ſaw the number was ſo great, that 'twould not ſerve a quarter of them, and ſo he return'd and told *Hadrian*: Who hereupon takes the Money, and, coming to the poor folks, gave every one three *Julio*'s, and reſerv'd to himſelf as many for his own uſe; at which Miracle the Steward being aſtoniſhed, "Doſt thou "ſee, (ſays *Hadrian*) how good and bountiful the Lord is to thoſe that "are liberal and charitable to the Poor? By this and other Virtues he grew into ſo high eſtimation with all men, that when the Conſultation was held for making a new Pope, they unanimouſly elected him, and brought him againſt his will from the Church of S. *Mary ad Præſepe* to the *Lateran*, and immediately created him Pope, not regarding the conſent of any perſon in a proceeding ſo tumultuary; which gave great offence to the Embaſſadors of the Emperor, who came on purpoſe upon this occaſion, but could not, as they ought, interpoſe the Imperial Authority in this Election. But ſatisfaction was made to them by remonſtrating, that it was impoſſible in ſo great a tumult to moderate the violent inclinations of the multitude; they were deſired therefore to concur with the Clergy and People, and, according to cuſtom, to congratulate as Pope this excellent man, whom they had choſen: This at laſt the Embaſſadors did, though they ſaw plainly, that the Clergy and People did arrogate to themſelves the full power of creating a Pope, without expecting the conſent of any Temporal prince; and this perhaps in order to enlarge the Liberties of holy Church by making it a Cuſtom. Soon after arrived Letters from *Lewis*, highly applauding this action of the *Romans*, and commending them, that they had proceeded ſo religiouſly and ſincerely in this Affair; without waiting for the approbation of any one, whoſe ignorance of the fitneſs of the Candidates might render them incompetent Judges in the caſe. "For how (ſaid he) "can it be, that one, that is a Foreiner and a Stranger, ſhould be able "in another Country to diſtinguiſh who is moſt worthy? To the "Citizens therefore does it properly belong, and to thoſe who have had "familiarity with, and knowledge of, the Competitors. *Hadrian* then, being made Pope, took diligent care of all matters relating to Religion, and, by word, example and authority, both of himſelf and his Predeceſſors, exhorted all men to good and holy lives, particularly he ſhew'd himſelf a ſtrenuous defender of thoſe, that had been oppreſſed by Injuſtice and the power of great men. He cauſed a Council to be called at *Conſtantinople*, where *Photius*, a ſeditious perſon, was depoſed, and *Ignatius* reſtored, who had been wrongfully turned out before. In this Council a long debate was held, whether the *Bulgarians* (whoſe Embaſſadors were preſent) ſhould be ſubject to the *Roman* or Conſtantinopolitan

litan See; And by the favour of the Emperor *Baſilius* they were adjudged to the See of *Rome*, whereupon the *Bulgarians* making their applications to *Hadrian*, that ſome man of good life and ability might be ſent into their Country, by whoſe authority and example they might be retain'd in the Chriſtian Faith, he ſent three moſt religious Men, with plenary power to ſettle the Churches there as they ſhould ſee fit. They were *Sylveſter* the Sub-deacon, *Leopardus* of *Ancona*, and *Dominic* of *Treviſa*, who ſoon compoſed the whole Affair to the Pope's mind; though 'twas not long, ere the *Bulgarians*, corrupted with gifts and promiſes by the *Conſtantinopolitans*, expell'd the *Latin* Prieſts and received the *Greeks*; and this Sedition gave occaſion to many quarrels betwixt the Greeks and Latins. *Hadrian* ſtill oppoſing himſelf to all the Enemies of the Church, as much as was poſſible, when he was about to anoint *Charles* Emperor in the room of *Lewis* now deceaſed, died himſelf in the fifth year, ninth month and twelfth day of his Popedom. A little before his death, it rained Blood for three days together at *Breſcia*, and *France* was miſerably waſted with Locuſts; both certain preſages of his much lamented death.

JOHN IX.

JOHN the ninth, a *Roman*, Son of *Gundo*, aſſoon as he was made Pope, declared *Charles* (ſirnamed the *Bald*, who came to *Rome* for that purpoſe) Emperor, which ſo enrag'd the Sons of his elder Brother *Lewis* King of *Germany*, (*Charles* ſirnam'd the Groſs and *Caroloman*) that, levying an Army, they invade *Italy*, reſolving to deprive their Uncle of his Crown and Life. *Charles* hereupon makes haſte towards *Verona* with his forces, intending to cut off the paſſage of his Nephews by *Trent*, but was taken ill at *Mantua*, and there poiſon'd (as 'twas thought) by one *Zedechias* a *Jew*, whom he made uſe of for a Phyſician. Upon this news, Pope *John* uſed his utmoſt endeavour, that *Charles* his Son *Lewis* (ſirnamed the *Stammerer*) King of *France*, might be made Emperor; but the great men of *Rome* oppoſed it, deſiring rather that *Charles* III. King of *Germany* might ſucceed, who, with his Brother *Caroloman*, had now over-run a great part of *Italy*. So great was the Sedition, that though many favour'd *Lewis*, yet they took the Pope and clapp'd him in priſon. But by the help of ſome Friends, he ſoon made his eſcape into *France* to *Lewis*, where he ſtaid a year, anointed him King, and ended ſome Controverſies depending between the Eccleſiaſticks. For *Gibertus* Biſhop of *Niſmes* had by force turned *Leo* an Abbat out of his Monaſtery. This Monaſtery was dedicated to S. *Peter*, and in it lay buried the body of S. *Giles*, it is ſituate in a place called *Flaviano*, from a Valley of that name given to S. *Giles* by a certain King named *Flavius*, and he built there a Monaſtery to the honour of SS. *Peter* and *Paul*. The Pope, in the preſence of many Biſhops and Judges, heard the Cauſe, and adjudg'd the Monaſtery to *Leo*. This was done at *Arles*, from whence *John* departing with the approbation of *Lewis* he held a Council at *Troyes*, where he made ſeveral Decrees about religious affairs, and appointed a Biſhop for the *Flemings*, who, having left their Woods and faſtneſſes, now betook themſelves to an orderly way of living. But *Italy* all this while being harraſed by the *Saracens*, who had taken and plundered the Monaſtery of *Monte-Caſſino*, *John* was call'd home to *Rome*, and, with the help of ſome Chriſtian Princes, drave the greateſt part of them out of *Italy* and *Sicily*; and at laſt, that he might live the more quietly in the City, he plac'd the Imperial Crown on the head of *Charles* III. who quickly after marching againſt the *Normans*, then infeſting the borders of *France* and *Lorain*, defeated them ſo, that their King *Rothifredus* was forc'd to ſue for peace and to become a Chriſtian, the Emperor himſelf being his Godfather and taking him into favour. This writes *Anaſtaſius* the *Roman* Library-keeper, who was then highly in vogue, being ſo ſkilful in both Tongues, that, by the perſuaſion of the Emperor *Charles*, he tranſlated out of Greek into elegant Latin the ſeventh General Council, and *Dionyſius* the *Areopagite*'s Book *de Hierarchiâ*, with the Lives of ſeveral Saints. Some ſay, that this *Charles* built many Monaſteries and was liberal to the Church; but 'tis certain, that it was his particular commendation, that he put many Learned men upon writing, for *Milo*, a Monk of S. *Amand*, wrote the Life of that Saint very exactly, and *Joannes Scotus* did very ſolidly and acutely handle many points of our Religion. Nor was our Pope *John* without deſert in the ſame way, having while he was Deacon excellently compoſed the Life of *Gregory* I. in four Books. When he had ſat ten years and two days, he died and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church.

MARTIN II.

MARTIN the ſecond, a *Frenchman*, Son of *Palumbus*, ſucceeded *John*. Some, perhaps deceived by the likeneſs of the names, call him *Marinus*. This *Martin* (the ſtory of whoſe Life is ſo ſhort, becauſe of the ſmall time he held the Chair) was Pope at the time when the Sons of *Baſilius*, *Leo* and *Alexander*, were Emperors in the Eaſt, and *Charles* III. in the Weſt; who, we told you, was crowned by *John* VIII. and who broke the forces of the *Normans*, infeſting *France* in ſo many Battels, that he forced them to ſubmit to him and receive the Chriſtian Faith. Some write, that 'twas this *Martin*, that with his tricks (of which ſomewhat will be ſaid in the Life of *Formoſus*) did ſo plague Pope *John* with Seditions, as to get him thrown into priſon and force him to flie. But having by ill means gotten the Popedom, he ſoon died, having ſat but one year and five days, and in that time doing nothing remarkable, either becauſe his time was ſhort, or becauſe no occaſion offered it ſelf from whence he could acquire repute; except we may ſuppoſe it to be the Will of God, that thoſe, who attain to Power by indirect means, ſhould loſe that true glory, which is the chief aim of every good Prince.

HADRIAN III.

HADRIAN the third, a *Roman*, Son of *Benedict*, was a man of ſo great a Spirit, that immediately upon his entrance on the Popedom, *An. Dom.* 895. he propoſed to the Senate and People, that a Law ſhould paſs, that no regard ſhould hereafter be given to the Authority of the Emperor in the creation of any Pope, but that the Election of the Clergy and People ſhould be free; this Inſtitution was rather attempted than begun before, by *Nicolas* I. as was ſaid; but, I believe, *Hadrian* took now the opportunity, when the Emperor *Charles* was march'd with his Army out of *Italy* againſt the Rebellious *Normans*. He went with a deſign utterly to extirpate that unquiet people; but perceiving that would be difficult, and not to be done without great ſlaughter of his own Men, he granted them that part of *France* to live in, which lies beyond the River *Seine*, and is ſtill called from the name of the people, *Normandy*. They were bound to pay a yearly tribute to the Crown of *France*, to mind them that they ſtood poſſeſs'd of the Country, not by their own power, but by the bounty of the Emperor *Charles*. At this time, *William* ſirnamed the *Godly*, Duke of *Aquitain* and Earl of *Auvergne*, not having any Heirs male, began magnificently to build the Monaſtery of *Clagny* in his Fathers Mannor, in a Village of *Burgundy*, and made *Berno* Abbat of the place, having ſet out an Income for the maintenance of the Monks: But he dying left it unfiniſhed, having conſtituted *Ebbo*, Earl of *Poictou*, his Heir, who ſhould take care, according to his laſt Will, of the whole matter. And now *Hadrian*, of whom, for his Courage and haughty Spirit, the Clergy and People of *Rome* had conceived ſo great hopes, died in the firſt Year, and ſecond Month of his Popedom, and was buried in S. *Peter's* Church, with the general lamentation of the People for the unſeaſonable loſs of ſuch a Father.

STEPHEN V.

STEPHEN the fifth, a *Roman*, Son of one *Hadrian* of the *Via lata*, was made Pope, at the time when the *Normans*, aſſiſted by the *Danes*, contrary to their Treaties, had well-nigh over-run all *France*. For fear of theſe Invaders, the body of S. *Martin* was carried from *Tours* to *Auxerre*, and plac'd in the Church of S. *German*; which begot a feud among the Monks, who could not agree by the name of which of the two Saints the Church ſhould be called; to ſolve this doubt, they took this way; They ſet a Leper in the midſt between the two Saints Bodies, who grew whole only on that ſide which was towards S. *Martin*, and then turning the other ſide towards him, he was quite healed. This Miracle determined the Controverſie, which S. *German* is thought to have ſuffered his new Gueſt to perform, leſt it ſhould be thought, that the Body had loſt any of its Sanctity by being tranſlated. Authors ſay, that during this Popes time, *Charles* the *Groſs*, who had been Emperor twelve years, was depoſed by his Nobles for his Sloth and Dulneſs, and *Arnulphus* his Nephew was ſet up in his ſtead, who was the ſeventh Emperor from *Charles* the Great. This troubleſom ſtate of things tempted the *Huns*, a *Scythian* Nation, (according to *Vincentius* and *Martinus*,) to make a deſcent into *Pannonia*, where joyning their Brother-Tribe, the *Hungari*, they poſſeſſed themſelves of the Country, driving thence the *Gepidi* and *Avares*; and from hence marching with their Forces into *Germany*, they pierced as far as *Burgundy*, deſtroying all with fire and ſword. *Stephen* in this confuſion of Affairs, was yet not a little comforted with the Sanctity of *Luithprandus* Deacon of *Pavia*, *Waldrad* of *Bavaria*, and *Bernard* of *Picardy*, by whoſe Lives and Converſation the Chriſtian Religion got ſo great Reverence, that many Monaſteries and Churches were ſumptuouſly built throughout *France*. In the ſixth year and eleventh day of his Papacy, he died, and the See was vacant five days.

FORMOSUS.

FORMOSUS, Biſhop of *Porto*, ſucceeded *Stephen*, and, in the beginning of his Pontificate adorned S. *Peter*'s Church with ſome ſlight Paintings. This *Formoſus* had formerly, for fear of Pope *John*, left his Biſhoprick and fled to *France*; and denying to return when he was recalled, he was anathematized, and then coming to *Rome* he was deprived of all his Preferments Eccleſiaſtical, and put on profane manners with his ſecular habit. Some think, the reaſon that *Formoſus* was thus proſecuted, was, for that he was a Party, if not a Ring-leader of the Faction, that put *John* into priſon. However *Formoſus* was ſo enraged at this hard uſage, that he ſwore he would never return either to *Rome* or to his Biſhoprick; but Pope *Martin*, who ſucceeded *John*, abſolved him from his Oath, and reſtored him to his Country and to his former Dignity, whence not long after he came to the Popedom, rather by bribery than for the ſake of any good that was in him, many Men oppoſing his Election. *Arnulphus* now, the ſeventh Emperor from *Charles* the Great, as we ſaid before, marching valiantly againſt the ſtill rebellious *Normans* gave them ſeveral Overthrows, but was too much puffed up with his ſucceſs, and became ſo intolerably imperious to all men, eſpecially to the Clergy, that it pleaſed God, he died ſoon after of the louſie Diſeaſe. In whoſe room *Lewis* was put up for Emperor, but we read not that he was ever Crowned, for (as *Martinus* writes) *Berengarius*, Duke of *Friuli*, deſcended of the old Kings of *Lombardy*, renewing his claim to the Kingdom of his Anceſtors, and bringing his pretenſions to the deciſion of War, though at firſt he was overcome by *Lewis*, yet giving him Battel again at *Verona*, *Lewis* was vanquiſhed, and with great ſlaughter of his men, being taken Priſoner, had his eyes put out. And thus the Empire, which the *Franks* had enjoyed almoſt 100 years, was transferred to the *Lombards*, *Conſtantine* the Son of *Leo* being Emperor of the Eaſt. I know not how it fell out, that at this ſame time that the Emperors ſhewed ſo little Courage, the Popes too were as greatly wanting in Virtue and Integrity, which rendr'd thoſe times very miſerable, Subjects being very apt (as *Plato* ſays) to follow the Examples of their Princes. I return to *Formoſus*, whoſe times (leſt they ſhould have been the moſt unhappy that ever were) were honour'd with the Learning and good Life of *Remigius* of *Auxerre*, who wrote divers Commentaries, eſpecially upon the Goſpel of SS. *Matthew* and *Paul's* Epiſtles. Some ſay indeed, that Author was not the perſon of whom I ſpeak, but *Remigius* of *Rhemes*; however that be, 'tis certain, they were both very learned men. *Formoſus* died in the fifth year and ſixth month of his Pontificate, and the See was vacant two days.

BONIFACE VI.

BONIFACE the ſixth, a *Tuſcan*, was created Pope in the room of the deceaſed *Formoſus*, but how long he continued in the Papacy is a great queſtion, for ſome Writers ſay longer, others ſay ſhorter. I am of opinion with the moſt, that he ſat but twenty ſix days, and that which makes me think ſo, is, that Hiſtorians make little or no mention at all of him; and how can it be, that (as ſome ſay) he ſhould ſit twelve years in the Chair of S. *Peter*, and yet his Reign be paſt over unregarded? I have plac'd him therefore in the Catalogue of Popes, not for any thing done by him, for he did nothing, (indeed, what could be expected to be done in ſo ſhort a time?) but becauſe he was regularly and canonically elected Pope. He died, as I ſaid before, in the 26. day of his Pontificate, and was buried in S. *Peter's* Church.

STEPHEN VI.

STEPHEN the ſixth, a *Roman*, Biſhop of *Anagni*, being made Pope, perſecuted the memory of *Formoſus* with ſo much ſpite, that he abrogated his Decrees and reſcinded all he had done, though, 'tis ſaid, that 'twas *Formoſus* that conferred the Biſhoprick of *Anagni* upon him. But this I take to be the effect of his Ambition; the Clergy being come to that paſs, that they were ſo far from needing compulſion, as formerly, to take upon them the Pontificate, that now they ſought it with bribery; and hence it was, that *Stephen*, becauſe *Formoſus* had hindred him before of this deſired Dignity, exerciſed his rage even upon his dead body; for *Martin* the Hiſtorian ſays, he hated him to that degree, that, in a Council which he held, he ordered the Body of *Formoſus* to be dragg'd out of the Grave, to be ſtripp'd of his Pontifical habit and put into that of a Lay-man, and then to be buried among ſecular perſons, having firſt cut off thoſe two Fingers of his right Hand, which are principally uſed by Prieſts in Conſecration, and thrown them into the *Tiber*, becauſe, contrary to his Oath, as he ſaid, he had returned to *Rome* and exerciſed his Sacerdotal Function, from which Pope *John* had legally degraded him. This proved a great Controverſie and of very ill example; for the ſucceeding Popes made it almoſt a conſtant cuſtom either to break or abrogate the Acts of their Predeceſſors, which was certainly far different from the practice of any of thoſe good Popes, whoſe lives we have written. In our own time, *Paul* II. a *Venetian*, had like to have taken upon him the name of *Formoſus*, (which would have been agreeable enough to him, being a proper man and of a venerable aſpect) but that the Cardinals, remembring this ſtory, diſſuaded him, leſt that ſhould happen to him after his Death, which did to this *Formoſus*; but *Paul* was hardly wrought upon, as thinking nothing, but this name, to be wanting to his Felicity. Mean time, the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, taking occaſion from the ſloth of the Popes, ſends one *Symbaticus*, a Nobleman, his Sword-bearer with an Army into *Italy*, who after a Siege of three months takes *Beneventum*, after it had been in the poſſeſſion of the *Lombards* 330 years; but three years after, *Guy* of *Lombardy* retook it and drove out the *Greeks*, and ſo it fell to the *Lombards* again. But to return to *Stephen*; he died in the firſt year and third month of his Papacy, and the See was vacant three days after his death.

ROMANVS.

ROMANVS, a *Roman*, aſſoon as he was got into the Pontificate, diſavowed and reſcinded all the Acts and Decrees of *Stephen*. And indeed theſe * Popelings ſtudied nothing elſe but to extinguiſh the memory and honour of their Predeceſſors, than which nothing is more miſchievous, or a more certain ſign of a narrow Soul; for they that truſt to ſuch tricks as theſe, are only ſuch, as, wanting all manner of Virtue, endeavour to rob the well-deſerving of that Fame, which themſelves can never attain to. Indeed, you ſhall never find any man envying the good name of another, but one, that, being obnoxious to all manner of reproach, is hopeleſs of rendring his own name honourable to Poſterity. Such men as theſe maliciouſly, falſly and craftily backbite, ſlander and find fault with thoſe, that have deſerved well of Mankind, like uſeleſs and cowardly Dogs, that dare not ſeize a wild Beaſt, but will venture to ſnap at them when they are faſt chain'd. I was oblig'd however, at leaſt, to mention this Pope *Romanus*, becauſe he obtain'd S. *Peter*'s Chair after the ordinary manner, in which after he had ſat three months, he died.

* Pontificuli. *Ed.* 1551.

THEODORVS II.

THEODORVS the ſecond, a *Roman*, follow'd the ſteps of theſe Mutineers, for he reſtored the Decrees of *Formoſus* and preferred his Friends. *Arnulphus* (according to ſome Writers) ſtill rul'd in *Italy*; and in *France*, *Charles* the Simple; *Conſtantine*, the Son of *Leo*, being Emperor of the Eaſt; at which time, the *Saracens*, invading *Apulia*, poſſeſſed themſelves of

Mount S. *Angelo*, and took abundance of Men and Cattel; but the *Italians* haſtily got together an Army, ſet upon them and recovered all, with great ſlaughter of the Enemies. While Affairs went thus in *Italy*, *William* Earl of *Angoleſm*, ſirnamed *Sector-ferri*, of the Linage of *Charles* the Bald, ordered the Reliques, which had been taken from the *Chartreux* Fryers, at the time of the *Norman* Invaſion, to be reſtored; for now that the *Normans* were quieted, he perceived there would be ſome uproar about them, if they were not reſtored. Who the *Normans* were, is not on all hands agreed; but they are ſaid to have come into *France* from *Norway*. *Theodorus*, in the 20th day of his Papacy died, leaving, through the ſhortneſs of his time, nothing memorable of himſelf.

JOHN X.

JOHN the tenth, a *Roman*, was next created Pope, and immediately reaſſerted the Cauſe of *Formoſus*, a great part of the People of *Rome* being againſt it, who raiſed ſuch a tumult, that it wanted little of a Battel. He therefore remov'd to *Ravenna*, where, calling a Synod of ſeventy four Biſhops, he damns all, that *Stephen* had done, and reſtores the Decrees of *Formoſus*, declaring it irregularly done of *Stephen* to re-ordain thoſe on whom *Formoſus* had conferred Holy Orders. Theſe Popes, by their conſtant inobſervance of all Apoſtolical Practices, were the occaſions (in my Opinion) of theſe turmoils, eſpecially joining with that, the Cowardize and Negligence of the Princes of Chriſtendom; whoſe intereſt it was, that the Ship of S. *Peter* ſhould labour with Tempeſts, that ſo the Maſter, being unable to animadvert upon them, might not throw them, like naughty Mariners, overboard. *Arnulphus* was immerſed in pleaſures, and *Charles* King of *France* was truly worthy of his Sirname of *Simple* or rather *Blockhead*. So that the *Hungari*, a fierce and wild people, tempted by this proſpect of things, with a formidable Army invade firſt *Italy*, then *Germany* and *France*, without any conſiderable reſiſtance, conſuming all with fire and ſword, and ſparing no Sex or Age, wherever they marched. The *Moors* too invaded *Calabria*, of a great part whereof they poſſeſs'd themſelves, but whilſt they beſieged *Coſenza*, their King was killed by Thunder from Heaven, whereupon they were diſperſed and returned home. Thus God himſelf puniſh'd, with his own hand, the Enemies of the name of Chriſt, out of pity to his people, who were miſerably forſaken by the Princes of the Earth, which if he had not done, the name of *Italy* and the Holy Church had been no more. Such ſluggiſh and ſorry fellows were the Potentates of thoſe times. *John* died after he had been Pope two years and fifteen days, leaving nothing behind him worthy notice, but that he renewed ſome old quarrels, which had been almoſt forgotten.

BENEDICT IV.

BENEDICT the fourth, a *Roman*, for his good Nature and Mildneſs was made Pope, but nothing was done in his time worthy of any great commendation. In his Age it happen'd, as to others it does ſomtimes, that a ſtrange negligence of all manner of Virtue had poſſeſs'd Mankind, no incitements being applied, by which the Minds of Men ſhould be ſtirr'd up to Actions that are praiſe-worthy, which yet are never wanting under good Princes, or well conſtituted Governments. At this time (as I ſaid before,) *Lewis* the Son of *Arnulphus* endeavouring to recover his Fathers Empire, was taken and kill'd at *Verona* by *Berengarius*; and then the poſterity of *Charles* the Great firſt loſt their Titles to *France* and the Empire of *Germany*. So true it is that which *Saluſt* ſays, Every Riſing hath its Setting, and every Increaſe its Wane. The Empire, which had arrived to ſo great a height, loſt its ſplendor by the ſluggiſhneſs of the Great Men and People of *Rome*, when they once grew remiſs in the exerciſes of Virtue, and emaſculated their Bodies with Luxury, and with ſtudied ſoftneſſes. And this, we may ſay, was the caſe of the Papacy, for at firſt, the Pontifical Dignity (without Wealth, and among Enemies and furious Perſecutors of Chriſtianity) was illuſtrious with a Holineſs and Learning not to be attain'd without great pains and a conſummate Virtue; but now the Church of God was grown wanton with its Riches, and the Clergy quitted ſeverity of Manners for Laſciviouſneſs; ſo that there being no Prince to puniſh their exceſſes, ſuch a Licentiouſneſs of ſinning obtain'd in the World, as brought forth theſe Monſters, theſe Prodigies, of wickedneſs by whom the Chair of S. *Peter* was rather ſeiz'd than rightfully poſſeſs'd. Yet this may be ſaid for *Benedict*, that in this debauch'd Age he carried himſelf with Gravity and Conſtancy, and died in the third year and fourth month of his Pontificate, after which the See was vacant ſix days.

LEO V.

LEO the fifth, whoſe native Country Hiſtorians mention not, ſucceeded him, but was ſoon taken and thrown into Priſon, by one *Chriſtopher* a Chaplain of his own, who aſpired to the Popedom, which was not done without great Tumults, and the loſs of many Mens Lives. How lightly the Papal Authority was now eſteem'd (by fault of former Popes) may be ſeen in this, that a private Perſon ſhould in a moment be able to ſeize ſo great a Dignity. But that ſaying is certainly true, that great places receive more honor than they confer upon the perſons that ſupply them, as appears in the *Roman* Cenſorſhip, which at firſt was ſlighted as a mean office, but when ſeveral of the Nobility had once condeſcended to execute it, the Office became ſo honorable, that the Nobleman, who had not once in his life been Cenſor, was look'd upon as very unfortunate. *Leo* had ſate but forty days, when *Chriſtopher* got into the Chair, which Indignity he laid ſo to heart, that in a little while after he died for Grief, deeply reſenting it, that he ſhould be robb'd of his Dignity by one that had eat of his Bread; according to that of *Theocritus*, *Nurſe up a Wolf, and he'll devour you.*

CHRISTOPHER.

CHRISTOPHER, whoſe Country and Family is (becauſe of the meanneſs of his extraction) not known, having got the Popedom by ill means loſt it as ill; for after ſeven months he was juſtly depoſed, and forc'd to take on him a Monaſtic life, the only refuge of Men in trouble, for at that time Clergymen that had deſerv'd ill, were as it were baniſh'd into Monaſteries by way of puniſhment. There are thoſe that ſay, *Chriſtopher* was depoſed in the Reign of *Lewis* III. while others aſcribe him to the times of *Berengarius*, who (we told you) was from Duke of *Friuli* created Emperor, as deſcending from the *Longobardian* Kings of *Italy*, and as being the only Man in whom, for his Valour and Nobility, they could place any hopes of ſeeing the honour of the Empire retriev'd. And that I ſhould ſuppoſe *Berengarius* to have Reign'd at this time, I am perſuaded, by conſidering the ſhort lives of the Popes before-going, (who, as Monſters, were ſoon ſnatch'd away by a Divine Power) and the length of the Reign of that Emperor, who having vanquiſh'd *Guido* Duke of *Spoleto*, and ſlain *Ambroſe* Count of *Bergomo*, who were his firſt Adverſaries, was Crown'd Emperor by *Formoſus*, and liv'd nine years after. What became of *Chriſtopher* after his being depoſed, ſhall be ſpoken in the Life of *Sergius*.

SERGIUS III.

SERGIUS the third, a *Roman*, Son of *Benedict*, entring upon the Pontificate, re-edified the *Lateran* Church, which was then ruined, and taking *Chriſtopher* out of his Monaſtery, put him in Priſon; and then ſetling his Affairs, he took a Journey to *France*; after his return from whence, being now ſtrenghen'd with the Favour and Friendſhip of the *French* King *Lotharius*, he totally aboliſh'd all that Pope *Formoſus* had done before, ſo that Prieſts who had been by him admitted to Holy Orders were forc'd to take new Ordination. Nor was he content with thus diſhonouring the dead Pope, but he drags his Carkaſe again out of the Grave, beheads it, as if it had been alive, and then throws it into the *Tiber*, as unworthy the honour of Human Burial. 'Tis ſaid, that ſome Fiſhermen finding his Body as they were fiſhing, brought it to S. *Peter*'s Church, and while the Funeral Rites were performing, the Images of the Saints which ſtood in the Church bow'd in veneration of his Body, which gave them occaſion to believe, that *Formoſus* was not juſtly proſecuted with ſo great ignominy. But whether the Fiſhermen did thus or no, is a great queſtion; eſpecially, it is not likely to have been done in *Sergius*'s life-time, who was a fierce Perſecutor of the favourers of *Formoſus*, becauſe he had hindred him before of obtaining the Pontificate. And now, Reader, pray obſerve, how very much theſe Popes had degenerated from their Predeceſſors: they, good Men, refuſed this Dignity when it was freely offered them, chuſing rather to ſpend their time in Study, and in Prayer; theſe, on the contrary, ſought the Papacy with Ambition and Bribery; and when they were got in, ſlighting the Worſhip of God, purſued animoſities among themſelves with the violence of the fierceſt Tyrants; to the end, that when no one ſhould be left to animadvert upon their Vices, they might the more ſecurely immerſe themſelves in pleaſures. 'Tis my opinion, that *Sergius* acted thus, by the inſtigation of *Lotharius*, becauſe 'twas by *Formoſus*'s means that the Empire was tranſlated from the *French* to the *Lombards*. *Sergius*, leading his life after this rate, died in the ſeventh year, fourth month, and ſixteenth day of his Papacy, ſeveral fiery Apparitions and blazing Stars with unuſual motions having been ſeen in the Heavens a little before. Soon after, the *Hungari* invaded *Italy* with an Army, and ſeveral defeats were on both ſides given and taken.

ANASTASIUS III.

ANASTASIUS the third, a *Roman*, came to the Chair, at the time when *Landulphus* Prince of *Benevent* fought a fierce Battel with the *Greeks*, and defeated them in *Apulia*. For *Patricius*, General of *Leo* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, had invaded *Italy*, and threatned a general ruine, if they did not immediately acknowledg ſubjection to *Leo*; but, (as was ſaid) by the valour of *Landulphus*, his boaſting and his rage came to nothing, though *Berengarius* alſo was bringing an Army together to meet him; but they made rather a terrible ſhew than were truly of force. But *Anaſtaſius*, not acting any thing worth mention, died after he had been Pope two years, and was buried in S. *Peters*'s Church. This Pope we may commend in this one inſtance, that he did not perſecute with ignominy and ſcandal the memory of any of his Predeceſſors; for he lived quietly and ſoberly, and had nothing chargeable upon him that was blame-worthy.

LANDUS.

LANDUS, a *Roman*, ſucceeded *Anaſtaſius*; but his life was ſo obſcure, that ſome do not reckon him for a Pope, eſpecially *Vincentius* the Hiſtorian. But *Martin* and *Cuſentinus* are of another mind, together with *Gothifredus* who writes, that this *Landus*, by interpoſing his Authority, hindred a Battel between *Berengarius* and *Rodulphus* Son of Count *Guido*; though others ſay, that *Rodulphus* overcame *Berengarius* near *Verona*, and enjoy'd the Empire three years. There was indeed at this time a great contention for the Empire between the *Italians*, *Germans* and *French*, which was the cauſe of many cruel Wars, which were not ended without great deſtruction of Men and miſchief to each Country. The *Romans* and *Italians* labour'd might and main to preſerve the Empire in their own Countrey againſt the Power of thoſe barbarous People, but they wanted ſome Man that could lead them on in ſo great an Enterpriſe; for thoſe noble Spirits, who had rendred the name of *Italy* famous through the World, were now not only extinct, but even thoſe virtuous Inclinations were quite ſtifled which gave life to ſuch Glorious Actions. *Landus* died in the ſixth month, and twenty firſt day of his Pontificate, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church.

JOHN XI.

JOHN the eleventh, a *Roman*. natural Son to Pope *Sergius*, in the year 909. ſucceeded. He was before Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna*, and had been depoſed by the People in a Tumult; but upon the death of *Landus*, he obtain'd the Papal Chair, and ſhew'd more of the Spirit of a Soldier than of a Clergy-man. Indeed the Church and all *Italy* had then need of ſuch a Pope: For the *Greeks*, (as we ſaid before) being vanquiſh'd by *Landulphus*, had call'd the *Saracens* into *Italy*, who marching through *Calabria* and *Apulia* into *Lucaia* and *Campania* threaten'd ſudden deſtruction to the City of *Rome*. The nearneſs of the danger alarm'd Pope *John*, who, taking *Albericus* Marqueſs of *Tuſcany* to his aſſiſtance, muſters up an Army, fights the *Saracens* and gets the better, and beats them out of the territories of the City; but not looking upon his Victory as conſiderable, except he follow'd the purſuit, he attaques them at *Minturnæ* upon the ſhore of the River *Garigliano*, and conquers them with ſo great a ſlaughter, that they reſolv'd to leave *Italy*, only burning firſt all thoſe places on that ſhore which were in their hands. But they alter'd their Minds afterward, and fortifying Mount *Gargano*, they haraſs'd the Country thereabout with their Incurſions. Mean while, *John* taking all the Honour of this action to himſelf makes his entrance into *Rome* after the manner of a Triumph, which gave ſo great diſtaſte to *Albericus*, that a Tumult aroſe upon it, in which *Albericus* was repulſed, and flying to *Orta* fortified the Town and Caſtle, and enticed the *Hungari* into *Italy*, who brought more deſtruction and ruine upon the Country, than the *Saracens* had done before, for they carried away the Youth of both Sexes, killing all that were ſtricken in years; nor did they ſpare the very *Tuſcans*, for whoſe indemnity *Albericus* had agreed in the Treaty with them; nay, they were more cruel to them than to other *Italians*, for they burnt and demoliſh'd all the Towns they had poſſeſs'd. 'Tis my Opinion, that *Berengarius* (who then held *Lombardy* only) gave them liberty of paſſage into *Tuſcany*, upon condition they march'd quietly through his Country without hurting his Subjects. But the *Hungari*, having once taſted the ſweet ſpoils of *Italy*, did frequently viſit it afterward; which Calamities ſo much enraged the *Romans*, that, not being able to wreak their ſpite npon the Enemy, who was too mighty and fierce for them, they took *Albericus* and beheaded him. *John* alſo in a Mutiny of the Soldiers, was, by the followers of Count *Guido*, taken and put in priſon. In his room another *John* was put up; but becauſe he ſeiz'd the Chair by force and was ſoon depoſed, he deſerves not to be among the Popes.

LEO VI.

LEO the ſixth, a *Roman*, was Canonically elected Pope, acted nothing tyrannically in his whole life, but liv'd ſoberly and modeſtly, taking care of Religion as far as an Age of ſo corrupt manners would bear. For he made it his endeavour to quiet the Minds of the Citizens, (who, through the raſhneſs and folly of former Popes, were inclining to Tumults) to compoſe the Affairs of *Italy*, to make Peace with foreign Enemies, and to drive the *Barbarians* from the skirts of his Country, than which nothing could be done to better purpoſe, or more commendably in ſo ſhort a time; for in the ſeventh month, and fifteenth day of his Pontificate he died, and was buried in S. *Peters*'s Church, to the great grief of the Citizens of *Rome*.

STEPHEN VII.

STEPHEN the ſeventh, a *Roman*, (according to ſome Authors) came to be Pope at the time when the *Hungari*, who were over-running *Germany* and *Saxony* were by King *Henry* of *Germany* overcome with a great ſlaughter near *Merſpurg*. 'Tis ſaid alſo, that at this time *Rodulphus* King of *Burgundy* made his deſcent into *Italy* with a great Army againſt *Berengarius* II. who by the treachery of his own Men was driven out of his Kingdom, and fled to the *Hungarians* for refuge, who taking up Arms in his cauſe, the third year after his expulſion, under the conduct of one *Salardus* invade *Italy* with huge Forces, and take *Pavia* by Storm, deſtroying the greateſt part of it with Fire and Sword. The *Italians* hereupon, finding *Rodulphus* to want Strength and Courage, call in *Hugh* Count of *Arles*. It was not without contention that *Rodulphus* gave place to him, but his Enemies bearing hard upon him, he retreated into *Burgundy*. After this, *Hugh*, finding occaſion to miſtruſt thoſe Perſons that call'd him in, baniſh'd many of them; who fled to *Arnoldus* Duke of *Bavaria*, a Man greedy of Rule, and perſuade him to make War upon *Italy*. He paſſes the *Alpes*, and is immediately receiv'd within the Walls of *Verona* by the Citizens, with great Kindneſs and Friendſhip, but *Hugh*, marching againſt him, beats him in a pitch'd Battel, and ſoon re-takes *Verona*. Mean while, *Berengarius* dies in *Bavaria*, or, as others ſay, in *Hungary*, and *Berengarius* III. Grand-ſon of *Berengarius* I. by his Daughter, comes into *Italy*, and in the year 935. gets the Empire. Some there are, that aſcribe theſe Actions I have mention'd, to the time of this Pope; but I would rather aſſign them to ſome of thoſe Popes that preceded and ſucceeded; becauſe, though I have ſet them down in ſhort, yet they muſt needs require a long time to be brought about. But in ſo great a diverſity of Opinions concerning times, I choſe rather to place them ſomwhere, than utterly to omit things which were certainly once done, for the uncertainty of Writers. For the ſake of Poſterity we would not be ſo ſuperſtitious, as to disbelieve that which various Authors have here or there thought good to record. To the times of this Pope may juſtly alſo be aſcribed S. *Ugibert* a Nobleman of *Lorain*, who in a ſhort time at his own charge built the Monaſtery of *Gemblours* after a magnificent manner. At this time alſo, 'tis ſaid, that *Spireneus* Duke of *Bohemia* firſt received the Chriſtian Faith. Thoſe that were then call'd *Dukes*, being now, upon the increaſe of their Wealth and Strength, entitled *Kings* of *Bohemia*. But *Stephen*, having led a peaceable and a Religious Life, died in the ſecond year, firſt month, and twelfth day of his Popedom, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church.

JOHN XII.

JOHN the twelfth, a *Roman*, Son (as ſome ſay) of Pope *Sergius*, came to be Pope when a Fountain at *Genoa* ſtream'd Blood in great quantities, (as *Vincentius* and *Martinus* relate) a ſure preſage of the enſuing Calamities; for ſoon after, *Genoa* was taken and ſack'd by the *Saracens* who came from *Afric*, and the *Hungarians* entring *Italy* utterly deſtroy'd all things far and near: But as they paſſed laden with Prey by the confines of *Sulmona*, the People of *Tagliacozzo* on a ſudden taking Arms, they were routed by them, and loſt their Lives and Plunder together. *Racherius*, who of a Monk had been made Biſhop of *Verona*, was now a great Writer, but was baniſh'd to *Pavia* by King *Hugh*, becauſe he inveigh'd againſt his manner of living with too great freedom. *John* dyed, after he had been Pope four years, ten months and fifteen days. The Sea was vacant twelve days.

LEO VII.

LEO the ſeventh, a *Roman*, was created Pope during the Reigns of *Hugh* and *Lotharius* in *Italy*, but did nothing worthy our mentioning. But his time was made famous by the Lives of *Spireneus* (according to *Martinus*) Duke of *Bohemia*, a Man of ſignal Devotion and Juſtice; and of his Son *Wenceſlaus*, who degenerated not at all from his Father, killed by his Brother *Boleſlaus*, who deſired to Reign. This *Wenceſlaus* was afterwards juſtly Canonized for a Saint, upon proof made of the Holineſs of his Life, and of Miracles wrought by him both while he liv'd, and after his death. *Leo*, after he had ſate three years, ſix months and ten days, died and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. The Sea was then vacant three days.

STEPHEN VIII.

STEPHEN the eighth, a *German*, coming to the Papacy was ſo moleſted by the *Romans* with Factions, that he could do nothing remarkable; nay, (as *Martinus* relates) they wounded him ſo fouly in one Tumult, that he was aſham'd to appear abroad: King *Hugh* prepared to avenge his quarrel, but died in the mean time, to whom ſucceeded his Son *Lotharius*, but he made no mention of the matter, either becauſe he had a kindneſs for the Citizens of *Rome*, or becauſe his Reign was ſhort, for he out-liv'd his Father but two years. *Otho* King of *Germany* did now undertake to revenge the murther of *Winceſlaus* King of *Bohemia*, upon *Boleſlaus* his Brother who had killed him, and marching againſt him, after ſeveral Battels won and loſt, at laſt took him Captive. *Stephen* died when he had been Pope three years, four months, and twelve days. The Sea was vacant ten days.

MARTIN III.

MARTIN the third, a *Roman*, imitated the meekneſs and peaceable carriage of *Stephen*, for, being made Pope, he laid aſide thoughts of War, and employ'd his Mind in Religious Matters, repairing Churches that were ready to fall with age, and relieving the Poor with his Charity. Not but that in his time *Europe* was very much torn with cruel Wars: For *Otho* attempting to enter *Italy* againſt the Will of *Lotharius*, much Blood was ſpilt on both ſides, but Pope *Martin* perſuaded them to lay down their Arms, becauſe (among other reaſons) there was a great Famine in the Land, by reaſon the Trees were felled, the ſtanding Corn trodden down, and even the Husbandmen with their Cattle were in this grievous War taken away. At *Conſtantinople* alſo were great Tumults, the Citizens making their Emperor a Priſoner, and ſhaving his Head, baniſh'd him to a certain Iſland; but ſoon after, *Conſtantine* Son of *Leo* getting the Empire, puniſh'd theſe factious Citizens after the ſame ſhameful manner, and baniſh'd them to the ſame Iſland. *Martin* died in the third year, ſixth month, and tenth day of his Popedom, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church; the *Roman* See was vacant twelve days.

AGAPETUS II.

AGAPETUS the Second, a *Roman*, was created Pope at a time when *Italy* was full of Warlike hurly-burly; for the *Hungarians* having invaded *Italy* with a mighty Force, had over-run all the Country beyond the River *Po*, *Henry* Duke of *Bavaria* takes up Arms immediately, and getting an Army together marches againſt them, and in two fierce Battels routs them, though not without great damage to the Inhabitants thereabouts, and ſeizes all the Country from *Aquileia* to *Pavia*; from whence yet he ſoon departed into *Auſtria*, when he heard that *Berengarius* was coming againſt him with a great Army. *Berengarius* being therefore now Maſter of *Italy*, takes to himſelf the name of *Emperor*, and calls his Son *Albertus* King of *Italy*, caſting into Priſon *Alunda*, *Lotharius*'s Brothers Daughter, leſt ſhe ſhould lay claim to the City of *Pavia*, which was her Dowry. Pope *Agapetus*, and the Great Men of *Italy*, (obſerving the arrogance of *Berengarius*, and that he made pretenſions to every thing without regard to Right and Juſtice,) ſent for *Otho* King of *Germany* into *Italy*; who, entring by the way of *Friuli* with fifty thouſand Men, quickly dethron'd *Berengarius* and *Albertus*, and taking *Alunda* out of Priſon, Married her, of whom he had a Son, afterwards ſucceding him by the name of *Otho* II. And now *Otho*, leaving *Italy*, ſhew'd a great deal of moderation by permitting to *Berengarius* and his Son the Government of a Province, and making Peace between him and the Pope. This *Otho* aſſiſted *Lewis* King of *France* with a great Army againſt *Hugh* Earl of *Paris*, though his Brother-in-law, who, with the help of ſome of the Great Men of that Country, had well-nigh outed him of his Kingdom. But *Albertus* Son of *Berengarius*, who then was Governor of *Ravenna*, aided with ſome Forces and Ships from *Comachio*, pirated upon the Merchants of *Venice*, much againſt the mind of Pope *Agapetus*; at which the *Venetians* were ſo enraged, that they immediatly rigg'd out a Navy, and took *Comachio* and burnt it. Whilſt theſe things were doing, Pope *Agapetus* a harmleſs Man, and a great lover of the Church, died in the ninth year, ſeventh month, and tenth day of his Pontificate; about the ſame time that *Otho* Abbat of *Clugny* alſo ſlept in the Lord; whoſe Diſciple *Domaielus* is ſuppoſed to be, that wonderfully Holy Man, and great reſtorer of Monaſtic Diſcipline.

JOHN XIII.

JOHN the thirteenth, a *Roman*, by the power of his Father *Albericus* of the *Via lata*, gets into the Chair. His name was before *Octavian*; he was one that from his youth up had been debauch'd with all manner of Vice and Wickedneſs; and if he had any time to ſpare from his Luſts, he ſpent it in Hunting and not in Prayer. The *Romans* had at this time two Conſuls annually and one Prefect, who was a Judge among the Citizens. Out of the People were created twelve Decarchons, who were inſtead of the Senate; neither were the *Romans* without ſome kind of Dominions; for the neighbouring Towns of *Tuſcany* between *Orvieto* and *Todi*; and all that lies between the City and *Benevent*, *Naples*, *Tagliacozzo* and *Rieti*, were ſubject to the City of *Rome*. What lies beyond, was poſſeſſed partly by the *Greeks*, and partly by the *Saracens*. It is not altogether certain, who then held *Marca di Ancona* and the Dutchy of *Spoleto*. In the City thus free, *Octavian*, favour'd by the power of his Father, aſſumes the Papal Dignity, a weight for which his Shoulders were very unfit; which gave ſo great Offence, that two Cardinals, who were nettled at it, ſent to *Otho*, beſeeching him to come and deliver the Clergy, and the people of *Rome*, out of the hands of *Berengarius* and this Pope *John*, otherwiſe telling him, that the Chriſtian Religion and the Empire too would both be ruin'd. *Otho* was at that time great in the eſtimation of all people, having (as we ſaid before,) conquered *Boleſlaus* King of *Bohemia*, and routed the *Hungarians*, that infeſted *Germany*, in three fierce Battels, taking three of their Princes, who were hanged up by the *Germans*, againſt the mind of the Emperor. While *Otho* was expected, the whole deſign was betray'd to *John*, who took both the Cardinals, and cut off the Noſe of the one, and the Hand of the other. This mov'd *Otho* to haſten his march into *Italy*, where firſt he took *Berengarius* and his Son *Albertus* Priſoners, and baniſh'd one to *Conſtantinople*, the other into *Auſtria*; and ſoon after entring *Rome*, he was ſplendidly received even of *John* himſelf, and Crown'd (as ſome write,) Emperor of *Germany* and *Hungary*, the Empire being now firſt tranſlated to the *Germans*. There are Authors yet that place this to the times of *Leo* VIII. of whom we ſhall ſpeak hereafter; whoſe Opinion is follow'd by *Gratian* in his Decree; though *Ricardus* and *Cuſeulinus* diſallow not the former: But the *Lateran* Library-keeper writes, that *Otho* came to *Rome* in *John*'s time, but ſays not a word of his Coronation; ſo perplex'd and confuſed are the Affairs of thoſe times, by the careleſneſs and neglect of their Writers. *Otho* however having ſomewhat ſetled the State of the City, had ſome Conference in private with *John*, diſſuading him kindly from his naughty way of Life, and exhorting him to reform; but when he found fair Words would not avail, he made uſe of Threats, and declar'd for a General Council, convening all the Biſhops of *Italy* to judge of the way of Life of this wicked Fellow. The Cenſures of theſe good Men he apprehended would be heavy, and therefore fled to *Anagni*, ſculking up and down in by-places like a wild Beaſt: So that *Otho*, by the perſuaſion of the Clergy, creates *Leo*, a *Roman*, a Keeper of the Archives in the *Lateran*, Pope. But upon the departure of the Emperor, the Kinſmen and Friends of *John* turn out *Leo*, and recal him, who, within few days after, was ſtruck dead (as was thought,) from Heaven, leſt the Church of God ſhould be ruin'd by ſo pernicious a Sedition as was then growing on. Some indeed write, that this wicked Wretch, or Monſter rather, was taken in Adultery, and there ſtabb'd. However this put not an end to the Schiſm; for the *Romans*, upon the Death of *John*, put up *Benedict* in his room, and were earneſt with the Emperor (who was then at *Spalato*,) to confirm their Choice. But the Emperor was highly diſpleaſed, and not only denied their Requeſt as unjuſt, but (as ſhall hereafter be told,) compelled them by force of Arms to abrogate *Benedict* and receive *Leo*. Many Prodigies are ſaid to have been ſeen at this preſent time in *Italy*; for in a mighty Tempeſt of Wind and Rain there fell a Stone of a wonderful bigneſs from the Sky; and in the Garments of many perſons the Figure of a bloody Croſs appeared miraculouſly; which portents were look'd upon to foreſhew great Slaughters and Calamities to the Church. This *John*, who was certainly the moſt pernicious profligate Fellow of any that preceded him in the

Pontifical Chair, died in the ninth Year, third Month, and fifth Day, of his Popedom; upon whoſe Death, during the Sedition, the See was vacant twelve Days.

BENEDICT V.

BENEDICT the Fifth, a *Roman*, in the Sedition, was, of a Deacon, made Pope, chiefly by the Aſſiſtance of the Kinred and Dependents of *John*, to whom the Preferment of *Leo* by *Otho* gave great diſguſt. But the Emperor diſapproving this Election, flatly denied the Confirmation of it to the *Romans*, who earneſtly ſought it, and waſting the Territories of the City with Fire and Sword, forced them not only to turn out, but to yield up *Benedict*, and ſubmit to *Leo*, with an Oath not to attempt any Alteration in what the Emperor had eſtabliſh'd in the Affair of the Popedom. Matters thus compoſed in *Italy*, *Otho* goes back for *Germany*, taking *Benedict* with him, who ſoon after died at *Hapſpurg*, whither he was baniſh'd. He held the Papacy ſix Months and five Days. The See was after vacant thirty Days.

LEO VIII.

LEO the Eighth, the *Protoſcriniary* (as I ſaid before,) upon the Expulſion of *John*, was created Pope by the Clergy and people of *Rome*. For when *John* led ſuch an abominable and exorbitant Life, that the *Romans* urg'd the Emperor to depoſe him and ſet up another Pope, he anſwered, That the Election belong'd to the Clergy and people; and let them chuſe a Man they took to be moſt fit, he would confirm him immediately. Hereupon when they had choſen *Leo*, and the Emperor had confirm'd him, ſoon after altering their Minds, they depoſed him and put up *Benedict*, which ſo angred *Otho*, that he compell'd them by force of Arms to yield up *Benedict*, and accept of *Leo* again, who was ſo teiz'd with the mutinous humour of the *Romans*, that he transferred the whole power of electing of Popes, from the Clergy and People, to the Emperor. But he lived not long after, dying in the ſixteenth Month of his Popedom.

JOHN XIV.

JOHN the Fourteenth, Biſhop of *Narni*, a *Roman*, Son of *John* a Biſhop, ſucceeded *Leo*. But the *Romans* having got the trick of expelling their Popes, vex'd this Man alſo with ſeditions; for having call'd to their aſſiſtance *Geffrey* Lord of *Terra di Lavoro*, they broke into the *Lateran* Palace, and ſeiz'd upon *John*, whom they firſt caſt into the Priſon of Caſtle S. *Angelo*, and ſoon after baniſh'd to *Capua*; but *Geffrey*, with his only Son, being ſlain by *John* Prince of *Capua*, the Pope return'd ſtreight to *Rome*, in the Eleventh Month of his Exile. *Otho* alſo, upon notice of the Pope's diſtreſs, together with his Son *Otho* and a good Army, by long Journeys, came to *Rome*, and immediately threw the Conſuls, the Prætor and the *Decarchons*, into Priſon, in order to a Trial for their Treaſon; who being by torture forced to confeſs, the Conſuls were baniſh'd into *Germany*, the *Decarchons* were hang'd up, and *Peter* the Prætor, the Cauſe and Ringleader of all the miſchief, was ſeveral times dragg'd moſt ignominiouſly and whipt with Rods, through the moſt publick places of the City, and then ſent Priſoner to *Germany*. Others ſay, his Puniſhment was thus, Being delivered to ſuffer at the will of the Pope, his Beard was firſt ſhav'd off, then he was hang'd by his Hair upon the Head of the Statue of *Conſtantine*'s Horſe, for the terror of all ſuch ill Men; from whence being taken, he was ſet upon an Aſs with his Face backward, and his Hands tied under his Tail, and ſo led through the City, being, as he went, whipt almoſt to death with Rods; and then baniſh'd into *Germany*. The like Severity (for Examples ſake,) was uſed by the Emperor againſt Count *Geffrey* and his Son, who were kill'd (as I ſaid before,) by *John* Prince of *Capua*, their Carkaſſes being dragg'd out of their Graves and denied Chriſtian Burial. At this time the *Sclavi*, who, (when *Hadrian* III. was Pope,) under *Sueropylus* Prince of *Dalmatia*, had received the Chriſtian Faith, croſs'd the Sea into *Italy*, gave the *Saracens* a great rout at *Monte Gargano*, and drove them thence; and the *Hungarians*, by their example, ſo broke their remaining Force, by recovering *Coſenza* out of their hands, that it became eaſie for *Otho*, Son of great *Otho*, (who came for that purpoſe with his Army,) to make a perfect Conqueſt of them; nor was he content to have vanquiſh'd the *Saracens*, but he ſubdued too the *Greeks*, who had made a League with the *Moors*, and drove them out of almoſt all *Apulia* and *Calabria*. Some ſay indeed that *Otho* made this War upon the *Greeks*, becauſe *Nicephorus*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, had denied to give him to Wife his Daughter, who had been eſpouſed to him before. This is certain, that *Otho*, who was a generous young Man, depoſed *Nicephorus*, and made his Son *John* Emperor, himſelf marrying his Siſter *Theophania*, who, together with her Husband, were crowned by this Pope in the *Lateran* Church with an Imperial Diadem, by the conſent of *Otho* the Father, who had made his Son his Partner in the Empire. During the great and univerſal rejoycing upon this occaſion, Pope *John* raiſed the Church of *Capua* to a Metropolitan See. But *Otho*, now worn with old Age, returning into *Germany*, died at *Vienna*; whom *John* alſo follow'd not long after, he dying after he had ſate Six Years, eleven Months, and five Days; after which the Sea was vacant Thirteen Days.

BENEDICT VI.

BENEDICT the Sixth, a *Roman*, ſucceeded *John* in his Office and in his Troubles, for being taken Priſoner by *Cincio*, a poteut Citizen, he was put into Caſtle S. *Angelo*, a Jail for Malefactors, or, rather for innocent Perſons, where, in a little while, he was ſtrangled, or, (as *Cuſentinus* ſays,) famiſhed. I cannot but admire, that the Actors of ſo great an Outrage were never puniſh'd, neither by the Citizens of the adverſe Party, nor by the Emperor *Otho*, who was reputed an excellent Man, and a ſtout Defender of the Church of *Rome*. But I am afraid *Cincius* did no worſe by him than he deſerved; not but that how faulty ſoever *Benedict* might be, it was ill done of *Cincius* to lay violent hands upon the Pope, ſince the cenſure of him did not belong to a private Man. But ſee the turn of human Affairs; the Popes of our times make nothing to clap up Citizens into the ſame place, and there ſtarve 'em, whether they deſerve it, or, are only a little too powerful than they deſire. I believe *Otho* was too much taken up with other Buſineſs, ſo that he could not help him. He died when he had been Pope one Year and ſix Months.

DONUS II.

DONUS the Second, a *Roman*, a Man of great moderation, and and tho there were nothing done by him worthy of high commendation, yet he was never charg'd with any Injuſtice or diſhonourable Action. There were however many memorable Actions of great and of holy Men, which render his Times not altogether obſcure. For in his time, *Baianus*, a great Magician, Prince of the *Bulgarians*, ſo haraſs'd with War *Baſilius*, and his Son *Conſtantine* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, that he narrowly miſs'd of taking the Town, which, by the negligence of the *Greeks*, was left almoſt empty; but at laſt, upon hard Terms, a Peace was concluded between 'm. *Adalbertus* alſo, a *Bohemian*, Biſhop of *Prague*, flouriſh'd now, who was a Man of ſo great Sanctity, that he (by the impulſe of the Divine Spirit,) travell'd into *Hungary*, and baptiz'd the King thereof, and, by his good Life and godly Example, taught the Biſhops of the Country to ſeek the Grace of God: From whence paſſing into *Pruſſia*, preaching the Goſpel of Chriſt with great diligence, he was there crown'd with Martyrdom. At this time too, S. *Edward*, King of *England*, was for his Sanctity in great Honour; but was murthered by the fraud and Villany of his Stepmother. *Richardus* the Hiſtorian adds to theſe S. *Maiolus*, Abbat of *Clugni*, who left a great Name behind him for his Miracles and Holy Life. *Donus* died in the firſt Year of his Pontificate, and was buried in S. *Peter's* Church; whereupon the See was vacant two Days.

BONIFACE VII.

BONIFACE the Seventh, whoſe Family and Country (I ſuppoſe, becauſe of their Baſeneſs,) Writers mention not, got the Popedom by ill Arts, and loſt it as ill; for he was no ſooner got into the Chair, but the honeſt part of the Citizens confederating, he was forced out of the City, taking with him the moſt precious things out of the Church of *S. Peter*, and fled to *Conſtantinople*, where he only tarried, till, by the Sale of what he had ſo ſacrilegiouſly got, he had amaſs'd vaſt ſums of Money, with which he returns to *Rome*, not doubting, but by the help of that, to retrieve his Dignity, by bribing the Citizens. He met yet with great oppoſition from all good Men, but eſpecially from *John*, a Deacon Cardinal, whom, by the Aſſiſtance of ſome wicked Bravo's, he caught, and put out his Eyes. But his Enemies encreaſing about him, whether for fear or remorſe for his great wickedneſs, this Author of ſo many miſchiefs miſerably ended his Life. Obſerve, I beſeech you, how theſe Popes did degenerate from their Predeceſſors, who left the Church ſo ample and magnificent at the expence of their Blood. The Pope of *Rome*, the Father and Protector of things ſacred, does himſelf ſteal them away, and he that ſhould puniſh ſacriledg is the Author of it; but thus it muſt needs fall out in any Government, where the Pride and Covetouſneſs of ill Men ſhall prevail over the Virtue and Wiſdom of the good. To great Benefices none of the Clergy ought to be choſen, but ſuch of whoſe Life and Learning there is a certainty; not thoſe, who, having nothing of Virtue or Religion, ſeek, by Ambition and Simony, to get into places of power. *Boniface* lived ſeventh Months and five Days in his Pontificate, and then the See was vacant twenty Days.

BENEDICT VII.

BENEDICT the Seventh, a *Roman*, as ſoon as he was made Pope he called a Council, in which he reſtored *Arnulphus* Biſhop of *Rhemes*, who had been expell'd in a Sedition. At this time *Otho* the Second, having conquered *Henry* Duke of *Bavaria*, who had endeavoured ſome Alterations in the State, marched againſt *Lotharius*, who had poſſeſs'd himſelf of *Lorain*, a Province of the Empire, and laid waſte the Territory of *Aken*; and gaining a Victory over him, he over-ran the Country of *Soiſſons*, and ſet fire to the Suburbs of *Paris*; but upon his retreat with his Forces, he received ſome damage near the River *Aiſne*. After this, raiſing a greater Army, he brought it into *Italy* againſt *Baſilius* and *Conſtantine*, the *Greek*

Emperors, who had ſeiz'd *Calabria*, and that part of *Italy* that lies toward *Sicily*, but receiving a defeat at *Baſanello*, he was forced to make his eſcape by Sea, where he was by chance taken by Pirates, and carried into *Sicily*: The *Sicilians* paid his Ranſom, and ſent him to *Rome*, and ſoon after caught the Pirates and put them to death. *Otho* now gets his Army together again, and deſign'd to chaſtiſe ſeverely the *Romans* and *Beneventans*, becauſe they occaſioned the loſs of the Battel at *Baſanello*, by flying firſt; but it was not thought ſafe to begin with the *Romans*, and therefore he turns againſt *Benevent*, which he takes and conſumes with fire, tranſlating from thence the Body of S. *Bartholomew*, and placing it at *Rome*, in an Iſland of the *Tiber*, formerly called *Hoſtia Jovis Lycaonia*, which was of the ſhape of the poop of a Galley. Nay even to this day, as you view it from *Tivertino*, the Iſland reſembles a Galley, ſo made, I ſuppoſe, to repreſent that which brought *Æſculapius* to *Rome*: There is alſo to be ſeen engraven in ſtone the Serpent, (in the Form whereof that God is ſaid to have arrived,) and the Ribs of the Galley: So ſtudious were the excellent Men of thoſe Times to bring Nature to Art, as well as Art to Nature. But to return to *Otho*; he, ſoon after the aforeſaid tranſlation of the Body of S. *Bartholomew*, died at *Rome*, and was honorably buried in a Porphyry Tomb, ſtill to be ſeen on the left hand as you go in, in the *Portico* of S. *Peter*'s Church (call'd Paradiſe.) Whil'ſt Conſultations were held about chuſing a new Emperor, ſome inſiſting upon *Otho* III. Son of *Otho* II. Others ſtanding up for *Henry* Duke of *Bavaria*, *Otho*'s Nephew by his Brother, the *Italians* being earneſt for one *Creſcentius* of *Lamentana*, an eminent Man; the *Germans* on the ſudden, of whom there were many then at *Rome*, choſe *Otho* III. The Pope, good Man, all the while urging them, that, in their Election, they would have a regard to the Church of Chriſt, which needed a Governor of great Ability and Diligence; but at laſt, to prevent Tumults, he approved of what the *Germans* had done. He died after he had been Pope Eight Years and ſix Months; upon which the See was vacant five Days. In his time, *Valdericus*, Biſhop of *Hamburg*, was famous for his great Learning and Sanctity.

JOHN XV.

JOHN the Fifteenth, a *Roman*, or, (as ſome will have it,) a *Pavian*, had not been Pope 3 Months, but he was taken by the *Romans*, and put into the publick Jail of Caſtle S. *Angelo*, where he pin'd away ſo long with the ſtink of the Priſon, want of Neceſſaries, and trouble of Mind, that he died. Some write, that he was made away by *Ferruccio* Father of *Boniface* VII. a Man of great Power, becauſe he had been an Enemy to his Son in his Pontificate. However that be, 'tis certain he died in Priſon, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. Whether he was depoſed for his Tyranny and Arrogance, or by the Malice and Envy of ſeditious people, is not certain, ſo confuſed are the Accounts we have of thoſe times. In his time lived *Odo* Abbat of *Clugnis*, and *Berengarius* of *Tours*, Men famous for Learning and holy Lives; tho' 'tis ſaid of *Berengarius*,

garius, that through his confidence in his vaſt Learning, he err'd in the Faith, holding a wrong Opinion of the Euchariſt, which, in a General Council holden at *Rome*, he afterward recanted, and leaving off his ſtudy of controverſial matters, though he were Archdeacon of *Anjou*, he gave all that he had to the poor, and got his living by the labour of his hands.

JOHN XVI.

JOHN the Sixteenth, a *Roman*, Son of *Leo* a Prieſt, born in the Ward of *Gallina Bianca*, being got into the Popedom, hated the Clergy ſtrangely, and was deſervedly for the ſame mutually hated of them, and more eſpecially, becauſe, whatever he could get, either of things ſacred, or profane, he gave to his Kinred and Relations, without any regard to the Glory of God, or the Honour of the Church; and this evil humour has deſcended to his Succeſſors, even to our own times, than which naughty cuſtom nothing can be more pernicious, when our Clergy ſeem not to ſeek the Popedom for the ſake of Religion, and the Worſhip of God, but that they may, with the Profits of it, ſatisfie the Luxury and Avarice of their Brethren, Nephews or Domeſticks. They write, that a Comet appeared about this time portending the coming Calamity, for there follow'd a long Peſtilence and Famine, and both *Benevent* and *Capua* ſuffered much by an Earth-quake: And theſe were generally look'd upon as Judgments for the pride and rapacious Temper of the Pope and his contempt of God and Man. But it pleaſed God, that after a Pontificate of eight Months, he died and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church.

JOHN XVII.

JOHN XVII. a *Roman*, ſucceeded when *Otho* was Emperor, but had not yet been Crown'd. He was a Man of great Learning, and (as *Martinus* writes,) was the Author of ſeveral elegant things. He was ſo teiz'd with Seditions by *Creſcentius* the Conſul of *Rome*, who claim'd to himſelf an abſolute Power in the City, that he gave place to the Man's Ambition, and withdrew into *Tuſcany*. But *Creſcentius*, underſtanding that *John* was ſo extreamly enrag'd, that he had ſent for *Otho* and his Army into *Italy*, he diſpatch'd all the Pope's Kinſmen and Friends that were left in *Rome* to him, to deſire him to lay by all thoughts of bringing *Otho* to his Aſſiſtance, but to come to the City, there to exerciſe his moſt ample Power, promiſing perfect Obedience in all matters. *John*, being mov'd with the Intreaties of his Friends, and partly fearing leſt if *Otho* ſhould enter *Italy* with his Army, he might do more hurt than good, went to *Rome*, where *Creſcentius*, with all the Magiſtrates, and a multitude of Citizens, meeting him, he was brought to the Palace of *Lateran*, in the Porch whereof, *Creſcentius*, and all the Heads of the Faction, kiſs'd his feet and begg'd his Pardon; and thus, matters being compoſed, they afterward lived quietly together. At this time, *Henry* Abbat of *Loby* in *Lorain*, *Adolphus* Biſhop of *Utrecht*, who wrote much in praiſe of the Bleſſed Virgin and of the Holy Croſs, and *Albo* Abbat of *Fleury*, (who afterward in *Gaſcoign* ſuffer'd Martyrdom for the Faith of Chriſt,) Men famous for Learning, Religion and Sanctity, are ſaid to have flouriſh'd. This *John* died after he had been Pope ten Years, ſix Months and ten Days; and the See was vacant ſix Days.

GREGORY V.

GREGORY the Fifth, a *Saxon*, Son of *Otho*, before call'd *Bruno*, by the Authority of *Otho* III. for Kinred-ſake was made Pope. But upon the return of *Otho* into *Germany*, being vex'd by the *Roman* Factions, he fled firſt into *Tuſcany*, and thence into *Germany* to the Emperor. Mean while the *Romans* veſt *Creſcentius* with an abſolute Conſular Power, who immediately creates Pope, *John*, a *Greek*, Biſhop of *Piacenza*, not more wealthy than learned; whoſe name, I confeſs, is by ſome left out of the Catalogue of Popes, as not regularly created; but others make him *John* XVII. becauſe he was choſen by the Clergy and People of *Rome*, to whom of right the Election belongeth. *Creſcentius*, upon the News of *Otho*'s approach with his Army, fortifies the Walls and Gates of the City with all diligence; he fortifies too the Caſtle S. *Angelo*, and places ſtrong Guards in every Poſt that required, ſo that for ſome time after it was call'd *Creſcentius*'s Caſtle, taking the Name of him that fortified it, in ſtead of that of the Builder. At length the Emperor arriv'd, and inveſting the City, when the *Romans* perceived themſelves unable to withſtand ſo great Forces, truſting to the Clemency of *Otho*, they opened their Gates to the *Germans*. And now *Creſcentius* and *John* being without Friends, and at their Wits end, fled into Caſtle S. *Angelo*, and defended themſelves well; till, upon hopes of Pardon, coming forth to addreſs themſelves to the Emperor, *Creſcentius*, receiving many Wounds from the Multitude, was kill'd; but *John*, having his Eyes firſt put out, loſt both his Popedom and Life together; and *Gregory*, after he had been expell'd nine Months, was reſtored. He taking Notice of the weakneſs of the Empire, and the uncertainties of Chance, and being willing to preſerve the Empire among the *Germans*, and that he ſhould be preferred before other, who excelled in Worth and Virtue, with the conſent of *Otho*, he made a Decree concerning the Election of an Emperor, *An. Dom.* 1002, which has continued in force to this day: To wit, that it ſhould belong to the *Germans* alone to chuſe a Prince, who ſhould be *Cæſar* and King of the *Romans*, till the Pope ſhould have confirmed him, and then to have the Titles of *Emperor* and *Auguſtus*. *Ptolomy* writes, that at firſt the power of Election of Emperor was in the Archbiſhop of *Mentz* for *Germany*, the Archbiſhop of *Triers* for *France*, and the Archbiſhop of *Cologn* for *Italy*. To theſe were added four Secular Princes, the Marqueſs of *Brandenburgh*, who, after the Election, is Chamberlain to the Emperor, the Count *Palatine*, who is chief Sewer, the Duke of *Saxony*, who is Sword-bearer, and the King of *Bohemia*, the Seventh Elector, (and Cup-bearer,) was added, they ſay, to prevent Diſcord between Parties, for, if the reſt were equally divided, his Vote turned the Scale. This, 'tis ſaid, gave diſtaſte to the *French*; but becauſe the Line of *Charles* the Great being extinct in *Lewis* the Son of *Lotharius*, that Realm was fallen into the hands of *Hugh Capet* the chief Miniſter at that time, (the great affairs of that Kingdom for ſome time not being manag'd by Kings) they wav'd all thoughts of retrieving the Empire; but the main reaſon was, that the new Poſſeſſors were well enough yet ſatisfied with their Fortune, and dar'd not attempt any thing further, till they were certain that their late acquir'd Regal Power ſtood upon a good foundation. *Robert* the Son and Succeſſor of the Great *Hugh* is much and deſervedly praiſed for his Courage, Juſtice, Modeſty and Religion; for though he exerciſed himſelf very much in the Art Military, yet he found time ſo often to frequent the Churches of God, and to celebrate the Divine Service, as if he had been in Holy Orders. He is ſaid, to have made the Hymn, *Sancti ſpiritûs aſſit nobis gratia*; and by theſe Arts not leſs powerful than his Arms, he gain'd the Hearts of the People, and drew thoſe honourable Reſpects to his Family which they had before given to that of *Charles* the Great. *Robert*, a certain Biſhop of *Chartres*, is about this time ſaid to have been in great repute for Learning and Sanctity; he having written much, and reduced the ſinging in Churches to a better method. *Gregory* died, after he had been Pope two years and five months. The See was vacant fifteen days.

JOHN XVIII.

JOHN the Eighteenth, Biſhop of *Piacenza*, by the power of *Creſcentius* the Conſul, (as we ſaid) whom he had corrupted with his Money, in the time of *Gregory* V. was made Pope by a Faction; for he brought ſo much Money with him from *Conſtantinople*, that even the good Men might be brib'd to ſerve his ill ends, much leſs might he prevail with the Covetouſneſs and Ambition of *Creſcentius*. I wonder, that Hiſtorians place this *John* in the number of the Popes, he having got into the Chair while *Gregory* was alive; unleſs, that in writing the Lives of Popes it may be thought fit, as in a continued Hiſtory, to ſet down the Outrages of Uſurpers and Tyrants, as well as the worthy Actions of good and lawful Princes, that Readers may obſerve the difference between good and bad, and, upon the ſight of examples of both, be deterred from vitious, and encouraged to virtuous practices, and lead a bleſſed and happy life in the Earth. Which Bleſſedneſs and Felicity *John* wanted; for being a Robber and a Thief in his Pontificate, and coming not in, as he ought, by the Door, He died with ignominy enough in the tenth month of his Uſurpation. The See was vacant twenty days.

SYLVESTER II.

SYLVESTER the Second, before called *Gilbert*, a *French* Man, got the Popedom (as they ſay) by ill Arts. When he was young, he was entred and ſworn a Monk of *Fleury* in the Dioceſs of *Orleans*; but he left the Monaſtery to follow the Devil, to whom he had wholly deliver'd himſelf up, and went to *Sevil* in *Spain* to ſtudy Human Sciences; being extreamly greedy of Knowledge and Learning, in which he made ſuch progreſs, that of a Scholar he ſoon became an excellent Maſter. *Martinus* writes, that the Emperor *Otho*, King *Robert* of *France*, and *Lotharius* a Man of Noble Birth and great Learning, afterward Arch-biſhop of *Sens* were his Scholars. *Gilbertus* therefore full of Ambition, and puſh'd on with the Diabolical deſire of Rule, by Simony firſt gets the Arch-biſhoprick of *Rhemes* and then of *Ravenna*; at laſt the Devil helping him with an extraordinary lift, he got the Popedom, upon this condition, that after his death he ſhould be wholly the Devils, by whoſe aſſiſtance he had arriv'd at ſo great a Dignity. Being greedy of Rule, he ask'd the Devil once, how long he ſhould enjoy the Pontificate, the Enemy of Mankind anſwer'd (as he is wont) ambiguouſly, that he ſhould live long, if he came not near *Jeruſalem*. So that when in the fourth year, firſt month and tenth day of his Papacy he was at *Rome* at Maſs in the Church of *Holy Croſs* in *Jeruſalem*, it came into his mind that now he muſt die; where he heartily repenting confeſs'd his fault before the People, exhorting them all to lay aſide Ambition and to withſtand the ſtratagems of the Devil, betaking themſelves to a Holy and Pious Life: Then he deſired them, that after his death they would lay the Trunk of his Body, however torn and diſmembred, as it deſerved to be, in a Cart, and there to bury it where the Horſes ſhould of their own accord carry it; and then, (as 'tis ſaid,) that wicked Men might ſee, that yet there was ſome room for pardon left with God for them, if they at any time repent; by the Divine Will and Providence, the Horſes of their own accord went to the Church of the *Lateran*, where his Body was buried. *Martinus* writes beſide, that as well from the clattering of this Pope's Bones, as from the Sweat, or rather moiſture, of his Tomb, People are wont to gather Preſages, and thoſe moſt manifeſt, of the approaching death of any Pope, and that this is hinted in the Epitaph on his Tomb. Whether it be true or no, let the Pope's, whom it concerns, look to't.

JOHN XIX.

JOHN the Nineteenth, whoſe Sirname and Family, becauſe of their baſeneſs, are not recorded, died four months and twenty days after he was made Pope. So that becauſe of the ſhortneſs of his Pontificate there was nothing memorable done either by himſelf, or any other in the time: Unleſs that many Prodigies, Apparitions and Comets, were ſeen, and many Towns ruin'd by Earthquakes, fore-ſhewing the Calamities that were to come: Some eaſe in which yet was given by *Hugh*, the Viceroy of *Italy*, under *Otho*, and Governor of *Tuſcany*; for he manag'd his Province with ſo great Juſtice and Integrity, that no one complain'd for want of an excellent Prince, who afterward dying at *Piſtoia*, the *Tuſcans* univerſally bewailed him as a publick Parent, not ſuffering any manner of Reſpect to be wanting to his Funeral. In this place I therefore thought good to mention the deſerv'd praiſes of *Hugo*, that Governors of Countries may know, that it is much better by a juſt and generous Adminiſtration to acquire Glory and Honour, than by unjuſt ways to heap up Riches with everlaſting Shame and Ignominy.

JOHN XX.

JOHN the Twentieth, a *Roman*, of the Ward of *Port-Metropolitan*, being made Pope, indulg'd himſelf in an eaſie way of living, and did nothing worth mentioning: But *Robert* King of *France* deſerv'd the higheſt commendations, who at this time led a life as Devout as Kingly, excelling all the contemporary Chriſtian Kings in Knowledge and Religious living, and being himſelf excell'd by no Man in controverſial Learning; he not owning that Opinion which the Princes of our times have embrac'd, that it is not worth a Potentates while to be Learned; but that it behoves them that are to rule the Nations, to take the Rules of Government from the Precepts of others, which yet cannot be done without Reading and Study. What elſe indeed is an illiterate Prince, but the image of a Lion commanding the other Beaſts? 'Tis neceſſary, they ſhould be able to moderate their own Paſſions as well as the Peoples, who would be thought fit to Govern others. With great reaſon therefore it is, that we ſpeak well of *Robert*, whoſe Devotion was ſuch, that, as oft as he had leiſure from his Warlike Employments, he would ſing the Canonical hours with the Prieſts; and ſo great were his Merits in this way, that once when he had beleaguer'd a Town of his Enemies, and neglected the Siege to attend the Canonical hours, the Walls miraculouſly fell down, and his Men immediately ruſhing in, took the place. But *John*, (according to ſome Authors) having ſate in the Chair four years and four months, died and was buried in S. *Peter's* Church. The See was then vacant nineteen days.

SERGIVS IV.

SERGIVS the Fourth, a *Roman*, Son of *Martin*, ſucceeded; a Man of a moſt Holy Life, and ſweet Converſation, both before, and in, his Pontificate. He was charitable to the Poor, chearful among his Friends aud Acquaintance, merciful to thoſe who were faulty, and mild even with the perverſe. Beſide, he was ſo prudent, that in all the time he ſate in the Chair, nothing was committed which could reflect any charge of negligence upon his Government. For placing all his Thoughts in Heaven, (which all Popes ought to do) and having a Mind imbued with much natural Goodneſs, he brought about all things to his Mind. By his Counſel and Advice the Princes of *Italy* entred into a League for driving the *Saracens* out of *Sicily*, and accordingly made equal preparations of Men. There were then in *Italy* moſt of the Sons of *Tancred* the great Duke of *Normandy*, among whom was *William* ſurnamed *Ferrebach*, a Man of ſo great courage, that taking for his Companion in the Expedition, *Malochus* General of the Forces of *Michael Catalaicus* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, he in a ſhort time clear'd that Iſland of *Saracens*, the Princes of *Capoua* and *Salerno* lending ſome aſſiſtance. Afterward *Malochus* uſing injuſtice in the diviſion of the Spoil, *William* thought good to diſſemble for the time, but returning into *Italy* with forty thouſand *Normans* who were juſt come from the Holy War, he ſeizes upon all *Apulia* which was ſubject to the *Greeks*, and at *Melſi* meets *Malochus* with his Army, fights and defeats him: And thus by the valour of *William*, the Kingdom of *Apulia* was transferred from the *Greeks* to the *Normans*; for he dying without Heirs his Brother *Drogo* ſucceeded him, and to him ſucceeded *Humphrey* a younger Brother, from whom deſcended *Robert Guiſcardi* and his Brother *Roger*. While this paſt in *Apulia*, *Italy*, and almoſt all the World too, labouring under a Famine and Peſtilence; the Holy Man *Sergius* died in the ſecond year and fifteenth day of his Popedom, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. The See was then vacant eight days.

BENEDICT VIII.

BENEDICT the Eighth, born at *Fraſcato*, his Father's name was *Gregory*, as ſoon as he was made Pope Crown'd *Henry* I. of *Bavaria*, Emperor, in the room of *Otho* III. deceaſed, according to the Decree of *Gregory* V. Some ſay, that *Otho* died at *Rome*, and that his Body was carried into *Germany*; others ſay, 'twas buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. However that may be, 'tis certain, that *Henry* Duke of *Bavaria*, who was an excellent and a moſt Holy Perſon, was now created Emperor, and that he had an Empreſs equally praiſe-worthy for Charity, Devotion and Affability.

ty. But whilſt he was employed in compoſing the Affairs of *Germany*, the *Saracens* entred *Italy*, took *Capua*, and beſieg'd *Bari*, the Inhabitants whereof being reduc'd to extremity for want of Proviſions, the *Venetians* with their Fleet reliev'd them, and, with the aſſiſtance of the *Greeks*, ſet upon the *Saracens* who ſate before it, and with great ſlaughter of them, raiſed the Siege, *An. Dom.* 1008. at the ſame time that *Jeruſalem* was taken by the *Turks*, without any violation of the Holy Sepulchre, the Church of Mount *Sion* or *Bethlehem*. The *Venetians* had a deſign to have reliev'd *Jeruſalem* too, but that they were with-held by their Enemies of *Zara*, to whom yet at *Loreto* they gave ſo total a rout, that they durſt never after by War moleſt any of their Neighbors. But *Henry* having ſetled the ſtate of *Germany*, coming to *Rome*, received the Imperial Crown, and then marching to *Capua*, drove the *Saracens* out of it, and carried on the War againſt *Bubagano* a General of the *Greeks*, who favour'd the *Moors*, with ſo much vigor, that he diſpoſſeſs'd him of *Troy*, a City he had built in the confines of *Apulia*, in a place where *Hannibal* was ſaid heretofore to have encamp'd. The Emperor *Henry* and his Wife *Cunigunda* are reported to have led ſuch Chaſt and Holy Lives, that they grew famous for working Miracles, omitting no action which might contribute to the Glory of God. He founded the Biſhoprick of *Bamberg*, and Married his Daughter to the King of *Hungary*, by whoſe means that King and all his Subjects received the Chriſtian Faith; but *Henry* died in the eighth year of his Empire, to the great loſs of his Subjects. He being dead, of whom in all exigencies *Benedict* made uſe as his Protector, he was expell'd by a Faction, and another Pope choſen in his room, though he ſoon after agreed the matter, with his Adverſaries, who turn'd out again the Pſeudo-Pope, and reſtor'd *Benedict* with Honour. He died in the eleventh year, firſt month, and thirteenth day of his Popedom, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church. 'Tis ſaid, that a certain Biſhop walking in a ſolitary place, *Benedict* appear'd to him ſitting upon a black Horſe, whereupon the Biſhop ask'd him the reaſon of his appearance in that manner; he anſwer'd, that his buſineſs was to deſire him to take ſome Money which he had hid in a certain place to which he directed him, and to give it to the Poor, as from him; for that the Money had been of no profit to him, it conſiſting of what had been given of Alms, or gotten by Rapine. The Biſhop executed his Requeſt, and immediately ſurrendred his Biſhoprick, and led a Monaſtic Life. *Vincentius* writes, that *Gerard* Biſhop of *Canobio* was in great account about this time for his Learning and exemplary Life; as alſo was *Gutherus* Biſhop of *Prague*, who for his great Abilities and Holineſs ſuffered Martyrdom from the Enemies of the Chriſtian Religion. At this time alſo, ſo great a Peſtilence raged in the World, that 'twas thought fewer ſurviv'd it than died of it: Which calamity was fore-ſhew'd by a Well of wholeſom Water in *Lorain* being turn'd into Blood.

JOHN XXI.

JOHN the twenty firſt, a *Roman*, Son of *Gregory*, was, as ſome will have it, Biſhop of *Porto*, though others ſay, he never was in Holy Orders at all; he was made Pope at the ſame time that *Conrade* of *Schwaben* was by a juſt Suffrage elected Emperor in the room of *Henry*, who had been dead three years. In this *Interregnum* I ſuppoſe it was, that ſeveral Cities of *Italy* revolted from the Empire, and ſtood up for their Liberty; wherefore *Conrade*, who was a great Soldier, and had been for many years in great Command in the Wars under *Henry*, raiſing an Army ſpeedily enters *Italy*, and marching firſt againſt the *Milaneſes*, the chief Authors of this defection, he ſits down before the Town, burns the Suburbs, and breaths forth nothing but utter ruine to the City; but quickly raiſes his Siege, by the perſuaſion of the Arch-biſhop of *Cologne*, who aſſured him, that, as he was at Maſs, S. *Ambroſe* appear'd to him, and threaten'd deſtruction to them all, except they departed from the City of which himſelf was Patron. *Conrade* therefore holds on his Journey to *Rome*, where at the hands of Pope *John* he receiv'd the Imperial Crown, and then march'd againſt the *Hungarians* and *Sclavonians*, who had aſſiſted the rebellious *Italians*, and ſoon ſubdu'd them. *Rodolphus* alſo Duke of *Burgundy*, being vex'd by the Seditions of his Subjects, put himſelf under the protection of *Conrade*, and therefore *Burgundy* has been ever ſince reckon'd, for a good part of it, a Province of the Empire. It is ſaid of *Conrade*, that he made ſeveral very uſeful Laws; among which one was, that it ſhould be death for any Prince of the Empire to diſturb the Peace of it; and upon that account he was a fierce Perſecutor of *Leopold* a *German* Count, who was a Ring-leader of ſome diſturbances in his Country. He ſent Ambaſſadors to charge the *Greeks* and *Normans* (who were quarrelling about the Kingdom of *Apulia*) to lay down their Arms; and threaten'd ruine to the *Romans*, if they perſiſted, as they had begun, to teize their Pope with Seditions. In his time, Religion was adorn'd in *France* by the ſtrict Life and Holineſs of ſeveral Abbats, and *Himericus*, Son of S. *Stephen* King of *Hungary*, had great reputation for his Miracles. But *John*, who is very much to be praiſed for his Life, died, after he had been Pope eleven years and nine days. The See was then vacant eight days.

BENEDICT IX.

B*ENEDICT* the Ninth, as ſome ſay, the Nephew of *John*, born at *Fraſcati*, Son of *Albericus*, came to the Pontificate, when *Canutus* a King of *England*, out of Devotion and for performance of a Vow came to *Rome*, which having done, as he return'd home he married his Daughter to *Henry* the Son of *Conrade*. Soon after *Conrade* dying, his Son *Henry* II. ſucceeded his Father, and raiſing an Army gives Battel to *Vldericus* King of *Bohemia*; but the Victory being doubtful, he renew'd the Fight, overcame him and took him priſoner, but ſetting him under Tribute, he diſcharg'd him from his impriſonment; then marching againſt the *Hungarians* who were contending about the Crown, he reſtor'd *Peter* to his Throne who had been driven out by *Alboinus*. In the mean time the *Romans* depoſed *Benedict*, who was a ſluggiſh Fellow and good for nothing, and ſet up in his room *John* Biſhop of *Sabina*, by the name of *Sylveſter* III. who alſo after a Popedom of nine and forty days was turn'd out and *Benedict* reſtor'd; and he finding himſelf ſtill liable to the ſame danger again, of his own accord reſign'd the Chair to *John* Arch-deacon of S. *John* at *Port Latin*, afterward called *Gregory* VII though ſome affirmt that he ſold it to him. Wherefore *Benedict* was ill ſpoken of by all Men deſervedly and condemn'd by the Divine Judgment; for 'tis certain, that after his death he was ſeen in a moſt monſtrous likeneſs, and being ask'd, why, having been Pope, he appear'd in ſuch a horrid ſhape? Becauſe (ſays he) I led my life without Law or Reaſon, it is the Will of God and S. *Peter*, whoſe Seat I defiled with all manner of wickedneſs, that I bear the ſhape rather of a Monſter than of a Man. After he had by intervals held S. *Peter*'s Chair ten years, four months and nine days, he died, upon which, the See cannot be ſaid to have been vacant at all, becauſe he ſold it. *Hiſtorians* write, that at this time *Gerard*, a *Venetian*, Biſhop of the *Hungarians*, an excellent Man and of great Learning, chearfully ſuffer'd Martyrdom by the Enemies to the name of Chriſt; being bound to a Cart, and from a high Hill let down upon a Precipice and torn to pieces.

SYLVESTER III.

S*YLVESTER* the Third, a *Roman*, Son of one *Laurence*, was ſubſtituted into the room of *Benedict* when he was expell'd, but held it not long, for after nine and forty days *Benedict* was reſtor'd by his own Faction. The Popedom was now brought to that paſs, that he who was moſt ambitious and would give moſt for it, not he who was moſt Religious and Learned, ſurely obtain'd this Office, to the great oppreſſion and diſcouragement of all good Men; a naughty cuſtom, which I wiſh were laid by even in our own times; and yet this miſchief is not ſo great, but that, I fear, (except God avert) we ſhall ſee much worſe. I return to *Sylveſter*, who, being Cardinal of *Sabina*, was made Pope not by the Colledge of Cardinals, for that had been tolerable, but merely by Simony, as ſome write; and ſoon after juſtly depoſed, having entred like a Thief and a Robber, not by the Gate, but by the back Door. *Benedict* indeed was reſtor'd, but the City continued in a hubbub, ſometimes deſiring this Man, and then another to be put up; which uſes to be the caſe of a *Mobile*, who, wanting a Governor to ſteer their giddy humors, generally prefer the worſe to the better Men.

GREGORY VI.

GREGORY the Sixth, Arch-deacon of S. *John* at *Port-Latin*, receiv'd (as we ſaid) the Chair of *Benedict*. But the Emperor *Henry* II. hearing of theſe miſcarriages, with a great Army enters *Italy*, and calling a Council, cauſes *Benedict* IX. *Sylveſter* III. and *Gregory* VI. all to be depoſed for ſo many wretched Monſters, and creates *Syndegerus* Biſhop of *Bamberg*, Pope, by the name of *Clement* II. Yet *Gilbertus*, the Hiſtorian, affirms, this *Gregory* to have deſerv'd very well of the Church, having by his Authority and great Spirit in a ſhort time re-aſſerted the dignity of the Sea Apoſtolick, which had been much weakned in its Powers by the negligence of ſome of his Predeceſſors; for he recovered the Patrimony of the Church, and firſt with Excommunications and Curſes, and (when they avail'd not) with downright force of Arms he deſtroy'd the *Banditi*, who, lurking near the City, would cruelly murther Pilgrims as they came to *Rome*, for Devotion ſake. For this reaſon ſome wicked Rogues ſlander'd him commonly with the Names of Murtherer, Simoniac and Blood-thirſty; nay, even ſome Cardinals would ſay ſo too; which ſo mov'd *Gregory*, that whilſt he lay ill of that ſickneſs, of which afterward he died, he ſent for thoſe Cardinals, and rebuk'd them ſharply for finding fault with that, which was done with ſo much juſtice and honeſty; And that you may know, (ſays he,) whether I have done that which is right or no, when I am dead, carry my Corps to the Church-doors, which firſt let be lock'd up, and if they do miraculouſly open, then think that I am an honeſt Man, and worthy of Chriſtian Burial; if not, that both Soul and Body is damn'd, and you may caſt out my Corps where you pleaſe. The Cardinals did accordingly, and the doors were thrown open by a ſtrong Wind that roſe on a ſuddain, and the Body brought in, to the admiration of all Men and to the great reputation of his Sanctity. This is the ſubſtance of what various Authors write of *Gregory*, who ſate in the Chair two years and ſeven Months, during the Schiſm.

CLEMENT II.

CLEMENT the Second, before called *Syndegerus*, Biſhop of *Bamberg*, was made Pope in the Council, by the conſent, or rather Authority and Command, of *Henry* II. who having received at this Popes hands the Imperial Crown, cauſed the *Romans* to take an Oath after a form he preſcribed, not to meddle in the Election of any Pope, except by a command from him; for the Emperor ſaw things to be come to ſuch a height of Licentiouſneſs, that any factious and potent fellow, however ignoble, could arrive at that Dignity, by purchaſing the ſuffrages of the Electors, which ought not to be conferred, but, by the Spirit of God, upon thoſe that excelled in Learning and a holy life. From hence he went to *Capua*, where he ſetled all things, and having liſted thoſe Soldiers, who had ſo ſtoutly reſiſted the *Saracens*, he returned by *Rome* for *Germany*. He was no ſooner gone, (as ſome Write) but the *Romans* contriv'd to poiſon the Pope, becauſe made ſo without their aſſent, in the ninth month of his Popedom; nay, ſome Authors ſay, the venemous Potion was prepared for him by that *Stephen*, who by the name of *Damaſus* II. ſucceeded him, at the time when *Odo*, Abbat of *Clugny*, a Man of extraordinary holineſs, dying, *Hugo* was made Abbat after him, a noble Perſonage, pious, devout, affable and learned, *Henry* II. at this time reigning in *France*, *Alphonſos* in *Spain*, and *Michael* with his Son *Conſtantine* being Emperors of *Conſtantinople*, which Empire was now in great weakneſs and diſtreſs.

DAMASVS II.

DAMASVS the Second, a *Bavarian*, ſirnamed *Bagnario* or *Pepone*, (as ſome ſay) ſeized the Papal Chair by force, without any conſent of the Clergy and People. So deep root had this licentious cuſtom taken, that any ambitious fellow durſt invade the Seat of S. *Peter*. But the juſt God avenged himſelf upon this Villain, that he might be an example to the reſt, who ſhould ſeek by ambition and Simony, that which ought to be the reward of Virtue; for on the 29th day of his Pontificate he died. Some would not have this Man put in the Catalogue of Popes, becauſe he came not regularly to that Dignity, and admire that the *Romans* were not moved with the Villany of the action, contrary to their Oath to *Henry*, to compel him to lay down his Office; but becauſe he lived ſo ſhort a time, that the Citizens could not ſo ſoon bethink themſelves what to do, I think they are not to be blamed. We ſhall then paſs to *Leo*.

LEO IX.

LEO the Ninth, a *German*, *An. Dom.* 1049. was made Pope after this manner. The *Romans* having ſent Embaſſadors to the Emperor to intreat him to ſend them a good Pope, he immediately nominated to them *Bounon* Biſhop of *Toul*, a good man and of great integrity. Who, taking his journey towards *Rome*, in his Pontifical habit, was met by the Abbat of *Clugny* and *Hildebrand* a Monk, born at *Soana*, who perſuaded him to lay by his Pontifical habit, and to enter *Rome*, for that *Henry* had no power from God to create a Pope, but it belonged of right to the Clergy and People of *Rome*. With theſe words *Leo* was ſo moved, (and becauſe as he came along he had heard a voice, ſaying, *Ego cogito pacis cogitationes, non afflictionis*,) that he laid by his habit and entered *Rome* as a private Man, accuſing himſelf that he had choſen to obey the Emperor rather than God. The *Roman* Clergy then, by the perſuaſion of *Hildebrand*, elected *Bounon* Pope, and ſo much the more readily, becauſe he had profeſs'd, the right of electing Popes ought not to be in the Emperor, but in the Clergy. And yet the Vices of ſeveral Popes were (as we have ſaid,) ſo great, that it ſeem'd to be done by the judgment of God, that this Power ſhould be taken from the Clergy, that they might amend their flagitious lives and ſinful inclinations, and that the Church of Chriſt might not ſuffer ruin in the hands of ſuch evil Prelates. Thus *Bounon* having got the Papacy, and having changed his name to *Leo* IX. he immediately created *Hildebrand* a Cardinal-Deacon, and gave him the Government of S. *Paul*'s Church; ſo that it ſeemed as if they had divided the Pontifical charge between them, one ruling the Church of S. *Peter*, the other that of S. *Paul*. In the mean time, *Drogo* Chieftain of the *Normans* in *Apulia* dying, his Brother *Giſulphus* ſucceeded him and poſſeſs'd himſelf by force of the City of *Benevent*, which was the Popes by ſurrender; for when the Emperor *Henry* having built a Church at *Bamberg* to the honour of S. *George*, and had a great mind it ſhould be made a Cathedral, *Benedict* VIII. conſented, upon condition the ſaid Church ſhould pay yearly, as a kind of Tribute, a hundred Marks of Silver, and a white Horſe with his capariſons; which yearly payment *Leo* IX. remitted to the Church of *Bamberg*, receiving of the Emperor in lieu thereof the City of *Benevent*. *Leo* therefore, ſtrengthened with the juſtice of his Title and the Emperor's Forces, marches againſt *Giſulphus* with an undiſciplin'd Army, and is by him defeated and taken priſoner; but was ſoon remitted to *Rome* with an honourable retinue. 'Tis ſtoried, that in his time *Robert Guiſcardi* bringing an Army out of *France* into *Italy*, and driving the *Greeks* and *Saracens* before him, poſſeſs'd himſelf of *Apulia*, where he chanc'd to find a Statue, with theſe words engraven in a braſs Circle round the head, *The firſt day of* May *at Sun-riſing I ſhall have a golden head*; which words being well conſidered by a certain *Saracen*, who was *Robert*'s priſoner, a skilful Magician, he mark'd how far the ſhadow of the Statue extended, and on the firſt day of *May*, at Sun-riſe, having dug up the place he found a great Treaſure, with which he bought his liberty of *Robert*. But to return to *Leo*, who was certainly a Man of great Devotion, Innocence, Benignity and Religion, particularly ſo eminent for Hoſpitality, that his Palace was always free for Pilgrims and poor People; nay once, when he found a poor Leper at his door, he with pity ordered him to be taken in and laid in his own Bed; but in the Morning when the Door-keeper opened the door, the Leper being not to be found, it was thought, that it was Chriſt himſelf that lay there as a poor Man. In matters relating to the Faith, he uſed great diligence and induſtry, for in a Council, holden at *Vercelli*, he condemned *Berengarius* for a Heretick, and by his Monitories put the Emperor of *Conſtantinople* upon repairing the holy Sepulchre at *Jeruſalem*, which had been ſpoiled by the *Barbarians*. At this ſame time lived *Theobald* a noble *French*-man, famous for his holy life at *Vicenza*, and *Vincentius* Biſhop of *Liege*, a perſon remarkable for Learning and Piety, wrote many things ſkilfully and acutely concerning the Quadrature of the Circle to *Hermannus*, a Man of an excellent Wit. *Leo* died, when he had been Pope five years, two months and ſix days.

VICTOR II.

V*ICTOR* the Second, before called *Glaberdus*, a *Bavarian*, ſucceeded *Leo*, rather by the favour of the Emperor *Henry*, than by a free Election: For the Clergy and People of *Rome* ſtood in great fear of the Power of *Henry*, whom they had before offended by putting up new Popes, and therefore leſt, contrary to their Oath, they ſhould ſeem to make any Innovations, they propoſe this *Victor*, and by *Hildebrand* their Embaſſador to *Henry* all things were managed to both their ſatisfactions. *Victor* being by univerſal conſent placed in the Chair, with the approbation of the Emperor he called a Council at *Florence*, where he deprived a multitude of Biſhops of their Biſhopricks for Simony and for Fornication, and admoniſhed the Clergy of their duty, threatning ſeverity againſt thoſe that ſhould tranſgreſs the Canons. Some write, that *Victor* made a Viſit to *Henry*, and that he was ſplendidly entertained by him; but I am of opinion, that *Hildebrand* only went thither, who, by virtue of his Legantine power, created *Henry* III. the Son of *Henry*, *Cæſar*. *Capua* was now beſieged by the *Saracens*, which ſtrook terror into all the neighbouring Cities, but *Robert Guiſcardi*, taking up Arms, ſet upon the *Saracens* and defeated them, thereby delivering at once *Capua* from a Siege and their Neighbours from their fears. Of what extraction this *Robert* was, is not certain, ſome accounting him a *French*-man, others a *Norman*; however it be, 'tis ſure, he was a perſon of a noble Spirit and an excellent underſtanding, ſo that he deſerved the Crown he held of *Apulia*. Pope *Victor*, whoſe life we are upon, died in the ſecond year, third month and fourteenth day of his Pontificate; after which the See was vacant eleven days.

STEPHEN IX.

STEPHEN the Ninth, before named *Frederick*, a *Lorainer*, Abbat of *Monte-Caſſino*, was no ſooner made Pope, but he took care that the Church of *Milain*, which for almoſt two hundred years had withdrawn its ſubjection to that of *Rome*, was now at length reduced to obedience thereto, as to the Mother and Nurſe of all Churches, which obedience ſhe has ſince perſevered in, as becomes true Daughters to do to a pious Mother. Near about this time *Henry* III. ſucceeded his Father deceaſed, and *Alexius* ſucceeded *Nicephorus* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*; *Robert Guiſcardi* alſo in a mighty Battel overthrew the *Greeks* and drove them out of *Calabria*, leaving none but *Greek* Prieſts, who even to our times kept their own Language and Cuſtoms: Indeed the *Conſtantinopolitan* Empire was now ſo broken by the *Saracens*, that they had much ado to preſerve *Thrace*, *Galatia*, *Pontus*, *Theſſaly*, *Macedon* and *Achaia*, and even out of theſe either the *Turks* or *Saracens* every day cantled out one place or other. But *Stephen*, when he had been Pope ſeven months and eight days, died at *Florence*, where he was honourably buried, as *Martinus* writes. Some ſay, that Pope *Stephen* accuſed the Emperor *Henry* of Hereſie, for endeavouring to diminiſh the Papal Authority, without regard to Religion and the immortal God.

BENEDICT X.

BENEDICT the Tenth, a *Capuan*, before named *Nuntius*, Biſhop of *Veletri*, was, by a faction of Noblemen, created Pope at the ſame time that *Agnes* Mother of *Henry* III. conſtituted *Gilbert* of *Parma*, a Man of great abilities, Viceroy of *Italy*. There was then in *Italy* alſo, *Godfrey* the Husband of the Counteſs *Mathild*, a moſt noble Lady, who was very powerful; for *Beatrix* the Mother of *Mathild* had been Siſter to the Emperor *Henry* II. and had married one *Boniface* a potent Man and of an honourable Family, of the City of *Lucca* in *Tuſcany*; upon whoſe death all his Eſtates fell firſt to *Beatrix*, and, after her deceaſe, were devolved upon *Mathild* and her Husband *Godfrey*; ſo that they ſtood poſſeſſed of *Lucca*, *Parma*, *Reggio*, *Mantua*, and that part of *Tuſcany* now called S. *Peter*'s Patrimony. But to return to *Benedict*; he was depoſed by *Hildebrand*, becauſe he came not in by the right way, but by force and Simony: For the generality of the Clergy had paſſed their words to Arch-deacon *Hildebrand*, when he went to *Florence*, that they would not proceed upon any Election of a new Pope, till his return to the City. When he was come back therefore, together with *Gerard* Biſhop of *Florence*, he inveigh'd moſt bitterly againſt them all, eſpecially againſt thoſe who had promiſed to ſtay till his return. But there ariſing great contention upon this matter, many approving of *Benedict*, as a very good and prudent Man, though they diſallow'd that Election of him, with great clamours, that it was irregularly and illegally done; yet at laſt, by the perſuaſion of *Hildebrand*, *Gerard*, a Man worthy indeed of ſo high a Dignity, was by a majority of Votes created Pope, and *Benedict* turned out. Some will have this Election to have been made at *Siena*, becauſe a free choice could not be had at *Rome*, by reaſon of the partialities of ſome Men in power there. *Benedict* was depoſed after he had ſat nine months and twenty days, and then was confined to *Veletri*.

NICOLAS II.

NICOLAS the Second, a *Provençal*, at firſt named *Gerard*, Biſhop of *Florence*, for his Virtue and excellent ſpirit, upon the expulſion of *Benedict*, (who was not regularly ſo created) was made Pope at *Sienna*, and immediately thereupon withdrew to *Sutri*, where *An. Dom.* 1059. he called a Council, whither came not only the Biſhops, but many of the Noblemen of *Italy*, where he forced *Benedict* to reſign the Office and Habit of Pope, and to retire to *Veletri*: From hence he went to *Rome*, where in the ſecond *Lateran* Council he procured a Law to be enacted, very wholeſom for the Church of *Rome*, which is to be ſeen among the Decrees, to this purpoſe, “That if any one, either by Simony, or by the favour of any powerful Man, or by any tumult, either of the People or Soldiery, ſhall be placed in S. *Peter's* Chair, he ſhall be reputed not Apoſtolical, but an Apoſtate, one that tranſgreſſes the rules even of common Reaſon; and that it ſhall be lawful for the Cardinals, Clergy and devout Laity, with Weapons both ſpiritual and material, by *Anathema's* and by any human aid, him to drive out and depoſe; and that Catholicks may aſſemble for this end in any place whatſoever, if they cannot do it in the City. In the ſame Council, *Berengarius*, Deacon of the Church of *Anjou*, was reclaimed from his Error concerning the Sacrament of the Euchariſt, in the Bread and Wine whereof he affirmed the true and intire Body and Blood of Chriſt was not preſent, but only, by a ſign, figure or myſtery; which Error at the inſtance and perſuaſion of *Nicolas* and *Albericus* a Deacon, a very learned Man, he recanted, affirming the Euchariſt to be the true and intire Body and Blood of Chriſt. We have ſaid, that this Error was condemned by *Leo* IX. but never amended, the praiſe of which belongs wholly to *Nicolas*, as *Lanfranc* writes, a Man at that time very learned, who in an excellent Work of his confuted the Tenets of *Berengarius*. While theſe things were acted at *Rome* by Pope *Nicolas*, *Godfrey*, the *Norman*, who ſuceeded his Brother *Drogo* in the Earldom of *Apulia* and *Calabria*, dying, left his Son *Bagelardus* his Heir, which *Robert Guiſcardi* his Brother (as ſome will have it) not liking, he drove out his Nephew and ſeized upon the Earldom, taking in *Troja* alſo which had long been ſubject to the See of *Rome*. At this the Pope was not a little enraged at *Robert*, till, by his invitation, taking a journey into *Apulia*, whatſoever the Church had loſt was returned again, and then he not only took *Robert* into favour, but making him a feudatary of the Church, he was conſtituted Duke of *Calabria* and *Apulia*. After this, receiving of him a great aſſiſtance of Forces and returning to the City, he ſubdued the *Preneſtines*, *Tuſculans* and *Nomentans*, who had revolted from the Church; and croſſing the *Tiber*, he ſacked *Galeſe* and took in other Caſtles of Count *Gerard* as far as *Sutri*, rendring the Territories of *Rome* hereby much more ſecure. 'Tis certain alſo, that *Henry* III. was crown'd by *Nicolas* with the Imperial Diadem, and, out of gratitude for it, all his time never attempted any thing againſt holy Church. But *Nicolas*, having concluded this life with great praiſe of all Men, died when he had been Pope three years, ſix months and twenty ſix days; The See was then vacant twelve days.

ALEXANDER II.

ALEXANDER the Second, whoſe name at firſt was *Anſelm*, a *Milaneſe*, Biſhop of *Lucca*, upon the death of *Nicolas*, though abſent, was, for his good temper, affability and Learning, elected Pope. But the Biſhops of *Lombardy* thinking, for the honour of their Country, that it was juſt a Pope ſhould be choſen out of their number; *Gilbert* of *Parma*, at that time very powerful, taking their parts vigorouſly, they obtained of the Emperor *Henry*, againſt the mind of his Wife *Agnes*, that they might ſet up another Pope. Whereupon, the Biſhops, holding a conſult, made one *Cadolus* Pope, who was Biſhop of *Parma*, to whom all *Lombardy* ſtraightway ſubmitted, except *Mathild* a noble Lady who had great reverence for the *Roman* See. *Cadolus* being ſoon after called to *Rome* by the Adverſaries of *Alexander*, both Parties engaged in Battel in the *Prati di Nerone*, at the foot of the Hill *Montorio*, in which fight many were ſlain on both ſides. *Alexander* and *Godfrey* the Husband of *Mathild* ſtaid in the *Lateran* Palace, not knowing where to truſt themſelves, all places were ſo full of treachery; though ſome ſay, that *Alexander*, to avoid the bloody fight, did before the Battel retire to *Lucca* and lived there ſecurely for ſome time, which kind Protection from the *Luccheſes* he gratefully acknowledged by granting both to their Church and City very notable Priviledges. *Cadolus* was repulſed at *Rome*, but reſted not long at quiet in his Country, being invited again by ſome Citizens, (who found, that, to ſatisfie their Avarice, it was their Intereſt that the City ſhould be kept in confuſion,) and getting together a greater Army than before, he comes to *Rome*, and by force ſeizes the *Citta Leonina* and S. *Peter*'s Church. But the *Romans*, with the Forces of *Godfrey* falling forth, ſtrook ſuch a ſudden terror into the Enemy, that they betook themſelves to their heels, and *Cadolus* narrowly miſſed being taken, having been forſaken by his Friends; but *Cincius*, Son to the Prefect of *Rome*, with a ſtrong Squadron carried him ſafe through the whole adverſe Army with great difficulty into the Caſtle S. *Angelo*;

where being beſieged for ſome time, and ſeeing little hopes of getting out free, he corrupted the Beſiegers with three hundred pounds in Silver, and mounting a lean Horſe he eſcaped all alone. In the mean while, *Otho* Arch-biſhop of *Cologn*, before *Henry* the young Emperor charg'd his Mother *Agnes* with medling too much with the affairs of State in Chriſtendom, to the great diſhonour of the Empire, whereupon a Commiſſion was given to him to compoſe the Church-diviſions, according to his diſcretion; and he, coming to *Rome*, at firſt rebuk'd *Alexander* with very hard words, for entring upon the Papacy without the conſent of the Emperor, contrary to Law and Cuſtom; but Arch-deacon *Hildebrand* took him up and ſtiffly defended what the Pope had done, proving, that, both by Law and ancient Uſage, the election of Popes belong'd to the Clergy, and convinced *Otho* ſo far, that the Emperor *Henry*, being alſo at laſt conſcious of his Error, deſired *Alexander* to call a Council and promiſed to come thither himſelf. The City of *Mantua* was pitch'd upon as moſt fit; and thither every one came, who was concern'd for the ſafety and protection of the Church; where all things being ſettled, the Emperor himſelf not only got the favour of the Pope, but begged and obtained of him a pardon for *Cadolus* who ſubmitted to him, and for *Gilbert*, the Author (as we ſaid) of all this miſchief, the Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna*: The firſt of theſe the Pope eaſily agreed to, by the example of our Saviour, who even prayed for his perſecutors; but the ſecond he granted much againſt his will, and not till tired with the importunity of *Henry*, fearing what fell out afterward, that it would be very pernicious to the Church of *Rome*. The Pope, departing from *Mantua* and paſſing through *Lucca*, conſecrated the great Church there, of which he had been Biſhop, with great ſolemnity, intending to ſtay there till Arch-deacon *Hildebrand* had ſettled matters a little in *Apulia*; who, having received ſome auxiliary Forces of the Counteſs *Mathild*, not only oppoſed the power of *Richard* and *William*, but forced them to reſtore what they had taken from the Church: And then *Alexander* came to the City, and after a Pontificate of eleven years and ſix months, he died, and was buried in the Church of S. *John* in the *Lateran*, no manner of pomp being ſpared (that could be at the Funeral of a Pope) either by the Clergy or people. In his time flouriſhed *John Gaulbertus*, a Monk of *Vallembroſa* and firſt of the Order, a moſt holy Man and famous for Miracles.

GREGORY VII.

GREGORY the Seventh, formerly called *Hildebrand*, a *Florentine* of *Soane*, whoſe Father's name was *Bonicius*, was choſen Pope by the conſent of all good Men: The words of the Election are theſe; "We, the Cardinals, Clerks, Aco- "lytes, Sub-deacons and Prieſts, with the Biſhops, Abbats, and many "others both of the Laity and Clergy, do chuſe this day, (*April* 22. "at the Church of S. *Peter in chains*, in the year 1472.) as Chriſt's true "Vicar, Arch-deacon *Hildebrand*, a Man of much learning, piety, pru-

"dence, juſtice, conſtancy, religion, modeſty, ſobriety and continency; "who governs his Family very well, is hoſpitable to the poor, having "been ingenuouſly brought up in the boſom of our holy Mother, the "Church, whom we think fit to govern the Church, with the ſame "Authority as S. *Peter* by God's commandment formerly did. And when he had gotten the Popedom, he immediately admoniſhed *Henry* the Emperor, that he ſhould not for the time to come take any bribes, and ſell Biſhopricks or Benefices in a Simoniacal manner; for, if he did, he and thoſe that bought them ſhould ſuffer the ſeverity of Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures. But *Henry* was ſo far from obeying his Admonitions, though they were very grave, that he deprived *Agnes* the Empreſs of all her ſhare in the Government, for telling him ſoberly what ought to be done in point of Religion. And ſhe upon that went to *Rome*, where ſhe lived not long ere ſhe died for grief: At laſt after many Embaſſies to and fro, the Emperor and *Gregory* were reconciled, and *Gregory* was by him confirmed in his Pontificate, as then it was the cuſtom for Emperors to do. But when *Henry*, who was fickle in good, and obſtinate in ill, reſolutions, perſiſted in his Simony, though often admoniſhed, the Pope laid an *Anathema* upon all thoſe, who had gained Biſhopricks and Benefices by bribery. And that he might not ſeem to have done it in an heat, he called a Council in the *Lateran* (at which many Biſhops were preſent, particularly *Gilbert*, Arch-biſhop of *Parma*, born at *Ravenna*) where he gave a reaſon, why he laid ſuch Cenſures upon *Simoniacks*, and ſaid, He would do the ſame to the Emperor, unleſs he altered his mind. *Gilbert*, when the Council was diſmiſſed, having gotten a fair occaſion to accuſe *Gregory*, and withal being ambitious of the Popedom, incenſed *Cincius*, a *Roman* Citizen, (Son to *Stephen*, who was Governor of the City) no leſs raſh than ſeditious againſt the Pope; and promiſed him great things in the Emperors name, if he would do as he would have him. Thereupon *Cincius* laid wait for the Pope, and whilſt he was ſaying Maſs upon *Chriſtday* day at midnight, in S. *Maries* the Great, he broke in upon him with others of his gang; took him as he was juſt adminiſtring the Euchariſt, haled him away, and ſhut him up in a well-fortified Tower. The next day the people of *Rome*, when they knew of it, took up Arms againſt *Cincius*, ſet the Pope at liberty, demoliſhed his Houſe, and the Tower, and expelled all his Family out of the City with their Noſes cut. But *Cincius* himſelf, who was the Author of all that Roguery, eſcaped, and got through by-ways to the Emperor in *Germany*. *Gilbert*, who was the contriver of that Stratagem, ſeeing his Deſign fruſtrated, diſſembling his enmity to him, got leave of the Pope to retire to *Ravenna*, meaning there to ſet on foot much worſe intrigues. For he induced *Theobald* Arch-biſhop of *Milain*, and many other Prelates of *Lombardy*, to conſpire againſt *Gregory*; beſides *Hugo Candidus*, a Cardinal, who though he had done the ſame before, and was reconciled too, yet at this time he ſeemed to be ill-affected. For he endeavoured, all he could, to inſtigate the Emperor and the *Normans*, who were at variance about the Empire, to make a Peace with one another and join againſt the Pope. Which when *Gregory* underſtood, he called a Synod in the *Lateran*, and giving his reaſon for ſo doing, deprived *Gilbert* and *Hugo* of their Dignities, and laid a Curſe upon them. Whilſt theſe things were tranſacted at *Rome*,

Rome, *Henry*, who had fought with his Enemies, the *Saxons*, very ſucceſsfully, was ſo puff'd up with his good fortune, that he call'd an Aſſembly at *Wormes*, of which *Sigifred* Archbiſhop of *Mentz* was Preſident, where he was ſo bold, as to prohibit all People from ob[illegible]ng the Pope in any caſe whatever. And from that Aſſembly came *Romandus* a Clerk of *Parma*, by *Henry's* order, to *Rome*, where he publickly interdicted *Gregory* from doing any thing for the future, that belong'd to the Office of a Pope: Commanding the Cardinals to leave *Gregory* and come to him, for they were like to have another Pope. *Gregory*, not able to endure ſuch an affront upon God and the Church, deprived *Sigifred* and the reſt of the Clergy that took *Henry's* part, of all their Dignities and Preferments; and likewiſe laid a Curſe upon the Emperor himſelf, after he had degraded him from his Imperial Honour. And of this Degradation or Deprivation, the Form was as followeth; ‘Bleſſed *Peter*! Prince of the Apoſtles! I beſeech thee, hearken unto me, and hear thy Servant, whom thou haſt educated from my infancy, and preſerved to this day from the hands of wicked Men, that hate and perſecute me for the Faith I have in thee. Thou art my beſt Witneſs, Thou and the Holy Mother of Jeſus Chriſt, together with *Paul* thy fellow Martyr, that I did not enter upon the Papacy without reluctance: Not that I thought it robbery, lawfully to riſe into thy Chair, but I was more willing to ſpend my days in pilgrimage, than at that time to ſupply thy place for Oſtentation and Vain-glory. I muſt needs confeſs, that it was thy Goodneſs, and not my Deſerts, that brought me to the Cure of Chriſtendom, and gave me the power of looſing and binding; and therefore in confidence of that, and for the Honour and Safety of the Church, I do deprive King *Henry*, Son to *Henry* who was formerly Emperor, of all Imperial Power, in the Name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghoſt, for that He ſo boldly and raſhly laid violent hands upon thy Church: And I abſolve all his Chriſtian Subjects from their Oaths, that bind 'em to pay Allegiance to true and lawful Kings. For it is fit, that he ſhould loſe his Honour, who would diminiſh the Honour of the Church. And furthermore, becauſe he has contemn'd mine (or rather thy) Admonitions concerning his own and his Peoples Salvation, and ſeparated himſelf from the Church of God, which he would fain deſtroy, I ſet him under a Curſe, as being well aſſured, that thou art *Peter*, upon whoſe Rock, as a true foundation, Chriſt Jeſus our King has built his Church. There were at that time a great many that talk'd of Peace when the Execration was paſt: To whom *Gregory* made anſwer, that he did not refuſe conditions of Peace, if *Henry* would firſt make his Peace with God, You, ſaid he, muſt needs know, what injury he has done the Church, and how often I have admoniſhed him to reform his Life and Converſation. And this I did, in reſpect to *Henry* his Father's memory, who was my very good Friend, but to no purpoſe, he having entertain'd Principles quite contrary to his Fathers. Nevertheleſs, ſome of thoſe that were preſent continu'd to urge him, and perſuade him that a King ought not to have been Anathematiz'd ſo haſtily. To whom the Pope reply'd; When, ſaid he, Chriſt committed his Church to *Peter* and ſaid, *Feed my ſheep*, did he except Kings? No, when he gave *Peter* the power to bind and looſe, he excepted none, nor exempted any man from his Authority. Wherefore, he that ſays, He cannot be bound by the Churches power, muſt needs confeſs, he cannot any more be abſolved by it: Now whoſoever is ſo impudent as to affirm[illegible]s, makes himſelf a perfect Separatiſt from Chriſt and his Church. When *Henry* heard what *Gregory* had done, he wrote many Letters to ſeveral Nations, complaining that he was condemn'd by the Pope againſt all Law and Reaſon. And *Gregory* on the other hand demonſtrated not only by Words and Letters, but alſo by Reaſon and Witneſſes in the face of the World, that he had done nothing but what was juſt and right. But in the mean time part of the Kingdom revolted from *Henry*, and the *Saxons* prepared for a War againſt him: Upon which the *German* Princes, fearing ſome misfortune might befal their Country, decreed in a publick Aſſembly, that if *Gregory* would come into *Germany*, *Henry* ſhould humbly beg his pardon; and the King ſwore he would do it. Thereupon the Pope, who was induced by the promiſes and Prayers of the Arch-biſhop of *Treves*, *Henry*'s Ambaſſador, was going on his Journey towards *Augſt*, but when he came to *Vercelli*, was privately inform'd by the Biſhop of that place, who is Chancellor of all *Italy*, that *Henry* was coming againſt him with an Army. At which the Pope forbare to go any further, but went to *Canoſſo*, a Town near *Rheggio*, under the Counteſs *Matilda*. *Henry* alſo made thither as faſt as he could, with his whole Army, and, laying aſide his Regal Habit, he went barefoot to the Gate of the Town, (to move the Townſmens pity) and deſired to be let in. But he was deny'd entrance, and took it very patiently, or at leaſt ſeemed ſo to do, though it were a ſharp Winter, and all things bound up in Froſt. Notwithſtanding he tarried in the Suburbs three days, and begg'd Pardon continually, till at laſt by the interceſſion of *Maude*, and *Adelaus* an Earl of *Savoy*, together with the Abbat of *Clugny* he was introduced, abſolved and reconciled to the Church; having ſworn to a Peace, and promiſed future Obedience. The form of the Kings Oath was this: 'I King '*Henry* do affirm, that I will keep all the Conditions and Engagements 'that are in the Peace, which our Lord, *Gregory* the Seventh, has 'drawn up according to his Mind; and will take care, that the ſaid 'Pope ſhall go where he pleaſes without the leaſt moleſtation, either 'to Him or his Attendants, eſpecially through all our Dominions, and 'that I will be no hindrance to Him in the exerciſe of his Pontifical 'Authority in any place whatſoever; and this I ſwear I will obſerve. Done at *Canoſſo*, *January* the 28, Indiction the 15th. But when he had ſucceeded according to his wiſh, and all People were gone to their ſeveral homes, *Henry* moved toward *Pavia*, but loſt *Cincius* by the way, who dy'd of a Fever; and yet *Henry* (though that Villain was gone) did not deſiſt from innovation. For he broke the Peace, and thereby vexed the *German* Princes to ſuch a degree, that they declared *Rodolphus* Duke of *Saxony* King, and rejected *Henry*. That moved *Henry* to petition the Pope, that he would diſpoſſeſs *Rodolphus* of the Kingdom by Excommunication. But ſeeing he could not obtain ſo great a Favour, he betook himſelf to his Arms, and engaged him in a bloody Battel, where the Victory was uncertain on both ſides. And then they each ſent Embaſſadors to the Pope, to beg of him, that he would aſſiſt 'em; to which he made no other anſwer, but that he would have 'em quit their Arms. But notwithſtanding *Henry* and *Rodolphus* fought a ſecond time without any odds: and therefore when they had engaged the third time, and kill'd a great many Men on both ſides, *Henry* (who ſeemed to have a little the better of it) would not hear *Rodolphus*'s Embaſſadors that came to him for Peace, but wrote to the Pope again, that he would pleaſe to Anathematize *Rodolphus*, who endeavour'd to get poſſeſſion of his Kingdom. Which *Gregory* refuſing to do, *Henry* was ſo angry, that he ſtudied day and night to ruin the Pope. In the mean while, leſt Sedition ſhould be wanting in Chriſtendom, *Michael* and *Andronicus* his Son, who had been by force depriv'd of the Empire of *Conſtantinople* by *Nicephorus Bucamor*, came for refuge to *Gregory*; who not only Excommunicated *Nicephorus*, but employ'd *Rogerius* a feudatary of the *Roman* Church, to reſtore *Michael*, with whom he diſcours'd at *Ceperano*, to the Empire. In purſuance of which Command he got a Navy, and leaving his younger Son *Rogerius* in *Italy*, he took *Boëmund* his other Son along with him; and ſailed firſt to *Valona*, but pitch'd his Camp near *Durazzo*, reſolving to make ſure of that City, which was ſo convenient for the carrying on of the War. But *Dominick Sylvius*, Duke of *Venice*, who was of *Nicephorus*'s his Party, beat *Rogerius* from the Siege, with great loſs on both ſides. But not long after, *Nicephorus* was betray'd by *Alexius Mega*, General of his Forces and made a priſoner, the City being given up for three days to be plunder'd by the Soldiers, according to compact. *Nicephorus* himſelf was taken in the Church of *Sancta Sophia*, but his Life ſpar'd upon condition, that he would take upon him the Habit of a Monk for as long as he lived. *Gregory*, ſeeing that *Henry* was incited againſt the Church by ſome ſeditious Biſhops, called a great Synod, and forbad *Gilbert* Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna* (for his Pride and Malice) the exerciſe of his Epiſcopal or Prieſtly Function, under pain of an *Anathema* or Curſe. For when he was ſummon'd to appear before the See Apoſtolick, being conſcious of his Crimes, he would not obey the Citation, for which alone he deſerv'd the penalty of an *Anathema*. He likewiſe cenſured *Roland* of *Treviſo*, for that, when he was Legat in order to a Peace between him and *Henry*, he ſowed the Seeds of Diſcord and not Unity, to get a Biſhoprick by the bargain. Nor did he ſpare *Hugo* Cardinal of S. *Clements*, who had ſeditiouſly and heretically conſpired with *Cadolus* Biſhop of *Parma*. In fine, he choſe three at the ſame Aſſembly, to wit, *Bernard* the Deacon, the other *Bernard* Abbat of *Marſeilles*, and *Odo* Arch-biſhop of *Treves*, to go Legates *à Latere* from the See-Apoſtolick to compoſe all differences between *Henry* and *Rodolphus*. For the wiſe Pope ſaw, that ſuch a quarrel, unleſs it were timely ended, would occaſion great calamities one time or other to Chriſtendom. But becauſe he well knew, that there would not be lacking ſuch miſchievous Men, as would endeavour to hinder it, (becauſe it was their intereſt to foment rather than remove the diſſention) he gave the Legates Letters Apoſtolical to the ſeveral Princes and States, written after this manner: "We, taking notice of the weakneſs, covetouſneſs and ambition of Mankind, do charge all manner of perſons, 'whether Kings, Arch-biſhops, Biſhops, Dukes, Counts, Marqueſſes, or 'Knights, that, either out of pride, cunning or covetouſneſs, they give 'no hindrance to our Legats, whilſt they negotiate the Peace. And 'whoſoever ſhall be ſo raſh, as to contravene this Order (which I hope 'none will,) and ſhall hinder our Legats from compoſing a Peace, I bind him under an *Anathema* both in Spirituals and Temporals, by Apoſtolick Power; and take away from him the advantage of any Victory he has gain'd, that he may at leaſt be confounded and be converted by a double penance. He likewiſe commanded the Legates to call a Diet in *Germany*, and deliberately examine, who of the two Kings had the right, and accordingly by the conſent of all good Men to aſſign him the Kingdom whoſe Cauſe was juſteſt: and that He, when he ſhould hear what they had determin'd, would confirm it by the Authority of God and S. *Peter*, than which there cannot be greater. But in the mean while, *Gregory*, leſt the Church of *Rome* ſhould ſuffer by Simony, called a Council, and therein confirm'd the Decrees of his Predeceſſors made to put a ſtop to that evil, in theſe words: "We, following the example of our Predeceſſors, as we have formerly in other Councils, do decree and ordain by the Authority of Almighty God, that whoever, for the future, accepts of a Biſhoprick, an Abbacy, or any other Eccleſiaſtical preferment from a Layman, ſhall not by any means be eſteemed a Biſhop, an Abbat, or a Clergy-man; nor let the ſame Perſon dare to approach the Apoſtolical See, before he has repented and left the place that he gain'd by Ambition and Contumacy, which is the ſin of Idolatry. And under the ſame Cenſures we bind Kings, Dukes and Princes, who ſhall dare to confer Biſhopricks, or other Eccleſiaſtical Dignities upon any Perſon againſt Law and Reaſon. Furthermore, we confirm the Sentence of *Anathema*, which was juſtly given againſt *Theobald* Archbiſhop of *Milan* and *Gilbert* Archbiſhop of *Ravenna*, as alſo againſt *Roland* Arch-biſhop of *Treviſo*; and we lay the ſame Cenſure upon *Peter*, who was formerly Biſhop of *Redona*, but is now an Uſurper in the Church of *Narbonne*. Moreover, we deny S. *Peter*'s Favour, and Entrance into the Church to all ſuch, till they have repented and ſatisfied for their offences; be they *Normans*, *Italians*, or any other Nation, who have in the leaſt injured, or violated, the *Marcha di Termo* in *Ancona*; the Dutchy of *Spoleto*, *Campagna di Roma*, *Sabina*, *Tivoli*, *Paleſtrina*, *Fraſcati*, or *Alba*, or the parts that lie toward the *Tuſcan* Sea. Add to theſe the Monaſtery of S. *Benedict*, and all the Country of *Caſſino*, as alſo *Benevent* in *Abruzzo*. But if any one pretends a juſt cauſe for taking what he has not yet reſtored, let him demand Juſtice of us or our Officers; and if they are not ſatisfied, we Grant them leave to take back as much as will ſatisfy them; not exceſſively, like Robbers, but as becomes Chriſtians, and ſuch Men, who only retake what is their own, and deſire not other mens Goods; fearing the anger of God and the curſe of *S. Peter*. After that he confirmed the Curſe againſt *Henry* afreſh in theſe words: 'Bleſſed *Peter*! and thou *Paul*, Doctor of the *Gentiles*, I beſeech you to hearken unto me a little, and hear me in Mercy; for you are Diſciples and Lovers of Truth; and what I ſay, is true. I undertake this Cauſe for Truths ſake, that my Brethren, whoſe Salvation I deſire, may obey me more willingly, and that they may know, how I relye upon your aſſiſtance, next to that of Chriſt and his Virgin Mother, whilſt I reſiſt the wicked, and am a preſent Guard continually to the Faithful. For I did not aſcend this See willingly, but againſt my inclinations, even with Tears in my Eyes, that they ſhould think ſuch a worthleſs Man as Me fit to ſit in ſuch a lofty Throne. But this I ſay, becauſe

'I did not chuſe you, but you me, and impoſed this heavy burden upon my Shoulders. But the Sons of *Belial* are riſen up againſt me, ſince I have aſcended the Mount, becauſe I cry aloud and tell the People of their Crimes, and the Sons of the Church of their Sins, and have laid violent hands upon me even unto Blood. For the Kings of the Earth ſtood up, and the Princes of the World, with ſome Eccleſiaſticks and others, have conſpired againſt the Lord, and me his Anointed; ſaying, let us break their bonds aſunder, and caſt their yoke from us, and this they did, that they might either kill or baniſh me. Of theſe, one was King *Henry*, as they call him: *Henry*, I ſay, Son to *Henry* the Emperor, who exalted his horns, and lifted up his heel too proudly againſt the Church of God, in a conſpiracy with many Biſhops of *Italy*, *Germany* and *France*, whoſe Ambition your Authority has yet oppoſed. This ſame Perſon came to me in *Lombardy*, when he was rather forced by neceſſity than ſober in his reſolutions, and begg'd to be abſolv'd from his *Anathema*: And accordingly I receiv'd him, becauſe I thought him a Penitent; but only admitted him to the Communion of the Church, not reſtored him to his Kingdom from which I had juſtly expelled him in the Council at *Rome*; nor did I give the Subjects of the Kingdom leave to pay him their former Allegiance. And this I did, that if he delay'd his reconcilement with the neighbouring Nations whom he had always vexed, and ſhould refuſe to reſtore as well Eccleſiaſtical as Secular Eſtates, according to his word, he might be forced to his Duty by *Anathema's* and Arms. Some Biſhops of *Germany* made uſe of this opportunity, as alſo certain Princes, who had been long tormented by this wild Beaſt, thought fit to chuſe *Rodolphus* for their King and Governor, ſince *Henry* had loſt his Throne by his flagitious actions. And truly *Rodolphus*, like a modeſt and juſt King, ſent Embaſſadors to let me know, he was forced to take the Government into his hand, though he was not ſo deſirous of Dominion, but that he would rather obey us than thoſe that had choſen him to the Kingdom. That he would always be at Gods and our diſpoſal, and, that we might believe him, he offered his Sons for Hoſtages for his performance. Thereupon *Henry* began to rage, and firſt to deſire us, that we would uſe our Spiritual Sword to depoſe *Rodolphus*. I anſwered him, that I would ſee who had moſt right, and would ſend Agents thither to examine the matter, and then I my ſelf would judge, whoſe Cauſe was the juſter. *Henry* would not ſuffer our Legates to determin the matter, but kill'd a great many Men both Eccleſiaſtical and Laick, plunder'd and prophan'd Churches, and by this means made himſelf obnoxious to an *Anathema*. Wherefore I, truſting in Gods Mercy and Judgment, in the Patronage of the Bleſſed Virgin, and relying upon your Authority, do lay *Henry* and his Accomplices under a Curſe; and once more deprive him of his Regal Power, interdicting all Chriſtians (whom I Abſolve from all Oaths of Allegiance to him) from obeying *Henry* in any caſe whatever; but command 'em to receive *Rodolphus* as their King, whom many Princes of the Realm have choſen, ſince *Henry* was depoſed. For it is fit, that ſeeing *Henry* is deprived of his Power for his Pride and Contumacy, *Rodolphus*, who is beloved by all, ſhould be inveſted with the Kingly Power and Dignity, for his Piety and Religion. Go to then

‘ ye Princes of the Holy Apoſtles, and confirm what I have ſaid by your
‘ Authority, that all Men at laſt may know, that if you can bind and
‘ looſe in Heaven, that we alſo upon Earth can take away and give
‘ Kingdoms, Principalities, Empires, and whatſoever is in the poſſeſſion
‘ of Mortals. For if you can judge of things Divine, what may we
‘ think of things prophane here below? And if you may judge of Angels
‘ that govern proud Princes, what may you not do to their Servants?
‘ Let all Kings and Princes of the World take notice by his Example,
‘ what you can do in Heaven; how God eſteems you, and then let 'em
‘ not contemn the Decrees of the Church. And I beſeech you ſuddenly
‘ to execute judgment upon *Henry*, that all may ſee, that Son of
‘ Iniquity did not loſe his Kingdom by chance, but by your permiſſion
‘ and conſent. And this I have requeſted of you, that he may repent,
‘ and be ſaved in the day of Judgment, by the help of your Prayers.
‘ Given at *Rome* the 5th day of *March*, Indiction III. After that he degraded *Gilbert* (the Author of all this Diſcord and Schiſm) from the Church of *Ravenna*, and commanded all Prieſts, belonging to that Church, to pay no Obedience to him, who was the cauſe of all their misfortunes, and therefore Anathematized. And that the People might not want a Governor, he imitated *Peter* (who uſed to ſend *Apollinaris* in his own room, upon occaſion) and ſent 'em another Arch-biſhop with full Power, to extirpate *Gilbert*'s Faction, and confirm Mens Minds in the Faith. But then *Henry* (who was rather provoked than chaſtized by theſe Cenſures, and had taken the Biſhop of *Oſtia* then Legate, as he return'd home,) called a Council of the diſaffected Biſhops and choſe *Gilbert*, formerly Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna* Pope, and called him *Clement*. But, being teazed by the *Saxons*, he left his new Pope for a time, and went againſt them, where he engaged and received a great overthrow. *Rodolphus*, though he was Conqueror, yet was found dead at a little diſtance, of a wound which he received. They ſay, *Henry* was ſo affrighted at that bloody ingagement, that he could ſcarce be found in ſeventeen days, and that the *Germans* in the mean time had put his Son *Henry* in his room by the name of *Henry* IV. Both theſe coming after with an united Body of Men into *Italy* to ſettle their Pope *Clement* in the Pontificate, and to turn out *Gregory*, they eaſily ſubdu'd *Maude*, who came to meet 'em with a ſmall Army. This ſame *Maude* when her firſt Husband died, not long before that time was Married to *Azo* Marquis *d'Eſte*, her former Husbands near Kinſman by Blood, and related to her in the third degree by Affinity. But when the matter was known, ſhe was divorced from *Azo* at *Gregory*'s perſuaſion. *Henry* having conquer'd *Maude* at *Parma*, march'd to *Rome*, and her Husband *Azo* after an hoſtile manner, and pitch'd his Camp in the *Prati di Nerone*, and going into the *Borgo di Sancto Pietro*, he and his Pope *Clement* prophaned *S. Peter*'s Church, and demoliſh'd the *Portico*, and did the like by *S. Pauls*. But ſeeing he could not get into the City, he went to *Tivoli*, from whence as from a Caſtle he made daily incurſions upon the *Romans*, till by waſting all that came near him, he reduced them to ſuch neceſſity, that they deſired Peace upon any terms, of which notice being given to *Henry* by ſome deſerters, who got out of the Town, he drew his Men up and entred it; whereupon the Pope, who could not truſt the People, betook himſelf into the Caſtle S. *Angelo*,

where he was beſieged for ſome time, they within maintaining the place ſtoutly. *Gregory*'s Nephew had not the like fortune, who retreated to the *Sittizonio di Severo*; and wanting courage to defend it, baſely deliver'd it up. But *Henry* hearing that *Guiſcard* Duke of *Puglia* was coming to aſſiſt *Gregory*; he thought it no time to dally, and therefore contrived this ſtratagem: He ſent the Biſhop of *Clugny* to *Gregory* in the Caſtle, to offer him, that if he would Crown him in the *Lateran*, he would return into *Germany* with his Army immediately; and the *Roman* People requeſted him to do it too. *Gregory* anſwer'd, he would do it, if *Henry* would amend his Errors and beg Pardon. This he not only refuſed to do, but hearing that *Guiſcard* was near with his Army, he Crown'd *Clement* the Anti-Pope with the Pontifical Crown publickly in the *Lateran*, the Biſhops of *Bologna*, of *Cervia* and *Modena*, attending at the Solemnity. After which he went to *Siena* and took *Clement* along with him. But *Guiſcard* breaking in at the *Porta del popolo*, burnt the City all along to *Domitian*'s Triumphal Arch, though the people did what they could to reſiſt him. The Citizens had fortified the *Capitol*, and defended themſelves briskly againſt *Guiſcard*, who had already taken the *Lateran*. From whence there were a great many Skirmiſhes and Sallies made on both ſides, and that part of the City which lies between the *Lateran* and the *Capitol* was demoliſh'd, and the *Capitol* it ſelf at length taken by ſtorm and laid almoſt even with the ground. Having thus made himſelf Maſter of *Rome*, and given the Citizens Goods as plunder to his Soldiers, he march'd to Caſtle *S. Angelo*, where the Pope lay beſieged, and freeing the miſerable Man at laſt from all his Foes, he carried him along to *Caſſino* and *Salerno* with him. Where in a ſhort time after he made a Godly *Exit*, after he had ſate in *S. Peter*'s Chair twelve years, one month, and three days. He was a Man, no queſtion, that God loved, prudent, juſt, merciful, a Patron of the Poor, the Widows and the Fatherleſs, and the only Champion of the Church againſt Hereticks and wicked Princes, who ſtrove to make themſelves Maſters of the Churches patrimony by violence.

VICTOR III.

VICTOR the Third, before called *Deſiderius*, Abbat of Mount *Caſſino*, being choſen Pope, immediately took example by *Gregory*. And therefore, I ſuppoſe, it was, that *Henry* and he were Enemies, by whoſe contrivance he was taken off with Poiſon, conveigh'd into the Chalice as he was adminiſtring the Euchariſt, (as *S. Martin* writes,) though *Vincentius* ſays on the contrary, that he died of a Dyſentery, which may poſſibly ſeem not altogether unlike poiſoning, ſince thoſe that are poiſon'd do ſomtimes fall into a Dyſentery by the corruption and relaxation of the Inteſtines. But *Guiſcard* would have revenged ſo great a Villany, if he had not chanced to die too ſoon; for when he had ſubdued the *Greeks* he went to *Corfu* and died; to whom (becauſe *Boemund* was abſent) *Roger* his younger Son ſucceeded in the Dutchy of *Puglia*. At that time there was a Famine throughout moſt part of the World, by means whereof the King of *Gallitia* took *Tolleto* from the *Saracens*, after he had beſieged it many years, and gave it to the Chriſtians. But *Henry* had ill ſucceſs againſt the *Saxons* in *Germany*, being defeated with the loſs of four thouſand Soldiers, God permitting this calamity, that he might at laſt deſiſt from haraſſing the Church. There are who ſay, that there appeared a great many Prodigies at that time; as, that the Domeſtick Birds, as Hens, Geeſe, Pigeons and Peacocks, fled into the Mountains and grew wild; that Fiſhes in general both in Rivers and in the Sea died; and that ſome Cities were ſo ſhaken with Earthquakes, that the great Church at *Syracuſe* fell down at *Veſpers*, and kill'd all thoſe that were in it, ſaving only the Deacon and Subdeacon who were miraculouſly ſaved. 'Tis ſaid, the Body of S. *Nicolas* was tranſlated to *Bari* by the Merchants about this time, and there much honour'd; as *Martin Scotus*, a Man of great Learning and ſingular Morals, tells us in his Hiſtory. But *Victor*, by whoſe procurement *Deuſdedit* reduced the Book of Canons into method, died in the firſt year and fourth month of his Pontificate, not without ſuſpition of being poiſon'd.

URBAN II.

URBAN the Second, before called *Otho*, or *Oddo*, at firſt a Monk of *Ebaina*, and after that Cardinal of *Oſtia*, was at laſt deſervedly made Pope about five months after *Victor's* death. For he was a very Learned and an Holy Man, and fit for any great Employment. At that time, *Roger* took his opportunity (now *Gregory* was dead, and a new Succeſſor come into the place) to take *Capua*, and all places that belong'd to them betwixt that and *Tiber*, from the Pope and the *Romans*. Thereupon *Urban*, who could hardly truſt the *Romans*, by reaſon of their former inclinations to Novelty, went to *Melſi*. Where being reſolv'd to call a Synod, it was convenient to ſecure all people in their paſſage to it; and therefore he commanded *Roger* and *Boemund*, who were at variance about the Dutchy of *Puglia*, to quit their Arms; upon this condition, that *Roger* ſhould let *Boemund* have part of *Puglia*, and himſelf enjoy all the reſt of his Father's Dominion. And when he had thus ſetled the *Italian* Affairs to his mind, and put the Church in a good condition, (as far as was poſſible in ſuch an hurry) he went to *Toia*, to enquire what the Clergy of that place did, and to correct the Errors of ſome ill-livers among 'em. But in the mean time, *Boemund*, whilſt his Brother *Roger* made War in *Sicily* againſt the *Saracens*, took *Melſi* by ſurprize. Whereupon *Roger*, returning from *Sicily*, beſieged his Brother *Boemund* at *Melſi* with twenty thouſand *Saracens*, which he hired to come along with him, though thoſe within the City defended it very ſtoutly. The Pope, ſeeing he could have no quiet in *Italy*, deſign'd a Journey into *France*, but firſt held a Council at *Piacenza*, in which he wonderfully curb'd the licentiouſneſs of ſome Clergy-men. From thence he went into *France*, and began a thing very memorable. For he call'd a Council at *Cleremont*, wherein he ſo far animated the Princes of *France* toward the re-taking of *Jeruſalem*, which had been ſo long in the hands of the *Saracens*, that, in the Year 1484, Three hundred thouſand Men enrolled themſelves as Soldiers under Chriſt's Banner. After which he returned to *Rome*, with an Intention, that when he had compoſed things in *Italy*, he would excite the *Italians* alſo to the ſame end. In the mean time, King *Henry*, wicked Man, ceaſed not to affront *Robert* Earl of *Flanders*, and provoke him to Battel, that he might divert him from the holy Expedition. Notwithſtanding many ſollowed one *Peter*, an *Eremite*, who was a Man of incomparable Sanctity, and travelling through *Germany* and *Hungary*, arrived at *Conſtantinople*, then the common Seat of War. And they were not long after followed by *Euſtathius*, and *Baldwin*, ſirnamed of *Bulloign*, Men famous for Feats of Arms. But, beſides theſe, there was the Biſhop of *Pois*, *Raymund* Earl of St. *Giles*, *Hugo Magnus* King *Philip* of *France*'s Brother, and the two *Roberts*, (whereof one was Earl of *Normandy*, and the other of *Flanders*.) together with *Stephen* Earl of *Chartres*, who, paſſing over the *Alps* into *Italy*, came firſt to *Rome*. Where, when they had viſited the SSts. Tombs and Shrines, and received the Pope's Benediction, they went to *Brunduſium* with an intent to go from thence into *Albania*. But becauſe one Port would not hold them all, ſome went to *Bari*, and ſome to *Otranto*. But *Boemund*, who, we told you, had taken *Melſi*, being deſirous of Glory, left *Melſi*, and went upon the ſame Expedition with Twelve thouſand choice and young *Italians*. And this his Valour ſo prevailed with his Brother *Roger*, that he laid down his Arms, and promiſed, that for the future all things betwixt him and his Brother ſhould be equally ſhared; and preſently ſent his Son *Tancred*, who was deſirous to go into the War, along with his Brother. By this time *Peter* the *Eremite* was come to *Conſtantinople*, and pitching his Camp in the Suburbs, did ſo much damage to the Citizens, not voluntarily, but through the licentiouſneſs of his Soldiers, that the *Greeks* wiſh'd them all cut off. *Alexius* the Emperor was very much concerned for the Injuries which his Subjects ſuffered, and therefore forced *Peter*, for want of Forage, to paſs the *Boſphorus* before he was willing. However, being compelled to it, *Peter* and his Men went over, and firſt going to *Nicomedia*, and then to *Nicopoli*, attack'd that City, though it was well guarded by the *Saracens*; but they wanting Proviſions to maintain the Siege, and the Chriſtian Soldiers dying apace, they were worſted by the *Saracens*, and forced to raiſe their Siege; but beſides that, received ſuch damage in their flight, that *Reginald*, General of the *Germans*, renounced the Chriſtian Faith, and ſurrender'd himſelf to them; and *Peter* went as it were back, like an Ambaſſador, to *Conſtantinople*, without any Soldiers to attend him. This was welcom News to *Alexius*, who hoped, that the Chriſtians, upon ſuch diſcomfiture, would quit that Expedition. But in the mean while other ſupplies came in, and *Alexius* finding that he could not beat 'em back with open force, he ſet upon 'em in the Night time as they were pitching their Camp in the Suburbs of *Conſtantinople*, but to no purpoſe; for they that were poſted there maintain'd their Camp with great courage, till the reſt of the Soldiers awaked got to to their Arms: They fought too the next day with ſmall damage on either ſide. Then *Boemund* was ſent to *Alexius* in the name of the Army, and partly by menaces, partly by Promiſes, induced him to enter into a League upon theſe terms: That they ſhould not only paſs through his Territories with ſafety, but have all neceſſaries ſupply'd, and that whatever they took from the *Saracens* ſhould be his, except *Jeruſalem*. When he had ſo done, he repaſſed the *Boſphorus*, and arrived firſt at *Nicomedia*, and then at *Nicopolis*, which was briskly defended by the *Turks* within: Both *Saracens* and *Turks* being Allies at that time, in the War againſt the Chriſtians, Sixty thouſand *Turks*, who lay upon the adjacent Mountains, made Signs to the Townſmen to ſally out, while they ſet upon the Chriſtian Camp; but were ſo briskly repulſed, that they return'd to the Mountains without doing any execution. Yet it was difficult to take the City, becauſe all kind of proviſions were carried into it by a Lake that joins to it, till the Lake being filled with ſmall Veſſels from *Conſtantinople*, the Townſmen were ſo ſtreightned for want of neceſſaries, that Fifty two days after the beginning of the Siege they ſurrendered; the *Turks*, who were in Gariſon there being permitted to march out with their Arms and Baggage. After which, the Chriſtians fortified *Nicopoli* and then left it; and being forced to travel through Deſerts, they divided their Army into two parts. But it ſo happened, that *Boemund* found out a fertile place near a certain River, where, deſigning to ſtay and refreſh his Men, who were weary of travelling, on a ſudden, the *Turks* and *Saracens*, under the conduct of *Soliman*, ſet upon him, and had certainly over-powered him with multitudes, had not *Hugo* and *Godfrey* with Forty thouſand Horſe come to his aid as ſoon as they heard of it; they fought very ſmartly, and a great while on both ſides, nor could the Battel be ended but by the Night coming upon them: And in that Fight it was found next day, that there were Fourty thouſand Men ſlain, either *Turks*, *Medes*, *Syrians*, *Chaldeans*, *Saracens* or *Arabians*. But nevertheleſs *Soliman* made all the haſte poſſible from thence, and bragging in all places that he was Victor, he met Ten thouſand *Arabs*, who were a-coming to the Army, whom he carried with him into *Lycaonia*, to intercept the Chriſtians paſſage, and hinder Proviſions from being carried thither. But the Chriſtians being ſupplied by the Corn then almoſt ripe upon the ground, arrived firſt at *Iconium*, (the chief City of that Country,) and having taken that by ſurrender, poſſeſs'd themſelves of *Heraclea* and *Tarſos* with the ſame ſucceſs. Then *Baldwin*, a Man of great Courage and Wit, firſt got a Signiory in *Aſia*; for he had *Tarſo*, and all that he took in that Country, beſtowed upon him: And, not long after, made himſelf Maſter of *Edeſſa* and *Maniſta*. From thence the bigger Army went into *Cilicia*, now called *Armenia minor*, which ſubmitting upon the firſt Onſet, they made *Palinurus*, an *Armenian*, who had fought on the Chriſtian ſide, Governor of it. Afterward they took *Cæſarea* in *Cappadocia*, and then marched on toward *Antioch* over the high Mountains. At that time *Caſſianus* was King of *Antioch*, formerly called *Reblata*: But that ſame King, who formerly govern'd all *Aſia*, double wall'd it, and call'd it by his own Name; and built about it Four hundred and ſixty Towers. Here was alſo once S. *Peter*'s See; and here were born *Luke* the Evangeliſt, and that *Theophilus*, to whom *Luke* directs his Goſpel and the *Acts* of the Apoſtles: And here Men, that were regenerate by Baptiſm, were firſt call'd *Chriſtians*, and lived there a Thouſand Years under Chriſtian Government. Moreover, it appears, that there were One hundred and ſixty Biſhops under the Patriarch of *Antioch*, before the *Barbarians* took it; and that there were in it Three hundred and ſixty Pariſh Churches. In the year therefore of our Redemption 1491. *Antioch* began to be beſieged with great application. At which time, *Urban*, who was vexed with tumultuous Inſurrections, ſhut himſelf up for two years in the Houſe of one *Peter Leo* a Noble Citizen, near St. *Nicholas*'s Church. But when *John Paganus*, a moſt ſeditious Fellow, was dead, he was a little more at Liberty, and then he applied himſelf to ſettle the State of the Church. For he received into favour the Archbiſhop of *Millain*, (before depoſed, becauſe he had been conſecrated by one Biſhop againſt the Canon and cuſtom of Holy Church,) he having by way of penance changed his Habit, and lived in a Monaſtery voluntarily and holily upon that account. And when he petition'd, with all humility, to ſend him a Pall, he did it, and reſtor'd him to his Authority in this form of Words: 'We are perſuaded by thy Letter to ſend thy Brotherhood a Pall, together with the 'Bleſſing of the See Apoſtolick; which kind of Honour was never before 'conferr'd upon any perſon abſent from us. After that he gave a Pall and ſeveral Priviledges to the Archbiſhop of *Toledo*, (who came to *Rome* and ſwore Fidelity to the Pope,) and made him Primate of all *Spain*. But he laid a Curſe upon the King of *Portugal*, and all the Dioceſe of St. *James*, becauſe he had thrown the Biſhop of that Province into Priſon, without hearing what he had to ſay for himſelf. About the ſame time, *Henry* Biſhop of *Soiſſons* came to *Urban* at *Rome*, and freely quitted his Biſhoprick, which he had received from the King of *France*, without any hopes of Reſtitution. Whereupon *Urban* (leſt his Dioceſe ſhould ſuffer for want of a Biſhop,) reſtored him to his Biſhoprick, though he were unwilling to take it; but he was ſworn in this manner: 'I, for the future, will not communicate with any that are excommunicated by this 'See, wittingly and willingly: Nor will I ever be preſent at the Conſe'crations of thoſe that accept of Biſhopricks or Abbies, againſt Law 'and Reaſon, from Laymen; and, ſo help me God, and this holy Goſpel; 'I never intend to break my Reſolution. So alſo they ſay he dealt with the Biſhop of *Bellay*: Nor can any one ſay he was pertinacious for doing ſo; for he knew how and when to alter his mind upon occaſion, which every good Man ſhould do. For when he had admitted a Clerk, whom *Gibert* the Anti-Pope had made a Sub-Deacon, to ſecond Orders, he chang'd his Mind, becauſe it was a thing of ill Example, and like to be of very pernicious conſequence. He confirmed the Order of *Ciſtercians*, which was ſet up in *Burgundy*; and, ſome ſay, the *Carthuſians* began their Order in this time; though others ſay, it was in the time of *Victor* III. But when *Urban* had ſetled the Church of God, not only by his Pains and Example, but by his Writings too, which he ſet forth againſt the Hereticks, he died near St. *Nicholas*'s in the Houſe of *Peter Leo*, an eminent Citizen, Twelve Years, four Months, and nineteen Days after he came to the Popedom, upon the 28th of *Auguſt*: His Body was carried over *Tiber*, to avoid the Contrivances of his Enemies, who would have done him an Injury (if poſſible) after death, and buried very honourably in St. *Peter*'s at the *Vatican*.

PASCHAL II.

PASCHAL the Second, before call'd *Raynerius*, an *Italian* of *Romagna*, whoſe Father's Name was *Creſcentius*, and his Mother *Alphacia*, was choſen Pope about that time, when the Chriſtians fought in *Aſia* and took *Antioch*, into which they were let by *Pyrrhus*, an eminent Citizen. For he admired *Boemund*'s Valour ſo much, that he promiſed to ſurrender the City to 'em, if the reſt of the Chriſtians would let *Boemund* be Governour of it. The Chriſtians, when they entered the City, ſpared almoſt all, but only that they were ſevere upon the *Saracens:* And *Caſſianus*, their King, who fled to the Mountains, was kill'd by the *Armenians*. They had taken all but the Caſtle, which whil'ſt *Boemund* attack'd, he was ſhot through the Thigh with an Arrow, which pained him ſo, that he was fain to deſiſt from the Siege for ſeveral days. But when *Corbanes*, the King of *Perſia*'s General, came up, with *Senſadolus*, *Caſtianus*'s Son, to retake *Antioch*, *Boemund* was by that time well of his Wound, met and would have engaged 'em. But the Enemy kept up in the Mountains, and could not be tempted to fight by any means. Whereupon *Boemund* being neceſſitated for lack of Proviſions, was reſolved to fight 'em, though the place was much to his diſadvantage. So he order'd that Lance wherewith *Longinus* pierced Chriſt's ſide, (which they found in St. *Andrew*'s Church at *Antioch*,) to be carried before 'em as the beſt Enſign they could have; and, marching up to 'em, he defeated them with the ſlaughter of an Hundred thouſand, though at firſt they made a brisk reſiſtance. Beſides that, they ſay there were Fifteen thouſand Camels taken in their Camp; and ſo much plunder carried off, that, from the greateſt extremity of want, they were advanced to the greateſt abundance of all things neceſſary. The Governor of the Caſtle, when he knew of it, ſurrender'd the Caſtle to *Boemund*, and embraced the Chriſtian Faith: And all that were in the Gariſon, if they would do the like, were permitted to march off with Bag and Baggage whither they pleaſed. After that there aroſe a great debate betwixt *Boemund* and *Raymund*, when *Boemund* demanded *Antioch*; and *Raymund* ſaid, It belong'd to the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, by the contract they had before freely made. But the Prieſts, to whom it was referr'd, gave it to *Boemund* without any more ado. In the mean time, *Hugo Magnus* (who was gone to *Conſtantinople* to compoſe things,) died, and then the other Officers (all but *Raymund*, who beſieged *Caſarea* in *Cappadocia*,) reſolv'd to go to *Jeruſalem* with their Army, and rendezvouz'd in *Lycia*. But by the way they attempted to take *Tortoſa*, and after they had ſpent three Months in vain, they raiſed the Siege, and march'd to *Tripoli*, the petit King of which place furniſh'd 'em liberally with Money, Proviſions and Arms, and thereby obtained a Peace, upon Condition, that he, if *Jeruſalem* were taken, ſhould embrace the Chriſtian Religion. Hence they removed, and paſſing by *Cæſarea* in *Paleſtine*, came at five encampings to *Jeruſalem*, which ſtands upon an high Hill, and is divided alſo by ſeveral Dales, ſo that it cannot be beſieged but by a very great Army. Beſide, there wants Fountains and River-waters, which are neceſſary for an Army. For there is no other Rivulet but *Siloe*, and that very little in the Summer-time, (and ſometimes nothing at all,) which runs down Mount *Sion* into the Valley of *Jehoſaphat*. Yet there are a great many Ciſterns in the City and the Country, to furniſh the Citizens with Water, but cannot ſupply great Armies and Beaſts of Carriage. Notwithſtanding the Chriſtians got what Proviſions they could, and attack'd the City in four places very fiercely, (whil'ſt the *Jeruſalemites* defended it as ſtoutly,) and, upon the 13th of *July*, they took it by ſtorm, the Thirty-ninth day after they began to beſiege it, in the Year 1499, Four hundred and ninety Years after the *Saracens* took it, under the Reign of *Heraclius*. *Godfrey* was moſt to be commended in that Action; for that he firſt maſter'd that part of the Wall, which was allotted for him and his Brother to ſtorm; and help'd *Balion* down into the City to open the Gates for the Chriſtians; at whoſe entrance there was ſuch a ſlaughter both in the City, and eſpecially in the Temple, that Men were above the Ancles in Blood. And the ſame day they had taken the Temple too, if night had not come upon 'em; however the next day the Attacque was renewed, and quarter given to all that deſired and would lay down their Arms. But the Chriſtians, after ſuch a Victory, when they had reſted eight days from the toil of the War, and had viſited the holy places of the City and our Lord's Sepulchre, took *Godfrey* upon their Shoulders, and carried him into the Palace, where, by univerſal conſent, they choſe him King. And he, though he did not refuſe the Title of King, yet he would not have a Golden Crown, becauſe he thought it unſeemly for any one to wear a Golden Diadem, where Chriſt, the King of Kings, wore one of Thorns when he redeemed Mankind. Then alſo was *Arnulphus* the Prieſt made Patriarch, and conſecrated by the Biſhops that were there preſent. The Citizens of *Neapolis* in *Aſſyria* were ſo frighted at this Victory, that they ſent Ambaſſadors to *Godfrey*, to ſurrender themſelves and all they had. Soon after News came, that a mighty Army of *Soliman*, King of *Babylon*, was come to *Aſcalon*, (a City twenty Miles from *Jeruſalem*, was always in enmity with the People of it,) *Godfrey* reſolv'd to meet 'em, and therefore left *Peter* the Hermite to guard the City, and recall'd *Euſtace* and *Tancred*, whom he had ſent to *Neapoli*, with two Legions: As he marched againſt the Enemy, he was inform'd by the Priſoners he took, that *Clement* was *Soliman*'s General, and had Fifty thouſand Men under him, and a Navy laden with Proviſion and Artillery; but notwithſtanding was reſolv'd to fight him; which he did, and *Godfrey*, who had the day, kill'd Thirty thouſand of his Men, as the Story goes: But *Clement*, who led the Enemy, eſcaped away. The *Aſcalonites* having received ſuch a blow, deliver'd up their City ſtreight to *Godfrey*; in which he found as much Gold and Silver, as ever was ſeen together before. *Jeruſalem* being thus retaken, many of the Princes, who had perform'd their Vow, and had their deſire, began to take their Journeys home into *Europe*; among the reſt the Earls of S. *Giles* and *Troyes*. But *Godfrey* and his Brothers, who had great ſucceſs, took *Joppa* a Seaport Town, and *Rama*, which hinder'd the Chriſtians Paſſage from *Aſcalon* to *Jeruſalem*. He alſo beſieged *Caſſa*, otherwiſe call'd *Porſiria*, at the Foot of Mount *Carmel*, four Miles from *Acon*. But whil'ſt the Siege laſted, ed, *Tiberias*, a Town of *Galilee*, ſurrendred of their own accord, and *Caffa* was, not long after, yielded upon Terms. But nothing, that Men call Happineſs, is very laſting. For a year after the taking of *Jeruſalem*, which coſt ſo much labour and pains, *Godfrey* died of a Fever: And the Chriſtians, to prevent any damage that might happen by an *Interregnum*, choſe his Brother *Baldwin* in his room, *A. D.* 1101. But to return to *Paſchal*, whom *Gregory* the Seventh made Cardinal Prieſt of S. *Clements*, for his Learning and Virtue: He was choſen Pope by the Clergy after *Urban*'s Death; though he could have been well ſatisfied with a private Life; for he was formerly a Monk, and made Pope againſt his will; denying himſelf to be capable of ſo great a Charge; but yet, at the deſire of the People, becauſe the Clergy choſe him unanimouſly, and the College of Cardinals approved of it, he did take upon him the Pontificate; but not till they had thrice repeated theſe words with Acclamations [St. *Peter* has choſen *Rainerius*, a very good Man, Pope,] and the Secretaries and Clerks after that gave him the Title of *Paſchal*. Then he put on his Scarlet Cloak or Robe, with a Mitre on his Head, and was attended to the *Lateran* by the Clergy and People, upon a white Horſe, until he came to the South Portico, that leads to S. *Saviours*, where, when he had ſate ſome time in a Seat made on purpoſe, as the cuſtom is, he went up into the Court of the *Lateran*, and put on a Girdle, upon which hung Seven Keys and Seven Seals; to let him know, that, according to the Seven-fold Grace of the Holy Ghoſt, he had Power to govern the Church under God, and to bind, looſe, open or ſhut. Then with a Papal Scepter in his Hand, he viſited thoſe places, which are to be enter'd only by Popes: And the day following he received his Conſecration at St. *Peter*'s, where *Oddo*, Biſhop of *Oſtia*; *Maurice*, of *Porto*; *Gualter*, of *Alba*; *Bono*, of *Lavico*; *Milo*, of *Paleſtrina*; and *Offo*, of *Nepeſo*; anointed him with Chriſm: At which Ceremony, the Biſhop of *Oſtia* had the chief place, which continues ſo till this day. After his Unction he return'd into the City, and took his Crown according to the cuſtom. That this would ſo happen, *Albert* Biſhop of *Alatri* had formerly foretold. For being ask'd by a Friend of his, Who he thought would ſucceed *Urban*? God, ſaid he, will chuſe *Rainerius* for his Faith and Conſtancy. Nay, they ſay, that the ſame *Albert* foretold alſo the exact time that he ſhould live in his Pontificate. But *Paſchal*, who conſulted the good of the Church, then like to be ruin'd by ſeditious Men, ſent out his Forces againſt *Gibert* the Anti-Pope, the Ring-leader of all the miſchief: And, to render himſelf ſufficient for ſo great a War, he borrowed ſeveral Troops of *Roger* Earl of *Sicily*, and a thouſand Ounces of Gold. *Gibert*, that Villain, lived then at *Abba de Marſi*: And when he underſtood that the Enemy was coming, he durſt not truſt to his own ſtrength, which he had procured of *Richard* Count of *Capua*, but left *Alba* and went with all ſpeed into the Mountains near *Aquila*, where, not long after, he died ſuddenly and paid for all his Iniquities. But, notwithſtanding his being taken off, the Church of God did not reſt altogether from troubles; for *Richard*, who, we told you, ſupply'd him with Men and Money, put up in his room one *Albert*, a Citizen of *Averſa*, between *Naples* and *Capua*, who was compell'd immediately by the well-affected Party to quit the place, and go into Baniſhment. But the People of *Cava* near *Paleſtrina*, following the Example of *Richard*'s Folly and Arrogance,

rogance, made one *Frederick*, Pope. But they alſo repented of what they had done, and One hundred and fifty days after, turn'd him out of his Pontificate, compelled him to take upon him the Habit of an *Anchorite*, and lead a private Life. Beſides theſe there was a Third alſo, one *Maginulphus*, a *Roman*, who was ſo bold as to uſurp the Title of *Pope* at *Ravenna*. But the *Romans* baniſh'd him, and thoſe of *Ravenna*, when he had no Friend left, expelled him their City. The *Roman* Church being thus ſetled, *Paſchal*, who was a Man of great Wit and Courage, diverted his Mind from Religion to Arms, and, by the help of *Roger*, retook *Caſtellana* and *Benevento* from the Enemies. But in the mean time *Peter Columna*, a *Roman* Citizen, by the advice of *Richard* Count of *Capua*, (whoſe main deſign was to divide the Pope's Army,) ſeiz'd upon *Cava*, a Town in the Pope's Dominions. Thereupon the Pope marched againſt him, and not only retook *Cava*, but alſo took from him *Zangarola* and *Columna*, two Caſtles of his Paternal Inheritance; from whence the Family of the *Columneſes* took their Title. There was another Family at *Rome* (called the *Corſi*,) very powerful, and ſo true to *Gregory* VII. that their Houſes, which were under the Capitol, were burnt by *Henry* down to the ground; yet afterward *Stephen*, the chief of that Family, chang'd ſides, and, in *Paſchal*'s abſence, ſurpriz'd St. *Paul*'s Church, and the Caſtle hard by; from whence he continually teazed the City of *Rome* with Inroads very ſtrangely. For this reaſon the Pope omitted all Foreign Affairs, and returned with all ſpeed to the City, from whence he drove *Stephen*; who went ſafely off, diſguiſed in a Monk's Habit, and ſo deceived thoſe that came to take him. At that time, many Authors ſay, there appeared a great many Prodigies; as, that the Sea gain'd in ſome places full twenty Paces into the Land more than ordinary: And, on the other ſide, in ſome places, retired from the ſhore an hundred. And the like I ſaw at *Pozzuoli* the laſt year by ſome old weather-beaten Marble Pillars, that were waſted to three Cubits; though the Inhabitants told me, that three years before they were waſh'd by the Sea. They tell you likewiſe, that a Comet appeared of a vaſt bigneſs, that was ſeen at Sun-ſetting. *Paſchal* however was not diſturb'd at any of theſe things, becauſe he knew 'em to be natural. But when he heard the Biſhop of *Florence* ſhould ſay, that Antichriſt was born, he went immediately thither, and, calling a Council, who diſcuſſed the matter very nicely, he perceived the Biſhop was only ambitious of being the Author of ſome great matter, and therefore, when he had chid him, he ſent him away, and went himſelf into *Lombardy*, where he called an Aſſembly at *Guardaſtallo* of many Princes and Biſhops, and held a long debate about Homages, Fees, and the Oaths of Biſhops, that had been, or ſhould be, adminiſtred to Laymen. And, hearing of the ſcandalous Lives of the *French* Prieſts, he went into *France*, and at *Trayes* he called a Synod, in which, having taken order for the more decent adorning of Churches, and partly expelled, partly chaſtiſed, their Incumbents, he return'd in haſte into *Italy*, becauſe he heard all things were there in an uproar: For *Stephen Corſus* had taken *Montalto*, and *Pontechio*, from that part of *Toſcany*, which now they call St. *Peter*'s *Patrimony*, and had fortified them with Caſtles, from whence he pillaged the whole Country with frequent Inroads; but the Pope fell upon him, and beat him out of one of his Caſtles; though he could not ſtorm the other by reaſon of its ſituation, and the Winter ſeaſon, which was at hand. Going therefore into *Puglia*, to compoſe the differences of thoſe parts, he committed the care of the Church to the Biſhop of *Lavico*; to *Peter* the Son of *Leo*, and to *Leo* the Son of *Fregepan*, the City and all its concerns, and to *Ptolemy* Lord of *Subiaco*, the Territories adjacent, leaving his Nephew *Godfrey*, General, to aſſiſt them in the defence of the Churches Juriſdiction. But in the Pope's abſence, *Ptolemy*, the reputed Author of all that miſchief, threatned he ſhould never return to the City any more, and all theſe revolted from the Church; to wit, *Peter Columna*, whom the Pope had taken into favour, the Abbat of *Farfa*, together with thoſe of *Anagni*, *Paleſtrina*, *Tivoli*, *Fraſcati* and *Sabina*. The ſame *Ptolemy* alſo raiſed an Army, and beſieged *Alba* in *Campagna di Roma*, which the Citizens very ſtoutly defended. But when the Pope, and the Prince of *Cajetta*, came up, together with *Richard* of *Aquila*, two excellent Commanders, they drove out theſe Uſurpers, that would have poſſeſs'd themſelves of the Church Revenues, and freeing *Alba* from the Siege, he alſo had the other revolting Towns ſurrendred up to him, except that he was fain to ſtorm *Tivoli*, which ſtood out very obſtinately, and occaſioned much damage on both ſides: Though he took *Montalto*, and turn'd out *Stephen*, and quieted the whole Patrimony in a ſhort time. Aſſoon as he had made Peace here, he apply'd himſelf to the War in *Aſia*, and, to that end, wrote Letters and ſent Nuntio's to all Chriſtian Princes, to exhort and animate 'em to it as much as poſſible; becauſe he heard, that ſince the death of *Godfrey*, the *Saracens* brought great Armies to *Jeruſalem*, deſigning to re-take it; as alſo, that the Chriſtians had received a great overthrow, that the Earl of *Burgundy* was ſlain in the Fight, that *Boemund* was taken alive, and, that *Baldwin* himſelf, *Godfrey*'s Brother, then King, had made a narrow eſcape, ſo that the City was well-nigh taken. But the *Barbarians*, though they had gotten ſuch a Victory, yet they durſt not attempt *Jeruſalem*. For *Tancred*, who had defended *Antioch* very valiantly, did alſo take *Laodicea*, which belonged to the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, by ſtorm, becauſe he heard, that *Alexius* was pleaſed to hear that ſo many Chriſtians were killed, and hindred our Men from paſſing out of *Europe* into *Aſia*. *Baldwin* the King, encouraged by the good Fortune and Reſolution of *Tancred*, raiſed an Army as faſt as he could, he reſolved to march againſt *Acon*, having ſent to *Genoua* and *Venice* for Auxiliaries: From whence he had eighty Ships of War, beſides many Gallies that were ſent to the place; inſomuch, that the City was beſieged both by Land and Sea very cloſely, and in twenty days was taken; and the *Saracens*, that came to defend it, utterly routed and defeated. *Tancred* ſhewed great pity towards his Uncle *Boemund*, who had been kept in Priſon by the Enemies for three years, and reſtored him to the Principality of *Antioch*, after he had redeem'd him with a great Ranſom of Silver and Gold. After that, *Boemund* committed the care of *Antioch* to *Tancred*, and went firſt into *Italy*, and then into *France*, and married *Conſtantine* King *Philip* of *France*'s Daughter: But hearing, that *Alexius*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, infeſted the Seaport Towns near *Antioch*, he returned into *Italy*, and, getting a Navy ready, ſailed into *Dalmatia*, where he beſieged *Durazzo*, that he might divert *Alexius* from the War in *Aſia*, as he ſoon did; and *Alexius* deſiring a Peace, *Boemund* granted it, upon condition, That he ſhould put an end to the War againſt *Antioch*, and let the *French* Soldiers paſs through his Country into *Aſia*, without any hindrance. Peace thus made, *Boemund* ſailed for *Aſia* with the Navy which he had provided againſt *Alexius*, and did ſo recruit and chear the ſpirits of the Chriſtians, that King *Baldwin* ſtormed and took *Baruti*, a Maritime Town of *Phœnicia*, between *Sidon* and *Biblos*, whoſe Metropolis is *Tyre*, after he had beſieged it two months, but not without great loſs of Men; ſo that he was very ſevere with them, and gave the City as a Colony to the Chriſtians. At the ſame time was *Sidon* alſo taken. But amidſt theſe Succeſſes of the Chriſtians, *Boemund*, that famous Prince died, (which cauſed an univerſal ſorrow) and left his little Son *Boemund*, whom he had by his Wife *Conſtantia*, and who was to be his Succeſſor in the Principality of *Antioch*, under *Tancred*'s Tuition till he grew up. In the mean time *Henry* the Fourth, when his Father was dead, (whom he had defeated at *Liege* in a pitch'd Battel) having compoſed all things in *Germany* came into *Italy*, but tarried at *Sutri*, knowing he ſhould ſcarce be welcom to *Paſchal*, becauſe he had demoliſhed many Churches in the Wars, and given Biſhopricks as he pleaſed to any body againſt Law and Reaſon. But when Ambaſſadors had been ſent from one to the other, and the Emperor had ſworn, that he would come peaceably into the City, and force all the Biſhops that were poſſeſt of Biſhopricks, either by Bribery or Violence, to quit their preferments immediately; it was agreed he ſhould enter the City. Then *Henry* removed from *Sutri* to *Monti Guadio*, or, as ſome will have it, to *Monte Malo*, (by others called *Monte aureo*) and pitched his Camp there; and from thence by conſent of the People, and attended by all the Nobility, he marched firſt into the *Borgo di Sancto Pietro*, the Prieſts leading the way in their Veſtments, and carrying the reliques of Saints along with them from S. *Angelo*; for he went that way into the *Borgo di Sancto Pietro* as far as S. *Peter*'s Church; and upon the Steps that aſcend to it he kiſſed the Popes Feet, who came ſo far with the Cardinals to meet him. And when he had quartered his Soldiers according to his mind, he went into the Church upon the Pope's right hand; where, when he had ſaid his Prayers at the Altar, he deſired the Pope to confirm the Biſhops that he had made, though he had ſworn that he never would ask it; which *Paſchal* denying, he gave the ſignal, and in came his Soldiers, who preſently took *Paſcal* and all the Cardinals, and carried him and a great many of the Clergy, whom they had plundered before, into their Camp. The People of *Rome* were ſo incenſed at this affront, that they roſe in Arms and beat the *Germans* out of the *Borgo* and ſhut all the Gates. Thereupon the Emperor went to *M. di Sancto Sylveſtro*. and put the Pope and Cardinals in ſtreight priſon, with Guards round about, leſt they ſhould eſcape: Which done, he went back with the reſt of his Men to attack the City, and came as far as the River *Aniene*. From whence, when he had firſt made himſelf Maſter of *Ponte Mammolo*, (which takes its Name from *Mammea* the Mother of *Alexander* the Emperor, who founded it) he burnt all the Villages round about, and made continual incurſions upon the *Romans*. At which the Pope, who was concerned for the Calamity of the Citizens, and wearied with their Intreaties, deſired to be brought (as he was) to *Ponte Salaro*, where he ſent for Notaries out of the City, to write down the Contract, and (though he was unwilling, yet) did confirm all the Biſhops that *Henry* had choſen. Things being thus compoſed, and Priſoners on both ſides diſmiſſed, the Emperor was crown'd by the Pope in S. *Peter's*; but the City Gates were firſt ſhut, leſt the People ſhould break out; and the very Church had a Guard ſet upon it by *Henry's* Order. By this means he had what he wiſh'd for, and ſo return'd into *Germany* not long after. But the Pope, when *Italy* was a little ſettled, exhorted the *Piſans*, who were skilful Seamen, to leave the *Baleares* (two Iſlands called *Majorca* and *Minorca*, which they had in their poſſeſſion for ſome time before) and ſail againſt the *Saracens*, who infeſted our Seas and all the ſhores of Chriſtendom. The *Piſans* were deſirous of Honour and provided a great Navy, mann'd with moſt of their young Men, and went againſt the Enemy. But whilſt they ſtaid at *Volterra* for a Wind, the *Luccheſes* invaded their City, which had no body to defend it; and had taken it, had not the *Florentines*, at the requeſt of the *Piſans*, beat back the *Luccheſes*, and manfully maintained it. For which kindneſs, the *Piſans*, when they came back victorious over the *Saracens*, preſented the *Florentines* with two Porphry Pillars, ſtill to be ſeen at the Gate of S. *John Baptiſt's* Chappel. In the mean time *Paſchal* held a Council at the *Lateran*, and revoked all that he had promiſed to *Henry*; becauſe he was forced to do what he did, either out of fear of *Henry* or in pity to the Cardinals that were in bonds, or to the People of *Rome*, whom *Henry* harraſſed after an hoſtile manner, to make a Peace upon any terms. He therefore thought it better to retract what he had done amiſs, (ſince he was compelled) than to let other Princes take that for a Precedent, and think that lawful for them to do, which *Henry* only extorted from him againſt his will. At that time *Maude* the Counteſs died of age and left the Church of *Rome*, in her Will, all that tract of ground that lies betwixt the River *Piſſia* and *Santo Quirico* in *Sienois*, to *Ceperano*, between the *Apennine* and the Sea; as alſo *Ferrara*, which is ſtill tributary to the Church of *Rome*. There are ſome Authors, (of which *Vincentius* is one of the beſt) who write, that this Lady died at *Florence* in a great Fire, (that burnt down moſt of the City, and deſtroyed two thouſand Perſons) and that her Body was carried thence afterward into *Lombardy* and buried in a Monaſtery of S. *Benedict*, twelve miles from *Mantua*. My Opinion is, that ſhe died at *Mantua* and was carried to S. *Benedict's*, (which ſhe built) by her own Order and *Anſelm's* care, who was a very holy Man, and the cauſe of her building that ſtately Edifice. And I am ſure *Anſelm* himſelf, who was Biſhop of *Lucca*, was buried there too, but tranſlated afterward to the Cathedral of *Mantua*, leſt the neighbourhood ſhould have ſtollen him out of his Grave, becauſe he was every day more and more famous for Miracles. The *Luccheſes* ſay, that they have *Maud's* Body, which I cannot believe, becauſe *Guido Gonzaga*, whilſt he repaired the Monaſtery of S. *Benedict*, found and removed the body (as he ought) to a better place: Some Authors alſo write, that there was another *Anſelm* at the ſame time, a very learned Man, and of ſuch eſteem in *England*, that he was in a ſhort time from a Monk made an Abbat, and then Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*; the ſame Perſon who wrote ſeveral Books of Meditations: Why God ſhould be made Man; of Free-Will; of Parables; of the Croſs; and of S. *John Baptiſt*. Theſe happy times produced *Sigebert* the Monk of *Gemblours*, a Man of excellent Learning; and *Bernard* of *Caſtellion* in *Burgundy*, a Man of a noble Family. He, when he was twenty two years of Age, took upon him the habit of a Monk, (under *Stephen* the Abbat, who was the third after the Order of *Ciſtercians* was erected) with thirty fellows more, and was ſo much commended for his Learning and Piety, that in a ſhort time he was made Abbat of *Clarevalle*, a Monaſtery, built by one *Robert* a Nobleman of great honour, and there he lived and governed with great reputation for thirty ſix years. And when he (that is, *Bernard*) died, he left, beſides the fame of his ſanctity, a great many Monuments of his Wit in writing; eſpecially his Commentaries upon the *Canticles*, and his conſiderations of Divine Contemplation, dedicated to *Eugenius* the Pope, from whence he might learn the Duty of a Pope. He likewiſe wrote many Epiſtles; one above the reſt to the *Romans*, in which he much blames 'em: As alſo an Apology, and ſome Sermons upon ſolemn occaſions. But to return to *Paſchal*, who decreed in a Council held at *Guardaſtallo*, that no Cities of *Romagna*, as *Piacenza*, *Parma*, *Reggio*, *Modena*, nor *Bologna*, ſhould be any longer ſubject to *Ravenna*, which had been formerly the Metropolis and Mother-Church: Becauſe the Biſhops of *Ravenna* had often exalted their Horns againſt the *Roman* See. But when the Pope came back to the City, the People deſired him that he would make *Peter*'s Son Governor of the City, upon the Death of his Father, who was ſo in his life-time; which the Pope denying to do by reaſon of his Nonage, (for he was ſcarce ten years old) there was ſuch a tumult of a ſudden, that he was forced to leave the City, for fear of ſome great miſchief; for there were many, that ſaid it was not fit, that ſuch a Boy ſhould be intruſted with ſuch a weighty Employment. But that would not do; for when he was at *Alba*, and heard that *Peter Leo* (a great friend to the Church) was ſet upon, in his own Houſe, by the adverſe Faction, he immediately ſent *Ptolomy*, from *Ariccia*, with a good competent number of Men to aſſiſt him; who drove the Enemy over the *Tiber*, killing ſome and taking others, whom he divided among the ſeveral Towns, to be kept. But there ſoon appeared great inconſtancy in *Ptolomy*: For thoſe whom he had taken but a little before, he ſet upon by ſurpriſe, as they went through the *Selva del' Aglio*, by his Order, to the ſeveral Towns, and took 'em again and carried 'em with him to *Ariccia*; among whom was alſo the dead Governor's Son. Nor was *Ptolomy* content to do ſo only, but he poſſeſſed himſelf of *Sarmonete*, *Nymphæo*, *Tiberia* and the Sea-coaſts. In the mean time *Henry* came out of *Germany* into *Italy* with an Army, which ſtrook terror into all that heard of it. But when he was come to *Rome*, in the Popes abſence, (who at that time held a Council in *Puglia*) and thought himſelf deprived of his Imperial Dignity, together with the Power of beſtowing Biſhopricks, he was crown'd a ſecond time, before S. *Gregory*'s body, by the Arch-biſhop of *Braga*, who was baniſh'd by his own Country, and ſo went home again. But *Paſchal*, when the Council was diſmiſs'd, came out of *Puglia* to *Rome* with an Army of *Normans*, and retook many Towns from the Enemy, and at *Paleſtrina* gave willing Audience to the Ambaſſadors of *Calo Johannes* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, (who ſucceeded his Father *Alexius*) and bid 'em be ſure to animate their Maſter againſt the *Saracens*. Then the Abbat of *Farfa* and *Ptolomy*, whoſe ill actions were too great to be pardon'd, ſculk'd about a good while, till at laſt *Paſchal*, who was a very mild Man, took 'em into favour. When things were thus ſettled, and a Church dedicated to *Agapetus*, built at

Paleſtrina, which he conſecrated, he returned from thence in Pomp to *Rome*, where he was met by the whole City; in which croud he fell ſick, and perceiving his approaching death, he received the Sacrament, exhorted the Clergy to Peace and Concord; and died, after he had been Pope eighteen years, ſix months and ſeven days, upon the 14th of *January*, and was honourably buried in the *Lateran* Church. He in his Pontificate, made fifty Prieſts, thirty Deacons, and an hundred Biſhops. He alſo conſecrated fifteen Churches at *Rome*; eſpecially that of S. *Adrian intrefori*, which had been prophaned by ſome of the factions; and the Church of S. *Mary* in *Monticello*.

In fine, he repaired and conſecrated the Church of the *Sancti quatuor Coronati* which was defaced, when *Robert Guiſcard* Prince of *Serlerno* ſet that part of the City on fire, which goes from the *Lateran* to the Capitol; as I have ſaid in the Life of *Gregory* the Seventh.

GELASIVS II.

G*ELASIVS* the Second, before named *John*, born at *Gaeta*, his Father's name was *Creſentius*, of a noble Family, from his Youth up, well Educated and Learned, in *Monte-Caſſino*, under the religious Abbat *Odriſio*, he learned the fundamental Principles of the Chriſtian Faith. For this reaſon he was ſent for to *Rome* by *Vrban* II. who knew him to be truſty and virtous, and ever had a great eſteem for him. But his Fidelity was then moſt conſpicuous, when Pope *Vrban* was beſieged by the *Germans* and Sectators of *Gil-bert*, the Anti-pope in the Iſle of S. *Batholomew*, between the two Bridges; for he only and that noble Perſon *Peter Leone* never abandon'd him. *Vrban* therefore, when he was in his proſperity again, mindful of ſo great kindneſs, and for his Learning and Fidelity, made him his Secretary; and becauſe he had an elegant way of Writing, he committed to him the charge of reforming the Style of the Court of *Rome*, which, by the ignorance and negligence of former Ages, was very much corrupted. And afterwards, obſerving the great worth of the Man, he reſolv'd to make him a Cardinal, and propoſed it often in the Conſiſtory with the good liking of all. But *Vrban* dying ſoon after, Pope *Paſchal* taking notice of his great Deſerts, immediately made him Cardinal-Deacon; and upon the Death of *Paſchal*, when the Conſultation was held for the electing of a new Pope, all the Cardinals being to that purpoſe, aſſembled in the Monaſtery, below the Palace of *Leo* and *Cincio Frangipane*, by an univerſal conſent, *John* of *Gaeta* was choſen Pope, by the name of *Gelaſius*. This Election put *Cincio Frangipane* into ſo great a rage, becauſe the College had rejected a Creature of his, whom he had propſoed to them to be Pope, that, accompanied with many armed Men, he forced into the Monaſtery, breaking down the Doors, and beating down whomſoever he met in his way, and taking the Pope himſelf by the Collar, he flung him upon the ground and kick'd him, and then made him a Priſoner. The Cardinals, who endeavoured to make their eſcape, he threw off their Horſes and Mules, not ſparing any manner of contumely,

mely, that could be put upon ſo venerable an Aſſembly. But the People of *Rome* would not endure the affront, but gathered together in Arms befor *Frangipani*'s Houſe, and threatned death and ruin to himſelf and his Family, if he did not immediately ſet *Gelaſius* ſafe and ſound at liberty. The *Frangipani* complied with all their demands, and *Leo*, in the ſight of all, falling at the Pope's feet, kiſſed them, and moſt humbly beg'd his Pardon. The Pope then mounted his white Horſe, and attended by the Clergy and People of *Rome*, he rode to the *Lateran*, and was there crown'd according to cuſtom. At this time *Baldwin* (who had been exhorted by the Pope, both by Letters and Meſſengers, to withſtand ſtoutly the *Barbarian* Forces till ſome Supplies could be ſent into *Aſia* to his aſſiſtance) took *Sobal*, a ſtrong place in *Syria*, and fortified it, that it might be a receptacle for the Chriſtians in their War againſt the Infidels. *Boemund* alſo the younger, dying, *Tancred* who was his Uncle and Guardian, was by all the Chriſtians declar'd Prince of *Antioch*; which Principality having ſetled, he was ſent for by *Baldwin* King of *Jeruſalem*, to come with all his force to aid him againſt the *Turks*, *Saracens* and *Arabs*, who with a great Army had invaded his Kingdom, *Trancred* arriving there, and obſerving the ſmall forces of the Chriſtians, diſſuaded *Baldwin* from joining Battel with the Enemy, by that means putting the whole affair of Chriſtendom under a great hazard, but all in vain; for *Baldwin* giving them an opportunity of fighting, was overcome with great ſlaughter, himſelf and a few Men retreating with great difficulty to *Jeruſalem* and *Tancred*, by ſeveral by-ways eſcaping to *Antioch*. The Enemies puffed up with this great Victory, ſeized Mount *Tabor*, and pulling down the Monaſtery there, put all the Monks to the ſword. *Gelaſius* in the mean time could not be at reſt from a Foreign Enemy; for the Emperor *Henry* had entred *Italy* with his Army, waſting all as he march'd, was juſt about to enter *Rome* in a hoſtile manner; to eſcape whom the Pope at firſt retir'd to the Houſe of *Voſcamino* a noble Citizen, but not deeming that altogether ſafe, he went with his Attendants aboard, a couple of Gallies prepared for that purpoſe, and ſailed down the *Tiber* to *Oſtia*, the *German* Soldiers perſuing him and ſhooting at him with Darts and Arrows. Coming to *Oſtia*, he dared not venture any whither by Sea, it was ſo ſtormy, but he travelled by Land to *Ardea*, accompanied ſtill wherever he went by *Hugh*, Cardinal of the Twelve Apoſtles, an illuſtrious Prelate: Soon after the Sea growing more calm, he return'd to *Oſtia*, from whence he ſailed firſt to *Terracina* and then to *Gaeta*, where he was very kindly entertained by his Countrymen. Hither came to meet him *William* Duke of *Puglia*, *Robert* Prince of *Capua* and *Richard* of *Aquila*, who all promiſed him their utmoſt ſervice, as became loyal Feudataries of the Church of God. *Henry* hearing theſe Princes were raiſing an Army againſt him, ſet up for an Anti-pope *Maurice* Archbiſhop of *Braga*, by the name of *Gregory*, to oppoſe *Gelaſius*, and recommended him to the Family of *Frangipani*; and not content to have acted ſo pernicious a thing, he entred the Country of *Anagni*, and plundered and ruined all before him; he had juſt laid Siege to *Turricolo*, a ſtrong place, when on a ſudden news was brought, that *Gelaſius*, with the Princes of *Puglia*, approach'd with a great Army, whereupon he decamped, and as he retreated out of *Italy*, he filled all places with ſlaughter and rapine. *Gelaſius*, upon his retreat, diſmiſs'd the *Apulian* Princes, ſuppoſing now that *Henry* was gone, all things would be in a peaceable condition at *Rome* hereafter; but he was very much deceived in his opinion; for he was ſoon after informed, that the Anti-pope, upheld by the power of the *Fragipani*, continued ſtill at *Rome*, out of fear of which Family he ſtaid privately a while in the Houſe of a Friend; but afterward, as he was ſaying Maſs in the Church of *Praxede*, his Enemies with their Party ruſh'd in, and he had much ado to eſcape out of their hands by flight, ſome of the *Corſi* and *Normanni*, two great Families, with his Nephew *Creſentius*, fighting briskly in his defence. The next day, guarded by his Retinue and Friends in Arms, he returned to the City from S. *Paul's*, (whither he had fled) and conſulting with his Cardinals, he reſolved to leave the City, leſt the Uproars every day encreaſing ſome great miſchief might enſue. Having therefore left to *Peter*, Biſhop of *Porto*, the Vicegerency in Eccleſiaſtical affairs at *Rome*, and to *Hugo*, Cardinal of the Twelve Apoſtles, the care of *Benevento*, he ſailed firſt to *Piſa*, not conceiving the way by Land to be ſecure for himſelf and the Cardinals who accompanied him; where he, in the audience of the whole City, related the cauſes of his departure from *Rome*, and was received with great kindneſs by the *Piſans*; thence ſetting ſail for *France*, he arrived at S. *Giles's*, and there was entertained by the Abbat of *Clugni*, and his Monks, with many others who came for that purpoſe, very magnificently and ſplendidly. Then he croſs'd the middle of *France*, with a venerable rather than ſumptuous attendance, (which now adays is the faſhion) by the way dedicating the Churches of S. *Cecily* in *Stagello*, S. *Sylveſter* in *Burgundy*, and S. *Stephen* in *Tornay*, and with Stones determining the Bounds of each Church. Coming at laſt to the Monaſtery of *Clugni*, he was taken with a Pleuriſie, and died, having been Pope one year and five days. He was a moſt holy Man, and very praiſe-worthy both for his Life and Doctrine; ſo that I cannot doubt, conſidering the integrity of his Life, and his religious Conſtancy, amidſt the many Storms and Troubles he underwent, but that he now enjoys Eternity among the bleſſed in Heaven. He was buried in the Porch of the ſaid Monaſtery. Some write, that in his time the Order of Knights Templers firſt began, who living not far from the Holy Sepulchre, entertained Pilgrims, and accompanied them in Arms in their Journeys to and from the holy Places, which by their means might be viſited with all ſafety. Theſe Knights *Cuſentius* commends highly for their holy Chriſtian Lives.

CALISTVS II.

CALISTVS the Second, firſt named *Guy*, a *Burgundian*, Arch-biſhop of *Vienna*, deſcended of the Blood Royal of *France*, was choſen Pope by thoſe Cardinals who were at *Clugni* at the death of *Gelaſius*, but he would not take upon him the Pontificate, till he heard the Election was approved by thoſe Cardinals alſo who were left at *Rome* and elſewhere in *Italy*; which being certified to him by Letters and Meſſengers, he went to *Rome*, and the Nobility and People meeting him, congratulated his Promotion and their own good Fortune, not doubting but he would be a reſtorer of Peace and Tranquillity to the City of *Rome*. Here he ſettled matters to his Mind, and went to *Benevento*, where all the Princes thereabout were met to ſalute him, (according to cuſtom) of whom the principal were *William* Duke of *Puglia*, *Jordan* Count of *Capoua*, *Arnulphus* Count of *Ariano*, and *Robert* Count of *Lauretello*, all Men of great honour, and without doubt the moſt powerful Lords of that part of *Italy*, who took their Oath of fealty to the Pope. But *Caliſtus* having nothing more in his thoughts than the holy War, where it was much feared the Chriſtian cauſe would not be able to ſuſtain it ſelf againſt ſo many barbarous Nations, returning to *Rome*, diſpatch'd away *Lambert* Biſhop of *Oſtia*, a *Saxon*, Cardinal of S. *Stephen* in *monte Celio*, and *Gregory* Cardinal of S. *Angelo*, to the Emperor to treat of a Peace, which having procured without much difficulty, they hang'd up a Table of the Articles thereof in the *Lateran* Church; to the incredible joy of all People. But this laſted not long, for *Roger* Count of *Sicily*, in the abſence of Count *William*, had ſeized upon *Calabria* and *Puglia*, the charge of both which Countries *William* (going to *Conſtantinople* to eſpouſe the Daughter of *Alexius* the Emperor) had committed to the care of the Pope. Upon this therefore the Pope left *Rome* and went to *Benevento*, from whence he ſent Cardinal *Hugo* to *Roger* as he was beſieging the *Rocca di Niceforo*, to perſuade him to lay down his Arms and quit the Siege, but he little regarded the Pope's Order, rather perſuing the War more vigorouſly, fearing leſt if his Coſen *William* ſhould arrive before he had poſſeſt himſelf of thoſe two Countries, it might render his Deſign unfeaſible. The Pope then began to raiſe an Army, when on a ſudden both himſelf and many of the Cardinals were taken ill of Fevers, wich forced him to return to *Rome* without performing any thing; ſo that *Roger* not meeting any reſiſtance, eaſily made himſelf Maſter of *Calabria* and *Puglia*. Thus was *William* bereft of his Country and of the Wife he expected, and being forced to betake himſelf to live in the Court of the Prince of *Salerno*, he died a little while after without Heirs; and *Roger* having loſt ſo conſiderable an Enemy, arrogates to himſelf the Title of King of *Italy*. *Caliſtus* as ſoon as he recovered his health, held a Council in the *Lateran* of nine hundred Fathers, where it was conſulted, how, with the firſt opportunity, they might ſend Recruits to the Chriſtian Army in *Aſia*, then much weakned; the news whereof gave ſuch courage to *Baldwin* King of *Jeruſalem*, that he ſet upon *Gazis*, a King of the *Turks*, that inhabited *Aſia minor*, who was coming againſt him with a great Army, vanquiſhed him and took him Priſoner; and, with like ſucceſs, he encountered the King of *Damaſcus*, who was marching againſt *Jeruſalem*, whom he defeated, having killed two thouſand of the Enemy and taken a thouſand. But *Balahac* King of the *Perſians* coming on with numerous forces, and *Baldwin* not ſtaying till the Auxiliaries could arrive, he raſhly adventur'd to fight him, and was totally routed, and himſelf and many of his Nobles made Captives. This made Pope *Caliſtus* haſten their aſſiſtance, leſt the remainder of the Chriſtians ſhould be deſtroyed, having no King; and by the Mediation of *Veramundus*, Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, a Learned and a good Man, he animated the *Venetians* with hopes of Glory and Reward to man out a ſtout Fleet upon the ſervice, in the year 1121. *Dominico Michaele* being Duke; which arriving at *Joppa*, then ſtreightly beſieged both by Sea and Land by the *Saracens*, they overcame them with great Slaughter and raiſed the Siege. Hence they went to *Tyre*, which after a long and bloody fight they took, having firſt made it their bargain, that half *Aſcalon* and *Tyre* ſhould be theirs, if by their means they happened to be taken. But *Emanuel*, Emperor of the *Greeks*, Succeſſor to *Calo-Joannes*, envying theſe great Succeſſes to the *Latins* or thoſe of the *Roman* Communion, commanded the *Venetians* to recal their Admiral, which they did and he obeyed, but he was ſo inraged, that in his return he ſack'd *Rhodes*, *Chios*, (from whence he tranſlated to *Venice* the Body of S. *Theodore* the Martyr) *Samos*, *Mitilene* and *Andros*, Iſlands belonging to the Emperor. He took *Modone* and fortified it; and ſubjected the Iſland *Trau* (before in the hands of the *Hungarians*) to the *Venetian* Common-wealth. He brought alſo along with him to *Venice* the Stone, upon which, at *Tyre*, Chriſt is ſaid to have ſat. In the mean time *Baldwin*, who we ſaid was taken Priſoner, being ranſomed, returned to *Jeruſalem*, and for a while kept up the Chriſtian cauſe; ſo that *Caliſtus*, having now a little leiſure from Forein Troubles, creates twelve Cardinals rebuilds ſeveral Churches that were ruin'd with age; repairs the City Walls, makes Conduits, fortifies Caſtles belonging to the Church, and diſtributes great Donaries of Silver and Gold to ſeveral Churches, purchaſes ſeveral pieces of Ground to augment S. *Peter*'s Revenue, and within the Court builds the Church of S. *Nicholas*. But ſo great felicity cannot long be enjoyed on Earth, without interruption, for *Gregory* the Anti-pope, before nam'd *Bordino*, attempting to uſurp the Papacy, kept at *Sutri*, where, with the aſſiſtance of ſome Roytelets thereabout, he did great damage to the *Romans* by his incurſions, and plundered all the Strangers he could meet with, that travelled to *Rome*, either out of devotion or about buiſineſs. *Caliſtus* therefore gets together an Army on a ſudden, and ſending before *John de Crema*, Cardinal of S. *Chryſogon*, with the moſt expedite part of Soldiery, himſelf follows, and defeating the Enemy takes *Sutri*, and ſets *Bordino* upon a Camel, leading him ſo in triumph to *Rome*; and then forgave him his life, but thruſt him into the Monaſtery of *Cave*. At laſt *Caliſtus*, having deſerved well both of God and Man, died in the Lord, after he had been Pope five years, ten months and ſix days; the See was then vacant eight days.

HONORIUS II.

HONORIUS the Second, at firſt named *Lambert*, born in the Country of *Imola*, was made Pope about the time that *Baldwin*, being ranſom'd from his impriſonment, added the Principality of *Antioch* to the Kingdom of *Jeruſalem*, all the Heirs being dead, to whom of right it belong'd. But ſo great a Province not being to be govern'd without a Lieutenant, he made *Raymund* Son to *William* Duke of *Auſtria* their Governor, whoſe Wife was the Daughter of *Boemund* the elder; and having thus ſetled matters, he went againſt the King of *Aſcalon*, who being aſſiſted with Forces from *Ægypt* infeſted the territories of *Jeruſalem*, and him he utterly routed in one Battel. Afterward *Baldequan* a petit King of *Damaſcus* attempting the ſame thing, but with greater Forces, he overthrew him in three fierce Battels, his Men in their flight being kill'd up and down like ſheep. To return to *Honorius*; though his Parentage was mean, yet for his excellent Learning and Converſation he was every way worthy of ſo high a Dignity; not but that the methods by which he obtain'd it were not altogether commendable, the Election having been procur'd rather by the ambition of ſome private Men than by unanimous conſent. For when upon the death of *Caliſtus*, the Conſultation was held about chuſing a new Pope, *Leo Frangipane* impoſed upon the Conclave, that the Election ſhould be deferred for three days, under pretence of more mature deliberation and a ſtricter ſearch into the Eccleſiaſtical Canons; though neither of theſe were part of his deſign, but it was craftily and politickly done by him, to gain time in which Votes might be procur'd for the choice of *Lambert*. The People were extremely deſirous to have had the Cardinal of S. *Stephen*, which *Frangipane* alſo pretended, that ſo he might by this trick draw over the People and the unwary Fathers; which ſome of the Cardinals obſerving, becauſe they would not have a Pope according to his mind, they ſet aſide the Cardinal of S. *Stephen*, and choſe *Theobald* Cardinal of S. *Anaſtaſio*, Pope, by the name of *Cæleſtine*. *Leo* now thought it no time to dally, but perceiving the People were diſpleaſed at that choice, declares *Lambert* aforeſaid for Pope, with great acclamations of the Citizens, the Clergy alſo approving it; and that the People might not have time to change their minds, he immediately cloaths him with the Pontifical Veſtments in the *Scinie*, a place near S. *Sylveſter*'s Church. He, though it was not without ſlight that he got the Popedom, yet was afterward univerſally ſaluted and own'd as ſuch. As ſoon as he was made Pope, he created ſeveral worthy perſons Cardinals, of whoſe aſſiſtance he conſtantly made uſe in all his difficult Affairs; being very much delighted with the converſation of excellent Men, which was the reaſon that he detain'd at *Rome* with him *Pontius* Abbat of *Clugni*, a very diligent perſon; and ſhew'd great reſpect to the extraordinary parts of *Hildebert* Biſhop of *Mans*, whom for the ſake of his skill at Heroic or Elegiac Verſe he promoted afterward to the Archbiſhoprick of *Tours*. This age was rendred alſo more illuſtrious by *Hugo de Sancto Victore*, a famous Doctor of *Paris*, who then flouriſh'd, who left behind him ſeveral laſting Monuments of his admirable Learning; as his Book concerning the *Sacraments*, his Book of *Sentences*, another written by way of Dialogue, Entituled *Didaſcalus*, another of *Care of the Soul*, and a Book Entituled, *Of Arts and Sciences*. All theſe Learned Men Pope *Honorius* lov'd to that degree, that he neglected no opportunity of preferring them. One foul deed yet was acted in his time much to be abhorred; for one *Arnulphus*, an excellent Preacher of the Religion of Chriſt, was murdered at *Rome* by the procurement of the Prieſts, becauſe he inveigh'd bitterly againſt their incontinence and ſenſuality, and reprov'd their pompous living and inſatiable appetite after Wealth; propoſing the Poverty and pure Integrity of our Saviour for their Imitation. This Man the *Roman* Nobility and Gentry look'd upon as a true Prophet and Diſciple of Chriſt, and extoll'd him to the Skies; which begat ſo much envy and rage as coſt the good Man his life. Whether this Holy Man was a Prieſt, a Monk, or a Hermit, is not certain. Hiſtorians write, that *Honorius* was very much troubled at the fact, but could never find the Authors of it: He, after having Reign'd well in S. *Peter*'s Chair five years, two months and a day, died to the general grief, and was buried with the greateſt ſolemnity in the *Lateran* Church; and the See was thereupon vacant one day. His name is in an Inſcription in Marble before the Church of *Praxede*, but I know not what it means.

INNOCENT II.

INNOCENT the Second, a *Roman*, born in *Traſtevere*, being made Pope, raiſes an Army and marches againſt *Roger*, Son and Heir of the former *Roger* Lord of *Sicily*, who endeavour'd to poſſeſs himſelf of *Puglia*, upon the death of *William* the Duke thereof, in whom the whole Family of *Robert Guiſcard* was extinct. In this expedition, the *Romans* ſhew'd ſo much Courage and Fortitude, that at the firſt onſet they overthrew the Enemy then encamp'd at S. *Germans*, and, taking the Town, they follow'd *Roger* to *Gallucio* and there beſieg'd him. But in the mean time *William* Duke of *Calabria*, his Son, with a good Army comes upon them and in one Battle defeats them, not only delivering his Father from the Siege, but taking the Pope priſoner with all the Cardinals that then attended him: All whom yet ſoon after *Roger*, uſing wonderful moderation, freely releaſed. For which reaſon the Pope afterwards was eaſily perſuaded to grant any thing he deſired, except the Title of *King*, which he earneſtly ſolicited with great Expence and large Promiſes. During theſe actions, one *Peter*, Son of *Peter Leone* a potent Citizen of *Rome*, by ſome ſeditious Fellows was ſet up for an Anti-Pope by the name of *Anacletus*, who, by ſpoiling ſeveral Churches in the City, and rifling their Treaſures (particularly breaking into S. *Peter*'s Church, whence he took a Croſs of Gold with its appendent Ornaments) had rak'd together ſo much wealth, that he was able with it to corrupt to his ſide any of the Citizens who were deſirous of change. So that *Innocent* upon his return to the City finding all places full of uproars, and that theſe muſt needs end in the ſlaughter of many Men, he retir'd of his own accord, and firſt ſailing to *Piſa*, from thence he went to *Genoa*; and at laſt to *France*. *Anacletus* then being rid of ſo conſiderable an Adverſary, endeavour'd as much as he could by liberal Penſions to bring over thoſe who were for *Innocent* to his ſide, and that he might more firmly oblige *Roger* (then inclining to his Party) to his Intereſt, he created him King of both *Sicilies*. *Innocent* in the mean while holds a Council at *Clermont*, in which the Anti-Pope and his followers were condemned; from whence he went to *Orleans*, and having viſited King *Philip*, by whom he was kindly receiv'd, he paſs'd into *la Beauſſe*, where at *Chartres* he diſcours'd with *Henry* King of *England*, who came to meet him, whom he endeavour'd with many Arguments to perſuade to undertake an Expedition againſt the *Saracens*. Hence he took a turn into *Lorain*, and finding *Lotharius* newly made King of the *Germans* at *Liege*, who made him many large Promiſes of aſſiſtance towards his Reſtauration, he made him take an Oath, that he would make ſuch ſufficient preparations for the enterprize, as that he ſhould return to *Rome* with ſecurity. After this, having held another Council at *Rhemes*, and, upon his return into *Italy*, and other at *Piacenza*, he came to *Piſa*, where he compoſed the animoſities that had long been between the *Piſans* and *Genoeſes*. He alſo raiſed the Biſhoprick of *Genoa*, which before was in the Province of the Arch-Biſhop of *Milan*, to an Arch-biſhops See, to which he ſubjected three Biſhops of *Corſica*, and the Biſhop of *Bebio*. The ſame he did by that of *Piſa*, making it an Arch-biſhoprick, with Juriſdiction over the other three Biſhops of *Corſica*, and the Biſhop of *Populonia*. *Lotharius* by this time was come into *Italy* with a great Army, which having, by the Pope's advice, divided with two diſtinct Bodies he march'd to the City; where making himſelf Maſter of *Janicolo* he entred that way, while *Innocent* with another party by another way croſſing the River *Anien* over *Ponte Mamolo*, gets into the *Lateran*, the Anti-Pope not appearing at all. So that *Lotharius* with marvellouſly good fortune quaſh'd that Faction, and, as much as in him lay, took care that *Innocent* ſhould not thereafter be diſquieted by them. The Pope was ſo extremely obliged by theſe great ſervices of *Lotharius*, that, *Henry* being now dead, he created him Emperor of the *Romans*, and crown'd him with an Imperial Diadem. Which done, *Lotharius* return'd into *Germany*, to reduce the *Leutici* then in Rebellion; but while the Pope called a Council at *Piſa*, to conſider of the State of Chriſtendom, and of the preſervation of Religion; the Anti-Pope, who was condemn'd in this Council alſo, with the aſſiſtance of *Roger*, and ſome Factious people, again beſtirs himſelf againſt the Pope. Hereupon the Emperor *Lotharius* having repreſs'd his own Rebels, once more advances towards *Rome* with his Army, and the *Piſans* on the Pope's behalf fit out a powerful Fleet; and with theſe Forces they not only quell'd the Sedition at *Rome*, but attack'd *Roger* ſo ſtoutly both by Sea and Land, that they ſtripp'd him of all that he held in *Italy*, and drove him to his own *Sicily* in a ſhort time. *John* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, who had no kindneſs for *Roger*, hearing of theſe great ſucceſſes, ſent Ambaſſadors to congratulate *Lotharius* upon that occaſion; one of which Embaſſie was a Sophiſter, who would undertake to prove, that the Latin Church profeſs'd a great Error, in declaring contrary, as he ſaid, to the opinion of the *Nicene* Council, which was, that (*the Holy*

Ghoſt proceeded from the Father) that the ſaid *Holy Ghoſt did proceed from the Father and the Son*. But among thoſe who manag'd the Controverſie, was one *Peter* a Deacon, a Learned Man and a great Diſputant, who replied thus: "If the *Latins* (ſays he) are to be condemn'd, becauſe they add that the Holy Ghoſt proceeds *from the Son alſo*; why " are not the *Greeks* much more to be condemn'd, who ſay, the H. G. "proceeds *from the Father alone*; whereas the Council ſaid no more "than that it *proceeded from the Father*? The bold Man was ſo gravel'd with this acute Anſwer, that he laid down the Controverſie and diſputed no more. The Emperor *Lotharius* being about to depart, and *Innocent* fearing, that, when he was gone, *Roger* would attempt to regain what he had loſt in *Italy*, he created *Raino* one of *Lotharius*'s Commanders, (left by him to ſecure the Country with ſome Troops) Duke of *Puglia*. The Anti-Pope ſoon after died, and was buried privately by his Friends, and the Cardinals who had been his Sectators were reconcil'd to the Pope, ſo that the Church ſeem'd to be in a likelyhood of enjoying a little Tranquillity; when on a ſudden ſome Citizens of *Rome* ſeeking to enlarge their Power by Tumults, ſet up ſeveral Senators of their own, to take into their hands the whole Government of the Affairs and Territories of the City. Whilſt the Pope withſtood theſe attempts, he holding a Council in the *Lateran*, wherein it was ordain'd, that no Lay-man ſhould lay violent hands on a Clergy-man, he died, having been Pope fourteen years, ſeven months and thirteen days, *A. D.* 1114. At which time were in great eſteem, *Gilbert* an *Engliſh* Man, a Perſon of ſo great Knowledge, that he was call'd, the Univerſal Scholar, and *Anbert* Arch-biſhop of *Rhemes*, not inferior to his Maſter *Gilbert* for Parts and Learning. That piece of Moſaic work, which is ſtill to be ſeen in the Vault of S. *Mary* in *Traſtevere*, was done by this Pope.

CELESTINE II.

CELESTINE the Second, at firſt nam'd *Guido*, Cardinal Prieſt of S. *Mark*, a *Tuſcan*, born at *Citta di Caſtello*, called by the Antients *Tiphernum*, was by univerſal conſent choſen Pope in the room of the deceaſed *Innocent*, at the time when *Baldwin* King of *Jeruſalem* dying, *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou*, his Son-in-law ſucceeded him in that Kingdom, which, with the help of his two valiant Sons, he defended ſtoutly for ſome time. For when the *Turks*, who inhabited near the *Perſian* Gulph, had made incurſions into the territories of *Antioch*, he not only defeated them, but ſlew three thouſand of their number, and took as many Priſoners. Which loſs ſo enrag'd *Alaph* the *Turk*, that, with ſome *Babylonian* Auxiliaries, he ſate down before *Edeſſa* a City of *Meſopotamia*, called by the *Jews Arach*, (which we told you *Baldwin* had begg'd of his Brother *Godfrey*) and took it, the *Barbarians* plundering and ſpoiling all without Mercy, putting all thoſe Chriſtians to the Sword, who would not deny the Faith, and raviſhing the principal Women, even upon S. *John Baptiſt*'s Altar, becauſe they knew it was had in high reverence by the Chriſtians. But while an Army was raiſing, King *Fulk* (I know not by what ill luck) fell from his Horſe, as he was riding too raſhly after a Hare, and died of his fall, to whom *Baldwin*, the third of that name, ſucceeded in the Throne. And *Celeſtine*, after he had ſate five months, died, and was buried in the *Lateran*. He was happy in one thing, that he was not peſtered with any Seditions in his Pontificate, which yet perhaps is to be attributed to the ſhortneſs of his time.

LVCIVS II.

LVCIVS the Second, a *Bononian*, his Fathers name was *Albert*, came to the Popedom at that time when the news of the taking of *Edeſſa* was brought to *Italy*. This *Edeſſa* was the City to which, Holy Scripture ſays, *Tobias* ſent his Son, and which the Apoſtle *Thaddæus* converted to the Faith of Chriſt, being ſince honoured with the Reliques of *S. Thomas*, and hence it was, that *Agbarus* King of the place ſent a Letter to our Saviour, to which he vouchſafed to write an Anſwer with his own hand. Upon the tidings of this great loſs, *Bernard* Abbat of *Clairvaux*, a perſonage famous for Sanctity and Learning, as I have ſaid before, took to heart the defence of Chriſtianity, and by Letters and Meſſengers animated all Chriſtian Princes to take upon them the Croſs and Banner of Chriſt againſt the *Saracens*; and prevailed upon *Conrade* of *Schwaben*, who had ſucceeded *Lotharius* in the Empire, to engage in the Expedition. While proviſion was thus made for the defence of the Chriſtian Religion, in *France* and *Germany*, *Roger* by the Pope's negligence returns into *Italy*, and regains all that he had loſt without meeting any reſiſtance, which ſucceſs gave him ſo much courage and ſtrength, that paſſing with a Fleet into *Africa*, he ſo plagu'd the King of *Tunis*, that, to buy his Peace, he made him promiſe him a yearly Tribute, which he paid for thirty years afterward. *Conrade* having in the mean while got together a great Army under the Croſs, march'd to *Conſtantinople*, where *Emanuel* II. Emperor of the *Greeks* over-perſuaded him to take his Journey ſtraight on to *Iconium*, without taking care of proviſion, aſſuring him, that himſelf would ſupply the Army with whatſoever ſhould be neceſſary. Whereupon, that City, well fortified both by Art and Nature, was cloſely beſieg'd a great while; but the wicked Emperor ſhew'd them a *Greek* Trick, and mix'd Lime with their Meal, with which the Bread was made for the whole Army of the Chriſtians, and this kill'd ſo many of the Soldiers, that they were forc'd to raiſe the Siege and return into *France*, without having done any thing. Some advantage yet this Expedition may be ſaid to have given the Chriſtians, becauſe King *Baldwin* the IV. of *Jeruſalem* took ſuch courage upon it, as to beſiege and take by ſtorm the City of *Aſcalon*, having alſo a little before rebuilt the ancient City *Gaza*, (then almoſt deſerted by the Enemy) giving it for a dwelling place to the Knights Templers. Beſide, the ſame *Baldwin* gave a bold repulſe to ſome *Turkiſh* Chieftains who infeſted the Inhabitants of *Jericho*, of whom in one ſingle Battle he is ſaid to have kill'd five thouſand. Moreover, *Noradine*

Governor of *Damaſcus* invading the territories of *Jeruſalem*, was met withal by *Baldwin*, and totally routed, ſo that in the purſuit the Chriſtians were with much ado kept off from entring the City of *Damaſcus* pel-mel with the Enemy. But to return to Pope *Lucius*; he omitted no care nor pains in promoting that ſo conſiderable and neceſſary Expedition; and I ſuppoſe he was much the more concern'd in his mind for it, becauſe before he was Pope, he was Cardinal Prieſt of S. *Croſs* in *Jeruſalem*, the Church whereof he almoſt wholly re-built. By his approbation, a national Council was held in *France* of ſeveral Biſhops and Abbats, againſt *Peter Abelardus* a Peripatetic Philoſopher, and a very learned Man, who had maintain'd ſome heterodox Opinions; but was in the preſence of King *Lewis*, ſo effectually convinc'd, that he not only chang'd his mind, but took upon him the Life and Order of a Monk, and afterward, together with ſome of his Scholars, led a moſt Holy life ſecluded from the World in a deſert place. *Lucius*, after he had been Pope eleven months and four days, died, and was buried in the *Lateran*.

EVGENIVS III.

EVGENIVS the third, a *Piſan*, Abbat of S. *Anaſtaſius* having been choſen a Monk by that Holy Man *Bernard*, was created Pope in the Church of S. *Cæſarius*; for when the Cardinals could not well agree whom to chuſe out of their own number, mov'd by an impulſe from above, they pitch'd upon this moſt Religious Man *Eugenius*. He, finding the *Romans* would be urgent upon him with threats, to procure his confirmation of their Senators, fled by night to *Sabina*, accompanied with the College of Cardinals, and was conſecrated in the Monaſtery of *Farfara*; and deſpiſing not only the big words of the *Romans*, but defying the worſt they could do, he drove thoſe Senators to ſuch a ſtraight, that he forc'd them to reſign their Offices. Hereupon he return'd to *Rome*, but perceiving the Citizens were reconcil'd to him only out of deſign, and not heartily, and being afraid leſt ſome trap ſhould be laid for him, he eſcap'd to *Tivoli*, the *Romans* throwing at him Darts and other miſſible weapons, as he departed. After this he went to *Piſa*, and from thence by Sea to *France*, where he perſuaded King *Lewis* to engage in the Holy War againſt the *Turks* and *Saracens*, who arriving at *Conſtantinople*, was no better uſed by the Emperor *Emanuel* than *Conrade* of *Schwaben* had been before him; for *Lewis* taking his advice to paſs through the Deſerts of *Syria* at a very unſeaſonable time, was reduc'd to ſuch extreme neceſſity, that he was compell'd to march his Army (haraſs'd with the bad way and want of all things) to *Antioch*, without entring upon any action. This falſity of *Emanuel* procur'd him the enmity of *Roger* King of *Sicily*, who mans out a Navy for *Greece*, and ſeizes from him the Iſland of *Corfu*, *Corinth*, *Thebes* and *Eubœa*, and had gone up to *Conſtantinople* itſelf, if the *Venetians* had not equipp'd a Fleet of ſixty Gallies to hinder his deſign. *Roger* therefore, as God would have it, turns to the coaſt of *Aſia*, where the *Saracens* Fleet had block'd up *Lewis* King of *France*, (then intending to ſet ſail for *Paleſtine* from *Porto di* S. *Simon*,) and having got them at an advantage, ſets upon 'em and routs 'em, delivering by this means this Chriſtian King and his Army from deſtruction. In the mean time, the *Venetian* Fleet, which was altogether on *Emanuel*'s ſide, retakes all thoſe places which *Roger* had poſſeſt himſelf of, but had been left by him unfortified and without Gariſons; *Roger* then, leaving King *Lewis* at *Joppa*, ſets ſail directly for *Conſtantinople*, where he burnt the Suburbs in the very ſight of the Emperor, and carried his Victory ſo far, that for ſome time he beſieged even his Palace, and with his own hand gather'd fruit out of his Garden. But having got his Fleet together in order to return into *Sicily*, he fell unawares upon the *Venetian* Navy which was ready prepar'd for a Battle, and was by them defeated with the loſs of twenty of his Gallies, himſelf hardly eſcaping by flight. While theſe things were doing, *Conrade*, *Lewis*, and *Baldwin*, with joint Forces and Courages attack'd *Damaſcus*, which City was built by the Servants of *Abraham*, in a Champain Country, and naturally ſubject to drought, but by Art rendred fertile and plentiful; for the ground is watered by Chanels and gutters dug in the Earth, and by that means made to abound with all things. There is but one ſmall River in that Country, which, running not far from the City Walls, makes a little tongue of Land in which their Camp was pitch'd, whereby they eaſily could hinder the Citizens from fetching Water; but a certain *Aſſyrian*, to whom in difficult matters *Baldwin* was wont to give great credit, over-perſuaded him to remove his Camp to the other ſide of the Town, pretending that it might with more eaſe be there expugnable, becauſe the Walls were not ſo ſtrong; which was no ſooner done, but thoſe of *Damaſcus* poſſeſs'd themſelves of the place where our Men had encamp'd, and, having entrench'd themſelves, ſtopp'd all the Water and Proviſions that the Chriſtians wanted: So that being preſs'd with hunder and thirſt, they were forc'd diſhonourably to raiſe the Siege, from which *Baldwin* went to *Jeruſalem*, and *Lewis* and *Conrade* took their march to *Europe*, whither they return'd *An. Dom.* 1152. with their Armies, which by ſeveral accidents were very much ſhattered. *Eugenius*, after having (as aforeſaid) ſtirr'd up the Chriſtians to this Expedition, return'd to *Rome*, where he was pompouſly and heartily entertain'd by the Citizens; but having recover'd *Terracina*, *Sezza*, *Norda* and *Rocca di Fumone*, places which had been ſeiz'd from the Church by ſeveral Lords of the adjacent Country, he retir'd to *Tivoli* for his diverſion, where ſoon after he died, having ſate in the Papal Chair eight years, four months and twenty days. His Body was carried to *Rome*, and buried with great ſtate (as reaſon good) in S. *Peter*'s Church. By his Order, and at his Charge the *Portico* of S. *Mary Maggiore* was built, or rather re-edified, as appears by the Inſcription.

ANASTASIUS IV.

A*NASTASIUS* the Fourth, a *Roman*, Son of *Benedict*, was before Abbat of S. *Ruſſo* in *Velitro*, and now of a Cardinal was made Pope, at that time when *Alphonſo* K. of *Spain* died in his return from the Holy War, to whom ſucceeded his Son *Sanctius*, who ſoon after being ſlain in the Chriſtian quarrel in a Battel in *Arabia*, his Brother *Ferdinand* ſucceeded him in the Throne. *Anaſtaſius* having obtain'd the Popedom, gave a Chalice of moſt excellent workmanſhip and vaſt price to the *Lateran* Church, and in a ſhort time raiſed a noble Structure near the *Pantheon*, now called *S. Marca rotunda*; and many other things he deſign'd for the honour of the Church, and the Ornament of the City, if he had lived a little longer. Great expectations Men had entertain'd concerning him and hopes that his Goodneſs, together with the Learning of *Richard de S. Victore* his Contemporary, would vindicate thoſe times from obſcurity and ignominy: For *Richard* was then a famous Doctor and wrote many things gravely and copiouſly, particularly a Book concerning the Trinity, beſide that, he was an eloquent as well as profound Preacher. At this time almoſt all *Europe* was afflicted with Famine, which put our Pope upon acts of Charity, which he perform'd liberally, both openly and in ſecret, but he died when he had been Pope one year, four months, and twenty four days, and was buried in the *Lateran* in a Tomb of Porphyry.

HADRIAN IV.

H*ADRIAN* the Fourth, an *Engliſh* man, [born near S. *Albans* in *Hertfordſhire*] having been ſent into *Norway* to Preach the Goſpel, he converted that Nation to the Chriſtian Faith, and was therefore by Pope *Eugenius* made Biſhop of *Alba* and Cardinal. Upon the death of *Anaſtaſius* being elected Pope, he was applied to by the *Romans*, both with Prayers and Threats for an inveſtiture of their Conſuls in the abſolute adminiſtration of the Government of the City, but he poſitively refuſed; and the Clergy of *Rome* deſiring him to go to the *Lateran* to be Conſecrated, he alſo denied ſo to do, unleſs *Arnold* of *Breſcia*, who had been condemn'd for a Heretick by *Eugenius*, were firſt expell'd the City. This ſo enrag'd the People, that they ſet upon the Cardinal of *S. Pudentiana* in the *Via Sacra* as he was going to the Pope, and gave him a wound or two. This the Pope took ſo ill, that he ſet them under Excommunication, till at laſt they chang'd their minds, and both baniſh'd *Arnold*, and forc'd their Conſuls to lay down their Offices, leaving to the Pope the abſolute power of governing the City. Mean time, *William* King of *Sicily*, who ſucceeded *Roger*, takes the Suburbs of *Benevent*, and both *Ceperano* and *Bauco* from the Church, which ſo enrag'd the Pope, that he Anathematiz'd him, and Abſolv'd all his Subjects of their Allegiance, that ſo they might be at Liberty to rebel. But at this time, the Emperor *Frederick* I. of *Schwaben* was entred into *Lombardy* with an Army, and, beſieging *Tortona*, which had revolted from the Empire, he took it by force, and thence, with great ſpeed, he continued his march towards *Rome*. The Pope was then at *Viterbo*, from whence he went to viſit *Orvieto* and *Civita Caſtellana*, places belonging to the Church, to confirm them in their Allegiance; but, finding himſelf unable to cope with the Imperial Army, by his Nuntio's he ſtruck up a Peace, and met the Emperor near *Sutri*, who, alighting from his Horſe, addreſs'd to him with all that Ceremony which was due to the true Vicar of Chriſt. From hence they went to *Rome*, where *Frederick* was to be Crown'd by the Pope in S. *Peter*'s Church, but the Gates being ſhut leſt any tumult ſhould happen between the Citizens and the Soldiers, the *Romans* yet broke forth by *Ponte S. Angelo*, and ſet upon the *Germans*, (whom they look'd upon as of the Pope's ſide,) and kill'd many. This unſufferable Riot angred the Emperor ſo, that, having brought his Army, which was encamp'd in the *prati di Nerone*, into the City, he drove the *Romans* from the *Vatican*, and ſlew and took Priſoners multitudes of them, till, being appeaſed by the Interceſſion of the Pope, he let thoſe he had taken go free. But, when afterward, according to cuſtom, the Pope and Emperor were to go together to the *Lateran*, and found it would be unſafe becauſe of the ſeditious humour of the Citizens, they went firſt to *Magliana*, and, there croſſing the River, they paſs'd by the way of *Sabina* and *Ponte Lucano* to the *Lateran*, and perform'd the Coronation with the uſual Solemnity. While matters went thus at *Rome*, thoſe of *Tivoli* ſurrendered themſelves to *Frederick*, profeſſing a perfect Submiſſion; but when he underſtood, that it was a part of S. *Peter*'s Patrimony, he reſtor'd it to *Hadrian*, and, without any long ſtay, return'd into *Germany*. The Pope alſo, at the requeſt of the Great Men of *Puglia*, removed to *Benevent*, where, by his preſence alone, he regain'd from *William* to the Church a great part of his Kingdom. In the mean time, *Palæologus*, an Illuſtrious Perſonage, came Ambaſſador from *Emanuel* II. Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, firſt by Sea to *Ancona*, and then by Land to *Benevent*, with an Offer to the Pope of Fifty thouſand pounds in Gold, and a Promiſe to chaſe *William* out of *Sicily*, if, upon the good ſucceſs of the Expedition, three maritime Cities of *Puglia* might be put into his poſſeſſion; which no ſooner came to *William*'s Ear, but he ſued for the Pope's Mercy, promiſing not only to reſtore what he had taken from the Church, but to add ſomewhat more; and that he would employ his Force to conſtrain the rebellious *Romans* to their Duty, if he might be honoured with the Title of King of both *Sicilies*. The Pope could not grant this, becauſe ſeveral Cardinals oppoſed it. Wherefore *William* getting a good Army together, enters *Puglia* after an hoſtile manner, deſtroying all with Fire and Sword; and, ſetting upon the *Greeks* and *Apulians*, who were encamp'd near *Brunduſium*, he eaſily overcame them; upon which, thoſe of *Otranto* and *Puglia*, immediately made their Submiſſions to him. The Pope then was very angry with thoſe Cardinals, who had oppoſed the Peace before, and took *William* into Favour, and gave him the Title of both Kingdoms, he having firſt taken a Oath, thereafter not to attempt to do any thing, which might be a Detriment to the Church of *Rome*. Matters being thus compoſed to his mind, the Pope taking his Journy through the Countries of *Caſſino*, *Marſi*, *Reati*, *Narin* and *Todi*, came at laſt to *Orvieto*, which place, he was the firſt Pope that made his Habitation and beautified. He was afterward, by the earneſt Intreaties of the *Romans*, perſuaded to go to *Rome*, but, being here teiz'd by the Conſuls, who would be ſetting up for Liberty, he went to *Arignano*, where, not long after, he died, having been Pope four Years and ten Months, leaving the Eſtates of the Church in a very good condition; for he had built ſeveral Caſtles on the Lake of S. *Chriſtina*, and ſo fortified *Radiſano* with a Wall and Cittadel, that it was almoſt inexpugnable. The Hiſtory of theſe times was written in an elegant Style by *Richard* a Monk of *Glugni*, much quoted by other Writers. The Body of Pope *Hadrian* being brought to *Rome*, was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church near the Sepulchre of Pope *Eugenius*.

ALEXANDER III.

ALEXANDER the Third, born at *Siena*, his Father's Name *Ranuccio*, upon the death of *Hadrian*, was, by the ſuffrages of Twenty two Cardinals, choſen Pope, though other three Cardinals ſet up *Octavian*, a *Roman*, Cardinal of S. *Clement*, by the name of *Victor*, which gave beginning to a Schiſm. But *Alexander*, leſt the Church of *Rome* ſhould ſuffer by the continuance thereof, diſpatch'd Legats to *Frederick* the Emperor, then laying Siege to *Cremona*, to deſire him to interpoſe his Imperial Authority in extinguiſhing the Sedition. He return'd for Anſwer, that both Popes ſhould betake themſelves to *Pavia*, whither he would come and hear their Caſe debated. Upon the receit of this Anſwer, *Alexander* went to *Anagnia*, and *Octavian* to *Segna*. This the Emperor took ſo heinouſly, that he ſent two Biſhops to *Alexander*, to cite him before a Council, by the name of Cardinal and not of Pope. *Alexander* ſtood upon his Right and rejected them, whereupon they went to *Octavian*, and brought him to *Pavia*, with intent to ſet him up againſt *Alexander*, which they did; for holding a Council, *Frederick* confirms him in the Papacy, leads him, ſitting upon a white Horſe, through the ſtreets of *Pavia*, and performs the uſual adoration to him. *Alexander* was much moved at this, and, having firſt admoniſh'd them to no purpoſe, he ſets them both under an *Anathem*, and writes Letters to all the Princes and Nations of *Chriſtendom*, in juſtification of himſelf for ſo doing: Then, returning to *Rome* in the ſecond Year of his Pontificate, he finds he had many Adverſaries there, who took the boldneſs to oppoſe him, becauſe *Fredrick*'s Army had now poſſeſs'd themſelves of all S. *Peter*'s Patrimony but *Orvieto* and *Anagnia*. Wherefore *Alexander*, by the perſuaſion of King *Philip* of *France*, went to *Terracina*, and there embark'd in a Ship provided for him by Order of *William* King of *Sicily*, and arrived in *France*, where, in a Council holden at *Clermont*, he pronounc'd the *Anathema* before laid upon the Emperor and *Octavian*. While theſe things were doing in *Europe*, *Baldwin* III. died at *Jeruſalem*, and his Brother *Almeric* ſtepp'd into the Throne, leſt if any *Interregnum* ſhould have been among ſo barbarous and treacherous a People a people, it might have given occaſion to ſome miſchievous revolution; and having ſetled his Affairs for the time, he led his Army againſt the *Egyptians*, and defeated their General *Drogon*, with a great ſlaughter; he laid Siege to *Alexandria*, of which *Tiracino*, Lieutenant to the Soldan of the *Saracens*, had traiterouſly made himſelf Lord; which Siege he urg'd on with ſo great diligence, that the *Alexandrians* could hold out no longer, and yet were not willing to be made ſubject to the Chriſtians, but offer'd to yield upon condition they might be freed of this new Lord, and be reſtored to the Dominion of the Soldan: *Almeric* was content, and, receiving a vaſt Sum of Money, re-delivered the City to the Soldan, who ungratefully put off the performance of the full bargain, which cauſed *Almeric* to march againſt him and to lay Siege to *Cairo*. Mean time in *Europe Frederick* acts very tyrannically, for he ſack'd *Tortono*, and laid *Milan* even with the Ground, (from whence he tranſlated the Bodies of the *Magi* to *Cologn*, of which, I think, *Rodolphus* was then Archbiſhop,) and did great miſchief to the *Cremoneſes*. Upon this thoſe of *Verona*, *Vicenza*, *Padoua* and *Venice*, reſolv'd unanimouſly to ſtop all manner of Aſſiſtance, that *Frederick* ſhould ſtand in need of, while he thus haraſs'd *Lombardy*. This angred *Frederick* ſo, that he was about to inveſt *Verona* with his Army, but hearing that the other Cities had ſent thither their Auxiliary Troops, he retreated to *Pavia*; from whence, by Letters and Ambaſſadors, he exhorted the King of *France*, that, to put an end to the Schiſm, he would bring *Alexander* before a general Council, where alſo he would appear with *Victor*. The City of *Dyon*, ſituate where the River *Savo* divides *France* from *Germany*, was the place appointed for the Council, whither *Frederick* (having compoſed his Affairs in *Italy* for a time,) arrived, together with *Octavian* and the Kings of *Scotland* and *Bohemia*, and attended by great numbers of armed Men. But when *Alexander* refus'd to go to that Council, which himſelf did not call, but had begun another at *Tours*, *Frederick*, full of Rage and Threats, returns into *Germany*; having ſent *Octavian* into *Italy*, intending ſpeedily to follow him; but he dying at *Luca*, *Guy* of *Crema* was ſet up for Anti-Pope in his ſtead. The *Romans* had now choſen Conſuls, who were Friends to *Alexander*; they immediately recall him out of *France*, and he taking Ship arrives firſt in *Sicily*, and thence comes to *Rome*, where he was very kindly received with univerſal Acclamations; and the people of *Lombardy* were, by the arrival of *Alexander*, put in hopes of retrieving their Liberty, ſo that they took up Arms againſt *Frederick*, who had uſed them ſo tyrannically, and drove ſeveral of his Gariſons out of their Towns, *An. Dom.* 1165. *Frederick* hereupon marches with a numerous Army into *Italy*, and, without doing damage to any one, contrary to all expectation, enters the Territory of *Bononia*, where he divides his Army, and ſends ſome Battalions to *Luca*, to be a Guard to the Anti-Pope, who then reſided there, whil'ſt he inveſts *Ancona* with his Army, and, after a Siege of ſome time, takes it. In the mean time, the aſſociated Cities of *Lombardy* re-edifie *Milan* and fortifie it, and receive thoſe of *Lodi*, who had been Enemies to the *Milaneſes*, into their Confederacy, the more to enable them to reſiſt *Frederick*, if he ſhould invade them: But *Frederick* had ſomewhat of greater moment to think of; for, upon the Death of *William* the *Norman* King of *Sicily*, *Emanuel*, Emperor of *Greece*, had ſent Ambaſſadors to the Pope, to offer him a great Army to be employed againſt *Frederick*, and to promiſe a perfect agreement of all the *Grecians* with the Church of *Rome*, that ſo the Eaſtern and Weſtern Churches might be all one, if he would ſuffer the *Roman* Empire then divided, to be again reduc'd into one Body. What Anſwer theſe Ambaſſadors received is not certain, for, by reaſon of a War then begun between the *Romans* and thoſe of *Tuſculum* and *Alba*, the Pope could not give them a poſitive Reſolution. The cauſe of this was, that the *Romans* being too rigorous in the exaction of their Gables, the *Tuſculans* and *Albans* denied to pay them, which enraged the People of *Rome* ſo, that they march'd out contrary to the Pope's will, againſt them tumultuouſly; but at that time *Raino* (who had been ſtripp'd of the Dukedom of *Puglia* by *Roger*,) bore the chief ſway among the *Tuſculans*, a Man well skill'd in the Arts of War, who, ſending for the *German* Soldiers from *Nepi* and *Sutri*, made ſo great a ſlaughter among the *Romans*, that they afterwards had much ado to defend their Walls, much leſs could they meet an Enemy in the Field. *Frederick* took this occaſion to avenge the wrongs (as he call'd 'em,) which *Alexander* had done him, and, leaving *Ancona*, leads his Army to *Rome*, and encamps in the *Prati di Nerone*, from whence he made an Attack upon the *Vatican* Suburb, but was ſtoutly repell'd by the Friends of *Alexander*. The next day he attempted to ſet fire to S. *Peter*'s Church, and had effected it, if thoſe, who had the care of it, would have ſuffered it; and the Pope, not thinking himſelf ſafe in the *Lateran*, into which he ſaw the *Germans* would ſoon enter, remov'd to the Houſe of the *Frangipani* near the *Palladio*. *William* King of *Sicily*, Son of the Great *William*, hearing of the Pope's danger, ſent him a good Sum of Money, and two Gallies well Mann'd; which came in good time, for *Frederick* having promiſed Peace to the *Romans*, was very urgent with them, of the two Popes to chuſe the more worthy, and to depoſe and reject the other, which, when *Alexander* knew muſt be done as the Emperor ſhould pleaſe, he embark'd in the Gallies, and eſcap'd firſt to *Gaieta*, and from thence to *Benevent*. *Frederick* afterward was driven from the City by a Plague, of which, both Citizens and Soldiers died like Sheep; and, as he marched back through *Lombardy*, the Army of the Confederate Cities met him, and urged him to a Battel, which he carefully declin'd, and arriv'd in *Germany*. When he was departed, the Aſſociates built a City at their common Charge near *Roueretto*, upon the River *Taro*, which, from the Name of the Pope, they call'd *Alexandria*; to inhabit which, from all the Cities, they ſent Fifteen thouſand Men, dividing the Ground equally among 'em, and ſetting out the dimenſions of their Streets and Houſes. The *Romans* yet regretted the ſlaughter made among 'em by the *Tuſculans* and their Friends, and therefore, upon the departure of *Frederick*, they took *Alba* and demoliſh'd it, and had done the like by *Tuſculum*, if the Pope had not terrified them with Threats and Anathema's from doing ſo great a miſchief. At this time, *Emanuel* Emperor of *Conſtantinople* ſent other Ambaſſadors, with greater Promiſes than before, if the Pope could be brought to comply with his deſire; to whom *Alexander* gave this Anſwer, That he was not willing to unite what his Predeceſſors had thought good induſtriouſly to disjoin. In the mean time, *Guy* the Anti-Pope died in S. *Peter*'s Church, which was ſtill ſtrongly gariſon'd by *Frederick*, in whoſe room the ſeditious ſubſtituted *John*, a *Hungarian*, Abbat of *Sirmio*, who had before the repute of a Thief; to him *Raino* (who was afraid of the *Romans* upon account of the miſchief he had formerly done them,) deliver'd up *Tuſculum*, upon condition, that he ſhould have *Monte-fiaſcone* in lieu of it; but when *Raino* went to take poſſeſſion of it, the Inhabitants would not receive him, neither would the *Tuſculans* ſubmit to the Anti-Pope, upon which he return'd to *Tuſculum*, but was forbidden entrance. From thence therefore he went to *Alexius*, who was then at *Veruli*, and ſurrendred to him all his Title to the place, which, when the *Tuſculans* heard, upon mature deliberation, by a publick Decree, they acknowledg'd their Subjection to the Pope, and receiv'd him. Here it was, that the Ambaſſadors of *Henry* King of *England* were heard, when they came to clear their King of the falſe Accuſation, of having conſpired the death of S. *Thomas* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*. But the Pope, not eaſily giving credit to the King's Ambaſſadors, ſent Two Cardinals into *England*, with plenary Power to examine the matter; to whom *Henry* paid ſo great reſpect, that, though he was engaged in a War with *Ireland*, yet he came as far as *Normandy* to meet 'em. Upon debating the caſe, it came to this end, that *Henry* ſhould by an Oath (becauſe the matter of fact was not clear,) purge himſelf, and promiſe to do Penance for the murther of that holy Man; of which, though he were not guilty, nor conſcious, yet it ſeem'd, that the great ſpite and grudg he bore him in his life-time, had given ſome occaſion to the Aſſaſſination; and, moreover, that he ſhould raiſe and maintain Two hundred Soldiers for a year, to aſſiſt the Chriſtians in the Holy Land; that he ſhould, within three years, himſelf, with what force he could raiſe, undertake an Expedition to the ſame purpoſe: That he ſhould conſerve the Eccleſiaſtical Immunities in his Realm, and not oppoſe any Appeals, that might be made by his Subjects to the Court of *Rome*. All theſe Conditions he having ſworn to perform, he had (and he deſerv'd it,) the Right and Title to the Crown of *England* conferr'd upon him and his Heirs, with the Pope's conſent. Hence it may be obſerved, that all the *Engliſh* Kings acknowledg themſelves, to have receiv'd the Title to their Realms of the Pope of *Rome*. But *Alexander* having long ſtruggled with the *Romans*, offered them, if they would admit him into the City, to leave the whole Civil Government to their own managery, and to intermeddle only in religious matters; but this would not be granted by them, ſo he retired to *Segna*, and there being inform'd by the *Engliſh* Ambaſſadors of the Miracles wrought by S. *Thomas* [*Becket*] he canoniz'd him. *Frederick* now returning into *Italy* by *Monceniſi*, took *Seculia* by Treachery, and demoliſh'd it; he took alſo *Aſti*, which ſurrendered for fear, and laid cloſe Siege four Months to *Alexandria*, but receiv'd ſo much loſs from the Sallies of the beſieged, that he grew weary of it; and, on *Eaſter*-day, roſe up from before it and went to *Pavia*; where a Treaty for the peace of *Italy* was carried on, by the mediation of the Pope, which the *Venetians* were willing to embrace; who, though they had been Favourers of *Emanuel* before, yet, had receiv'd from him a horrid affront contrary to the Law of Nations; for he had, with red hot plates of Braſs, blinded their Ambaſſador *Henry Dandalo*, by holding them before his Eyes. Mean time, *Almeric* King of *Jeruſalem* raiſed his Siege from before *Cairo*, though he was not without hopes of carrying the place, but was bought off with a great Sum of Money, and afterward march'd againſt *Aſcalon*;

but was forced to quit that Expedition, being in great want of Proviſions, and finding his Soldiers to be very much tired and broken with the great and tedious Toils of War they had undergone. He did not long out-live his return, but died and left his Kingdom to his Son *Baldwin*, who, though he laboured with a dangerous Leproſie, yet he manag'd his Government with great Conſtancy and Wiſdom. *Alexander* thinking now to enjoy a perfect Peace, made the new City of *Alexandria* a Biſhops See, *An. Dom.* 1177. but ſoon after *Frederick* re-enters *Italy* with great Forces, and put all into confuſion, till the *Milaneſes*, with the joint Forces of the Confederates, ſo broke his Troops with frequent Onſets, that in one of them *Frederick*'s Horſe was kill'd under him, and he narrowly ſcap'd with Life himſelf; many of thoſe of *Pavia* and *Como* being on his ſide were loſt. The Biſhop of *Pavia* alſo, becauſe he took the Emperor's part, was by the Pope deprived of his Pall and the honour of bearing the Croſs. *Frederick*'s great Men thought theſe miſchiefs happened to 'em, becauſe they perſecuted the Church of God, and openly threatned to return into their own Country, and leave that wicked Warfare, except he would be reconcil'd to the Pope ſpeedily. A Treaty then was begun for the Peace of *Italy*; when *Saladine*, a Perſon of great Courage, ſucceeded *Noradine* then deceaſed, in the Empire of the *Saracens*, who, having taken and ſlain the King of *Egypt*, added that Country and *Syria* to his Dominion; nor that his ſucceſs was alike when he fought with the Chriſtians, being defeated by *Baldwin* in two Battels, one at *Aſcalon*, and another at *Tiberias*; but ſoon after, gathering his Forces together, he march'd into *Cilicia*, to meet with *Emanuel*, whoſe Army, by a feigned Flight, he drew into narrow and difficult ways, where he ſet upon 'em and vanquiſh'd 'em, taking the Emperor Priſoner, whom he ſet at large again, upon condition, That he ſhould quit whatſoever he had taken in *Aſia*. At this time, *Alexander* was met at *Venice* by *Frederick*, there to treat of a Peace, where, in S. *Mark*'s Porch, the Emperor kiſs'd the Pope's Feet; and from thence they went together to the high Altar, and, having perform'd the mutual Ceremonies of Civility, they diſcours'd a great while upon the Articles of the Peace, which the next day was concluded. Hence the Emperor, with the good leave of the Pope, departed firſt to *Ravenna*, and then to *Bertinoro*, which Town he deſign'd to keep in his hands, becauſe of the commodiouſneſs of its ſituation; but the Pope at laſt perſuaded him to reſtore it to the Church. *Alexander* alſo left *Venice*, (having firſt made ſeveral Preſents, and conferr'd many Honours upon that State for the Services they had done him,) and, with thirteen Gallies of *William* King of *Sicily*, and four of the *Venetians*, he ſail'd firſt to *Siponto*, and from thence to *Troia* and *Benevent*, and, then paſſing S. *Germano*, he went to *Anagni*, where he ſtaid not long but came to *Tuſculum*, to treat with the *Romans* about depoſing the Conſuls they had ſet up before a Peace ſhould be concluded; but becauſe the Conſuls had been ſo choſen for fifty Years, it was found to be a difficult thing to alter the cuſtom; wherefore they agreed, that thereafter no one that was choſen Conſul ſhould enter upon his Office, till he had taken an Oath to be dictated by the Pope, that he would be true to the Church of *Rome*, and never attempt any thing, that ſhould be a violation of the Pontifical Dignity. Thus all matters being ſetled, the Pope went the third time to *Rome*, all the Great Men of the City coming forth to attend

tend and congratulate him; ſoon after he held a Council in the *Lateran*, partly, to find a way to reform the great licentiouſneſs of that Court; but chiefly, that it might be decreed, That no Man, under pain of an *Anathema*, ſhould furniſh the Infidels with Iron, Wood, or any ſort of Arms. At this time died *Emanuel*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*; leaving his Son *Alexius* Heir of his Empire, under the Guardianſhip of *Andronicus*, one of the Blood-Royal, who, for ſome years, ſhew'd great Prudence and Fidelity in his publick Adminiſtrations; and, by his conſent, the young Emperor was married to *Agnes* Daughter to *Philip* King of *France*. *Baldwin* IV. alſo King of *Jeruſalem*, to ſtrengthen himſelf by the Alliance, married his Siſter *Sibyl* to *William*, ſirnamed *Long-ſword*, Marqueſs of *Montferrat*, an excellent Soldier, not doubting, but that upon occaſion, *William*, and other Princes of Chriſtendom, would come to his Aſſiſtance, if his Affairs were in any danger. Mean-time *Alexander*, after having undergone ſo many and continual Labours, when now he ſeem'd to be at reſt from all his troubles, died at *Rome*, when he had been Pope Twenty one Years, nineteen Days; having yet liv'd to ſee four Anti-Popes go before him, who, with their Factions, had almoſt deſtroy'd the Church of *Rome*.

LVCIVS III.

L*VCIVS* the Third, a *Tuſcan*, of a Noble Family of the City of *Lucca*, was made Pope by general conſent, at the time when *Andronicus* (who, we told you, was Guardian to *Alexius*, having driven out the *Latins*, who favour'd the young Emperor, and drown'd him in the Sea, where he was wont, for his Recreation, careleſly ſometimes to venture in a little Bark,) uſurp'd the Empire of *Conſtantinople*; and, to ſecure his Empire thus unjuſtly gotten, he added another great wickedneſs, for, in a ſhort time, he cut off all the Nobility, whoſe Virtue rendred them ſuſpected to him. Now alſo *William*, ſirnamed *Long-ſword*, dying at *Jeruſalem*, King *Baldwin* taking care of his Nephew, married his Siſter *Sibyl* again to *Guy* of *Luſignan*, a *Picard*, upon condition, That, after his own deceaſe, *Guy* ſhould enjoy the Kingdom during the Non-age of his Nephew *Baldwin*, after which he ſhould reſign it to him. All which was confirm'd by the Pope's Authority, who thought it very neceſſary for the Chriſtian Cauſe, that the Princes of *Aſia* ſhould be knit together with the ſtricteſt Bonds of Amity and Friendſhip, to enable them the better to reſiſt the Inſults of the *Turks* and *Saracens*: But he was quickly after expell'd the City of *Rome*, while, by the favour of ſome Citizens, he attempted to aboliſh the Office of the Conſuls, and his Friends in that Affair being taken, had their Eyes put out. Upon this horrid affront, the Pope betook himſelf to *Verona*, and call'd a Council, where the exorbitant pride and licentiouſneſs of the *Romans* was condemned, and all Chriſtian Princes were exhorted to afford Aſſiſtance to the holy War; eſpecially becauſe *Saladine* had entred and waſted the Territories of *Jeruſalem*, encouraged by the Diſſention among the Chriſtian Commanders, who had turn'd out *Guy* of *Luſignan* for his Arrogance,

gance, from the Government, and had ſubſtituted *Bertrand* Count of *Tripoli*, Protector in his room, ſo that all things ſeem'd to threaten a Civil War. But the Pope inceſſantly perſuaded them, by Letters and Ambaſſadors, to lay by their Animoſities, and, with one Heart and the ſame Mind, to oppoſe the common Enemy, at leaſt ſo long as till freſh Auxiliary Forces could be ſent to 'em: For, by the inſtance of *Heraclius*, Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, who came for that purpoſe firſt to *Verona*, and thence went to *Philip* King of *France* upon the ſame Errand, a good number of Soldiers under the Croſs were liſted and ſent away: But *William*, King of *Sicily*, in an ill time, deſigning to revenge the wrongs offered to the *Latins* by *Andronicus*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, paſſing into Greece with his Army, confounded all things; for he took *Theſſalonica*, the chief City of *Macedonia*, by ſtorm, and, harraſſing many other of his Territories, he took and plundered ſeveral Cities, *Andronicus* not appearing againſt him, being hated of God and Man, for the many Murthers and Baniſhments he had been the Author of. The *Conſtantinopolitans* were hereby reduc'd to neceſſity, and forc'd to fetch from *Peloponneſus*, and to ſet up for Emperor, one *Iſaac*, who was of the Blood-Royal; and he overthrew *Andronicus* in Battel, took him, and, with various Tortures, put him to death. Upon which, it became eaſie for Pope *Lucius* to perſuade King *William* to make Peace with *Iſaac*, and, with Promiſes and Rewards, to prevail with him to turn his Arms againſt the *Aſians*; but, while this matter was tranſacting by Internuntio's, this excellent Pope died, in the Fourth Year, ſecond Month, and eighteenth Day of his Papacy, at *Verona*, and was buried with great pomp before the Altar of the Cathedral Church. This Pope had a great regard for his own Country, and conferred upon it many Advantages, both Civil and Spiritual, before he died; particularly he obtained of *Frederick* the Emperor, with whom he all his time kept a peaceable Correſpondence, that the Money of *Lucca* only ſhould be current in *Tuſcany*, as that of *Pavia* with the Imperial Stamp went only among the *Lombards*, which people, by the means of this Pope, were reconcil'd to the Emperor. *Ptolomy* of *Lucca* writes, that there flouriſh'd at this time *Peter Comeſtor*, who wrote the Hiſtory of both Teſtaments, and *Joachim*, an Abbat of a Monaſtery which himſelf built at *Calabria*, famous for his Learning and for his skill in Divination, which he uſed to practiſe in doubtful and enigmatical terms.

URBAN III.

URBAN the Third, a *Milaneſe*, his Father's Name was *John*, of the Family of *Crivellis*, was made Pope, applied himſelf to compoſe the Differences between the Chriſtian Princes, leſt they ſhould be deſtroy'd by the Infidels, who would make uſe of that opportunity. For *Baldwin* IV. dying of a Leproſie, the Count of *Tripoli*, who was made Guardian to *Baldwin* V. could not enter upon his charge, becauſe *Sibyl*, the Child's Mother, and *Guy* of *Luſignan*, her ſecond Husband, oppoſed him. The Child however did not long out-live his Uncle, but died within eight Months after

ter him, whoſe death his Mother kept ſecret ſo long, as till, what with Gifts, and what with good Words ſhe had brought over the Patriarch and the chief Men to her ſide, to make *Guy* their King. This *Raimund* Count of *Tripoli* highly reſented, and that he might the more eaſily work his Revenge, he made a Truce with *Saladine*; by which means the Provinces of *Tripoli*, *Tiberias* and *Galilee* were torn from the Chriſtians; for they were then ſubject to *Raimund* in right of his Wife, whom he had newly Married; and leſt a pretence for making War (which *Saladine* earneſtly ſought) ſhould be wanting to him, the Prince of *Monreal*, a Chriſtian, in whoſe Dominion was a great part of the Country beyond *Jordan*, and who was wont to ſupply in great abundance *Jeruſalem* with Corn, inconſiderately broke the Truce with him. *Saladine* looking upon the time to be come at laſt, which he had ſo long deſired, raiſed a great Army of Horſe and Foot, and ſtoutly aſſaulted *Ptolemais* then Gariſon'd by the Templers. In this Action the Templers got the better, but with the loſs of their choiceſt Men; for their Grand Maſter, and many other of their moſt skilful and couragious Soldiers were ſlain. *Saladine* hereupon reinforces his Army, and taking Courage from their Diſtreſs, preſſes more hardly upon them. *Raymund* obſerving this, and not thinking good to give too much credit to *Saladine*, leaves his Wife at *Tiberias*, and returning to *Tripoli* renews his Friendſhip with King *Guy*, ſlighting his Treaty before had with the *Barbarians*: So that *Saladine* having a fair occaſion to make War upon him, draws off from *Ptolemais*, and marches towards *Tiberias*. All the Chriſtians then, but eſpecially the Templers, urging that their Army might march againſt *Saladine*, King *Guy* accordingly ſets upon him in his Camp, which was pitch'd in a pleaſant place, and well watered, but was repulſed, after which, he encamping in an incommodious and extreme dry ground where the Chriſtians ſuffered much by Thirſt, himſelf was forc'd to fight, and was defeated with great ſlaughter. In this unfortunate Battel moſt of the Chriſtian Commanders were taken priſoners, as was alſo King *Guy*, and the Maſter of the Templers; many of whom were afterwards beheaded. *Saladine* having gain'd this Victory, marches to *Acon*, which was immediately ſurrendred by the Chriſtians, who were permitted to depart only with their Cloaths, and thence following his good fortune, he takes *Berylus*, *Byblos*, and all the Towns upon the Sea-coaſt; thoſe of *Aſcalon* only truſting to the ſtrength of their Fortifications, told him, they would not yield to him except he were firſt poſſeſs'd of *Jeruſalem*. But the excellent temper and faithfulneſs of *Saladine* did the Chriſtians much harm; for he was ſo affable to every one, that ſubjection to him was a deſireable condition. He, notwithſtanding the big words of the *Aſcalonites*, inveſts the place, and after a Siege of ten days had it deliver'd up to him, upon condition, that he would ſet at liberty King *Guy* and the Maſter of the Templers, who were then his priſoners. That which made *Saladine* thus haſten the ſurrender of this place, was, he heard that *Conrade* Marqueſs of *Montferrat* was arriv'd at *Tyre* with the Fleet of *Iſaac* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, (whoſe Siſter he had lately Married) under his Command; and that *William* King of *Sicily* was expected in a ſhort time with forty Gallies. The tidings of theſe glorious ſucceſſes of *Saladine* againſt the Chriſtians coming to the *Turks* in the leſſer *Aſia*, ſo fill'd 'em with emulation, that they march'd againſt *Laodicea* and took it, and from thence they invaded the Territories of *Antioch*; but they were there vanquiſh'd by the Chriſtians with as great loſs on their ſide, as the Chriſtians ſuffered from *Saladine*. At this time *Saladine* had inveſted *Jeruſalem*, and carried on the Siege with ſo great diligence, that thoſe who were in Gariſon, being out of hopes of ſuccor, (after the taking of it by the Chriſtians under *Godfrey* eighty eight years) deliver'd it up, on condition, that whoſoever ſhould be minded to leave the City ſhould go freely, with ſo much, and no more, than they could carry on their Shoulders. The Chriſtians who came forth of it went ſome to *Tyre*, ſome to *Antioch*, and ſome to *Alexandria*; from whence many ſail'd with the *Sicilian* Fleet into *Italy*. *Saladine*, having entred *Jeruſalem*, firſt threw down the Bells out of the Steeples, and then profan'd all the Churches, but *Solomon's* Temple, which, 'tis ſaid, he cauſed to be waſh'd with Roſe-water before he would enter it. The *Aſiatic*, *Syrian*, *Armenian*, *Jacobite*, *Georgian* and *Greek* Chriſtians ſtaid in *Jeruſalem* by the permiſſion of *Saladine*, who, leaving there a ſtrong Gariſon, took his way with great ſpeed towards *Tyre*, the defence whereof by common conſent, and with the joint Forces, was entruſted with *William*, who with the help of the *Sicilian* Fleet gave *Saladine* a repulſe; but when the news came, that that valiant Prince was going to lay Siege to *Antioch*, the Pope (who had labour'd with his utmoſt might to hinder the loſs of *Jeruſalem*) going to *Venice* to take care to get a Fleet together for the relief of it, died in his Journy at *Ferrara*, of grief for the calamity of the Chriſtians, having ſate in *S. Peter's* Chair, one year, ten months, and twenty five days.

GREGORY VIII.

GREGORY the Eight, a *Beneventan*, was created Pope by univerſal conſent, and immediately diſpatch'd away Nuncio's and ſent Letters to all Chriſtian Princes, exhorting them to joyn with him with their utmoſt Power to raiſe Forces both by Sea and Land, to attempt the recovery of *Jeruſalem* out of the hands of the Enemy; which great end the better to carry on, he went to *Piſa*, there to compoſe ſome differences between the *Piſans* and *Genoeſes*, with deſign to excite them (both being powerful by Sea) to that Holy Expedition: But whilſt this good Man perplex'd himſelf with overmuch care in this matter, he died at *Piſa*, the fifty ſeventh day of his Pontificate.

CLEMENT III.

CLEMENT the Third, a *Roman*, Son of *John*, Sirnam'd the *Scholar*, as ſoon as he was made Pope, ſent forth a Bull to encourage Men to go to the Holy War; for *Saladine* following the courſe of his Victories had taken twenty five Towns in the Principality of *Antioch*, and at laſt had by bribing the Patriarch rendred himſelf Maſter of *Antioch* itſelf. This gave the alarm to the Chriſtian Princes, ſo that now complying with the Pope's exhortations they raiſed Men; the chief of thoſe who engaged in the Expedition were the Emperor *Frederic*, *Philip* King of *France*, *Richard* King of *England*, and *Otho* Duke of *Burgundy*, beſide many Arch-biſhops and Biſhops who accompanied them. The *Venetians* and *Piſans* ſet forth their ſeveral Fleets well equipp'd; that of *Venice* was under the command of the Arch-Biſhop of *Ravenna*, and that of *Piſa* under their own Arch-biſhop: And *William* King of *Sicily*, having clear'd the Sea of Pirats, took care to ſupply them by the way out of *Puglia* and *Sicily* with all ſorts of Proviſions. Beſide theſe, the *Friſelanders*, *Danes* and *Flemings* with a Fleet of fifty Gallies landing on the *African* Shore, did the *Saracens* much miſchief, taking and plundering *Siluma*, one of their Cities. *Bela* alſo King of *Poland*, out of good Will to the Chriſtian Cauſe, made Peace with the *Hungarians*, that ſo the paſſage through that Country might be more eaſie and ſafe for thoſe, who were to take their way through it to this great Expedition. At laſt they all arriv'd at *Tyre*, and from thence they march'd unanimouſly to *Ptolemais* and beſieg'd it; where *Saladine* with a great Army came and beat up their Quarters, ſo that having the Enemy before them and behind, they were forc'd to fight. The Battel was long and bloody, and the Victory inclin'd to the Chriſtians ſide, when the miſchance of a Horſe ſlipping out of the hand of a common Soldier, gave them an occaſion of flight, our Men thinking that the *Saracens* had got the better: But *Geoffrey* of *Luſignan* who was left to guard the Camp, in the nick of time giving a briſk Onſet, ſhock'd their purſuit, and gave the Chriſtians an opportunity to rally. However, 'tis certain, the Chriſtians loſt two thouſand Men that day; beſide that, the Maſter of the Templers, and *Andrew* Earl of *Bremen* died afterward of their wounds. In the mean time, the Siege laſting long, the Chriſtians were reduc'd to ſo great a want of all things, that they were forc'd to procure Victuals of the Enemy: Which *Saladine* having notice of, laid hold on the opportunity, and deſerted his Camp, which he left without any guard, but furniſh'd with all manner of neceſſaries; which when the Chriſtians altogether in diſorder enter'd, and fell to plundering, *Saladine* return'd and kill'd many of them, e're they were aware, or prepared to receive him. Yet did not the Chriſtians quit this tedious and toilſome Siege, though to their other diſtreſſes this was added, that a Dyſentery rag'd in their Camp, of which Diſeaſe *Sybyl* the Wife of *Guy*, with four Sons which ſhe had by him, all died. While matters went thus in *Aſia*, *William* King of *Sicily* died at *Palermo*, not leaving behind him any lawful Heir, ſo that that Kingdom fell to the Church; but the Noblemen of the Iſland ſet up *Tancred* in his room, natural Son of *Roger* the *Norman*, by a Concubine, a Man of ſo great cowardize and ſloth, that *William* would not believe him to be *Roger*'s Baſtard. Pope *Clement*, not willing to loſe his right, ſends away an Army thither with all ſpeed, between whom and *Tancred* who oppoſed them, the Country was fill'd with ſlaughters and outrages. *Frederic* the Emperor was now, by the way of *Hungary* and *Thrace*, march'd with his Army as far as *Conſtantinople*, in order to advance againſt the Enemies of Chriſt, where *Iſaac* the Emperor of the *Greeks* fearing his Power, perſuaded him to croſs the *Boſphorus*, which he did; and *Clement* ſtill haſtening him on by Letters and Nuntio's, he ſate down before *Philomena*, a City of the *Turks*, and took it; then he waſted the Country about *Iconium*, and poſſeſs'd himſelf of all *Armenia minor*; but going one time into a rapid ſtream to waſh himſelf, without regarding the depth, he was drown'd; and his Soldiers, retreating towards *Antioch*, either were loſt or died, ſo that his Army came to nothing. The two Kings *Philip* and *Richard* having paſs'd the *Gallic* and *Tyrrhene* Seas, arriv'd together at *Meſſina*, after which, they met with different fortune: For *Philip* had a good Voyage, and coming ſafe to *Ptolemais*, brought great ſtrength and courage to the Chriſtian Forces; but *Richard* being born by contrary Winds to the Coaſt of *Cyprus*, and being by the *Greeks* denied the liberty of landing, he entred the Iſland by force, and conquering it, he plac'd therein Gariſons of his own, and then went to *Ptolemais*. That City was then ſtoutly attack'd, but *Saladine* had put in it ſo ſtrong a Gariſon, that with their frequent Sallies they did the Chriſtians much damage. Pope *Clement* now thought good to defer his Controverſie with *Tancred*, till the Chriſtians ſhould have more ſucceſs againſt the *Saracens*, and betook himſelf to regulate ſome Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, and with great ſeverity animadverted upon the ſcandalous Lives of Clergymen. Moreover, he built the Monaſtery of *St. Laurence* without the Walls, and with great expence repair'd the *Lateran* Palace, and adorn'd the Church there with excellent Moſaic work: Not long after dying, when he had been Pope three years and five months, and was buried in the *Lateran* Church with great Funeral pomp.

CELESTINE III.

CELESTINE the Third, a *Roman*, Son of *Peter*, Surnamed *Bubo*, ſucceeded to the Chair, who, grudging that *Tancred* ſhould enjoy the Kingdom of *Sicily*, ſecretly gets away *Conſtantia*, (Daughter to the late King *Roger*) out of a Nunnery at *Palermo*, and though ſhe was under the Vow of Chaſtity, yet granting her the Apoſtolical Diſpenſation, gives her to Wife to *Henry* VI. Son of *Frederic Barbaroſſa*, upon theſe terms: That he ſhould be empowred to attempt the recovery of both the *Sicilies*, which he ſhould enjoy in the name of a Dowry with his ſaid Wife, paying a yearly Tribute to the Pope, as Feudatary of the Church. *Henry* was ſo ſenſible of this extraordinary kindneſs of the Pope, that he reſtor'd to him *Tuſculum*, which he had before ſtrengthen'd with a good Gariſon, which *Celeſtine* immediately beſtowing upon the *Romans*, they ſo ſpoil'd and ruin'd it, that the very ſtones of the demoliſh'd City were brought to *Rome*, and many of them were for a long time to be ſeen in the *Campidoglio*, as Monuments of this great devaſtation. *Henry* and his Wife *Conſtantia* laying Siege to *Naples*, were forc'd to raiſe it by reaſon of a Plague which rag'd in their Army; but the Chriſtians who had now for two years beſieg'd *Ptolemais*, had it ſurrendred to them upon condition, that they (reſtoring that piece of our Lord's Croſs, which we before told you was loſt) ſhould march out freely, every Man with his own Cloaths; but when they could not make good the agreement, becauſe the piece of the ſaid Croſs was not to be found, *Richard* put many of the *Barbarians* to death. *Saladine* was ſo diſmay'd at theſe loſſes, that deſpairing of being able to defend them all, he diſmantled ſeveral Cities in that Region, and was upon the point of delivering up *Jeruſalem* itſelf, if it had not been for a difference which aroſe between *Philip* and *Richard* concerning Precedency; upon which, *Philip* pretending himſelf ſick, departed home from *Aſia*. *Richard* then apply'd himſelf more vigorouſly to the War, though at this time *Conrade* of *Montferrat* was aſſaſſinated in the Market-place of *Tyre*, by two *Saracen* Ruffians, who had bound themſelves under an Oath and Vow to deſtroy all the Enemies of their Religion after the ſame manner; but as they ran away they were caught and put to death with the moſt exquiſite Torments; and *Henry* Earl of *Champagne* taking Queen *Iſabel* to Wife, entred upon the Dominion of *Tyre*. *Richard* giving ſome fair words to *Guy* of *Luſignan*, perſuaded him to paſs over to him his Kingdom of *Jeruſalem*, (which the Kings of *England* ſtill put among their Titles,) and herewith taking courage, he march'd his Army to beleaguer the City of *Jeruſalem*; but *Saladine* in his Journy falling in with his Rear, forc'd him to a Battel in a very diſadvantageous place, in which, though he at laſt came off Conqueror, yet it was with great loſs of Men. *Saladine*, after this, encamp'd not far from *Bethlehem*, in a commodious place to intercept any manner of Proviſions, that might be ſent from *Egypt* to the Chriſtian Army as they ſhould lie before *Jeruſalem*; wherefore, and becauſe the Winter was coming on, *Richard* puts off his deſigns for this ſo neceſſary Siege, the Pope yet urging him, and continually ſupplying him with Money, and retreats to *Aſcalon*, which, as well as *Gaza*, he fortifies again; they having before been ſlighted by *Saladine*. In the mean time, the Sea-forces by degrees leave him, and the *Piſans*, ſailing into the *Adriatic*, ſeiz'd *Pola*, with intent to winter there; but the *Venetians* reinforcing their own Fleet, ſet upon 'em, took the place and ſack'd it, and drove out the *Piſans*, and had purſued them to extremity, if *Celeſtine*, out of care for the good of Chriſtendom, had not mediated between them. Spring now came on, and *Richard* was preparing for the Siege of *Jeruſalem*, when on a ſudden news was brought him, that King *Philip* had invaded *Normandy*, and intended to paſs into *England*, to procure that Kingdom for his Brother *John*. *Richard* then laid by thoſe Thoughts and ſtruck up a Peace with *Saladine* upon theſe Articles; That *Saladine* ſhould enjoy all but *Tyre* and *Ptolemais*; to which, with their Territories remaining in the hands of the Chriſtians, he ſhould give no moleſtation. *Richard* having thus ſetled Affairs there, returning into *Europe*, was taken by his Enemies, from whom he was ranſom'd with a vaſt ſum of Money, and at laſt arriving in *England*, he had many a Battel with the King of *France*, much againſt the Pope's mind, who was griev'd that ſo fierce a War ſhould be raiſed among Chriſtians at ſo unſeaſonable a time, when *Saladine* being now dead, it was thought to have been a very fit time to have recovered *Jeruſalem*. It is reported of that Illuſtrious Prince, that one Ceremony at his Funeral was this: His Shirt was hung upon the end of a Pike, and carried before the Corps, and one with a loud Voice cryed; "Behold, *Saladine* the mighty Lord of *Aſia*, "of all his Realms and of all his Wealth, takes no more than this along "with him. A ſpectacle well befitting ſo great a Man, to whom nothing was wanting, but the character of a Chriſtian, to have rendred him a moſt conſummate Prince. Upon the death of *Saladine*, as was ſaid before, *Celeſtine* had freſh hopes, that *Jeruſalem* might be regain'd, and ſo urg'd the Emperor *Henry*, who (*Tancred* being dead) ſucceeded to the Kingdom of *Sicily*, to undertake the Enterprize, that though he could not go in perſon, yet he ſent thither with great ſpeed a good Army under the Archbiſhop of *Mentz* and the Duke of *Saxony*. The King of *France* would have gone too, but that the *Saracens* who inhabited *Mauritania* [now the *Moors*] had croſs'd the *Streights*, and having taken the King of *Caſtile* priſoner, had poſſeſs'd themſelves of that part of *Spain* now call'd *Granado*; where the *French* fear'd they would hardly continue long quiet, but go near to infeſt the neighboring Nations, and therefore would not draw their Forces out of *Europe*. The *Germans* however arriving in *Aſia*, fortified *Berylus*, which had been deſerted by the *Saracens*, and rais'd their Siege from before *Joppa*, from whence when they were about to go to *Jeruſalem*, *Celeſtine* this moſt Holy Pope, who never let ſlip any opportunity for the recovery of the Holy Land, died, upon which they deſiſted. Notwithſtanding all theſe troubles, and theſe great charges of War, our Pope built two Palaces, one near S. *Peter*'s, the other near S. *John* in the *Lateran*, fit for the reception of Popes. The brazen Gates yet remaining in the *Lateran* over againſt the *Sancta Sanctorum*, which were made by his Order, and at his Charge. Moreover, he made *Viterbo* a City, raiſing the Church there to a Biſhops See, to which Dioceſe he added *Toſcanella* and *Centum-cellæ*. *Celeſtine* died, when he had been Pope ſix years, ſeven months and eleven days, to the great grief of all good Men, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church.

INNOCENT III.

INNOCENT the Third, born in *Anagni*, Son of *Traſimund* of the Family of the *Conti*, was, for his great Learning and many Virtues, made a Cardinal by *Celeſtine*, and upon his death was by general conſent choſen Pope. Which he had no ſooner arriv'd to, but he applied his Thoughts to the Holy War, and by Letters, Meſſengers, large Promiſes and Largeſſes endeavour'd to contain the *Germans* within the bounds of their Duty, who after the deceaſe of their Emperor *Henry* were all in a mutiny: But 'twas to no purpoſe, for they, diſdaining any Commander, left *Aſia*, and, to the extreme damage of the Chriſtian Cauſe, return'd to *Europe*; whereby thoſe of *Joppa* eſpecially ſuffered moſt, for being deſtitute of help, the *Turks* and *Saracens* came upon 'em, and while they were about to yield, they took the City by force and cut them all off, razing it to the ground. In *Germany* alſo all things ſeem'd to threaten confuſion, ſome of the Electors ſtickling hard for *Otho* Duke of *Saxony*, others ſtanding reſolutely for *Philip* a *German*, Duke of *Tuſcany*, who was left, by *Henry* upon his Death-bed, Guardian to his young Son: And to improve this miſchief to the height, the King of *France* took part with *Philip*, and the King of *England* was for *Otho*. *Innocent* then, to obviate the impending miſeries that muſt follow upon ſuch a ſtate of Affairs, confirms *Otho* in the Empire, as duly Elected by thoſe who had juſt Suffrage. *Philip* notwithſtanding would not lay down his Pretenſions, but ſtrengthen'd himſelf with good Gariſons both in *Tuſcany* in *Italy*, and *Schwaben* in *Germany*. The like with a more than Womanly Fortitude alſo did *Conſtantia*, the relict of *Henry*, in *Sicily*, on the behalf of her Son *Frederic* II. yet a Child, rendring the Frontier places defenſible againſt any Enemy. Though theſe Animoſities every day grew higher, yet *Innocent* ſtill thought of renewing the War in the Holy Land, and to that Expedition he ſtirr'd up *Boniface* Marqueſs of *Montferrat*, *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, *Henry* Count *St. Paul*, and *Lewis* of *Savoy*; who all arriving at *Venice*, could not perſuade that State to rig out their Fleet for the Service, till they had all promiſed to recover *Zara* for them, which again was revolted to the *Hungarians*; the Fleet then being fitted out, they firſt routed thoſe of *Trieſte*, who piratically infeſted the Sea, and then after a long Siege retook *Zara*. While theſe things were acted in the *Adriatic*, *Alexius* dethrones his Brother *Iſaac* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, (who had been a good Friend to the *Latins*) and putting out his Eyes throws him in priſon. But his young Son *Alexius* eſcap'd by flight to the Chriſtian Camp, and begs the aſſiſtance of thoſe Commanders for his Father againſt the Uſurper, which they conſented to give him, on condition, that, his end being atchiev'd, the *Greek* Church ſhould be ſubjected to the *Latin*, and that thirty thouſand Marks of Gold ſhould be paid for the damage, which *Emanuel* the late Emperor had done to the *French* and *Venetians*; and thus when they had agreed, they ſet ſail from *Zara*, and paſſing by *Candy*, that Iſland ſubmitted itſelf, which young *Alexius* beſtow'd upon his Kinſman *Boniface* of *Montferrat*. Hence they proceeded to *Conſtantinople*, which, while they beſieged by Sea and Land, *Theodore Laſcari* Son-in-law to *Alexius* endeavouring to ſally forth, was driven back, and the City after two days cloſe Siege was taken by Storm: *Alexius* got away in the night, leaving behind him a great quantity of Gold in the cuſtody of *Irene*, a Nun. *Iſaac* the Father, with his Son *Alexius*, then entred the City, but liv'd not long after; the Father dying of Sickneſs, and the Son being Poiſon'd. Upon this, *Boniface* of *Montferrat* gets the Kingdom of *Theſſaly*, but wanting Money he was perſuaded by *Baldwin* to ſell *Candy* to the *Venetians*, which he did, and having receiv'd a vaſt ſum for it, he beleaguer'd *Adrianople*, then oppreſt by the Uſurper; but this gave ſo much diſtaſte to the *Walachians*, who live on the further ſide of the *Danube*, and to the *Bulgarians*, that fearing the number of his Enemies, he took his way to *Conſtantinople*, intending to go meet the *Turkiſh* Sultan of *Iconium*, who having taken the City *Satellia* from the *Greeks*, did much and continually incommode the Chriſtians. *Innocent* encompaſs'd thus with Enemies, raiſed what Forces ſoever he could to reinforce from time to time our Armies: But when he heard that *Hilminoline* a *Saracen*, with a great Fleet had croſs'd the *Streights* into *Spain*, and had ſate down with his Army before *Toledo*, he publiſh'd a Bull, inciting all thoſe that could bear Arms to oppoſe this Torrent; whereupon, numbers of *French* men got together in order to aſſiſt the *Spaniards*: But perceiving they were not welcome to them, they return'd home; ſo that *Hilminoline* in a ſhort time over-run all *Spain* after a hoſtile manner, and came as far as *Arles* and *Avignon*, filling all places where he came with ſpoil and ſlaughter. This calamity rouzed the four Kings of *Spain*, that is, of *Caſtile*, *Aragon*, *Portugal* and *Navarre*, ſo that, joyning their Forces together, they ſet upon the *Saracens* and gave them a total rout, leaving nothing to 'em of what they had, but only *Granado*. At this time ſprung up an Hereſie at *Tholouſe*, which, by *Innocent*'s means, the bleſſed *Dominic* (who was afterwards made a Saint) repreſs'd, with the aid of *Simon Montfort*; for it had gone ſo far, that he had need of the help of the Arm of fleſh as well as of Arguments and Spiritual weapons. Mean time, *Otho* Emperor of the *Romans* was every where worſted by *Philip*, and at laſt beſieg'd by him in the City of *Cologn*, where he making in Perſon a ſucceſsleſs Sally, the Citizens ſhut him out, and ſurrendred to *Philip*, who yet did not long out-live the Action, being ſoon after treacherouſly made away by the Count *Palatine*. Upon his death, the Electors choſe the Duke of *Saxony* Emperor, nam'd *Otho* V. who the next year was Crown'd by *Innocent* at *Rome*. The *Venetians* now being very powerful at Sea, and the State having greater matters in hand, private Men had leave to make themſelves Maſters of what Iſlands they pleaſed, provided they continued their Allegiance to the Government, upon which, many Citizens entred upon ſeveral Iſles in the *Ionian* and *Ægæan* Seas, and at the publick charge were ſeiz'd *Corfu*, *Modone* and *Corone*. *Otho* having, as is aforeſaid, receiv'd the Imperial Crown of the Pope, againſt all Juſtice and Right, poſſeſſes himſelf of *Monteſiaſcone*, *Radicofano*, and ſeveral other Towns belonging to the Church, and then marches into the Kingdom of *Naples*, deſigning to take that Kingdom from *Frederic* II. who was young, and as yet under Guardians; which ſo anger'd the Pope, that having firſt admoniſh'd him without any effect, he excommunicated him at laſt, and depriv'd him of his Imperial Title; and the King of *Bohemia*, with the Archbiſhops of *Mentz* and *Triers*, by the perſuaſion of the Duke of *Auſtria*, and Landgrave of *Turingia*, chuſe *Frederick* King of *Sicily*, then in the twentieth year of his age, Emperor in his ſtead. *Otho* hereupon returns into *Germany*, to take care of his Paternal Eſtate, by which means *Innocent* had an opportunity to his mind, to recover whatſoever he had taken from the Church. Thoſe of *Candy* now rebelling againſt the *Venetians*, they were by force of Arms reduc'd *An. Dom.* 1214. and brought into the Conſtitution of a Colony, many Citizens being ſent to live among 'em, and to obſerve 'em. At this time *Frederic* II. came to *Rome* to receive the Imperial Diadem, but could not prevail with him to beſtow it upon him, ſo he return'd into *Germany*, and there was by the Arch-biſhop of *Mentz* Crown'd King of *Germany*, and then made an Alliance and League with the King of *France*; which added ſo much to the ſtrength of that King, that he invaded the Realm of *John* King of *England*, which ſuch ſucceſs, that *John* was fain to make uſe of Divine Aids as well as human Force, to reſiſt him, by making his Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland* tributary to the Church of *Rome*, in the payment of one hundred Marks yearly, which for ſome years after was performed. *Frederic* now in perſuit of *Otho*, who had been totally defeated by the King of *France*, takes in *Aquiſgrave*, and there, by Authority received from Pope *Innocent*, he ſets up the Standard of the Holy Croſs, promiſing ſpeedily to march to the Aſſiſtance of the Chriſtians againſt the *Saracens* in *Aſia*: Beſide, that he might ſhew with what a grateful mind he had received ſo many Benefits of the Holy See, he gave the Country of *Fondi* to the Church of *Rome*, and what had before been given and afterward uſurped from it, he reſtored. But the Pope, taking notice of the increaſe of the *Saracens* Power in *Aſia*, called a full Council in the *Lateran*, where were preſent the Patriarchs of *Jeruſalem* and *Conſtantinople*, ſeventy Arch-biſhops, four hundred Biſhops, twelve Abbats, eight hundred Priors of Convents, and the Ambaſſadors of the *Greek* and *Roman* Emperors, with thoſe of the Kings of *Jeruſalem*, *France*, *Spain*, *England* and *Cyprus*. Many things here came under debate, but nothing could be determined, becauſe the *Piſans* and *Genoeſes* were then at War by Sea, as thoſe of *Lombardy* were among themſelves at Land. The Pope therefore took a Journey thitherward to compoſe their Differences, but died in the way at *Perugia*, when he had been Pope eighteen years, ſeven months and ſixteen days. He was a Man moſt exact in his life, a proof of which is, that none of his Acts which approved or diſannulled any thing, were by any of his Succeſſors reverſed. He decreed many things for the reformation of Manners both in Clergy and Laity; and wrote Books concerning the Sacrament of the Euchariſt, the Sacrament of Baptiſm, and the unhappineſs of Mans condition; beſide that, he was wont to make Sermons upon remarkable Occaſions and Solemn days. He diſallowed a Book written by Abbat *Joachim*, which contained ſome Heterodox Opinions; and condemned the Errors of *Almericus* a Heretick, that, with ſome of his Followers, was burnt at *Paris*, who among other falſe Notions maintained, that thoſe Idea's which are in the Divine Mind, were created and did create others; whereas, according to S. *Auguſtin*, there is nothing in the Mind of God but what is Eternal and unchangeable: Beſide he ſaid, that to one who was in a ſtate of Grace no Sin is charged. Great ſatisfaction this Pope took in obſerving the Virtue and Learning of S. *Dominic*, who was Founder of the Order of Preaching Friars, and of S. *Francis* of *Aſſiſi*, who was Author of the Order of *Friers Minors*. 'Tis ſaid, that in his time lived *Gratian* who compiled the Decrees, and *Papias* the *Lombard*, who collected a Latin Alphabetical Dictionary; and indeed of *Papias* we have no reaſon to doubt, but for *Gratian*, ſome Authors place him in the times of Pope *Alexander* III. Now leſt you ſhould think, that *Innocent* in ſo long a Popedom neglected works of Piety, I muſt tell you, that, at his charge, the Hoſpital of the Holy Ghoſt was built and endow'd with ſo fair an Income as it is, for the relief of Pilgrims and ſick People, and for the Education of Fatherleſs Children and Foundlings. He adorned S. *Peter*'s Altar with Moſaic Work, as the repreſentation of him and his Cipher in the Arch do teſtifie. Moreover, he gave to each Church in *Rome* a Pound weight in Silver to make Chalices for Divine Service, and he repaired the Church of S. *Sixtus*, then almoſt falling with age. The Enemies of his good Name indeed ſay, that he did this, only for fear Men ſhould ſay, that he laid out all his Money in building of the *Torre de Conti*, which he erected for the honour of his Family. However that be, 'tis certain, he ſhewed himſelf in all the parts of his Life an excellent Man, and one worthy to be reckoned among the beſt Popes.

HONORIVS III.

HONORIVS the Third, a *Roman*, Son of one *Americ*, was by a general ſuffrage choſen Pope; to whom *Peter*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, coming with his Wife *Jole*, he was Crowned in the Church of S. *Laurence* without the Walls, and immediately *John Colonna*, a Cardinal, was pitch'd upon to go into *Aſia* with thoſe forces which Pope *Innocent* in his life-time had got together for that end. The Chriſtian Princes, by the perſuaſion of *Honorius*, now went to *Acon*, particularly *Andrew* King of *Hungary*, who to that purpoſe borrowed the *Venetian* Shipping, and, by way of requital, paſſed over to them the right to all that part of *Dalmatia*, which had been in the poſſeſſion of the Duke of *Auſtria*. With *Andrew* went *Henry*, Count of *Nevers*, and *Walter*, *Chamberlain* to the King of *France*. All theſe holding a Council of War, together with *John* King of *Jeruſalem*, they reſolved to lay Siege to *Damiata* in *Egypt*, and thither they went, in the month of *May* 1218. This City was once called *Æliopolis* from *Ælius Pertinax*, who environ'd it with a trebble Wall, and deriving a little Stream of the *Nile* about it made it ſtand in an Iſland. The Suburbs hereof were large and full of Merchandize, which the Chriſtian Soldiers plundered; but ſoon after, upon a Weſt-wind, the *Nile* roſe ſo high, that their Proviſions were ſpoiled, and they began to be in great want of Neceſſaries; eſpecially becauſe the *Soldan*, who was encamped not far off, had beſet all the paſſages to hinder any Supplies coming to them. The Chriſtians under this difficulty march their Army againſt the *Soldan*, who, in great fear, ſtreight leaves his Camp ſtor'd with plenty of all things and retreats, leaving them free to beſiege the Town which he at firſt came to relieve. *Cordirius* alſo, Son to the Great *Soldan*, deſpairing of being able to defend *Jeruſalem*, if the Chriſtians took *Damiata*, broke down the Walls of the City, and left nothing ſtanding but the Tower of *David* and the Temple of God; only he did not violate the Holy Sepulchre, moved (as we may ſuppoſe) by the Intreaties of the Chriſtians that inhabited thoſe places. While our Men attack'd *Damiata*, the *Soldan* returns with a much greater Army and pitches his Camp between *Cairo* and *Damiata*; from which he could not be provok'd to Battel either by the challenges or reproaches of our Men; which ſo enrag'd the *French*, that without any Order that ſet upon him and received great loſs. Notwithſtanding all this, the Siege was ſtill puſhed on, till after fifteen months lying before it, it was taken by the Chriſtians and ſack'd; ſo that the Soldiery was wonderfully enrich'd with the Spoil. In the mean time, *Honorius* had at *Rome* confirm'd the Order of S. *Dominic*, upon his requeſt, and had Anathematiz'd *Frederic* II. becauſe (after his Mother *Conſtantia* was dead, who was wont to reſtrain him within his duty) he came to *Rome*, and, without right or reaſon, laid waſte the Pope's Territories. Theſe Differences between the Pope and the Emperor being diſcovered to the *Soldan*, moved him to take the opportunity, and accordingly he raiſes a greater Army than ever he had before, thinking the Chriſtians would not now ſhew their heads; but Cardinal *John Colonna* rouſed them with his perſuaſions, ſo that they took up Arms and went to meet the Enemy at the *Nile*: Where when they were come, the *Soldan* feigned himſelf afraid to cope with them, putting it off till the time of the Increaſe of *Nile*, which followed a little while after; and the Cataracts of that River opened and ſo overflow'd the whole Country, that it was in no place leſs than a Cubit in depth. This ſo terrified the Chriſtians, that they were glad to accept of Peace, upon condition, that *Damiata* ſhould be re-delivered to the *Ægyptians*, the Priſoners on both ſides be diſcharged, and the piece of the Holy Croſs, then in the hands of thoſe *Barbarians*, ſhould be reſtored to the Chriſtians, and they ſuffered to retire quietly to *Acon* and *Tyre*. Thus was *Damiata*, which was begun to be inhabited by the Chriſtians upon the Feaſt of the Purification of the Bleſſed Virgin, delivered up according to the Articles, on the Birth-day of the ſame, *An. Dom.* 1221. In which year, the *Tartars*, a Nation of *Scythia*, (or, as others will have it, of the mountainous part of *India*) leaving their own Country, ravaged through *Parthia*, *Media*, *Perſia*, *Aſſyria*, and came as far as *Sarmatia*; where, not far from *Palus Mœotis*, driving out the old Inhabitants, they ſeated themſelves. The Chriſtian Commanders finding at this time that nothing was to be attempted in *Aſia*, the Enemy being too powerful, they, together with *John Colonna*, returned into *Italy*, and were ſoon followed by *John* King of *Jeruſalem*, who came to *Rome*, and was by the Pope kindly entertained and had large Preſents made to him. Afterward he gave his Daughter, which he had by his Wife *Jole*, in Marriage to the Emperor *Frederic*, though he was under the Pope's *Anathema*, and paſſed over all the Title he had by hereditary right to the Kingdom of *Jeruſalem* to him by way of Dowry. Hence it is, that all the ſucceedings Kings of *Sicily* and *Naples* uſe the Title of that Kingdom alſo, though they make their claim to it with words only, and not with Arms. *John* then took a Journey into *France*, where he had better luck than he was wont to have, for *Philip* King of *France* bequeathed, in his laſt Will, forty thouſand pounds in Silver to him, and as much to the grand Maſter of the Templers; and, with the help of this Money, he went into *Spain* to perform a Vow he had made to S. *James* of *Compoſtella*, where he took to Wife *Berengaria* Siſter to the King of *Spain*. This year died S. *Dominic*, that holy Man, at *Bononia*; and *Frederick* declared his Son *Henry*, a Boy but of ten years old, King of *Germany*. Our *Honorius*, being a little quiet from Foreign Troubles, repair'd the Church of S. *Laurence* without the Walls, that is called *Sancta-Sanctorum*, and the Church of S. *Vivian*; beſide, he built a Palace at *Caſa Marii*, and adorned the *Cibory* [Altar-Canopy or Covering] of S. *Peter* with excellent workmanſhip. He alſo compiled the Decretal Epiſtles, and confirmed the Order of S. *Francis*, who, within two years after, was canoniz'd by

Pope *Gregory*. After this bleſſed manner did *Honorius* lead his life, and as became a careful and a good Shepherd, and dying when he had been Pope ten years, ſeven months and thirteen days, he was buried in the Church of S. *Mary Maggiore*. After his death there happened ſo great Earthquakes, that in the *Monti Salvii* five thouſand perſons were ſlain by the falls of Houſes, and by the Stones that were thrown into the Vales from the tops of the Mountains.

GREGORY IX.

GREGORY IX, born at *Anagni*, a City of *Campania*, of the Family of the *Conti*, and Nephew to *Innocent* III. was created Pope at the *Settizonio*, [a place in *Rome* ſo called from the ſeven rows of Pillars there placed by the Emperor *Severus*.] Which was no ſooner done, but he diſpatch'd away monitory Letters to require *Frederic* the Emperor, that, under pain of an *Anathema*, he ſhould, with the firſt opportunity, march with his Army into *Aſia*, there to endeavour the recovery of the holy City. *Frederic* received the Admonition, and indeed promiſed ſo to do; accordingly giving out Orders, that all who had entred themſelves of the *Cruſado*, ſhould, by a day appointed, repair to *Brunduſium* with their Arms. Great numbers met there from all Countries, particularly from *Germany* came the Lantgrave of *Heſſe*, who (waiting there for the arrival of *Frederic* out of *Sicily*, where he ſtaid and prolonged the time, feigning himſelf ſick) died himſelf and a great number of his Soldiers; and aſſoon as the news of his death was brought to *Frederic*, he then immediately ſet ſail for *Brunduſium*, and ſeiz'd into his hands whatſoever the Lantgrave had left of value, which act plainly detected the fraudulence of his pretence. However he continued to make the World believe, that he was really intent upon the holy Expedition, and after the rapacious action aforeſaid upon the Goods of the Lantgrave, he hoiſted Sail and commanded the reſt that were there to follow him; but in a little while after returned to *Brunduſium*, forced (as he pretended) by the tempeſtuous Weather. The noiſe of this Expedition moved *John*, King of *Jeruſalem*, and *Berengaria* his Wife, (knowing well that they did what would be very acceptable to the Pope) to take a journey to *Bononia*, meaning to make uſe of ſome Shipping of the *Venetians* to carry him to *Aſia*; but the Pope underſtood well enough the tricks of *Ferdinand* and what little credit was to be given him, and leſt *John* ſhould quite loſe his labour and come for nothing, he conferred upon him the Government of the Exarchate of *Ravenna*, and ratified the Sentence of Excommunication, which was pronounced by his Predeceſſor *Honorius* III. againſt the Emperor *Frederic*, and had done worſe things againſt him, if himſelf had not been under ſome fearful apprehenſions of an Invaſion from the *Moors*, who were then out at Sea with a powerful Fleet, but were afterward vanquiſhed by *Ferdinand* of *Aragon* with ſo great loſs on their ſide, that in a ſhort time he poſſeſſed himſelf of *Majorca*, one of the Iſlands called the *Baleares*, and took the City *Valentia*, driving out the *Saracens* and compelling the Inhabitants to receive the Chriſtian Religion. At laſt yet *Frederic* was, what by the Intreaties of his Friends and the Threats of the Pope, wrought upon to begin his Voyage ſailing firſt to *Cyprus*, which afforded ſome hopes to the Chriſtian Soldiers that were in *Aſia*, whom he had ſo often deceived. But while he ſtaid there, ſending out Spies to bring him an account of the ſtrength of the *Soldan*'s Forces, his General *Rainaldo*, whom he had left in *Sicily*, invades the Pope's Territories and takes ſeveral Towns in the *Marca di Ancona*. The Pope was then at *Perugia*, deſigning to go to *Aſſiſi*, there in perſon to examine the truth of thoſe reports which had been, of Miracles, wrought by that holy Man, S. *Francis*; and when he found what he had heard concerning him to be really true, he canonized him with great ſolemnity, in the preſence of great numbers of Chriſtian People, who came together for that end. While theſe things were acting by the Pope, another Commander of the Emperors by ſiding with a faction ſeizes *Fuligno*, but was quickly expell'd by the Power of ſome good Men, who ſtood up for the holy Church. By this time *Frederic* was got to *Acon*, and from thence ſolicited the Pope earneſtly, by Letters and Meſſengers, to be abſolved by him, and promiſed if he could obtain his requeſt, to be ever after his moſt humble Servant: But the Pope being well aware of the crafty Temper of the Man, not only warns the Chriſtian Soldiers to have a care of him, as of one that was always plotting miſchief; but having raiſed an Army he ſends it under *John* King of *Jeruſalem* againſt *Rainaldo*, who then was haraſing the *Marca di Ancona*, and filled all places with rapine and devaſtation; and with other Forces under Cardinal *Colonna* he drove the Emperors Lieutenant, with his mercenary *Saracens*, out of S. *Germans*, and had all the places from thence to *Capua* delivered to him by ſurrender in a ſhort time. Theſe Succeſſes of the Pope ſo affrighted thoſe of *Umbria* and *Marca di Ancona*, who had ſerved under *Frederic*, that they deſerted whatſoever they held and retreated into *Naples*. In the mean time *Frederic* was returned from *Aſia* to *Brunduſium*, and being now very deſirous of Peace, offer'd his requeſts to the Pope, that he would pleaſe to take him into favour, to acknowledge him Emperor, and a true Feudatary of the Church for the Kingdom of *Sicily*. Which he at laſt obtained, but not till he had paid down one hundred and twenty thouſand ounces of Gold for the uſe of the Church of *Rome*, to make good the damages he had done it; and theſe Conditions he was forced to come to *Anagni* and there to implore of his Holineſs. While *Gregory* (as became a faithful Shepherd) was thus careful on all hands and was gone to *Perugia*, to ſettle matters in that City, then much diſordered by ſome baniſhed perſons who were newly returned, there aroſe a greater Sedition and Hereſie at *Rome* than had been known before: For *Hannibal* of the Family of the *Hannibali* joining with ſome Prieſts, was made uſe of to head the People of *Rome* in a Conſpiracy they carried on againſt the Church of God; but the Divine Vengeance ſpeedily put a ſtop to their wicked deſigns; for the River *Tiber* riſing over his Banks, did them much miſchief, and this was accompanied with ſo devouring a Plague, that hardly one man in ten was left alive. The Pope coming to *Rome*, behaved himſelf with wonderful Clemency, and forgave the People of *Rome* their fault, only putting *Hannibal* out of the Senate and convicting the Prieſts of their Hereſie, he brought them to recant their Error and to profeſs as true Chriſtians ought to do : Then turning his thoughts to adorning the City, he cauſed the old Common-ſhores to be cleanſed and repaired, and new ones to be made; at the ſame time yet conſulting not only the Ornament, but the Healthineſs of the place. Then leaving *Rome*, for his Healths ſake, at *Riete*, (as ſome will have it) he canonized S. *Dominic*, who founded the Order of Friers *Predicants*, and at *Spoleto* he did the ſame by S. *Antony*, who was born at *Liſbon*, but died at *Padua*, and was the ſecond, after S. *Francis*, head of the Order of *Minors*; hence he return'd to *Anagni*, and fortified the circumjacent Town, not a little apprehending the factious humour of the *Romans*, whoſe chief Senator, after the ancient manner, had propoſed a Law to be made and the People had paſſed it, that ſhould oblige all the Towns lying about *Rome* to pay a certain Tax to themſelves; the Pope hereupon fearleſly takes his Journey to *Rome*, (though the Cardinals diſſuaded him) meaning, to endeavour by admonition or correction, to bring the *Romans* off from theſe Inſolences : But when he found it ſignified nothing what he did, he departed to *Riete*, whither alſo came the Emperor *Frederic*; and they having diſcours'd about the preſent ſtate of Affairs, they both came to this reſolution, that they would join their Forces together, and unanimouſly march againſt the *Romans*. But at this time (as he had always uſed to do) *Frederic* put a trick upon the Pope; for returning himſelf into *Germany*, he left Order with his Men, that they ſhould in all junctures act as the *Romans* would have them. The Pope was much moved at this Treachery of his, and propoſed a good Reward to any *German* Soldiers, who would leave their Leaders and ſerve under him; whereupon ſo great Multitudes came over to his ſide, that the *Romans* dar'd not any where ſhew themſelves in open field againſt the Army of the Church. *Gregory* having by this means recovered the Patrimony of S. *Peter* and the *Contrada di' Sabini*, he ſlighted the Ambaſſadors of the *Soldan*, who came humbly to ſue for Peace, and ſent Friars of the Orders of S. *Francis* and S. *Dominic* throughout *Europe*, by their preaching to ſtir up the Chriſtians to the War againſt the *Saracens*, by whoſe means greater numbers were got together, than ever were before; and in the mean time that it was under debate who ſhould command this great Army, the Pope canonized *Elizabeth* Daughter to the King of *Hungary*, a moſt holy Woman and famous for the Miracles wrought by her. At length *Theobald*, King of *Navarre*, *Almeric Monfort*, *Henry* Count of *Bari* and *Campania*, with the Chriſtian Forces, paſſing through *Germany* and *Hungary*, arriv'd firſt at *Conſtantinople*, where croſſing the *Boſphorus*, they came at laſt to *Ptolemais*, laying the Country waſte far and near. But they were not long after ſet upon by a vaſt Army of the Enemy, and compelled to retreat defending themſelves from their perſuers for two days, and there loſt all their beſt Men. Thus in a ſhort time came this Expedition to nothing, which had coſt ſo much induſtry to be brought about, merely through the unskilfulneſs of the Commanders. The Pope was extreamly troubled at this Calamity, and reſolved to return to *Rome*, (at the earneſt inſtance of the Citizens) there to put up Prayers and Supplications to appeaſe the Divine Wrath, which the Sins of Mankind had provok'd; but his Intention was fruſtrated by *Peter Frangipani*, who being of the Imperial Faction, oppoſed him; ſo he left *Perugia* and went to *Viterbo*, to meet the Emperor with an Army, who (as intelligence was brought him) had already entred *Lombardy*, and without any juſt cauſe waſted the Territories of the Confederate Cities, and was about to lay Siege to ſome of them whoſe Forces were almoſt broken already, having received one miſchief upon the neck of another from *Ezelino*, who then Lorded it over *Padua*. This *Ezelino*, ſirnamed the *Roman*, was Grand-ſon to a *German* Commander, (who under *Otho* III. led an Army of his Country-men into *Italy*,) and now having a body of Men which he received of *Frederic*, under his command, procured to himſelf a great Dominion in the Country of *Lombardy*, bringing under his juriſdiction *Treviſo*, *Padua*, *Vincenza*, *Verona* and *Breſcia*; and *Frederic* not ſhewing any regard to the ſtipulations and agreements, which had theretofore been ratified between his Anceſtors and them, makes War upon the *Milaneſes* and the aſſociated Cities; and in a great Battel fought between them, at a place called *Nova Corte*, he overcame them with great loſs on their ſide; which put the Pope ſo much out of hopes of ſucceſs, that, upon hearing this ill news of the misfortune of his Friends and Allies, he began to think of retiring to *Rome*, though his coming thither was oppoſed by one *John Cincio*, a potent Citizen and Senator, whoſe intolerable arrogance yet was ſo curb'd by *James Capocio* another *Roman* Citizen, that the Pope was received into *Rome* with great ſplendor and magnificence. This was that *James*, whoſe name is yet to be ſeen and read in the little Chappel of Moſaick Work, which was built at his charge in the Church of S. *Mary Maggiore*, in which alſo was buried *Peter Capocio*, who was a Cardinal of the Church of *Rome*, and while he lived a bitter Enemy of this Schiſmatical Emperor *Frederic*, at whoſe expence the Hoſpital of S. *Anthony*, not far from the aforeſaid Church, and the College for Scholars at *Perugia*, (now called *la Sapientia*) was alſo erected. *Gregory*, having quieted the minds of Men in the City, again pronounces an *Anathema* againſt *Frederic*, and declares him to have forfeited his right to the Empire and deprives him of it; then he ſends for the Ambaſſadors of the States of *Venice* and *Genoa*, (between whom there was ſo great a quarrel, as, it was feared, a War would enſue,) to mediate their differences, which he did ſo effectually, as that he procur'd an Agreement between 'em to a Peace, upon condition, that without mutual conſent neither of the two States ſhould make Peace with the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*; that they ſhould be Enemies to the Enemies of each other, and join their Forces upon every occaſion for the common defence; and this Treaty to be in force and complied withal for nine years by them both, under pain of Excommunication to be denounced by the Pope upon the Infractor. About this time died *Baldwin*, who, upon the Death of *John*, had ſucceeded to the Empire of *Greece*, and made ſhift to hold it for two years; but with ſo great difficulty, by reaſon of his poor Treaſury, that he could hardly defend himſelf from his Enemies, being forced to deliver his Son for a Pledge to the *Venetian* Merchants for Money, that he had borrowed of them, and to make Money of the Lead that belong'd to the Churches; beſide he ſold to the *Venetians*, who were wealthy and able to purchaſe them, the Spear with which our Saviour Chriſt's Body was pierced, and the Sponge which was reach'd to him to drink out of. *Frederic* had a great ſpight at theſe *Venetians*, becauſe they were on the Pope's ſide, and drove them into their Mariſhes (where their City ſtands,) for ſecurity, and did them great damage; but in the mean while happened a general revolt of the Cities of *Lombardy*, by the procurement and inſtigation of *Gregory Monte-longo*, who was Legat at *Bononia*, and *Ferrara*, which had revolted before from the Pope to the Emperor was retaken by them, though *Salinguerra*, a valiant Commander, was in it and made a brave defence. As ſoon as it was taken, it was put into the hands of *Azo*, of the Houſe of *Eſte*, who was a conſiderable Perſon in this Enterprize, to be governed by him in the name of the Church, *An. Dom.* 1240. This ſo alarmed the Emperor, who was then at *Piſa*, that being under great uncertainty, whom to look upon as Friends to himſelf or Welwiſhers to the Pope, he divided firſt the Cities of *Italy* into two Factions, giving the name of *Guelphs* to thoſe who were for the Pope's Intereſt, and that of *Gibellines* to them that were for the Imperial. Theſe moſt pernicious names of Diſtinction, invented ſurely for the miſchief of Mankind, were firſt made uſe of at *Piſtoia*, where, when the Magiſtrates expell'd the *Panzatichi*, who were *Gibellines*, out of the City, there chanced to be two Brothers *Germans*, the one of which, whoſe name was *Guelph*, was for the Pope; the other for the Emperor, and his name was *Gibel*; from which theſe two Parties were diſcriminated by thoſe different appellations. On the other ſide, thoſe of *Arezzo* and *Sienna* drive out the *Guelphs*, whoſe Example being followed by many other Cities of *Italy*, gave occaſion and riſe to a worſe than Civil War. Several Cities after this revolted from the Pope as well in *Umbria* as in *Tuſcany*, and particularly the Citizens of *Viterbo* threw off their Obedience. The *Romans* alſo would fain have been doing the ſame thing, but that the Pope carrying the heads of the Apoſtles, SS. *Peter* and *Paul*, through the City in Proceſſion, moved the People to commiſerate the State of the Church, and then making a moſt excellent Oration in S. *Peter*'s Church, he had the power and good fortune by it to perſuade even the Seditious (who were ready to mutiny,) to take his part, and to liſt themſelves under the holy Croſs for the defence of the Church of God. Theſe, when ſome time after *Frederic* came in hoſtile manner before the Walls of *Rome*, gave him a repulſe, which ſo enraged him, that whatſoever Priſoners he had taken he put to death with divers tortures, and retired towards *Beneventum*, which City he took by force, ſacked and diſmantled it. Then returning by the *Via Latina*, with his heart full of Fury toward the City, by the way he plundered the Monaſtery of *Monte-Caſſino* and turned out the Monks; he deſtroyed alſo, with Fire and Sword, the City of *Sora*, formerly belonging to the *Samnites*, ſituate at the head of the River *Garigliano*, and pillaged any thing that belonged to the Templers wherever he could meet with it. He was ſo great a Lover of the *Saracens*, that he made uſe of them rather than any other People in his Wars, made Magiſtrates of them, and gave them a City for themſelves, which is called to this day *Nocera di Pagani*. He threatned the Brother of the King of *Tunis*, becauſe he was come as far as *Palermo* to receive the Sacrament of Baptiſm. By a ſudden Onſet he alſo made himſelf Maſter of *Ravenna*, which appertained to the Church. All which *Gregory* well conſidering, he appointed a Council to be holden in the *Lateran*, there to find out means to depoſe *Frederic*; but the Emperor had ſo beſet all the ways, that, with the help of the *Piſans*, he took ſeveral Cardinals and Prelates as they were travelling both by Sea and Land and caſt them into Priſon. Which ſo grieved the good Pope, that he lived not long after, dying when he had been Pope fourteen years and three months. There happened an Eclipſe of the Sun a little before his death, greater than ever was ſeen. *Raymund* of *Barcelona* flouriſhed in his time and aſſiſted him in compiling his Book of *Decretals*, whom many Authors ſo commend that nothing can be added to his Praiſe.

CELESTINE IV.

CELESTINE IV, a *Milaneſe*, of the Family of the *Caſtiglioni*, Biſhop of *Sabina*, famous in his time for his exemplary Life and great Learning, being very old and ſickly, was yet choſen Pope in the room of *Gregory*; but died on the eighteenth day of his Pontificate, and was buried in S. *Peter's* Church, to the great diſappointment of all Men, who hoped to ſee much better times under his Government. After his deceaſe the See was vacant twenty one months; for thoſe, who were then in the higheſt Authority in the Church of God, did not think good to elect any Man to the Popedom, ſo long as the Cardinals, which were taken by *Frederic*, were detained in priſon. During this vacancy of the Holy See, *Frederic* over-ran the *Marca di Ancona* and *Romagna*, as far as *Faenza* and *Bologna*, which, after ſome reſiſtance, he took by force, and transferred the Univerſity which was at *Bologna*, to *Padua*: And beſide, gave many Troubles and did great Miſchiefs to all thoſe that were look'd upon as Favourers of the Churches Cauſe. Then *Baldwin* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, deſpairing of managing the *Aſian* Affairs to any purpoſe, together with *Raymund* Earl of *Thoulouſe*, came into *Italy*, and what with his intreaties and by reaſon of the reſpect which *Frederic* (who was then at *Parma*) had for him, he procured, that the Cardinals, and other Eccleſiaſtical perſons who were kept under cuſtody by him, ſhould be ſet free; who in a little time after had a meeting at *Anagni*, to conſider of the Choice of a new Pope.

INNOCENT IV.

INNOCENT IV. called *Sinibaldo*, of the Family of the *Fieſchi*, Counts of *Lavagna*, was created Pope at *Anagni*; at the news of which, *Frederic* was not very well pleaſed; for he knew him to be a man of Reſolution and of a great Spirit, they having lived together familiarly for ſome time before, and he was very much afraid, he would call him to account for his paſt Actions: So that when ſome of his Friends were complementing him upon this occaſion, he is ſaid to have told them, that Cardinal *Sinibaldo* was indeed his ſpecial Friend, but now being made Pope, he was his bitter Enemy. *Innocent*, having put on the Pontifical Robes, comes to *Rome*, where by the way he is met by all the Nobility and Men of note and received with univerſal Acclamations, and having performed all the Ceremonies of the Conſecration and Coronation, which are uſual in ſuch caſes, he begins to diſcourſe of making Peace with *Frederic*, *Baldwin* alſo interpoſing his Authority to bring it about: But the buſineſs met with many delays, till after four months had been ſpent in negotiating, the reſult was this, that the Pope ſhould remove to the City of *Caſtellana*, and tarry there a while, till the Emperor came thither alſo, perſonally to treat about the Peace. But *Innocent* receiving certain information, that *Frederic* had laid ſnares and Ambuſhes for him both at *Rome* and in his way to that place, he made uſe of ſome Shipping of the *Genoeſes*, which then lay in the Port of *Civita-vecchia*, and with a proſperous gale arrived in *France*, where at *Lions* he was received very generouſly by all People and with great kindneſs, and at that City he appoints a Council to be holden, *An. Dom.* 1246. to which he cites the Emperor by Nuntios and Letters firſt, and at laſt by an Officer for the purpoſe, ſetting him under a penalty if he were diſobedient. In anſwer to this, the Emperor only ſends thither a Civilian of *Sinueſſa* to deſire of the Pope ſome longer time, promiſing ſhortly to begin his Journy thitherward; and ſo much time as was fit was allowed him. But his craft appearing, and that he only ſought an occaſion to ſcandalize and ruin the Pope, by univerſal conſent he was declared to be deprived of his Title to the Empire and his other Dominions. This *Frederic* took with ſo great indignation, that he commanded the Houſes and Palaces of ſome of Pope *Innocent*'s kinsfolks (who, by his advice, were removed from *Parma*, where their Eſtates lay, to *Piacenza*) to be pulled down, and then making a League with the Duke of *Burgundy*, he reſolved to go to *Lions*, and for that purpoſe he prepared a vaſt Retinue; with which he came as far as *Turin*, where news was brought him, that thoſe perſons who had been baniſhed from *Parma*, were returned, and having defeated their fellow-Citizens near the River *Taro*, he entred the City by force, and made great ſlaughter of the contrary party. This cauſed *Frederic* to break off the intended Journy and to return into *Italy*, where, gathering into one Army all his Forces which had been diſperſed through the whole Country, he made up a body of ſixty thouſand Men, and with theſe he marches to inveſt the City of *Parma*, which the aſſociated Cities being ſolicitous to defend, they put into it very great Reliefs under the command of the Pope's Legat; who, having with great obſtinacy ſuſtained the Siege for two years, at laſt making a bold Sally, when *Frederic* expected no ſuch thing, he utterly routed and deſtroyed his Army and made himſelf maſter of his Camp, which was plentifully ſtored with all manner of neceſſaries, becauſe *Frederic* had fortified it after the manner of a City with Out-works, deſigning when he ſhould have plundered and razed the City of *Parma*, againſt which he had conceived the utmoſt hatred, to build a City in the place where his Camp ſtood, (and where he had already coined pieces of Money called *Victorines*) and to name it, the City *Victoria*. According to ſome Authors, himſelf had much ado to eſcape to *Cremona* from this great defeat, in which he loſt a Crown of ineſtimable value, and ſeveral veſſels of Gold of huge weight; but he durſt not enter the Walls of *Cremona*, for fear of the *Cremoneſes*, many of whoſe fellow-Citizens had loſt their lives in that Engagement. *Innocent*, being advertiſed of this great blow given to the fortune of *Frederick*, *deric,* and that his heart was ſo broken with it, that he let himſelf looſe to all manner of voluptuouſneſs, and made himſelf Gardens of Pleaſure, where he kept a number of beautiful Women and Eunuchs, he took pity upon the Man, and diſmiſſing the Councils without farther proſecution of him, he diſpatch'd *Nuncios* through *France* and other Countries, to perſuade the people to engage in the Holy War, and to follow *Lewis* King of *France* who was preparing for an Expedition into *Aſia,* which he had promiſed and vow'd to perform when he lay under a great fit of ſickneſs. But the *Tartarians* put a ſtop for a while to this Journey, who with two numerous Bodies of Men had entred *Europe* and *Aſia*; where thoſe who invaded the later, having paſſed through the Countries of *Georgia* and *Armenia,* pierc'd as far as *Iconium,* then the Royal Seat of the Turkiſh Princes: The other party which entred *Europe,* under the conduct of one *Batto,* ravaged all through *Poland* and *Hungary,* and then turning toward the *Euxine* Sea, they depopulated the vaſt Realms of *Ruſſia* and *Gazaria.* At the ſame time the *Groſſoni,* a people of *Arabia,* by the inſtigation of the *Soldan* of *Babylon,* ſet upon the Templers and put them to flight, and without any trouble took *Jeruſalem,* which was before ſtripp'd of its Walls, putting the Chriſtians that were in it to the Sword, and diſhonouring our Saviour's Sepulchre with all manner of filthineſs. The tidings of which moved *Innocent* to urge King *Lewis* to haſten his march towards *Aſia,* with thoſe Forces he had already got together for that intent. He complied, and arrived at *Cyprus,* but it was at ſo unſeaſonable a time of the year, that he was forced to take up his Winter-quarters there; but as ſoon as Spring came on, he ſailed to *Damiata,* where he got the better of the *Soldan*'s Navy, and defeated his Land-forces, who would have hindred his coming on Shore, where he pitch'd his Camp for ſo long as till the reſt of his Troops could arrive from *Italy.* But theſe were very much retarded by the fury of *Frederic,* who, weaning himſelf after a while from the Pleaſures in which he had been immers'd, takes up his Arms again and fills the whole Country with confuſion, and compels ſeveral Cities in which were many Factious perſons, to throw off their ſubjection to the Pope; the chief of which were the Inhabitants of *Forli, Arimino, Vrbin,* and all the *Marca di Ancona:* In *Vmbria* none ſtood to their Allegiance but thoſe of *Todi, Perugia* and *Aſſiſi*; and in *Tuſcany* only the *Florentines* were on the Pope's ſide; who therefore were ſo harraſs'd by the Army of *Frederic,* that they were forced at laſt to baniſh ſo many of their fellow-Citizens as were of the *Guelphs* Faction: The *Bologneſes* had better luck, for giving Battel to *Henry,* one of *Frederic*'s Generals, they overthrew him and cut him to pieces. Some write, that 'twas at this time, that *Frederic* paſſing into *Sicily* died at *Palermo*; while others affirm, that he was taken deſperately ſick in *Puglia,* and when he began to recover, he was ſmothered to death with a Pillow by one *Manfred,* who was his natural Son, begotten upon a Noble-Woman his Concubine. Howſoever this was, 'tis certain, that ſome time before his death he had made *Manfred* Prince of *Tarento,* and had beſtowed upon him, beſide that Principality, many other Towns and Territories.

He left *Conrade* (whom he had by his Wife *Jole,* Daughter to *John* King of *Jeruſalem,*) Heir of all his Eſtates, but he was afterwards taken off by Poiſon, as was manifeſt, by the means of *Manfred*; having before ſeiz'd upon *Naples* and *Aquino,* and ſack'd them, much againſt the mind of the Pope, who vigorouſly oppoſed theſe proceedings, though in vain, in order to procure the peace of *Italy*, that he might have liberty to tranſport the *Italian* Soldiers to recruit the Army of King *Lewis*, then lying before *Damiata*. But *Damiata* was now taken, and *Robert* Earl of *Poictiers* coming with freſh Supplies from *France*, he marches from thence with his Army towards the City of *Pharamia*, whither the *Soldan*, apprehending his deſign, was already come with great Forces. There happened to be a River betwixt the two Armies, by reaſon whereof they could not join Battel, but they had frequent light Skirmiſhes, (both Generals keeping themſelves within their Camps) in one of which *Robert* raſhly venturing too far, was taken Priſoner by the Enemy. By this time, *Innocent* had almoſt extinguiſhed thoſe flames of War with which *Italy* had ſo long been conſumed, and intended to have returned to *Rome*, having firſt canonized *Edmund* Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*; but when he came to *Perugia*, he thought good to decline his Journy to *Rome*, underſtanding the Senate there arrogated to themſelves more Power than ſtood with the dignity of the Pope and Court of *Rome*; and there he canonized and enrolled among the holy Martyrs of *Verona*, a preaching Frier, who had been murthered by ſome Hereticks between *Milain* and *Como*; and the ſame honour he gave to S. *Staniſlaus* Biſhop of *Cracow*, who in his life-time was very famous for working Miracles. Hence he was invited by the Noblemen of the Kingdom of *Sicily*, and immediately departed for *Naples*, then newly repaired, where he died and was buried in S. *Laurence*'s Church, when he had been Pope fourteen years, ſix months, twelve days, juſt in the nick of time when he had hopes to have brought into his poſſeſſion all that Kingdom. It was by the Decree of this excellent Pope *Innocent*, that the Octave of the Nativity of the Bleſſed Virgin was commanded to be obſerved yearly in the Church of God as a Feſtival. He, with good advice, filled up the places in the College of Cardinals, which had been long vacant, with very worthy perſonages, and ordained, that when they rode abroad they ſhould always wear a red Hat, for an honourable diſtinction of the degree they held. Moreover this learned Pope, though raiſed to the higheſt dignity in the Church, compiled and publiſhed ſeveral things; for he compoſed the *Apparatus* [or Gloſſes] to the Decretals, which are of great uſe to the *Canoniſts*, becauſe they contain many nice diſquiſitions, which render the Text wonderfully plain: And he put forth another upon the Councils, which *Hoſtienſis* in his *Summa* calls the *Authenticks*. He wrote alſo a Book concerning the Juriſdiction of the Emperor and the Authority of the Pope, in anſwer to one *Peter*, ſirnamed *Vinca*, who aſſerted, that the Empire and every perſon and thing thereunto belonging, were abſolutely ſubject to the Emperor; to which Book *Innocent* afterwards gave the Title of his *Apologetick*. He was extreamly delighted with the converſation of Learned Men, whom alſo he remembred to prefer to dignities in the Church; particularly one *Hugo*, who wrote Comments and Concordances upon the holy Bible, a Perſon famous for his Learning and good Life, he advanced to be Cardinal of S. *Sabina*, which great promotion yet did not make him leave his former courſe of life, being a Frier of the Order of S. *Dominic*. In this Pope's Reign and by his Order, *Alexander* of the Order of Friers *Minors*, who was well in years when he took upon him a religious Habit, wrote a very copious ſum of Theology: By the procurement alſo of this Pope, and enabled by his bounty, *Bernardus Parmenſis* and *Compoſtellanus*, two very learned Men, at this time made publick their Works upon the Decretals, which they called *Apparatus*. *Innocent* had not long been dead, when he was followed by his Nephew *William*, whoſe Tomb is yet to be ſeen in the Church of S. *Laurence* without the Walls.

ALEXANDER IV.

ALEXANDER IV, a *Campanian*, born at *Anagni*, was choſen Pope in the room of *Innocent*, and ſtreight ſends monitory Letters to *Manfred*, that he ſhould not, at his peril, attempt any thing that might be a diminution of the honour of holy Church; for he calling to his aid the *Saracens* from *Nocera*, had ſupriſed the Church-Forces utterly unprepared, that were in *Foggia*, and either put them to the Sword or took them Priſoners; and pretending, that *Conradine* was dead, and that himſelf was his rightful Heir, he had taken upon him to rule as King. In the mean while, the Chriſtians, who, we told you, encamped near the City of *Pharamia*, were very much viſited with ſickneſs, and preſſed with want of Proviſions; that part of *Nile* being prepoſſeſs'd by the Enemy, by which they were wont to be ſupplied with neceſſaries: Beſide, that the Patriarch of *Jeruſalem* coming that way with ſome number of Ships, was made a Priſoner; ſo that *Lewis*, being afraid his Army ſhould be loſt by Famine, reſolved to return to *Damiata*, and in his way fell into a great Ambuſcade of the Enemy, by whom he was routed, and himſelf, with *Alphonſus*, Earl of *Poictiers*, and *Charles* Earl of *Anjou*, his Brothers-German, was taken Priſoner; but the *Soldan* not long after this great Victory was ſlain by his own Men, and he that ſucceeded in his ſtead, having *Damiata* ſurrendred to him and a good ſum of Money, diſcharged all the Chriſtians, and ſent them under ſafe conduct to *Ptolemais*; where *Lewis* ſent away his two Brothers into his own Country, and, by the perſuaſion of Pope *Alexander*, ſtaid in *Aſia*, till *Ceſarea*, *Joppa* and *Sidon*, (Cities, the Chriſtians had newly gained from the *Saracens*,) were well gariſoned with Men; which done, after having been ſix years on this Expedition, he returned home. While this was doing, Pope *Alexander*, having excommunicated *Manfred*, went to *Anagni*, and diſpatch'd away *Octavian*, a Cardinal of the Church of *Rome*, of the Family of the *Ubaldini*, to confirm the *Neapolitans* in their reſolutions againſt *Manfred*, aſſuring him, that he would, in a ſhort time, come in perſon with good ſuccours to the aid of them and thoſe of *Campania*; but *Manfred* not contenting himſelf to teize the *Neapolitans*, raiſed up alſo ſeveral Factions in *Tuſcany*, eſpecially at *Florence*, which City, upon the death of *Frederick*, had aſſerted its Liberty, where matters were carried ſo high, that they were fain, by a publick Edict, to call home thoſe perſons, who, in the days of *Frederic*, had been baniſhed for being *Guelphs*, that they might be rendred able to withſtand the contrivances of the *Gibellines*; by which means the *Guelphiſh* Faction got ſo great ſtrength in *Tuſcany*, that they harraſſed and did much miſchief by their Troops to thoſe of *Piſtoia*, *Arezzo*, *Piſa* and *Siena*, who had expelled their fellow-Citizens for being *Guelphs,* the *Luccheſes* more than any helping them againſt the *Piſans*, who had been certainly ruined by the *Florentines*, after they had been overcome by them at the River *Anſari*, but that they were afraid of thoſe of *Boggibonzi*. This Town ſtood in the Valley of *Helſa*, about twelve miles from *Siena*, very ſtrong by its natural ſituation and by artificial ſtrengths, of which the *Gibellines* made uſe againſt the *Guelphs*, as a Gariſon ; but it was at length taken and raſed ; and then the *Florentines*, being Enemies to *Manfred*, made offer to the Pope of their Aſſiſtance againſt him ; which ſo moved *Manfred,* that having been firſt declared King of *Palermo*, and with the help of ſome *Saracen* Auxiliaries, having in divers conflicts broken the Forces of the Pope under the command of the Legat, he ſent his Lievtenant General *Jordan* with one thouſand five hundred Horſe to the aid of the *Sieneſes* againſt the *Florentines*, who not long after were met by the *Sieneſes* near the River *Arbia*, and received ſo great an overthrow, that they were forced to leave their City to the will of the Enemy. The Pope yet ceaſed not to perſecute the tyrannical Lords, whereſoever they were, for when *Ecelino*, as was ſaid, had ſeized into his hands almoſt all the *Venetian* Territorries, and had laid Siege to *Mantua*, he immediately ſent away *Philip Fontaneſe*, Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna* to *Venice*, where having publiſhed the *Cruſado,* he got together a good Army, and with it drove *Anſelm*, *Ecelino*'s Nephew, out of *Padua* ; upon news whereof *Ecelino* raiſes his Siege from before *Mantua* and marches in great haſte to *Verona*, but underſtanding he could have no hopes of recovering *Padua*, he put to death, with divers torments, all the *Paduans* he had in his Camp, to the number of twelve thouſand. At this time the Friers *Minors*, who were ſent to *Breſcia*, had by their preaching perſuaded thoſe Citizens to recal the baniſhed *Guelphs* and to declare for the Church ; and the ſame ſucceſs they had had at *Piacenza* and *Cremona*, but that *Obert Pallavicino*, with the help of the *Gibellines*, had taken the Government into his ſole Power. Againſt him then and *Ecelino* his Confederate, the Pope's Legat, aſſiſted by the *Guelphs*, marches with his Army, but near *Gambara* he is defeated with great loſs, and himſelf with the Biſhop of *Breſcia* and the chief of the *Guelphiſh* Faction taken Priſoners, all whom, upon the ſurrender of *Breſcia*, *Ecelino* let go free, *An. Dom.* 1249. This Succeſs of *Ecelino* made the Legat Apoſtolick very fearful of the increaſe of his Power, and put him upon the deſign of bringing off *Obert Pallavicino* from his ſide ; which he effected by the means of *Boſo Donario*, a noble Citizen of *Cremona*, who laying before him the barbarous and deteſtable cruelty of *Ecelino*, wrought upon him to throw off his Alliance with him, and to enter into the League with the *Milaneſes* and *Mantuans*, and thoſe of the other confederate Cities. This much enraged *Ecelino*, ſeeing ſo many Enemies conſpiring againſt him, ſo that rendevouſing his Army at *Caſſano*, he from thence ravaged all the Country about *Milain,* provoking the Aſſociated Cities to give him Battel ; which they did, and not only vanquiſhed him, but took him Priſoner, and he died ſoon after at *Soncino* of a wound he had received. Upon his death all the Cities of *Lombardy* recovered their Liberty, and became obedient Sons of the Church ; and the Pope's Legat, who had procured to the *Paduans* their Freedom (as aforeſaid) to make an end of all the reliques of the War, drives out of *Treviſo*, and puts to death *Alberic* Brother to *Ecelino*, with his Wife and Children. Pope

Alexander having taken off theſe tyrannizing Lords, and put an end to ſo many great confuſions, ſet his mind upon renewing the War in *Aſia*; but, by reaſon of a Quarrel which happened between the *Genoeſes* and *Venetians*, this pious and neceſſary Expedition was laid aſide. The Chriſtians then inhabited *Ptolemais* and *Tyre*, two opulent and wealthy Cities; which were eſpecially peopled with *Genoeſe*, *Piſan* and *Venetian*, Merchants, who now for ſixty four years had engroſſed almoſt all the Trade both from Eaſt and Weſt. Theſe Merchants had their ſeveral Exchanges, their ſeveral Streets and Landing-places, and nothing was common to both the *Venetians* and *Genoeſes*, but the Churches; when a contention aroſe between them about the Monaſtery of *S. Saba*, which each City claimed to it ſelf alone. The Pope would fain have composed the difference, and ſent his Letters to both, willing that the Monaſtery ſhould be equally free to both Nations; but the *Genoeſes* having notice aforehand how the Pope intended to determine in the Caſe, by the favour of *Philip Monfort*, Prefect of the City, they excluded the *Venetians*, poſſeſs'd themſelves of the Monaſtery and fortified it. The *Venetians* hereupon unanimouſly leave the City, and, making a League with *Manfred* King of *Sicily*, raiſe Forces againſt the *Genoeſes*, and ſetting upon their Fleet, conſiſting of two Gallies, and twenty three great Ships, then in the Port of *Ptolemais*, they burn them, and, following their blow at the ſame time, make themſelves Maſters of the Monaſtery of *S. Saba*, which they demoliſhed. The *Genoeſes*, rather enraged than terrified at this diſaſter, fit out another Fleet, to encounter the *Venetians* at *Tyre*, but they, induſtriouſly avoiding a Battel, ſail towards the *Euxine*, and take *Selymbria* from the *Saracens* and plunder it; after which, both Nations recruiting their Forces, they ſteer for *Tyre*, the common Seat of War. The Pope, fearful of the fatal conſequences of this Contention, ſends for the Ambaſſadors of both Countries, and makes himſelf a Mediator of Peace; which was welnigh agreed to, when news comes, that the *Venetians* with their Allies, the *Piſans*, had, between *Tyre* and *Ptolemais*, routed the *Genoeſes*, taking and ſinking twenty five of their Ships; that thereupon the Victors were retreated to *Ptolemais*, and the vanquiſhed were fled to *Tyre*; that all the Edifices of the *Genoeſes* at *Ptolemais* were pull'd down, all their Merchandizes ſeiz'd as ſpoil, and the Citizens of that Nation expell'd the place. This havock, made by the *Venetians*, ſo highly diſpleaſed the Pope, that he would not admit their Ambaſſador to Audience, till they had ſet free all the *Genoeſe* Priſoners they had taken. Neither did this Calamity come alone to be the ſubject of the Pope's care, for *Baldwin*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, (during whoſe proſperity, there ſeemed yet to be ſome hopes left of recovering the Holy-land) was about to quit that City: For *Michael Palæologus*, who, by the laſt Will of *Theodore Laſcari*, was left Guardian to his two Sons, did the *Latins* all the miſchief that lay in his power, driving out of *Achaia William* a *Frenchman*, and teizing *Baldwin* with Seditions at home and open War abroad; who afterward going toward the *Euxine* Shore, in order to ſecure it from the Enemy, the Citizens of *Conſtantinople* in the mean time, at midnight, let *Michael Palæologus* into the City; upon news whereof, *Baldwin* and the Patriarch *Pantaleo* retire from *Pontus* into *Europe*, and lay by all thoughts of War. *Palæologus* having thus rid himſelf of his Competitor and Enemy, murders his two Pupils, and aſſumes the Empire, which after having been poſſeſſed by the *Latins* forty eight years, now was transferred to the *Greeks*. In the mean time, *Octavian* Cardinal *Ubaldino* returned to the Pope, without having had any great luck in his Negotiation at *Naples*, and the Pope, having firſt at *Anagni* canonized S. *Clara* a *Franciſcan* Nun, went to *Viterbo*, to endeavour a Peace between the *Venetians* and *Genoeſes*; in which Affair he met ſo much trouble and ſo many delays, that he died for grief in the ſeventh year of his Pontificate, and was honourably interred in S. *Laurence*'s Church. The See was then vacant three months and four days. The Life of this Pope is certainly much commended by all Writers, he being ſaid to have been bountiful and kind to all, but eſpecially to the poor Religious; to whom the great love he bore cauſed him to condemn, by a perpetual Edict, ſome Books, written by *William de ſancto Amore*, againſt that ſort of Poverty, wherein the wicked Fellow aſſerted, that thoſe who took upon them Religious Habits to live by the Alms of other Men, were not capable of Salvation. He alſo publickly burnt another abominable Book, in which the Author affirmed, that a State of Grace was not to be obtained by the Law of the Goſpel, but by the Law of the Spirit; which Opinion, he ſaid, was taken out of the Writings of Abbat *Joachim*. This Book was called by thoſe of that Sect, the *Eternal Goſpel*. It was *Alexander*'s cuſtom, when he got leiſure from publick Affairs, to buſie himſelf about ſomewhat that ſavoured of Learning, for he compiled Decretal Epiſtles, and gave ſuch countenance to Learned Men, that he promoted ſeveral of them to Cardinalates, particularly *Henry* Cardinal of *Oſtia*, a good Divine and an excellent Lawyer. He was alſo very liberal and munificent to *Bartholomew*, a Canoniſt of *Breſcia*, who wrote much upon the Decretals; by which, and by his extraordinary Abilities and Sanctity, he got great renown. By this means moreover, the vaulted Church near that of S. *Agnes*, which had in old time been dedicated to *Bacchus*, was made capable of Divine Worſhip; and the Inſcription in the Porch of the Church of S. *Conſtance* ſhews, that the Altar there was conſecrated by him.

VRBAN IV.

VRBAN IV. born at *Troyes* in *France*, Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, was made Pope, and immediately liſted *French* Soldiers to aſſiſt him againſt *Manfredus*, who infeſted the Patrimony of S. *Peter*; for fear of whom, *Jordanes*, General of *Manfredus*'s Forces in *Tuſcany* againſt the *Guelphs*, was recalled to *Naples*, which gave ſome breathing time to the *Guelphs*, eſpecially thoſe of *Florence* and *Lucca*, who had been by the *Gibellines* mark'd out for deſtruction. *Lombardy* was alſo plagued with the like Seditions, *Hubert Pallavicino* carrying on now the Intereſts of the *Gibelline* Faction, and perſecuting the adverſe party; though before, by his Policy and moderate Behaviour to both ſides, he had got the Command of *Breſcia* by an univerſal conſent. But the Citizens of *Modena* and *Reggio*, inſtigated by thoſe of *Ferrara* and *Bononia*, fearing leſt *Pallavicino* ſhould overpower them all at laſt, revolted to the Pope's ſide, and turned the *Gibellines* out of their Cities, giving their Goods and effects to the *Florentines*, who had been baniſhed for *Guelphiſm*, by this means adding great ſtrength to their Faction. And thus went matters in *Lombardy*, the Pope ſtill earneſtly endeavouring a Peace. At *Conſtantinople*, the *Venetians* attempted to dethrone *Palæologus* and had done it, but for his Friends and Aſſociates the *Genoeſe*; this gave him the greater Power, ſo that having taken *Malvaſia*, he eaſily made reſiſtance againſt the *Venetians* and *William* Prince of *Achaia*. The Pope was now intent upon ſending a Legat to procure a Peace betwixt the *Venetians* and *Genoeſe*, when *Manfredus*, with a new body of *Saracens*, ſeizes *la Marca*, the Inhabitants being before inclined to a Rebellion. The Pope therefore ſends the ſame Legat to *France*, with order to make uſe of all manner of Promiſes and Intreaties, to perſuade thoſe *French*, who had taken upon them the Croiſado, (who had been informed of the thing before-hand) to haſten their march thither; they preſently, under the conduct of *Guy*, Biſhop of *Auxerre*, deſcend into *Italy*, and vanquiſhing *Pallavicino* at *Breſcia*, without meeting any reſiſtance, they come to *Viterbo*; from whence a little while after, having received the Popes Bleſſing, continuing their march through *Umbria* and the Country of *Tagliacozzo*, they beat the *Saracens*, who had fled thither and perſued them as far as the *Garigliano*. At the ſame time, the *Romans*, though they medled not with the Patrimony of the Church, yet they threw off obedience to the Pope, making what Magiſtrates they pleaſed; particularly, contrary to cuſtom, by which they were to chuſe for a Senator a *Roman* only, they elected one *Brancaleon* of *Bononia*, a man of a great Spirit and very politick, to this high dignity, and promiſed him great advantages; but this humour held not long, for they ſoon altered their minds and clap'd him in Priſon. This affront gave great offence to the *Bononians*, who, ſeizing ſeveral *Romans*, proteſted they would never releaſe them, but upon the delivery of their *Brancaleon*; which ſo wrought upon the cautious *Romans*, that they not only releaſed him, but reſtored him to his former Dignity; ſetting up alſo another

Court of men, choſen out of every Ward in the City, (whom they cal *Bandereſc*) to whom they committed the power of Life and Death. The Pope plainly found the reaſon of this inſolence of the *Romans* to be, that they obſerved how *Manfredus* had plagued him, and that he was not able to help himſelf. That he might therefore at laſt free the Church from the Tyranny of theſe men, he ſent Legats to *Lewis* King of *France*, to exhort him, that he would, aſſoon as poſſible, ſend his Couſin and Son-in-law, *Charles* Earl of *Provence* and *Anjou*, with an Army into *Italy*; he intending, upon the expulſion of *Manfredus*, to create him King of both *Sicilies*. And this, no doubt, he had done, (ſo high were his reſentments of the Ingratitude of *Manfredus*) if Sickneſs had not taken him off from buſineſs. Which yet was brought to paſs, as is ſuppoſed, by the following Pope. To the times of this Pope is aſcribed *Albertus* a High *German*, of the Order of Friers Predicant, who, for the vaſtneſs of his Learning, got the Sirname of *Magnus*. He commented upon all the Works of *Ariſtotle* and explained the Chriſtian Religion with great acuteneſs; beſide he wrote very accurately concerning the ſecrets of Nature: He alſo put forth a Book *de Coæquævis*, wherein he endeavours to ſhew the little difference between Theology and Natural Philoſophy. He expounded a great part of the Holy Bible, and illuſtrated the Goſpel and S. *Paul's* Epiſtles with excellent Notes. He began alſo a Body of Divinity, but lived not to perfect it. He was a man ſo modeſt and ſo much given to Study, that he refuſed the Biſhoprick of *Ratisbon*, becauſe it could not be managed without trouble and force of Arms, ſometimes, as the Biſhops of *Germany* are wont to do. He lived therefore in private at *Cologn*, reading only ſome publick Lectures. At length, he died there in the eightieth year of his Age, leaving behind him many Scholars for the good of Poſterity, eſpecially *Thomas Aquinas*, who, leaving his Country and his noble kindred (for he derived his pedigree from the Counts of *Apulia*) and going to *Cologn*, made ſuch progreſs in learning, that after a few years he was made Profeſſor at *Paris*; where he publiſhed four Books upon the Sentences, and wrote a Book againſt *William de S. Amour*, a pernicious Fellow: Beſide, he put forth two Books, one *de qualitate & eſſentiis*, the other *de principiis naturæ*. At laſt, he was ſent for to *Rome* by *Urban*, but refuſing thoſe promotions that were offered him, he gave himſelf wholly to Reading and Writing. He ſet up a School at *Rome*, and, at the deſire of *Urban*, he wrote ſeveral Pieces, and ran through almoſt all Natural and Moral Philoſophy with Commentaries, and ſet forth a Book *contra Gentiles*. He expounded the Book of *Job*, and compiled the *Catena aurea*. He compoſed alſo an Office for the Sacrament, in which moſt of the Types of the old Teſtament are explained. But to return to *Urban*, he died at *Perugia* in the third year, firſt month and fourth day of his Pontificate, and was buried in the Cathedral Church. The See then was vacant five months.

CLEMENT IV.

CLEMENT the Fourth, formerly called *Guido di Fulcodio*, a *Narbonneſe* of S. *Giles's*, deſerved to be made Pope upon the account of his Holineſs and Learning. For he being, without queſtion, the beſt Lawyer in *France*, and pleading with great integrity in the Kings Court, was created (after the death of his Wife, by whom he had ſeveral Children) firſt of all Biſhop of *Foix*, and then of *Narbonne*, and laſt of all a Cardinal by univerſal conſent, and afterward was choſen out as the only perſon, whoſe Sincerity and Authority had qualified him, to compoſe the Differences between *Henry* King of *England*, and *Simon* Earl of *Montford*. As ſoon as he was choſen Pope, ſome ſay, he put on the Habit of a Religious *Mendicant*, and went *incognito* to *Perugia*. Thither immediately went the Cardinals, who having choſen him Pope, though in his abſence, attended upon him pompouſly to *Viterbo*. In the mean time, *Charles*, whom, we ſaid, Pope *Urban* ſent for to beſtow a Kingdom upon him, ſet out from *Marſeilles* with thirty Ships, and coming up the *Tiber* arrived at *Rome*, where he lived as a Senator ſo long by the Pope's order, till certain Cardinals, ſent from his Holineſs, came and declared him King of *Jeruſalem* and *Sicily* in the Palace of S. *Giovanni Laterano* : Upon this condition, that *Charles* ſhould take an Oath to pay the See of *Rome* a yearly acknowledgment of forty thouſand Crowns ; and ſhould not accept of the *Roman* Empire, though it were freely offered him. For there was, at that time, a great conteſt for the Empire between *Alphonſus*, King of *Caſtile*, (who thought to procure it by Power and Bribery too) and the Earl of *Cornwal*, the King of *Englands* Brother, whom the Electors had no great thoughts of. Therefore, leſt *Manfred* ſhould hope to make uſe of any Quarrels between *Alphonſus* and *Charles*, (to whom many people ſaid the Empire was juſtly due, though he could not challenge it) the Pope animated *Charles* againſt *Manfred*, as one that ſtood in Contempt of the *Roman* Church. For *Charles*'s Army was already gotten over the *Alpes* into *Italy*, and, marching through *Romagnia*, had brought all the Soldiers of the *Guelphs* party as far as *Rome*. From whence *Charles* removed, and took not only *Ceperano*, having beaten *Manfred*'s Men, but poſted himſelf in a Foreſt near *Caſſino*, which *Manfred* himſelf had undertaken to defend: Although his Mind was ſoon altered, and he reſolved to march for *Benevento*, to expect the Enemy in plain and ſpacious places, becauſe his Forces conſiſted moſt of Cavalry. Thither alſo did *Charles* move; and aſſoon as he had an opportunity to fight, did not decline it, though his Soldiers were very weary with travelling. Each of them encouraged their Men to engage; but *Charles* coming to relieve a Troop of his Soldiers, that were like to be worſted, more eagerly than uſually, (as in ſuch caſes Military Men will do) he was knock'd down from his Horſe, at which the Enemy was ſo tranſported, that *Manfred* fought careleſly out of rank and file, and was killed; which, when *Charles* appeared again ſtraight turned the fortune of the Day. For many of his Men that ran away were killed, and a great many others taken priſoners. *Charles*, having obtained ſo great a Victory, removes to *Benevento* and marches into it, upon a voluntary ſurrender of the Citizens. From thence he went to ſtorm *Nocera di Pagani*, where both the modern and the ancient *Saracens* lived, but ſent his *Mareſchal* into *Tuſcany* with five hundred Horſe, to reſtore the *Guelphs* that had been baniſhed, into their own Cities. He was no ſooner come thither, but the *Gibellines* departed on their own accord, and he without any diſturbance appointed a certain number of Officers at *Florence*, which the neighbouring Natives call the Heads of the *Guelphian* Faction. Thence he moved againſt the *Sienneſes*, and made all the *Gibellines* of *Tuſcany*, but eſpecially thoſe of *Piſa*, his Enemies, becauſe he beſieged *Poggibonci*, which the *Gibellines* ſtoutly defended. Now when *Charles* had reduced both Kingdoms, all but *Nocera di Pagani*, he at laſt grants the *Saracens* a Peace, and let them live in *Italy* upon their own terms, as they thought good. But he himſelf with his Army, upon the Popes invitation, went to *Viterbo*, where *Henry*, baniſhed by his Brother, the King of *Caſtile*, was not long before arrived. Of whom, when the Pope had heard *Charles*'s good Character, he was ſo pleaſed with it, that he preſented him with great things and made him a Senator of the City. After that, *Charles* marched into *Tuſcany* to ſuppreſs the *Gibellines*, who deſired *Corradin* a young Man, Nephew to *Conrad* of *Schwaben*, to come into *Italy* and aſſiſt them againſt the *Guelphs*. And ſeeing that he could not take *Poggibonci* by ſtorm, becauſe it was ſo well fortified both by Art and Nature, he reſolved to ſtarve it into a Surrender. And by that means after a long Siege he took it; and then going againſt them of *Piſa*, he took a Town of theirs called *Mutrone*, and gave it to the State of *Lucca*. *Charles* at that time was very likely to have done greater things, but that his Friends called him haſtily home to his Kingdom, by reaſon of ſome factious People that favoured *Corradin*'s Party, but moſt of all upon account of the *Saracens*, whom he preſently ſhut up in the ſtrong Caſtles of *Nocera di Pagani*, that he might go the ſafer againſt *Corradin*, whom the Men of *Piſa* endeavoured to make their King, after they had not only laid waſte all the Country of *Lucca*, but conquered and killed *Charles*'s Mareſchal at *Arezzo*, by the aſſiſtance, chiefly, of *Guido* of *Montferrat*, and all the *Gibellin* faction on that ſide the *Alpes*. They ſay, that as the Youth paſſed through the Country near *Viterbo*, toward the Kingdom, the Pope, who pitied his condition, ſaid in a Prophetick manner, that *Corradin* himſelf was led as a Sacrifice to the ſlaughter. So then he went toward *Rome*, and was met at *Ponte Molle* by *Henry* the *Senator*, together with all the people of *Rome*, who ſaluted him with loud Acclamations by the name of *Emperor*; but whether out of Fear or Love, is not well known. At *Rome* he diſmiſſed *Guido* of *Montferrat*, and went himſelf in all haſte with his Army toward the Kingdom; where, when he underſtood, how *Charles* had taken poſſeſſion of *Campagna di Roma*, and the great Road that goes through it, he turned away to the Mountains called *Tagliacocii*, towards *Marſi*. And there he encamped firſt of all near the Lake, being fortified with an old Conduit, and ruinated Houſes. *Charles* moved that way too, and pitched his Tents within ten Furlongs of him at the entrance of an hollow Vale; where, by advice of *Alardus* a *Neapolitan*, who had been an old Soldier in *Germany*, he immediately ſent away part of his Army, under the command of his Marſhal, who was diſguiſed like a King, with a deſign to provoke the Enemy. But he himſelf ſtaid the mean while, on the other ſide the Hill, with his beſt Soldiers in Ambuſcade, to wait for a good occaſion of doing his buſineſs effectually. They fought full three whole hours without being able to ſay, who ſhould have the better of it, till the Marſhal, who behaved himſelf very bravely, fell. At whoſe death the *French* began to give back, but the *Germans* were more briſk than ever, and perſued them to all places without any manner of Order. By this means, *Charles* came upon them in a confuſion, routed them and made them run for't, but killed a great many of them as they fled. *Henry* the Senator was taken priſoner at *Rieti*, whilſt he endeavoured to eſcape; and *Corradin* being diſcovered at the ſame time with the Duke of *Auſtria*, as he attempted to paſs the *Tiber* and go by Boat into *Tuſcany*, was brought to *Charles* and put to death: As the Pope, we told you, had propheſied it would ſhortly happen. *Charles* therefore, in the year 1268, after ſo great a Victory, and having made himſelf abſolute in the Kingdom, went to *Rome*, where for ſome time he acted as a Senator by the Popes permiſſion, and ſent his Marſhal into *Tuſcany*: By whoſe pains and care a Peace was made between the *Sienneſes* and *Florentines*. But when *Clement* was dead, in the third year of his Popedom, and twenty firſt day, and buried at *Viterbo*, there was ſuch a Difference preſently, not only between the People of *Italy*, whom the godly Pope, whilſt alive, had, by his Authority and awe upon them, kept within ſome kind of meaſures, but alſo between the Cardinals, about the choice of a new Pope, that the See was void two years. At that time *Charles*, who took a great care, that the Church ſhould not ſuffer any damage, went with part of his Army into *Tuſcany*, where he took *Poggibonci*, (the place from whence all the Troubles ſprang) and ſold it to the *Florentines*. Which when they had demoliſhed, they built a new Town, not far from thence upon a plain ground, which they call *Poggibonci*, whereas the old one was called anciently *Bonitium*. After that, *Charles* made Peace with thoſe of *Piſa*, whoſe Ships he deſigned to make uſe of to carry him over into *Africk*, and then intended to return to his Kingdom, leaving *Ruffus* Earl of *Auguillara*, with part of his Army in *Tuſcany*, to keep the *Tuſcans* in Order. In the mean time, King *Lewis* ſet ſail from *Marſeilles*, and was followed by three of his Sons, *Theobald* King of *Navarre*, and the Earl of *Champaigne*, together with an Apoſtolical Legat. All theſe arrived at *Tunis* the very ſame time, and, beſieging the City, they deſtroyed all that ever came to their hands. But a Plague happening in the Camp, which for a good while had infected none but Inconſiderable perſons, at laſt took off *Lewis* with his youngeſt Son and the Legat. To him ſucceeded *Philp* his Son, who began now to think of going homeward. But *Charles* King of *Sicily* coming up to him, a Peace was concluded, upon this Condition, that the Captives on both ſides ſhould be diſmiſſed, and the King of the Country ſhould pay *Charles* a certain Tribute, beſides that he ſhould ſuffer the Goſpel to be freely preached in his Dominions. Then they brought back their Forces into *Sicily*, where the King of *Navarre*, and the Earl of *Campaigne* died at *Trapani*; which made *Philip* and *Charles*, partly for Devotion, and partly to avoid the Contagion, ſail to *Civitavecchia*, with an intent to go from thence by Land to *Viterbo*, where the Cardinals were ſtill contending about the choice of a Pope. For they imagined, that the Preſence of two ſuch great Kings would certainly move them, (as it did) to make *Theobald* of *Piacenza*, Arch-deacon of *Liege*, Pope, though he were abſent. But to return to *Clement*: Whoſe Life is to be commended in every part of it for his Learning, Piety, Religion, Humanity, Charity to his Neighbours, and to all poor Chriſtians. As for the Goods of the Church, he diſtributed them at ſuch a rate, and with ſuch diſcretion, that *he, in all probability*, gave more to God, than to his own Relations. He had two Daughters by his Wiſe, who died before his Popedom: To one of which, that lived in a Nunnery, he gave thirty pounds of ſmall Deniers *Tournois*; and to the other, who was married to a man of an equal Fortune, he ordered a portion of three hundred pounds *Tournois*, upon condition, ſhe ſhould never ask for one penny more. He had beſides a Nephew that was a Clergy-man, whom he found to have three Prebends, (for ſo they call Canonries) he forced him to take his choice, which of them he would keep and leave the other two. But when his Friends were urgent with him, not only to let his Nephew enjoy what he already had, but give him more and greater preferments, the Holy Man made anſwer, (I would the Popes in our time would follow his Example,) that he would obey God, and not fleſh and blood: “That it was God's pleaſure, what belonged to the Church ſhould be beſtowed to charitable uſes; nor was he worthy to be S. *Peter*'s Succeſſor, who would give more to his Kindred than to Religion and to Chriſt. But whilſt he was at *Viterbo*, and news was daily brought to him, that *Eduigeth*, a Dutcheſs of *Poland*, who had been long dead, was in very great eſteem for her Miracles, he canonized her. He was alſo wonderfully ſatisfied with the Doctrine of *Bonaventure*, General of the Order of Friers Minors, who at that time wrote gravely and copiouſly upon the firſt, ſecond, third and fourth Books of the Sentences. Now the Holy Man, dying with ſuch a Character, was much lamented and miſſed by all men. And hence aroſe the Controverſie among the Cardinals, to find out a fit Perſon to ſucceed *Clement*.

GREGORY X.

GREGORY the Tenth, formerly called *Theobald*, an *Italian*, born at *Piacenza*, and Arch-deacon of *Liege*, was created Pope by the College of Cardinals at *Viterbo*, whilſt he was in *Aſia*. For at that time, when *Lewis* went into *Africa*, *Edward*, Son to the King of *England*, ſailed from *England* into *Aſia* with a great Navy, in order to regain the holy Land. But ſtaying ſo long at *Ptolemais*, till *Lewis*, King of *France*, came out of *Africa* with Victory, according to his promiſe, he was ſtabbed in three places by one *Arſacida*, a Companion of his, as he was alone in his Bed-chamber, and by the Aſſiſtance of another friend of his, very hardly eſcaped his Death.

For that other perſon held the Ruffians hand ſo long, till the People of the Houſe came in, who tare treacherous *Arſacida* to pieces, and dragged him out of the Room. But *Edward*, when he was cured of his Wounds, had a great eſteem for his friend *Theobald*, becauſe he continually animated all Chriſtian Kings and Princes againſt the *Saracens*; and when he went to *Rome*, in order to receive the Popedom, being ſent for by the Cardinals, who had elected him, he aſſiſted him extraordinarily with a Ship, with Money, and a ſplendid equipage, eſpecially at that time, when *Henry* a Youth, and Son of *Richard*, Earl of *Cornwal*, who was lately dead, came to *Viterbo* to ſee *Clement*. After whoſe death, ſtaying there for ſome time, he was unluckily killed. For *Guido Monford*, who went to the Cathedral Church along with *Philip* the *French* King, to hear Divine Service, ſtabbed him before the Altar; becauſe his Father *Simon* had been baſely murthered in *England* by *Richard*. He having revenged his Fathers Death in this manner, he eſcaped with ſafety to *Ruffus*, Governor of *Tuſcany*. Not long after, *Philip* and *Charles*, vexed at ſuch an Indignity went from *Viterbo*, the former into *France*, the later into *Puglia*. For having made a Peace with the *Saracens*, *Charles* went along with *Theobald* (who was arrived at *Siponto*, now called *Manfredonia*) as far as *Ceperano*. From thence his Holineſs travelled through *Marſi*, and *Sabini* to *Viterbo*; where he was received by the Cardinals with all Reſpect and Honour imaginable, and, being crowned with the Pontifical Diadem, he was inveſted with all the Power that Chriſt left *Peter*. When that was done, and that he had ſetled the Popedom from a time, he was deſirous to make Peace between the *Genoeſes* and the *Venetians*. For theſe two States had been engaged one with another in great and bloody Conflicts for a long time. Upon this account, *Philip* King of *France*, who tarried at *Cremona*, was prevail'd upon by the Pope to ſend for the *Genoeſe* and *Venetian* Embaſſadors, and made a Peace between them for five years, that they might all go in one body againſt the *Saracens*. *Italy* was now quiet, when the beginning of an univerſal diſorder aroſe from the *Venetians* new Exaction. For they made a Law, that no one ſhould ſail in the *Adriatick*, eſpecially from *Pola* to *Venice*, unleſs they paid a Gabel according to the value of their Goods. But the *Bologneſes* could not endure this, as being at that time maſters of a great part of *Romagna*, and therefore for three years together they fought the *Venetians* with great variety of Fortune. At laſt, being tired out they accepted of a Peace upon this Condition, that they ſhould demoliſh a Caſtle, which they had built upon the very mouth of *Po*, that they ſhould have free leave to carry out ſome Goods that were there, and then the *Venetians* ſhould have the ſole cuſtody of the Mouth of the River *Po*. They alſo of *Ancona* were offended, that the *Venetians* challenged the abſolute dominion of the *Adriatick* Sea, and exacted Cuſtom from thoſe that ſailed there. And hereof they complained to the Pope, whoſe Duty it is, to ſee that no new Taxes be impoſed. He therefore immediately commanded the *Venetians*, to take off that Impoſition, who anſwered him in theſe very words, "That the Pope did not perfectly underſtand the matter, and "that when he did, he would be able to judge better of it. *Gregory* could not make an end of this matter to his mind, becauſe he was forced to go to the Council, which he had called at *Lyons*. Thither alſo went to *Palæologus* Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, with a great Retinue; and made the *Greeks* comply and ſubſcribe to the Opinion of the Church of *Rome* now the thirteenth time, they having ſo often revolted. Nay farther, ſome Noblemen of *Tartary* were induced by his Authority to receive Baptiſm. Mean time, the Weſtern Empire being vacant, *Rodulphus*, Earl of *Aſia* is made Emperor by the Electors, upon condition, that he would go to *Rome* the next year, to receive the Crown there. But the *Florentines*, who were *Guelphs*, immediately turned out their Countrymen the *Gibellines*, though they had been reſtored to their Country by *Gregory*, as he went into *France*. At which the Pope was ſo angry, that he interdicted them from all benefit of the Law, and was very near doing the ſame thing by the *Bologneſes*, who had ejected the *Lamberteſcii* and the *Aſinelli*, *Gibellines* of noble Families: But they ſuffered for it not long after. For when they went to fight againſt the *Forleſes*, that had kindly entertained ſome perſons whom they had baniſhed; 'tis ſaid, eight thouſand of the *Bologneſes* were ſlain at one Sally from the Town. Upon which miſfortune, ſome Cities of *Romagna* grew confident, and immediately revolted from the *Bologneſes* themſelves. Eſpecially *Cervia*, from whence they received a great Revenue out of Salt. But *Gregory*, when he had diſmiſſed the Council at *Lyons*, in which many Decrees were made, relating to the choice of Popes, the expedition againſt the *Saracens*, the union of the *Greek* and *Latin* Churches, and the peace of Chriſtendom, as he was going into *Italy*, he met *Alphonſo* King of *Caſtile* at *Bellocondoro*, complaining grievouſly that he had given the Empire to *Rodulphus*. But when the Pope had ſatisfied him, he reſigned all his right to *Rodulphus*. The Pope was very kindly received by all the *Italians* as he travelled through *Tuſcany*, but ſhunned the *Florentines* on purpoſe, and went to *Arezzo*, leſt they ſhould have prevailed with him to take off his Interdiction. At *Arezzo* he died in the fourth year, ſecond month and tenth day of his Pontificate, and there he was buried. He was a Man of an extraordinary Reputation through his whole Life, for Prudence in the conduct of his Affairs; for Courage and greatneſs of Mind, that made him contemn Money and all mean things; for Humanity, Clemency, Bounty to poor Chriſtians, and thoſe eſpecially that fled for refuge into the boſom of the Apoſtolick See.

INNOCENT V.

INNOCENT V. formerly called *Peter* of *Tarantaiſe*, a *Burgundian*, a *Dominican*, a man very learned in holy Writ, was created Pope at *Arezzo*, in the year of our Lord 1275. From thence not long after he went to *Rome*, where he was crown'd in S. *Peter*'s Church, and from that time immediately applyed himſelf to compoſe the Affairs of *Italy*. To this end he ſent Legats (men of great Authority) to command, not only the People of *Tuſcany*, (who conſpired the Ruin of thoſe of *Piſa*) but alſo the *Genoeſes* and *Venetians* (who were mortal Enemies) to quit their Arms. Aſſiſtant to them were the Embaſſadors of *Charles*, the King, by whoſe Awe over them he hoped to have his buſineſs done more to his mind. The People of *Tuſcany* did as he commanded them, but eſpecially the *Florentines*, whom the Pope abſolv'd from *Gregory*'s Interdiction upon that very ſcore: But the *Genoeſes* and *Venetians*, whoſe hatred was more inveterate, were ſtill in Arms, perpetually butchering each other: And yet *Innocent*, if he had lived a little longer, had brought them over to his Opinion; ſo zealous he was in that matter. But he died in the ſixth Month and ſecond Day of his Pontificate, and was buried in the *Lateran* Church. Now the ſecular Prieſts had no great reaſon to lament his Death, by reaſon of a Sentence which he gave juſt before he dy'd. For when there aroſe a Diſpute between the Prieſts of the Cathedral Church, and the Friers Preachers, concerning the Body of *Clement* the Fourth, (for each Order deſired to have the diſpoſing of it.) he gave Judgment that it ought to be committed to the Friers; for, he ſaid, his Holineſs had order'd it ſo whilſt he was alive. Upon this account *Innocent* was a little maligned; but was otherwiſe a very good Man, and ſuch a Perſon, from whom thoſe of his time might have expected all the good imaginable.

ADRIAN V.

ADRIAN the fifth, a *Genoeſe*, of the Family of the *Fliſci*, before called *Othobon*, was made Pope at *Rome* in the Court of the *Lateran*. He was *Innocent* the Fourth's Nephew; by whom he was created Cardinal-Deacon of S. *Adrian*, and ſent Legat into *England*, with plenary Power to compoſe the Differences between that King and his Barons. Aſſoon as he was made Pope, he preſently went to *Viterbo*, and invites *Rodulphus*, the Emperor, into *Italy*, to leſſen the power of *Charles*, who at that time did what he pleas'd at *Rome*. But *Rodulphus*, being engaged in the *Bohemian* War, could not comply with *Adrian*. In the mean time, *Charles* was very cautious to avoid the envy of the World, and turn'd all the ſtreſs of the War upon *Achaia*, ſo to make his way toward the Empire of *Conſtantinople*. But *Adrian* dying in the fortieth day of his Pontificate, he came back into *Italy*; This Pope died at *Viterbo*, before his Conſecration, and was buried in a Convent of Freres Minors. He had an Intention, not only more and more to ſecure the Churches Patrimony from Tyrants, but alſo to reduce *Gregory*'s Decree, for the Choice of a Pope, into a better Method, not totally to aboliſh it. But Death obſtructed his Endeavours, and withſtood the greatneſs of his Mind. The See at that time was vacant 28 Days.

JOHN XXII.

JOHN the Twenty Second, a *Spaniard*, born at *Liſbon*, and formerly call'd *Peter*, was made Pope, being then Biſhop of *Fraſcati*. Who, though he were reckon'd a very learned Man, yet by his Ignorance in Buſineſs, and the enevenneſs of his Converſation, he did the Popedom more Injury than Honour, or Kindneſs. For he did many things that argued him to be guilty of Folly and Levity; and does not deſerve Commendations, unleſs it be for one thing; and that was, that he aſſiſted young Scholars, eſpecially the poorer ſort, with Money and Preferments. At that time, the *Venitians* infeſted thoſe of *Ancona*, for Merchandizing in *Dalmatia*, without paying any Cuſtom to the *Venetians*: And yet the Pope himſelf, to whom they were tributary, did not protect them as he ſhould have done; but only ſeemed ready, with his Tongue, to ſay what he was too much a Coward ever to do. Nevertheleſs, the *Anconeſes*, though the Pope would not aid them, took Courage, and made a Sally ſo briskly, that they rais'd the Siege, and drave the *Venetians* from the Town a good way, not without conſiderable damage to them. By the advice of *John Cajetan* (who govern'd all things at that time, for that he was made Pope by his aſſiſtance, and the Votes he procured) he ſent Legats to *Palæologus*, and all the Weſtern Kings, to exhort 'em, in his Name, that they would make Peace with one another, and bend their Forces againſt the *Saracens*, and other Enemies of Chriſtianity. The Man was a Fool to promiſe himſelf a long Life, and to tell every body he ſhould live a great while; becauſe every body knew his Life and Converſation, he was ſo immodeſt, and ſo ſottiſh. But behold, as he was betraying his Folly to all that were about him, a certain new Apartment, that he had built in the Palace at *Viterbo*, fell down all of the ſudden, and he was found among the Wood and the ſtones, ſeven days after the fall of it; but he received the Sacraments of the Church, and then died in the eighth Month of his Pontificate, and was buried at *Viterbo*. He was a Man (as I ſaid before) of great Learning, but little Prudence. For he wrote many Tracts in his Life, eſpecially certain Rules relating to Phyſick; for he was counted a very good Phyſician. He wrote alſo another Book, and called it *Theſaurus Pauperum*, or the *Poors Treaſure*, and ſet out *Problems*, in imitation of *Ariſtotle*. But 'tis certain, however it comes to be ſo, that many very learned Men are not at all fit for buſineſs. Yet I need not doubt how it comes to paſs, but take it rather for a greater Wonder, if he, that takes pleaſure in Contemplation, ſhould apply his Mind to Worldly Affairs too.

NICOLAS III.

NICOLAS the Third, a *Roman*, of the Family of the *Urſini*, formerly called *John Cajetan*, was made Pope at laſt, after the Election had been ſix Months in ſuſpence, by reaſon of a great conteſt that was among the Cardinals. Now, the King of *Sicily*, as Senator, had the Guard of the Conclave at that time, and was very urgent with 'em to chuſe a *French*-man. But *Nicolas*, aſſoon as he began his Reign, in the year 1278, reſolved to reſtrain *Charles's* Power, and took from him the Lieutenancy of *Tuſcany*; becauſe, he ſaid, that *Rodulphus* took it ill, and would not perform his promiſe of going upon the Expedition into the holy Land, upon any other terms, ſince *Tuſcany* was reckon'd to belong to the Juriſdiction of the Empire. Though the Pope gain'd this point, yet he reduced *Romagna* and *Bologna* it ſelf together with the Exarchate of *Ravenna*, which at that time were under the Emperor, and made 'em ſubject to himſelf. And thither he ſent *Bertholdus*, his Nephew, who was declared Earl of *Romagna*. He ſent alſo another Nephew of his, that was a Cardinal, called *Latinus*, Legat into *Tuſcany*; who reſtored the *Gibellins* in all places, and impoſed what Officers he pleaſed upon the Citizens at *Florence*, and in other parts of *Tuſcany*. But the Office of Senator, which uſed to be granted, or committed, to Kings and Princes, he diſcharg'd himſelf alone. He would not ſee the Embaſſadors from the *Venetians* (who at that time haraſs'd the *Anconeſes* with War), and ſo they departed. But he called 'em back, and chid 'em ſeverely; nay, he threaten'd to ruin their City, if they did not deſiſt from beſieging, or ſtorming, *Ancona*. At length, when both parties had ſuffered great Inconveniencies, they made a Peace upon equal terms. But this Pope had a mind to create two Kings, both of the *Urſini*; one of *Tuſcany*, and the other of *Lombardy*, to keep thoſe *Germans* (on the one ſide) that inhabit part of the *Alps*, and the *French*, on the other ſide, that lived in *Sicily* and *Naples*, within their bounds. And, to bring it about, he perſuaded *Peter*, King of *Aragon*, to endeavour the Recovery of the Kingdom of *Sicily*, upon the Title of his Wife *Conſtantia*, who was Heir to it: And he took the Honour of Senator from *Charles*, and conferr'd it upon himſelf; and made an everlaſting Edict, that no King or Prince ſhould dare to ſue for, or bear, that Office. This *Nicolas* (as Authors ſay) was a Man of great courage and conduct, and ſo perfect in his life and converſation, that in *Italian* he was commonly called *il Compoſto*, or *Compoſto*. He was a lover and admirer of learned men, eſpecially of thoſe Who had Learning mingled with Prudence and Religion. But he was reckon'd impartial to all, in the diſtribution of Honours and Dignities. For, at his firſt Ordination, he choſe a Biſhop for *Alba*, out of the Order of *Minors*; for *Oſtia* and *Porto*, out of the Preachers. The Biſhops of *Paleſtrina* and *Treſcat* were Seculars. He created, beſides theſe, two Cardinal-Prieſts, that is to ſay, *Gerard*, with the Title of the Twelve Apoſtles, and *Jerome* of the Order of *Minors*, with the Title of S. *Pudentiana*. To them he added two Deacons, that is to ſay, *Jordan* his Brother, Cardinal of *St. Euſtachius*, a Man of much Learning and Innocence; and *James Colonna* of *St. Maries in Via lata*, a Perſon of great Religion and Gravity. He adorn'd and enlarged the Papal Palace with other Buildings, which he added. For he built a convenient Houſe nigh *St. Peters*, (part of which is yet to be ſeen,) which *Nicholas* V. afterward Repair'd, to his great coſt and charge. He alſo walled St. *Peter's* Garden, which now they call *Belvedere*. Then he Repair'd St. *Peter's* Church, when it was ready to fall with Age, and adorn'd it with the Pictures of the Popes. The ſame he did in St. *Pauls*. More than all this, he advanced Divine Worſhip moſt wonderſully, by encreaſing the Number of Canons, and the proviſion that had been made for thoſe who ſerv'd in Churches. Again, He divided the Eccleſiaſtick Orders, and appointed to each their Offices. He likewiſe aſſigned every one his Lodging, that even Strangers might know where every Officer, eſpecially the chief Officer was to be found. He finiſh'd the *Lateran* Palace, which was begun before by *Adrian* V. He built the *Sancta Sanctorum* from the Ground, after the firſt Chapel was ruin'd with Age, and beautified the Church itſelf with Moſaic Work (as it is now to be ſeen) and with plaiſter of Marble. And thither he removed the Apoſtles Heads, till he had repair'd St. *John's* Church at his own charge. But when it was finiſh'd, he preſently brought 'em back again, in Silver Caſes made by his Order, and, attended by all the People, he laid 'em up in the Chapel which was built for the purpoſe. The ſame day he conſecrated the Church, that is, upon the 8th of *July*. Some Hiſtorians ſay, That no one ever ſaid Maſs with more Devotion than he; for, during the performance of that Divine Office, he conſtantly wept. He was very Godly, and ſuch a Lover of the Friers Minors, for that they contemn'd the World, that he has explain'd many Doubts relating to that Order in a decretal Epiſtle. When Churches were void, there never was a Pope that took care ſooner or more deliberately, giving them to the beſt and the fitteſt Men he could find For he firſt look'd into a Man's Life and his Learning, and *then gave immediately* the vacant Sees to thoſe that he thought worthy. For he uſed to ſay, Delays were dangerous; becauſe there were ſuch Men in the World, as would commit Sacriledge with all their hearts. He could not endure Proctors and Attornies, becauſe they liv'd upon the blood of the poor, and thoſe that went to Law, but hated them as a Plague; in which he imitated *Gregory* X. and *John* XXI. But becauſe there were great Corruptions among Magiſtrates in all places, he ordained, That all Offices ſhould be Annual only; and if any one durſt to hold 'em longer, he was liable to an *Anathema*, from which he could not be abſolved but by the Pope himſelf. Beſides theſe things, he did a great many more for the good of the Clergy, and all Chriſtian People, as it appears in his Titles; and yet he had his Faults too, amidſt all theſe Commendations. For he is ſaid to have loved his Relations to ſuch a degree, as that he would rob others to give to them: For he took Caſtles from ſome Noble *Romans*, and gave 'em to his own Kindred, particularly that at *Soriano*; where, though he was a moſt temperate Man, yet he died ſuddenly in the Third Year, Eighth month, and Fifteenth day of his Pontificate, whoſe death, they ſay, ſome body foretold, by a preſage drawn from the ſwelling of the River *Tyber*, for it roſe ſo high, that it was four Feet and more above the

Altar in round St. *Maries*. But his body was carried to *Rome*, and buried in the Chapel of St. *Nicolas*, which he built in St. *Peter's*, in a Marble Tomb beautified with Fret-work, ſtill to be ſeen, *An. Dom.* 1280. eight days after the Aſſumption. This year *Charles* the King adorned and honoured the body of St. *Magdalen*, which St. *Maximin* had buried in a Town of his own Name, with a more magnificent Tomb, and a bigger Chapel, and laid her head up in a Silver Caſe ſeparate from her body. Now they ſay, that upon the death of *Nicolas*, the See was vacant Five Months: For whil'ſt the Cardinals were about electing a new Pope at *Viterbo*, and one *Richard*, of the Family of the *Hannibals*, (which is the beſt in all *Rome*) was Keeper of the Conclave, two Cardinals of the *Urſini* did what they could to hinder the Election, unleſs *Richard*, who was a bitter Enemy to the *Urſini*, would reſtore *Urſus*, Nephew to *Nicolas* lately deceaſed, to his Government of *Viterbo*, from which he had not long before depoſed him. For this Reaſon, the people of *Viterbo* ſided with *Richard*, went into the Conclave, took the Cardinals, and impriſoned them; which when it was known at Rome, the ſame Faction of the *Hannibals* drove the *Urſini* out of the City, who ſeeing they were forced to depart, went all together, and retired as far as *Præneſte*. So that the *French* Cardinals (when the *Urſini* were gone) out-voted the *Italians*, and choſe a *French* Pope about the end of the Fifth Month.

MARTIN IV.

MARTIN IV. formerly called *Simon*, a Cardinal Prieſt of St. *Cæcilie*, and a *French* Man of *Tours*, being choſen Pope, would not be crown'd at *Viterbo*, becauſe he thought that City ought not to be made uſe of in ſuch a ſolemn Occaſion, where the Cardinals had been ſo aſſaulted, and therefore he went to *Orvieto*, an ancient City, and there performed all the Ceremonies upon the 23d day of *March*, and upon *Eaſter* day he created ſix Cardinals, of which the Earl of *Milan* had the Title of St. *Marcellin* and *Peter*, and *Benedict Cajetanus* had that of St. *Nicolas* in the Priſon. As for *Charles* the King, he not only received him kindly when he came to him, but he gave him his former Senatorian Dignity, whereof *Nicolas* had deprived him. But this was not ſo very well approved on by all, becauſe it was like to cauſe great Tumults in the City, the *Urſini* being now reſtored, and the *Hannibali* baniſhed; for *Charles* was a mighty Enemy to the *Urſini*, for *Nicolas*'s ſake, whom he hated. For this Reaſon *John*, to revenge the Injuries done to his Brother *Latinus*, and in defence of the Dignity conferred upon himſelf by the *Romans*, got a good Army together, and marching toward *Viterbo*, ſpoiled all their Country far and near: But *Martin*, who was then in *Monteſiaſcone*, being concerned at the miſery of the *Viterbeſes*, ſent *Matthew*, a Cardinal of the *Urſine* Family to *Rome*, in all haſte, to compoſe the buſineſs; who took *John*, the Captain of the *Roman* People, whom he met upon the Road, along with him. Thither came all the Heads of the Factions, by command from the Legat, eſpecially *Richard Hannibal*, to be abſolved by the Legat from that Interdiction that he incurred at *Viterbo*, for breaking into the Conclave, and impriſoning the Cardinals *Urſini*. He therefore laid himſelf at the Cardinal's Feet, with a Rope about his Neck, (as the greateſt ſign of penitence) and after he had begged pardon, was abſolved. Peace being thus made between both the Factions, and the ***Roman*** Army called back from plundering the *Viterboſes*, the Pope immediately grants the *Romans* a power to chuſe two Senators out of themſelves that ſhould govern the City. Accordingly two were choſen, *Hannibal*, Son of *Peter Hannibali*, and ***Pandulphus*** *Savelli*, who Ruled the City very well all the time they were in Office, eſpecially at that time when Pope *Martin*, at the Requeſt of *Charles* King of *Sicily*, Excommunicated *Palæologus* for not keeping the Articles of Alliance made between them. But then *Palæologus* fearing *Charles*'s power, made a private League with ***Peter*** King of *Aragon*, who laid claim to the Kingdom of *Sicily* in right of his Wife *Conſtantia*, *Manfred*'s Daughter, and *Corradin*'s Niece Hereupon they prepared a great Navy at the common charge of 'em both; which made the Pope ſend to *Peter*, to know of him what he meant by all thoſe preparations. *Peter* told him, that if he thought his *ſhirt could know* what his intentions were, he would tear it from his body; ſo the Legat went away without any ſatisfaction. And *Peter*, when he had gotten his Navy ready, ſails into *Africa*, where he pillaged the Coaſt of *Tunis* extreamly, and then returning into *Sardinia*, expected to hear of ſome new commotions in *Sicily*, by the contrivance of *John Prochita*, according to an agreement they had made. In the mean time new broils aroſe in ***Lombardy***, for the *Vicenti*, a Noble Family there, under the command of ***Luchino***, drave the *Turriani*, another potent Family, out of ***Milan***; which ***Luchino*** was afterwards ſent as Lieutenant to the Emperor into *Tuſcany*, where he reſided at St. *Miniato*, and plagued the *Florentines* and ***Luccaſes*** with grievous Incurſions, not regarding the Pope's Interdictions, with which he thought to have affrighted him from troubling theſe his Friends and Allies. Thoſe alſo of ***Perugia*** were now in Arms, and did ſo preſs the *Fuligneſes*, that they took their City, and demoliſh'd part of the Walls. Thereupon the Pope excommunicated 'em; but paying a good Sum of Money to him for penance, they ſoon obtained his pardon. In the mean time, the *Sicilians*, whoſe motions ***Peter*** attended in *Sardinia*, could no longer endure the pride and licentiouſneſs of the *French*, and therefore were perſuaded by *John Prochita* to enter into a Conſpiracy againſt *Charles*, that upon ſuch a day in the Evening, when they ſhould hear ſuch a Bell ring, they ſhould fall on, and kill the *French*, without reſpect to Sex or Age. In which action, 'tis ſaid, they were ſo true to their barbarous promiſe, that even thoſe *Sicilian* Women were killed who were with Child by *French* men; Hence comes it, that the *Sicilian Veſpers* is grown a By-word for any great Maſſacre. At this time *Guido Appius* met with ill fortune, when he was ſent in the Pope's name with eight hundred ***French*** Horſe to recover *Romagna*. For as they ſate before *Forli*, and the Citizens would fain have ſallied out, one *Guido Bonatus*, an excellent Aſtrologer, exhorted his fellow Citizens to wait till ſuch time as the Stars ſhould promiſe good luck, and make their Sally when he gave 'em the Signal. They did as he would have them, and breaking forth in the very nick of time, they kill'd *Guido*, and almoſt all his *French* Men. Thus was that City freed from a great Siege. But *Charles*, when he heard how the *Sicilians* had revolted, and of their cruelty too, went over into *Sicily* with a very conſiderable Army. And firſt, he beſieged *Meſſina*, which he had certainly taken by Surrender, but that the *French*, deſirous of Revenge, had threaten'd to raze the City. Beſides, *Peter* of *Aragon*, who expected (as I told you) ſuch Commotions, no ſooner heard of it, but he comes over, with all Speed, from *Sardinia* into *Sicily*, and arriving at *Palermo*, was very kindly received by the Citizens, and all the other *Sicilians*, who alſo ſaluted him by the Name of King, whilſt all the Rabble flock'd about him. *Charles* was frighted at this, and therefore, leaving *Meſſina*, he went immediately into *Calabria*, to ſtay for his Son, the Prince of *Salerno*, who, he knew, would come very ſhortly out of the Province of *Narbonne*, with ſome Recruits. *Charles* expoſtulated with *Peter* of *Aragon*, that he, who was his Relation, nay of the ſame Blood too, ſhould dare to invade his Kingdom. To which he reply'd, that he was ſo compaſſionate, as that he could not deny his aſſiſtance to a miſerable people, that were ſo hardly uſed: Though he ſaid too, that the Kingdom belong'd to him by right of Inheritance, as he was Husband to *Conſtantia*, *Monford*'s Daughter, and *Corradin*'s Niece. At laſt, when Words grew high on both ſides, it came to a Duel; upon this condition though, that each King ſhould have an hundred Men along with him, as being to engage in ſuch a weighty Combat, and the place where they were to fight was to be *Bourdeaux*. For both theſe Kings were akin to the King of *England*, who, with the aſſiſtance of Pope *Martin*, at length made up the Difference. But when *Peter*, for all that, made War upon *Charles*, *Martin* ſent *Gerard*, Cardinal of *Parma*, his Legat to *Naples*, not only to keep the people in Allegiance to him, but to aſſiſt him, who was but a Youth, with good Counſel, and the awe of his preſence. But when *Peter* had ſent *Rogeris Lorias*, his Admiral, to *Naples*, *Charles* moved towards the Enemy, and not far from *Naples*, was conquer'd, with the loſs of a great many Men: Nor only ſo, but he was taken, and carried firſt into *Sicily*, and then into *Aragon*. But this, without queſtion, had never happen'd, if he would but have hearken'd to the Legat, (as he ſhould have done) who was of a contrary opinion; who diſſuaded him, and told him that ſuch a mighty Kingdom as that was, ought not to be hazarded at that rate: For not long after, his Father *Charles* came with a great Navy, which would have made him able to have coped with the Enemy before he was a Conqueror. But *Martin*, being concern'd very much for *Charles*'s misfortune, excommunicates *Peter* of *Aragon*, and gives his Kingdom for a prey to any one that can or will take poſſeſſion of it; abſolving his Subjects from their Oath of Allegiance to him, and exciting all Chriſtians againſt him, as an Uſurper of the Churches Patrimony, according to his opinion. Nay, he would have ſent the Church Militia to help *Charles*, but that he was fain to wage War in *Romagna* himſelf, againſt the *Forleſes*, who by the aid of *Guido*, Earl of *Monford*, were ſo bold as to revolt from the Church, and attaque ſome Forts thereabouts. But when *Guido* himſelf repented what he had done, and had made Peace with the Pope, he not only demoliſh'd the Walls of *Forli*, in revenge to *Guido Appius*, but he recover'd a great part of *Romagna* in a ſhort time. He had alſo taken *Urbino*, as ſure as he attempted it, but that *Rubeus Anguillarius*, Earl of *Tuſcany*, died in the Action. There were at that time two Generals that commanded the Camp: One of which was ſent into *Tuſcany* to defend that part of the Country that lies toward the *Soane*, and the other (whom they call Earl of *Giovinazzo*) continu'd the Siege by the Pope's Order, whilſt *Guido Monteſeltranus* ſupplied the very Townſmen with Neceſſaries under-hand. But, in the mean time, when *Martin* was at a loſs from which of the two States, *Piſa*, or *Genoua*, he ſhould deſire Auxiliaries againſt *Peter* of *Aragon*, there aroſe immediately ſuch a quarrel between them, about the poſſeſſion of *Corſica*, that they themſelves were fain to beg Aſſiſtance one againſt another. Then the Pope ſent word to the Apoſtolical Legat, that he ſhould keep the people in order, till *Charles* came with a Supply. After which, *Charles* went into *Naples*, and having ſetled the peoples Minds, Sailed into *Africa*, where he died of a Fever; upon which occaſion, all the weight of the Government devolv'd upon the Legat. At that time there was a Rumour, and almoſt a currant Report, that *Philip*, Son of the *French* King, and Earl of *Artois*, was coming to receive that Kingdom. But that did not frighten *Peter* from ſpoiling the Country, becauſe he was ſure he came with a ſmall number: For his Father, *Philip*, was going into *Aragon* with a great Army, to take poſſeſſion of *Peter*'s Kingdom, which *Martin*, the Pope, by heavy Cenſures firſt laid upon him, had expoſed as a booty to any one that could get it. But the Pope, being ſurrounded with ſo many Cares, and thoſe encreaſed too by new tumults at *Orvieto*, (for the *Gibellins* had baniſh'd the *Guelphs*) went to *Perugia*; where not long after he died of an hectick Fever, in the Fourth Year and Firſt Month of his Pontificate, and was buried in the Cathedral; at whoſe Tomb many Sick, Blind, Deaf, and Lame people that are brought thither, recover from God their former Health, by the Merits of this moſt holy Pope.

HONORIUS IV.

HONORIUS the Fourth, a *Roman*, of the Race of the *Sabini*, (a very noble Family) formerly called *James*, a Cardinal Deacon, was made Pope at *Perugia*, and came to *Rome* in the Year 1285. when his Brother *Pandulphus* was Senator. For *Pandulphus* was eſteemed a perſon of ſo much Severity, and Juſtice, that whenever the Citizens of *Rome* had a mind to purge the City of Robbers, Ruffians, Thieves, and Parricides, (of which at that time there were great numbers in *Rome*, among the Seditious) they deſired no other Senator than *Pandulphus*: And he, though mightily tormented with the Gout, both in his Feet, and his Hands; yet, in Courage and Conſtancy of Mind, was inferiour to none of thoſe that had their Health. *Honorius* alſo was ſomtimes troubled with the ſame Diſtemper, inſomuch that he was forced to make uſe of certain Inſtruments, made for the purpoſe to ſupport him, when he performed the Prieſtly Office. But he was a Man of that Conduct and Prudence, that he did not ſeem much deficient in corporal ſtrength; for he himſelf could diſcern rather more of the Affairs of the City, than thoſe that were in it beſides, put 'em all together. He lived in the Mount *di S. Sabina,* and built him a curious Palace there, (whoſe ruins are yet to be ſeen) which drew many of the *Romans* to live by him; ſo that the Mount began, from his time, to be very full of Inhabitants. He was reſolved to injure no Man, whilſt he was Pope, but on the contrary to do what good he could to all; and therefore being provoked by the Indignities which *Peter* King of *Aragon* offer'd to him, by endeavouring to get the Kingdom of *Sicily*, he confirmed *Martin*'s Interdictions againſt *Peter*. But *Rodulphus* the Emperor, having a great mind to raiſe Money, ſent his Chancellour (one of the Family of the *Fliſci*) into *Tuſcany*, to make all the Country free, eſpecially thoſe who would buy their Liberty. Thoſe of *Lucca* paid upon that account twelve thouſand Pounds; the *Florentines*, ſix thouſand: And as ſoon as they were made perfectly free, they created a certain kind of Officers, (which they call *Arts-maſters*) with a Sword-bearer. This Sale did not diſpleaſe *Honorius*, though it look'd too mean for ſuch a great Prince; becauſe by that means the Patrimony of the Church would be more ſecure, he thought, when the Emperor had no more power to oppreſs thoſe free Cities. But whilſt the King of *France* beſieged *Girona*, and *Peter* of *Aragon* was ſolicitous how to hinder the carriage of Proviſions from *Narbonne* into the Enemies Camp, he was engaged in a ſharp Conflict, where he received a deadly Wound, of which, not long after, he dy'd for want of looking to. So that *Girona* was ſurrender'd upon terms, and ſubmitted to the King of *France*, though he did not long ſurvive the Conqueſt. For he died of a Fever which he caught in the Camp, as he was beſieging *Perpignano*. His Navy too, not long after that, was taken, and burnt, in the Port of *Narbonne*, by *Roger Loria*. *Peter* of *Aragon* had two Sons, *Ferdinand* and *James*; whereof he left *Ferdinand*, his eldeſt Son, King of *Aragon*, by his Will, and *James*, King of *Sicily*. But when the old Kings were dead, in that manner, as I have told you, the Wars devolved upon the young ones; who attempted on both ſides to make thoſe of *Piſa*, and the *Genoeſes*, who were excellent Seamen, of their Party. But theſe two States, being incens'd and arm'd againſt each other, engag'd ſo furiouſly at *Malora*, an Iſland near the Port of *Piſa*, that thoſe of *Piſa* loſt Forty Ships, or Gallies, and twelve thouſand Men, which were partly ſlain, and partly taken. *Honorius* took this misfortune of theirs ſo much to heart, that he had like to have interdicted the *Genoeſes*, who purſu'd the Men of *Piſa* with too much animoſity. And that unhappy Day gave ſuch a ſhock to thoſe of *Piſa*, that they never retrieved themſelves ſince. But *Edward*, King of *England*, went at that time into *Gaſcoigne*, to make Peace between *Charles*, a Youth, Son to the King of *France*, (who, I told you, was taken in War) and *Ferdinand*, King of *Aragon*. The buſineſs went as he would have it, and they treated about *Charles*'s freedom, when at the ſame time the *Apoſtolical Legate*, and the Earl of *Arras*, with the aſſiſtance of the Earl of *Avellino*, poſſeſs themſelves of the City *Catina*, and ſend over thither an Army raiſed out of *Tuſcany*. For this reaſon, *Edward* return'd home without ſucceſs. But *Roger Loria* advanced King *Ferdi-*

nand's Fortune, by taking the *French* Fleet, as it came back out of *Sicily*. *Honorius* could not engage in this War, becauſe he was invaded in *Romagna* by *Guido Feltrini*. But at length, when he had conquer'd *Guido*, he recover'd all *Romagna* in a ſhort time; and not long after dy'd, two years and a day after he was made Pope. His body was carried in great State from S. *Sabina* to S. *Peter*'s, and buried in a Marble Tomb, which is yet extant among thoſe that Pope *Pius* collected, as the Arms of his Family, and the Inſcription, declare; and indeed he deſerv'd all the honour paid to his dead Corps, becauſe he was a very upright Man, and a great Lover of Chriſtian Piety. For he confirm'd not only the Order of the *Carmelites*, which was not very well approved of in ſome Councils, and chang'd their black Cloaks for white ones, but he did the ſame alſo by the Order of *Eremites*, which was diſapproved at *Paris*. But the only Cardinal he made, during his Pontificate, was *John Boccamatius*, Biſhop of *Fraſcati*; for he would ſay, that none but good and learned Men ought to be taken into ſo great a Society, not thoſe that were illiterate, and ignorant in the manage of human Affairs. He loved Courtiers ſo, as that he would go every Year, eſpecially in the Summer, to *Tivoli*, on purpoſe to avoid the heat of the Town, which cauſes many Diſeaſes. When *Honorius* was dead, the See was vacant ten Months: For the Conclave being ſummon'd to meet at St. *Sabina*, a great many of the Cardinals were taken ſick of a ſudden; out of whom there died *Jordan Urſin*, Earl of *Millain*, *Hugh*, an *Engliſh* Man, *Gervaſe* of *Anjou*, Dean of *Paris*, and *Antherius*, an excellent perſon. For this Reaſon they diſmiſs'd the Conclave, and deferr'd the matter till a more ſeaſonable time, eſpecially becauſe of the Earthquakes, which were then ſo great, that they thought Heaven it ſelf would be angry with 'em, if they did it at that time.

NICOLAS. IV.

NICOLAS the Fourth, of *Principato-citra*, an *Aſcoleſe*, formerly called *Jerome*, a Brother, and General of the Order of *Friers Minors*, and after that a Cardinal Prieſt, was made Pope at St. *Sabina*, the tenth Month after *Honorius*'s Death, and placed, not only in *Peter*'s See, but in the Saint's own Chair. After that, he went to *Rieti*, to avoid ſome Tumults at *Rome*; and there he created Cardinals of almoſt all Religions. For he loved all Men alike; nor did he think that he ow'd more to his Relations, than to any good Man. The difference between Virtue and Vice cauſed him to encline more to one Man than another. Some of thoſe that he made Cardinals were called *Neapolio*, *Petrus Columna*, *Hugo Colionius*, a famous Doctor of the Order of Preachers, *Matthæus Aquaſparta*, General of the *Minors*, and Biſhop of *Porto*. About a Year after, he came back to *Rome*, when City broils were ſomwhat appeaſed, and lived at S. *Maries the Great*, which Church he and *James Columna* repaired, as appears upon the great *Portico*, where the Image of our Saviour, the Pope, and *James* the Cardinal, are yet to be ſeen. The ſame Pope repaired the Front, and the back-part of the *Lateran*, and adorn'd it with Fret-work, as the Inſcription tells us. In the mean time, the Kings of *Aragon* and *Sicily* conclude a Peace, upon theſe Terms; That King *Charles* ſhould be ſet at Liberty, and ſettle *James* of *Aragon* in the Kingdom of *Sicily*, at his own Charge. And if he did not do ſo in three Years time, he promiſed to return to Priſon, giving his two Sons for Hoſtages; one of which was named *Charles*, (who was afterwards created King of *Hungary*, and called *Marcellus*) and the other *Lewis*, who, when he had lived a good Life in the Order of S. *Francis*, was canoniz'd for a Saint. Whilſt theſe things were tranſacted in *Europe*, the Great Turk made uſe of that occaſion, and whilſt the Chriſtians quarrel'd among themſelves, thought himſelf ſecure. Wherefore he goes, with Fire and Sword, and razes *Tripoli*, a famous City in *Aſia*, killing all the Chriſtians that were there in Gariſon. *Said*, and *Baruti* ſuffer'd the like calamity, having no body to aſſiſt 'em. *Aca*, of old called *Ptolemais*, ſtood, becauſe they made a Truce with the Sultan, for two Years: And to defend it for time to come, *Nicolas* the Pope did all he could to get Soldiers under Chriſt's Banner, and paid them with his own Money. They were about one thouſand five hundred; but there were a great many more that follow'd 'em, without being inrolled, without Colours, or any body to conduct 'em; who, when they were come to *Aca*, did the Chriſtians as much hurt as they did the *Saracens*. But the Sultan demanded what was his due, as he pretended; which when the Chriſtians refuſed to reſtore, he threaten'd utter ruin to 'em all. Then there aroſe a great queſtion among the Chriſtians, who ſhould have Poſſeſſion of *Aca*: For the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, the Templars of *Germany*, the King of *Cyprus*, and *Charles*, King of *Sicily*, did all lay claim to it. Thoſe alſo of *Piſa* had a mind to demand *Aca*, and lawfully, (as they ſaid themſelves) but that a War which broke out in *Tuſcany* diverted them from ſuch an ill deſign. For they ſtarv'd Earl *Ugulinus* in Priſon, where they kept him, his two Sons, and two Nieces; and after that, did ſo far animate the *Gibellins* againſt the *Guelphs*, that they threaten'd equal Deſtruction to 'em all. They fell firſt upon thoſe of *Arezzo*, becauſe the baniſh'd *Gibellins* deſir'd it; when *William Petramala* was Biſhop of that place, who was aided by Earl *Feltri*, the *Florentine*. But the *Florentines* did not think themſelves ſtrong enough, and therefore they ſent *Charles* the Second alſo thither, with ſome Forces, as he was going through their Country, to wait upon the Pope. Their Camps were pitched near one another, in the Country of *Tipherno*, by which Name they now call the City, having alter'd the Name of the Caſtle. Immediately, as the Battel was juſt begun, there were a great many *Florentines* kill'd; but not long after, the caſe was alter'd, and though *William* the Biſhop, and Earl *Feltri*, were ſlain, yet there fell of the *Gibellini* three thouſand, and two thouſand were taken. The Neighbours call the place, where they fought, *Campeldino*. *Charles*, having obtain'd ſo great a Victory, goes ſtraight to *Nicolas*, and gets the favour to hold of him in Fee the Crown of both the *Sicilies*. Which, when *James* of *Aragon* underſtood, he preſently goes, and attacks *Cajetta*. But leſt any thing ſhould be wanting that might diſturb the quiet of Chriſtendom, a fatal War broke out between *Philip* of *France* and *Edward* King of *England*, which did not only trouble the Chriſtians in *Aſia* very much, but alſo gave our Enemies great confidence and hopes that they ſhould totally obliterate the Chriſtian Name throughout all *Aſia*. For the *Sultan*, who at that time was ſick, had ſent an hundred and fifty thouſand Men to *Acra*, under the Command of his Son. But the Siege continuing for two Months, the Father died in that time, and the Son ſucceeded him; who attacked the Town with much greater reſolution: For he filled the Trenches, and promiſed all the Plunder to the Soldiers: But when he had fought his way to the very Walls, he was beaten back by the Chriſtians, (who made a Sally upon him) even to his Camp, and had a great many of his Men hurt in the Action. Whilſt they were thus employ'd in *Aſia*, *Nicolas*, the Pope, ſends two Legats *à Latere* (as they call 'em) i. e. *Benedictus Cajetanus*, and *Gerard* of *Parma*, with all ſpeed into *France*, to make a Peace between the two Kings, and animate 'em againſt the *Saracens*, who then beſieged *Acra*. For he had made a Peace between *James* of *Aragon*, and *Charles*, who was a Captive, upon thoſe Conditions, that I told you before, that they might all be the more free to go againſt the common Enemy. Nay, he had begun to provide a Navy, as thinking himſelf almoſt ſure of a Peace; but to no purpoſe: For the Kings did not obey him, when he gave 'em good Advice; nor did they that were in Gariſon at *Ptolemais* agree ſo well among themſelves, as to keep out the Enemy according to their power. For having daily loſt a great many of their Men, there were at that time but twelve thouſand left, who afterward made their eſcape in a *Corſaire* (or ſwift-ſailing Frigat kept for that purpoſe) along with the Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*. And though at firſt they had good Shipping, yet at laſt they were Shipwrack'd near *Cyprus*. But the *Sultan* enter'd the City, when the Inhabitants had left it, and deſtroy'd it immediately with Fire and Sword, in the 196th year after *Godfry* had taken it. But, amidſt ſo many Calamities, the Iſland of *Cyprus*, and *Armenia* the leſs, formerly called *Cilicia*, continued Chriſtian. At that time *Nicolas* was very urgent with *Rodulphus*, the Emperor, to ſend his Army into *Aſia*, for fear the Enemy ſhould get the remaining part of it. But *Rodulphus* ſoon after died, and *Adolphus Haſſo* was choſen to be his Succeſſor; who, demanding the Rights of the Empire, was kill'd in a Fight at *Spire*, by *Albertus*, Son to *Rodulphus*. He was indeed a brave Man, but had neither Men nor Money enough; and that was the reaſon that they ſaid, he was rather overpower'd by Multitude, than fairly Conquer'd. But *Nicolas*, the Pope, through diſcontent (as ſome ſuppoſe) to ſee all things go croſs to his expectations, and being conſcious that he had favour'd Parties more than became a Pope, died at *Rome* in the fourth Year, firſt Month, and eighth Day of his Pontificate, near S. *Maries the Great*; and is there buried, at the upper end of the Church, by Cardinal *Columna*, as you may ſee upon the Pavement, where his Picture is in *Porphyry*. But after his Death, the Cardinals went to *Perugia*, that they might chooſe a Pope with greater freedom, but protracted the buſineſs, by quarrels among themſelves, two Years and three Months. In the mean while, *Michael Palæologus*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, dies: But the Prieſts and the Monks would not ſuffer his Body to be buried in an holy place, becauſe he joyned with the Weſtern Church in the Council of *Lions*. And indeed *Andronicus*, *Michael's* Son, would have declared himſelf of the ſame opinion as the *Latins*, if he had been aſſiſted by our Party. But when the See was vacant, *An-*

dronicus was deſtitute of Friends, and ſo at laſt Apoſtatized from the Faith. But *Charles* the Second, King of *Naples*, ſeeing what would come of it, made a Journy from *Narbonne* to *Perugia*, and exhorted the Cardinals, ſeveral times, to agree, and perfect their Election; and would have continu'd his Importunity, had he not been ſeverely rebuked by *Benedict Cajetan*, of *Anagni*; who told him, that he was too urgent, and thereby ſeemed to lay a kind of reſtraint upon the Cardinals, whoſe Votes ought to be free.

CELESTIN V.

CELESTIN the Fifth, formerly called *Petrus Moronæus*, by profeſſion, an Anchorite of *Sergna*, who dwelt in an Abby, two Miles from *Sulmona*, was made Pope at the Requeſt of King *Charles*, and Cardinal *Latinus*: A thing which all people wondred at ſo much the more, becauſe his holy retirement had voluntarily removed him out of the proſpect of any ſuch Grandeur. After his Creation, he went to *Aquila*, and thither he ſummon'd all the Cardinals to him from *Perugia*. But they were very importunate with him, both by Letters, and Meſſengers, That he would come to *Perugia*, which was a City more agreeable to the Dignity of a Pope. Notwithſtanding, *Celeſtin*'s Will was at laſt obey'd, who would needs have it ſo, becauſe he underſtood that King *Charles* was of the ſame Mind. Thereupon they went all thither, and paid ſuch Homage to *Celeſtin* as became a Pope. Now, *Ptolomy* ſays, there were two hundred thouſand Men at his Coronation; and that he himſelf was there too. I ſuppoſe the people were taken with the newneſs of the thing, and the holineſs of the perſon; that a Man that was an *Eremite* ſhould come to ſuch Honour, (as if he had been preferr'd by Heaven it ſelf) after ſo long a Conteſt between the Electors. As ſoon as he enter'd upon the Popedom, he made Twelve Cardinals; Men of the greateſt Integrity, of whom two were *Eremites*. But becauſe he did not alter his former way of living, and take upon him the Grandeur of a Pope, he was ſo kind, and acceſſible to all that made ſuit to him, as that he granted the ſame things to ſeveral perſons; which brought not only a Contempt upon his Dignity, but was a leſſening to the Majeſty of a Pope: For indeed he was unfit for publick buſineſs, by reaſon of the obſcure Life which he had lead in the Wilderneſs. Hereupon they talk'd of depoſing him; eſpecially after the Death of *Latinus* the Cardinal, a good Man, by whoſe aſſiſtance *Celeſtin* had hitherto made ſhift to ſupport himſelf under ſo vaſt a burthen. But ſome of the Cardinals being very inſtant, eſpecially *Benedict Cajetan*, (a cunning Man, and well skill'd in the Civil and Canon Law) who was a great favourite of the Popes, that he would remove himſelf from the Pontificate, leſt the Church of God ſhould be endanger'd by the unskilfulneſs of its Governour, he began to think of laying down his Papal Office. But King *Charles* was ſo much concern'd at his Levity and Superſtition, that he takes the good Man to *Naples*, and endeavours to convert him from ſuch baſe thoughts; whil'ſt the people cry'd out in all places;

places, that they would have no other Pope but *Celeſtin*, and heartily beſeech'd his Holineſs that ſo it might be. To whom the Pope made anſwer, That he would do nothing but what God would have him do, and what he thought might be for the good of Chriſtendom. At that, the Cardinals, that deſired he would leave the Papacy, were very urgent with him to do it as ſoon as he could; telling him the danger all Chriſtendom was in by his Ignorance, and that all the Miſchiefs that then befel the Church, would be put to his Account at Dooms-day. The holy ſimple Man was moved with what they ſaid, and told 'em, he would do as they'd have him, if it might lawfully be done. Whereupon there was an Order made by unanimous conſent, that the Pope ſhould have Liberty to depoſe himſelf. Which Conſtitution *Boniface* the Eighth, his Succeſſor, afterward confirm'd, as appears in the ſixth Book of the *Decretals*. Then *Celeſtin* return'd to his private Life again, and gave the Cardinals power to put another Pope in his place, in the ſixth Month of his Pontificate. And *Benedict Cajetan*, by that means, having moſt Votes, was choſen Pope; who ſeized upon *Celeſtin*, by the way, as he was going into his Hermitage, committing him to the Cuſtody of the Governor of a certain Caſtle, called *Fumo*, in *Campagna di Roma*. For which, he ſaid, his reaſon was, leſt the Authors of Sedition ſhould one time or other bring ſome calamity upon the Church of God, under his conduct, although he really admir'd the Sanctity of the Man. However, this is certain, that *Boniface* was very ungrateful, as well as ſubtil, firſt, to chouſe a good Man out of his Dignity, to ſatisfie his own ambition, and then to take him, (when he would have retired again to his ſolitude) and keep him in Priſon, till he dy'd for very grief, before his time, in ſeventeen Months after he firſt came to the Pontificate. There are ſome that ſay, this *Celeſtin* was ſo famous for Miracles, after his Death, that there were frequent Diſcourſes in Councils about his Canonization; and that many people worſhipp'd him as a Saint, and put him in the Catalogue of Confeſſors. His Anniverſary is kept every Year on the 17th of *July*, (which was the Day of his Death) by an Order of *Clement* the fifth, made at *Avignon*.

BONIFACE VIII.

BONIFACE the eighth, born at *Anagni*, in *Campagna di Roma*, formerly called *Benedict Cajetan*, was made Pope at *Naples*, upon *Chriſtmas* Eve, in the Year 1294. He was a Man of great Learning and Experience, as having lived long in Publick, and riſen to the Popedom by all the Degrees of Honour, though not without ſome imputation of Pride and Ambition. For whilſt he was Cardinal Prieſt of S *Martins in the Mount*, he was ſo deſirous of the Papal Dignity, that he omitted no fraudulent, or other indirect means, that might, in his opinion, conduce to his obtaining of it. Beſides, he was a Man of that arrogance, that he contemn'd every body, and recalled ſome Indulgences granted by *Nicolas* the Fourth, and *Celeſtin* the Fifth. He alſo perſecuted the *Gibellines* extreamly; from whence aroſe that quarrel between the Pope and the *Gibellines* of *Columna*, who alſo maintained their Party againſt the Pope at *Anagni*. Thereupon he begin to calumniate and traduce them in general; but eſpecially two Cardinals, *Peter* and *James*, two famous Men of the ſame Family, That, upon the Death of ſeveral Popes, they had waſted the Churches Treaſure, and ſpread abroad ſcandalous Pamphlets againſt his own Perſon. For after he had done 'em Injury, they did indeed write to ſeveral Kings, Princes, and States, concerning *Boniface's* Arrogance and Ambition: How he had poſſeſſed himſelf of the Papal See againſt all Right and Reaſon, after he cheated *Celeſtin* out of it, and then put him in Priſon. For there are ſome that write, how *Boniface* ſent ſome cunning Rogues privately in the Night-time, to ſpeak in a ſtrange Tone through *Celeſtin's* Chamber Wall, and tell the poor ſimple Man, (as it were by a Voice from Heaven) That he muſt lay down the Popedom if he would be ſaved. The Cardinals were cited, but did not appear, becauſe they fear'd *Boniface's* Severity and Reſolution. Wherefore they retired to *Nepi* with all the Family of the *Columneſes*; and being declared Schiſmaticks by a publick Decree, they had their Benefices, Dignities, Eſtates, Caſtles, and Towns taken from them: Which Deprivation *Boniface* afterward reduced into the form of a Decree, as appears in the Book called *Sextus*. After that, *Boniface* raiſed a great many Men and Arms, to quell them, and beſieged *Paleſtrina*, where they were ingariſon'd with one *Sarra*, a famous Man, who was their Uncle: And when they got away from thence, after he took and plunder'd the Town, he purſu'd 'em to *Zagalora*, and *Columna*: From whence alſo they were forced to fly, not long after, by reaſon of the multitude of their Enemies, by whom theſe Caſtles likewiſe were deſtroy'd, but eſpecially that of *Columna*, which was their native Country. But the Cardinals got away from thence too, and went to *Rieti*, though *Sarra* ſtaid a long time in the Woods at *Antium*, for fear of *Boniface's* cruelty. But falling into the hands of certain Pirates, he was put to the Oar, and by that means ſuffer'd a great deal of Miſery; though he was more willing to endure baniſhment and hardſhip in that manner, than to feel *Boniface's* Tyranny, who hated the whole Race of the *Gibellines*. 'Tis well known, what he ſaid to *Prochetus*, Archbiſhop of *Genoa*, when he came and laid himſelf at his Feet, upon an *Aſh-Wedneſday*; for whereas the Prieſt uſes to ſay, *Remember, Man, That thou art Aſhes, and into Aſhes ſhalt thou return*, he alter'd ſome of the Words, and ſaid, *Remember, Man, That thou art a* Gibellin, *and with the reſt of the* Gibellines *into Aſhes ſhalt thou return*: And, with that, he threw ſome Aſhes into his Eyes, not upon his Head, as the cuſtom is. Nay, he deprived him of his Archbiſhoprick, for the very Name of the *Gibellines*; though he reſtored him afterward, when he underſtood that the Cardinals of *Columna* did not go to *Genoa*, as he ſuppoſed they had done. The *Columneſes* being baniſhed in this ſort, *Boniface* appointed a double Anniverſary, one in honour of the Apoſtles and Evangeliſts, and another in honour of thoſe four Doctors of the Church, *Gregory*, *Auſtin*, *Jerome*, and *Ambroſe*. He likewiſe canonized *Lewis*, (one of the King of *France's* Family, Son to *Charles* the Second, who, ſome ſay, was profeſs'd of the Order of S. *Francis*) whilſt he was at *Civita Vecchia*. After that, he turn'd out the Secular Canons from the Cathedral of *Alby*, and put Regulars in their room, at the Requeſt of *Bernard Caſtanetus*, Biſhop of the place. He alſo put forth a ſixth Volume, or Code, of the Pontifical or Canon Law, which was compiled by three very learned Men, (according to his Order) with the addition of ſome new Decrees of his own. The City of *Gubio*, which, by the Inſtigation of the *Gibellines*, had revolted from the Church, he in a ſhort time recover'd. He denied *Albertus*, Duke of *Auſtria*, to confirm him in the Empire, though he petitioned for it ſeveral times. But when *James* of *Aragon* was dead, and *Robert*, Son of *Charles*, and Duke of *Calabria*, or *Terra d'Otranto*, was gone over into *Sicily*, and had taken *Catina*, there brake out ſuch a War of a ſudden, that almoſt all *Italy* was in an Uproar. For the *Sicilians*, who favour'd the *Aragoneſes*, got a Navy together, and not only conquer'd *Philip*, *Robert*'s Brother, but took him, and put him in Priſon. Whereupon *Robert* left *Catina*, and return'd into *Italy*, without accompliſhing his Deſigns. But *Frederick* of *Aragon* coming out of *Spain*, with an Army, into *Sicily*, did not only recover all *Sicily*, but *Terra d'Otranto* too. In *Tuſcany*, thoſe of *Genoa* did burn with ſo much Hatred againſt the Inhabitants of *Piſa*, that they not only took *Leghorn*, and burnt it, but they ſunk Merchants Ships in the mouth of the River, to hinder the Men of *Piſa* from ſailing out. Theſe things were carry'd on in *Italy*, to the no ſmall Detriment of the Country; whilſt the Pope ſate ſtill, nor would interpoſe his Authority to make Peace in any place. And leſt you ſhould think Heaven was at Peace with Mankind, there was of a ſudden ſuch an Earthquake, as never was known before, which laſted at ſeveral places a great many Days, and threw down many Houſes. The Pope was then, with all the whole Court, at *Rieti*; and fearing leſt he ſhould be knock'd on the Head with the fall of Houſes, he cauſed a little Hut to be built, of ſmall Planks, in a wide Field, which was in the Cloyſter of the Friers *Preachers*; and there he kept for ſome time, though it were bitter cold Weather: For this Commotion began upon St. *Andrew*'s Day. There appeared alſo at that time a Comet, which was a ſign of ſome great Calamity to come. But *Boniface*, after ſo many, and ſuch continu'd Earthquakes, came to himſelf, and made ſeveral Cardinals, of which number were the Archbiſhop of *Toledo*, *Richard* of *Siena*, *Nicolas* of *Treviſo*, Maſter of the Order of *Preachers*, *John Murro*, General of the *Minors*, and one *Peter*, a *Spaniard*. He alſo kept a Jubilee in the Year 1300. and gave a full Pardon of all their Sins to thoſe that had viſited the Apoſtles Tombs, after the manner that is preſcribed in the old Teſtament; though the *Jews* at firſt had quite another Sentiment of this Affair. For they kept a Jubilee every Fiftieth Year, wherein Debtors were releaſed from their Creditors, as *Joſephus* ſays, and Servants, or Slaves, challenged their Freedom. From whence the Jubilee imports liberty both in Mind and Body, for they are truely ſaid to be free, whoſe Sins are forgiven. He commanded it to be kept every hundredth Year. For this reaſon, that Year, there came ſuch a Multitude of people to *Rome*, from all parts, that you could hardly ſtir in the Streets, though they are very large and ſpacious, it was ſo throng'd. There came to *Rome* at that time *Charles* Earl of *Valois*, Brother to *Philip* of *France*, who married the Daughter of *Baldwin*, late Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, and got leave of *Boniface*, that his Father-in-law might endeavour to recover the Empire, of which by force he had been deprived. *Boniface* was willing to gratifie him, becauſe he intended to make uſe of their aſſiſtance toward ſending an Army into *Aſia*, to recover *Jeruſalem*. But whilſt things were coming to a ſettlement, he made *Charles* ſole Governor of *Peter's* Patrimony, and ſent a Legat into *Tuſcany*, to appeaſe the new broils there. For inſtead of *Gibellines* and *Guelphs* they were called *Whites* and *Blacks*. But the Legat could do no good, though he threatened to interdict them; nor could *Charles* of *Valois*, who came thither by the Pope's Order, reſtrain the *Florentines* ſo much, but that they did drive the *Albi* or *Whites* out of their City, and killed a great many of them beſides. For, at that time, the *Gibellines* were called the *Whites*. But the Pope having long premeditated of his Expedition to *Jeruſalem*, he ſends the Biſhop of *Apamea* to *Philip* King of *France*, to exhort him into the ſame Deſign. He went; but when he came thither and could do no good by fair words, he was fain to make uſe of Menaces. At which *Philip* was very angry and threw him into Priſon. Which when the Pope underſtood, he ſent the Arch-Deacon of *Narbonne*, an excellent perſon, thither immediately, to command *Philip* in his name, to ſet the Biſhop of *Apamea* at Liberty. If he would not do it, he bid him declare publickly, that the Kingdom of *France* was fallen to the Church, by *Philips* contumacy, and foraſmuch as he had broken the Law of Nations; and ordered him farther to lay a Curſe upon him, and abſolve all the *French* from their Allegiance. The Arch-Deacon did all this very chearfully, and compelled the King to diſmiſs the Biſhop. But the King, having a mind to take ſome part of a Revenge for the injuries offered to him by the Pope, ſets forth an Edict, that no man ſhould go out of his Kingdom to *Rome*, or ſend money thither. The ſecond year after the Jubilee, *Charles* of *Valois* went to *Charles* the Second his Couſin. At whoſe coming *Frederick* of *Aragon* was concerned, and deſired a Peace, which he obtained upon condition, that he, reſtoring what he had taken in *Italy*, ſhould keep *Sicily* as long as he lived. But when *Charles* of *Valois* went out of *Tuſcany*, the *Whites*, who were driven out of *Florence*, went in great numbers to *Forli*, among whom there was one *Dantes Aldegerius*, a very Learned man, and an excellent Poet in his Mother-Tongue: This Perſon endeavoured to return into his own Country ſeveral times, but in vain; although he were aſſiſted by the *Bolognians* and *Canegrandis*, Governor of *Verona*, with whom he lived afterward for ſome time in all the freedom of converſation. There are ſome Authors that tell us, how *Boniface* about this time cauſed the body of one *Hermanius*, that had been worſhipped at *Ferrara* as a Saint for twenty years, to be taken out of the ground and burnt, becauſe he had made a ſtrict inquiry into his Heretical Opinions. I ſuppoſe, he was one of the *Fratricelli* or Holy-Brotherhood, whoſe Sect at that time was very numerous. In the mean time, *Philip* King of *France*, taking *Boniface's* Arrogance very ill, called an Aſſembly at *Paris* of the Clergy and Nobility: And recounting the injuries that *Boniface* had done to him, his Ambition and Cheats, which he had uſed to get the Popedom, which he was unjuſtly poſſeſſed of, he appealed to the See Apoſtolick, which, he ſaid, was then vacant, and to the next Council. At which *Boniface*, being ſtartled, called a General Council, wherein he declared *Philip* and his Kingdom ſubject to *Albert* the Emperor, whom, in the beginning of his Pontificate, he had repulſed. Then *Philip*, thinking to tame his pride, ſent *Sarra* of *Columna* (who was known and redeemed from the Pirates at *Marſeilles*,) with *Nogaretins*, a *French* Cavalier, and a truſty Soul to *Rome*, for no other end (as he declared himſelf) but to publiſh his Appeal. But he had a quite different Deſign. For *Sarra*, putting on the diſguiſe of a Slave, went into *Campagna di Roma*; where gathering to him as many Friends as he could, he ſent *Nogaretius* with two hundred *French* Horſe, which he had liſted out of *Charles* of *Valois's* Army, before to *Ferentino*, to aſſiſt him, if need were. But himſelf went into *Anagni* privately, in the Night, and by the aſſiſtance of the *Gibellines*, whom *Boniface* had teazed extreamly for a long time, he broke the Door open, and took the Pope by ſurpriſe in the Houſe where he was born, and ſo brought him to *Rome*, where thirty five days after he died for grief, in the eighth year, ninth month and ſeventeenth day of his Pontificate. He was buried in S. *Peter's*, in a Tomb that he built himſelf before he died; which is yet to be ſeen in a Chapel which he made of Fret-work. He likewiſe built the Pulpit and the *Portico* in the *Lateran*, where Curſes are pronounced upon the Sacrament; and where he laid that Curſe upon *Philip* King of *France*, and the *Columneſes*. Thus died *Boniface*, who had made it his buſineſs rather to infuſe Terror than Religion into Emperors, Kings, Princes, Nations and States; and would pretend to give and take away Kingdoms, to baniſh and to recal Men, as he thought fitting, to ſatisfie his Pride and Covetouſneſs, which was unſpeakable. Therefore let other Princes, as well Religious as Secular, learn by his Example to govern the Clergy and the Laity, not proudly and diſdainfully, as this party of whom we ſpeak, but holily and modeſtly, as Chriſt our King, and his Diſciples, and true Followers. And let them deſire rather to be beloved than feared; which is uſually the juſt bane of Tyrants. Some ſay, he cheriſhed the Feuds among the *Italians*, eſpecially between the *Genoſes* and the *Venetians*, who were two States, very powerful at Sea.

BENEDICT XI.

BENEDICT the Eleventh, an *Italian*, of *Treviſo*, formerly called *Nicolas*, Cardinal of *Oſtia*, was made Pope the firſt of *November* at *Rome*. For he entered himſelf into the Order of *Preachers*, when he was but young; and ſo far prevailed upon the Fraternity both by his Virtue and Learning, that they preferred him gradually through all Offices till he was made General. From which Station he was choſen Pope, and in that place alſo gave great demonſtration of his Virtue. For he lived after ſuch a manner, that he may well be reckoned among the number of thoſe that are in Bliſs. But as ſoon as he got into the Apoſtolical Chair, he cites *Nogaretius*, and *Sarra* and all thoſe of *Anagni* that conſpired to take *Boniface*, to come before him; but they not appearing, he laid an heavy Curſe upon them. He likewiſe heard King *Philip*'s cauſe, and abſolved him from *Boniface*'s Cenſures. And, after that, he received *John* and *James*, the two Cardinals of *Columna*, into favour; whom *Boniface* perſecuted, for being of the *Guelphian* Faction, more than became a Pope to do. Nay he gave them their Goods again, only he enjoined them to let the Red Hat, that *Boniface* had taken from them, lie by for ſome ſhort time. Having ſetled the Affairs of the City in this manner, and made ſome Cardinals (of whom *Nicolas a-Prateſe*, of the Order of Preachers, was one) he immediately applies himſelf to procure a general Peace in *Italy*. And becauſe there were greater tumults in *Tuſcany* than any where elſe, he ſent *Nicolas* Biſhop of *Oſtia* thither with full Commiſſion; who made new Officers in *Florence*, and put them into the Houſe, which they had built for the reception of Magiſtrates, now called the *Palace* of their Lords. But at that time *Nicolas* thought he might do more than ſo, and therefore ſpoke about recalling the perſons that were baniſhed: Which Propoſal not taking effect as he would have had it, he declared a Curſe upon them, and went to *Prato*. But not long after, *Benedict* dying, *Tuſcany* was again in an uproar, for the baniſhed of all places met near *Bologna*, reſolving immediately to enter *Florence*, and thereupon, in the Night, getting over the Walls, which were not then finiſhed, near the Gate that leads to *Bologna*, they advanced as far as the Church of S. *Separatu*, that was begun to be built a little before. But whilſt they looked too eagerly after the plunder, and conſulted their Friends what they had beſt to do, they gave their Enemies time to take courage and raiſe Arms; inſomuch that they quickly drave them out, and killed a great many of their men. Then they got *Robert*, Duke of *Calabria*, to be their General, and were grown confident they had ſtrength enough, not only to defend their own, but to attack their Neighbours too. Hereupon they beſiege *Piſtoia*, which thoſe within it did ſo bravely defend, that with one Sally they beat *Robert* and all his Army back to *Prato*. *Benedict*, who was a very good and holy Man, reſolved, when he had quieted *Italy*, to aſſiſt againſt the *Tartars*, who were fallen into *Syria* and *Paleſtine*, having been ſolicited to it by frequent Meſſages. But dying at *Perugia* (where he and all the Court were,) in the eighth month and ſeventeenth day of his Pontificate, he miſſed his Deſign. He was buried with due pomp, in the Church of the *Freres* Preachers, the fifth of *June* in the year 1303. Now the Miracles which he did after his death ſhew him to have been an excellent, holy Man; for he cured the Sick, and caſt out Devils. The See was then vacant from the fifth of *June* to the ſeventh of *July*, in the year enſuing; although the Cardinals that were kept in the Conclave for that purpoſe, were importuned and ſometimes threatned to make choice of a Pope.

CLEMENT V.

CLEMENT the Fifth, a *Gaſcon*, Biſhop of *Bourdaux*, formerly called *Bertrandus Gottho*, was made Pope in his abſence at *Perugia*, though the College of Cardinals had a long debate about the Election. But he approving of their choice, went from *Bourdeaux* to *Lyons*, and called all the Cardinals thither to him, who obeyed him without any ſcruple; ſo that the Court of *Rome* was tranſlated into *France* in the year 1305. And there it remained for ſeventy four years, to the great damage of all Chriſtendom, but eſpecially of *Rome*; where the Churches, great part of them, fell to Ruin for want of uſe; whilſt they were abſent that ought to have taken care to repair them. There were preſent at the Coronation of this Pope, *Philip* King of *France*, and his Brother *Charles*, lately returned from *Italy*, *John* Duke of *Britaigne*, who, together with ſome others, was killed by a Wall, that fell upon him, whilſt the Coronation pomp was going, as is uſual, through the City. *Philip* alſo was a little hurt by the ſame Accident. But the Pope, though he was in ſuch a conſternation that he fell from his Horſe, yet he loſt nothing but one Carbuncle out of his Crown, that ſome ſay was valued at 6000 *l.* When the Solemnity was over, and all things in order, *Clement* made a great many *French* Cardinals, but none out of *Italy*, though indeed he did reſtore *John* and *James* of *Columna* to their entire Dignity of Cardinalate, which they formerly enjoyed. Beſides that he ſent three Cardinals to *Rome*, with the character of Senators; to govern not only the City, but all *Italy* by their Conduct. But when he ſaw the *Genoeſes* and thoſe of *Piſa* involved in a bloody War one againſt the other, and that *Sardinia*, in the mean time, was taken by the *Saracens*, he gave that Iſland to *Frederick*, King of *Sicily*, upon condition, that he ſhould beat out the Enemy and recover it as ſoon as poſſible: The *Venetians* making a League with *Charles* the Second againſt the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, induced King *Raſſianus*, to come and deſire of the Pope to be inſtructed in the Orthodox Faith, in the year 1307. But the *Venetians* and *Charles* falling out again, they altered *Raſſianus*'s Mind by their ill Example. In the mean time a new Hereſie was broached at *Novara* by *Dulcinus* and *Margaret*, which allowed Men and Women who lived together, freely to exerciſe all acts of Uncleanneſs: And the profeſſors of it were called, the *Brotherhood*. *Clement* endeavoured to ſuppreſs them, and immediately ſent thither a party of Soldiers, with a Legat Apoſtolical; who, partly with Cold and Hunger, partly with force of Arms, routed them from the *Alps*, where they harboured. But *Dulcinus* and *Margaret* were taken alive, torn in pieces, and their bones burnt and ſcattered into the Air. About that time Intelligence was brought, that the *Templers*, who were formerly Chriſt's Soldiers, had revolted to the *Saracens*. For this reaſon all of them that could be apprehended were killed, and their Goods given partly to the *Rhodian* Knights who had poſſeſſed themſelves of that Iſland a little before, and partly to Religious uſes. *Philip* alſo, King of *France*, turned all the *Jews* out of his Territories, confiſcating their Goods for their Rogueries and their covetouſneſs. Not long after, *Albert* the Emperor being killed by his Nephew *John*, almoſt all the Cities of *Lombardy* choſe their Captains or Governors to be their Sovereign Lords; as at *Verona*, the *Scaligeri*; at *Mantoua*, the *Bonacoſſi*; at *Padua*, the *Carrareſi*. The Houſe of *Eſte* had been Maſters of *Ferrara* a long time before, but now they reduced *Modena* alſo. Nor did *Charles* the Second, King of *Naples*, think it below him to marry his Daughter *Beatrice* to *Azo*, Marquis *d'Eſte*. But *Friſcus* his Son, ſeeing he had gotten a Step-mother, puts his Father in Priſon and there murthered him; and then poſſeſſed himſelf of *Ferrara*, by the aſſiſtance of the *Venetians* who lent him aid to ſtorm a Caſtle, called *Thedaldo*. Then the Cardinal *Pelagura* was ſent to *Bologna* from *Clement*, to forbid the *Venetians* from medling with *Ferrara* under the pain of a Curſe; thoſe of *Ferrara* deſiring to be under the Church. Wherefore the *Venetians* thinking it their beſt way to make haſte, attacked the Caſtle Night and Day, till at laſt they took it. Which, when they had done, *Friſcus* himſelf, greedy of Revenge, ſet fire on half *Ferrara*, eſpecially their Houſes, who ſeemed to deſire a Change. The Citizens now, not able to endure ſo great an injury any longer, taking up Arms, turned *Friſcus* out of his uſurped Sovereignty, and ſurrendered themſelves to the *Venetians*, who in all probability might be able to defend them. At which *Palagura* was very much incenſed, and muſtered up all the Church forces immediately againſt the *Venetians* and thoſe of *Ferrara*. But *Clement*, underſtanding how obſtinate and how deſirous of Dominion the *Venetians* were, laid a Curſe upon them with an Interdiction; commanding all perſons, wherever, to look upon them as no better than Slaves, and to take away whatever they had from them, by which that trading Nation ſuffered great damage both in *England* and *France*. After this the Pope ſent other Cardinals into *Tuſcany*, which was all one Scene of War, to command *Robert* Duke of *Calabria*, the *Florentines*, and the other People of that Province, to break up their Siege at *Piſtoia*. They all obeyed him, ſave only the *Florentines* and thoſe of *Lucca*; ſo that he interdicted thoſe two States. But *Robert* went away for *Avignion* to complement the Pope, and then the *Piſtoieſes*, tired out by this long Siege, at length concluded upon a Surrender. The *Florentines* and thoſe of *Lucca* pulled down the Walls of the City aſſoon as they had taken it, and filling up the Trenches, divided the Country among them, leaving to the Citizens their lives only, the City itſelf remaining equally ſubject to both. But it was not long before the *Florentines* made themſelves ſole Maſters of it, by Walling it round within the Trenches. contrary to the Articles agreed upon by them and thoſe of *Lucca*. And that they might make all things the more ſecure, they bought *Aciano* a Caſtle belonging to the *Ubaldini*, which they pulled down: And in the Plain, not far diſtant, they built *Scarparia*, as ſome few years before they had done *Caſtel-Franco* and S. *Johns* in the Vally of *Arno*. Cardinal *Urſin* was now ſent into *Tuſcany*, to compoſe the Differences; whom the *Florentines* and thoſe of *Lucca* condemned, and thereby put him into ſuch a paſſion, that he publickly reiterated his Curſes and his Interdiction. For that reaſon the *Florentines* revenged themſelves upon the Clergy by exactions very long and very much. Nay farther, they uſed ſuch ſeverity upon this occaſion, that they put *Curſio Donato* (an eminent Citizen, and one that had deſerved well of the Publick,) to death, for Marrying *Ugutio Fagiolanis*'s Daughter; ſuch Enemies they were to all the Nobility. But afterward they were received into the Popes Favour for aſſiſting *Pelagura*, the Legat, in the recovery of *Ferrara*, and the Caſtle of *Thedaldo*, which was in poſſeſſion of the *Venetians*, in the year 1309. *Charles* the Second of *Naples*, dying the ſame year, his Son *Robert* was ſent by the Pope to be his Succeſſor; but he went to *Bologna* to *Palagura*, who preſently, in the name of the Church, made him Governor of *Ferrara* while it was yet in Arms. But he was to go on toward *Naples*, and ſo left *Dego Catelano*, an Eminent perſon, with a Troop of Horſe in the Gariſon. This *Dego* ſeeing he could not contain the People of *Ferrara* within their Duty by fair or foul words, ſent his Horſe down upon them from the Caſtle, and killed a great many of them, hanging up eight and twenty of the Houſe of *Eſte*, who aſpired to the Dominion. At that time *Henry* of *Lucenburgh* was choſen Emperor by the *Germans*, and confirmed by the Pope, upon condition, that he ſhould come into *Italy* within two years and receive his Crown at *Rome*. This the Pope did to the end that the commotions in *Italy* would be ſuppreſſed by the arrival of the Emperor. Who promiſed to perform what the Pope had injoined him, and immediately ſent Agents into *Italy* to all the States and Princes there; but chiefly to the *Florentines*, who at that time harraſſed them of *Arezzo*. The *Florentines* made anſwer, That ſo great a Prince as he was did not do prudently, in endeavouring to bring Foreiners into *Italy*, which was a Country that, as Emperor, he ought to defend from ſuch with his utmoſt power. And that he did not do well to protect them of *Arezzo*, who, he knew, had baniſhed the *Guelphs*, their Fellow-Citizens: Whereas it was the Emperors prerogative alone to baniſh or to recal from Exile. They ſay, that *Dantes* then told the *Florentines*, They were blind for making ſuch a fooliſh anſwer to the Emperor, than which nothing could be more to the diſadvantage of their State, eſpecially when ſo great and Warlike a Prince, with ſo great an Army, approached them. But indeed they were encouraged by the promiſes of King *Robert*, who, as he went into his Kingdom, gave them aſſurance, that he would always be a Patron to the *Guelphin* Faction. The Emperor was now advanced as far as *Piedemont*, where, in the Plains, all the Princes or Governors of Cities came to meet him. There where at that time two principal Factions in *Millain*, the *Turriani*, and the *Viconti*. *Guido Turriano* was Head of the *Guelphs*, as being Captain of the people, (to uſe their own word) and *Maffeo Viconti* of the *Gibellines*. And *Guido* fearing leſt the *Viconti* ſhould get into *Henry*'s Favour before him, upon the account of their Faction, he raiſed an Army and encamped in the Country of *Millain*, to ſee, as he himſelf ſaid, who durſt come into that City without his leave. When at the ſame time *Maffeo* ſent Agents to the Emperor to invite him to *Millain*, which was a City, he told him, that was the very Manſion-houſe of the *Roman* Empire. Thereupon *Henry* drew his Forces near to the City, and made a great buſtle, though *Guido* was got in before him. But he allayed all Tumults by a compoſition which he made upon theſe Terms; That *Guido* ſhould have *Marcelli*, and *Maffeo* be Captain General of his Horſe. And thus the Emperor having gotten poſſeſſion of *Millain*, almoſt all the adjacent Cities ſurrendred preſently, except *Aleſſandria*. Then he received the Iron Crown at *Millain*, according to cuſtom, but put the Citizens to ſo much expence, that the Commonalty finding themſelves rather oppreſſed than veſted with the Liberty they expected, betook themſelves to their Arms: The *Germans* ſeeing their Men killed by both Factions, went out of the Suburbs into the City, and called the Heads of the Parties to them. But *Galeatius*, Son to *Maffeo Viconti*, left his Father at home, and went, with a conſiderable number of Suppliants, to wait upon the Emperor, and told him, That the *Turriani*, affecting Sovereignty, had made that uproar in the City. Whereupon the *Germans* joining the *Gibelline* Faction, drave the *Turriani* (after ſome ſmall reſiſtance at S. *Maries New-ſtreet*) out of the City; from whence they fled in great numbers to *Vercelli*, by the perſuaſion of *Guido*. Thirty of this Faction being killed, of which four were *Turriano*'s. After this *Henry* moved toward *Cremona* and *Crema*, and called the *Guelphs* before him there, who had turned out the *Gibellines*, but he dealt mildly with the *Cremoneſes*, becauſe they rendered themſelves ſo freely, though he was a little ſeverer upon the *Cremeſes* and demoliſhed their Walls. Which ſtrook ſuch terror into thoſe of *Parma*, (who, by the perſuaſion of one *Gilbert Correggio*, had received the *Roſſi* into their Town,) that immediately they drove out the *Guelphs* and took in the Emperors Lieutenant. Thoſe of *Breſcia* defended themſelves for ſome time; but being ſmartly attacked by *Henry*, they fled in the Night to the Mountains, and left the City quite empty. The *Germans* entered it preſently, and pulled down the Walls. At which Calamities of their Neighbours, the people of *Mantua*, *Verona*, *Vicenza*, *Padua*, *Treviſo* and *Venice*, were ſo affrighted, that they immediately ſubmitted to the Emperors Orders. Thoſe alſo of *Piacenza* turned out *Albertus Scotus*, Captain of the *Guelphs*, and took in the Emperours Governour. Having ſettled Affairs after this manner in *Lombardy*, the Emperour went through *Piacenza* to *Genoa*, along with *Amadeus* of *Savoy*, attended by the Agents from *Piſa* and *Genoa*. Thither came Embaſſadors from *Robert* of *Naples* and *Frederick* King of *Sicily*, not long after; the former to make a ſhew of friendſhip, and the later to aſſure him of the real love which they had for him. For *Robert* had ſent his Mareſchal into *Tuſcany* with two thouſand Horſe, to aſſiſt the *Florentines* and thoſe of *Lucca*, if need were, againſt the Emperor. But *Henry* went by Sea to *Piſa*, and having ſent his Land-forces before him, did the men of *Lucca* a great deal of damage. Hitherto I thought fit to relate all the inconveniencies which were brought upon the *Italians*, which ſome impute wholly to *Clement*, who ſolicited *Henry* to come with an Army into *Italy*: Whilſt others tell us, that *Clement* did it for the advantage of the Country, becauſe of the civil Diſcords among them, which were the cauſe of much blood-ſhed in every City, nay in every little Caſtle. The Citizens were ſlain, old men murthered, young Children daſhed againſt the ground, with a boundleſs cruelty. Whereupon *Clement* uſed that ſaying of *Homer*, Let there be but one chief Lord, one Judge of all matters. *Henry* went on toward *Rome*, and ſent *Lewis* of *Savoy*, Son to *Amadeus*, with five hundred Horſe before, who taking up his quarters at one *Stephen Columna*'s Houſe, near the *Lateran*, put the *Urſin* Faction in a terrible fear. But *Henry* came firſt to *Viterbo* and thence to *Rome*, where he was very kindly received, not only by all the Nobility, but by the Citizens in general. After that, being Crowned by three Cardinals, he made the *Romans* ſwear Allegiance to him, as the cuſtom is, and made a great Feaſt, to which he invited all the Noblemen of the City, except the *Urſins*. But leſt in ſuch a concourſe of people, there ſhould ariſe any tumult through the animoſities of ſome Men, he planted his Soldiers in the Theatres, Baths and other fortified places; in the ſtrength of which Guards he was ſo confident, that he had the courage to demand of the People a Tribute which they never uſed to pay. Hereupon all the Citizens of both Factions fled to the *Urſins*, who had ſet good Guards about their Houſe, which ſtood near the *Tiber* and hard by *Hadrians* Bridge. At that the Emperor was ſo enraged, that he ſummoned the *Sea-Archers*, whom the men of *Piſa* had ſent him, to march into the City againſt the *Romans*;

but they were ſurprized and ſoon routed by *John*, the Brother of King *Robert*, who had placed his Sea-forces under the Mount *d' S. Sabina*. He alſo let in the Horſe who quartered not far off; and, by the aid of the *Roman* people, forced the Emperor himſelf to retreat as far as *Tivoli*. After him *John*, *Robert*'s Brother, went away, by Command from the Cardinals, and left the City quiet. But *Henry* going from *Perugia* arrived at *Arezzo*, where he accuſed *Robert* the King of Treaſon; and becauſe he did not appear upon Summons, deprived him of his Kingdom, againſt the Mind of *Clement*, who thought he had done a thing of ſuch conſequence in a very improper place, beſides that it was none of his Prerogative. For he ſaid, It was the Popes peculiar Province to diſpoſe of the Kingdom of *Sicily* on both ſides the *Pharo*. The Emperor marching from *Arezzo* led his Army toward *Florence* and *Lucca*, who were Allies to *Robert*. But ſeeing he was not able to ſtorm a Town, he poſſeſſed himſelf of *Poggibonci*; which, when he had fortified, he declared War againſt the *Seneſes*, becauſe they were ſo niggardly and ſparing in ſupplying him with Proviſions. But falling ſick he went to the Bath at *Macerata*, from whence he came back to *Bonconvento* much weaker than he was before. There, after ſome days, he died; but it was ſuſpected he was poiſoned by a Monk at *Florence*, who was induced by large Rewards and Promiſes to give him the Euchariſt dipped in Poiſon. The State of *Piſa* (now that the Emperor was dead) feared the power of the *Florentines*, and therefore choſe *Ugutio Fagiolano* their Captain and ſole Governor; who not long after reduced thoſe of *Lucca*, and took away their Lands from them, by the aſſiſtance of the Cavalry, that had ſerved under *Henry*. In the mean time *Clement* was very much troubled, not only at all the other evils that *Italy* underwent, but that S. *Conſtantines* Church ſhould be burnt down. Wherefore he ſent Money to the Clergy and people of *Rome*, toward the repair of that Church, though there was ſuch Scarcity and Dearth in his Country at that time, that he could hardly buy himſelf Victuals and Drink. Which Miſeries were foretold by frequent Eclipſes of the Sun, ſeveral Comets, and the Plague which was almoſt Epidemical. But *Clement* applyed himſelf to ſettle the State of the Church, and therefore he exerciſed his Epiſcopal Function three times, not only in making ſeveral Cardinals, who were excellent Men, but, in three Councils which he called in ſeveral places and at ſeveral times, he did many things with prudence and deliberation. For he ſuppreſſed *Dulcinus*'s Sect, (as I told you) that oppoſed the Churchmen; and took off the Templers, who were fallen into very great Errors, (as denying Chriſt, *&c.*) and gave their Goods to the Knights of *Jeruſalem*. He likewiſe withſtood the King of *France* at *Poictou*, when he made unreaſonable and unhandſom Demands; for the King would have had *Boniface* cenſured, and *Nogaretius* and *Sarra* abſolved. The firſt requeſt he never obtained, but the ſecond he at laſt had granted to him, upon *Nogaretius*'s Promiſe, that he would go againſt the *Saracens* for Penance: Which expedition *Clement* himſelf had a great mind to, as appears by his Councils. Afterwards he canonized *Celeſtin* the Fifth, by the name of *Peter the Confeſſor*, becauſe approved by Miracles; and ſet forth the *Clementines*, which he compoſed during the Council at *Vienna*. But in ſucceeding time he was afflicted with divers Diſeaſes; for he was troubled ſometimes with a Dy-a Dyſentery, ſomtimes with a pain in his Stomack, or his Sides, of which he dy'd, in the eighth Year, tenth Month, and fifteenth Day of his Pontificate. The See was then vacant two Years, three Months, and ſeventeen Days, whilſt the Cardinals were at a ſtand, whom they ſhould chooſe. Nor was there leſs Diſcord among the Electors of the Empire, upon the Death of *Henry*, ſome propoſing *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, others *Frederick*, Duke of *Auſtria*. And theſe two engaging in War one againſt the other, *Frederick* was Conquer'd; at which, *Lewis* grew ſo proud, that he not only called himſelf Emperor, without Authority from *Rome*, but favour'd the *Viconti* in *Lombardy*, ſo far that they got into *Millain*. And this he did to make his own paſſage more eaſie toward *Rome*, where he was to receive a Golden Crown, according to the uſual Cuſtom. Then began the People of *Tuſcany*, and all the *Guelphs*, to tremble, when they ſaw *Lewis* Emperor, and that he was likely to recover all the Rights of the Empire in a ſhort time, by the help of the *Viconti*, and *Ugutio Fagiolani*, who was ſole Governour of *Piſa* and *Lucca*. Wherefore they endeavour'd to bring over to their Party, by Promiſes and Preſents, *Petramala*, Biſhop and Lord of *Arezzo*, and *Philip* of *Tarento*, a Prince, and Brother to King *Robert*. For *Philip* at that time was very ſtrong in Cavalry, and a very good Soldier.

JOHN XXIII.

JOHN the twenty third, formerly called *James* of *Caturco*, Biſhop of *Porto*, after a long Debate between twenty three Cardinals, was choſen Pope at *Lyons*, and the 5th of *September* received the Pontifical Crown in the Cathedral Church there: From thence he removed, with the whole Court, to *Avignion*, where he made eight Cardinals in the *Ember-week* before *Advent*; ſome of which were *James* of *Caturco*, his Siſters Son, and *John Cajetan*, Cardinal Deacon of S. *Theodores*, of the Family of the *Urſins*. Beſides that, he Canoniz'd, for a Confeſſor, *Lewis* Biſhop of *Tholouſe*, Son to *Charles*, late King of *Sicily*, though there are ſome that aſcribe this Act to *Boniface*, as I told you before. He forced *Hugo*, Biſhop of *Caturco*, to relinquiſh his Biſhoprick and Prieſthood, and ſtripp'd him of all his Pontifical Ornaments, as the Ring, the Mitre, the Coife, the Cap, and the Rochet. And after he had deprived, degraded, and (to uſe their own Phraſe) deliver'd him over to the Secular Juriſdiction, he was tortur'd to Death for conſpiring againſt the Pope. The Church of *Tholouſe*, which he loved entirely, he made an Archbiſhoprick; and improved ſix Caſtles, that belonged to it, into ſo many Cities, that the Archbiſhop might have ſomthing under him which was honourable, and worth his Governing. He alſo joyned *Limoſa*, that is, *Wiſelburg*, and the Abby of S. *Pontius*, to the Archbiſhoprick of *Narbonne*; nay, ſo much addicted was he to Novelties, that he divided ſome ſingle Biſhopricks into 2, and united others that were diſtinct; turning Abbacies into Biſhopricks, and Biſhopricks into Abbacies. He likewiſe created new Dignities, and new Societies in the Church; and alter'd thoſe, which had been formerly conſtituted.

Yet he was ſo grateful, that he confirmed the Deſign of ſetting forth that Book called *Clementinæ*, or Rules of *Clement*; and commanded all Doctors, in publick Schools, to read it for Lectures. He reduced the Order of *Gramont*, which had been corrupted by ſome factious fellows, into a better form, by taking away ſuch things as might be inconvenient, and adding other things that might keep up the Grandeur of Religion. He loved the Church of *Saragoza* ſo well that he made the City a *Metropolis*, and aſſigned it the Government of five Cathedrals out of eleven, which were under the Archbiſhop of *Tarragona*. He alſo created a new Order of Knights, to fight under Chriſt's Banner in *Portugal*, and oppoſe the *Saracens* in *Granada* and *Africa*. *Bætica* was the old Name for *Granada*, which lies to the *Mediterranean*, and is ſo called, I ſuppoſe, from the abundance it yields of a ſort of Grain that Dyers uſe. Now the Head-quarters of this Order, which the Pope conſtituted, was in a Sea-port Town, in the *Dioceſe* of *Sylva*; and the Knights had all the Templers Goods, by conſent of the King of *Portugal*, that they might be more at leiſure to fight for Chriſt. Their Cenſor and Moderator is the Abbat of a Monaſtery of *Ciſtercians* at *Alcoaſia*, in the Dioceſe of *Liſbon*, who has the power to liſt and disband a Knight as he pleaſes. Afterward he made two S. *Thomaſes*, that is to ſay, *Thomas* Biſhop of *Hereford*, a Man of a great Family, a good Life, extraordinary Learning, and famous for his Miracles; and *Thomas Aquinas*, a celebrated Doctor of the Order of S. *Dominic*, of whoſe Life and Writings I have formerly made ſeveral Remarks. Not long after, he created ſeven Cardinals at a ſecond Ordination, in the Year 1322: And preſently thereupon he ſet forth an Edict, to declare all thoſe for obſtinate Hereticks, who affirm'd, That Chriſt and his Diſciples had nothing which they could call their own. Which certainly does not much agree with the Scripture, that tells us in many places, how Chriſt, his Diſciples, and true Followers, had a real propriety in nothing: As in that paſſage of the Goſpel, where it ſays, *He that does not ſell all that he has, and give to the Poor, cannot be my Diſciple.* Nay, more than that, he accounted every one an Heretick, that ſaid the Diſciples, as ſuch, had not power to ſell, to give, to bequeath, and to get, becauſe when they enter'd into Religion, they were to be under the Will of another. Which is the reaſon, that ſlaves do not gain any thing for themſelves, but their Maſter, or give the poor what they formerly got, if he command them. And of theſe poſitions he ſent Apoſtolical Tranſcripts to all publick Schools, that the Scholars might not dare to Diſpute of that matter any more. Moreover, he condemned the Opinion of one Frier *Peter*, of the Order of *Minors*, who had animated a whole Convent of the third Order to imitate Chriſt's poverty: Of which number many were condemned and burnt. After that, he made ten Cardinals more; among whom he conſider'd *John Columna* and his Brother *Matthew*, who were of the *Urſin* Family, and of the Order of *Preachers*. Whilſt the Pope was imploy'd in theſe Affairs, the *Florentine* Army was overcome in a bloody fight by *Ugutio Fagiolani*, not far from the Mount *Catino*. But thoſe of *Lucca*, not able to endure the Tyrany of *Ugutio* any longer, took an occaſion, and turn'd *Nerius*, his Son, out of the City, whilſt he was going to puniſh *Caſtruccio*, a perſon of a noble Family, and good Courage; whom he had put in Priſon, that he might get the ſpoils which *Caſtruccio* had taken from the Enemies. *Nerius*, being baniſh'd out of *Lucca*, incenſed his Father againſt that State, upon whom thoſe of *Piſa* ſhut their Gates, as he was going out of the City to meet the Enemy. Upon that, he and his Son eſcaped to *Malaſpina*, after he had often attempted, and been as often fruſtrated in the Recovery of his Sovereignty; but by Command from the Pope he came back at laſt into *Romagna*, which was his native Countrey. By this means *Caſtruccio* was promoted from extream miſery to the greateſt happineſs: For he was taken out of Priſon, and made ſole Governour of *Lucca*. But the Pope hearing that the *Eſteſes* had routed the Church Forces out of *Ferrara*, and gotten it totally into their own hands; and that the Viſcounts, by aſſiſtance of *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, had made themſelves Maſters of *Millain*, he ſaid, he would let the *Eſteſes* alone for a while; but interdicted the Viſcounts, though he was not ſo angry with them as with *Lewis*, who uſurped the Title of Emperor. At the ſame time the *Gibellins* of *Genoa* were baniſh'd by their Fellow-Citizens, the *Guelphs*, aſſiſted by King *Robert*, to whom they had committed the Government of their City, and fled in great numbers to *Savona*. But there too, ſome time after, *Robert* perſecuted them every one in their Exile, and reduced the *Savoneſes*, as he went into *France*.

The Pope, underſtanding that the *Guelphs* were generally oppreſs'd after *Robert*'s departure, ſent *Charles* Earl of *Valois*, the Son of *Philip*, King of *France*, into *Italy*, to protect the *Guelphs*, and thoſe eſpecially that were at *Vercelli* with the *Turrianoes*, who were Lords of that City. But Viſcount *Galeatius*, by command from *Lewis* the Emperor, prevented *Charles*, and expelled the *Turrianoes* out of *Vercelli* before he came; upon which, that City became ſubject to the Viſcounts. Not long after, *Caſtruccio* gets into *Piſtoia*, as *Guido Petramala*, a little before, had into *Tipherno*, though the *Florentines* withſtood him. But *Caſtruccio* relying upon the aid of Viſcount *Galeatius*, (for he had ſent his Son *Accio* with one thouſand five hundred Soldiers to aſſiſt him) purſu'd and beat the *Florentines* back to the very Walls, killing a great many men. The Pope, ſeeing the *Bavarian* reſolv'd to embroil all things, interdicted him with the uſual Ceremonies; and degraded *Guido Petramala* from the Prieſthood, after he had got poſſeſſion of *Tipherno*. He alſo ſeparated *Cortona* from the Biſhoprick of *Arezzo*, and made it a City of it ſelf, making *John* of *Viterbo*, Biſhop of it. In the mean time, *Nicolas d'Eſte*, Lord of *Ferrara*, ſtorm'd and took *Argenta*, a Town belonging to the Church of *Ravenna*, by the aſſiſtance of *Paſſerino Bonacoſſio*, Lord of *Mantua*, who a little before had married *Nicolas*'s Siſter. Theſe two alſo joyn'd their Forces, and attempted *Bologna*, but went off with great loſs, being defeated by *Beltrando*, who commanded the Church Forces, and not long after curſed by the Pope. *Ferraria* too was interdicted, till they reſtored *Argenta*——— But *Caſtruccio* at that time did torment the *Florentines*, after he had taken *Segna*, from whence he made frequent Sallies upon them, inſomuch that, deſpairing of their Affairs, they called in *Charles* the Son of *Robert* to be their Governour. At that time Pope *John* ſent *John Urſin* into *Italy* with all ſpeed, to animate the *Florentines* and the *Guelphs* againſt the *Bavarian*, who was then coming over the *Alps* with a mighty Army. But he, in his way to *Rome*, went firſt to *Millain*, at the earneſt requeſt of the *Gibellins*: Where having received his Iron Crown, he wanted Money, and was forced to raiſe ſome upon the people; which *Galeatius*, their Governour, making ſome ſcruple of, he put all the *Viconti* in Priſon, and choſe four and twenty Citizens to manage the publick Affairs, with a chief Officer of his own Family. Afterward the *Bavarian*, at the requeſt of *Caſtruccio*, ſet all the *Viconti* at Liberty, whil'ſt they were at *Lucca*, where the Emperor was entertain'd with great reſpect and kindneſs. And when he went from thence, he was attended to *Rome* by *Caſtruccio*, with one thouſand five hundred Horſe; where, in the Palace of S. *Giovanni Laterano*, he was crown'd by *Stephano Columna*, at the Command of the Clergy and People. At that time there were two chief Officers in the City, choſen out of the Nobility, which they called the Emperor's Lieutenants: And one of 'em, called *Nicolas di Conti*, being then abſent, it fell to *Stephano*'s lot to do that Office. Being Crown'd Emperor, he preſently made *Peter* of *Corbiere*, of the Order of *Minors*, born near *Rieti*, Pope, (to Rival *John* the twenty third) who was a Man of mean Birth, but a learned Man, and very fit for buſineſs. This perſon had a Wife formerly, againſt whoſe deſire and inclination he enter'd into the Order of S. *Francis*. So, being made a mock Pope, and called by the Name of *Nicolas* the fifth, he was ſaluted by the Emperor, and all that were there along with him, as the true Vicar of Chriſt; who likewiſe made Cardinals and Biſhops of Men like himſelf.— In the mean time, the *French* Horſe that were left in Gariſon at *Florence*, having ſurpriſed *Piſtoia* in the Night, they forc'd *Caſtruccio* to depart immediately from *Rome*. Who having firſt joyned the *Viconti's* Forces, came to *Lucca* and *Piſa*, and thence moving toward *Piſtoia*, he beſieged it a long time, and at laſt compelled it to ſurrender for want of Proviſions. But the *Bavarian* followed *Caſtruccio* with an Army, and left the Anti-Pope at *Viterbo*, having a Deſign to ſtorm *Florence*; and perhaps he had taken it, if *Caſtruccio* had not happen'd to die of a Diſeaſe which he contracted by the exceſſive pains that he took. Yet the *Bavarian* forgot his great kindneſs to him, and baniſh'd his Sons from *Piſa* and *Lucca*, as they were diſpoſing of Soldiers to Guard the ſeveral Cities; and took poſſeſſion of the Towns. At the ſame time, *Gale*[illegible] alſo dying, his Sons fled to the *Bavarian*, deſiring him, That he would reſtore them to their Country, for ſuch a Sum as they promiſed him. He thereupon, being very greedy of Money, ſent *Accio* home, but kept his brother *Marco* for an Hoſtage, till the whole Money was paid. And then, leaving the Anti-Pope at *Piſa*, with Viſcount *Marco*, he went to *Millain*, in order to go for *Germany*, but could not be received into the City by *Accio*, who too well remember'd the injuries done to his Father. But the *German* Soldiers, who kept *Marco* in *Tuſcany*, for an Hoſtage, when they knew his good Temper, ſwore Allegiance to him, and made him, of their Priſoner, their Captain, ſo that he was ſtraitway Maſter of *Lucca*, by the Surrender of *Caſtruccio*'s Soldiers, who gave up the Caſtle into his hands. And yet not long after, the *Germans*, in *Marco*'s abſence, changed their mind, and ſold the City of *Lucca* to a certain *Genoeſe* of the Family of *Spinola*, a great Seaman. So that, after all, the *Bavarian* return'd to *Germany*, without having perform'd any thing to the advantage of the Empire: And *Boniface*, Earl of *Piſa*, to gratifie Pope *John*, brought the Anti-Pope to *Avignion*, where he died in Priſon. And now the Pope, being freed of his two greateſt Cares, to wit, the Anti-Pope being dead, and the *Bavarian* gone out of *Italy* into to *Germany*, he declared an Expedition againſt the *Saracens*, and impoſed new Tenths to be paid to *Philip* upon the account of that Voyage. The *Florentines* were then in *Lucca*, but were driven out immediately by the *Bohemians*, whom the people of *Breſcia* had invited into *Italy*, againſt the *Bergameſes*, and by whoſe aſſiſtance alſo the Pope's Legat had taken *Parma*, *Rheggio*, and *Modena*. But he, making an Alliance with *John*, King of *Bohemia*, quickly changed all the Meaſures of the *Italian* Factions. For whoſoever the Pope and King of *Bohemia* were Confederates with, *Robert* and the *Florentines* were certainly againſt, without any diſtinction of *Guelphs* or *Gibellins*. For *Maſtino Scala*, Lord of *Verona*, *Philippino Gonzaga* of *Mantua*, the *Carrarieſes*, Lords of *Padua*, the *Eſteſes* of *Ferrara*, enter'd into Alliance and League with *Robert*, by whom the *Florentines* alſo were aſſiſted, and took *Piſtoia*, by Surrender from ſome of the Citizens, without oppoſition. In the mean while, the Marqueſſes of *Eſte* were not abſolved from the Eccleſiaſtical Interdiction, before they were tired by the Petitions of thoſe of *Ferrara*, and reſtored *Argenta*, which they were poſſeſſed of, to the Church of *Ravenna*. Yet ſtill, relying upon the aſſiſtance of the *Scaligeri*, they attacked the Caſtle of S. *Felix* in *Modena*, till *Charles*, the King of *Bohemia*'s Son, came upon them, with *Manfred*, ſirnamed *Pius*, who was Lord of *Carpo*, and by theſe two Confederates they were Routed, and beaten out of the Field. 'Tis certain, that eight hundred of their Soldiers fell in that Battel, and many of their Nobles were taken, and among others of the greateſt note, one *Nicolas d'Eſte*, Brother to *Rainaldo* the Marqueſs. The Legat of *Bologna* took this occaſion, and getting a conſiderable Army together, commanded by *Galeot Malateſta*, of *Rimini*, *Franciſco Ordelapo* of *Forli*, *Richard Manfred* of *Faenza*, and *Hoſtaſio Polentano* of *Ravenna*, (at that time Lords of their reſpective Cities) he beſieged *Ferrara*, which was then ſharply attacked, and the Suburbs of S. *Anthony* taken, when Auxiliary Forces, ſent by *Philippino Gonzaga*, *Maſtino Scala*, and *Ubertino* of *Carrara* encouraged the *Ferrarians* to ſally forth; which they did with ſuch ſucceſs, that they routed the Enemy, and took moſt of their Captains. But the Earl of *Romagna*, who was taken, was chang'd for *Nicolas d'Eſte*; and the reſt were ſent ſafe home, upon condition, that they ſhould take up Arms no more againſt the Houſe of *Eſte*. *Rainaldo d'Eſte*, proud of ſuch a Victory, march'd into *Bologna*, where he ſpoiled all the Country round about, and had very near taken the Town. They of *Bologna* well hoped that the King of *Bohemia* would have aſſiſted the Legat; and it was reported, That he was on his way thither, when on the ſudden, News was brought to him that *Maſtino Scala* had taken *Breſcia* and *Bergamo*, by Surrender; and that *Accio Viconti* was got into *Pavia*, and ſtorming the Caſtle. For this reaſon he deſiſted from any farther attempts, and leaving his Son at *Parma*, went himſelf, with ſome Troops, to *Pavia*; where, ſeeing he could not take in the Forts that the *Viconti* had raiſed, he only plunder'd the Country about *Millain*, and went back again to *Parma*, without effecting his Deſign. There he underſtood, that *Americk*, Son to *Caſtruccio*, had gotten *Lucca*, by means of ſome Friends within; but that the Caſtle held out ſtill, though the King, for a Sum of Money, ſurrendered that too, becauſe he was to go ſhortly into *Germany*, being weary of the *Italian* Factions. For the *Viconti*, having taken the Caſtle of *Pavia*, made Excurſions far and near.

Wherefore placing a *German* Gariſon in *Modena*, and *Rheggio*, and committed the care of *Parma* to *Marſilio* and *Piedro Ruheo*, he went into *Germany*, but promiſed to come ſuddenly back again with a greater Army. When the King was gone, the *Bologneſes*, with the aid of the *Florentines*, and the Marqueſs *d'Eſte*, beat out the Legat, and recover'd their Liberty, killing all the Eccleſiaſtical Forces both within and without the City. So that the Legat growing helpleſs, writ to *Avignion* in the year 1334. juſt when *John* the Pope dyed, in the ninetieth Year of his Age, and in the nineteenth Year and the fourth Month of his Pontificate, and left behind him, in the Treaſury, ſuch a maſs of Gold, as never any Pope did before him. He was buried in the Cathedral, in great State. Some ſay, that *Petro Mutroneo*, once Pope, was Canonized by *John*; and that *Gentilis* of *Fuligno*, and *Dyno* of *Florence*, two famous Phyſicians, were at the ſame time rewarded by him with Mony and Honour: For he was reckon'd a great Lover of learned Men.

BENEDICT XII.

BENEDICT the Twelfth, of *Tholouſe*, a *Ciſtercian*, formerly call'd *James*, Cardinal Prieſt of S. *Priſca*, was made Pope at *Avignion*, the ſixteenth Day after *John*'s Death, and preſently confirm'd the Cenſures which *John* had laid upon the *Bavarian*, as one that uſurped the Empire. By this means the Empire was vacant, and every thing tended toward a War, when every one, though never ſuch a petit Lord, endeavour'd to encroach upon his Neighbour. For the *Scaligeri* were not content to be ſole Governours of *Verona*, *Breſcia*, and *Bergamo*, but ſtrove to get *Parma* too from the *Rubei*. *Gonzaga* had a mind to get *Rheggio*, *d'Eſte Modena*, and the *Florentines Lucca*. But the *Scaligeri*, ſeeing they could not take *Parma*, becauſe the Soldiers within, eſpecially the *Germans*, who hated the *Scaligeri*, defended it ſo briskly, they march'd toward *Vincenza*. But they could do no good upon it; and therefore hearing that the *Germans* were gone from *Parma*, they return'd thither, and ſtraight took it by Surrender of the very *Rubeans* themſelves. *Nicolas d'Eſte* alſo took *Modena* by the aſſiſtance of his Father-in-law, one *Guido Gonziaco*, whoſe Daughter he had married. And *Philippino Gonzaga* had *Rheggio* voluntarily yielded to him by the Citizens. But at the ſame time the growing Power of *Maſtino Scala*, who had gotten into *Parma*, *Lucca*, and *Padua*, by Surrender from *Ubertino Carrara*, made all the Princes and States almoſt in *Italy* conſpire to ruin his Grandeur; but the moſt zealons of them were the *Venetians*; *Gonzaga* and *d'Eſte* beſieged *Verona*, whilſt *Lucino*, with another Army, took *Breſcia* and *Bergamo*. But the *Venetians* fearing, leſt by their endeavours to leſſen the power of one they might augment that of another, they make a Peace with *Maſtino Scaliger*, upon Condition, That if he would let the *Carrareſes* have *Padua*, and the Viſcount *Breſcia* and *Bergamo*, as he formerly had, he ſhould keep *Verona*, *Vincenza*, *Parma*, and *Lucca*. This Peace was very offenſive to the *Florentines*, who were their Friends and Allies, and had a great mind to have *Lucca*: Yet they deferr'd their Complaint till another time, and at that preſent held their Tongues. But the Pope ſent a Legat into *Italy*, who perſuaded the Senate and People of *Rome*, That they would exerciſe the Senatorian Office in the Name of him and the Church, though they had done it for a long time in the Name of the King. For this reaſon *Stephano Columna* was continu'd Senator for five Years, and Colleagues or Partners in the Office were aſſigned him annually. But when the Pope had ſent for *Stephano* to *Avignion*, *Urſus*, Earl of *Anguillaria*, who was *Stephano's* Colleague, made *Francis Petrarcha*, a Man very eloquent, eſpecially in his Mother-tongue, and famous ſor the Poems he had publiſh'd, Poet *Laureat*, in the Capitol, before all the Nobility and People of *Rome*, in the Year 1338. But the Pope ſearing leſt, when the Empire was vacant, *Italy* might be invaded by any foreign Enemy, he made Viſcount *Luchino*, and *John* his Brother, Archbiſhop of *Millain*, Lieutenants of *Millain*, and other Cities that were in their Poſſeſſion. The ſame power he delegated to *Maſtino Scala*, over *Verona* and *Vincenza*; to *Philippino Gonzaga*, in *Mantua* and *Reggio*; to *Albertino*, in *Carrara* and *Padua*; and to *Obicio d'Eſte*, in *Ferrara*, *Modena*, and *Argenta*, and that very juſtly, as he pretended; for the Empire being vacant, all the power belonging to it devolves upon the Pope, who is the ſole Vicar of Jeſus Chriſt upon the Earth. But he ſet a Tribute upon *Obicio d'Eſte*, that he ſhould pay ten thouſand Pounds every Year to the Church of *Rome*. This Pope, in all his Reign, made but ſix Cardinal-presbyters, and that at one time; who were excellent perſons, not of his own kindred, as 'tis uſual now adays, but Men called forth to receive ſuch a Dignity, out of ſeveral Nations. Yet I do not diſapprove of them, that are preferr'd to honour, becauſe they are related to the perſon who confers it, if they are deſerving. Beſides, he was a Man of ſuch Conſtancy, that he could not be induced to do an Injury, either by Force, by Importunity, or promiſes of Gain. For he loved good Men, and on the contrary was an open Enemy to all evil and flagitious perſons. He likewiſe often attempted, by his Legats, to make Peace between *Philip* of *France* and *Edward* of *England*, but to no purpoſe, ſince they were ſuch Foes, as to have fought many bloody Battels one with another. For *Edward's* Navy engaged with the *French*, above *Seluſas*, near *Flanders*, ſo fiercely, that he overcame them, and kill'd (they ſay) full thirty three thouſand *French* in that one fight. But the Pope, having tried to effect that buſineſs ſo often, at laſt deſiſted, and betook himſelf to building a Palace for ſucceeding Popes, with ſeveral Towers, and making of Orchards, which he finiſhed. He alſo repaired the Roof of S. *Peter's* Church at his own charge, as the Inſcription under his Statue there ſhews. He died in the ſeventh year, third Month, and ſeventeenth Day of his Pontificate, and left a great quantity of Gold behind him, not to his Relations, but to the Church. He had a Deſign to have *Zoto*, a famous Painter of that Age, to draw the Hiſtories of the Martyrs in the Houſe that he built, but was prevented by Death: At which, every body was grieved, he was ſo good and ſo learned a Man; and ſhewed their Sorrow by their Tears and Sighs, whilſt they attended at his Funeral.

CLEMENT VI.

CLEMENT the ſixth, a *Limonſin*, formerly called *Peter*, at firſt a Monk, and then Archbiſhop of *Rouen*, was at laſt made Pope at *Avignion*. He was a Man of great Learning, and exact Eloquence, liberal to all Men, affable, and very humane; elected Pope the ſeventh of *May*, and crowned the ſixteenth of *June*, in the Year 1342. In the firſt Year of his Pontificate, and the *Ember-week* after his Coronation, he created eight Cardinal Prieſts, and two Deacons, that is to ſay, his Brother, who was a Monk of *Tulle*, and *William*, his Siſters Son. Of thoſe Prieſts alſo which he made, one was his Relation by Marriage; and the following Year he made two more, of which, one was his Nephew by another Siſter. This Pope, when the *Romans* petition'd, and told him, That whereas *Boniface* the eighth had formerly granted a full Remiſſion of Sins to all that viſited the *Shrines* of the Apoſtles *Peter* and *Paul*, every hundredth Year; (which ſpace of time the *Romans* antiently called *Sæculum*, an *Age*, and thence their *Games* once in an hundred Years, *Ludi Sæculares*) they thought it more convenient the time ſhould be contracted, becauſe Men ſeldom lived ſo long, he freely conſented that the Jubilee ſhould be kept every fiftieth Year. But when he found that all *Italy* was in an uproar, he confirmed only *Luchinus* and *John*, two Viſcounts, his Lieutenants in the Duchy of *Millain*, without mentioning the other Princes of *Italy*. For he thought that they alone were able to reſiſt the *Bavarian*, who (as he gave out himſelf) was coming down into *Italy*, and, to requite the Pope, confirm'd many Lieutenants in the Towns and Places belonging to the Church, by his Imperial Authority. For he continued *John* of *Vicombu* at *Viterbo*; *Galeot Malateſta*, and his Brethren, at *Rimini*, *Peſaro*, and *Fano*; *Antonio Feletrario*, at *Urbino*; *Nolphus* and *Gallaſius*, two Brothers, at *Callio*; *Allegretus Clavellus*, at *Furriano*; *Bulgarutius*, at *Matelica*; *Iſmidutius*, at *Sancto Severino*; *Gentilis Varrenens*, at *Camerino*; *Michael*, at Mount *Milon*; *Pongonius*, at *Cingoli*; *Nicolas Boſcaretus*, at *Eſio*; *Guido Polentenſis*, at *Ravenna*; *Francis* and *Synebald*, at *Forli*, and *Cæſena*; *John Manfred*, at *Faenza*; though before, ſome of theſe Men had gotten the ſame places under them, partly by force, and partly by the good Will of the Inhabitants, as I ſaid in the Life of *Benedict*. But in the mean time, the *Frescobaldi*, who were eminent Citizens of *Florence*, were baniſh'd by their fellow-Citizens, and would have inſtigated the *Piſanes* to War, but it was at an ill time: For the *Florentines*, at that time, were juſt upon buying *Parma* of the *Scaligeri*, and to that end had ſent ſome of their Sons to *Ferrara*, as Hoſtages, promiſing to give 'em for it 500000 *l*. For there were two Arbitrators, one choſen by each Party out of *Ferrara*. But the *Florentines* having engaged in ſeveral bloody Fights, one upon the neck of another, were extreamly weaken'd both by the *Piſanes* and their Allies, and at laſt even forced to ſlip the opportunity of ſuch a Bargain. Yet they did not neglect to ſend aids to the people of *Lucca*, when they were beſieged by the *Piſanes*; beſides that their Allies helped 'em too, under the Conduct of *Malateſta* of *Rimini*, ſirnamed *Ungarus*, who forced the *Piſanes* from *Lucca*. At that time, *Robert*, who was an Ally of the *Florentines*, being moved with the calamities of his Confederates, ſent one *Gualter*, a *French* Man, that they called Governour of *Athens*, with a ſmall party of Horſe, into *Tuſcany*, who having by mere Stratagem defeated *Malateſta*, who was but an unskilful Captain, he gain'd ſo cunningly upon the Favour of the *Florentines*, that in a ſhort time he was both General of their Forces, and Governour of their City, and turned out all the other Officers in it. Thoſe of *Arezzo* alſo, of *Piſtoia*, and *Volaterra*, promoted his Succeſs, by ſurrendring themſelves immediately to him. But when *Accio Corrigienſes* had deliver'd up *Parma*, which he could not keep, to *Obicio d' Eſte*, *Philippino Gonzaga*, provoked to War by *Obicio*, got an Army together, and near to *Reggio* engaged with him ſo furiouſly, that he routed and purſu'd him as far as *Ferrara*. Then *Obicio*, finding his condition deſperate, put *Parma*, which he could not defend, under the protection of *Luchino*, in the Year 1366. But when the *Florentines* could no longer endure the Tyranny of *Gualter*, and many were put to Death every day for conſpiring againſt him, how to get their Liberty, *Angelo Acciaiolo*, Biſhop of the City, ſends away for the Citizens, ready armed, into his Biſhoprick, with a reſolution to recover the Liberty of his Country. At which, the Tyrant ſeeing himſelf too weak for the Citizens, made the Biſhop himſelf Umpire concerning the Terms of Peace, and ſo march'd off in ſafety, with what he had, in the tenth Month of his Reign. But the Rabble of the City ſhewed themſelves ungrateful, (as indeed they always do) and baniſh'd the Nobility, by whoſe Conduct and Courage they had gain'd their Liberty, ſpoiling their Goods, and demoliſhing their Houſes, and leſt any thing ſhould be lacking that might diſturb all *Italy*, there were great animoſities ariſen in the Kingdom of *Naples*. For King *Robert*, dying without Iſſue Male, bequeathed *Johanna*, Daughter of *Andrew*, his Nephew, for a Wife to King *Charles* of *Hungary*'s Son, who came at that time a Youth to *Naples*. But *Johanna*, hating him, for a dull Fellow, kill'd him by ſurprize in the City, which was generally againſt the Match; and was married to his Couſin German, one *Lewis*, Son to a former Prince of *Tarento*, who was known to be *Robert*'s Brother. But *Lewis*, King of *Hungary*, and Brother of her firſt Husband, reſolving to revenge ſo great a piece of Villany, came into *Italy* with a very well order'd Army, and firſt attacked the *Sulmoneſes*, who had the boldneſs to oppoſe him. But in the mean while, the manner of chooſing Senators at *Rome* was alter'd by Apoſtolical Authority, and *Nicolas de Renty*, Citizen of *Rome*, and publick Notary, a Man very earneſt and high for Liberty, when he had taken the Capitol, gain'd ſo much good will and Authority among all the people, that he could encline them to what he pleaſed. And that he might work upon them the more effectually, he uſed this Motto; *Nicolas, the ſevere and merciful Patron of Liberty, Peace, and Juſtice, and the Illuſtrious Redeemer of the Sacred State of* Rome. With theſe great Words he created ſuch an admiration of himſelf, that all the People of *Italy* deſired by their Embaſſadors to enter into a League and Friendſhip with him: Beſide that ſome forein Nations look'd upon the Glory of the *Roman* Empire to be now reviving. But his vain boaſting continu'd not long; for whilſt he was kind to ſome Citizens, and an Enemy to others, he all on the ſudden was accounted, inſtead of a Patron, a Tyrant. So that in the ſeventh Month of his Government, of his own accord, without any bodies knowledge, in a dark night, he went diſguiſed from *Rome* into *Bohemia*, to *Charles*, the Son of *John*, whom *Clement*, a little before, had made the Electors put in nomination for Emperor, becauſe he was ſo fine a Scholar; beſides, that he had a mind to affront the *Bavarian*, by ſetting up a Competitor. So the Tribune, i. e. *Nicolas*, was taken by *Charles*, and carry'd to *Avignion* for a Preſent to the Pope. But *Lewis*, having gotten into *Sulmona*, after a long Siege, makes himſelf eaſily Maſter of the whole Kingdom, ſince *Johanna* and the Adulterer *Lewis* were fled, for fear, into *Narbonne*, and had left only the Duke of *Durazzo*, Nephew to King *Robert*, to protect the Kingdom; who was conquer'd, and taken by *Charles*, and put to Death. But the Plague being very hot all over *Italy*, *Charles* left ſufficient Gariſons there, and return'd into *Hungary*, in the third Month after his arrival; which was juſt about the time when *John*, the Archbiſhop, a Man of great Courage and Conduct, received from the Pope the Lieutenancy of *Millain*, upon the Death of his Brother *Luchino*. But *Clement* kept *Nicolas* in Priſon, and ſent ſome Cardinals to *Rome*, to ſettle the State of the City; to whom *Francis Petrarcha* wrote, perſuading them to chuſe Senators impartially out of the Commonalty, if they would appeaſe the Tumults; ſince it did not ſufficiently appear in *Rome*, who were of the Senatorian, and who of the Plebeian Rank, becauſe they were almoſt all Foreigners, and born of ſtrange Parents. Upon this, *Petro Sarra* of *Columna*, and *John Urſini*, were declared Senators. At this time, the Plague raged ſo all over *Italy*, for three Years, that there was ſcarce one Man in ten that eſcaped. Nor is that any wonder: For there was ſuch a Concourſe of Men from all places to *Rome*, at the Jubilee, which was then celebrated, that they not only brought the Contagion along with 'em, but by the throng and buſtle, and ſweating that was among 'em, infected all places and perſons. At that time, the Towns of *Colle* and *Geminiano* were made ſubject to the *Florentines*, and *Bologna*, to the Archbiſhop of *Millain*, by the voluntary Surrender of the Citizens. At which the Pope, being diſturb'd, ſent a Legate into *Italy*, to inſtigate the *Florentines*, and *Maſtino Scala*, againſt the *Viconti*. But when *Maſtino* was dead, the Archbiſhop endeavoured to draw *Canagrande*, Son to *Maſtino*, and all the *Gibellins* in *Romagna* and *Tuſcany*, to make an Alliance with him, and ſent his Nephew *Bernabos* to *Bolognia*, to keep the Citizens in Obedience. In the mean time, the *Florentines*, without any reſiſtance, ſet upon the *Piſtoians*, and the *Prateſes*, and at length reduced 'em by main Force. But after that, being haraſs'd by the Archbiſhop's Force, under the Command of *John Aulegius*, they could hardly defend themſelves within their Walls. At that time, *Anguillara* and *Borgo di Sancto Sepulchro*, belonging to the Church, revolted to the Viſcounts; and then alſo we read, That the *Genoeſes* and *Venetians* fought a Sea-Battel, in which the *Genoeſes* at firſt were conquer'd; but afterwards they were more Victorious, under the Command of Admiral *Philip Auria*, and not only took the Iſland *Scio* from the *Venetians*, but kill'd a great many Men in *Ubœa* (now called *Negropont*.) But *Clement*, reſolving at laſt to conſult the quiet of *Italy*, Decreed, that *Lewis*, Prince of *Taranto*, ſhould be King of *Naples*; renew'd the Peace with the *Hungarian*; bought the City of *Avignion* of Queen *Joan*, whoſe Inheritance it was, and paid for it by remitting of a certain Fee, that amounted to rather more than the Price of it, and was due from her to the Church of *Rome* upon the account of the Kingdom of *Naples*. But whilſt *Olegio Viconti* beſieged *Scarperia* in *Muciallia*, thoſe of *Siena*, *Arezzo* and *Perugia*, being affrighted, entered into a new Confederacy with the *Florentines* againſt the *Viconti*. The *Piſans* could not ſhew their Friendſhip to the *Viconti* for the *Cambacurti*, a Noble Family, that were Allies of *Florence*; who, being now unable to withſtand the *Viconti* alone, called *Charles* the Emperor into *Italy*. At this the Pope was concerned, and fearing *Italy* might be deſtroyed with Fire and Sword, (as the Emperor threatned) he delivered *Bologni* to the *Viconti* upon condition, that they ſhould pay the Church twelve thouſand Pound a year, and made Peace between the *Viconti* and the *Florentines* upon theſe terms; That neither of them ſhould moleſt thoſe of *Piſa*, *Lucca*, *Siena* or *Perugia*; and that *Borgo di Sancto Sepolchro* ſhould be ſubject to the Church, and the *Viconti* ſhould preſerve the Liberty of the *Cortoneſes*. He alſo endeavoured to compoſe the Differences between *Philip* of *France* and *Edward* of *England*, but in vain; for they were ſo incenſed to fight, that in one Battel *Edward* killed twenty thouſand *French*, and after eleven months Siege victoriouſly took *Calais* by ſtorm. The ſame ſucceſs he had againſt the *Scots*. But the Pope having done the Duty of a good Shepherd, ſeeing he could not advantage Chriſtendom, abroad, he conſulted how to do the Church ſome good at home. For he choſe excellent Perſons for Cardinals; eſpecially *Giles* a *Spaniard*, who was Arch-biſhop of *Toledo*, *Nicolas Cappocius* a *Roman* Citizen, *Rainaldo Urſina*, Protonotary of the Church of *Rome*, and his own Nephew, who after got the Papacy, and was called *Gregory* the Eleventh. Some ſay, this Pope canonized *Ivo* a *Britain*, Prieſt and Confeſſor. He died in the tenth year, ſixth month and twenty eight day of his Pontificate, in the year 1352. and was decently buried at *Avignion* by the Cardinals that were then upon the place.

INNOCENT VI.

INNOCENT the Sixth, a *Limouſin*, formerly called *Stephen*, a man very well ſkilled in the Canon and Civil Law, firſt Procurator, then Biſhop of *Cleremont*, and afterward Cardinal, was at firſt made Pope in the year 1352. upon the fifteenth of *December*. He was a Man of an exact Life, of great conſtancy and ſeverity; and beſtowed Eccleſiaſtical preferments upon none but men of good Lives and Learning. Immediately after his Coronation he ſuſpended many Indulgences which *Clement* had granted; commanding all Prelats, and others that had Eccleſiaſtical Benefices, to repair to their Churches under the pain of *Anathema*; ſaying, Flocks ought to be kept by their own Shepherds, and not by Hirelings. He alſo retrenched his Houſhold expences, and reduced his Family to a convenient number, and would have none but honeſt men about him. He ſtrictly commanded the Cardinals to do ſo too; for he would often tell them, that both his own Life and that of all Church-Men ought to be an Example to the Laity; in imitation of our Saviour, whoſe whole Life was a pattern to all Mankind. He likewiſe appointed certain Salaries for the Auditors of the Holy *Palace*, leſt, through want, they ſhould be tempted to give Judgment for Bribery. For he would ſay, that thoſe who are ready to ſtarve can hardly keep their hands from other peoples Meat, if they have any opportunity to get it. He was ſparing in his Diet, but in his Warlike preparations very expenſive, whilſt he endeavoured to recover that by Arms, which formerly Uſurpers had taken away from the Church. For he ſent *Giles Carillo*, a *Spaniard*, Cardinal of S. *Sabina*, an excellent Perſon, his Legat *à latere* into *Italy*, to make War upon the Uſurpers, and ſecure the Church Patrimony. At this time, the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, the King of *Aragon*, and the *Venetians* enter'd into a League againſt the *Genoeſes*; and having gotten a great Navy together, ſuperiour to the *Genoeſes* both in the number of Ships, and Men, ſet upon them between *Conſtantinople* and *Chalcedon*, in a place very diſadvantageous for the *Genoeſes*, and when the Wind was againſt them. They fought from Morning till Night, till at length the *Grecians* ran away, but the *Venetians* and *Catalonians* were moſt of them ſlain, together with their Admiral; under the Command of *Pagano Auria*. But the *Venetians* were ſo enrag'd at this Defeat and Diſgrace, that they and the *Catalonians* recruited their Navy, and under the conduct of *Nicolas* a *Piſan*, routed the *Genoeſes* the year following not far from the Iſland of *Corſica*, and ſunk forty of their Galleys with their Men. The *Genoeſes* terrified at this overthrow, delivered up their City and all they had to the Arch-biſhop of *Millain*; who, by attacking the *Venetians*, alarmed the Lords of *Padua*, *Verona*, *Ferrara*, *Mantua*, and the *Florentines* too to oppoſe him; they fearing leſt, when he had conquer'd the *Venetians*, he would ſet upon them alſo. The War was carried on by Land and Sea; but the *Genoeſes*, *Pagano Auria* being their Admiral, had wonderful fortune at Sea, and, at *Sapientia*, a Promontory of *Morea*, defeated the *Venetians*; taking their Admiral *Nicolas* the *Piſane*, with five thouſand Men, whom they brought to *Genoa* in the year 1354. But the following year the Arch-biſhop of *Millain* died, which freed the *Venetians* and their Allies from a great deal of care. *Bernabos* and *Galeatius*, his Brother *Luchinus*'s Sons were his Heirs. No place but *Genoa* relinquiſh'd them, theſe two making a Peace with the *Venetians*; which had been firſt propoſed by *Bernabos* and *Galeatius*, at the inſtance of the Pope, and *Giles* his Legat. In the mean while *Calo Johannes* Emperor of *Conſtantinople* was reſtored, having vanquiſhed *Cahtacuſenus*, who had uſurped the Empire againſt all right and reaſon. But that Action was performed by means of *Francis Cataluſius*, a *Genoeſe*, a great Seaman, on whom he beſtowed *Mitylen* and all *Lesbos* for a Reward, which the Turk afterwards took from the *Cataluſii* when he had gotten *Conſtantinople* and all *Thrace* in his power. Nor was there leſs uproar at *Rome*, than was then at *Conſtantinople*. For *Franciſco Baroncello*, a *Roman* Citizen, and a great man, having degraded *John Urſin*, and *Peter* of *Columna* from the dignity of Senators, uſurped to himſelf the dignity of a *Tribune*, with theſe Titles; that is to ſay, *Franciſco Baroncello*, Secretary to the Senate, by the Grace of God Second *Tribune* of our Mother this City, and Conſul of *Rome*. When the Pope heard of it, he had a mind to rebate the audacious Spirit of the Man, and ſent *Nicolas de Gentio*, a perſon full as ambitious as he, out of the Goal at *Avignion*, to *Rome*, to recover the Tribuneſhip. He, when he came into the City, being aſſiſted by the Nobility and great part of the Commons, threw *Baroncello* out of the Capitol and kill'd him; ſo that he enjoyed the Tribuneſhip alone. But not long after, forgetting his former Condition, he perſecuted the Nobility, and eſpecially the *Columneſes*, who were going out at the *Eſquiline* Gate, into *Campagna di Roma*, with a Petition, but was repelled ſo much to his Diſadvantage, that he betook himſelf into the Capitol; and from thence endeavoured to eſcape, but the Enemy followed him at the heels, and though he were diſguiſed, yet the Citizens of *Rome* diſcovered him and cut off his Head. Then was *Guido Jordan* made ſole Senator, for a year, by Apoſtolical Authority. About that time the Emperor, who was Son to the King of *Bohemia*, was very kindly entertained by the *Carrariens*, the *Gonziacks* and *Viconti*, and received his Iron Crown, as the cuſtom is, at *Millain*. And going from thence to *Piſa*, was met by Embaſſadors from the *Sieneſes*, from thoſe of *Volaterra*, and almoſt all *Tuſcany*, who told him they were ready to obey his Commands. The *Florentines* would have done the ſame, but that they had firſt bought themſelves out of his Dominion, with a great ſum of Money. After that he went to *Rome*, and was crowned by two Cardinals, who were ſent on purpoſe, upon condition, that he ſhould not ſtay any longer either at *Rome* or in *Italy*. This made him depart the ſooner, and when he was gone, *Giles*, the Legat, quickly recovered almoſt all the Towns, which the Uſurpers had gotten by the inſtigation of the *Bavarian*, either in *Romagna*, *Marca d' Ancona*, or S. *Peter*'s Patrimony. But he confirmed all thoſe Lieutenants of Towns, whom he ſaw obedient to the Church of *Rome*; as *Galiot*, *Malateſta*, and *Guido Poletanus* in *Romagna*, and the *Vatraneſes* in the Dutchy of *Millain*. But the *Ordelaphi*, who were diſobedient to the Church, he perſecuted with two years War, and at length quite routed them out of *Forli*, *Forimpopili* and *Ceſena*. Theſe indeed might have retained ſome part of their Dominion by the aſſiſtance of *James* the Cardinal of *Columna*, a man who was a great friend to their Family, but they choſe rather to loſe the whole, like Men, than ſave any part of it ſneakingly. But *Giles*, having quieted *Romagna*, was ſo pleaſed at *Forli*, that he laid up not only the Treaſure of the Church, but alſo all the Money which was ſent from *Avignion* into *Italy* to build Caſtles in that Town, and made ſome Ordinances which the Province uſes to this Day. But when *Giles* had ſetled *Italy*, and built a great many very neceſſary Forts in the Church Dominions, and reduced all the *Italian* Princes and States to Obedience: He had a Succeſſor in the fifth year of his Embaſſie, called *Arduinus*, a *Burgundian*, Abbat of *Ciſteaux*, a man not at all fit for buſineſs. Wherefore when *Giles* was gone, all the Princes and States of *Italy* took up Arms. For the *Piſans* did ſo moleſt the *Florentines*, that, ſeeing no body durſt oppoſe them, they plundered all the Country of *Florence*, and took *Figino* a Caſtle lying up the River *Arno*, burning all the Villages which were built thereabout. At that time *Pandulphus Malateſta* was Captain General of the *Florentine* Army, whom the People forced to relinquiſh his civil Government, becauſe he had never ſhewn that he had Courage enough to engage with an Enemy. But the *Piſans* were then much higher than before, not ſo much out of any hope they had of taking the City, as that they ſhould bring a ſcandal upon it, and therefore after ſome light Skirmiſhes before the Gates, they returned home with great Spoils, about the beginning of Autumn. And *Bernabos* alſo demoliſhed many Caſtles in *Bologna*, (which was now harraſs'd with War,) though the Abbat of *Clugny* defended it ſtoutly. *Bologna*, as I told you before, was ſubject to the *Viconti*; but *Aulegianus* betrayed it to the Abbat of *Clugny*, and was to have *Fermo* as the reward of his Treachery. But whilſt that *Bernabos* made War upon *Bologna* and *Reggio*, the Apoſtolical Legat makes an Alliance with *Philippino Gonzaga*, *Canes* of *Verona*, and *Nicolas d'Eſte* to go againſt the *Breſcians*. Then *Bernabos*, being concerned for the danger which thoſe of *Breſcia* were in, left *Bologna* and *Reggio*, and marched toward the Enemy, but was ſo defeated at *Montclere*, that afterwards he could hardly defend the very Walls of the City. About the ſame time the *Florentines* overcame the *Piſans*, under the command of *Galeot Malateſta*, by corrupting their Soldiers to come over to their Party. For this reaſon the *Piſans* laid all the fault upon the *Cambacurti*, who were eminent Citizens there, becauſe they paid the Soldiers covetouſly and ſtingily; and therefore recalled *John Agnellus* who was baniſhed as being a friend to *Bernabos*, and againſt the *Cambacurti*; and he in a little time reduced the City, and made it acknowledge him for their Governor, having removed all the friends of the adverſe Faction. But when the Pope had made a Peace between the *Piſans* and the *Florentines*, one *John Haucut*, who had been uſed to fight under the *Piſans*, got together all the Soldiers in *Italy*, and gave all People occaſion to fear; eſpecially ſince *Rome* was in ſuch an uproar at the chooſing of Senators. But *Innocent* eaſily appeaſed their Diſcords by ſending a Forein Senator to them, called *Raymund Ptolomy*, a Citizen of *Siena*, who bore that Office a whole year, and that was in the year 1359. But though things were ſetled in this manner, yet the *Romans* could not be quiet. For they turned out their Senator, and created ſeven Citizens, with Soveraign Power, whom they called the Reformers of the whole Republick. Upon this account, *Innocent* made *Hugo Luſignaneus*, King of *Cyprus*, (who was going then to War againſt the Turks) Senator, and commanded totally to aboliſh that Society of Reformers. But he, at that time, was very intent upon making an end of the War betwixt *England* and *France*, that all might go againſt the Turk. But when the *Engliſh* had overcome the *French* in *Poictou*, and had taken their King with *Philip* his Son, they were thought to have done a great exploit: Yet at the ſame time *Edward*, out of his Princely generoſity, gives all the Captives their Liberty, upon condition, that they would never fight againſt him more. But they ſoon after broke thoſe terms of Peace, and forced *Edward* to reſume his Arms and beſiege *Paris*. *Innocent* deſigned alſo to prepare a Navy againſt the Infidels, when at the ſame time the *Piſans*, who were excellent Seamen, and the *Venetians* that had a great Navy, were at War, the former with the *Florentines*, and the later with *Lewis* King of *Hungary*. For that King did then beſiege *Treviſo* with a great Army; beſides that the *Venetians* were at variance among themſelves. For *Marino*, their General, being accuſed, as if he aſpired to Soveraignty, was beheaded. *Innocent* being thus diſcompoſed in his Mind, he died in the ninth Year, eighth Month, and ſixth Day of his Pontificate, juſt about the ſame time with *Bartholus Saxoferratus*, the wiſeſt Man in all that Age. But before the Pope's Death, there was ſuch an Eclipſe of the Sun, as never was before; wherefore all people thought, that ſuch a great Man could not die, but even the Planets would give ſome Preſages of his Departure.

URBAN V.

URBAN the Fifth, of *Lymoſin*, formerly called *Will. Griſant*, Abbat of S. *Victor*, at *Marſeilles*, was made Pope in his abſence by univerſal Conſent. For at that time he was gone into *Italy*, as Legate to the *Viconti*; but being called to *Avignion*, he enter'd upon the Popedom. And no ſooner was he got into the Chair, but being a perſon of ſingular Virtue, great Courage, and very innocent in his Converſation, he immediately apply'd himſelf to vindicate the Churches Liberty, and made uſe of ſuch Inſtruments as were zealous for the Buſineſs. For he ſent *Giles* a Spaniard (of whom we ſaid ſomthing before) into *Italy*, with full power and Authority; who ſo far animated and engaged *Lewis Gonzaga*, *Nicolas d'Eſte*, and *Franciſco Carrario*, againſt *Bernabos*, that he was overcome by them, and loſt his Son in the Battel, and, being wounded, hardly eſcaped with his life. Nor was that all, but the Enemy took *Andrew Pepulo*, a *Bolognian Banditto*, *Synebald Ordelaphus*, *Paulus Mirandula*, *Guido Poliano*, *Azo* of *Corrigia*, *William Cavalcabos*, the moſt ſignal Commanders of the Army. But the Kings of *England*, *France*, and *Cyprus*, were concern'd at the misfortune of the *Viconti*, and ſent Embaſſadors to *Giles*, to deſire him, That he would make Peace with them. Which Embaſſadors were not ſent in vain; for a Peace was concluded, though it were of no long continuance. For *John Hawkwood*, on the behalf of the *Viconti*, having engaged the *Florentines*, routed their Army at S. *Miniato*, which cauſed *Giles* the Legate to ſend *Thomas Obicio*, an excellent Commander, with three thouſand Horſe, and a competent number of Foot, to help the *Florentines*. They fought betwixt *Arezzo* and *Cortona*, four hours together, ſtoutly: But at length *Thomas*, chiefly with the aſſiſtance of his Infantry, gave the Enemy ſuch a blow, that of ſix thouſand Horſe, which fought under *Hawkwood*, few eſcaped, and the Captain himſelf yielded. Thoſe that had revolted from the Church, when they heard of this great Victory, immediately ſurrender'd. *Urban* then came into *Italy*, in the fourth Year of his Pontificate, to ſettle things, and *Giles* the Legate met him at *Corneto*, and rendring an account of what he had done, was diſcharg'd from his Legateſhip; and the Pope going on his way from *Corneto* to *Rome*, he retired quietly, in his old Age, at *Viterbo*, where he died in three Months after. He was a Man of ſingular Virtue and Courage, and preſerv'd the Honour of the Church, whilſt he lived, moſt wonderfully. His Body was carried to *Aſſiſi*, and buried in the Church of S. *Francis*, in a Tomb that he built himſelf, whilſt he was living. When *Charles* the Emperor underſtood, that *Urban* was gone to *Rome*, he went thither too, as faſt as he could, with his Wife and Children; but, by the way, took *Lucca* from the *Piſanes*, and *Sancto Miniato* from the *Florentines*. Whether he went to *Rome*, or no, is not certain; becauſe, 'tis ſaid, he received his Imperial Crown from Pope *Innocent* the Sixth, who ſent the Cardinal of *Oſtia* to *Rome* for that purpoſe. But having received a great Sum of Money of the *Florentines*, to buy their own Peace, he march'd out of *Italy* the third Month after he came thither, in the Year 1368. *Urban* had ſought a long time for the Heads of SS. *Peter* and *Paul*, (which, through the Ignorance of the times, had long been neglected) and having light upon them, at *Sancta Sanctorum*, he put 'em up in Silver Caſes, next the great Altar of the *Lateran*, where they were highly honoured by a great concourſe of all the Clergy and People of *Rome*. The ſame Pope built one Palace in the old City, and another in *Monteſiaſcone*, that he, and other Popes, might retire thither to avoid the Heat and Buſtle of the Town. But reſolving to go back ſhortly into *France*, he made *John Hawkwood*, an excellent Commander, whom he releaſed out of Priſon, General of all thoſe Forces that had ſerv'd under *Giles*, to guard the Church Patrimony till he return'd again. For he deſign'd to return for *Italy*: But going into *France*, he died at *Marſeilles* in the eighth Year and the fourth Month of his Pontificate: Or (as others will have it) he dy'd at *Avignion*, juſt about the time when *Briget*, a devout Woman, who was a Princeſs of *Switzerland*, came to *Rome*, upon a Vow ſhe had made. There were at the ſame time ſome Commotions in *Puglia*, after the Death of *Nicolas Acciolo*, who was Governour of that Province, and a ſtout wiſe Man.

GREGORY XI.

GREGORY the Eleventh, of *Lymoſin*, formerly call'd *Peter Belford*, and Cardinal Deacon of New S. *Maries*, was made Pope at *Avignion*, by a general Conſent. *Clement* VI. his Uncle, made him Cardinal, when he was ſcarce ſeventeen Years of age. But that he might not ſeem to conſult the good of his Kindred more than that of the Church, he ſent him to the beſt Maſters he could find for breeding, and eſpecially to *Baldus*, who at that time was a Profeſſor at *Perugia*: Under whom he made ſuch Progreſs in all ſorts of Learning, that *Baldus* often uſed his Authority to clear a Doubt. And then he was a Man of ſuch Innocence, good Nature, Affability, and Piety, that he was generally beloved. At his Entrance upon the Pontificate, this was the ſtate of things in *Italy*; at *Rome* the Courts of Juſtice were held by Senators, whom the Pope appointed for every ſix Months; but the Guard of the City, and all the management of publick Affairs, were in the hands of the *Bandereſii*, ſo named from their *Banners*, (a *Teutonic* word) which they uſed in War, by which every *Decuria* (now called *Capo di Regione*, or Head of a Ward) was diſtinguiſh'd. In *Lombardy*, thoſe Nobles, who (as I ſaid before) conſpired againſt the *Viconti*, ſurpriſed the City of *Reggio* by treachery, which was before in their poſſeſſion; but the Caſtle holding out, *Bernabos* entring the City that way at the firſt Onſet overthrew the Enemy, and, driving away *Lucius* the *German* Commander, repoſſeſs'd himſelf of the place. Thus went matters in *Italy*, when *Perinus* King of *Cyprus*, who ſucceeded his Father *Peter*, was the cauſe of great Animoſities between the *Genoeſes* and the *Venetians*: For when he was Crown'd at *Famagoſta*, and two Bailiffs, (as the Merchants call their Reſidents,) one from *Genoa*, and the other from *Venice*, were there attending; they ſtrove, who ſhould walk on the right hand the King, which raiſed ſuch a Tumult, that the *Genoeſes* were beaten and wounded baſely, the King favouring the *Venetians*. The *Genoeſes* hereupon got a Navy of 40 Ships together, under the command of *Peter Fregoſo*, Brother to *Dominick Fregoſo*, and invaded *Cyprus*; and landed Fourteen thouſand Men, to deſtroy all the Iſland with Fire and Sword for violating the Law of Nations. The King being deſerted on all ſides, ſubmitted to their mercy, and, ſurrendring *Famagoſta*, promiſed the *Genoeſes* to give them 40000 *per annum* to purchaſe his Peace. The Pope's Legat was now come into *Italy*, and had ſetled the ſtate of the Church; he made a Peace with the *Viconti*, when a new Tumult aroſe at *Prato*, which was the original of great confuſion; for the Inhabitants of *Prato*, endeavouring to vindicate themſelves from the Dominion of the *Florentines*, called the Church Forces into *Tuſcany* by permiſſion from the Legat: But the *Florentines* ſo far corrupted them with Money, that they entered *Prato* by their Aſſiſtance, put the Conſpirators to Death, and ſent a great many Banners, with *Liberty* written upon them, by ſeveral Troops, to ſeveral Towns; exhorting the people, as their Lords, that they would remember the Liberty of the Church, and caſt off the Yoke of Servitude. The firſt that revolted from the Church were the *Caſtellani*, then the *Perugians*, thoſe of *Todi*, *Spoleto*, *Gubio*, *Viterbo*, *Forli*, and *Aſcali* follow'd their Example. At that time too *Aſtorgius Manfred*, under the *Bavarian*, having taſted the ſweetneſs of abſolute Dominion, had poſſeſs'd himſelf of *Granariolo*, a Caſtle near *Faenza*; againſt whom the Legat ſent *John Hawkwood* with ſome Troops out of *Bologna*. The *Florentines* and thoſe of *Bologna* defended *Aſtorgius*, and, keeping out *Hawkwood* with all his Men, aſſerted their Liberty. But *Hawkwood* ſeeing the *Faenzeſes* ready to rebel, he not only plunder'd the City ſeverely, and kill'd all that his Soldiers met, but he ſold the very ground on which it ſtood to *Nicolas* and *Albert d'Eſte*, two Brothers, for 20000 *l.* reſerving only *Bagnacavallo* to himſelf, where the Carriages of his Army lay. The Pope, hearing of ſuch great Revolutions, ſent Cardinal *Cevennes*, as his Legate, with Six thouſand *Britiſh* Horſe into *Italy*; who, coming down through *Piedmont*, marched as far as the very Gates of *Bologna*, without doing any hurt, deſigning to beſiege the City. But when the Legat heard the *Florentines* were come to the Aſſiſtance of the *Bolognians*, under the Conduct of *Rodolphus Varraneo*, he went with his Army to Winter in *Ceſena*. In which City there was ſuch an uproar, by reaſon of the Pride of the *French*, that Six hundred *Britains* were ſlain, and the reſt turn'd out of Town: But they got in again afterward by way of the Tower, and being increaſed in their number, they fill'd all places with Blood and Rapine, not ſparing even thoſe, whoſe very Age made their excuſe: Only young Women and Maids were kept alive to be abuſed. But thoſe of *Forli*, fearing leſt for want of Advice, and one to govern them, they might be oppreſs'd by the Legat, they took *Synebald*, *Pyne*, *John* and *Theobald*, *Ordelaphi*, as their Lords into the City, and were bravely defended by them from the Fury of the *Britains*. But Pope *Gregory* conceiving, that all the miſchiefs of *Italy* proceeded from his being abſent, and that the long Shipwrack of Affairs there happened becauſe the Pilot was out of the way, the good Man was very intent a good while upon a Journy into *Italy*: But he was mightily concerned at a certain Biſhop's Words, who being asked by the Pope, (as they were walking together,) Why he did not return to his Church, which he ought not to have left ſo long without a Paſtor? He reply'd, Why do not you, that are the greateſt Biſhop, give a good Example, and go to your own Biſhoprick at *Rome*? The Pope was diſturbed at theſe Words, and therefore he got ready One and twenty Ships in the *Rhoan*, under pretence of going elſewhere, that he might not be ſtopp'd by the *French*, as he would have been, if they had underſtood he had been going to *Rome*; becauſe it was their Intereſt to keep the Court in *France*: Thereupon he went firſt to *Genoa*, and then to *Corneto*; from whence he went by Land (for he was weary of ſailing, in the Winter eſpecially,) to *Rome*, and arrived there in the Year 1376, about the 11th of *January*, in the ſeventh Year of his Pontificate, and the 70th Year after the Court went out of *Rome* into *France*: But what preparations the people of *Rome* made, and with what incredible Joy they received him, 'tis needleſs to relate; for all the Nobility went to meet him, with their Countenances, Geſtures and Acclamations, expreſſing all kind of Pleaſure, as Children do that ſee their dear Father returned from a ſtrange Country. And indeed all things lacked his preſence there: For both the Walls, the Churches, and all Buildings in general, publick or private, threatened nothing but ruin, till he repaired moſt part of them, as the Tower, which he built at S. *Maries the Great*, does teſtifie. The morality alſo of the City was ſo decay'd, that they ſeem'd to have nothing about 'em, which look'd like a Citizen, but appeared as if they ought to go and learn manners, who formerly had reduced the whole to Urbanity and good Behaviour. So then the Pope, having ſeated himſelf in *Rome*, (as a good Paſtor ſhould do,) began to look about him, and think of a Cure for the Wounds of *Italy*. And whil'ſt he was a ruminating of it, he conſidered, that nothing but a Peace could do the feat: Thereupon he ſent his Legat, firſt to the *Florentines*, who inclin'd to War, and perſuades 'em not to ſlight or refuſe any fair Conditions of Peace. They, ſuſpecting the Pope's power, and fearing leſt they ſhould be compell'd to make a Peace, enter into Alliance and Confederacy with *Bernabos* their old Enemy. After that they corrupted *Haucut*, with Money and fair Promiſes, to come over from the Church to their Party; at which they were ſo triumphant, and ſo proud, that they omitted no ſort of Injury or Affront, that they could do the Pope: For which they were anathematized, and yet were ſo inſolent that they forced their Prieſts, notwithſtanding the Interdiction, to perform the Divine Offices againſt Law and Reaſon. The Pope therefore, weary at laſt of intreating, took up Arms, and, having reconciled *Bologna*, which was to be govern'd in his Name, he, like the *Florentines* before, made *Varraneo* his Stipendiary, and gave him the Command of the Church Army, to go againſt *Florence*: But a Quarrel aroſe between the *Genoeſes* and the *Venetians*, which put a ſtop to his Deſigns, he fearing, leſt any Foreign Force ſhould invade *Italy*, if he ingaged with the *Florentines* himſelf. For whil'ſt *Andronicus*, by the *Genoeſes* Aſſiſtance, to whom he had given *Tenedo*, as the reward of the Exploit, had dethron'd *Charles*'s Father, who was *John*, Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, the *Venetians* reſtored him again to his Country, and had the Iſland *Tenedo* given to them by him. At which the *Genoeſes* were angry, though they deferr'd their revenge till another occaſion, for fear of the Pope's Curſe, who threatned it to both Parties, if they did not quit their Arms, not holding it fit for either of them to meddle in that War. But whil'ſt this holy Man did all things with that diligence, that became a Pope, he died of that intolerable pain, the Stone in the Bladder, in the ſeventh Year, and fifth Month, of his Pontificate, the ſixteenth of *April*, in the Year 1378, and was buried in S. *Maries* in the New Street, in a Marble Tomb, which is yet to be ſeen; and ſo much lamented as never Man was before him: For all people thought themſelves deprived of a Father, in him; and did bewail not only the preſent but their future Calamity, into which they were faln by the loſs of ſo good a Pope, and the Diſcords that aroſe among the chief Citizens.

URBAN VI.

GREGORY being dead, and the making a new Pope being under debate, the Clergy and people of *Rome* addreſs'd themſelves to the Cardinals, and deſired 'em, that they would chuſe ſome worthy Perſon, an *Italian*, to govern the Church and State of *Rome* with Integrity and Piety; for that, unleſs an extraordinary Paſtor were then elected, Chriſtianity, as it ſtood at that time, muſt needs fall to decay. And they deſired an *Italian* Pope, leſt, if he were a *French* Man, the Court of *Rome* muſt remove again beyond the Mountains to the great diſadvantage and damage of the City of *Rome*, and all *Italy* beſides: Alledging, that when the Pope was abſent, all the Country and City were continually embroil'd with Uſurpations and Seditions; and that the Churches in *Rome* were ſo neglected, and thereby grown ſo much out of order, that they were moſt of 'em ready to fall. And that, upon this account, the people, who came continually to *Rome*, were not ſo zealous as they uſed to be, when they ſaw the Papal See, the Cardinals Churches and Monaſteries, nay the holy places where the Martyrs lie, without a Roof, and the Walls falling down, to let in Sheep and other Cattel. That it was fit the Pope ſhould live where *Peter* had placed the Pontifical Chair by the Will of God, out of his own Country and Nation, and advanced the honour of it by the Aſhes and the Blood of Martyrs, Confeſſors, and holy Popes. Hence might the Paſtors of the Church, if they were circumſpect and mindful of Chriſt's Command, or incited by Example of thoſe whoſe Martyrdoms and Actions they had before their Eyes, conſult the Salvation of Mankind; and, at the ſame time, recover S. *Peter*'s Patrimony, which had been ſeized by ſeveral Uſurpers in *Tuſcany*, *Sabina*, *Campagna di Roma*, *Ombria*, *Millain*, and *Romagna*, whil'ſt the Popes were abſent. That they would not ſay for the preſent, how the Piety of people was diminiſh'd, and that their Pilgrimages to *Rome*, or to ſee the Bodies or Relicks of the Saints, were much rarer than formerly, by reaſon of the Popes Abſence; but that all theſe things might ſtill be reſtored, if an *Italian* were choſen Pope. The Cardinals made anſwer, that they would take care to chuſe an excellent Man, to govern the Church of God, without any reſpect to Perſons or Nations, in imitation of our Saviour, who choſe *Apoſtles* out of all Nations. That they might go and be ſatisfied, that they would do nothing but what ſhould promote the glory of God, the good of the Church and of all Chriſtendom. So they appointed a Conclave at S. *Peter's*, and ordered a certain number of Guards to be in the *Vatican*, leſt any Tumult might hinder ſo important an Election; but when they came to Vote, there was a great debate all of a ſudden; for there were thirteen *French* Cardinals, who would have had a Pope choſen out of them; and four *Italians*, among whom one, that was of the *Vrſin* Family, did moſt aſpire to the Popedom. The *French* ſeem'd to have the better of it, becauſe they had the Majority: But there happening a Quarrel betwixt thoſe of *Limoſin* and the other *French* Men, each ſide contending for the Choice of a Pope out of their Party, they choſe *Bartholomew* Archbiſhop of *Bari*, a *Neapolitan*, or, as others ſay, a *Piſan*, not of the College of Cardinals, and in his Abſence, by the name of *Vrban* the Sixth. But before they appear'd abroad, or that it was known, that *Vrban* was made Pope, the *French* ſcandaliz'd the Election, as extorted by fraud and fear, whil'ſt the *Romans* urged them with Force and Arms to chuſe an *Italian*: So that the Cardinals, when they came out of the Conclave, fled partly into *Caſtel S. Angelo*, and partly into other ſecure places, to avoid the Fury of the enraged people. Cardinal *Vrſin* alſo went to *Vicovaro*, having great hopes of getting the Pontificate in a time of ſuch Diſcord. But not long after the Cardinals repented, and came to the City, where they confirmed *Vrban*, whom they had formerly choſen, ſaluting him, according to the Dignity of a true Pope. Three months after, the *French* Party pretended the City was too hot for 'em, and deſired of the Pope, that he would give 'em leave to go to *Anagni*, for change of Air, which in the City was peſtilent, eſpecially in the Summer, and to *French* Conſtitutions; thô they indeed were afraid of his ſeverity, and ſo were deſirous to get out of the way; for he had often called 'em to him, and admoniſhed them to keep their hands clean, and receive no Bribes nor Rewards for pleading in behalf of others, or doing any Man a Kindneſs that ſhould ask it: And told 'em, That he would puniſh them ſeverely that he found guilty of Simony, or promoting of unjuſt Suits. Beſides he told them, That he ſhould be pleaſed, and was very deſirous, that they would omit ſome of their State, and ſuch a train of Servants and Horſes, for what they ſpent in ſuch Vanity was really due to the Poor, or ought to have been employ'd toward the repairs of rottering Churches. He told 'em, that he would chuſe good Men to be about his own perſon, and that he would make the wicked ſuffer for their Offences, unleſs they mended their manners. And, becauſe he heard, that the *French* Cardinals did talk once, as if the Court of *Rome* would go back into their Country, he told 'em publickly, that he would ſtay at *Rome*, and would not hearken to any one that ſhould perſuade him to remove from it, becauſe, as he ſaid, the Foundation of the univerſal Church, and of Chriſtian Faith, was laid at *Rome*, and all the ſuperſtructure raiſed in the ſame place. The *French* Cardinals were moved with theſe Reaſons, and eſpecially thoſe, who had robbed the Church Treaſury upon the Death of ſeveral Popes, and done what they pleaſed; they fled firſt to *Anagni*, next to *Fondi*, where they inveigh'd againſt *Urban* as a falſe Pope, and ſaid he was made by force, and received his Crown by force, becauſe that Election and Coronation was not in a place at all ſafe, where peoples Wills and Votes might be free, but that on the contrary, they were forced to chuſe an *Italian* rather than a *French* Man; for theſe Reaſons, The See (as they ſaid,) being vacant, they, (who were eight in all,) by the permiſſion and favour of Queen *Joan*, choſe Cardinal *Cevennes*, who had been Legat in *Italy*, and call'd him *Clement* the Seventh. Hence aroſe a great and a long Quarrel in the Church of God, which they call a *Schiſm*; when part of the Chriſtian Princes favoured *Urban*, and part favoured *Cevennes*. Nor were theſe ſeditious Cardinals content with that, but ſent the *Britains*, who had plunder'd and taken many Caſtles, Villages and Forts, againſt the Pope and people of *Rome*, who, meeting the Enemy at *Ponte Salaro*, in a confuſed manner, were conquer'd and kill'd. But after that they fought another Battel at *Sancto Marino*, with ſuch Courage and Intention, that they beat the *Britains*, and kill'd ſo many of 'em, that there was hardly a Meſſenger left to carry the News. Thoſe that were in the Caſtles defended themſelves for ſome time, but eſpecially the Governor of the Caſtle of *Surio*, who, after many years, ſurrendered it to Pope *Martin*. In the mean time, the *Genoeſes* begin to ſhew the malice, which they had conceived in their Hearts, againſt the *Venetians*, and took *Lewis* King of *Hungary* into their Alliance, with *Francis* of *Carrara*, Lord of *Padua*, the Duke of *Auſtria*, and the Patriarch of *Aquilegia*. On the part of the *Venetians* were *Perinus* of *Luſignan* King of *Cyprus*, and ſo was *Bernabos Viconti*. In the firſt Engagement at Sea the *Venetians* had the better of it, upon the Coaſt of *Antio*, under the Command of *Victor* a *Piſan*; of ten *Genoeſe* Ships five being loſt. At that time alſo the *Marcheſi* of *Carreto*, by the Aſſiſtance of *Bernabos*, took *Albenga*, *Noli*, and *Caſtel Franco*, from the *Genoeſes*, but not long after they made a Peace with them and reſtored all. After this, the *Genoeſes* put *Dominick Fregoſo* their Duke into Priſon, with his Brother *Peter*, and made *Nicolas Gualch* their Governor by Land, and *Lucian Auria* their Admiral by Sea. But *Bernabos*, that had married his Daughter to the King of *Cyprus*, ſent her very honourably into *Cyprus* to her Husband, with twelve Galleys, ſix *Catalonian* and ſix *Venetian*. *Perinus* thus ſtrengthened, attack'd *Famagoſta* both by Sea and Land; but in vain; for the Soldiers within defended it ſtoutly, and his Navy was batter'd, and diſabled by bad Weather. In the mean while, the *Venetians* on the one ſide, and the *Genoeſes* on the other, did not ceaſe to moleſt both the Seas: For whil'ſt *Charles Zeno*, Admiral of the *Venetian* Fleet, infeſted the *Genoeſes* in the *Tyrrhene* Sea, *Lucian Auria* over-ran the *Adriatick*, to the great damage of the *Venetians*, ſetting upon them from *Zara*, (where his Ships lay at Anchor,) the King of *Hungary*'s Port. The *Venetians* were very much concern'd for the injury done to 'em, and, ſeeing they could not draw *Lucian* to fight, they burnt two Towns of the Kings called *Cataro* and *Sibinico*. In the mean time, *Galeatius Vicon-*

ti died, in the year 1379. and almoſt all the Dutchy of *Millain* ſeemed to be for *Bernabos*: At which the *Venetians* were much pleaſed, but to no purpoſe; for firſt the half, and then the whole, Country fell off to *John Galeatius* his Nephew. *Lucian*, Admiral of the *Genoeſes*, moving toward *Pola*, conquer'd and took the *Venetian* Navy in the very Harbour: But, whil'ſt he purſu'd the Enemy too raſhly, he was run through with a Lance and died. Both the Navies, as well the Conqueror as the Conquered, were brought into *Zara*, whither the *Genoeſes* ſent *Peter Auria* in the room of his deceaſed Brother, with nine Gallies, and many other Veſſels; who, taking an account of his Brothers Victory, found Two thouſand Captives, beſide the multitudes that were kill'd and drown'd. The *Venetians* were attack'd at Land too by *Carrara* and his Allies, whom I have mentioned, to whom the *Venetians* oppoſed *Albrico Barbiano* Earl of *Cuni*, an excellent Commander. But *Peter Auria*, having gotten a Navy of ſixty Gallies, and as many other Veſſels, went to *Venice*, ſtorm'd and burn'd *Grado*, *Comachio* and *Caborle*. From thence he went to *Chioza*, which, though it were defended for ſome time by the *Venetians*, yet he took it at laſt, by aſſiſtance of Supplies, which he had from the Governor of *Padua*: 'Tis certain, that full Six thouſand Men were ſlain in that Siege, and Nine hundred and fifty of the *Venetians* taken, and ſent to *Zara*; they ſpared the Women, not violating their Chaſtity in all their fury and violence. The *Venetians* being quite diſheartened at this Calamity, and, deſpairing of any help by Sea or Land, ſet the *Genoeſe* Captives at Liberty, and ſent 'em to *Chioza* to their Admiral, to beg their pardon, and to make their Submiſſion to the Will of the Conqueror: But the *Genoeſes*, proud of their Victory, as Conquerors uſe to be, refuſed to anſwer the *Venetians*, unleſs they would come and ſurrender themſelves and all they had. Thereupon the *Venetians* betook themſelves to the defence of their Country, and, ſetting up Chains of Iron before the Ports mouth, and a Guard of Three hundred Horſe, with as many Foot, upon the Key, they ſought out for ſome one Perſon, whom they might make their General; and, being in great doubt, by reaſon of their Diſtractions, whom to chuſe, it was propoſed, by ſome Body, That *Victor* of *Piſa* was the only Man fitting to be in a place of that Truſt, as well underſtanding the Power and Arts of the *Genoeſes*. That Voice (whoever ſpoke,) was heard with great reverence, as if it came from an Oracle; for immediately they ran all to the Priſon, where he lay for his ill management at *Pola*, and, taking him out, made him their ſole Commander. The *Genoeſes* by that time were come very near, and, having taken all the Caſtles thereabout, were juſt entering the City, but were eaſily repulſed, after a long fight, by *John Barbadicus*, with certain ſmall Ships well arm'd, the *Genoeſe* Gallies not being able to come on in thoſe narrow Seas. Beſides, *Barbadicus* uſed this other Stratagem; there was at that time an Inſtrument, called *Bombarda*, *i. e.* a Gun, newly invented by a certain *German*, and called *Bombarda* from its thundering ſound; and each of the *Venetian* Skiffs had two of thoſe Guns or more, whereby the *Genoeſes*, who were ignorant and unskill'd in this new kind of fighting, were many of 'em deſtroy'd; each Gun often killing two or three Men at one ſhot, becauſe they were not able to avoid them ſo well on Board as if they had been on ſhoar. Hereupon the *Venetians* bad *Bernabos Viconti* their Friend and Ally, to preſs upon the *Genoeſes* ſo as to raiſe the Siege; they already wanting proviſions. And indeed the *Venetians* muſt have periſhed, if (as *Carrara* adviſed,) the *Genoeſes* had taken care to hinder Supplies from being imported into *Venice*. *Bernabos*, to give ſome ſatisfaction to the *Venetians*, ſent his Army againſt the *Genoeſes*; who, when they had plundered the Valley of *Pulcephera*, and taken Nineteen thouſand, they left the *Genoeſes*, (who fought againſt *Bernabos*, not with Swords but with Gold,) and, having loaded themſelves with Spoil, return'd into *Millain*. *Aſtorgius* of *Faenza* had not ſo good luck, when he was ſent thither, by *Bernabos*, with the Horſe: For, coming toward the City, he was routed by the people of *Genoa*, who ſallied out upon him, but eſcaped, with much ado, himſelf in the Habit of a Country Fellow. But *Calo John* Emperor of *Greece*, being an Ally of the *Venetians*, beſieged *Pera*, a place belonging to the *Genoeſes*, over-againſt *Conſtantinople*; for he ſaw the *Genoeſes* were engaged in many and dangerous Wars. But *Andronicus* his Son, who was an equal Enemy to his Father and the *Venetian* both, with the Aſſiſtance of the *Turks* and *Bulgarians*, defended it ſtoutly, and frighted his Father to that degree, that he ſoon after came over to the ſide of the *Genoeſes*. In the mean time, *Urban* was not ſo intent upon making Peace between Chriſtians, (which he ſhould have done,) as he was deſirous to revenge the Injuries, which he received from Queen *Joan*, and therefore incited *Lewis*, King of *Hungary*, to revenge his Brother *Andrea*'s Death, and he would help him. He conſented, and, by inſtigating *Charles* his Son (who was then carrying on the War againſt the *Venetians* in *Marca Treviſana*,) againſt *Joan*, he gave the *Venetians* ſome little reſpit, who, before that, were almoſt ruined. And it added ſomewhat to their Affairs, that *Charles Zenus*, a *Venetian*, an excellent Sea-man, ſunk two Ships of Burthen in the Port of *Chioza*, and reduced the *Genoeſes* to that extremity, that they themſelues (ſince all other Paſſes were ſtopp'd up, and they could not bring their Ships out,) ſeem'd rather to be beſieged than to beſiege, they were in ſuch neceſſity of all proviſions. But nothing did the *Genoeſes* ſo much Injury, as the death of *Peter Auria*, who was kill'd by a ſhot from a Gun, as he was ſtoutly defending the Fortifications of *Chioza*: In whoſe place *Matthew Ruffus* was preſently choſen, who, as he was coming to *Chioza* with new Galleys, took *Thaddeus Juſtinianus* at *Manfredonia*, with ſix Galleys laden with Proviſions. *Agapetus*, Cardinal *Columna*, being concern'd for theſe misfortunes, exhorted the *Genoeſes* and the *Venetians* to Peace very often, but all in vain; for they, who fought out of hatred, not for Dominion, would never hearken to the wholeſom advice of thoſe who gave 'em good Counſel. At length the *Genoeſes*, when they ſaw themſelves ſo begirt at *Chioza*, that they could not ſally forth for the *Venetian*, nor get Proviſions from *Matthew Ruffus*, or the Lord of *Padua*, who had promiſed them ſhortly to ſupply them, they ſurrendered the Town on the firſt of *July* 1380. At which time there were taken of the Enemy 4340. though more died in the Siege by Famine and the Sword. Yet the *Genoeſes*, though they had received ſuch a fatal blow, could not lie ſtill, but with Thirty eight Galleys compelled the *Trieſteſes* to revolt from the *Venetians* to the Patriarch of *Aquilegia*. They likewiſe took *Juſtinople*, but not the Caſtle. And, when they had recruited their Navy, they went for *Venice* again; but no body encountring them, they return'd into *Iſtria*, took the City *Pola* and burn'd it: Many ſlaughters followed on both ſides. But the *Venetians* were overcome in a Land Fight by *Carrara*, whil'ſt *James Caballus*, an excellent Commander, defended *Treviſo* ſtoutly, which was almoſt forc'd, by Famine, to a ſurrender. And now both ſides being well tired with ſuch a long and bloody War, the Duke of *Savoy*, upon the 23d of *September*, 1381, makes Peace between them upon theſe Terms, That the *Venetians*, every tenth Year, ſhould pay the King of *Hungary* Seven thouſand pounds, provided he kept all his part of *Dalmatia* free from Pirats, and ſuffer no Salt to be made in his Dominions there; and that the Patriarch of *Aquilegia* ſhould have the ſame power in *Friuli* as before the War. But the *Venetians* and the *Genoeſes* were order'd to ſend home each others Captives, without any mention of the Spoils, which were taken on either ſide. The *Padueſes* were commanded to draw off from the Siege of *Treviſo*; and to demoliſh the Towers and Forts which they had raiſed in Fens, and at the mouths of ſeveral Rivers; upon which account Bounds were ſet out between the *Venetians* and thoſe of *Padua*. In the mean while, *Charles*, whom we told you the Pope ſent for out of *Hungary* to go againſt *Joan*, came into *Italy* with Eight thouſand Horſe, and firſt reduced *Arezzo*, which had been long embroiled by the Seditions of the *Guelphs* and *Gibellins*. From thence moving toward *Florence*, he was repell'd by *John Hawkwood*, who, at that time, quarter'd at *Stagia*. But the *Florentines* fearing they ſhould not be able to endure the ſhock of ſuch a mighty King, they purchaſed a Peace of him at the rate of 40000 *l.* and diſcharged *Hawkwood* without his Pay; who ſold *Bagnavallo* to *Nicolas* and *Albert d'Eſte*, that they might the better keep *Faenza* in Obedience, which, notwithſtanding, they ſoon after loſt by Treachery, to *Aſtorgius Manfredus*. But *Charles*, after he had viſited *Urban* at *Rome*, went into his Kingdom, and, having conquered all *Joan*'s Forces, took *Naples* by ſurrender. The Queen was beſieged in *Caſtelnovo*, when the *Guelphs* of *Arezzo* made a Tumult, and forced *James Caracciolo*, a Citizen of *Naples*, who was ſent thither by the King, to fly into the Caſtle. The *Gibellins* alſo fled thither too, whoſe good that juſt Man conſulted as much as the *Guelphs*: For he deſired to carry every thing alike with Equity in all Caſes. Wherefore, having ſent for *Albrick Barbianus* from *Todi*, upon the account of an Injury which he receiv'd, he went into the City, and, whil'ſt he ſtrove to reduce the *Guelphs*, he plundered the *Gibellins* alſo. And *Ferraback*, another General, who followed *Albrick*, took all the remaining Spoil that he could find in *Arezzo*. Whil'ſt theſe things were tranſacted in *Naples* and *Arezzo*, a new Cloud of War overcaſt *Italy*; For *Lewis* of *Anjou*, of the Blood-Royal of *France*, enter'd *Italy* with Thirty thouſand Horſe, and poſted himſelf not far from *Bologna*, being ſet on by *Clement* the Anti-Pope, not ſo much to free Queen *Joan*, who was beſieged, as by force to depoſe *Urban*. For this reaſon *Charles* left *Arezzo*, and ſent for *Albrick* and *Ferraback*; to whom alſo the *Florentines* ſent *John Hawkwood* at the requeſt of *Urban*. *Lewis* going through *Marci*, was come as far as the Foreſt of *Caſſino*, expecting Twelve thouſand Horſe, which were already come into *Italy* under the Command of *Andegranius*, and, marching through *Piacenza*, *Lucca*, *Florence*, and *Sienna*, were arrived at *Arezzo*, where they were let in by the *Guelphs*, and ſack'd the City, after *Albrick* had given 'em a fatal blow. The *Gibellins* defended the Caſtle, which was beſieged forty Days; and had been taken by the *French*, had not *Lewis* of *Anjou* died in the mean time. Then *Andegranius*, ſeeing how things went, by advice of the people of *Arezzo*, that were beſieged in the Caſtle, ſold the City to the *Florentines*, and ſo return'd into *France*. And the *Anjouen* Soldiers, now deſtitute of their General, wandered home by two or three in a Company, begging by the way. *Urban*, being now deliver'd from the fear of the *French*, went to *Naples*, and ask'd leave of the King, to make his Nephew Prince of *Campania*, which when he could not obtain, being of a clowniſh and uncivil temper, (which he would have had to be interpreted a blunt down-right honeſty) he began to threaten him, and provoked the King ſo far, that he ſet a Guard upon him for ſome days, and would not ſuffer him to walk the Streets. This affront he ſeem'd to wink at for a time, and with the King's good leave went to *Nocera*, to avoid (as he himſelf ſaid) the heat of that City. Where, when he had fortified the Town, he made ſome new Cardinals, and impriſon'd ſeven of the old ones, charging upon them a Conſpiracy, with the King and the Anti-pope, againſt him. Beſides that, he commanded a Proceſs (to ſpeak in their Phraſe) againſt the King, and ſent him a Citation to appear; and had this Anſwer from him, That he would come very ſhortly to *Nocera*, and acquit himſelf of all Crimes objected, not with Words, but with Weapons. And in order thereunto he came to *Nocera* with a competent Army, and beſieged the Town. But *Raymund Balcianus*, of the Family of the *Urſins*, and Son to the Earl of *Nola*, (who was afterward Prince of *Taranto*) was concern'd at the indignity, with his own Forces, which he commanded under the King, he carried *Urban*, and the whole Court, to the next Shore, and put 'em on board certain *Genoeſe* Galleys prepared for the purpoſe. By the way as the Pope ſailed to *Genoa*, he took ſeven Cardinals at *Nocera*, of which he put five into Bags, and drowned them in the Sea. But upon the Death of *Lewis*, King of *Hungary*, the Nobility of that Country ſent preſently for *Charles*, who going thither, called a Convention of the Eſtates for the ſetling of Affairs; but whilſt he was buſie upon it, the Queen, who ow'd him a Grudge, procur'd him to be murther'd, in the Year 1385. This was juſt about the time, when *John Galeatius* put Viſcount *Bernabos* (his Unkle by the ſide of his Father *Galeatius*) into Priſon at *Monza*, where he kept him as long as he liv'd, and enjoy'd his Eſtate. For formerly, when they divided their Patrimony, *Pavia*, *Vercelli*, *Novara*, *Tortona*, *Aleſſandria*, and other places toward the *Apennine* Mountains, and the *Alps*, fell to *Galeatius*; and *Piacenza*, *Cremona*, *Parma*, *Lauden*, *Breſcia*, and *Pergamo*, to *Bernabos*; *Millain* being common to both. *Urban* had now paſs'd a whole Year at *Genoa*, when News was brought him, that the *Florentines* incited the Cities belonging to the Church to aſſert their Liberty, as they had done formerly; upon which, he went firſt to *Lucca*, and then to *Siena* and *Perugia*; and thoſe Cities being confirmed in their Allegiance by his coming, he went as far as *Ferentino*, under pretence of ſeeing *Naples*; but his true Deſign was, to turn *Ladiſlaus*, a very Child, and *John*, both Sons to *Charles*, out of their paternal Inheritance. For many Noble Men, that favour'd *Lewis* of *Anjou*, gave him hope of enjoying that Kingdom; but thoſe of *Gajetta* were very faithful, and preſerving the Children alive, ſaved the Kingdom too, to their great Honour. The Pope therefore return'd to *Rome*, not being able to effect his Deſign, but was receiv'd into the City with great pomp; though not long after the *Banderesii* laid wait for him, which yet he eſcaped, and fruſtrated. He created in one day twenty nine Cardinals, of which three were *Romans*, the reſt almoſt all *Neapolitans*. In the mean while *Antonius Scala* of *Verona*, and *Francis* the elder, Lord of *Padua*, were engaged in a bloody War, in which *John Ubaldin* led the Army of the *Carrareſes*, and *John Ordelaſo*, that of the *Scaligeri*. But *Galeatius Viconti*, with the aſſiſtance of the *Carrareſes*, conquer'd the *Scaligeri*, and took *Verona* and *Vincenza*. Nor was he ſo contented, but in a ſew months he beſieged, and took *Padua*, and impriſon'd *Francis Carrara* at *Monza*; *Francis* his Son eſcaping by flight. The *Florentines* alſo willing now to increaſe their Dominions, took *Monte-Pulciano* and *Luſignano*, two Towns in the Territories of *Siena*, by ſtratagem rather than by ſtrength. And afterward ſent *Charles*, Son to *Bernabos*, and *Antony Scala* with five thouſand Horſe into the Country of *Siena* to Forage. This mov'd *Galeatius* to ſuch a degree, that he diſpatch'd Ambaſſadors to *Florence* to complain, that contrary to the League heretofore made between them, the *Florentines* had entertain'd in pay, his Enemies, *Charles Viconti* and *Antony Scala*; and that againſt all Right and Juſtice, they had haraſs'd his Friends and Allies, the *Sieneſes*: In fine, his Ambaſſadors were commanded to declare War againſt them, except they drew off their Forces from the *Siennois*, and disbanded thoſe Officers. But leſt *Galeatius* ſhould have been as good as his word, *Peter Gambacorta*, Lord of *Piſa*, a Friend both to him and to the *Florentines*, interpoſed, and undertook to make up the buſineſs. In the mean time *Urban* dyed at *Rome* in the eleventh year and eighth month of his unhappy Pontificate; and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, where there was but little Mourning for him, as being a ruſtical, and an inexorable Man. His Sepulchre or Tomb is yet to be ſeen, with a very rude and ſilly Inſcription upon it.

BONIFACE IX.

BONIFACE the Ninth, a *Neapolitan*, formerly called *Peter Tomacello*, was made Pope at *Rome*, by general conſent of the Cardinals, in the year 1389. Who though he were not above thirty years old, when he enter'd upon the Popedom, yet he lived ſo ſtrictly at that florid Age, and in thoſe wicked times, that no act of Luſt, or inordinate pleaſure could be charged upon him; for he ſeemed to have changed his Youth into Age. And then he was a Perſon of ſuch Courage and Conduct, that he was the firſt who inveſted all the Power of *Rome* in the Pope alone, ſo that he created Magiſtrates, as he pleaſed, and fortified the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, which is ſituate near the *Tiber*, as you go to the *Vatican*, and ſet guards upon all the Bridges croſs the *Tiber*. Whilſt this *Boniface* IX. was in the Chair, *Galeatius* made War upon the *Florentines* and *Bolognians*, by his Generals, *John Ubaldin* and *Lantedeſcus Petramala*, who in the Valley of *Arno*, plunder'd and ſpoil'd all far and near. *James Vermes* likewiſe enter'd the Territories of *Bolognia* upon his own account, and did the City great damage. The *Florentines* in the mean time, to prevent, with their utmoſt, theſe evils, ſent *John Hawkwood*, *Charles*, Son to *Bernabos*, and *Antony Scala*, with four thouſand Horſe, and two thouſand Foot, to aid the *Bolognians*, their Friends and Allies: And ſollicited *Stephen*, Duke of *Bavaria*, (to whom *Francis* the younger was fled for refuge) both by Letters and Meſſengers, to come and aſſiſt 'em. Beſide, they hired *James* Earl of *Armeniac*, for a great deal of Money, to come down into *Italy* againſt *Viconti*, and divert him from their borders, to defend his own. *Francis* the younger alſo, at their Intreaty, diſguiſing himſelf, and favoured by the *Venetians*, got into *Padua*; and took the City before any body was aware. The Duke of *Bavaria* follow'd him at the heels, and, entring the Town, ſtorm'd the Caſtle without any intermiſſion. And the *Veroneſes*, ſtartled at this turn of Affairs, beat out the Guards of the *Visonti*, and invited *Antony Scala* to their ſide, who, juſt about that time, died in *Tuſcany*, leaving one only Child, a little Boy. Which when they heard, they repented of what they had done, and immediately ſent for *Ugulot Blancardus*, who was with *Galeatius*'s Army in *Cremona*, having begg'd pardon for their Crime, and paid ſome thouſands of pounds to atone for their Error. *Blancard* being let in, could not keep the Soldiers from ſacking the wealthy City, but the Wife of *Galeatius*, out of pity for the Noble Town, after three days, ſtay'd any further plundering. The Duke of *Bavaria* now complaining, that the Subſidies, promis'd him by the *Florentines*, were not fairly paid him, raiſed the Siege of the Caſtle at *Padua*, and went into *Germany*. Thereupon the *Florentines*, having procured paſſage for their Troops of *Albert d'Eſte*, who was fallen out with *Galeatius* a good while before, ſent *John Hawkwood* to aſſiſt young *Carrara*; by whoſe Valour and Skill, the Caſtle of *Padua* was quickly brought to ſurrender. So that the Forces of *Galeatius*, who were ſent for their Relief, retired into the Country of *Vicenza*. By this time the Earl of *Armagnac*, a Penſioner of the *Florentines*, was arriv'd in *Italy* by the way of *Turin*, with twenty thouſand Horſe, and having taken *Caſtellaccio* by ſtorm, he gave the Plunder to his Soldiers. To oppoſe this Enemy, *Galeatius* was neceſſitated to recall his men out of the Country of *Vicenza*: While the *Milaneſes*, who were poſted in the Suburbs of *Alexandria*, were furiouſly ſet upon by thoſe of *Armagnac* without any order; but the *Italians* drew out the Battel ſo long, fighting for ſome time before the Gates, till their men (whom they had ſent about, to fall upon their Enemy in the Reer) could have time to ſurpriſe 'em. While the Fight continued, they came about. So that the Enemy was attacqu'd in the Reer, Front and Flank, in ſuch a dreadful manner, (for the Towns-people alſo aided them) that they were almoſt all of 'em kill'd, before they were ſenſible what danger they were in. The Earl of *Armagnac* himſelf, General of this great Army, was taken, but died immediately of a wound that he receiv'd. Beſides him, there were taken *Rainardus Lanſigliatius*, and *John Riecio*, two *Florentine* Knights, who had guided the Earl into *Italy*. *Galeatius*, grown confident by this Victory, ſent part of his Forces againſt *Hawkwood*, who had paſs'd the Rivers *Adige* and *Memcio*, to join *Armagnac*; upon notice whereof, *Hawkwood* haſted toward *Padua*, but loſt a great many men by the way, who were drowned in the Sluces, that the Country people had made to hinder their retreat: But the *Florentines* being hard put to it by *James Vermes*, who was ſent thither by *Galeatius* with Twelve thouſand Horſe and Four thouſand Foot, call'd back *Hawkwood*, who overcame their Enemies by ſtratagem, whom he was not able to conquer in the open Field. In the mean time, a Peace was made at *Genoa*, upon good Conditions, between *Galeatius* and the *Florentines*, by the mediation of Pope *Boniface*, and *Antony Adurno* General of the *Genoeſes*. But one flame was no ſooner quench'd, but another broke out: For *Francis di Vico*, Prefect of the City, got *Viterbo* out of the Pope's hands by Treachery: And *Peter Gambacurta*, Lord of *Piſa*, and his Sons, was kill'd by *James* his Secretary and Counſellor, who ſtrait uſurped his Seigniory. At this time alſo, upon the death of *Albert d'Eſte*, one *Azzo* of the ſame Family, who had been baniſh'd a long time, attempted to be reſtored to his Country, by the power of the Counts of *Cunie*: But the Guardians of young *Nicolas*, Son of *Albert*, took up Arms, and, driving *Accius* from *Ferrara*, promiſed the Towns of *Lugo* and *Monſelice* to *John Cunio*, if he would kill *Azzo*: But he ſhewed them a trick for it, and only kill'd a Man very like him; upon which the Towns being ſurrendered to him, he produced the real *Azzo*. *Alberick* his Progenitor would never have done ſuch an Act; to whom the *Italians* owe more than to all the Generals of his Age. For he firſt taught the *Italians* the Art of War, (when they had been long unaccuſtomed to Arms,) how to defend themſelves from Domeſtick, as well as Foreign, Enemies: For, before his time, if the *Italians* had any War, either among themſelves, or againſt the *Barbarians*, they were forced to deſire the aid of Foreign Soldiers. But he raiſed ſuch a mighty Army, in a ſhort ſpace, under the Banner of S. *George*, that he drave the *Britains*, (who had ruined our Country, and the Caſtles belonging to the Church,) together with the *Germans*, *Engliſh*, and all other Invaders, out of *Italy*. From him aroſe the *Bracceſchi* and *Sforceſchi*, by whom *Italy* gain'd ſo much Glory, that other Nations either were content to be quiet for fear, or, if they attempted to invade us, 'twas at the coſt of their Lives. In the mean time, *Clement* VII. the Anti-Pope, died, and, in his place, the Cardinals, who join'd in the preſent Schiſm, put up *Peter Luna*, then called *Benedict* XIII. at *Avignion*. At that time alſo, *Winceſlaus*, Son to *Charles* the Emperor, ſucceeded him; from whom *John Galeatius Viconti* received the Title of Duke of *Milan*, by his Ambaſſador *Peter Philargi* Archbiſhop of *Milan*, who afterward got the Papacy, and was called *Alexander* the Fifth. But *Galeatius*, when *John Hawkwood* was dead and buried at *Florence*, (whom the *Florentines* made uſe of as their chief Commander in their Wars,) reſolved to ſend *Albrick* with an Army into *Tuſcany*, to keep the *Florentines* in awe, who then made War upon *Appian* Lord of *Piſa*. There were in that Army *Paul Urſin*, *Ceculino*, *Brolia*, *Brandelino*, *Paul Sabello*, *Luke Canali*, great Captains; who, going with joint Forces and Counſels to beſiege *Florence*, pitched their Camp near the *Carthuſian* Monaſtery; from whence they continually infeſted the City of *Florence*, and all the Country about it, with frequent Inrodes, and filled all places with ſlaughter, rapine and fire, *Anno Dom.* 1397. At which time, *Boniface* went to *Perugia*, to procure a Reconciliation between the Nobility and Commonalty there. But the Commonalty, even in the Pope's preſence, took up Arms againſt their Promiſe, and kill'd eighty of the Nobles, and then made *Biordo* and *Nichilotto*, who were admitted into the City as Heads of their Faction, chief Lords of all. The Pope was angry at that, and went to *Aſſiſi*, from whence he ſent Agents to *Galeatius*, to deſire him, that he ceaſe to attempt *Mantua*, which he then beſieged by Land and Water, having ſent for *Albrick Barbianus* into that Country to aſſiſt in the War. But the *Florentines* and the *Venetians* being bound as Allies to aid *Mantua*, they ſent a good Army, under the Conduct of *Charles Malateſta*, (Couſin to the Duke of *Mantuan*,) who defeated *Galeatius*'s Forces at *Governo*. At that time, the *Florentines* had a deſign to fall upon the *Piſans*, but the Earls of *Puppio* and *Bilono*, and the *Ubertine* Rebels, who threatned deſtruction to the City of *Florence*, if they ſtirred a Foot againſt the *Piſans*, diverted them from it. But not long after *James Appian* died, and his Son *Gerard* ſucceeded him, who, when he could not keep *Piſa* in Subjection, by reaſon of the Tumults which the *Florentines* raiſed in it, he ſold the City to *Galeatius Viconti*, in the year 1399. keeping only one Town for him and his, called *Piumbino*. At *Perugia*, *Biordus* being ſlain by the contrivance of *Lantedeſcus*, the *Perugians* endeavoured to aſſert their Liberty: And, when *Ugolin Trinci* of *Fuligno*, the Pope's Vicar there, endeavoured, in his Name, to bring *Perugia* into the Churches Patrimony, the Citizens were angry, and ſurrender'd themſelves to *Galeatius*; who, two months after, got poſſeſſion alſo of *Bologna* and *Lucca* by a wile. Hence was the fear of the *Florentines* ſo encreaſed, that they gave out, That they and their Liberty were all loſt, unleſs *Galeatius* were taken off. The Year of Jubilee approaching, the Pope was moved, by Ambaſſadors from *Rome*, to leave *Aſſiſi* and reſide with them; which, though he was very willing to do, yet he concealed his deſire, and told 'em, He would not; becauſe, he ſaid, They denied to have Senators choſen out of Foreign Nobility, according to the Cuſtom and Orders of former Popes; and becauſe they had choſen Conſervators of the Chamber on their own head, Men not fit for the Employment, who gave too much Licence to the *Bandereſii*. Then the *Romans*, to gratifie the Pope, removed the *Bandereſii*, and admitted of *Malateſta*, Son to *Pandulphus*, of *Peſaro*, a learned Man, as Senator, in the Pope's Name, and furniſh'd *Boniface* with Money to go to *Rome*. When he was come into the City, he fortified S. *Angelo* (as I told you,) with Walls and Turrets, and made himſelf, by degrees, Maſter of the whole place. After that, in the year 1400. the Jubilee was kept, and a great multitude of people flock'd to *Rome* for Devotion, and then the *Florentines*, being willing to be rid of *Galeatius*, invited *Robert* Duke of *Bavaria* (whom the Electors of the Empire, having depoſed *Wenceſlaus* of *Bohemia* for his ſloth, had choſen Emperor,) to come into *Italy*, upon condition, that he ſhould not have the promiſed Reward, till he was advanced as far as the Dutchy of *Millain*. But when he was come to *Breſcia*, near the *Lago di Grada*, and had received part of the Money, he engaged with *Galeatius*, and, loſing the day, fled to *Trent*. The *Venetians* and *Florentines* promiſed him great things, to keep him from going back into *Germany*, but all would not do. At that time, *Boniface*, whether out of fear of the Power of the *Viconti*, or out of covetouſneſs to enlarge the Churches Patrimony, was the firſt that impoſed *Annates*, or yearly Payments, upon Eccleſiaſtical Benefices, upon this condition, that whoever got a Benefice, ſhould pay half an years Revenue into the Apoſtolical Treaſury. Yet there are thoſe, who attribute this Invention to *John* XXII. Now all Countries admitted of this uſage, except the *Engliſh*, who granted it only in caſe of Biſhopricks, but not in other Benefices. Being thus ſtrengthened with Money, and, chuſing Magiſtrates as he pleaſed, both in the City and all over the Church Dominions, the Pope reſtored *Ladiſlaus*, a Youth, Son to *Charles* King of *Naples*, into his Father's Kingdom, which was uſurp'd by ſuch as ſided at that time with *Lewis* of *Anjou:* And, to do it the more eaſily and honourably, he aboliſh'd that deprivation of *Charles*, which *Urban* had promulged at *Nocera*, and ſent Cardinal *Fiorentino* to *Cajeta*, (which was the only place, that had continued Loyal,) to Crown the Youth there, where he had been ſo loyally preſerved. *Galeatius* thus rid of the Emperor, ſent his Army, under the command of *Albrick*, againſt *John Bentivoglio*, who had turn'd out the Gariſon, and made himſelf Maſter of *Bologna*. At this time, *Francis Gonzaga* fought in *Galeatius*'s Army, (for they two were Friends again,) as alſo *Pandulphus Malateſta*, *Charles*'s Brother, and *Ottobon Roſſi* of *Parma*. The names of theſe Men terrified the *Florentines* ſo, that they ſent *Bernardo* their General to aſſiſt the *Bolognians* their Allies; which ſo encouraged the *Bolognians*, that they engaged the Enemy before their Walls; but had the worſt, and loſt all their Horſe, as alſo *Bernardo*, who was kill'd in the Fight. *James Carrara* was taken, but preſerved at the requeſt of *Francis Gonzaga*. *Bentivoglio* fled with a ſmall number into the City; which, whil'ſt he ſtoutly defended, he fell into an Ambuſcade where he was kill'd, the Enemy not being able to take him alive; ſo that now *Galeatius* eaſily became Maſter of *Bologna*, and ſtruck great terror into the *Florentines*, threatning ſuddenly to turn all the force of his Arms upon them: But, not long after, he died at *Marignan* of a Fever, *Anno Dom.* 1402. whoſe death, long wiſh'd-for by the *Florentines*, freed them from many Fears, and was pre-ſignified by a Comet, which appear'd ſome time before. Upon this, many Uſurpers aroſe, either thoſe, who were chief in their Cities, or, who had command among the Soldiery, by corrupting the Gariſons, ſeized their ſeveral Towns; there being now no one Man of Authority and Power to correct their Ambitions and Exceſſes, infinite miſchiefs happened. That fatal Sedition too of the *Guelphs* and *Gibellins* was renew'd, which ran through *Italy* Two hundred years and above, and raiſed ſuch civil Wars among the ſeveral Cities, that they fought till they had almoſt deſtroyed each other. *Ugolinus Cavalcabos*, having vanquiſh'd the *Gibellins*, was Lord of *Cremona*; whil'ſt *Otho* the Third got *Parma*, expelling the *Roſſi*. The *Soardi* ſeized *Bergamo*; the *Ruſconii* took *Como*; the *Vignati* poſſeſſed themſelves of *Lodi*; and *Fazino Cane*, an Excellent General, made himſelf Maſter of *Vercelli*, *Aleſſandria*, and many other Towns thereabout. I omit others, who, having been expell'd by *Galeatius*, then were in ſome hopes of recovering their uſurped Dominions; eſpecially *William Scala*, and *Charles Viconti*, Son to *Bernabos*, who ſolicited all the Princes and People to revolt. Upon this account, *Piras Ordelaphus* was baniſh'd his Country, and got poſſeſſion of *Forli*; and *Albrick* Earl of *Cuni* would have reduced *Faenza*, then brought to extremity, if he had not been ſent for in haſte by *Ladiſlaus*, by the Pope's Advice, and made Great Conſtable of *Naples*. The Pope had ſent his

Brother alſo thither with a competent Army, to aſſiſt the King; but he being expelled by the *Neapolitans* moved toward *Perugia*, and ſoon made that City ſubject to the Pope. *Balteſar Caſſa* alſo a *Neapolitan* Cardinal of S. *Euſtachius*, compelled the *Bolognians* to return to the Church-party, after he had beſieged them for ſome time; in which Expedition *Brachius Montonius* led the Church-forces, as being a Perſon well skilled in Military Affairs, and left for that reaſon in *Romagna* by *Albrick*. For he had fought under him from his youth, and been a Commander, as had *Sfortia*, who was born in *Cotignola* a Town of *Romagna*; by whoſe Valour and Proweſs the Militia of *Italy* ſo improved, that whoever wanted a Commander, would make uſe of one of them. Hence thoſe Military Factions ſo increaſed, that all the Troubles of *Italy* for ſixty years might be imputed to one of them. For he, that was oppreſſed by the *Brachians*, immediately hired the *Sfortians* to revenge his Quarrel. But *Albrick* (from whom, as from the *Trojan Horſe*, ſo many Generals did come,) made *Naples* yield to *Ladiſlaus*, after a long Siege. At which Victory all the Princes of the Kingdom and all the Cities ſurrendred themſelves to the King. But *Ladiſlaus*, over deſirous of enlarging his Kingly power, before he had laid a good foundation in *Naples*, was ſent for into *Hungary*, to accept of that Kingdom by Hereditary right; and in order thereunto ſent over his Forces. But whilſt he was beſieging *Zara*, his Friends ſent him word, that the *Neapolitans* were like to revolt; wherefore having taken *Zara*, and ſold it to the *Venetians*, he returned to *Naples*; and calling back *Albrick* out of *Romagna*, he depoſed all the Nobles, and baniſhed thoſe that refuſed to obey him. But he was very ſevere upon the Family of *Sanſeverino*, and put the chiefeſt of them to death. *Boniface* being troubled at ſuch a tedious confuſion of Affairs, at length died of a Pleuriſie, in the fourteenth year and the ninth month of his Pontificate, *Anno Dom.* 1404. He was buried at S. *Peters* in a Marble Tomb, of Moſaic work, ſtill to be ſeen with his Coat of Arms: Which ſhews alſo that he built much in S. *Angelo*, the Capitol and the *Vatican*. Nor had any thing been wanting to the glory of this Pope, if he had not been too partial to his Relations: Simony being often committed, by reaſon that his Brethren and Friends, who came to *Rome* in great multitudes to get Money, asked for every thing that fell in his gift, without any reaſon. As for Indulgencies, and thoſe plenary too, they were ſold about at ſuch a rate, that the Authority of the Keys and the Pope's Bulls was brought into contempt. *Boniface* indeed endeavoured to amend theſe things, but was forced by the importunity of his Friends to let it alone. And for this reaſon I think it would go better with the Church of God, if Popes would not mind their Kindred, or at leaſt not too much; but conſult the good and Honour of the Papacy rather than promote the Intereſt of fleſh and blood. Eſpecially at that time, when *Tamberlain*, who conquered the Turks, and led their Emperor in Chains along with him, was dead, and had left all the *Armenians*, *Perſians*, *Egyptians* and *Aſſyrians*, without Governors; ſo that the Chriſtians might eaſily have recovered *Jeruſalem* and the Holy Sepulchre. But his care was placed nearer home, for he perſecuted the *Albi*, [*Bianchi* or *Whites*] that would have introduced a new ſort of Superſtition under his Pontificate, of whom I heard my Father (who ſaw the Man) ſay, that there was a certain Prieſt, who came down from the *Alps* into *Italy* the year afore the Jubilee, with a great many after him; and being cloathed in white Cloth, pretended ſo much Modeſty, that every body look'd upon him as a Saint. So that this Fellow, coming into *Italy*, drew a great number of Men and Women over to his Opinion, in a ſhort time. And theſe people at Night, lay, Men or Women, Peaſants or Citizens, Servants or Freemen, promiſcuouſly together, cover'd with their white Robes, like ſo many Sheep. They Feaſted in the publick Streets, and ſtrove who ſhould bring the beſt Proviſions. The Prieſt himſelf carried a Crucifix, which, he ſaid, wept for the Sins of Mankind; and as often as it did ſo, the people ſet up a clamour, and begg'd pardon of God. They ſang the Lauds, or Praiſes of the Bleſſed Virgin, going along, and ſtanding ſtill, in Hymns made for that purpoſe. But as he came from *Piedmont*, and that way, into *Romagna*, *Tuſcany*, and *Millain*, the Opinion of his Sanctity was advanced, whereby he brought over not only the rude and unlearned Commonalty, but even great Men and Biſhops of ſeveral Cities. At *Viterbo*, being tired with travelling, he tarried with the Multitude, and from thence, ſaid, he would come to *Rome*, to viſit the holy Places, and Bodies of the Saints. But *Boniface* fearing him to be a Cheat, and thinking, as he ſaid, that the ſuperſtitious Knave had a mind to get the Popedom by the aſſiſtance of that Gang about him, he ſent Soldiers to meet him, and bring him to *Rom* Which done, ſome write, That his Knavery was detected by Fortune, and that he was deſervedly burnt alive; but others ſay, the Man was guiltleſs, and that it was only a trick of the Pope to raiſe that Report of him, whereas he put him to Death out of Envy. Which is true, God knows; but this is certain, That after ſo great a conflux of people, cauſed partly by this, and partly by the Jubilee, a number of Men died of the Plague. But amidſt all the Evils wherewith *Italy* was afflicted, we received one Benefit. For *Chryſoloras Byzantius* brought the *Greek* Learning into our Country, which had been neglected in *Italy* for four hundred years. Hence came the *Greek* and *Latin* Schools, where *Guarinus*, *Victorinus*, *Philielphus*, *Ambroſe* the Monk, *Leonard*, and *Charles* of *Arezzo*, and many more, were educated; by the emulation of whom, many Wits were excited to laudable Studies.

INNOCENT VII.

INNOCENT the Seventh, of *Sulmona*, before named *Coſmo*, Cardinal-Prieſt of *Santa Croce*, was made Pope at *Rome*, when all *Italy* was in an Uproar For *John Galeatius* being dead, and leaving two Sons but young, all *Italy* betook themſelves to Arms. *John Maria*, the elder Son, got the Dutchy of *Millain*; and *Philip Maria*, the younger, made himſelf Lord of *Pavia* with eaſe, as lawful Earl of it. The other Cities, to the number of twenty five, revolted from the *Viconti*. *Paul Guiniſſius*, a Citizen of *Lucca*, uſurped the Dominion of his Country; *Francis Carrara*, (now that General was gone off, whoſe Arms he exceedingly fear'd) that he might enlarge his Territories, ſent Ambaſſadors to *Verona*, *Breſcia*, *Bergamo*, and *Cremona*, to ſolicite the *Guelphs* to be on his ſide. But when he ſaw *William Scala* and *Charles Viconti* (who deſired to govern their own Cities) could hinder his attempts, he promiſed *William* the Signiory of *Verona*, and that of *Millain* to *Charles*, of whom he borrowed thirty thouſand pounds. So he reſtored *William* to his Country; but he ſoon after was poiſon'd, and then *Verona* fell again to *Francis*. He would have ſerv'd *Charles* the ſame trick, when he was urgent with him, either to perform his promiſe, or to pay the Money he had lent him. He alſo adviſed *Francis Gonzaga*, by Letter, to come over to his ſide, and embrace his Alliance; and if he would not, that he would look upon him as an Enemy, and give him reaſon e're long to repent of his obſtinacy. And that, he ſaid, was eaſie; becauſe he having gotten *Verona*, which border'd upon *Mantoua*, he ſhould ſhortly compaſs *Breſcia* too, and ſo teaze the *Mantoueſes* as he pleaſed. *Francis* reſolv'd to ſay nothing in anſwer to him, till he heard what the *Venetian* Ambaſſadors ſaid, whom he underſtood to be upon the way coming to him. For the *Venetians* ſuſpecting the power of the *Carrareſi*, took *Vincenza* into their protection, by a free ſurrender of the Citizens, who fear'd *Francis*'s ſtrength; and would rather be under any Lord than one of *Padua*, for there was a mortal hatred between the *Paduans* and thoſe of *Vincenza*. So then the *Venetians* admoniſh'd *Francis Carrara*, that he ſhould not meddle with thoſe of *Vincenza*, who were their Tributaries: And that he would raiſe the Siege from *Cologna*, which they accounted within their Dominions; if not, that the *Venetians* would revenge their quarrels. *Francis* reply'd, that he admired at the impudence of the *Venetians*, who, though they haue no right or claim to any thing upon the Continent, yet would preſcribe Laws to them who had juſt Titles. He therefore bad 'em go and confine themſelves within their Bays, and Fens, and let them alone to govern the ſeveral Cities, who had derived a right to it from their Forefathers. This enraged the *Venetians*, who thereupon ſent inſtructions to their Ambaſſadors, then upon the Road, to make a League with *Francis Gonzaga*; and chuſe him General of their Forces, with an honourable yearly ſtipend. And *Francis* (when the League was made) thought it beſt to make haſte, becauſe he heard the Enemy had gotten *Cologna*, and raiſing a great Army, attaqued the *Veroneſes* on that ſide, that lies toward *Mantoua*. The *Venetians* from *Vincenza* did the ſame. Which ſo terrified the *Veroneſes*, that having no hopes of help they ſurrender'd. For the Citizens hated *Francis Carrara*, for having poiſon'd *William Scala*, and impriſon'd his Sons, after he had gotten *Verona* by a Wile. But as the Army enter'd the City, keeping their exact Order, for fear of ſome ſtratagem of the Enemy, *James Carrara*, who had commanded the Gariſon, ran away with ſome few Soldiers to *Hoſtia*. But as he croſs'd the *Poe*, he was taken priſoner and ſent to *Venice*. Now the *Venetians* having fortified *Verona* as well as they could, march'd thence with all their Forces to *Padua*, which they beſieged, though it were fenced with very high Walls, and a deep Ditch, and Gariſon'd with ſtout Men: And after ſome months having block'd up the Avenues for Proviſion, they had it yielded to them. *Francis* was fled into the Caſtle, with his Sons and Nephews: But the *Venetians* took that too, not long after by ſurrender of the Soldiers within, who were ready to ſtarve. But *Francis* being taken and ſent to *Venice*, was put to death along with his Brother. And this was the end of him, who indulged his own Luſt of ruling ſo much, that he contemn'd Peace, and would get all things by force of Arms. But this was not the end of our misfortunes. For, either by the neglect of Popes, (who uſed to procure Peace either by Interdictions, Menaces, or Force) or rather by means of the Schiſm, (under which, the Church of God did at that time labour) it was come to that paſs, that every baſe Uſurper, after the death of *John Galeatius*, would venture upon any miſchievous deſign. And though *Innocent*, whilſt he was Cardinal, uſed to blame the negligence and timorouſneſs of former Popes, ſaying, their ſloth was the cauſe, that the Schiſm, which was the bane of the Church of *Rome*, and of all Chriſtendom, was not rooted out. Yet when himſelf had gotten the Popedom, he follow'd *Urbans* and *Boniface's* ſteps in ſeveral things, which he had carp'd at in them when he was a private perſon: And not only did not what he had before commended, but took it very ill if any one mention'd it to him. Beſide, he was ſo furious in his Adminiſtration of the Government, that once, when the *Romans* deſired to have their liberty reſtored, and that the Capitol, *Ponte molle*, and S. *Angelo* might be put into their hands, and alſo were urgent with him to extirpate the Schiſms (which had been ſo deſtructive, and of ſuch ill example) out of the Church, and that he would ſeek the Peace of Chriſtendom, (ſince the King of *France* promiſed to aſſiſt him in it, and *Peter Luna* the Anti-Pope was not againſt ſo good a work) the Pope e'en ſent the *Romans* themſelves to *Lewis* his Nephew, who lay at the Hoſpital of the Holy Ghoſt in the Stone-way, as to an Executioner. For eleven of theſe publick-ſpirited Citizens were preſently put to death, and thrown out at the Windows; for that, he ſaid, was the only way to remove Schiſm and Sedition. The people of *Rome* were ſo incens'd at this cruel uſage, that they ſent for *Ladiſlaus* King of *Naples*, and took up Arms to revenge themſelves of *Lewis*. But the Pope, to avoid the fury of the People, took *Lewis* along with him and ran away to *Viterbo*. Whereupon the People, ſeeing they could not ſatisfy their wrath upon the Author of the Villany, they turn'd their indignation upon the Courtiers, and plunder'd them of all they had. Yet ſome, they ſay, were preſerv'd in the Houſes of ſeveral *Roman* Cardinals, who, with much ado, did make a ſhift to protect thoſe that fled to 'em, by the aſſiſtance of their Clients. Then the *Romans* having taken the Capitol, and *Ponte Molle*, they attempted S. *Angelo*; but in vain, though they were aſſiſted by *John Columna* Earl of *Troja*, *Gentilis Monteranus*, Earl of *Carrara*, great Commanders under King *Ladiſlaus*. But when *Paul Urſi* came upon them by order of the Pope, with *Moſtarda* and *Cecchalino*, they routed *John Columna* and *Ladiſlaus*'s Men that were left, in a place called *Nero's Meads*. This was a great damage to the *Romans*; for their Men and Cattel were driven away; and therefore when their anger was over, they became friends with the Pope, and deſired him to return home to the City. For he was naturally courteous, and affable, learned in the Civil and Canon Law, and well skill'd in the Art of perſuaſion. When therefore things were thus compoſed, he came to *Rome* and made more Cardinals, among which were *Angelus Carrarius*, a *Venetian*, Cardinal of S. *Mark*, after called *Gregory* XII. *Peter Philardi*, *di, a Candiot*, Cardinal of the Twelve Apoſtles, afterward *Alexander* and *Otho Columna*, Cardinal of S. *George*, after called *Martin* V. Thus having ſetled the Popedom, he created *Lewis*, his Nephew, Marquis of *Marca d' Ancona*, and Prince of *Fermo*: But he himſelf died a little after at *Rome*, in the ſecond year of his Pontificate; and was buried in S. *Peters* in a Chapel that was formerly Dedicated to the Popes, (which *Nicolas* V. afterward repair'd) and his Tomb bears this Inſcription; *Innocentio* VII. *Pontifici maximo cum neglecti ejus Sepulchri memoria interiiſſet*, Nicolas V. *Pontifex Maximus reſtitui curavit*. In the mean time the *Italians* wanted a true Pope and a good Emperor, and therefore every one did what they pleaſed. For *Cabrinus Fundulus*, of whom *Charles Cavalcabos* made great uſe both in War and Peace, being puffed up with hopes of being ſole Governor, (becauſe all Magiſtrates and Lieutenants of Caſtles obey'd him as much as *Charles*) he murther'd *Charles*, with his Brethren and Kindred at *Machaſtirma*, ten miles from *Cremona*, as he was coming back from *Lodi*. From thence he fled with a few Men to *Cremona*, before the thing was known in the City; and having gotten poſſeſſion of the Fort, and all the Gates, he went into the Market all in Arms, and whomſoever he ſaw that was likely to withſtand his Deſigns, he baniſh'd or put to death. But to make himſelf abſolute, he omitted no kind of cruelty. Nor could the Great Men of *Milan* hinder this, being themſelves embroil'd by the different Deſigns of *Gucegaldo* Governor of *Genoa*, who attempted to bring *Milan* to ſubjection to the *French* King, and of *Facino Cane* an excellent Commander, who ſtrove to conſerve it in the hands of the Heir *John Maria Viſconti*. Now alſo *Otho* III. Lord of *Parma* was enticed upon pretence of treating with him, by *Nicolas d' Eſte*, to *Rubera* a Caſtle of his, where at the command of *Nicolas* he was kill'd by *Sforza Cotignola*: Upon whoſe death, *Nicolas* immediately got *Reggio* and *Parma* by ſurrender of the Citizens, who hated the name of *Otho*. But *Ladiſlaus* having been poſſeſs'd of *Rome*, as I ſaid before, and *Perugia* being put into his hands, which had been brought low by the Forces of *Braccio*, he led his Army into *Tuſcany*; which by the Induſtry and Conduct of *Malateſta* of *Peſaro* was ſo bravely defended, that *Ladiſlaus* was beaten thence, and retreated into his own Kingdom, having received more damage than he had done his Enemies. But the *Florentines* being deliver'd from ſuch an Enemy, turn'd their Arms toward the *Piſanes*, and after a long Siege took *Piſa*, under the Conduct of *Tartaglia* and *Sforza* in the year 1406.

GREGORY XII.

THE Schiſm continuing ſtill in the Church, to the decay of Chriſtianity, one Pope being choſen at *Rome*, and another at *Avignion*, the Princes of *France*, to wit, the Dukes of *Berry*, *Burgundy*, and *Orleans* (who at that time Governed all *France*, during the King's indiſpoſition) took pity on the Church at laſt, and came to *Avignion* to *Peter Luna*, who was call'd *Benedict* XIII, and deſired him to commiſerate the Church, now falling to ruine, though it were to relinquiſh the Pontificate: He having promiſed ſo to do upon Oath in the Conclave, when he was made Pope. And they engaged the other Pope, that was then made at *Rome* after *Innocent*'s death, ſhould do the ſame. For theſe Princes, and thoſe of *Italy*, who both were hearty lovers of Chriſtianity, had agreed, that thoſe two which ſtrove for the Pontificate, of whom one was of the *French*, and the other of the *Italian* Faction, ſhould be put by, and ſome one afterward elected, that might be the common Father and Pope of all Nations. *Benedict* reply'd, That he ſhould grievouſly offend God, if he forſook the Church of God, whoſe Patron and publick Father he was made by univerſal conſent of all good Men, and that he would not hold that Seat precariouſly, to which he had been ſo fairly choſen. As to what they ſaid concerning extirpating the Schiſm, and treating of Unity, he profeſs'd, it pleaſed him very much, ſo it were debated in a free place, and that no Man might lie under any force from either Party. Yet one thing he promiſed 'em, and confirmed it with an Oath, that if the Schiſm could not be compoſed by any other means, that then he would wholly lay down the Pontifical Dignity, if the other Anti-Pope would do ſo at the ſame time. Thereupon the Princes began to conſult among themſelves, how they ſhould bring over *Benedict* to their Opinion. But he, fearing their Conſults and Conferences, furniſh'd the Papal *Palace* with Arms, and all neceſſary Proviſions; and there he ſtaid, and was beſieged for ſome months, till at laſt he got Galleys ready for his eſcape, and ſailed down the *Roſne* into *Catalonia*, where he was born. There are indeed, who write, that the Princes of *France* did make that attempt upon *Benedict*, by the perſuaſion of *French* Cardinals, who hated him becauſe he was not of their Nation. For when they could not agree concerning the choice of a *French* Pope after *Clement*'s death, they elected him (after a long Debate) as a Perſon of great Virtue and Devotion; but he often admoniſhing them to live Soberly and Holily, and forbidding Simony upon ſevere penalties, they grew weary of his ſtrictneſs, and, notwithſtanding his love to Chriſtianity, inſtigated the *French* Princes againſt him. Chriſtianity was in all Countries, but moſt of all in *France*, they met at *St. Peter*'s in the *Vatican*, where each of 'em took an Oath, and bound it with the greateſt imprecations, that they would relinquiſh the Pontificate, whoſoever of 'em happen'd to be elected to that great Dignity, upon condition, that the Anti-Pope would do the ſame. They came to this reſolution, to ſatisfy the *French* Nation, who having been ſo fooliſh to make an Anti-Pope, had brought in a cuſtom, from which they could not recede without diſhonour, unleſs the *Italians* did ſo too: And not only ſo, but to comply with *Benedict*'s Judgment, who ſaid, the Church could never be healed but by that means only: But if both were depoſed, one true Pope might be elected by conſent of all the Cardinals there, to whom all Kings and Princes ſhould pay Obedience. Upon this condition, *Angelus Corarius* a *Venetian*, Cardinal of S. *Marks*, (who, as I told you, was called *Gregory* XII.) was choſen at *Rome*, *Novemb.* 2. 1406. and immediately in writing by the hands of Notaries, and before witneſs, confirm'd what he had promis'd before his Pontificate, and ſet his Hand to it. But when they came to diſcourſe about a place, where they might both meet without danger, and could not agree, they were eſteemed by both Aſſemblies of Cardinals no better than Shufflers, and Promiſe-breakers. Nevertheleſs, the Cardinals, ſome from *Rome*, and ſome from *Avignon*, met at *Piſa*, and there with one accord they deprived *Benedict* and *Gregory* of their Pontifical Honour, and that by the conſent of all Nations, except the hither part of *Spain*, the King of *Scotland*, and the Earl of *Armagnac*, who favour'd *Benedict*. Then they proceeded to elect a new Pope, who might Govern the Church of God without Sedition, and the Reſult was, the creating of *Gregory*, being abſent, and this Election depending, *Rome* was all up in Arms. For *Ladiſlaus* the King had taken *Oſtia*, and put his Land and Sea-Forces into it, and thereby ſo haraſs'd the *Romans* with inroads, that he forc'd them to ſue for Peace, and to receive him honourably into the City as their Governour, where he changed their Civil Officers, fortified according to his own mind their Gates and Walls. But *Paul Urſin*, General of the Church-Forces came upon him, they fought ſtoutly in the *Septiminiano* near *St. James's*, and loſt a great many Men on each ſide. For the King kept his Men on the farther ſide of *Tiber*, ſuppoſing that he ſhould be the ſafer in that place, by reaſon of his Naval Forces whom he had brought from *Oſtia* to *Rome*. But at laſt yielding to, rather than flying from, the *Urſin* Faction, which increaſed every day, he went to *Naples*; his Party being very much weaken'd by a Victory obtain'd before he came thither over the *Columneſes*, that fought under *John Columna*, *Baptiſta Sabellus*, *James Urſin*, and *Nicolas Columna*, who had taken S. *Laurence*'s Gate and got into the City. But when *Paul Urſin* came up, (as I told you) they were moſt of 'em taken, and all vanquiſh'd. Two of them were put to death; one of which was *Galeot*, a famous *Norman* Cavalier, and the other was called *Richard Sanguineus*, of a Noble and an ancient Family. The reſt were diſcharg'd, upon condition they would never fight for *Ladiſlaus* again. From theſe troubles at *Rome* there aroſe ſuch a Dearth of all Proviſions, that a *Rubio* of Wheat was ſold for eighteen Florins, becauſe the Cattel were all driven away, and the Husbandmen deſtroy'd, as is uſual in the Wars.

ALEXANDER V.

ALEXANDER the Fifth, of *Candia*, formerly called *Peter*, Frier of the Order of *Minors*, and Arch-biſhop of *Millain*, a Man famous for Holineſs and Learning, was made Pope by conſent of all the Cardinals that were at that time in the *Piſan* Aſſembly. So that *Gregory* fled as it were into *Auſtria*, and talk'd there of a General Council. But not thinking himſelf ſafe enough there, he went for *Rimini*, and was ſplendidly receiv'd by *Charles Malateſta*: And *Benedict* having a Council at *Perpignan*, fled to the Caſtle of *Paniſchola*, a very ſtrong place, where he ſtaid a good while for his better ſecurity. But though they were both depoſed in the Council at *Piſa*, yet they created Cardinals, like true Popes; eſpecially *Gregory*; who, whilſt he tarried at *Lucca*, made *Gabriel Gondelmero* Cardinal, by the conſent of all the Cardinals that continu'd of his Party; which *Gabriel* was after elected Pope and called *Eugenius* IV. But I return to *Alexander*, who was an excellent Man in the whole courſe of his life. He was of the Order of *Minors* from his Youth, and took ſo much pains in his Studies at *Paris*, both in Humanity and Divinity, that he ſoon became a publick Reader, and wrote very acutely and learnedly upon the Books of the Sentences. He was alſo reckoned a great Orator and a great Preacher. And therefore he was ſent for by *John Galeatius*, Duke of *Millain*, and made his chief Counſellor. After that, at *Galeatius*'s requeſt, he was made Biſhop of *Vincenza*, then tranſlated to *Novara*, and laſt of all being made Archbiſhop of *Millain*, he was created Cardinal of the Twelves Apoſtles, by *Innocent* VII. From which ſtep he roſe to the Pontifical Dignity, and was deſervedly ſtyled *Alexander*, becauſe he might compare with any Prince for Liberality and Greatneſs of Mind. For, he was ſo munificent to the Poor, and all that deſerved his Bounty, that in a ſhort time he left himſelf nothing. That made him uſe to ſay in a joke, That he was a rich Biſhop, a poor Cardinal, and a beggarly Pope. For he was free from that deſire of getting, which increaſeth uſually with a Man's Eſtate and his Age. But it is a Vice, that cannot be found among good Men that contemn the World: Who the older they grow, the leſs *Viaticum* or proviſion, they know, they ſhall want for their Journy, and therefore they reſtrain their Deſires, bridle their Covetouſneſs, and extinguiſh all evil Luſts. Nay, *Alexander* was a Perſon of that Courage as to depoſe that powerful King *Ladiſlaus*, (who in the abſence of ſeveral Popes, had for a long time much ſpoil'd and haraſs'd the Church Dominions, and taken ſome Towns by force) at *Piſa* in the Council there, by approbation of all that were preſent; and declared his Kingdom to belong to *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou*. But when the Council of *Piſa* brake up, the Pope went to *Bologna*, of which *Baldeſar Coſſa*, Cardinal of S. *Euſtachius*, was Governor. Him *Alexander* confirm'd in his Office, becauſe by his induſtry and conduct the Council was held at *Piſa*; and becauſe he was a Man fit to oppoſe Uſurpers, or ſuch as encroached upon the Church Revenues. Yet there was more of ruſticity, boldneſs, and worldlineſs in him, than his profeſſion required. He led a Military life, and his Manners were Soldier-like, and he took the liberty of doing many things not fit to be named. But when *Alexander* was very ſick, and knew his death was very near, he exhorted the Cardinals that viſited him to Concord and Peace, and to defend the Honour of the Church: And ſwore by that Death, he was juſt now about to undergo, and by the Conſcience of his well-acted Life, that he did not think or believe that any thing was Decreed in the *Piſan* Council, but with all Juſtice and Integrity, without any Deceit, or Fraud. This ſaid, and the People weeping that ſtood by, he repeated that ſaying of our Saviour, with much ado, *My peace I give unto you, my peace I leave with you*; and immediately dy'd, in the eighth month of his Pontificate; and was buried at *Bologna* in the Church of the Friers *Minors*: In which year there was a Famine and a Plague.

JOHN XXIV.

JOHN the Twenty Fourth, a Noble *Neapolitan*, formerly called *Coſſa Baldeſar*, was choſen Pope at *Bologna* by general conſent, though, ſome ſay, the Election was carried by force; becauſe he was not only Legate of *Bologna*, but had Soldiers in the City and Country planted for the purpoſe, ſo that if he could not get it by fair means, he would by foul. However it was, it is moſt certain, that he was made Pope, and always aſpired to that Dignity. For when he was a Youth, and ſtudied Civil Law at *Bologna* for ſome years, he took his Degree there (according to Cuſtom) and then went to *Rome*. And being ask'd by ſome Friends, whither he was going, he anſwer'd, To the Pontificate. When he came to *Rome*, he was entertain'd by *Boniface* IX. and made one of his Privy Chamber: Then he was made Cardinal of S. *Euſtachius*'s, and ſent as Legate *à Latere* to *Bologna*, which he in a ſhort ſpace ſubjected to the Church; together with a great part of *Romagna*, beating out ſome Uſurpers, and putting others to death. But after nine years, when he had enlarged the City of *Bologna* in a wonderful manner by a long Peace, and gotten a great deal of Money; *Alexander* died, and then he uſed Bribery, eſpecially to the Cardinals, that *Gregory* had made, (who were yet poor) and ſo was made Pope. Thereupon he ſent Agents to the Electors of the Empire, to deſire of 'em, that they would chuſe *Sigiſmund* of *Lucenburg*, King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, Emperor; as being a perſon very ſtout, and fit, as he ſaid, for all brave Actions. For this was his way to get into *Sigiſmund*'s Favour: And that ſucceeding according to his Mind, he told 'em before-hand, that, whereas it had been order'd in an Aſſembly at *Piſa*, that a Council ſhould be call'd at ſuch a certain time, he would hold it at *Rome*, and no where elſe. And that all might have the freer acceſs thither, he endeavour'd to ſettle *Italy*, eſpecially that part near the *Alps*, in which the War did daily increaſe, by the inſtigation of *Fazinus Canis*, who could not keep his mercenary Soldiers under his Command, without employment. For he uſed to maintain them by rapine and plunder. At that juncture it happen'd, that the *Pavians*, whom *Philip* could not contain in awe by reaſon of his Minority, were grown factious, and took up Arms. Then the *Gibellins*, under the conduct of the *Beccarian* Family, brought *Fazinus* and his Army into the City, and were to have the *Guelphs* Eſtates for doing it. But *Fazinus* entering the Town with his Soldiers, ſpared neither one nor the other, but plunder'd both. And when the *Gibellins* complain'd, that their Goods too were plunder'd againſt his promiſe, he reply'd; The *Gibellins* in their Perſons ſhould be ſafe; but their Goods were *Guelphs*, which he would give as ſpoil to the Soldiers, deriding the Folly and Covetouſneſs of both Factions. When he went from thence, he left a good Gariſon, both at the Gates, and in the Fort, pretending to be *Philips* Protector, till he grew of Age; and ſo went againſt *Pandulphus Malateſta*, where he teazed the *Breſcians*, and the *Bergameſes* with frequent inroads and ravagings; nor did he ſpare thoſe of *Cremona*, at that time govern'd by *Cabrinus Fundulus*. During theſe tranſactions, the King of *Hungary*, who was going (as he pretended) to *Rome*, freely to receive the Imperial Crown, ſent twelve thouſand Horſe, and eight thouſand Foot againſt the *Venetians*, and ſeizing *Friuli*, he ſet upon *Treviſo*. Againſt this great Army the *Venetians* ſent *Charles Malateſta* to keep them off, not ſo much by fighting, as by protracting of the time. The *Venetians* had like alſo to have loſt *Verona* the ſame year, by treachery of ſome of the Citizens, who had more mind to try what they could get by violence, than to preſerve their Liberty. But thoſe that were guilty were puniſh'd, and there was an end of that. *Fazinus Canis* died the ſame year, after which, ſeveral perſons conſpiring together kill'd *John Maria* Duke of *Millain*, and took *Bernabos*'s Son, and Nephews into the City. Then *Philip*, by the perſuaſions of his Friends, Married *Beatrice*, *Fazinus*'s Widow, who was very rich, and had Authority with the Soldiers that had fought under her Husband, *Fazinus*. By this means he had all the Cities, that paid Homage to *Fazinus*, preſently ſurrender'd to him, and drew *Carmignola*, and *Siccus Montagnanus* (who had ſeditiouſly divided the Legion between them, after *Fazinus*'s death) to come to fight under his Colours, by the perſuaſions of *Beatrice*. Which two Commanders *Philip* made uſe of afterward, and by their aſſiſtance drave *Bernabos*'s Son, *Aſtorgius*, out of *Millain*, but kill'd him at the taking of *Monza*. Things went thus in *Millain*, and thereabouts, when *John Francis Gonzaga*, Son to *Francis* that was deceaſed, went with a competent Army of Horſe and Foot to guard *Bologna*, at the Command of Pope *John*, under whoſe Banner he then fought. For *Malateſta* of *Rimini*, ſtipendiary to King *Ladiſlaus*, laid cloſe Siege to the City at that time. He therefore, by the aid of the *Bolognians*, fought ſeveral ſharp Battels with the Enemies; in which he had the better, and defended the City moſt gloriouſly. The Winter following, Pope *John* was invaded by *Ladiſlaus*, which made him remove from *Rome* to *Florence*, and thence to *Bologna*. Nor did he ſtay there long, but he went to *Mantoua*, where he was ſplendidly entertain'd by *John Francis Gonzaga*, whom he took along with him, at his departure thence, together with great part of his Forces, to *Lodi*, whither he knew the King of *Hungary* would come. For he truſted much to that Prince, whoſe faithfulneſs and integrity he had ſuch experience of in the *Bolognian* Wars, though he had been tempted by *Malateſta* with gifts and promiſes to revolt to the Kings Party. But after, when the Pope and the King did not think themſelves ſufficiently ſafe at *Lauden*, they ſent *John Francis* to *Mantoua* (whither they ſaid they'd go) with all ſpeed, to prepare for their coming, and for the reception of ſuch a multitude. He went, and quickly made all things ready, and then returned to *Cremona*, where he heard the Pope and the King by that time were arrived. After that he conducted them to *Mantoua*, where all the People came thronging out to meet them, and they were much more kindly receiv'd than was expected. Now in theſe ſeveral meetings at *Lodi*, *Cremona*, and *Mantoua*, it was conſider'd, how they ſhould remove *Ladiſlaus* out of *Campagna di Roma*, *Ombria*, and *Tuſcany*; for he had taken *Rome*, and many other Towns belonging to the Church. They ſaw that *Italy* could not be freed from the diſtractions of War by any other means, and therefore they thought it convenient to adviſe concerning a ſupply to carry on the Affair, not at *Mantoua*, but *Bologna*, when they were come thither. But they had greater concerns ſtill upon them. For *John*, being urged to call a Council by conſent of all Nations, for the removal of the Schiſm, immediately ſent two Cardinals into *Germany*, to adviſe with the Princes of *France* and *Germany*, and chuſe a convenient place for a Council to be held at. Upon inquiry, *Conſtance*, a City, within the Province of *Mentz*, ſeemed to be moſt commodious for the purpoſe. Thereupon they all went thither by a certain Day, according to Order; ſo likewiſe did Pope *John* himſelf, though ſome adviſed him to the contrary, becauſe they told him they fear'd, if he went thither as Pope, he would return thence as a private perſon: And ſo it fell out. For going thither with certain Men, that were excellent in all ſorts of Learning, he puzzled the *Germans* ſo long with tedious Diſputations, that they could not tell what to Decree. But *Sigiſmund* came up, who gave every body leave to ſay what they pleaſed, and then great and grievous Crimes were laid to the Popes charge: Upon which he went privately in diſguiſe from *Conſtance* to *Scaphuſa*, for fear ſome dangerous Plot might be contrived againſt him. *Scaphuſa* was a City belonging to the Duke of *Auſtria*, whither ſeveral Cardinals alſo, that he had created, betook themſelves. But they being called again by Authority of the Council, *John* fled from *Scaphuſa* to *Friburg*, deſigning to go, if poſſibly he could with ſafety, to the Duke of *Burgundy*. But by the care of the Council, *John* was taken, and impriſon'd near *Conſtance* in the Iſle of S. *Mark* in the fourth year of his Pontificate, and the tenth month. Then the Council began to enquire the reaſon of his flight, and chuſe ſeveral perſons of great Gravity and Learning as Delegates, to examine and weigh the Objections made againſt *John*, and make an orderly report of it to the Council. There were above forty Articles proved againſt him: Of which ſome contain'd faults, which he was ſo habituated to, that he could not avoid them, and therefore they were judged contrary to the Faith; and ſome of them were likely to bring a ſcandal upon Chriſtianity in general, if they were not condemned in him. Wherefore, ſince they all agreed in the ſame Opinion, *John*, who was deſervedly and juſtly depoſed, approved of their Sentence, though pronounced againſt him. And thereupon he was preſently ſent to *Lewis* the *Bavarian*, who was *Gregory* the 12th's Friend, to be kept in cuſtody, till further Order from the Council. Accordingly he was block'd up in the Caſtle of *Haldeberg*, which was a very well fortified place, for three years, without any Chamberlain or Servant to attend him, that was an *Italian*. All his Keepers were *Germans*, with whom he was fain to talk by Nods and Signs, becauſe he neither underſtood the Teutonick Language, nor they the *Italian*. They ſay, *John* was depoſed by thoſe very Men, and them alone, that were formerly his Friends. For thoſe that were of *Gregory* and *Benedict*'s Party, were not yet come to the Council. Theſe Men therefore, that they might make their deprivation of him juſt and perfect, with one accord publiſh'd a Synodical Decree, wherein they affirm'd, that a general Council, lawfully called, was the Supreme Authority next to Chriſt. (Grant but this fundamental Point, and the Pope himſelf is inferior to a Council.) Whereupon *Gregory* was forced, by the perſuaſions of the Emperor *Sigiſmund*,

giſmund, to ſend ſome Perſon to the Council (becauſe he would not go himſelf) to approve of their proceedings in his Name. So he ſent *Charles Malateſta*, an excellent Man, who ſeeing them all agree, to make *Gregory* alſo lay down all claim to the Papacy, he ſtood forth before 'em all, and ſitting down in a Chair, that was made as ſtately, as if *Gregory* himſelf had been there, he read the Inſtrument of Renunciation over, and preſently depoſed *Gregory*: For which free act of his, he was made Legate of *Millain* by all the Council. But this Perſon not long after dy'd at *Recanati*, of grief (as ſome ſay) for his ſo ſudden Deprivation before the time appointed. For he was clearly for deferring the buſineſs as long as he could, as placing ſome hope in delay. But he died before *Martin* came to be Pope, and was buried in the Church of *Recanati*. Now though two Popes were removed, there remained a third, who gave 'em more trouble than the other two, and that was *Peter Luna*, called *Benedict* XIII. as I told you before. But to force him to reſign, *Sigiſmund* went perſonally with ſome Agents of the Council to the Kings of *England* and *France*, and perſuaded them for the ſake of Chriſtianity ſo much endanger'd by the Schiſm, to aſſiſt him, now that the other two had laid down, in the removal of *Benedict*; who anſwering him to his mind, he went ſtraight to *Ferdinand* King of *Aragon*, whoſe Subjects generally ſtood for *Benedict*, who agreed among other Articles, either to perſuade *Benedict* to reſign, or to cauſe his People to withdraw their ſubjection to him, (as *Gregory* and *John* had done in the Council) and to ſubmit to the Council; But *Benedict* kept in his ſtrong Caſtle, and would not comply, perſiſting that he was Chriſt's true Vicar, and that the City of *Conſtance*, (where Pope *John* had been forc'd, even by his own Friends, to exauctorate himſelf) was not a place of Freedom requiſite for a General Council. The *Spaniſh* Nobility ſeeing *Benedict*'s obſtinacy, followed the Order of the Council, and came over to the reſt. Now things were carried in the Council by the Suffrages of five Nations, *Italy*, *France*, *Germany*, *Spain* and *England*. And whatſoever was Decreed by their Votes, was confirm'd, and publiſh'd by a Beadle, publick Notary before the Court, as a general Act. By this Authority *Benedict*, when the matter had been bandied for ſome time, was deprived of the Popedom, the Nations that were of his ſide, being either abſent or rejected; eſpecially the *Scots*, and the Earl of *Armagnac*. In the ſame Council the Hereſie of *John Wickliffe* was condemned; and two of his followers, to wit, *John Hus*, and *Jerome*, his Diſciple, as heads of the Hereſie, were burnt: Becauſe they affirm'd among other Errors, That Eccleſiaſtical Men ought to be poor, for that all People were offended at their great Wealth and Luxury. Matters being thus compoſed, and mention made concerning Reforming the Church, and Manners of the Clergy, they thought that could not be done whilſt the See was vacant. Then they diſcours'd about Electing a new Pope, that the Decrees of that Council might have the more Authority. And in order to it, they reſolv'd to chuſe ſix good Men out of every Nation, who, together with the Cardinals, ſhould go into the Conclave and chuſe a new Pope. *Novemb*, 8. 1417. they went into the Conclave, and by conſent of 32 Cardinals, and all the ſeveral Nations, (contrary to the expectation of all Men in the preſence of many of the Schiſmaticks) *Otho Columna*, a Nobleman of *Rome*, and Cardinal Deacon of

S. *George* was made Pope upon S. *Martin*'s day, *Novemb.* 11. when the See had been without a true Pope for four years. And this was done ſo much to the ſatisfaction of all Men, that the Joy was inexpreſſible. The Emperor was ſo mightily pleaſed at it, that he went into the Conclave, and gave 'em thanks (without any reſpect to his own Dignity,) for chuſing ſo good a Man, and one ſo fit to ſupport Chriſtianity, which was almoſt decay'd. And then falling down proſtrate before the Pope, he kiſs'd his Feet with great Veneration ; whil'ſt the Pope, on the contrary, embraced him, and valued him as a Brother, and gave him thanks, that by his means and Induſtry Peace was reſtored once more to the Church of God. But the reaſon, why he would be called Pope *Martin*, was, becauſe the Election was upon S. *Martin*'s day. Whil'ſt theſe things were tranſacted at *Conſtance*, *Ladiſlaus* dying, as he was going againſt the *Florentines*, the Cry at *Rome* was, *To Arms*, and *for Liberty*. Whereupon *Peter Mattheucii* was forced, againſt his Will, to aſſume the Government of the City, though afterward he relinquiſh'd the Office, when he underſtood, that a Legat, whom Pope *John* had deſign'd to ſend thither, would ſhortly come with a Senator of *Bologna*. As ſoon as they were come, they put *Paul Palonius* and *John Cincius*, two ſeditious Citizens, to death. The year following, *Brachius Montonius* came with an Army to *Rome*, and, getting into the City, began to ſtorm the Caſtle St. *Angelo*, which was defended by a ſtrong Gariſon of Queen *Joan*'s; who ſucceeded her Brother *Ladiſlaus* in the Kingdom. But when *Sfortia*, the Queen's General, came up, he not only raiſed the Siege, but beat *Brachius* out of the City, the *Romans* ſiding with neither Party. *John Columna* was kill'd in that Fight by a private Soldier, that formerly had fought under *Paul Vrſin*, whom *Lewis Columna*, in *Brachius*'s Army, had formerly kill'd at *Fuligno*. Now the Soldier had a mind to kill *Lewis*, to revenge *Paul*'s death, but *John*, who was innocent, died for it as he was going to ſave *Lewis*. Whil'ſt *Rome* was in this tempeſtuous condition, rowing to and fro, it conceived, at length, ſome hope of quiet, upon *Martin*'s being choſen.

MARTIN V.

MARTIN the Fifth, a *Roman*, formerly called *Otho Columna*, was made Pope in the Council, by the General conſent of all the Nations and Cardinals, at a time when he, as well as the Church, was in a declining condition. For he had been well educated by his Parents care from his Childhood, and when he grew up, he ſtudied the Canon Law at *Perugia*, from whence he returned to the City, and, for his Integrity and Learning, was made Referendary by Pope *Vrban* VI. Which place he acquitted with ſo much Humanity, Juſtice and Mildneſs, that he was created Cardinal-Deacon by *Innocent* VII. Nor did that make him forego his natural Diſpoſition ; for he was more courteous than before, and lent his Aſſiſtance to all that wanted it, yet ſo, as not to meddle much in publick matters. So that when there were many Debates in the Council of *Conſtance*, by reaſon of the Factions, he took the middle way, and ſeemed to incline to neither Party, but always ſtudied the general good: Being therefore beloved by the Emperor, the Cardinals, and indeed by all Men, he was choſen Pope: In which Office he was not idle, but active and careful, hearing, refuting, and approving; perſuading, diſſuading, exhorting, or deterring, thoſe that came before him, according to reaſon and the merits of the Cauſe: For he was very acceſſible, and never denied a reaſonable Requeſt; beſides that he was a Man of great prudence in Debates: For he would tell what ought to be done, as ſoon as a thing was propoſed to him. He was ſhort in his Speeches, and wary in his Actions, inſomuch, that people ſaw a thing effected before they could imagine he had thought of it. His diſcourſe was full of Sentences; nor did any word come from him ſo often as [Juſtice:] Frequently turning to his Attendants and Familiars, eſpecially them that govern'd Cities and Provinces, and ſaying; *Love Juſtice, ye that judge the Earth.* Indeed the Church of God wanted ſuch a Pope at that time, to ſit at the Helm, and ſteer S. *Peter*'s Boat (then batter'd with Waves of Schiſm and Sedition,) into a ſafe Port. He therefore having obtained this great Dignity, and, ſeeing the Hydras Head, which might grow out again and multiply, was ſtill left; (that is, *Benedict*, formerly called *Peter Luna*, who kept with ſome few Cardinals and Prelats in a place that might be called the very Fort of Schiſm.) Whil'ſt ſome people of *Aragon* were at a ſtand, which way to incline, he, by approbation of the Council, ſent *Alemannus Ademarius*, a very learned Man, (whoſe Tomb is ſtill to be ſeen in new S. *Maries*,) a *Florentine*, and Cardinal of S. *Euſebius*, a Legat *à Latere* into *Aragon*, to admoniſh *Peter* upon Eccleſiaſtical Penalties and Cenſures to reſign the Pontificate. Nay, even the Cardinals, that were on *Peter*'s ſide, when they heard this ultimate reſolution of the Pope and Council, went to *Peter*, and deſired him, at laſt, to remove all Schiſm out of the Church of God, with which Chriſtendom had been for ſo many years afflicted; and told him, that *John* and *Gregory* had done the ſame, in order to ſave the Church from ruin. *Peter* gave them ſome ſlight anſwer, and told them, he could not do it; but he would agree with *Martin*, if all were true which people ſaid of his Integrity and Humanity: And bid them let him alone to manage the Buſineſs, and trouble themſelves no more about it. But of the four Cardinals, who went to him, two obſerving his obſtinacy immediately revolted from him to *Martin:* And thoſe two that continued on his ſide, were preſently counted Anti-Cardinals; one of which was a *Carthuſian*, and the other called *Julian Dobla*. Upon this all *Spain* acknowledged *Martin*'s Authority; and ſo did the *Scots*, and thoſe of *Armagnac*, not long after. And ſo all Chriſtendom, except one *Peninſula*, owned the Authority of *Martin*. This great Affair thus ſetled, by the pains and induſtry of the Eccleſiaſtick and Secular Princes, eſpecially of *Sigiſmund* the Emperor, they began to talk of reforming the manners of both the Laiety and Clergy, which were debauched with too much Licence. But becauſe the Council of *Conſtance* had laſted already four years, to the great inconvenience of Prelats and their Churches, it was *Martin*'s pleaſure, and the Opinion of the Council, that weighty Affair ſhould be deferred till ſome more ſeaſonable opportunity, it being (he ſaid) a work that would require much time and deliberation; becauſe, as *Jerome* ſays, every Country has its peculiar Manners and Cuſtoms, which cannot be eaſily removed without great diſturbance. Now, becauſe the Schiſm, from a ſmall beginning, had laſted a long time, to the great diſadvantage of Chriſtendom, upon notice, that *John* XXIII. was eſcaped out of Cuſtody, fearing leſt he ſhould call another Council, he publiſh'd a Decree concerning the calling of Councils, That, from the end of the Council at *Conſtance*, no other Council ſhould be held within five years; and, after that, within ſeven, and from thence it was drawn out to ten years, and was made a Law, That every ten years a General Council ſhould be held in ſome convenient place, to treat of matters of Faith, and the common good of Chriſtendom: In confirmation whereof, by the Approbation of the Council, *Martin* publiſhed his Bulls. But he abrogated all Decrees, that were made during the Schiſm, before his Pontificate, except ſuch as were made to promote Faith or good manners. That all Men might know he intended to call a Council, he publickly adviſed concerning a commodious place for it, and at laſt choſe *Pavia* by general Approbation, and gave out his Breves to this purpoſe: '*Martin*, Biſhop, and Servant of God's Servants, (for the future remembrance of the thing,) being deſirous to have Obedience 'paid to the Decree of this General Council, upon a Debate had concerning a Place where the next Council ſhall be holden, we do, with 'the Approbation and Conſent of the ſaid Council, and by the Authority of theſe Preſents, appoint the City of *Pavia* for that purpoſe. And 'let no Man contravene this our Decree, upon pain of the diſpleaſure of 'God Almighty, and of his Apoſtles SS. *Peter* and *Paul*. Given and 'enacted at *Conſtance* in the publick Council-Houſe, *April* 18. in the 'Firſt year of our Pontificate. And now he was willing the Council ſhould be diſſolved, wherefore, calling a full Aſſembly, with the good liking of the Emperor, and of all the reſt, he commanded *Ibaldo* Cardinal of S. *Vitus* to diſmiſs them, which he did, by ſaying, *Sirs, Depart in Peace.* Every one now having leave to be gone, the Pope was deſired, on the one ſide, by the Emperor and the *Germans*, that he would tarry ſome time in their Country; and by the *French* Princes, on the other ſide, to go into *France*; but he told them, he could not do it by any means, becauſe, he ſaid, the Churches Patrimony was torn and ſpoiled by Uſurpers in *Italy* whil'ſt the Pope was abſent; and that the City of *Rome*, which was the Metropolis of Chriſtendom, was almoſt ruined for want of the preſence of its Governor, ſo much it had ſuffered by Plague, Famine, Sword, Fire, and Sedition; beſide that, the Churches and Chapels of the holy Martyrs, by the Pope's Abſence, were either in ruins, or ready to fall, and therefore he muſt be gone thither. He deſired 'em to take that kindly, which reaſon and neceſſity forc'd him to; and that they would let him ſit in *Peter*'s Chair, ſince they had unanimouſly choſen him Pope. That the Church of *Rome* was the Mother and the Head of all other Churches, and therefore the Pope ought to reſide there, leſt the true Pilot ſhould be diſplaced from the Stern to the Stem, to the great hazard and detriment of both Paſſengers and Sailers, (*i. e.* all Chriſtian Men.) So he went from *Conſtance* through *Savoy* into *Italy*, and arrived at *Millain*; where he was very kindly received by Duke *Philip* and all his people, who gave him all the reſpect imaginable. *Philip* was at that time in Arms, endeavouring to recover his Paternal Inheritance, which the Uſurpers kept from him with great Bravery and

Courage; for, having once taſted, how pleaſant it was to govern, they were not eaſily turn'd out of Poſſeſſion. However *Carmignola*, *Philip*'s chief Commander, preſs'd *Pandulphus Malateſta* very hard, who, having taken *Pergamo*, by bribing the Governor to betray the Caſtle, moved toward *Breſcia*, and would have quickly ſtripp'd him of all his Dominions, had he not been aided by the *Venetians* with great Sums of Money and ſtout Cavalry; or had not Pope *Martin* perſuaded *Philip* to make a Peace with *Pandulphus*: Which was accordingly afterward compoſed and agreed upon at *Mantoua*, in the preſence of *Martin*, and by the Umpirage of *John Franciſco*, upon theſe terms; to wit, That *Pandulphus*, paying a yearly Tribute, ſhould keep *Breſcia* ſo long as he lived, but ſhould not have power to give it away by Will, becauſe at his Death it naturally devolv'd upon *Philip*. But the next year *Pandulphus* broke his Peace, by endeavouring, by Men and Money, to keep *Cabrinus Fundulus* in the poſſeſſion of *Cremona*: For *Philip* made War againſt him, and endeavoured to regain the City, which was his Paternal Inheritance, but had been ſo many years poſſeſs'd by that Uſurper. Yet there was a report, that *Pandulphus* had bought the City of *Cabrinus*, and promiſed to give him *Riviera di Salo* for it. But *John Franciſco* ſtrove all he could to keep him from this War, and ſent Ambaſſadors to tell him, that he did contrary to all Law and Reaſon, in violating of Leagues, defending a Tyrant, and taking up Arms againſt him, who gave him the Government of *Breſcia*. And that *Martin*'s Authority ought not to be ſlighted, to ſay nothing of his own, by whoſe Arbitrement the Peace was made. But if he ſlighted the Authority of Men, at leaſt he ſhould reverence that of God, whom they had invoked as a Witneſs to the League, which he had broken. Soon after, the Pope went away from *Mantoua*, in the fourth Month after he came thither, and, paſſing through *Ferrara* and *Romagna*, he came to *Florence*, without calling at *Bologna*, which he ſhunn'd on purpoſe: For, when they of *Bologna* heard that *Baldeſar Coſſa* was forced to lay down the Pontificate, they expelled the Church-Officers, and aſſerted their Liberty. At that time *Carmignola* preſs'd hard upon *Pandulphus*, (by his Breach of the Peace made juſtly obnoxious to a War,) and, in a ſhort ſpace, took a great part of the Country of *Breſcia*, and pitch'd his Camp at *Monclere*, there to encounter *Lewis Meliorat* Nephew to *Innocent* VII. who was ſaid to be coming with a great Body of Horſe to help *Pandulphus*; for they two were kindred by Marriage, and *Lewis* did it in reſpect to his Relation: So they joined Battel, wherein *Lewis* was baſely routed; and, not long after, *Carmignola* reduced *Breſcia*, and made it ſubject to *Philip*: Who alſo, within a little while, was Maſter of *Cremona*, and put *Cabrinus* the Uſurper to Death. *Nicolas d'Eſte*, being moved at *Philip*'s great Succeſs, went, of his own accord, and did what he might have been forced to; that is, he went to *Millain* and reſtored *Parma* (which he poſſeſſed himſelf of when *Otho* the Third died,) to *Philip*, but kept *Rheggio*, at the Requeſt of Pope *Martin*, as a Fee. Thither alſo went *John Francis*, Prince of *Mantoua*, to congratulate *Philip*'s Succeſſes: But when he ſaw *Philip* look gruffly upon him, and underſtood that he deſigned to renew his Claim to all that he held of the *Cremoneſes* and the *Breſcians*, he went from *Millain* in haſte, and entered into Alliance with the *Florentines* and *Venetians*; for thoſe two States were very timorous, and took pains to draw over whom they could to their Party; becauſe *Philip*, who loved Dominion, had broken the League with them, and not only given *Sarzana* upon the River *Magra* to *Thomas Fregoſo*, (whom he had expelled from his Principality, leſt he ſhould joyn with the *Bandittoes* of *Genoa* againſt him) but alſo had incited the *Bolognians*, who were Allies of the *Florentines*, to revolt, and in order to it, hired their Soldiers to fight under him; nay, he had got poſſeſſion of *Forli* under colour of the nonage of *Theobald*, or to gratify the Prince of *Ferrara*, whereas there was a proviſo in the League, that *Philip* ſhould not meddle with *Bologna* and *Romagna*. They feared likewiſe, leſt all would be carried by the power of the three mighty Princes, to wit, *Philip*, Pope *Martin*, and King *Lewis*, whom they knew to be Confederates. Whereas, on the other ſide *Philip* laid all the fault upon the *Venetians*, becauſe they had endeavour'd to keep *Pandulphus* in the Government of *Breſcia*, and becauſe the *Florentines* and *Genoeſes* had aſſiſted ſome of his Enemies with Money and Ammunition, and had bought *Legorn*, (which he had lately conquer'd) of the *Genoeſes*, for an hundred thouſand pounds. Theſe ſeeds of Diſcord might ſeem enough to raiſe a War at that time, but nothing did more ſet on the *Venetians*, than the Authority of *Carmignola*, a Perſon mightily famed for warlike Diſcipline, as any of that Age. This Perſon could not endure (as he uſed to ſay himſelf) the Inſolence of *Philip*, and therefore came over to the *Venetians*, and animating them to War, promis'd to aſſiſt 'em with his utmoſt. Whereupon theſe two States, aſſiſted by the Princes of *Mantoua* and *Ferrara*, and going partners in the charge of the War, ſet out an Army of twelve thouſand Horſe and eight thouſand Foot, over whom *Carmignola* was General. And then ſetting upon *Philip* from every quarter at once, with Boats upon the River as well as Ships upon the Sea, they were invited into the Town by the *Guelphs* of *Breſcia*, who were againſt *Philip*. And having ſeized ſome part of it, they reduced it all into their own power within ſeven months. Then *Carmignola* led them to take the Caſtles which belonged to *Breſcia*, when Pope *Martin*, very much concerned for *Philip*'s misfortune, ſent the Cardinal of S. *Croſſes* to the *Venetians*, to mediate between them and *Philip*. But that did not ſucceed, becauſe the *Venetians* and *Florentines* made unreaſonable Demands, and ſo they began again mighty preparations for a War. They fought thrice in that year, firſt at *Cotolengo*, a Caſtle of *Breſcia*; the ſecond time at the upper part of *Cremona*, (in which two places they parted pretty equal, and neither had the better on't) and the third time at *Maclodio*; where *Philip* was defeated, and *Charles Malateſta* the General taken. This was ſo great an overthrow, that if *Carmignola* would have kept the Soldiers that he took, and have purſu'd 'em whilſt they were in ſuch a conſternation, it had been no great pains to have turn'd *Philip* out of his Principality. *Charles*, (I told you) was taken in that Battel, but was ſent away ſafe by the Prince of *Mantoua*, his Kinſman; But *Carmignola* employing the Army againſt the Towns belonging to the *Breſcians*, which had continu'd in their Allegiance to *Philip*, he gave him time to breath upon it. For he not only made Peace with *Amadeus* Duke of *Savoy* (who lay hard upon him) yielding him *Vercelli*; but he inſtigated the Emperor *Sigiſmund* and *Brunorus Scala* againſt the *Venetians*. But Pope *Martin*, ſeeing *Philip* in ſuch dangerous Circumſtances, ſent the Cardinal of S. *Croſſes* again to make peace between him and the *Venetians*: Who ſtaying at *Ferrara*, till the ſeveral Ambaſſadors of the Princes and Cities came with inſtructions, he made a Peace upon theſe conditions, That the *Venetians* ſhould keep *Breſcia*, and all the Towns belonging to the *Breſcians* or *Cremoneſes*, which they had taken; that *Philip* ſhould ſurrender *Bergamo*, and all that appertain'd to it, to the *Venetians*; and that he ſhould not moleſt their Allies, or thoſe of the *Florentines*, or perſuade any of 'em to revolt. *Martin* approved of this Peace, for fear *Philip* ſhould be quite turn'd out of his Dutchy. For as he could not be his Friend, (though he loved him well) upon the account of Religion: So neither could he then eſpecially, becauſe at that time the Church-Treaſury had been exhauſted for ſeveral years by the War againſt *Brachius*. For when he went to *Florence*, he found *Brachius Montonius*, an excellent Soldier, had ſo far got poſſeſſion of *Perugia*, the Dutchy of *Spoleto*, and great part of the Churches Patrimony, (by help of the Uſurpers round about) that he could not get ſafe to *Rome*. But when *Brachius* upon admonition would not comply, the Pope uſed firſt of all Spiritual Weapons, that is, Cenſures, againſt him; and Interdicted all his Adherents, nor were the Prieſts allowed to do their Office in the uſual places. At which misfortune of their Friend *Brachius*, the *Florentines* were concern'd, and treated with *Martin* for Peace, upon condition, that *Brachius* ſhould throw himſelf at the Pope's Feet, and ask Pardon, which he did. And that he ſhould reſtore ſome Towns to the Church, and fight under the Pope till he had reduced *Bologna*, which was then in Rebellion, and made it ſubject to *Martin*. In which War *Gabriel Condelmer*, Cardinal-Prieſt of *St. Clements*, and Legate, was General; who, by his Induſtry, and *Brachius*'s Valour, ſubdu'd *Bologna* in a ſhort time, and made it tributary to the Church. Whilſt theſe things were tranſacted in *Bologna*, the four Cardinals, formerly of *Peter Luna*'s Party, the Anti-Pope, came to *Martin* at *Florence*, where they were receiv'd moſt honourably by the whole Conſiſtory, and retain'd their former Dignities. Three were Cardinal-Deacons, but the fourth, who was formerly a Canon Regular, was a Cardinal-Prieſt. *Baldeſar Coſſa* being ſtill a priſoner at *Heidelberg* in *Germany*, under the Count Palatine, ſome Citizens of *Florence* (of which *Coſmus* was one) were urgent with Pope *Martin*, to ſet him at liberty: The Pope promiſed, he would: But whilſt his Legate went thither to perform it, *Baldeſar*, being impatient of ſtaying any longer, gave the Count Palatine thirty thouſand pounds to free him: And coming into *Italy*, he went directly toward *Florence*, but call'd upon *Peter Rubeus* a Baron of *Parma*, and an old Friend of his, where he underſtood, that there was wait laid for him. Thereupon he fled by Night, along with the Legate, whom he met by the way, to *Thomas Fregoſos*, another old Friend of his, and gave people a ſuſpition, that the Schiſm would be renew'd. For he was a Man of great Courage, and very cunning, nor could he endure a private life. Beſides, there were not wanting ſuch as would incite the bold Man to innovations, they were generally at that time ſo much affected with Novelties. But God Almighty took pity on his Church, and put *Baldeſar* upon a reſolution of going to *Martin* at *Florence*, without any Articles of Agreement, or any Caution between them. When he came thither, and had kiſs'd the Pope's Foot, (to the admiration of all that ſaw it) he ſaluted him in the Preſence and Hearing of all the company, by the name of Chiſt's true Vicar, and a true Pope canonically ly elected. This was ſtrange to all that ſaw it, and brought to paſs, it ſhould ſeem, rather by Gods providence than any human skill: That a Man, covetous of Dominion, and in ſuch an high Station before, ſhould be ſo ſupple in a place where he might be free, becauſe he was loved by all. But it made every body cry out for joy, eſpecially thoſe Cardinals, that had acknowledged him as the true Pope. But *Martin*, conſidering the viciſſitude, or changeableneſs of human Affairs, made him a Cardinal in few days, and then Biſhop of ***Fraſcati***; after which he ſhewed him as much reſpect as any other Cardinal, both in publick and private. But *Baldeſar* (ſome think) died of grief in few a months after, at *Florence*, (as being unable to endure a private life,) and was buried moſt honourably in S. *Johns* Church, not far from the Cathedal, at the great coſt and charges of *Coſmo di Medices*, who grew ſo rich with *Baldeſars* Money, that he was looked upon as the chief Man in *Florence* of a Citizen, nay perhaps the richeſt in *Italy*, or the World. Upon his Tomb were written theſe words: *BALDESARIS COSSÆ, JOHANNIS* XXII. *QUONDAM PAPÆ CORPUS HOC TUMULO CONDITUM.* During theſe Actions at ***Florence***, the Emperor of ***Conſtantinople***'s Agents came to the Pope, and promiſed, that the ***Greeks*** would come over to the ***Latins*** in all points of Faith upon reaſonable terms. The Pope received them very kindly and ſplendidly, and made ***Peter Fonteſiccus*** (a ***Spaniard***, Cardinal of S. ***Angelo***, and a very learned Man,) Legat ***à Latere***, to go to ***Conſtantinople*** and ſettle matters there. But before he ſent the good man away, he diſpatch'd Frier ***Anthony Maſſanus*** thither, (who was General of the ***Minors***,) to find how the Emperor and the *Greeks* were affected, and tell him what he might truſt to. Now the *Romans* were urgent to have him come to ***Rome***, and therefore taking his leave very kindly of the ***Florentines***, he made their City a Metropolis. For though before, even from its foundation almoſt, it had only had the honour of a Biſhoprick, he made it an Arch-biſhoprick, and the Mother-Church to ***Volaterra***, ***Piſtoia***, and ***Fieſola***. He alſo gave a bigger Altar to S. *Mary* the New, belonging to the Order of Preachers, where he lived all the while he was at *Florence*; that Convent being very commodious for his reception. At laſt, parting from ***Florence*** he came to ***Rome***, where all the people met him; and the Nobility looked upon him as the good Genius or Father of their Country. And that day the ***Romans*** put in their Calendar as a lucky one. When he came, he found the City of *Rome* ſo ruinated, that it looked nothing like a City. You might have ſeen the Houſes ready to totter, the Churches fallen down, the Streets empty, the City full of Dirt and Mire, and in extream want of all ſorts of proviſions. What ſhould I ſay more? There was neither the face of a City, nor any ſign of civility there, the Citizens ſeeming rather Sojourners and Vagabonds. The good Pope was troubled to ſee it, and applied himſelf to adorning of the City, and reforming the Citizens Manners, ſo that in a ſhort time it looked much better than before. For this reaſon he was called by the People, not only the True Pope, but Father of his Country. But leſt that publick joy ſhould laſt too long without interruption, the year following in ***November***, on S. *Andrews* Eve, the ***Tiber*** ſwelled ſo high, that it came in at the *Porta del popolo*, overflowed the whole City, (which lies upon a level,) and filled the Church of S. *Mary* the Round, as far as the great Altar. Two days after, it fell,

Sept. 21.
1421.

but took much Cattel along with it, and did great damage to the Citizens, who ſailed about the Streets, as upon the *Tiber*. Now King *Lewis*, Son to *Lewis*, came to *Rome*, and obtained of *Martin* to be inveſted King of *Naples*, by general conſent of the Cardinals. For he having been invited thither and adopted by Queen *Joan*, Siſter to *Ladiſlaus*, expected by this means to get the Kingdom without fighting, but was driven out of *Naples* by a contrary Faction, and retired to *Calabria*. And now the time for the Council drawing near, (according to the Decree at *Conſtance*,) *Martin* was pleaſed, by conſent of the Cardinals, to ſend ſome Biſhops before to *Pavia*, to begin it; that ſeeming to be the moſt commodious place for it. Thither therefore he immediately ſent *Peter Donatus*, Arch-biſhop of *Candia*, *James Camplo* Biſhop of *Spoleto*, *Peter Roſatius* Abbat of *Aquilegia*, Frier *Leonard* a *Florentine*, and General of the *Preachers*, to open the Council: But they found no body yet come from *France* or *Germany*, only two Abbats of *Burgundy*; therefore they thought fit to defer it, till one, at leaſt, ſhould be come from each Nation, little of moment being to be tranſacted without univerſal conſent. But while they waited their coming, on a ſudden, *Pavia* was viſited ſo ſeverely with a Plague, that, with the Popes leave, the Preſidents of the Council removed to *Sienna*; whither people came from all Nations more readily and in greater numbers than to *Pavia*. *Alphonſus*, King of *Aragon*, (who was an Enemy to *Martin* for giving the Title of *King of Naples and Sicily* to *Lewis*, which himſelf deſired,) ſent his Embaſſador to the Council with Order to delay it as much as he could, and to bring about the Cauſe of the Anti-pope, *Peter Luna*, (yet alive in *Paniſchola*,) either by Promiſes or Bribes, to thoſe who had greateſt Authority in the Council. Wherefore *Martin* (who knew very well, how great a calamity ſuch a thing would bring upon the Church, and what danger there was in delays,) commanded the Council to be immediately diſſolved, approving firſt of the Decrees made in it, that concerned matters of Faith. And leaſt he might ſeem to fear a General Council, he ordered, that another ſhould be held at *Baſil* ſeven years after. Thus did that prudent, ſubtil Man, root out the ſeeds of Schiſm and Diſcord, that were ſown in the Council at *Sienna*. *Alphonſo* then complained of *Martin* publickly, that by his means he was put by the Kingdom which *Joan* deſigned for him, and *Lewis* was made Heir in his room. *Martin* eaſily confuted this charge, and told him, that *Lewis* was confirmed Heir to *Joan* by *Alexander* V. and *John* XXIII. long before; and that all the blame ought to be laid on the Queen, and not upon him, whoſe buſineſs it was to ſtrengthen rather than weaken the Churches Feudataries, unleſs they had committed ſome heinous Offence againſt the See of *Rome*: And that he did not ſee, why *Lewis* might not be lawful Heir to *Joan* who was Crowned by his Order. But when *Brachius* ſaw the Pope involved in ſo many Affairs, and ſo diſtracted by reaſon of the Quarrel between him and *Alphonſo*, he got many of the Church-Towns by force, and laid cloſe Siege to *Aquila*, a City in the Kingdom of *Naples*. The Pope was angry at that, and raiſing a good ſufficient Army, he attempted to relieve *Aquila*, aſſiſted by the Army of the Queen and *Lewis*, and not far from *Aquila* he conquered and killed *Brachius* in the open Field. The *Sfortians* were in that Battel, under the conduct of *Francis* Son to *Sforza*, who ſome years before going over the River *Piſcara* (which the Ancients call'd *Aternus*) was drown'd. *Brachius*'s Body was brought to *Rome*, and buried in an unhallow'd place without the *Porta di Sancto Lorenzo.* Upon this Victory, there was ſo great tranquillity, (beſides, that *Perugia*, *Todi*, and *Aſſiſi*, with ſome other Towns which *Brachius* had poſſeſſion of were reduced to the Church) that they thought *Auguſtus*'s happy days were come again into the World. Then People lived at eaſe, and could walk even in the Night through the Woods without any danger; no Robbers being abroad, no Ruffians and Thieves; for he cut off *Tartalia*, *Lavellus*, and other Uſurpers, that got their living rather by Rapine, than War. But the Hereticks of *Bohemia*, who plagu'd the Catholicks of *Germany* continually with Hereſie and Arms, ſeemed to interrupt this Peace and Happineſs. To make them therefore ſubmit to Reaſon and to the Church, he admoniſh'd them firſt of all very gravely, and when that would not do, he ſent Legats into *Germany* to ſtir up the Catholicks to Arms. And firſt he ſent *Henry* Cardinal of S. *Euſebius* thither, alone; then *Bartholomew* of *Piacenza*; and laſt of all he recall'd them, and ſent *Julian Cæſarinus* Cardinal of S. *Angelo*, who receiv'd great damage from the Enemy, not by his own fault, but by the cowardiſe of his Soldiers. However, *Martin* was not diſcouraged at it, but made greater preparations againſt the Hereticks; onely before he ſet about ſuch a grand Affair, he reſolv'd to compoſe and quiet *Italy*. For when the Peace was made by *Martin*, between *Philip* and the *Venetians*, the *Florentines* bore a grudg at *Ladiſlaus*, Son to *Paul Guiniſius*, Lord of *Lucca*, for the aſſiſtance he gave *Philip* in the preceding War, and now he not being mention'd in the Articles of that Peace, they laid hold on it as a fair opportunity to ſubdue the City, and having raiſed an Army under *Nicolas Fortebrachius*, and taken ſome Caſtles thereabout, they laid Siege to it. Whereupon *Philip* by the intreaty of *Paul*, and for fear, leſt if *Lucca* fell into the hands of the *Florentines*, he ſhould find them the ſharper, as being the nearer, Enemies, he firſt ſent *Francis Sforza* into *Parma* with a great body of Horſe, to raiſe Foot-Soldiers there. Who, paſſing the *Apennine* in the beginning of Spring, put the *Florentines* into ſuch a fright, that before he came into the *Cloudy Vale*, (as the Inhabitants call it) the Enemies had removed their Camp, and raiſed their Siege from before *Lucca*, out of fear. And his coming was ſo much the more welcome to the *Lucceſes*, becauſe when their Enemies were ſubdu'd, and the Uſurper taken, they thought to become abſolute freemen by *Francis*'s aſſiſtance. But the *Florentines* bribing *Francis* with fifty thouſand pounds, he left the people of *Lucca* in a worſe condition than ever; having promiſed for that ſum not to ſerve *Philip* for ſix months. Then the *Lucceſes* were beſieged more cloſe than before: Whereupon *Philip*, at the requeſt of *Martin*, (who alſo pitied the caſe of the *Lucceſes*) ſent *Nicolas Piceninus* thither with a great Body of Horſe preſently; who vanquiſh'd and routed the Enemy, and not only raiſed the Siege, but march'd thence, and took many Caſtles belonging to *Piſa* and *Volaterra* by ſtorm, and did the *Sieneſes* a kindneſs, who then made War upon the *Florentines*. *Martin*, being now undiſturb'd by any forein Foe, apply'd his Mind to adorn the City and Churches of *Rome*, and to that purpoſe repaired the *Portico* of S. *Peters*, which was falling down, and paved the *Lateran* Church with Moſaick work, cieled it anew ; and began thoſe Paintings there which were done by the hand of the famous *Gentilis*. He likewiſe repaired the old Palace that was ready to fall, near the Twelve Apoſtles where he lived ſome years. The Cardinals follow'd his example, and re-edified their Churches as faſt as they could ; ſo that now *Rome* look'd ſomthing like a City. He alſo created certain Cardinals, of which his Nephew *Proſper Columna*, Cardinal of S. *George*, was one. In the mean time *Peter Luna* dyed at *Paniſchola*, but leſt the Church ſhould be at quiet, thoſe two Anti-Cardinals, that I told you of, were perſuaded by *Alphonſo*, who was *Martin*'s Enemy, to chuſe *Giles Munio* (a Canon of *Barcelona*, and a Nobleman) Pope, and call'd him *Clement* VIII. He was no ſooner choſen, but he made Cardinals, and acted as Pope. But when *Martin* and *Alphonſo* were friends again, he ſent *Peter de Fuſo* a Cardinal, as Legate from the See Apoſtolick thither ; to whom *Giles* reſign'd his Title to the Popedom, at the command of *Alphonſo*. For which *Martin* was ſo kind to him afterward, that he made him Biſhop of *Majorca*. And the Cardinals alſo that were made by *Giles* did voluntarily lay down their Dignity. But thoſe two that *Peter Luna* made remain'd ſtill obſtinate, and therefore, becauſe they would not obey the Pope, the Legate put them in priſon. Thus *Martin*'s Induſtry and Prudence removed the Schiſm from all parts ; and when the Church was ſetled, he uſed as much skill and diſcretion in conferring of Benefices. For he did not beſtow 'em upon every one that ask'd him, but conſider'd who was fitteſt to receive them, and to take ſuch a charge upon him. And if he did not know any body in the Country where Benefices fell, he uſed to ſend and enquire of thoſe that knew the place, who was qualified with Learning, Birth, or Breeding fit for any Office. And thus did he advance the Church and deſerving Men at the ſame time, to his great Honour. In fine, ſo couragious and reſolute he was, that though he had two Brothers, the elder of which (*Jordanus*, Prince of *Salerno*) died of the Plague, and the other (*Lorenzo*) was burnt to death in a Turret, which was caſually ſet on fire, he was not known to ſay, or do any thing, that argued impatience, or lowneſs of Mind. But this ſame Perſon, ſo exactly good in the whole courſe of his life, died at *Rome* of an Apoplexy, in the fourteenth year, and the third month of his Pontificate, and the ſixty third year of his Age : And was by his own Order buried in S. *John*'s Church near the Heads of the Apoſtles, in a brazen Tomb, and attended by all the people of *Rome*, and the Clergy, weeping, as if the Church of God, and the City of *Rome*, had been bereft of their only and their beſt Parent. The See at that time was vacant twelve days.

EVGENIVS IV.

EVGENIVS the Fourth, a *Venetian*, of the Family of *Condelmero*, (a common but ancient Name) whoſe Fathers Name was *Angelo*, arrived at the Pontificate after this manner. When *Gregory* XII. was made Pope (who was of the Family of *Coraro*, and a *Venetian*) *Anthony Corar*, *Gregory*'s Nephew, a Canon of S. *Georges* in *Alga* going to *Rome*, took *Gabriel Condelmero*, who was of the ſame profeſſion, and had lived with him from his Childhood, along with him, ſomwhat againſt his Will. *Gregory* was ſo taken with his Wit and Parts, that he firſt made him his Treaſurer, and then Biſhop of *Siena*, having made his Nephew *Anthony*, Biſhop of *Bologna*. The *Sieneſes* refuſed *Gabriel* at firſt, and would not have him for their Biſhop; alledging, that a Foreiner ought not to be ſet over them in that high Function, but one that knew the cuſtoms and uſages of their City. But when *Gregory*, afterward upon a diſtruſt of his condition, left *Rome* for *Lucca*, and increaſed the number of Cardinals, he made *Anthony* his Nephew and *Gabriel Condelmero*, two, who was made uſe of by *Gregory* after that, and (when he was turn'd out) by *Martin* in many great Affairs; eſpecially in the Embaſſy to the *Marcha d'Ancona*, in which he not only confirm'd the Inhabitants in their Allegiance to the Church, by puniſhing ſome ſeditious Conſpirators, but alſo repaired the Church of S. *Agnes* at *Ancona*, which was decay'd, and the Port of the ſame City which was weather-beaten, very old and ruinous; ſo as to make it like *Trajans*. And afterward, when *Martin* underſtood that the *Bolognians* were ſet upon innovations, he ſent *Gabriel* from *Ancona* thither, who ſuppreſs'd the Sedition as ſoon as he came. Where coming to *Rome*, and *Martin* ſoon after dying, he alone was thought fit to be made Pope, out of eighteen Cardinals, who at that time were in the Conclave, and, changing his name to *Eugenius*, was brought immediately to S. *Peters*, attended by all the People and Clergy, in the year 1431. *March* 3d. And having received the Papal Crown he went to the *Lateran*, and from thence to the *Vatican*, where he ſet a day for a general Conſiſtory to be held. At which there was ſuch a concourſe of People, that the Timber of the Building, where they met, (and where the publick Conſiſtory now ſtands) gave way, and put the people into ſuch a conſternation, that the Biſhop of *Sinigaglia*, a Citizen of *Rome*, of the Family of *Mella*, was trodden to death in the throng: For the Pope's Houſe was not built at that time as it is now. When the Conſiſtory was diſmiſs'd, *Eugenius* took all care to avoid Tumults. But ſome Sycophants perſuading him, that *Martin* who was very covetous, had left ſomwhere a great Treaſure behind him, of which he might be inform'd by *Martin*'s Friends and Relations; they made the Man ſo mad, that he commanded *Oddo Poccio*, *Martin*'s Vice-Chamberlain to be laid hold on, and gave the charge of the buſineſs to *Stephen Colonna* his General, (the only Perſon of his Party among the *Colonna*'s) Cardinal *Vrſin* and Cardinal *Comitum* egging him on, by whoſe contrivance, 'tis thought, all theſe things were done againſt the *Colonneſes*, out of an old grudge between the two Factions. *Eugenius*, however, commanded, that *Oddo* ſhould be brought to him quietly and civilly, which was quite contrarily executed by *Stephen*. For not only his Goods were plunder'd by the Soldiers, but he was carried by force, or rather dragg'd like a Robber publickly into the Pope's Preſence. *Eugenius* was very angry at this rude uſage of him, and checked *Stephen* for it; nay, threaten'd to puniſh him ſeverely for bringing not only *Oddo*, but the Biſhop of *Tivoli*, who was formerly *Martin*'s Chamberlain, before him, after ſuch an unworthy manner. Hereupon, *Stephen* fearing the Pope's diſpleaſure, fled to *Paleſtrina*, to Prince *Colonna*, and deſired him to joyn with him, to drive *Eugenius* from the City, becauſe, he ſaid, *Eugenius* had a deſign to extinguiſh the whole Family of *Colonna*. And that he knew that to be ſo; for he was privy to it himſelf, and that he ran away from the City, becauſe he knew that he alſo muſt bear a part in that common Calamity, unleſs they all avoided it together. The Prince moved with what he ſaid, and with the misfortunes of ſuch as had been *Martin*'s Friends, took up Arms, and immediately reſolv'd to ſet upon the Pope, ſtaying only a little, till his Brother *Proſper* a Cardinal-Deacon, whom he had forewarn'd of the buſineſs, could get out of the City. And as ſoon as he ſaw him, he march'd from *Paleſtrina* to *Marino*, and thence to *Rome* againſt *Eugenius*; and having the Gate *di Sancto Sebaſtiano* deliver'd up to him by *John Baptiſta*, he enter'd the Town at firſt without doing any violence. But when they were come as far as S. *Marks* in the Street called *Colonna*, the Pope's Soldiers met them, aſſiſted by a great number of People. They fought ſome time in the City very ſtoutly; and many were ſlain and taken on both ſides. But the *Colonneſes* ſeeing the people of *Rome* otherwiſe affected than they expected, they reſolv'd to retreat out of the City; but as they went they plunder'd all things, drove away the Cattel, and forc'd a great many Men along with 'em. But the Pope's Soldiers, mix'd with the *Romans*, requited 'em for it. For they plunder'd and laid waſte the Houſes of *Proſper* the Cardinal, and all the *Colonneſes*, together with all thoſe that had been *Martin*'s Friends. Being thus incens'd on either ſide, they began to make uſe of Treachery, as well as open force, to bring about their Deſigns. For the Archbiſhop of *Benevento*, Son to *Anthony Colonna*, was taken, and one *Maſius* a Frier, who being tortur'd, confeſs'd, that he intended to kill the Governor of *Caſtel S. Angelo*, and ſo taking it by ſurprize, to betray it to the *Colonneſes*, who, being once Maſters of that, might drive the Pope and the *Vrſins* out of *Rome*, when they pleaſed. *Maſius* was degraded from the Prieſthood, and quarter'd in *Campo di Fiore*, and his Limbs hung up at the four chief Gates of the City, nothing being ſaid of the Archbiſhop of *Benevento*. But *Eugenius* falling ſick, either of grief for theſe troubles, or of Poiſon, as ſome ſaid, he clapp'd up a Peace with the *Colonneſes*, by the mediation of *Angelot Foſcus* a *Roman* Citizen, whom he not long after made Cardinal at the ſame time with *Francis Condelmero* his Nephew. This Peace he made publick with as much ſpeed as poſſible, becauſe he underſtood, that *Sigiſmund* was come into *Italy*, and deſign'd for *Rome*; upon which, he made his Nephew *Francis*, Chamberlain: And gave him ſome excellent Perſons for his Aſſiſtants, in the management of the Church Patrimony. Whilſt theſe things paſs'd thus at *Rome*, the

Florentines and *Venetians* having routed a Fleet of *Philip* Duke of *Genoa*, upon the Coaſt of *Genoa*, in a Sea-fight, and having a Pope who was their Country-man, took the confidence to invade *Philip* by Land: But he ſent for *Nicolas Picenninus* immediately out of *Tuſcany*, and both beat the *Venetian* Fleet at *Cremona*, and eaſily defeated *Carmignola*, whom the *Venetians* beheaded a little after, having firſt (as they ſay themſelves,) convicted him by Torture, Letters produced and Oral teſtimony, that it was through his treachery, that they did not take *Cremona*, when *Cavalcabos* had ſeized one Gate of the City: And that the Navy was vanquiſhed before his face, when he might eaſily have hindered it with ſuch a number of men as he had ſo near. But then the *Florentines* fearing leſt the Emperor now coming into *Italy*, ſhould favour *Philip*, they diſpatched *Nerius Capponius*, a Citizen of theirs, if poſſible, to perſuade *Eugenius*, that the Emperors coming to the City, did threaten no leſs ruin to the See Apoſtolick than to *Florence*: And that it was an eaſie matter to keep him from paſſing over *Arno* into *Sienna* (which had moleſted the *Florentines* a long time,) if he would command *Nicolas Tollentinas*, then in Arms under the Pope, to join *Michelett Cotignola*, General of the *Florentines*, and oppoſe *Sigiſmund* at *Arno*, that he might not paſs the River with his *German* Horſe. *Eugenius* was eaſily perſuaded to it; and upon ſome Debate about the charge of the War, *Nerius* took up the buſineſs, and agreed, that the *Florentines* ſhould pay two thouſand Horſe of *Eugenius*'s raiſing as long as the War laſted. Then *Nicolas Tollentinas*, at the Pope's command, marched out of his Winter-quarters; and whilſt he pillaged the *Sieneſes*, gave *Sigiſmund* opportunity to paſs the River *Arno*, (by the aſſiſtance of *Anthony Pontaderu*, who was an excellent Commander and a bitter Enemy of the *Florentines*,) and thence paſſing through *Volaterra* in ſo peaceable a manner, that his Army ſeemed rather friends than foes, he was received and made welcome wherever he came. The Emperor having tarried ſix months at *Siena*, to the great coſt of that City, and having in vain attempted to make Peace with the *Florentines*, applying himſelf to *Eugenius*, he made a League with him and then went to *Rome*; where he was kindly entertained by the People and the Pope, and received the Imperial Crown. And going from the *Vatican*, where he was crowned, into the *Lateran* where he loged, he Knighted ſeveral *Italians* and *Germans* at *Ponte di* S. *Angelo*, according to cuſtom. And ſome ſay, that *Eugenius* waited on him ſo far, and then went back to S. *Peter's*. After that the Emperor took leave of the Pope, and travelling through the *Marca di Ancona* and *Romagna*, he arrived at *Ferrara* and *Mantoua*. Where, when he had ſtaid ſome days, he made *John Francis*, Lord of *Mantoua*, a Marquis, and married *Barbara*, the Daughter of *John*, Marquis of *Brandenburgh*, to *Lewis*, Son of *John Francis*. This match was thought an honour to the *Gonzagan* Family, not only becauſe the Lady was a-kin to the Emperor, but becauſe her Father *John* was an Imperial Elector. At laſt the Emperor departed out of *Italy*, leaving all things in confuſion; but *Nicolas d' Eſte*, Marquis of *Ferrara*, was perſuaded by *Philip* to go to *Venice* and exhort them to Peace, and ſo he did, inſomuch that they were induced by the awe he had over them, and conſidering their great expences, to ſend Plenipotentiaries to *Ferrara* along with him, where, by conſent of *Eugenius*, *April* 1. 1433. a Peace was concluded upon theſe

Conditions; to wit, That *Philip* ſhould depart out of *Geradada*, and deliver it up to the Marquis of *Monteferrat* and *Orlando Pallaricini*, both whom he had turned out of their Paternal Inheritance; that all which had been taken from the *Florentines* and *Sieneſes*, or thoſe of *Lucca* ſhould be returned to the Owners; and that he ſhould be looked upon as a common Enemy, that did not reſtore what he had taken in thirty days. Thus having made a Peace in all parts, they hoped for ſome reſt, when on the ſudden the whole ſhock of the War fell upon *Eugenius*. For *Philip*, who loved Novelties, ſent *Francis Sforza* with a great Army into *Romagna*, pretending to march into *Puglia* (which *Alphonſo* had invaded,) to defend thoſe Towns which his Father *Sforza* had poſſeſſed there. Who marching through *Ancona* and *Ombria*, with his Army in good order, ſurprized and took them in a moment. And *Philip*, not content to do ſo, ſent *Nicolas Fortebrachius*, a valiant and prudent Commander, with choſen Horſe ſo ſuddenly againſt *Eugenius*, that he was poſſeſſed of the *Ponte Molle* and the *Porta del popolo*, before it was known that any Enemy approached. This *Nicolas* had formerly fought under *Eugenius*, and by his Commiſſion had ſubdued the Governor of *Vetralla* and *Civita Vecchia*, by the help of the *Venetian* Galleys that attacked the Caſtle of the Sea. But when *Nicolas* afterward demanded his Pay, *Eugenius* anſwered him, that he had taken as much Spoil out of the Caſtle, eſpecially out of the Town, as would ſatisfie him. At which *Nicolas* was ſo angry, that he went into the parts about *Rome*, and raiſed ſuch tumults, taking and driving away ſuch numbers of Men and Cattel, that *Eugenius* was ſome time at a ſtand what to do. The *Romans* flocked to him with their Complaints; but the Pope, who at that time wanted both advice and health, ſent them to *Francis* the Chamberlain, who being devoted to Idleneſs and Pleaſure, gave them no other anſwer, but that they over-valued their Cattel, (for they often complained of the loſs of them,) and told them that the *Venetians* lived more like Citizens then they, without Beaſts and flocks of Cattel. The *Romans* were diſpleaſed at this anſwer, and therefore when *Nicolas* had taken *Tivoli* (beating Count *Tagliacotius* out of it,) and *Subiaco*, and drawn all the *Colonneſes* to his party, (*Stephen Colonna*, who was always of the other ſide, being killed by the Prince,) they threw off the yoke of Subjection and crying out, *Arms*, *Arms*, *Liberty*, *Liberty*, they beat out all *Eugenius*'s Officers, and taking *Francis*, the Chamberlain, Priſoner, they created a new Magiſtracy of their own chooſing, conſiſting of ſeven *Romans*, whom they called *Governors*, who had power of life and death. But *Eugenius*, in ſuch an hurry, not knowing what to do, reſolved to flee for't. And immediately changing his Habit for that of a Monk, went on Shipboard in a ſmall Veſſel, along with *Arſenius* the Monk, down the *Tiber* to *Oſtia*. Whereupon, certain *Romans*, that knew of his going, threw Stones and ſhot Arrows at him; for they would fain have kept him there till they had got poſſeſſion of S. *Angelo*. Neverthleſs, *Eugenius* went away upon the 7th of *July*, and ſailed to *Piſa* firſt, and then to *Florence* in Galleys laid on purpoſe for his Paſſage; and then the *Romans* betook themſelves to ſtorm the Caſtle, raiſing Mounds and Bulwarks in all places, that might make it more acceſſible to the Enemy. On the other ſide, thoſe of the Caſtle made ſome ſallies upon them; and the Governor thinking it fit to uſe ſome ſtratagem with the people of *Rome*,

Rome, He (by the aſſiſtance and advice of *Baldeſar Auſido* a cunning Captain, that defended the lower part of the Caſtle) bad one of his Soldiers that ſallied out, that he ſhould ſuffer himſelf to be taken by the Enemy, and then blame the cruelty and covetouſneſs of him the Governor, and promiſe them that if they would give him ſuch a reward, he would kill the Governor and betray the Caſtle. The Soldier did exactly as he was bid; and when he was taken. ſaid all the ill things he could deviſe againſt *Antony Ridio* (the Governor) and ſwore, he would bring the matter about to their mind. Thereupon being diſmiſſed he went into the Caſtle and hung up *Anthonies* Clothes, with ſomewhat like his Head on top of them, which was viſible a great way off. *Baldeſar* preſently cry'd out, the wicked Fellow was juſtly puniſh'd, and that ſome of the chief *Roman* Commanders might now come in, and, if they paid the reward, take the Caſtle. They not being aware of the trick, went in, and were ſtrait taken. Immediately there was a joyful noiſe in the Caſtle, and Darts and Bullets were thrown and ſhot upon the *Romans* without. The *Romans* being thus deluded adviſed concerning the enter-change of their Captives, and in order to it, ſet the Chamberlain, *Eugenius*'s Nephew, at Liberty: and unanimouſly ſubmitted to *Eugenius* within five months after they thought to have gain'd their freedom. Then there were Magiſtrates made in the name of the Church, who fortified the Capitol with ſtrong Guards and other proviſions. And after upon the arrival of *John Viteleſchus* (whom they call'd, the Patriarch) *Francis* his Nephew being gone to *Eugenius*, a ſudden dread ſeiz'd the *Romans* to ſuch a degree that they durſt not ſo much as open their mouths for fear. For *Viteleſchus* was an imperious and cruel Man, and lived like a Tyrant rather than a Chriſtian. Theſe things were tranſacted at *Rome* whilſt *Alphonſo* beſieged *Naples* and *Cajetta*, which was ſtoutly defended by the *Genoeſe* Merchants: and the *Genoeſes* thinking it their duty to aſſiſt their Countrymen, fitted out a Navy with all ſpeed by the leave and good liking of Duke *Philip Viconti*, who lent 'em ſome Foot-Soldiers; and meeting their Enemy *Alphonſo* not far from *Cajetta* they engaged with him. After a long and a ſharp conflict they defeated *Alphonſo*, and took him Priſoner and all his retinue, of which ſome were Princes. *Alphonſo* was brought to *Millain* to *Philip*, but was entertain'd not as a Captive, or an Enemy of the *Genoeſes*, but as a King and a Friend. And when he had been treated honourably for ſome days, and preſented by *Philip* with many great gifts, he went into his Kingdom and took *Cajetta* preſently. Upon that the *Genoeſes* were ſo enraged that he ſhould free *Alphonſo* ſo eaſily, whom they had taken with ſuch hazard, that by the advice of *Thomas Fregoſo* they revolted from *Philip*, and made the ſaid *Thomas* their Duke. Then *Picenninus*, who was ſent againſt the *Genoeſes*, receiving news that they perſiſted in their obſtinacy, took *Sarzana*, and marching toward *Piſa*, under pretence to go and help *Alphonſo*, ſpoiled many Caſtles belonging to the *Piſans*. But the *Florentines* ſtopped his career, by ſending for *Francis Sfortia* with the Pope's good liking, who was then in poſſeſſion of *Ancona*, and endeavour'd, by the aſſiſtance of the *Florentines* and *Venetians*, to be made Lord of it. But *Eugenius* was againſt that; and ſaid, that it became a Pope to preſerve the Church-patrimony even by War, rather than alienate it. So they deferred that buſineſs till another opportunity: yet *Francis* in hopes of it, did not onely beat *Picenninus* from the Siege of

Barga, taking *Lewis Gonzaga* who fought under *Picenninus* ; but he laid cloſe Siege to *Lucca* in the name of the *Florentines*. *Picenninus* was hinder'd from paſſing the *Apennine* to their relief, and therefore promiſed to free them another way. Wherefore he march'd through *Bologna* without any moleſtation (onely taking a Town belonging to the *Florentines* called *Oriolo*) and being mindful of the *Luccefes*, he went thither, and in the abſence of *Francis Sfortia* vanquiſh'd the *Florentines*, and raiſed the Siege of *Lucca*. The Pope being almoſt diſtracted with care, as well becauſe he was ſurrounded with War, as that the Council of *Baſil*, begun by the Decree of Pope *Martin*, increaſed daily by the conflux of all the Princes of *Spain*, *France*, *Germany* and *Hungary*, who referr'd the caſe of all Chriſtendom to that Council, he contrived how to diſſolve it, and to that purpoſe, would have removed it from *Baſil* to *Bologna* by general conſent of the Cardinals that were there on his ſide. But the Emperor, other Princes and Prelates, then at *Baſil*, did not onely diſobey the Pope, but admoniſh'd him ſeveral times to come himſelf with his Cardinals to *Baſil*, which was a convenient place that *Martin* had choſen to hold the Council in, or elſe they threaten'd to oppoſe him as a prevaricating and an obſtinate perſon. *Eugenius* was moved at their words and confirmed the Council at *Baſil* by a new Breve, giving every one leave to go thither: for he was ſo tormented with Wars on all ſides of him, that he had hardly time to breath. But having recover'd *Rome*, he ſent *John Viteleſchus* thither immediately, who was a Man indeed very fit for buſineſs, but ſavage and ſevere : who marching againſt the *Colonneſes*, the *Sabelli*, and all the *Gibellin* faction, he ſack'd and razed the Caſtle of *Gandulpho* ſtanding on the *Lago Albano*, as alſo *Savello*, and *Bergeto*. He likewiſe took *Alba*, *Civita Lapuvina*, *Paleſtrina* and *Zagatolo*, and ſent all the Inhabitants, that were alive, to *Rome*. Then turning his courſe into *Campagna di Roma* he brought 'em all over to the Church; and having taken *Anthony Pontadera* he hang'd him upon an Olive-Tree at *Fraſelone*. Then coming back to *Rome* he put 'em all in a fear, and pull'd down ſeveral Houſes of Conſpirators, that had taken poſſeſſion of the *Porta Maggiore* in a tumult, and declared them Enemies to the Church. Among the reſt he took one *Pulcellus*, and tortur'd him with red hot Pincers, and then hang'd him in *Campo Fiore*. When the *Roman* People complain'd, that the covetouſneſs of ſome rich Men had brought a Famine upon the Country, there was ſo much Wheat immediately brought into the Market by his Order, that there enſued great plenty of all things in a ſhort time ; ſo readily were his Commands obey'd. When he had thus ſetled Affairs, he went into the Kingdom of *Naples*, which *Alphonſo* had lately got poſſeſſion of, and which he ſaid belonged to the Pope and the Church, and there he took the Prince of *Tarento* with two thouſand Horſe and invaded the Dominion of the Earl of *Nola*. He alſo had like to have taken *Alphonſo* by fraud rather than force, when they had made a Truce, and a Peace was as good as concluded. When he had taken the Towns belonging to the Church he freed the Prince. And going back to *Rome* he demoliſh'd *Paleſtrina*, which was ready to rebel, by the perſuaſion of *Lorenzo Colonna*, and turned out the Inhabitants in great numbers to roam about the Country in the year 1435. In which year *Eugenius* went from *Florence* (having firſt conſecrated the Cathedral Church there) and going to *Bologna*

logna he built a Fort near that Gate which leads towards *Ferrara*, and fortified the Houſe where the Legate now reſides, with a good high and broad Wall (behind eſpecially) and with Turrets. The year after he in a publick Conſiſtory tranſlated the Council of *Baſil* (though he had approved of that place) from thence to *Ferrara*; and ſaid that the *Greeks* who had a mind to joyn with the Church of *Rome* had choſen that City to meet in. Then the Preſidents of the Council at *Baſil* were very urgent with the *Greeks* and did exhort them with Prayers and Promiſes, that they would leave *Eugenius* and come to them. Nor were they content to do ſo onely, but they bragg'd that they would depoſe *Eugenius* too, if he would not come thither alſo. *Eugenius* could not tell for ſome time what to do, but yet he ſent thither, as Legate, one *John Francis Capiteliſta* a Lawyer and a Knight of *Padua*, to plead his cauſe. But when *Sigiſmund* the Emperor was dead, by whoſe favour the Council of *Baſil* flouriſh'd, and *Albert* Duke of *Auſtria* was choſen in his room, the Cardinal of S. *Croſſes* began the Council of *Ferrara* in the name of *Eugenius*. *Eugenius* alſo went thither when he heard the Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, whoſe name was *John Paleologus*, was coming, with a great many Gallies of his own, as well as what the *Venetians* for *Eugenius*'s ſake ſent to meet the Emperor leſt any violence ſhould have been offer'd him: becauſe he had an account, that certain *French* Gallies were ſent by the Council into the *Archipelago*, with orders either to bring the Emperor to them, or if they could not do ſo; that, at leaſt, they ſhould keep him from going to *Ferrara*. But *Eugenius* ſo far corrupted the Admiral of thoſe Galleys with Money, that he left the Council at *Baſil* and came over to his Party. When the Emperour came to *Ferrara*, he was entertain'd by *Eugenius*, as the *Roman* Emperours uſed to be treated. But *Viteleſchus* when he had quieted the Church Dominions, and puniſh'd ſeveral Prieſts that had pilfer'd certain Jewels out of the Heads of *Peter* and *Paul* the Apoſtles in the *Lateran* Church, to which they belong'd, and, after that, had put *James Galeſius* and his Accomplices to death for attempting to make Innovations upon the Government, he went to *Ferrara* where in a publick Conſiſtory he was receiv'd into the number of Cardinals with great Honour. For he had been made Cardinal ſix months before at *Bologna*; and then returning with greater Authority, he put the Governour of *Vetralla*, and the Lord of *Fuligno* (after he had expell'd him from his Uſurp'd Dominion) to death in the Caſtle of *Surio*. But *Eugenius* deſiring to unite the two Churches that were ſo long of different Opinions, in the year 1438, having made ſolemn Prayers and celebrated the Maſs of the Holy Ghoſt, he went to the Council along with the Emperour and Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, where the Emperour being ſeated on a Throne ſutable to his Dignity, and the other *Greeks* in a place oppoſite to the Pope, the queſtion was firſt ask'd, Whether the *Latins* and the *Greeks* who had been ſo long of different Opinions were willing to be united into one Church? At which they all cry'd out, They would very willingly, provided that their differences were firſt reconciled by Reaſon. In order to which there were Diſputations every day between thoſe that the *Latins* and *Greeks* had choſen to debate thoſe weighty Points. But there happening a Plague at *Ferrara*, which continued a good while, it was not ſafe ſtaying there, and therefore the Council was removed to *Florence*. And as ſoon as they came thither, *Picenninus* preſently took poſſeſſion of *Forli*, *Imola*, *Ravenna* and *Bologna*, by command from *Philip*, with a deſign to thwart *Eugenius*'s intentions, who was a Friend to the *Florentines* and *Venetians*, his Enemies. After that he came back into *Parma*, and raiſing a great body of Horſe he paſſed the *Po*, and took (in a ſhort time) the greater *Caſal*, and *Platina*, my native Country, and all that the *Venetians* had about *Cremona*. Then he routed *Gattamelata* General of the *Venetian* Army at *Calvatoni*, and with the Prince of *Mantoua* his Ally, he beſieged *Breſcia* for ſome months, which was ſtoutly defended by the Citizens and one *Francis Barbar*, a very learned Man and their chief Magiſtrate. Whereupon he paſs'd from thence to ſeize ſeveral Caſtles thereabout, and hinder proviſions from being brought into the City, plundering and deſtroying all the Country as far as *Verona* and *Vincenza*, ſo that he left the *Venetians* nothing to live upon; but yet all this was not accompliſh'd without great damage to his Men, eſpecially in the dead of Winter which was the time they took to do it. He likewiſe ſecured great part of the Rivers *Menzo*, *Adige*, *Lago di Garda*, and *Lago d'Iſeo*, that nothing might be carried that way by Water to the needy Inhabitants. But the fitting up of ſome Ships, that were removed out of the *Adige* into the *Lago di S. Andreas*, and careened below in the *Lago di Garda* near *Forboli*, gave the *Venetians* ſome reſpite. Then ſeeing nevertheleſs that *Picenninus* preſs'd thoſe of *Verona* and *Vincenza* very hard, the *Venetians* thought themſelves quite loſt, if they did not get a good Commander, and therefore they ſent *James Donatus* to *Florence*, then in League with 'em, to deſire, that if the *Florentines* had any regard to the Republick of *Venice*, or the ſafety and Liberty of *Italy* in general, that they would ſend *Francis Sfortia* immediately with all his Forces to *Venice*, now almoſt ruined by the Arms of *Philip* and the *Mantuan*. The *Florentines* being concern'd for their own danger as well as that of their Allies, perſuade *Francis* to take up Arms for the *Venetians*, and promiſed him in the name of the City, to defend all the Towns that he had, which belong'd to the Church of *Rome*; which was his greateſt deſire. They alſo got Letters Apoſtolical from *Eugenius* with much ado, to declare *Francis* Marquis and Lord of *Ancona*: but with theſe words, Let him take it, and *the Devil give him luck with it.* *Francis* going with his Cavalry along the Coaſt of the *Adriatick* Sea fell into *Ferrara*, and paſſing the *Po* in Boats, and having augmented his Army in *Padua* (for he is ſaid to have had twelve thouſand Horſe, and five thouſand Foot) he met the Enemy firſt at *Suave* near *Verona* where they fought very ſmartly for ſome time and neither had the better on't. Afterward *Picenninus* by reaſon of his indiſpoſition, and want of Men, gave way to his Power, and then *Francis* having recover'd all the Caſtles from them of *Vincenza* and *Verona*, he was about to raiſe the Siege from before *Breſcia*, but ſeeing all other Avenues ſtopp'd, he paſſed the *Adige*, and marching into the parts about *Trent*, he went to *Archo*, a Town he had a mind to take, becauſe the Earl of *Archo* was an Ally of *Philip*. *Picenninus* alſo came thither, to aſſiſt the Earl; but fighting more eagerly than cautiouſly (as he uſed to do) he was deſerted by the reſt of the Army, and receiving great damage, was fain to fly into the neighbouring Vallies, where he had been taken by the Enemy, if *Charles Gonzaga*, ſon to *John Francis*, had not come between him and them, and ſo ſaved him from that imminent danger; and yet for all that he was taken afterward, the Foe gathering ſtrength, and carried Priſoner to *Verona*. There are that write, how *Picenninus* was ſo weaken'd in one ſide with Wounds which he receiv'd in the ſeveral Battels, that he was not able to ride back to his Army,but was wrapp'd in a Sack, as if he had been dead, and ſo carried upon a luſty Fellow's ſhoulders even through the Enemies Camp. Whilſt theſe things were tranſacted in *Venice*, *Philip* taking it ill that the *Florentines* by the help and perſuaſion of *Eugenius*, had ſent *Francis Sfortia* to aid the *Venetians*,he treated with thoſe that were at the Council of *Baſil*, to cite *Eugenius* before 'em; which they did twice or thrice. But when it did not anſwer his expectation, he ſo far infatuated them, as that they depoſed *Eugenius*, and choſe *Amadeus* Duke of *Savoy* (his Father-in-law, who lived like an Hermit at *Rapalia* with ſome other Noblemen) Pope, and called him *Felix*. Hence aroſe great Seditions in the Church of God; for Chriſtendom was divided into three parts, and ſome follow'd *Eugenius*, ſome *Felix*, and the reſt were Neuters. For all that *Eugenius* was not dejected; but held frequent Aſſemblies, and Diſputations between the *Greeks* and *Latins*, till at laſt it came to this reſult, that the *Greeks* were convinc'd that the Holy Ghoſt did proceed from the Father and the Son, and that he was *homuſius*, that is of the ſame ſubſtance, and did not come forth from the Father onely, as they formerly believ'd: and that they ought to conſecrate the Body of Chriſt with unleaven'd bread made of Wheat, and to believe a Purgatory. Laſtly, That the Pope of *Rome* was Chriſt's true Vicar, and the lawful Succeſſor of Saint *Peter*, to whom all the Eaſtern as well as Weſtern Churches ought to ſubmit, as being the Univerſal Patriarch. The buſineſs thus ſetled, the *Greeks* went away; and then the *Armenians* alſo agreed with us in Faith, their Errors being confuted, and *Eugenius*'s Letters to that purpoſe promulgated, to ſhew the reaſon why they accorded, with thir Inſcription, *Given at the Holy General Council held at* Florence *in the Cathedral there*, Novem. 22. 1439. When that was done he contrived how to ſtrengthen himſelf,and at the ſame time weaken the Council of *Baſil*, and that was by making eighteen Cardinals at once in the publick Conſiſtory: of which number two were *Greeks*, to wit *Rutenus* and *Nicenus*; that the *Greeks* might be kept in the Faith by their example and Authority: and yet that Nation fell back in a little time to its old State. Others were *Peter Barbo* his Siſter's Son, and *Alouiſius Patavinus* whom he afterward made Patriarch of *Aquilegia* and *Chamberlain*, having advanced *Francis Condelmerius* to the Vicechancelourſhip. Whilſt theſe things were acted near *Trent*, and People thought that *Picenninus* and the Prince of *Mantoua* would yield at laſt, having received ſuch damage, they removed thence with all ſpeed to *Verona* and took it, by the help of Ladders wherewith they ſcal'd the Walls and enter'd in at the *Cittadelle*, unknown to any of the Sentinels, who to avoid the extream cold of the North Wind (which that Night was very boiſterous,) had quitted their Poſts, and were got into the Tents. But *Francis Sfortia*, when he heard that *Verona* was taken by the Enemy, march'd thither preſently with all his Army, to recover it, knowing that the *Venetians* had ſtill poſſeſſion of the old Caſtle, and the Fort of S. *Felix* in the Mount. And therefore he enter'd the City that way with his

Army, and ran upon the Enemy with a mighty ſhout. *Philip*'s Men met him with a few Horſe (for all his Forces were not yet come up) and they fought very ſharply in that part of the City, which they call the *Iſland*. At laſt the few were fain to yield to the many, and *Picenninus* and the *Mantuans* betook themſelves to the new Bridge (as they call it) where for ſome time they bore the ſhock of their Enemies. There, as the Horſe were engaging, and a great many crowded in a little room, the Draw-bridge broke with the weight of Men and Horſes, and almoſt all that fell into the River were drown'd, becauſe they were tired with faſting ſo long, and ſunk by the very weight of their Arms. Thereupon *Francis* flying to a Bridg of Boats, put over his Men and drove *Picenninus* and the *Mantuan* (who diſtruſted the Citizens fidelity) quite out of the City, within four days after he had taken it. Then *Philip*, that he might draw *Francis* from the *Venetians* by infeſting the *Florentines*, who had given him the ſame pay as the *Venetians* did, ſent *Picenninus* into *Tuſcany* with ſix thouſand Horſe, in the midſt of Winter. The *Florentines* ſeeing that, ſent preſently for *Piergianpaulo*, an excellent Commander, and deſired *Eugenius* that he would aſſiſt 'em according to the League by which he was bound to defend *Tuſcany*; and ſo were reſolv'd to meet *Picenninus*. But when they found that *John Viteleſchus* had conſpired with *Philip*, though he were at that time Legate and General of the Church Forces; and that he would not prove a friend (as he pretended) when he came into *Tuſcany*, but an Enemy in the Head of ſix thouſand Horſe, and would fight againſt the *Florentines* on *Picenninus*'s ſide, the Magiſtrates of *Florence* contrived by real or feigned Letters (no matter which) from *Eugenius*, to have him kill'd by *Anthony Ridius* the Governour of *Caſtel S. Angelo*, juſt as his Men were paſſing the Bridge. And ſo he was; for he could not be aided by thoſe that were gone over the Bridg, and therefore was as it were alone, becauſe he brought up the Reer. The Count *Averſus*, who fought under the Patriarch, having loſt his General, convey'd his Carriages along with his own to *Roncillione*. But the *Florentines* being freed from ſo great a Terrour, deal cunningly with *Eugenius*, to let *Lewis* of *Padua* who ſucceeded *Viteleſchus*, muſter up all the Church Forces and come to their aſſiſtance. This *Lewis* was a politick Man, and it was ſuppoſed that by his means *Viteleſchus* was taken off. But *Picenninus* marching down into the Vale of *Mugello*, kill'd and plunder'd all before him as far as *Fieſole*. Then turning toward *Caſtentino*, he by the aſſiſtance of Count *Popio* made many Towns revolt. Thence going to *Perugia*, he went quietly into the City, and ſent the Legat who was then Governour there to the Pope *Eugenius* upon a certain Meſſage. And in the mean time he took the Treaſurer, and alter'd the whole State of the City. For he choſe ten Citizens who had Power of life and death over all the reſt. But the *Perugians* fearing leſt he ſhould ſet up a Tyranny upon them, they bargain'd with him to depart the City for fifty thouſand pound. He did ſo, and went to *Cortona*, hoping to take that place by treachery; but the Plot was diſcover'd, and the Conſpirators either kill'd or baniſh'd, upon which he march'd to *Citta di Caſtello*. The *Florentines* alſo moved to *Aughiera*, a Town in their Dominions, to help their Countrymen, if *Picenninus* ſhould offer 'em any violence. Theſe things paſs'd in *Tuſcany*, whilſt *Francis Sfortia* conquer'd *Philip*'s Navy at the

Lago di Garda (of which *Italiano Furlano* was Admiral) and not onely raiſed the Siege from before *Breſcia* and *Bergamo*, but the ſame Summer vanquiſh'd *Philip*'s Army at *Soncino* having taken one thouſand five hundred Horſe, and in a ſhort time took and ſubdu'd all the Caſtles of *Breſcia*, part of *Cremona*, and *Mantoua*, with all *Gerradadua*, and made them tributary to the *Venetians*. At that time the Prince of *Mantoua* loſt *Aſola*, *Lonato*, and *Peſcheria*, three Towns of a good bigneſs, without oppoſition: for when *Picenninus* was abſent, he never durſt engage with an Enemy in the open Field. But *Picenninus* hearing how the ſtate of Affairs was alter'd in *Venice*, and being ſent for by many Meſſengers and Letters as well from *Philip*, as the Prince of *Mantoua*, as alſo being tired out with the importunities of the Soldiers who were moſt of 'em Natives of that part of *Italy* which is near the *Alps*, he removed his Camp from *Cita di Caſtello* to *Borgo di Sancto Sepolcro*, a Town in his Territories, which lies over againſt *Angliera*: with deſign either by compulſion or ſtratagem, to fight the *Florentines* and the Pope's Army, that lay (as I told you) near *Angliera*. On the 29 of *June* (S. *Peter* and S. *Paul*'s day) *Picenninus* ſet his Army in Array, which took up a Plain of four thouſand paces, but was unfortunately forc'd to chuſe a diſadvantageous place to fight in, (becauſe he underſtood, that the common Soldiers of the Enemy were gone a foraging, and was not willing to loſe the opportunity) For he was to go up the ſide of an Hill, and ſo his Enemies upon the higher ground eaſily kept him off. Yet they fought five hours very ſmartly, till at laſt *Picenninus*, what with the multitude of his Enemies, and the folly of his Son *Francis*, who had forſaken his Poſt, was overcome, and retreated to *Borgo* with great damage and the loſs of his Enſigns. And the next day leaving *Borgo* in the hands of the Townſmen and ſome few of his Soldiers that ſurvived the Battel, he went back through *Romagna* to *Philip*. The Townſmen of *Borgo* fearing they might be hardly dealt withal, becauſe they had revolted from the Pope, employ'd Agents to get their Pardon, and ſurrender'd themſelves to the Legat without loſs of limbs or goods. That Victory was very welcome both to *Eugenius* and the *Florentines*; and they ſay *Aloniſius Patavinus* was made a Cardinal for that reaſon. The ſame Summer the *Florentines* beat Count *Poppio*, who was *Picenninus*'s Ally, out of *Tuſcany*. But *Philip* who was environ'd with ſo many Enemies, ſought out for foreign Aid, and entreated *Alphonſo*, who had got poſſeſſion of the Kingdom of *Naples*, to ſtorm all the Towns which the *Sfortians* had in that Kingdom; to draw *Francis Sfortia* from the *Venetians*. *Alphonſo* comply'd with his requeſt, but never could recal *Francis* from the War that he was engaged in. For he, when a ſufficient quantity of forage came in, march'd from *Peſcheria* to *Breſcia* with fifteen thouſand Horſe, and ſix thouſand Foot, and met *Picenninus* at *Cignano*, with a deſign to fight him. *Picenninus* was as willing to fight as he, and though he had a leſs number of Men, yet they were ſtout Fellows, and he rely'd upon their Valour. They fought briskly for ſome time, and parted upon equal terms. *Francis* thinking he had gotten honour enough in the Wars, for that he had challenged his Enemy into the Field, led his Army round the Country, and retook ſeveral Towns which *Picenninus* had taken that Winter, and made them ſubject to the *Venetians*. From thence he went to *Martinengo*,

tinengo, which *Picenninus* had fortified with a ſtrong Garriſon, and beſieged it. But when *Picenninus* had augmented his Army by the arrival of *Francis* his Son, and the Prince of *Mantoua*, he went thither and pitch'd his Camp a mile off the Enemy, provoking him by Skirmiſhes to come and decide the matter in a ſet Battel: But he not now deſiring to fight the Enemy in the Field, grew wholly intent upon taking the Town. *Picenninus* therefore removed his Camp every day ſo much nearer the Enemy, and put *Francis* in ſuch dangerous circumſtances, that neither his Soldiers could forrage, nor any Proviſions be ſent in, nor the Army march out from the place, without apparent danger: And juſt then beyond all hopes there was a Peace declared, which had been in agitation between *Philip* and *Francis* by the meditaion of one *Euſebiolus* ſurnamed *Chain*, without *Picenninus*'s knowledge. When *Picenninus* heard of it, he exclaim'd at Heaven and Earth, and *Philip*'s inconſtancy, who with a certain Victory before him deſired Peace like a conquer'd Perſon. The Armies departing, the Peace was declared at *Capriana*, in the year 1442, upon theſe terms; That *Francis* ſhould marry *Blanch* the Daughter of *Philip*, and have with her, as a Dowry, *Pontremoli* and *Cremona* with all the Country belonging to it, except *Picigitono* and the Caſtles which the *Mantouan*, and *Pallavicini* poſſeſs'd: and that all thoſe places that *Philip*, and his Allies had taken, as alſo the *Venetians* and their Confederates (except *Aſola*, *Lonato*, and *Peſcheria* which were the Prince of *Mantoua*'s before that War) ſhould be reſtored: And he that would not accept of theſe Articles, ſhould be look'd upon as a common Enemy. *Eugenius* lik'd not this Peace; becauſe *Francis* had neglected him whilſt he talk'd of reſtoring what was loſt, without mentioning *Bologna*, which *Picenninus* had poſſeſſion of; wherefore he reſolv'd to go from *Florence* to *Rome*, and there adviſe concerning the recovery of the Church Patrimony, becauſe that was a place where he might take more freedom. But that he might find all things quiet, he ſent *Alouiſius Patavinus*, Cardinal of S. *Laurence* before, to put out the Seculars and reſtore the Canons regular to the *Lateran*, who had been expelled by the Secular Prieſts, upon a Controverſie that was between 'em, who ſhould carry the Body of Chriſt upon *Corpus Chriſti* day in Proceſſion. *Gino Albaneſe* an excellent Soldier was put to death becauſe he would have broken the Peace between *Eugenius* and *Alphonſo*. *Palus Lamolara* alſo a ſtout Man, of whoſe parts he was jealous, was alſo put to death. And when things were ſetled in this manner, *Eugenius* came to *Rome* *September* 28. 1443. (Though the *Florentines* did all they could to keep him there) being met by all the City with all the veneration imaginable, and lay that night at the *Porta del popolo*. And the next Day as he was going to S. *Peters* to Prayers, as the cuſtom is, he walk'd in his Pontifical Robes through the City, and heard the People were in a mutiny for that the Taxes were doubled, and a new Impoſt laid upon Wine. Thereupon he commanded ſilence, and in the preſence of 'em all, aboliſh'd that Exaction as tyrannical: at which they immediately cry'd out, Long live *Eugenius*; whereas before they had cry'd, *Down with theſe new Gabells, the inventors of them.* After nineteen Days he went to the *Lateran*, and declared he would hold a General Council there, and ſent Letters and Meſſengers to acquaint the ſeveral Princes with his Deſign. For he had a mind to weaken and deſtroy the Council of *Baſil* by this means. When things were thus compoſed at *Rome*, he remember'd the injuries he had receiv'd, and ſent *Picenninus* the General againſt the *Anconeſes* (whom *Francis* had ſubdu'd) who going from *Bologna* toward *Perugia* made thoſe of *Tiferno* who were Allies of the *Florentines*, revolt, to gratifie *Eugenius* who was angry with the *Florentines*, for ſupplying *Francis* with Mony to oppoſe him and keep *Ancona*. *Alphonſo* too, who the year before had long beſieged *Naples*, and at laſt through a Common-ſhore got into the Town and taken it, beating out *Rene* of *Anjou*, was ſo far taken with the fame and courage of *Picenninus* that he not onely choſe him General of his Army, but, to honour him the more, adopted him into the Family of *Aragon*; who as ſoon as he had receiv'd Money of *Eugenius* and *Alphonſo* to defray the War, went into *Ancona*, and reduced many Towns to the Church, which *Francis Sfortia*, who was come thither with a good Army from *Cremona*, vainly ſtrove to defend. About that time *John Francis Gonzaga* dy'd, and the *Venetians* and *Florentines* who were concern'd for the time to come, made *Lewis Gonzaga*, Son and Heir to *John Francis*, their Stipendiary, that he, if occaſion were, might oppoſe *Philip*. In the mean time things were pretty quiet in thoſe parts of *Italy* that lye next the *Alps*, when *Hannibal Bentivoglio*, who was kept Priſoner ſometime in the Caſtle of *Pelegrini*, by command from *Picenninus*, for ſuſpicion of a Conſpiracy, eſcaped and went back to *Bologna*, where he excited the People to liberty, and ſeiz'd *Francis Picenninus*, Governour of the City, and all his Men. Which done, he recall'd all the Exiles, whether of his own or the contrary Faction, eſpecially one *Baptiſta Canedolus* by name. After which the *Bolognians* ſent Embaſſadours to the *Venetians* and *Florentines* to deſire their Alliance. Which the Embaſſadours having obtain'd they returned home, and preſently took the Caſtle (which was yet in the Enemies hands) by the help of thoſe recruits that were ſent 'em from their Friends, and as ſoon as they had taken deſtroy'd it, chaſing *Alouiſius Vermes* out of *Bologna*. Then *Philip* taking it ill that the *Bolognians* ſhould be in League with the *Venetians* and *Florentines*, hired ſome Friends of *Baptiſta*, promiſing them aſſiſtance, to take *Hannibal* off, that themſelves and their Faction might be ſole Governours in the City. And *Canedolus* who was ready at Roguery, prevailed with a certain Man of *Bologna*, (who had a Son accidentally then newly born) to chooſe *Hannibal* Godfather: and the next Day the Child was carried to be Chriſten'd; which being over, the Father of the Child invited *Hannibal* to S. *John*'s Church, becauſe it was S. *John*'s Day. *Hannibal* comply'd with the Traitor in that too, not thinking of any Deſign; but in the way thither he was ſet upon by a company of the Conſpirators that got about him, and was ſlain, though two Servants that he had, who loved him, did what they could to defend him. But the people of *Bologna*, when they knew it were ſo concern'd for the indignity, that they preſently took up Arms and kill'd all the chief of the *Canedolian* Faction, particularly *Baptiſta*, whoſe body they dragg'd through the City and buried it very ignominiouſly. At the ſame time alſo there happen'd a great piece of villany to be acted at *Rome*: For *Angellottus* Cardinal of S. *Marks* was deprived of his life and all the Money that he had ſo covetouſly gathered and ſcraped together, by his *own Valet de Chambre*. The Villain was taken and tortur'd to Death, and then being cut into four parts was hang'd upon the four Gates of the City. But the *Venetians* and *Florentines* fearing, leſt *Bologna*, which was very commodiouſly ſeated for both of 'em in time of War, ſhould fall into *Philip*'s hands, ſent immediately ſome Troops thither to aſſiſt them. The *Venetians* were not out in their gueſs; for *Philip* deſigned to ſend *Picenninus* thither with an Army, at the requeſt of the Exiles, if he had not dy'd before he could ſet out. They ſay he dy'd for grief, that his Son *Francis*, whom he had left behind him in *Ancona*, when Cardinal *Firmanus* was Legat, was vanquiſh'd by *Francis Sfortia*. But the year after *Philip* took courage and adviſed *Eugenius* to endeavour the recovery of *Bologna*, promiſing to ſupply him with Men, and bear his ſhare in the charge of the War. By which the Pope was ſo wrought upon, that he made a League with *Alphonſo*, and ſent *Sigiſmund Malateſta* with a great body of Horſe into *Ancona* againſt *Francis*; that when the *Florentines* were otherwiſe imploy'd, *Bologna* might be forced to ſurrender. Now *Philip* had ſent *William Montferrat* and *Charles Gonzaga* before with a great Army; who entring the Territory of *Bologna* in an Hoſtile manner plunder'd all before 'em. But the *Florentines* who were concern'd for the danger of their Allies, diſpatch'd *Aſtorgius Faventinus* with one thouſand five hundred Horſe and two hundred Foot, to aid the *Bolognians* till farther order from them and the *Venetians*. Things ſtood thus in *Romagna*; when *Philip*, on the ſudden, ſent for *Francis Picenninus* from *Ancona*, and gave him order to go with a great Army upon *May* Day, againſt the *Cremoneſes* who apprehended no ſuch thing. He went as he was commanded, and took a great many of the Country Fellows, and ſtrook ſuch terrour into the Citizens by battering their Walls both Night and Day, that he had very near taken the City. But the *Venetians* and *Florentines* were troubled at the danger, which *Francis* and their Friends were in, and reſolv'd to defend *Cremona* and *Bologna* at the ſame time, and ſent *Tibertus Brandolinus* a very active Commander, who taking along with him the *Bologneſes*, and the Auxiliaries from *Florence* march'd toward the Enemy (who did not well agree among themſelves, and were encamp'd at a Town call'd *St. John's*) and when he had brought *William Montferrat* over to the *Bolognians* by Promiſes and Preſents, and eaſily routed *Charles*, he quickly retrieved all the Towns which the Enemy had in their hands. *Bologna* being thus quieted, and the Auxiliaries of *Florence* and *Venice* divided by order, into two parts, the one half were ſent to avoid *Francis Sfortia* whom *Eugenius* and *Alphonſo* had beaten as far as the Walls of *Urbino*, and the other half to the *Cremoneſes* who were hard put to it by *Francis Picenninus*. The *Venetians* reſolving upon an open rupture with *Philip*, ſent Embaſſadours to him, to denounce War unleſs he would deſiſt from the Siege of *Cremona*. But they were anſwer'd by a Meſſenger (for they could not ſpeak with *Philip* himſelf) that they might be ſafer any where, than at *Millain*. At which the *Venetians* were very angry and commanded *Michelot Cotignola* their General, who was then at *Breſcia*, to march forthwith into *Cremona*, (which *Philip* had got moſt part of,) and engage the Enemy wherever he met them. He readily obey'd their Commands, and paſſing the River *Oglio* at *Caſale* with all expedition found the Enemy encamped upon the *Po* in an Iſland, which having forded, he attack'd them in their Camp, and ſoon routed ed them, taking a great part of their Cavalry. After that he recover'd all the Towns, and freed *Cremona* from the Siege, and having augmented his Army by *Lewis Gonzaga*'s additional Forces (who had reduced *Platina*, and ſome Caſtles in *Cremona* to the *Venetians*) they march'd toward *Geradada*, and left nothing for *Philip* but *Crema*. Then croſſing the River they entred *Millain*, filling all places with fire and rapine. And when they had taken *Monte di Briauſa* and *Brevio*, where there is a Bridg over the *Adda*, they attaqued *Leco* which thoſe within ſtoutly defended, and batter'd their Ships ſo ſeverely that whole Men might have got in at the ſides of 'em; ſo that having loſt many Men, and being in great want of Forage, they were fain to depart without accompliſhing their Deſign, for fear of *Francis Sfortia*, who they heard was privately gone over to *Philip*'s Party. Mean time *Aloiſius Patavinus* the Pope's Legat, General of the Forces which went againſt *Francis Sfortia*, into *Ancona*, hearing that *Italiano* and *James Gatuano* (who had fought partly under *Philip* and partly under *Eugenius*) were revolting to *Francis*, he commanded them to be taken before they could arrive there, and put to Death: for both of 'em had one thouſand five hundred Horſe under them. *Francis Sfortia* was much concern'd at that, and finding himſelf not able to ſuſtain the ſhock of his Enemies any longer, being ſet upon by ſo many at a time, and aſſiſted by no body, by the perſuaſions of *Eugenius* and *Alphonſo*, who envied the *Venetians* ſucceſs, he left *Ancona*, and went into *Philip*'s Army, over which he was made General. *Eugenius*, now, leſt he ſhould ſeem to mind nothing but War, made *Nicolas Tolentinas* of the Order of S. *Auſtin*, who was famous for Miracles, a Saint, and went perſonally in Proceſſion from S. *Peter* to S. *Auſtin*'s attended by all the Clergy, the *Roman* People and the Cardinals. After that he expelled the Canons Secular from the *Lateran* and admitted onely the Regulars. He alſo built the *Portico*, that goes from that Church to the *Sancta Sanctorum*, and repaired the Cloiſter for the Prieſts to live in. He alſo augmented the painting of the Church which *Martin* had formerly begun; and carried the Mitre of S. *Sylveſter*, which was brought to *Rome* from *Avignion*, in his own hands from the *Vatican* to the *Lateran* with great veneration of all the Prieſts and People of *Rome*. Afterward King *Alphonſo* came to *Tivoli* and would have treated with *Eugenius* about the management of the War, but he heard he was ſick and ſo ſtay'd for ſome time there. *Eugenius* had a great mind to have plagu'd the *Florentines* for helping his Enemies: and doubted not but, if he attaqued them with his own, the King's, and *Philip*'s Forces all together, he might bring that City to what he pleaſed. But all his Deſigns were fruſtrated by his Death; for he dy'd in the ſixteenth year of his Pontificate, *February* 23. 1446. He was a man of great inconſtancy; at the beginning of his Reign, he was led away by ill Counſels, and diſturb'd all things to that degree, that he incited the *Roman* People to War, and gave Authority to the Council of *Baſil* (which was the original of much miſchief) by approving of their Decrees in Letters Apoſtolical. But in proceſs of time when he came to himſelf, he acted very prudently and with good reſolution. He had a very venerable aſpect; but was rather grave than eloquent in his Speech; an indifferent Scholar, though a knowing Man, eſpecially in Hiſtory. He was bountiful to all, more eſpecially Learned Men, whoſe company

pany he loved ; For he admitted *Leonard Aretinus*, *Charles Poggius*, *Aurispa Trapezuntius*, and *Blondus*, very learned Men, to be his Secretaries. He was not eaſily provoked to anger for injuries done him, or by the Calumnies, jibes or ſcoffs of any. He was a great Patron of all Schools eſpecially that at *Rome*, where he had all kind of Learning taught. He loved the Religious wonderfully, and gave 'em many Priviledges, beſides Revenues which he added to their foundations. But he loved War ſo much (which a Man would admire in a Pope) that beſides what I have told you of his Actions in *Italy*, he inſtigated the *Dolphin*, Son to *Charles* the *French* King (having firſt made Peace between that King and the Duke of *Burgundy*) to go with a great body of Horſe againſt thoſe of *Baſil*. He did ſo, and routed the Aſſembly. And afterward he ſent *Vladiſlaus* King of *Poland* along with *Julian Cæſarinus* againſt the *Turks*: of whom thirty thouſand were ſlain in one Battel between *Adrianople*, and the *Danube*, though the King indeed himſelf and the Cardinal too, was kill'd at the ſame time. He was accounted very ſtrict to his word, unleſs when he had promiſed a thing which it was better revoke than perform. He kept a very good Houſe, and yet lived on a ſpare Diet himſelf, and was ſo great a ſtranger to Wine, that he was properly called, the Abſtemious. He had but very few familiar Friends, but they were all learned Men, whoſe Counſel he made uſe of in great matters; and uſed to admit into his Chamber at Supper-time, to be as witneſſes of his ſober Converſation. And then he would ask 'em, what news in the City, what People thought of his Government ſince he had been Pope, that he might correct any Errour, if ought were amiſs either in his own Perſon or any body elſe. He endeavoured to adorn the Church with Buildings and Chappels as appears by the Pope's Chappel and the brazen Door of S. *Peter*'s Church. But he dy'd, (as I told you) after he had done many great Actions, in the the ſixty fourth year of his age, and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, under a Marble Tomb, upon which there are theſe Verſes;

Eugenius *jacet hic Quartus, Cor nobile cujus*
Teſtantur vitæ ſplendida facta ſuæ.
Iſtius ante ſacros ſe præbuit alter ab ortu,
Alter ab occaſu Cæſar uterque pedes.
Alter ut accipiat Fidei documenta Latinæ,
Alter ut aurato cingat honore caput.
Quo duce & Armenii, Graiorum exempla ſecuti,
Romanam agnorunt Æthiopeſque fidem.
Inde Siri ac Arabes, mundique è finibus Indi.
Magna, ſed hæc animo cuncta minora ſuo.
Nam valida rurſum Teucros jam claſſe petebat,
Dum petit aſt illum ſuſtulit atra Dies.
Qui ſemper vanos tumuli contempſit honores :
Atque hac impreſſa condita dixit humo.
Sed non quem rubro decoraverat ille galero,
Non hoc Franciſcus ſtirps ſua clara tulit.
Suſceptique memor meriti, tàm nobile, quod nunc
Cernis, tàm præſtans ſurgere juſſit opus.

After his Death the Seat was vacant twelve days.

NICOLAS V.

NICOLAS the Fifth, formerly called *Thomas Sarzana*, a Town in the Territory of *Lucca*, was choſen Pope by general conſent, *March* 6. 1447. Who though he were a Man but of mean extract (his Mothers name was *Andreola*, and his Father's *Bartholomew* a Phyſician) yet he was worthy of the Pontificate for his Virtue, Learning, Courteſie, good Nature, Liberality and Magnificence; notwithſtanding all which he was ſo modeſt, that he thought himſelf undeſerving of ſo great an Honour, and deſired the Cardinals to take better care for the Church of God. But when the Cardinal of *Tarento* exhorted him not to reſiſt the Holy Ghoſt, he ſubmitted his ſhoulders to the burthen, and took it upon him. The Cardinal of *Portugal* being ask'd (as 'tis uſual) coming out of the *Conclave*, Who they had made Pope? He anſwer'd, We did not chooſe *Nicolas*, but God has. There are who ſay, that this *Thomas* was born at *Piſa*, brought up at *Lucca*, and made a Scholar at *Bologna*, eſpecially in Philoſophy and Divinity which he learn'd under *Nicolas Albergate*, Cardinal of S. *Croſs*, who was extreamly pleaſed with the Youth's ingenuity, and parts. For which reaſon he, in his Popedom, aſſumed the name of *Nicolas*, becauſe it was the name of one who had deſerv'd very well of him. Having gain'd his Degree in the Univerſity, by a probation in the moſt acute Controverſies, the Cardinal of S. *Croſs* made him Steward of his Houſhold, and of the Clerks of the Penitentiary, till he got a Pontifical Sub-Deaconſhip by his good Life and Converſation, which all People admired, and then he began to think of greater matters. For *Eugenius*, who knew his Learning and integrity (eſpecially by the Diſputations that he had with the *Greeks* at *Florence* and *Ferrara*) had at that time deſign'd him for a Cardinal. But that he might do it with better pretenſions, he ſent him into *Germany* along with *John Carvagialla* (who was afterward Cardinal of S. *Angelo*) to diſſolve the Council of *Baſil*, and the neutrality. For the *Germans* were called *Neuters*, becauſe they would obey neither *Felix* nor *Eugenius*; by which means the Church of God ſuffer'd greatly, and the Papacy loſt ſomething of its grandeur. There were frequent meetings to diſpute that Point before *Frederick* King of the *Romans*, by the perſuaſions of *Æneas Picolhomineus*, who was afterward Pope; but at that time only Secretary to the King. And indeed they found it hard to remove the *Germans* from their Opinion, though it was altogether falſe: as on the other ſide it was difficult to induce *Eugenius*'s Agents to comply with the *German* Propoſals. At laſt the Agents being mollified, and the requeſts of the *Germans* moderated, they had certainly put an end to the Schiſm and Neutrality (which was ſo pernicious to the See of *Rome*) if the *Germans* would have ſtood to their Promiſe. So that the Legats went back to *Eugenius* with that Opinion and were made Cardinals by general agreement; to whom *Eugenius* ſent their Hats whilſt they were yet at the *Porta del popolo*, that they might come with greater honour into the City. Thus in one and the ſame year *Thomas* got to be Biſhop of *Bologna,* Cardinal and Pope, to the great ſatisfaction of the Clergy and People of *Rome.* And yet when the Cardinals were in the *Conclave,* there was a ſmall buſtle in the City by the inſtigation of *Stephen Porcaro* a *Roman* Knight, and an eloquent, ingenious Man, who calling his Companions about him into the Church, called *Ara Cœli,* encouraged 'em to aſſert their Liberty: for he ſaid that every petit Town (when the Lord of it was dead) was us'd to talk of Liberty, or at leaſt, of limiting the Power of their Governours. But nothing was done to that purpoſe, becauſe the Arch-biſhop of *Benevento* then Vice-Chamberlain, was againſt it. The *Romans* alſo feared King *Alphonſo*, who ſtay'd at *Tivoli* after *Eugenius* was dead, and was in doubt with himſelf, whether he ſhould go back, or make War againſt the *Florentines,* as he, *Eugenius,* and *Philip* had formerly a deſign to do. And whilſt he deliberated, two *Sieneſes,* that got their livings by ſetting People together by the ears, perſuaded him to attempt the Government of *Tuſcany:* which he might eaſily obtain, if he were once Maſter of *Siena,* which would ſurrender it ſelf upon his arrival there. The King commended the *Sieneſes,* and ſending them away to ſolicite their Fellow-Citizens, he promiſed them to be there in ſuch a time. But *Nicolas* the Pope, who was a lover of peace and quietneſs, after he had kept his Coronation (as the faſhion is) and made many Proceſſions on foot in his own Perſon, he ſent Cardinal *Morinenſis* to *Ferrara,* (a place which being neutral was fit for the Treaty) that by the perſuaſion and Authority of his Legat, the Factions might be the more induced to a compoſure. Thither alſo did *Alphonſo, Philip,* the *Venetians* and *Florentines* ſend their Embaſſadours, who after a long Debate gave *Philip* leave to chooſe, whether he would make a Truce with the *Venetians* and *Florentines* for five years (both ſides keeping what they had) or conclude a Peace, and change *Crema* for thoſe Towns which the *Venetians* had taken upon the River *Adda*; leaving onely *Caſſan* at the Pope's diſpoſal, as being his due by compact, to make amends for the injuries which he firſt received. But that alſo was afterward thrown in, to make the Peace more laſting. And one of *Philip*'s Embaſſadours was ſent to make the Propoſal to him; who found him dead of an Apoplexy the day before he came to *Millain*; *Auguſt* 8. 1447. *Morinenſis,* hearing of *Philip*'s death, ſent for all the Embaſſadours in haſte to his Houſe, and urg'd for Peace as earneſtly as ever. The *Venetians,* when they were ask'd if they would continue of their former Opinion, made anſwer, That they could not tell what they might do now *Philip* was dead, but that they would write to the Senate concerning that Affair, and do as they ſhould order them. In the mean time the other Embaſſadours that were there, knowing the *Venetians* ambition to govern all *Italy,* diſſolv'd the Aſſembly, and went every one to their own Home, the Pope's Legat exhorting them to Concord, but all in vain. But the *Venetians,* whoſe Camp was at *Soreſina* near *Cremona,* in hopes to take that tumultuous City by ſurrender with the help of the *Guelphs,* when they heard of *Philip*'s death march'd preſently to *Lody*; which having taken, they receiv'd thoſe of *Piacenza* into their Alliance upon the ſame terms as them of *Lodi*; and ſent one thouſand five hundred Horſe thither immediately to aſſiſt the people of *Piacenza* if any body ſhould moleſt 'em. *Francis Sfortia,* who at that time was beaten out of *Ancona* and quartered in *Bologna*, to refreſh his Army, whoſe Arms, Horſes, and Men were almoſt ſpent with this long War, when he heard that the *Venetians* had ſeiz'd all upon his Father-in-law's death, went great days Journeys till he came to *Cremona*, and was choſen General by the univerſal conſent of the *Millaineſes* over all their Forces againſt the *Venetians*. And having made a Bridg over the River *Po*, which he fortified with Caſtles and Artillery,to hinder the *Venetians* from coming with a Navy to *Piacenza*, he paſſed the *Adda* at *Picigitono*, and encamp'd not far from the Enemy who lay at *Camurago*. And there they had ſome light Skirmiſhes to try, I ſuppoſe, the Enemies courage. The People of *Pavia* were ſo much encouraged at *Francis's* coming, and ſo glad to ſee him, becauſe they hated to be ſubject to the *Millaineſes* upon an old grudg that was between them, and on the other hand, would rather ſuffer any thing than ſubmit to the *Venetians*, who had formerly deſpiſed their Alliance, inſomuch that they deliver'd their City up to *Francis* without any more ado by conſent of the Governour of the Caſtle: which was ſuch an Addition to his Grandeur that *Sfortia* preſently affected to be Lord of the whole Duthcy of *Millain*. Theſe things paſſed in *Lombardy* and thereabouts, whilſt *Alphonſo* at the ſame time fell down with his Army into the Sea-coaſt of *Siena*, and had ſubdued them (though the Pope was againſt it) had not the *Florentines*, who knew the King's intention, ſent a Meſſenger to *Siena*, to adviſe them, that *Alphonſo* who was covetous of Dominion, was no leſs their Enemy than the *Florentines*. The *Sieneſes* hearing what danger they were in, they did not deny the King any kind of proviſions, but yet they would not ſuffer any of his Soldiers to come within their Walls. So that the King when he obſerv'd their caution, march'd down into *Volaterra*, and *Piſa*, and took many Caſtles there partly by ſurrender and partly by ſtorm: which yet the *Florentines* recover'd not long after, all but *Caſtiglione*, under the command of *Sigiſmund Malateſta*, whom they had corrupted to come over from *Alphonſo* to their ſide. In the mean time *Nicolas* the Pope continually perſuaded the King and the *Venetians* to Peace rather than War; but they, who were grown proud and unruly would not hearken to his good Advice. Thereupon *Francis* raiſed a great Army, out of the main ſtrength of *Italy*, (uniting the *Brachian* and *Sfortian* Soldiers) and pitch'd his Camp in the middle of *Autumn* at *Piacenza*, in which was a good Garriſon of *Venetians*, and beating down part of the Walls with Cannon he ſtay'd before it ſo long till the *Po* roſe to that prodigious height that his *Galeoones* came up to the very Walls, and ſo attacking it both by Land and Water, at laſt he took and plunder'd it. This was a great Honour to *Francis*, to take ſo great a City, and that in the Winter time,when it rained ſo hard, that the Soldiers were ready to leave their Tents. Yet *Nicolas* was even then ſtill talking of Peace, and the *Florentines* were urgent with their Allies the *Venetians*, becauſe they fear'd the King's Power, who was then with his Army in *Tuſcany*. But nothing was done in it, becauſe the *Venetians* were unwilling to reſtore *Lodi* to the *Millaineſes* which they earneſtly ſought. So that *Nicolas* after ſo many attempts to no purpoſe, laid aſide all thoughts of making Peace by ſuch means, and applying himſelf to religious exerciſes, he order'd Days of Humiliation to be kept for appeaſing God's anger, and Prayers for the Peace of Chriſtendom. And at the Solemnities the Pope himſelf aſſiſted with all the Clergy in Proceſſion from S. *Peter*'s to S. *Mark*'s, with great Piety and Religion. But the wrath of God was not abated for all that, ſo much had Men probably deſerved it. For two years after there was ſuch a Plague in almoſt all places, that few ſurvived out of great numbers. And this Calamity was foretold by frequent Earthquakes, and an Eclipſe of the Sun: nay it had been often foretold by the Friers Predicants; eſpecially, one *Robert* a *Franciſcan*, and famous Preacher, who ſo moved the people of *Rome* with his Sermons that the Women and Children ran about the City deſiring God to be merciful unto them. And leſt any misfortune ſhould be lacking in *Italy*, the Wars which we told you were begun before did ſo increaſe, that one would have thought it impoſſible to have put an end to them. For *Francis Sfortia* (the next Summer) having taken ſome Caſtles from the *Venetians*, went with his Land and Sea-forces againſt their Navy which block'd up the *Cremoneſes*, and forced it to retire to *Caſal*: thither alſo he follow'd it, and with his Cannon diſabled all their Ships as they lay in the Harbour, driving the Admiral of *Venice* to ſuch deſpair that he burn'd his Navy, which he could not keep, and ran into the Town as faſt as he could. *Francis* then went from thence, and took no farther care about *Cremona*, having deſtroy'd the Enemies Navy; but march'd toward *Geradada*, and encamp'd before *Caravagio* which was well fortified by the Enemies. The *Venetians* moved thither too, fearing they ſhould loſe their reputation, if the *Millaineſes* took the Town, and therefore they lay about a mile off the Enemy, and ſhew'd the Townſmen that if occaſion were they would come in and aſſiſt them. They had Skirmiſhes every day, they were ſo near one another, but when they came to joyn Battel, it happen'd to be in a narrow way ſurrounded with Fens, where the Vanguard of the *Venetians* was ſo ſtraighten'd, that they could not give back (as ſometimes in War, it may be convenient to do) nor yet fight, the Enemy came ſo thick upon them, inſomuch that they muſt of neceſſity have periſh'd, if the Reer had not begun to run away. *Francis* purſu'd 'em as they gave ground, and not onely made himſelf Maſter of their wealthy Camp, but took about five thouſand Horſe and Foot. After that the *Brachians* were, without *Francis* his conſent, ordered by the *Millaineſes* to attaque *Lodi*, and he moved toward *Breſcia* with his Army and beſieged it. Which ſo alarm'd the *Venetians*, that they concluded themſelves loſt, if they did not make Peace with *Francis*, now he had a quarrel with the *Millaineſes*; and a Peace they did make upon condition, That joyning their Forces againſt the *Millaineſes*, all that they ſhould take beyond the River *Adda* and *Po* ſhould be *Francis*'s, and that on this ſide the *Adda*, ſhould be the *Venetians*: that they ſhould allow him (the *Florentines* and the *Venetians* betwixt 'em) ſixteen thouſand pounds a month, and ſend him in aid ſtill, till he got poſſeſſion of *Millain*. Having made this League and drawn what Commanders he could to his ſide by Promiſes and Preſents, he turn'd toward the *Millaineſes*, and took moſt of their Cities by ſurrender. At this ſucceſs of his the *Venetians* were ſo concern'd, when they ſaw his fortune much better than they expected, that they took *Crema* according to agreement, and recalling all their Soldiers they made Peace with the *Millaineſes*, as fearing the power of *Francis*, if he once got into *Millain*.

But *Francis* pretended a kindneſs to the *Venetians*, and being aſſiſted and ſupply'd more out of *Coſmo di Medices*'s private Pocket than out of the Treaſury of *Florence*, after a long and tedious Siege and many bloody Skirmiſhes, in the middle of Winter, though ſome of his Men forſook him and joined with the Enemy, and *Alphonſo* was againſt him, who claimed *Millain* as his Birthright (and therefore kept *Lewis Gonzaga* in pay, whom he ſent againſt the *Bolognians*, that his Men might paſs with more ſafety into *Lombardy*) he at laſt took *Millain* in the year 1449. 'Tis true, the *Venetians* did aſſiſt the *Millaineſes*, under the conduct of *Sigiſmund Malateſta* (who was to join with *Picenninus*, that fought under the *Millaineſes*) but after ſuch a lame rate, that they were famiſh'd and yielded up the City rather to the *Venetians* than to *Francis*. Wherefore the *Venetians* ſeeing the thing went quite contrary to their expectation, they treated with *Alphonſo*, who was an utter Enemy to *Francis*, and made a League with him, to rout the ambitious Man out of *Millain*, before he grew too ſtrong. They alſo ſollicited the *Florentines* to do the ſame; who ſaid they would never be againſt *Francis*, and therefore the *Venetians* baniſh'd their Merchants out of their Dominions, and prevailed with *Alphonſo* to do the like. *Nicolas* the Pope, ſeeing all *Italy* in Arms, did often interpoſe his Authority to make a Peace, that all people might come the next year freely out of all *Europe* to the Jubilee; for the fiftieth year was a coming wherein the Jubilee was to be celebrated after the uſual manner. Beſides he made ſix Cardinals, of which number were *Latinus*, *Urſinus*, and his own Brother by the Mother's ſide, called *Philip*, Cardinal of S. *Laurence* in *Lucina*, a very good Man and of a generous diſpoſition. Mean time *Frederick* the Emperour, at the Pope's requeſt, forced *Felix* to renounce the Popedom, becauſe he ſaw how pernicious and deſtructive ſo much Sedition had been to the Church of *Rome*. Yet *Nicolas* was ſo civil and kind to *Amadeus* that he ſent him a Cardinals Hat with Legantine Power in *Germany*, that he might not live without ſome Honour at leaſt. And thoſe Cardinals alſo which *Amadeus* had made, ſubmitted. This agreement of theirs did ſo rejoyce not onely all the Clergy, but the people of *Rome*, that the Night after they heard of it, *April* 23. 1449. they rode about the City with Flambeaus in their Hands, and cry'd out, Long live *Nicolas*. The Pope, that he might not ſeem unthankful to God for ſo extraordinary a benefit, went publickly to Prayers in the *Vatican* along with the Clergy and the people. The like was done all *Italy* over, when they ſaw the Church of God freed from ſuch a pernicious Sedition. Nay the Pope's Authority and eſteem was ſo great, that he reſtrain'd even Princes for ſome time, when they had a mind to make War. For *James Picenninus*, *Sigiſmund Malateſta*, and *Charles Gonzaga*, who were *Francis Sfortia*'s bitter, mortal Enemies, incited the *Venetians* to that War. The *Venetians* alſo had drawn the Duke of *Savoy* into their Alliance, together with the Marquis of *Montferrat* and the Lords of *Corregio*: and try'd to bring over the *Bolognians* and thoſe of *Perugia*, but in vain, for the Pope was againſt it, and threaten'd 'em with his diſpleaſure if they offer'd to do it. They likewiſe indented with *Alphonſo*, that whilſt they attaqued *Francis*, he ſhould engage the *Florentines*. But *Francis* relying upon the friendſhip and power of the *Florentines*, and having taken *Lewis Gonzaga* Prince of *Mantoua* into his Alliance, he prepared himſelf with courage for the War. Hence aroſe great Animoſities between *Charles* and *Lewis*, that *Lewis* ſhould court his Alliance, who was *Charles*'s Enemy, and becauſe he had kept ſome Towns from him which his Father left him by his Will. For *Lewis* was his Brother's ſecurity when he was once arreſted for eighty thouſand pounds; and *Charles* having no mind to part with his Land, he choſe rather to pay the Money to *Francis* (who was for Money or Towns either) and keep the Towns in his own hands, as being near and conveniently ſituated. For this reaſon *Charles* blamed his Brother and accuſed him as a Robber, not onely to the *Venetians*, on whoſe ſide he was, but to the Emperour, by whoſe aſſiſtance he expected to have right done him. And now the Year of Jubilee was come, when ſuch a multitude of people flock'd to *Rome*, as never were ſeen there before; So that, when they came from ſeeing our Saviours Picture, in the *Vatican*, back into the City, a Mule which was in the way, belonging to *Peter Barbus*, Cardinal of S. *Mark*'s, was throng'd to death, and two hundred Men and three Horſes trodden to Dirt and ſuffocated in the Crowd upon the Bridg near S. *Angelo*. Beſides many that fell from the ſides of the Bridg into the River and periſh'd in the Water. It is certain there were one hundred thirty ſix buried upon that occaſion in S. *Celſus*'s; and the reſt carried to *Campo Sancto*. Hereupon Pope *Nicolas*, who was heartily ſorry for them, pull'd down certain little Cottages that ſtraighten'd the way to the Bridg, and ſpent moſt of that Year in Proceſſions, daily viſiting one noted Church or other, whither he was attended by all the Cardinals. He likewiſe took care, that though there was ſuch a vaſt number of people, yet they ſhould want nothing that was neceſſary for them: nor was he wanting with Curſes and Guards to deter High-Way Men from moleſting thoſe Strangers that came to the City at that time. The next year he heard that *Frederick* the Emperour was coming to the City, to receive his Imperial Crown, and to marry *Leonora*, Daughter to the King of *Portugal*, and *Alphonſo*'s Niece; wherefore he fortified the Gates and Towers of the City, as alſo the Caſtle of S. *Angelo* as well as he could, out of fear, I ſuppoſe, leſt the Emperour's coming ſhould make ſome new commotion there: he being naturally very timorous. For that reaſon he call'd all his Forces to *Rome*, and, to oblige the People, choſe thirteen Senators, to govern the thirteen Wards of the City, and gave 'em thirteen Scarlet Gowns. The Emperour upon his arrival was met by thirteen Cardinals, with all the Nobility and Magiſtracy of the City, and having paſſed the Caſtle gate was ſaluted at S. *Peter's*, by the Pope himſelf: by whom he was conducted into the Church, with his Empreſs *Leonora*, whom he had met at *Siena* lately arrived out of *Spain*, upon *March* 9. 1452. And from thence (after Maſs ſaid) they departed, and lodg'd in that Houſe which ſtands by S. *Peter's* Stairs to this day, though it looks better than it did, becauſe it was beautified at the coſt and charge of the Cardinal of *Conſtance*. For ſome days after the Pope ſaid Maſs in his own Perſon, and bleſſed the Emperour and Empreſs after the uſual manner at Weddings, before the Bridegroom lies with his Bride: and preſented them with the Crown Imperial upon the eighteenth of that month, in the ſame place. As the Emperour was going, after [illegible] Coronation, to S. *John's*, he made ſeveral Knights upon the Bridge at S. *Angelo*. Then he and his Empreſs went into *Naples*, to ſee King *Alphonſo*, by whom he was receiv'd with all ſplendour and magnificence; and afterward returning to *Rome* by Sea, he took his Journey immediately for his own Countrey, becauſe he heard that ſome Princes in *Germany* and *Hungary*, were upon new Deſigns on the behalf of King *Ladiſlaus* (a fine young Gentleman) whom he had brought along with him. When he departed, two Cardinals attended upon him ſeveral miles, that is to ſay, the Cardinal of *Bologna*, who was the Pope's Brother, and *Carvagialla* Cardinal of S. *Angelo*. Now when the Emperour was gone, the *Venetians* raiſed a great Army and march'd into *Cremona*, where they ſpoil'd all they came near, beſieging *Soncio* and the adjacent Towns, which they not long after took, together with ſome Troops of Horſe, that fell into their hands, becauſe *Francis* had not his Men ready ſo ſoon as he ſhould have had. But after that when *Lewis Gonzaga* his Friend and Ally came up, he went into *Breſcia* and brought the *Venetians* to ſuch an extremity that they durſt not venture out of their Fens, to fight in the open Campaigne. For that reaſon the *Venetians* were willing to protract the time, as placing all their hopes of Victory in delays, becauſe they thought *Francis* could not hold out long, at ſuch a charge for want of Money. They likewiſe hoped, that the *Millaineſes* would think of their Liberty which he had lately extorted from them, and, whilſt *Francis* was engaged in ſuch an important War, endeavour to ſhake off the yoke of ſervitude by ſome new commotions. *Ferdinand*, at this time by the command of his Father *Alphonſo* marched into *Tuſcany* with about eight thouſand Horſe, and four thouſand Foot, againſt the *Florentines*: and when he had tempted *Cortona* to rebel, he took *Foiano* a Town near *Arezzo* after forty days Siege, with the loſs of a great many Men on both ſides. He march'd from thence into *Siena*, and after he had vainly attempted the taking of *Caſtellina*, he fell down into the Sea-coaſt of *Siena* to Winter, but took ſome Caſtles from thoſe of *Volaterra* by the way. *Sigiſmund Malateſta* who was General of the *Florentine* Army obſerv'd his motions all along, with Deſign to take an opportuniny of doing his buſineſs the more ſucceſsfully. But the *Florentines* fearing the Power of *Alphonſo* and the *Venetians* both by Sea and Land, reſolv'd with the conſent of *Francis*, to call in forein Aid; and upon that account they ſent *Angelus Accioiolus*, a Knight, their Envoy into *France*, who, recounting the continual kindneſſes between the *Florentines* and that Crown, induced him to command the Duke of *Savoy* and the *Griſons*, that had taken up Arms againſt *Francis*, not to injure the Friend and Ally of the *Florentines* either by word or deed, if they would have him their Friend. He alſo perſuaded *Renatus* to accept of his aſſiſtance by Men and Money, in order to retrieve the Kingdom of *Naples*, from whence he had been expelled by *Alphonſo*: ſeeing the King was at that time engaged in the *Florentine* Wars. After this Embaſſy the *Florentines* and *Francis* grew ſo proſperous, that the *Venetians* were glad to make Peace, their Army which they had ſent againſt the Prince of *Mantua* under the command of *Charles Gonzaga*, being routed not far from *Godio*: This Army had been raiſed and diſpatch'd away under *Gonzaga*, to hinder the *Mantuan* and *Brandoline*, who were bringing together Forces for the ſervice of *Sforza*, from joyning with him, by which means he would have eaſily been able to overcome their leſs powerful Army under *Gentilis*. *Carviagalla* came the year before to the Armies, to make Peace between them,

in

in the name of *Nicolas*; but went away without any ſatisfaction, calling both God and Man to witneſs, it was not long of *Nicolas* that a Peace was not ſetled in *Italy*, but that he was deſirous it ſhould be ſo, that War might be made againſt the *Turks* by the unanimous conſent of Chriſtendom. For he had heard that the *Turks* were making preparations againſt *Conſtantinople*, and therefore ſent Cardinal *Ruten* thither, who was a *Conſtantinopolitan* born, to promiſe the Emperour and the Citizens his Aſſiſtance, if they would return to the Catholick Church, as they had promiſed in the Council of *Florence*. In the mean time *Renatus*, who was deſirous to recover the Kingdom of *Naples* (in order whereunto *Francis* and the *Florentines* had promiſed him their aſſiſtance, if he would paſs the *Alps* againſt the *Venetians*) attempted, but in vain, to make his way through *Savoy* with two thouſand Horſe, and having ſpent moſt of the Summer in that Affair, went another way to *Savona*, and ſo to *Francis*. *Francis* was ſo proud of the Company of ſo great a King, and was ſo well recruited both as to Men and Courage, that he chaſed his Enemy into the Mountains of *Breſcia*. And after that march'd round *Breſcia* and *Bergamo*, where he took forty Towns partly by ſtorm, and partly by ſurrender. But the Winter coming on, they all went into their Winter Quarters, and *Renatus*, leaving his Son at *Florence*, returned (much diſſatisfied both with the *Florentines* and *Francis*) into *France*. All Peoples courage began now to cool with the Seaſon, and the States and Princes finding their Treaſuries almoſt exhauſted with the continual charges of a War, they began to think of Peace, which *Nicolas* had formerly attempted: and the *Venetians* and *Florentines* who hated the licentiouſneſs of the common Soldiers, were now mightily for it. *Nicolas* having juſt diſcover'd the conſpiracy of *Stephen Porcarius* a Knight of *Rome*, neglected that Affair, though it were in a fair way, and apply'd himſelf to remove thoſe civil Animoſities. For *Stephen* had more Courage than Power, and was a very great Maſter of his Mother Tongue, and having made broad Signs that he would free his Country (as I told you) was baniſh'd by the Pope into *Bologna*, upon condition, that every day he ſhould preſent himſelf to *Nicen* who was Governour of the City. But he pretending himſelf ſick cheated the Governour, and by adviſe of the Conſpirators went back to *Rome* in all haſte, with a Deſign, as ſoon as he came thither, to cry out *Liberty* to the People, and ſeize upon the Pope and Cardinals. But whilſt he lay down a little while, tired with the length of his Journey and much watching (for he had been ſome whole Nights without ſleep) he gave them opportunity and time to diſcover the Plot. When the Pope knew of his audacious Deſign, he preſently ſent *James Lavagnolus*, a Senator, a *Veroneſe* and Sub Chamberlain, with a Guard to take and put him into Priſon. He hearing of their coming, fled to his Siſter's Houſe, and left *Baptiſta Sarra*, with a few Servants at his own; who being an active, bold Fellow, got both himſelf and his Companions out of the Houſe, and eſcaped without any hurt. But being inform'd whither *Stephen* was gone, they took him at his Siſter's where he lay hid in a Cheſt, and having confeſs'd the whole ſtory of the Plot, they hang'd him under *Caſtel S. Angelo*. *Angelus Maſſa* and his Son had the ſame puniſhment in the *Capitol*, together with their Accomplice, *Savus*, having firſt read the Narrative of the Plot publickly, *January*, 9. 1453.

After that he perſecuted, and deſtroy'd all the reſt of the Conſpirators, eſpecially *Francis Gabadeus*, and *Peter de Monterotundo*, with *Baptiſta Sarra* who was deliver'd up to Juſtice by the *Venetians*. For to them had he fled after the Conſpiracy was diſcover'd. But *Nicolas* who hitherto had treated the *Romans* with all Liberality and kindneſs, and went about the City with more freedom, than ever any Pope before him, was more cautious for the future, and more moroſe too not onely to all in general, but eſpecially to the *Romans*: whom he would not admit to ſpeak with him. Beſides he had the Gout very ſeverely; but nothing tormented him ſo much as when he heard that the *Turk* had taken *Conſtantinople* and *Pera* at one time, and that the Emperour of *Conſtantinople* with many thouſands more, was kill'd. He was afraid leſt Cardinal *Ruten* might have been taken and kill'd too (whom he (I told you) ſent thither) but he eſcaped in a diſguiſe. The Pope had a mind to aſſiſt the *Conſtantinopolitans* with Soldiers and a Navy, as his Letters which he wrote to the Emperour do teſtifie: wherein among other misfortunes he blames them for their revolting from the Church, and their pretended affection to the *Latines*: But that City was taken ſo ſuddenly, that he had hardly any time to think of ſending Aid. Beſides all theſe things, leſt any thing ſhould be lacking to torment him, the Count *Averſus* attaqued *Norſcia*, without his Order, being hired to do ſo by thoſe of *Spoleto*: for thoſe two People had a Controverſie concerning their Bounds. Hereupon he ſent *Angelus Ronco* with the Church-Forces to ſtop the Count's paſſage, that he might not return to his own Towns. But he hearing that *Angelus* was in the fault that the Soldiers did not take the Count as he came back, he ſent for him into *Caſtel S. Angelo* and put him to death at three of the Clock at Night. Some write, that *Nicolas* was very ſorry for that Action, that the Governour of the Caſtle ſhould execute what he in paſſion commanded him, ſo punctually. The *Venetians* now ſeeing it was to no purpoſe to talk of Peace (for they had often attempted it) and fearing leſt *Francis* ſhould ſlight it by the perſuaſion of *Lewis Gonzaga*, they ſent *James Picennine* their General, with a great body of Horſe in all ſpeed to *Volta*: which when he had taken and repelled *Angelus* into *Godio* (not without damage to *Lewis* who was then ſick there) they recalled him into his Winter-Quarters, thinking that *Lewis* was now ſufficiently moved to ſeek Peace. In the mean time *Simonetus*, an *Ermit*, went up and down from one to the other, and perſuaded ſometimes the *Venetians* and ſometimes *Francis* to Concord ſo long till he made 'em agree upon a Peace, which was publickly proclaimed, *April* 9. 1454. upon theſe terms, That every one ſhould have all that was theirs before the War reſtored to 'em, except *Geradada* and *Gaſtiglione di Peſcara*, of which the former *Francis* had taken from the *Venetians*, and *Alphonſus* the later from the *Florentines*. And to make it the ſtronger, as alſo that *Alphonſo* might ſee, they had reſpect to him as a King, the Princes and States thought fit to ſend Embaſſadours to him: where when they arrived from all places, *Dominicus Capranius*, Cardinal of S. *Croſſes* and great Penitentiary, (a Man of great Prudence and Authority) who was ſent Legat from the Pope, by his exhortations and admonitions offering himſelf the Umpire for the Peace, he brought him at laſt to agree that the Peace which the *Venetians* and *Francis* had made, ſhould be confirm'd, and aſſented to by all Parties; and if any quarrel happen'd between them for the future, that the Pope ſhould have Power to decide it: as alſo that whoever ſhould offer violence to the other, ſhould be cenſur'd by the Pope, and reckon'd a common Enemy. When therefore they had all taken an Oath to perform it, the Peace was confirm'd at *Naples*, about a year after the former Peace, which was accounted the moſt firm that ever our Anceſtors knew. For all except the *Genoeſes* joyn'd in it; but *Alphonſo* could not agree with them by any means, becauſe they promiſed him Tribute and did not pay it, as he ſaid. There was alſo left a good pretence for a War either by the neglect or deſign of the Embaſſadours, which *Alphonſo* made uſe of afterward againſt *Sigiſmund Malateſta*; that he ſhould receive Money of *Alphonſo* as a Soldiers pay, and yet fight under the *Florentines* againſt him. But *Nicolas*, the Pope, whether for grief at *Conſtantinoples* being taken, or whether of a Fever and the Gout wherewithal he was very much tormented, died in the eighth year of his Pontificate, 1455. and was buried in S. *Peter's* very honourably; upon whoſe Tombſtone this Epitaph is deſervedly inſcribed:

Hic ſita ſunt quinti Nicolai antiſtitis oſſa,
  Aurea qui dederat ſecula, Roma, tibi.
Conſilio illuſtris, virtute illuſtrior omni,
  Excoluit Doctos doctior ipſe Viros.
Abſtulit errorem quo Schiſma infecerat urbem
  Reſtituit mores, mœnia, templa, domos.
Tum Bernardino ſtatuit ſua ſacra Senenſi,
  Sancta Jubilei tempora dùm celebrat.
Cinxit honore caput Frederici conjugis aureo
  Res Italas icto fœdere compoſuit.
Attica Romanæ complura volumnia linguæ
  Prodidit, en! tumulo fundite thura ſacro.

He was commendable for his Liberality toward all, eſpecially Learned Men, whom he advanced with Money, Court-preferments, and Benefices; whom he would ſometimes put upon reading publick Lectures, ſometimes upon writing ſome new thing, and ſometimes upon tranſlating *Greek* Authors into *Latin*, inſomuch that the *Greek* and *Latin* Tongues which had lain hid for ſix hundred years, at laſt regain'd their ſplendour to ſome conſiderable degree. He alſo ſent thoſe Learned Men all over *Europe* to find out ſuch Books, as had been loſt either by the negligence of Antiquity, or the brutal fury of the barbarous Nations. So that *Poggius* found out *Quintilian*; and *Enoch Aſculanus, Marcus Cælius Appicius*, as alſo *Pomponius Porphyrio*, a famous Writer upon *Horace*. Beſides, he erected moſt ſtately Buildings in the City, and the *Vatican*: in the City, a noble Houſe for Popes, near S. *Mary* the Greater, and repaired S. *Stephen's* Church that ſtands in the *Mount di S. Giovanni*, but built S. *Theodores*, that ſtands upon the Plain between the *Palazzo Maggiore* and the *Campidoglio*, from the ground. He likewiſe covered the roof of S. *Mary the Round* which ſtands in the middle of the City, an ancient Temple built by *Agrippa*, with Lead. And in the *Vatican* he not onely beautified the Pope's Houſe after that manner which we ſee, but he began the Walls of the *Vatican*, very large and high, laying foundations for Towers, and a vaſt Superſtructure, whereby to keep the Enemy from plundering the Pope's Houſe, or St. *Peter's* Church, as formerly was often uſed. Furthermore, at the upper end of S. *Peter's* he began a great Gallery to make the Church more glorious, and hold more People. He alſo repaired *Ponte Melle*: and built a fine Houſe at *Viterbo* near the Baths. Nor onely ſo, but he lent many others Money who were a building in the City; and by his order the Streets were paved. He was very Charitable, eſpecially to Perſons of Quality if they happen'd to be reduced to poverty; and gave poor Maids a competent Portion when they were married. He always received forein Embaſſadours very honourably and freely. He was eaſily anger'd, to ſay the truth, being a cholerick Man, but he was eaſily pleaſed again: And that gave ſome ill-natur'd People the occaſion to carp at him, though he deſerved extreamly well of God and Man. Then he was ſo far from Covetouſneſs, that he never ſold any Place, nor ever was guilty of Simony. He was kind to them, who had deſerved well of himſelf and the Church of God, a lover of Juſtice, the Author and preſerver of Peace, merciful to Offenders, a diligent obſerver of Ceremonies, and would omit nothing belonging to Divine Worſhip. The Veſſels of Gold and Silver, Croſſes ſet with Jewels, Prieſtly Robes adorn'd with Gold and Pearls, the Arras Hangings interwoven with Gold and Silver, and a Papal Crown, are yet to be ſeen as Monuments of his Munificence. I do not mention the many holy Books that were tranſcribed by his Order and Emboſſed with Gold and Silver: but you may ſee the Pope's Library, which was wonderfully augmented by his care, and at his charge. He was ſo kind to the Religious that he gave 'em a great deal of Money and Eccleſiaſtical Benefices beſides; and Canonized S. *Bernardine* of *Siena*, a Frier *Minor*, becauſe by his Preaching, Admonitions, and Reproofs, he had almoſt extinguiſh'd the Factions of *Italy*, that is to ſay, the *Guelphs* and the *Gibelline* Faction, and ſhew'd Chriſtians the way to live well and happily: whoſe Body is now to be ſeen, and daily viſited with great veneration, at *Aquila*.

CALIXTUS III.

CALIXTUS the Third, firſt called *Alphonſo Borgia*, a *Spaniard*, born at *Sativa* in the Dioceſe of *Valenza*, (whoſe Father and Mother were called *John* and *Francis*, of a *Gentile* Family, and gave him good Education) was made Pope by conſent of the Cardinals, *April* 8. 1455. Firſt for his Education; he was but fourteen years old when, having laid the foundations of Learning elſewhere, he went to the Univerſity of *Lerida*, where he attained to ſuch perfection, that in a ſhort time he commenced Doctor in Civil and Canon Law, and made very learned Readings to thoſe that came to hear him. So that *Peter Luna* (called *Benedict* the XIII.) on his own accord and without aſking, gave him a Canonſhip of the Church of *Lerida*. And now becoming famous for his Learning he went to *Alphonſo* King of *Aragon*; and was made his Secretary and one of his Privy Council. Afterward he was made Governour of the Church of *Majorca*, and his Friends perſuaded him to be Parſon of that Church; he refuſed it, and ſaid, he expected to be Biſhop of *Valenza*, as not long after he deſervedly came to be. For when *Benedict* the XIII. was dead, and thoſe two Anti-Cardinals, which I told you of in the Life of *Martin*, had made one *Giles*, a Canon of *Barcelona*, Pope (in the room of the other that dy'd at *Paniſchola*) whom they called *Clement* the Eighth, *Alphonſo Boria* was preſently ſent thither by King *Alphonſo*, (who was now agreed with *Martin*) not without apparent danger of his own life as well as thoſe that attended on him: So tyrannically was *Paniſchola* kept, and govern'd by thoſe chiefly whoſe intereſt it was to breed diſcord. This *Alphonſo* then made *Giles* ſo ſenſible of his Errour by his Reaſon and Authority, that upon the arrival of *Peter* the Pope's Legat, he quitted the Popedome and ſubmitted to the Papal juriſdiction. Upon this account *Martin* made *Giles* Biſhop of *Majorca*, and *Alphonſo* Biſhop of *Valenza*. After that, when Wars aroſe between *Alphonſo* of *Aragon* and *James* King of *Caſtile*, *Alphonſo Borgia* was thought the onely fit Man, to go and exhort the two Kings to peace and amity; which after ſeven years Wars he procured, and made ſuch a laſting Peace, by conjugal Alliances, as well as other means, that ſome Conditions of that League are obſerved even to this day. But when the Council of *Baſil* was at the heighth, King *Alphonſo*, who was then at War in *Naples*, being deſired to ſend ſome body thither, he order'd *Alphonſo Borgia* to go: who taking it ill that a thing of ſuch pernicious conſequence ſhould be committed to his management, he got leave of the Queen, to go into *Italy* to the King with *Ferdinand* the King's Son, and exhort him, that after ſo many dangerous Expeditions, and Difficulties with which he was even at that time ſurrounded, he would return into his own Country. But the King told him, he would not, but ſent him to *Eugenius*, who was then at *Florence*, to treat concerning a Peace. For *Viteleſchus* having enter'd the Kingdom of *Naples* in *Eugenius's* name with an Army, plunder'd and ſpoil'd all that came before him, to hinder the King from taking *Naples*, which at that time he laid Siege to. But the buſineſs taking up time, and the Pope intending in the mean time to make twenty Cardinals, among the reſt deſign'd the Biſhop of *Valenza* ſhould be one: though he refuſed the honour with all the earneſtneſs imaginable; becauſe, he ſaid, it was not fit for him to receive eſpecially till he had done the buſineſs that he came for. Afterward *Eugenius* return'd to *Rome*, the Patriarch of *Aquilegia*, whom he ſent to *Tarracina* to the King, having made a Peace between the Pope and the King, upon Conditions, at the making of which the Biſhop of *Valenza* was preſent, and interpoſed his Authority and care, for which the Pope began to love him ſo well, that he ſoon after made him Cardinal *Sanctorum quatuor*, and ſent for him to *Rome*, where he uſed no leſs modeſty in his Cardinalate, than he had before in his Biſhoprick, being always free and far from pomp and vain-glory. When he ſpoke in the Senate, he was reckon'd ſo grave and ſincere a perſon that he never ſpake any thing out of flattery, or to win favour. But *Eugenius* dying and *Nicolas* after him, this *Alphonſo Borgia*, as I told you, was made Pope in S. *Peter's* Palace, taking upon him the name of *Caliſtus*, and immediately proclaimed War againſt the *Turks*: ſhewing his own handwriting whereby he had vowed to do ſo even before his Pontificate in a Book of his to this purpoſe; *I* Calixtus *do vow to God and the Holy Trinity that I will perſecute the* Turks *thoſe Enemies of Chriſtianity, with War, Curſes, Interdictions, Execrations and by all the ways I am able.* All that were by admired at it, that he ſhould arrogate to himſelf the name of *Pope* before he had the honour conferr'd, and that a Man who was ſo old and decrepit, ſhould have ſo much courage. But that he might really perform his promiſe, he ſent Preachers through all *Europe* to animate all Chriſtians againſt the *Turks*, and to perſuade ſuch as were able to lend their helping hand in that momentous Expedition. And of theſe he ſent ſixteen Gallies full, built at *Rome*; over whom the Patriarch of *Aquilegia* was Admiral, and haraſs'd the Sea-coaſts of *Aſia* for three years together; where he took ſeveral Iſlands, and did the Enemy a great deal of damage. King *Alphonſo*, and the Duke of *Burgundy* alſo took upon them the Croſs, and profeſs'd that they would either go againſt the Enemy in their own perſons, or at leaſt would raiſe Men to ſend. Yet this Affair as it was moved at an heat, ſo it as eaſily cooled again, whilſt the Princes indulged their pleaſures and neglected that which would have gain'd them immortal Fame. Whilſt the Pope was Crown'd in the *Lateran*, two Soldiers, one under the Earl *Averſus*, and the other under *Neapolio Vrſin* (Men of diverſe factions and parties) who quarrelling about a young Lad, and ſo wound each other, that they both dy'd upon the ſpot. For that reaſon *Neapolio*, raiſing the *Vrſine* Faction, invaded the Houſe where the Count *Averſus* lived: But the Count being from home, he would have gone to the *Lateran*, to ſeiſe him, but was with much ado kept back by his Brother *Latinus*, the Pope's Chamberlain. And indeed *Neapolio* could not have gone thither without great damage to the City, becauſe all the Faction of the *Colonneſes*, who favour'd the Count, were then in Arms. The Pope alſo had ſent *John Baruncellus*, and *Lælius de Valle* (two Advocates of the Conſiſtory) to both of 'em, to make 'em Friends: ſo that by this means the preſent diſturbance was appeaſed, but the old grudg betwixt them ſtill remain'd. For they had many trials of Skill to the great diſadvantage of their Adherents. The Pope however apply'd his mind to his Pontifical Affairs, and Canoniz'd S. *Vincent* a *Spaniard* of the Order of *Preachers*, and S. *Edmund* of *England*: and upon that occaſion ſaid Prayers and Thankſgivings from *Eccleſia Minervæ* to S. *Peter*'s with a long train of Clergy and Laity following him. But leſt any thing ſhould be wanting to diſturb the Church: ſome Country Fellows of *Palombara* a Town in *Sabina*, who were formerly baniſh'd thence by *James Sebellus*, Lord of the place, return'd home, and killing two Sons of *James's*, promiſed to ſurrender the Town to the Church: which *Calixtus* not only refuſed to accept, but ſent Cardinal *Columna* thither, to appeaſe them. *Neapolio* fearing the Cardinal ſhould ſeiſe *Palombara* in his own name, he went thither with his Army and beſieged the Town for ſome days: Though when *Matthew Poianus* and *Francis Sabellus* with other Commanders came up by order from the Pope and the Cardinal, they raiſed the Siege, enter'd *Palombara*, and hang'd twenty of the Country Fellows, of thoſe eſpecially that had made the diſturbance, and quarter'd 'em, to give example to others, and warn 'em never to attempt ſo great a piece of Villany againſt their rightful Lords. Soon after appeared a Comet for ſome days hairy and red; of which when the Aſtrologers ſaid that it portended a great Plague, Dearth, or ſome mighty Slaughter, *Calixtus* appointed a Faſt, for ſeveral days, to pray to God, that if any judgment hung over them, he would be pleaſed to avert and turn it upon the *Turks* the Enemies to Chriſtianity. He gave order likewiſe that God ſhould be ſupplicated every day, and that a Bell ſhould be rung about Noon, to give People notice when they ſhould join in Prayer for the Chriſtians againſt the *Turks.* So that the Chriſtians aſſiſted by the Prayers of the whole Church, fought againſt the *Turks* at *Belgrade* under the Conduct of *John* the *Vaivod* an excellent Perſon, and *John Capiſtranus* of the Order of *Minors*, bearing the Holy Croſs, and Conquer'd 'em when they beſieged *Belgrade*, ſix thouſand of the Enemies being ſlain by a few of our Men, as *Carviagalla*, Cardinal of S. *Angelo*, wrote to the Pope and to *Dominick Capranicus* Cardinal of S. *Croſſes*: beſides that all their Carriages and an hundred and ſixty Guns were taken; a blow, that ſo much ſcar'd the *Turk* that he retir'd in haſte to *Conſtantinople*. And no doubt but that cruel, barbarous Nation had been deſtroyed, if the Chriſtian Princes would have laid aſide their civil Animoſities, and have purſu'd that great Conqueſt by Land and Sea, as *Calixtus* adviſ'd. But the *Turk* recovering ſtrength took *Trabiſond*, killing the Emperour, and then *Boſſina*, where he took and ſlew the King. All wiſe Men perceiving as from a Watch-Tower, and advertiſing the Chriſtians of the Calamities that were like to befall. *Calixtus* eſpecially never deſiſted from exhorting the Chriſtian Princes by Letters and Meſſengers, to open their Eyes at laſt amidſt ſuch great dangers, for that they would ſeek a Remedy in vain, when the Enemy was recruited. But whilſt the good Man was thinking and talking of theſe things, *James Picenninus* revolted from the *Venetians* and march'd into the Territories of *Siena* with a numerous Body of Horſe and Foot, to demand of the *Sieneſes* ſome thouſands of pounds, which he ſaid they ow'd him upon his Father *Nicolas's* account, who had formerly fought under their Commiſſion. The *Sieneſes* fearing the worſt, ſent to the Princes of *Italy* to aſſiſt 'em, as they were bound by Contract; eſpecially the Pope, who firſt adviſed 'em, not to give *James* one farthing, and then ſent his Forces againſt him, and admoniſh'd the Princes of *Italy* to do the ſame, leſt a flame ſhould break out in *Italy*, which might be too fierce for them to quench. The *Italians* fearing the Pope's words would prove too true, ſent ſpeedy ſuccours to the *Sieneſes*: onely *Alphonſo* favoured *James*, and ſent for him to his Houſe, as being mindful of the Friendſhip he had formerly contracted with *Nicolas Picenninus* his Father, nor would he aſſiſt the *Sieneſes* as he ought to have done; nay he ſo far animated Count *Petilian* againſt them, that he ſeemed to be the chief cauſe of all the miſchief. But when the Auxiliaries came in, not only from *Francis Sfortia*, but the *Venetians* alſo, *Picenninus* was reduced to that paſs in ſome few Battles, that if he were not routed, he was mightily weaken'd, eſpecially at *Orbitello*; inſomuch that he was fain to take ſhipping in *Alphonſo's* Gallies, that were ſent to him in his diſtreſs, and ſail into his own Country without any ſucceſs in that great Attempt. Thus by the aſſiſtance of *Calixtus* and his Allies were the *Sieneſes* freed from great danger; though they were ſtill troubled with inteſtine and domeſtick as well as forein broils, by reaſon of ſome Citizens that contemn'd their preſent Liberty and follow'd *Alphonſo's* Faction, by whom alſo 'tis thought that great War was firſt raiſed. But the honeſt Citizens turn'd out, or kill'd the reſt, and do to this day retain that Liberty which they purchaſed at ſo dear a rate. Nor did they omit to puniſh the licentiouſneſs of the Soldiers or thoſe that fled from their Colours, as *Gilbert Corrigia*, whom they put to death, and gave his Men for a common prey to the reſt. *Sigiſmund Malateſta* had like to have been ſerv'd in the ſame ſauce, who at that time fought under them, for protracting the War, and driving away their Cattel out of their grounds, as if he had been an Enemy. That year there happen'd ſuch an Earthquake in the Kingdom of *Naples* upon the ſeventh of *December*, that many Churches and Houſes fell down, to the great deſtruction of Man and Beaſt; eſpecially at *Naples*, *Capua*, *Cajetta*, *Averſa*, and other Cities in old *Campania*, whoſe ruines I ſince have ſeen with great aſtoniſhment, when I went thither to look after Antiquities. Then alſo did *Alphonſo* often repeat his Vow which he had made againſt the *Turks*, and ſaid he would ſhortly perform it; but he could never be brought to the Holy War for all that, ſo mightily was he taken with the delights of *Naples*. But *Calixtus*, when he had ſetled the Affairs of *Italy*, created nine Cardinals, of whom two were his Nephews by two Siſters of his, to wit *Roderick Borgia* and *John Miliano* his Siſter's Son. He alſo made *Æneas* Biſhop of *Siena* a Cardinal, and made uſe of him to procure the peace of *Italy* whilſt the *Sieneſes* were teazed with War. The Earl *Tagliacocius* being dead whom the Pope had made Governour of the City the year before, there roſe a Controverſie between *Neapolio Vrſin* and the Count *Averſus*, for that the later had poſſeſſion of *Monticello*, not far from *Tivoli*, he pretending it belong'd to his Daughter-in-law who was the Count's Daughter; and *Neapolio* urg'd on the other ſide that it ought to be his, himſelf being reckon'd to be of the *Vrſine* Family. Whilſt theſe two contended thus for their Patrimony, and that with Arms too, the *Roman* people ſuffer'd very greatly. But when this Controverſie alſo was over, and both ſides commanded to lay down their Arms, *Calixtus* made his Nephew *Borgia* not onely Governour of the City in the room of the Count deceaſed, but made him General of the Church-Forces, that he might keep the great Men of the City the better in order. *Alphonſo* not long after dying without a lawful Heir, *Calixtus* had the courage to demand that Kingdom, and ſaid it belong'd to the See-Apoſtolick as an *Eſcheat*. Whereupon Armies were raiſed on both ſides, and *Ferdinand*, *Alphonſo*'s Heir fear'd *Calixtus*'s reſolution: for he knew his nature, and the greatneſs of his Soul. But his death alſo put all things into confuſion, and freed *Ferdinand* from great conſternation of mind. *Calixtus* dy'd in the third year, the third month, and ſixteenth day of his Pontificate, and was buried in the *Vatican* on the left hand of St. *Peter's*, in the Round Church, dedicated to St. *Marie del Febri*, which was formerly repaired by *Nicolas*. *Borgia* alſo, his Nephew died, not long after, at *Civita Vechia*, whither he had fled to ſave himſelf from the *Vrſins* whom he had diſobliged by favouring the oppoſite Faction. But to give you a ſhort Character of *Calixtus*; He was a very upright Man, and is to be commended for one thing above all; That when he was Biſhop or Cardinal, he would never keep any Benefice *in Commendam*, but ſaid, he was content with one Wife, and that a Virgin, *i.e.* the Church of *Valenza*, as the Canon Law ordains. Beſides, he was very charitable to poor Chriſtians both in publick and private: and gave portions to ſeveral poor Virgins when they married; kept indigent Noblemen at his own charge: and when occaſion was he was munificent to Princes, eſpecially thoſe that could aſſiſt the Church of Chriſt. He likewiſe ſent *Lewis* of *Bologna*, of the Order of St. *Francis*, to *Uſun-Caſſanus* Prince of *Perſia* and *Armenia*, and to the King of the *Tartars* with many great Preſents, to animate them againſt the *Turk*; and by his perſuaſion they did the Enemy great damage, and ſent their Embaſſadours, that were deſign'd to come to *Calixtus*, after he dy'd, to Pope *Pius*: which was an admirable Rarity to us, not onely upon account of the diſtant Countries from whence they came, but their habit which was unuſual, and very ſtrange to our eyes. They ſay that *Uſun-Caſſanus* after many Victories over the Enemy, wrote to the Pope, that he had conquer'd the Foe by the Pope's prayers, and that he would one day thank him for his kindneſs which was Divine rather than humane. That Alliance was begun by *Calixtus*, and is preſerv'd to this day between all Chriſtians and that Prince, who vexes the *Turk* with continual War. He laid out but little in building, becauſe he dy'd too ſoon, and gather'd up all the Money that he could, to maintain that great and perillous War againſt the *Turks*. Onely he repair'd St. *Priſca* upon the Mount *Aventine*, as alſo the City Walls that were broken down almoſt to the ground. Yet ſome Hangings of Gold there are, which he bought. He was ſparing in his Diet, very modeſt in his Diſcourſe; and very acceſſible, as much as his Age would ſuffer him to be: for he was eighty years old, and yet as ſtudious as ever. For he either read himſelf, or heard thoſe that did, whenever his important Affairs would give him leave. He compoſed the Office for the Transfiguration of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and order'd it to be ſaid in the ſame manner, and with the ſame Indulgences for which *Corpus Chriſti* Day is ſo much valued. He receiv'd all Embaſſadours that came to him with great kindneſs, but would not yield to any of their Propoſals or Demands, which were not conſiſtent with Virtue and Juſtice. And that was the cauſe why he fell out and had a long quarrel with *Alphonſo*, who ſometimes would ask him to give Biſhopricks to ſuch as either upon the ſcore of their Age, or ignorance in Books as well as Men, ought not to have them. When *Calixtus* dy'd he left 115000 *l.* behind him, which he had heaped together to make warlike preparations againſt the *Turk*. As *Calixtus* was going to be buried, *Dominick* Cardinal of St. *Croſſes* and chief Pœnitentiary, died alſo (a Man of gravity and great Wiſdom) and was buried in *Minerva*'s Temple; to the grief of all good Men.

PIUS II.

PIUS the Second, before called *Æneas Picolhomineus*, an *Italian*, of *Siena*, and born at *Corſignano* (whoſe Father's name was *Sylvius*, and his Mother's *Victoria*) was choſen Pope by general conſent of the Cardinals, *Auguſt* 20. 1458. Formerly his Father and the reſt of the Nobility being baniſh'd, or expelled the Republick of *Siena* by the Commonalty of that place, he went to *Corſignano*, the Seat of his Family, and there had a Child by his Wiſe. Which Child as ſoon as it was born the Father chriſten'd *Æneas Sylvius*. Now his Mother, when ſhe was big with Child, dreamed that ſhe had brought forth a Boy with a Mitre on his head; at which ſhe was affraid (as people are apt to make the worſt of things) that her dream betokened ſome diſhonour to their Child and Family: nor could ſhe be eas'd of her fear till ſhe heard that her Son was made Biſhop of *Trieſte*. And upon that news ſhe was freed from all fear, and gave God thanks, that ſhe ſaw her Son more happy than ſhe expected. As ſoon as he was capable of learning any thing, he, having a good memory, and being very docile, went through his Grammar at *Corſignano* where he lived but poorly, being forced to undergo all the troubles of a rural employment. But when he was eighteen years of age he went to *Siena*, where, by the help of his Friends, he firſt learn'd the Poets and then the Orators, in which he was ſo skilful, that in a ſhort time he put forth Poems in *Latin* and *Italian*, of which if the Subject was Love, it is to be aſcribed to his Youth. Thence he apply'd himſelf to the Civil Law, the ſtudy of which not long after he was forced to leave. For there aroſe a War between the *Sieneſes* and the *Florentines*, which made him fear a Dearth; and ſeeing the Commonalty of *Siena* ſuſpected the Nobility, he choſe as it were a voluntary Exile, and follow'd that excellent perſon, *Dominick Capranicus*, who then paſſed through *Siena*, in his way to the Council at *Baſil*, to complain of the injury *Eugenius* had done him in denying him a Cardinals Hat, which *Martin* even in his abſence had beſtow'd upon him, for his Virtue and Integrity. In his Retinue he went, and after long tedious Journeys over the *Alps* (that reach to heaven almoſt, and are cover'd with Snow) he travailed over *Ponte del Inferno*, the Lake of *Lucern*, and through *Switzerland*, till he at laſt came to *Baſil*. In which Aſſembly though he had much to do, being *Dominick*'s Secretary, yet he ſtole always ſome hours for his Book. After that, he was forced not without tears to leave *Dominick*, becauſe he was extream poor, *Eugenius* denying him the Revenue of his Benefices and of his Paternal Eſtate too; he went to wait upon *Bartholomew* Biſhop of *Novara*, with whom he came to *Florence*, where Pope *Eugenius* at that time was. But he was forced to leave *Bartholomew* alſo, (he being accuſed by the Pope of High Treaſon) and betook himſelf to *Nicolas*, Cardinal of St. *Croſſes*, and a very excellent and religious perſon in all Mens judgments; who going to *Artois* by order from *Eugenius* (where there was a Convention of all the *French* Princes) he made a

Peace between the Duke of *Burgundy* (an Ally of *England*) and the King of *France*. After that, *Nicolas* returning into *Italy*, made a Peace between the *Venetians* and *Philip* Duke of *Millain* to their great ſatisfaction; and *Æneas*, who was not very acceptable to *Eugenius*, went to *Baſil*, and was in great eſteem among all Men. He was made a Secretary in that famous Council, and Abbreviatour of the Pope's Breves, as alſo a *Duodecimvir*, or one of the Twelve who in that great Aſſembly were as Cenſors. For nothing could be done relating to the publick, but what paſs'd their graver approbation; and if any were admitted to the Council that were not fit, they were removed by their Order. There were in that Council four Sub-Conventions or Committees, one debated concerning Faith, another of Peace, a third of Reformation, and the other of promiſcuous matters. Over each of theſe there was a ſeveral Preſident plac'd every month: and *Æneas* was often Chairman of the Committee for Faith of which he was a Member, and was alſo choſen twice one of the *Collators*, or Diſpoſers of Benefices. He made ſeveral Speeches in that Aſſembly, but one more remarkably elegant, to prove that *Pavia* was preferable to *Avignion*, *Udine*, or *Florence*, for a place convenient to hold a Council in, by reaſon of its plenty, ſituation, magnificence of the Houſes, good Air, and the liberality of *Philip* their Duke. When any thing was to be done by the ſeveral Nations together, he was the onely perſon choſen for *Italy*, to manage their buſineſs, he was a man ſo courteous and ingenuous. He went alſo on ſeveral Embaſſies from the Council; to *Straſburgh*, three times; to *Trent*, once; to *Conſtance*, twice; to *Franckfort*, once; and into *Savoy* twice. But when upon a long Debate the Council choſe *Felix* Pope, and depoſed *Eugenius*, and eight were choſen out of every Nation, to be managers of the Council Affairs, *Æneas*, who was the Pope's Secretary, refuſed to be one, though it was offer'd him. And afterward when he was ſent Embaſſadour from *Felix* to *Frederick* the Emperour, he ſo far prevailed upon him by his ingenuity, that he made him a *Poet Laureat*, his Companion, and a *Prothonotary*, which, in *Germany*, is a Secretary of State. Not long after he was made a Counſellour of State, and ſhew'd ſuch Learning and Authority, that he was reckon'd the moſt ingenuous Man there by far, although he wanted not Rivals and Detractors. When *Eugenius* and the Emperour firſt treated about putting an end to the Schiſm, and *Æneas* went to the Pope upon that account, he ſtay'd ſome time at *Siena*, where his Friends deſired him not to go to *Eugenius*; for they feared the Pope would uſe him ſeverely, becauſe his Authority was often oppoſed (as people ſaid) by *Æneas* in Epiſtles and Orations at the Council of *Baſil*. But he was reſolute and truſting to his own innocence ſlighted the intreaties of his Relations, and went to *Rome*; where in the firſt place he acquitted himſelf before *Eugenius*, in an elegant Oration, for ſubmitting to their Opinion, who approv'd of the Council of *Baſil*. And when he had ſo done, he began to treat with him about that which the Emperour ſent him to negotiate. Thereupon two Agents were ſent from *Eugenius* into *Germany*, of whom one was *Sarzanus* and the other *John Carvagialla*, by whoſe good management, and *Æneas*'s induſtry together, the Neutrality (as I told you in the Life of *Nicolas*) was taken off. But that it might appear really to be ſo, and not in words onely, the Emperour ſent *Æneas* himſelf to *Rome*, to make a publick Declaration of Submiſſion in all matters to *Eugenius*, in the name of himſelf and all *Germany*. *Eugenius* dying about this time, *Æneas* was Preſident of the *Conclave*, till another Pope was choſen in the room of the deceaſed; there being no Orator in the City, more fit for ſo great an Employment. *Nicolas* being choſen Pope, he had leave to depart, and as he went into *Germany*, he (having been made Sub-Deacon by *Eugenius*) was made Biſhop of *Trieſte* (that Biſhop being juſt then dead) by the Pope and the Emperour, without his own knowledge. After which *Philip Viconti* dying without an Heir, the Emperour ſent him Envoy to *Millain*: where he made an Oration concerning the deſcent of the Inheritance of that City, and exhorting to Allegiance, which if they preſerv'd inviolate, they might enjoy their liberty ſtill. He was ſent thither another time when they were beſieged by *Francis Sfortia*, and ſuffer'd great extremities in defence of their Liberty; at which time he enter'd the City with great hazard alone; for his Collegues left him at *Como*, and durſt not go on for fear. But he departed thence without any ſucceſs, and whilſt the Emperour ſent him to *Alphonſo* King of *Aragon*, the Pope *Nicolas*, made him Biſhop of *Siena*, the place of his Nativity. And when the Emperour and *Alphonſo* had contracted an Alliance by Marriage he return'd into *Germany*, where he perſuaded the Emperour to go as ſoon as poſſible into *Italy* and receive his Imperial Crown. Upon that advice *Fredrick* went thither, but ſent *Æneas* before, to meet and complement his Wife *Leonora*, who was to come from *Portugal* into *Tuſcany*. Who when he came to *Siena*, ſtay'd not long there, but he began to be ſuſpected by the people, as if he deſign'd (becauſe the Emperour was coming) to turn out the populace and make the Government an Ariſtocracy. *Æneas* therefore, to free the people from that jealouſie, went to *Talamone*, where he thought *Leonora* would arrive; and yet the people mere not ſatisfied. For they baniſh'd the Nobility into the Country for a time; and a little while after (according to the mutable humour of the *Mobile*) gave 'em leave to come back again, when they underſtood the integrity of the Emperour and the modeſty of *Æneas*. Hence he went to *Piſa*, where he heard the *Portugueſes* were landed, and brought the Infanta (who was committed to his ſole care) to the Emperour, then at *Siena*. Then going to *Rome* he managed all things (whilſt the Emperour was crown'd) both private and publick. Afterward the Emperour went to viſit *Alphonſo*, and left *Ladiſlaus* (a Princely Youth whom the *Hungarians* and *Bohemians* had often endeavour'd to ſteal away from him) under the tutelage of *Æneas*, who kept him very faithfully. When the Emperour came back to *Rome*, and had given the Pope thanks, he went for *Ferrara*, and having made *Borſius d'Eſte* Duke of *Modena*, he departed. And no ſooner was he come into *Germany*, but he preſently diſpatch'd away *Æneas* by the Pope's Order as Envoy extraordinary into *Bohemia* and all the Cities of *Auſtria*. For there was a Controverſie between them and the Emperour about King *Ladiſlaus* whom they would needs have him ſend into their Country. But the Diſpute was ended, and a Peace made between 'em, ſo that *Æneas* was not long after ſent to the Aſſembly at *Ratisbone*: where he, in the name of the Emperour, and in the preſence of *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, and *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, ſpoke of the *Turks* cruelty and calamities of Chriſtendom with ſuch vehemency and paſſion, that he forced ſighs and tears from every one there; but eſpecially he ſeemed ſo far to animate the Duke of *Burgundy* that a War was decreed immediately by general conſent: though it was after laid aſide through the ambition and folly of thoſe, who thought too well of themſelves. And now *Æneas* was grown old, and tired with the tedious Journeys he had taken into forein parts; wherefore he reſolv'd to return to *Siena*, his native Country: but the Emperour eaſily chang'd his mind, by telling him, that he yet deſign'd to make War upon the *Turks*. Thereupon he was ſent to the Convention at *Frankfort* where all the *German* Princes were met together, and in a grave, long Oration perſuaded them with many reaſons to undertake that dangerous, but neceſſary War. And indeed he ſeemed to move 'em all exceedingly: though it is natural for thoſe to cool ſoon whoſe affections are quickly heated. There was alſo a third Convention in *Cittanova* about the ſame thing, wherein *Æneas* employ'd all his endeavours to bring about what he deſired; exhorting every one of them both in publick and private to aſſiſt in that War, upon which the ſafety of all *Europe*, the Liberty of both Princes and people, and the honour of Chriſtianity did depend. And juſt as he expected to do the buſineſs, there was news brought, that Pope *Nicolas* was dead; which put all things into a new Confuſion. For the Convention broke up, and the *Germans*, deſirous of Novelty, endeavour'd to perſuade the Emperour no longer to obey the Pope unleſs he would grant them ſome certain Demands, for they ſaid, the *Germans* were in a worſe condition than either the *French* or *Italians*, whoſe Servants they might be termed (unleſs things were alter'd) eſpecially to the *Italians*. And truly the Emperour had hearken'd to thoſe Mutineers, if *Æneas*, with his gravity, had not interpoſed, and told the Emperour, That though one Prince may poſſibly keep peace with another, yet there always is an immortal jealouſie between Prince and People. So that, he thought it better for him to agree with the Pope, than give way to their deſires, whoſe minds are led by Appetite and Fancy, not by Reaſon. The Emperour was perſuaded: and ſlighting the peoples petition, ſent *Æneas* to *Calixtus*. He, when he came to *Rome*, and had given *Frederick's* Oath to the Pope, as the cuſtom is, commended them both in an Oration, whereof the greateſt part inforced a War againſt the *Turks*; ſo mighty zealous he was for it. For he was a wiſe Man and foreſaw what afterward came to paſs; That the *Barbarians* would not be quiet when they had gotten all *Greece*; they were ſo puft up with their Victory. For that reaſon he apply'd himſelf to make peace in *Italy* (before he made War with the *Turk*) and ſo exhorted the Pope to do the ſame with all earneſtneſs. At that time the *Sieneſes* were hard put to it by Count *Petilian* and *James Picenninus*, who carry'd on that War more upon *Alphonſo's* account than their own. Wherefore *Æneas*, to make a final concluſion of it, went by command from the Pope and at the requeſt of his Fellow-Citizens and Countrymen to *Alphonſo* at *Naples*, where almoſt all the Embaſſadours of *Italy* were met to treat of Peace, but had done nothing in it to that time. But when *Æneas* came, he ſaid he would agree to a Peace then without any more ado, ſince that perſon was arrived, whom he loved above all mankind. Having obtain'd a Peace, and freed his Country from the Enemy he ſtay'd with *Alphonſo* ſome months, becauſe he loved his Converſation; and in that time took his opportunity to make an elegant and a large Diſcourſe to him, by which he induced him to engage by Sea againſt the *Turk*. And having ſo done he went for *Rome*, with a deſign to go into his own Country, but was ſtopp'd by the Pope, and not long after made a Cardinal. Now he was in ſuch favour with *Calixtus* and bore ſuch a ſway, that he perſuaded him to ſend Embaſſadours to *Siena*, which was all in an uproar among themſelves, to exhort the People to peace and unity. But whilſt he was at the Bath at *Viterbo* upon account of his health, and had begun the Hiſtory of *Bohemia*, *Calixtus* died, and then he return'd to *Rome*: where he was ſo much deſired, that great part of the people ran out to meet him, and ſaluted him, prophetically, by the name of *Pope*. For indeed he was choſen Pope by univerſal conſent not onely of the people but the Cardinals: and having received the Papal Crown upon the fifth of *September* he went into St. *Peter*'s Church in his Pontifical Robes, where he gave thanks to Almighty God, and immediatly betook himſelf firſt to ſettle the Churches Patrimony, and then to endeavour the advantage of all Chriſtendom in general. For he ended the War in *Ombria* (which broke out before his Pontificate, under the command of that ſeditious Innovator *James Picenninus*) as ſoon as he was Pope, and took back *Aſſiſi* and *Nocera* from the Enemy. He likewiſe made a Truce (which ſeemed a difficult thing to do) between *Sigiſmund Malateſta*, and King *Ferdinand*, that all might ſafely paſs to *Mantua*, where he had order'd a general Council. And having made the Prince of *Columna* Governour of the City in the room of *Borgia*, who was dead, and left *Nicolas Cuſa*, Cardinal of St. *Peter*'s *in vinculis*, his Legate at *Rome*, he departed the City in the midſt of Winter, and paſs'd through thoſe Cities which ſeemed more inclining to War than Peace, exhorting the People to unity and concord. In fine, they met at *Mantua* from all quarters, where there was a great number of Princes and Embaſſadours. For of all *Europe* there was no Nation, but ſent either Princes, or Embaſſadours thither; and in that famous Aſſembly it was enacted by *Pius*, (who made an Oration himſelf) that a War ſhould be proclaimed againſt the *Turks*, which they all agreed to. He propoſed Methods for carrying it on, and ſhew'd the danger of Chriſtendom: nor could they forbear to weep when they heard the calamities laid open, to which poor Chriſtians were expoſed, who lay under the bondage of *Barbarians*. Beſide he moved them to conſider that the *Turks* having already poſſeſſed themſelves of *Greece* and *Schlavonia*, would ſhortly get into the innermoſt parts of *Europe*. And indeed he omitted nothing that might excite their reſolutions: for he was an excellent Orator, and ſeemed to draw his Arguments from new Topicks ſtill, though he ſpake of the ſame thing, ſuch an elegant and copious faculty he had. He confuted the complaints of the *French* and the calumnies of King *Renatus* (for his having confirm'd *Ferdinand*, *Alphonſo*'s Son, in the Kingdom of *Naples*) in three ſeveral Speeches. Theſe things were tranſacted in the Council at *Mantua*, whilſt almoſt all *Europe* employ'd their thoughts and Weapons in civil Diſcords, and neglected the forein War. The *Germans* aroſe partly againſt one another, and partly againſt the *Hungarians*: by whoſe aſſiſtance that great and neceſſary War might have been in a great meaſure managed and ended. *England* alſo was divided into two Factions: whereof the one would keep their old King, whilſt the other ſtrove to baniſh him and ſet up a new one. In like manner did the *Spaniards* riſe to help thoſe of *Barcellona*, whom the King of *A-*

ragon, aſſiſted by the *French* oppreſs'd. And leſt any thing ſhould be lacking to diſturb the World, *Italy*, the chief of *Europe*, laid by all thoughts of forein War, and bent all its ſtrength upon inteſtine quarrels. For at that time there was a War in *Puglia*, *John Renatus*'s Son endeavouring to drive *Ferdinand* out of his Kingdom, which occaſion'd a double Faction through all the Province, whilſt ſome favour'd *Ferdinand*, and others, *Renatus*. *Pius* therefore, to allay theſe heats, diſmiſs'd the Council at *Mantua*, and came back into *Tuſcany*, where he eaſily regain'd *Viterbo*, which was in the poſſeſſion of the adverſe Party. Thoſe of *Ancona*, who had haraſs'd one another miſerably about their bounds and limits he quieted partly by fear and partly by reaſon: as likewiſe the *Ombrians*, who had embru'd their hands in each others blood upon the like account. He alſo ſetled the State of *Siena*, which had been engaged in great tumults for three years before; and reſtored ſeveral worthy Perſons, who had been baniſh'd thence, giving the Government of that Republick (as formerly) to the Nobility. But he was very ſevere upon the *Sabini* for their falſhood, in ſupplying a common Enemy with proviſions, and letting him paſs through their Country. At *Rome*, he ſuppreſs'd the ſhameful Riots of Ruffian-like Men, and impriſon'd *Tibertius* Son to *Angelus Maſſimus* (who we told you, was put to death by *Nicolas* for a Conſpiracy, and hang'd up by the *Capitol*) and his Accomplices, who poſſeſſing themſelves of the Church of St. *Maria Rotunda*, would ſally from thence, as from a Caſtle, and commit outrages upon the Citizens. Furthermore, he exterminated ſome Tyrants who ſtuddied innovations, out of the Church Dominions: but never medled with any one, till he had firſt ſent an Embaſſadour or Legat to 'em, to reduce 'em, if it were poſſible, by fair means. After that, he ſent *Frederick* of *Urbino* his General with *Alexander Sfortia* to *Tagliacozzo* to ſtop *James Picenninus*, who fought under *Renatus*, from going into *Puglia* to aſſiſt the *French* againſt *Ferdinand*. And beſides, he ſuccour'd *Ferdinand* at *Sarno*, when he had like to have loſt his Kingdom, for fear, the *French*, when they had once gotten that Kingdom, would make uſe of their Victory to ſubvert the Liberty of *Italy*. He ſlighted the Threats and Promiſes of the *French* Embaſſadours that endeavour'd to bring him over from *Ferdinand* to *Renatus*; and by his Cenſures as well as Arms he tamed the fury of *Sigiſmund Malateſta* who was a Feudatary of the Church, and yet contemning the League, which the Pope had made between him and *Ferdinand*, ſtorm'd and took all the Caſtles which he had given for caution, againſt Law and Reaſon; and having driven the Churches Legate as far as *Nulaſture*, he made War upon the *Anconeſes*. But his extravagance was corrected the year after at *Sinigaglia*, under the conduct of *Frederick* of *Urbino* and *Neapolio Urſin*, in a ſharp engagement, wherein they retook *Sinigaglia*, the Town called *Fortunæ Fanum* was taken by *Nicolas* of *Piſtoia* Cardinal Legate of St. *Cecilys*, and great part of *Rimini* taken from him, leſt he ſhould rebel any more. *Ferdinand* alſo had the ſame happy ſucceſs not long after at *Troja*, a Town in *Puglia*, by which the Prince of *Tarento* and many others, who being deſirous of change, were on the *French* ſide, were ſo conſternated, that they came all upon their knees to the King and begg'd pardon of him; but ſome few continued obſtinate, whom the King afterward proſecuted ſo ſeverely, that he either drove 'em out of the Kingdom, or brought 'em to know themſelves. When this was over, *Pius*, now freed from two great and troubleſom Wars, renew'd the thoughts of his Expedition into *Aſia*, which had been ſo long omitted from the time of the *Mantuan* Council through the ambition and avarice of the ſeveral Kings and Princes: and makes the King of *Hungary*, the Duke of *Burgundy*, and the *Venetians* his Confederates, becauſe they ſeemed more inclined to it, than any body elſe. He likewiſe ſent Nuncioes with Letters Apoſtolick to the ſeveral Nations of Chriſtendom, to exhort the Princes and people to ſo great and neceſſary a War: Himſelf in the mean time went to *Siena*, with a deſign to go as ſoon as the Seaſon permitted, to the Baths at *Petriolana*, that ſeemed beſt for his Diſtemper. And there he heard the Duke of *Burgundy*, who had vowed to come with a Navy well Man'd, had deſiſted from his reſolution: as alſo, that many other Princes and people not onely Foreiners, but of *Italy*, led by ambition and envy, endeavour'd to fruſtrate that great Deſign, becauſe they ſaw, that they were likely to have the richeſt ſpoils and rewards, that underwent the greateſt brunt of that War. Thereupon (as it became a Pope to do) he try'd to perſuade 'em by kind words at a diſtance: and ſoon after leaving the Bath he went to *Rome*, where he lay ſick for ſome days of the Gout and a Fever, and therefore could not be at *Ancona* upon the ſeventh of *June* as he had publickly declared he would. But when his diſtemper was ſomewhat aſſwaged, he gave Audience to certain Embaſſadours that came from the King of *France*, and Duke of *Burgundy* to excuſe their delay. And then calling all the Cardinals before him he appointed a day to hear the charge againſt the King of *Bohemia*, who was ſaid to be heretically inclined: and when he had done, he was carried in a Litter through *Sabina Ombria*, and the *Marcha* till he came to the City of *Ancona*. By the way he found great numbers of Men, that came out of *Germany*, *Spain*, and *France*, intending for the War againſt the *Turks*: of whom he ſent a great part, eſpecially of the *Germans* (having abſolv'd 'em) back into their own Country, becauſe he thought 'em unfit for the toil of War; and becauſe they had not brought their pay along with 'em, as he had order'd in the Letters Apoſtolical. But in the mean time, whilſt he waited at *Ancona* for the Navy that was a building in the ſeveral Ports of the *Tyrrhene* and *Adriatick* Seas, and alſo for the Duke of *Venice* his Ally, he was afflicted with a tedious Fever, and dy'd in the year 1464. upon the 13. of *Auguſt* about three of the Clock in the Night, ſix years wanting ſix days after he was made Pope. He was a Man of ſuch conſtancy and courage of mind, that in all his ſickneſs, which was long and painful, he never omitted any buſineſs that concern'd his underſtanding onely, whether it were to hear the cauſes of ſeveral Nations, to inhibit, to decree, to judg, to ſign, to admoniſh, to chaſtiſe, or correct. And that day whereon he dy'd, about two hours before he expired, he call'd the Cardinals about him, and with a reſolute Heart and a good audible Voice exhorted 'em to Unity in the choice of a new Pope; commending to their care (in a grave Speech) the honour of God, the dignity of the Church, the War which he had undertaken againſt the *Turks*, the ſalvation of his Soul, all his Family, and eſpecially his Nephews, if they proved worthy of commendations. He deſired all the Sacraments of his own accord, and ſhew'd great tokens of a true Chriſtian. But beſides that he diſputed very acutely with *Laurentius Roverella*, Biſhop of *Ferrara*, a learned ed Divine, whether it were lawful for him to receive the Extreme Unction again, having been anointed once before at *Baſil*, when he was ſick of the Plague. Nor could he be entreated by all his domeſtick Servants to forbear ſaying the Canonical Prayers, though he were in ſuch an Agony. He repeated the *Athanaſian* Creed with great ſtrength and Emphaſis; and when he had done, he ſaid, it was moſt true, and moſt holy. He was not affraid to die, nor did he ſhew any ſign of trouble or inconſtancy to his laſt breath. But indeed he may be ſaid rather to have been kill'd than to have died, he was ſo tortur'd with tedious Diſeaſes. He commanded his Friends to carry his Body to *Rome:* where thoſe that embalm'd him affirmed that his heart was very ſound and vivid. His funeral pomp from *Ancona* to *Rome* was made up of his Family, who were all in mourning and in tears. And when that was over, he was buried in St. *Peter's* at the Altar of St. *Andrew*, in a Tomb, which was built at the charge of *Francis*, Cardinal of *Siena*, with this Epitaph, *Pius* II. *Pont. Max. natione Tuſcus, patriâ Senenſis, gente Pocolhominea.* He enjoy'd the See only ſix years: But though his Pontificate were ſhort, yet it was full of great Actions. He held a Council at *Mantua* to maintain the Faith; reſiſted all the oppoſers of the Church of *Rome* both within and without *Italy;* he canonized *Catharine* of *Siena*, and abrogated the *French Pragmatic Sanction*. He reſtored *Ferdinand* of *Aragon* to the Kingdom of *Naples;* encreaſed the Churches Patrimony, and made the firſt Allum Mines at *Tolfa;* He was an Admirer of Juſtice and Religion, and an excellent Orator: But he died at *Ancona* as he was going to the War againſt the *Turks*, where he had his Navy ready, and the Duke and Senate of *Venice* for his fellow Soldiers in Chriſt. He was brought thence into the City by order of the Cardinals, and buried in the place where he commanded St. *Andrew* the Apoſtle's head (which was brought hither to him from *Morea*) to be laid. He lived fifty eight years, nine months, and twenty ſeven days; and when he dy'd, left the College of Cardinals forty five thouſand pound gather'd out of the Church Revenues, to maintain the War againſt the *Turks*. But the Cardinals committed all this Money and the Galleys that were then in the Port of *Ancona*, to *Chriſtopher Maurus* Duke of *Venice*, who arrived there two days before *Pius* died, upon condition, that he ſhould uſe the Ships according to their directions, and ſhould ſend the Money to *Matthias* King of *Hungary*, who was continually at War with the *Turk*. Thus died *Pius*, who was a perſonage of ſuch true courage and ſingular prudence; as he ſeemed to be born not to eaſe or pleaſure but to manage the moſt important Affairs. He always endeavour'd to augment the Majeſty and grandeur of the Pontifical Chair; nor did he ever leave chaſtizing of Kings, Dukes, States, Uſurpers, that wronged either himſelf or any other Church-Man, till he made 'em acknowledg their Errour. And therefore he was an Enemy to *Lewis* King of *France*, becauſe he endeavour'd to diminiſh the Liberties of the Church, and extorted from him the *Pragmatic Sanction* which was moſt pernicious to the See of *Rome*. He threaten'd *Borſius* Duke of *Modena*, who being a Feudatary of the Church of *Rome*, yet favour'd *Sigiſmund Malateſta* and the *French*, who were no Friends to the Church. But he cenſur'd *Sigiſmund* Duke of *Auſtria* moſt grievouſly, for taking *Nicolas Cuſanus*, Cardinal of St. *Peter ad vincula*, and keeping him ſome days in Priſon. He deprived *Dieterus Iſimbergenſis* Biſhop of *Mayence*, who hated the Church of *Rome*, and put another in his place: And ſo likewiſe he diſplaced the Arch-Biſhop of *Benevento*, who was upon new projects, and endeavour'd to betray *Benevento* to the *French*. He likewiſe deprived *Francis Copinus*, who in his Embaſſady to *England*, aſſumed more Power, than the See Apoſtolick had given him (to the deſtruction of many Men) him he deprived of his Biſhoprick of *Teramo*. He alſo made *Terracino*, *Benevento*, *Sora*, *Arpino*, and a great part of *Campagnia* ſubject to the Church. He never granted any thing to any King, Duke, or State for fear or covetouſneſs; and would reprove Men ſeverely, that ask'd what he could not grant without detriment to the Church and diſhonour to himſelf; and ſtrook ſuch terrour into ſome Lords of *Italy* eſpecially, that they continued very true to their Faith and Allegiance. But as he always plagued his publick Enemies, ſo likewiſe he Cheriſh'd his Friends as much. He dearly loved *Frederick* the Emperour, *Matthias* King of *Hungary*, *Ferdinand* Son to *Alphonſo*, *Philip* of *Burgundy*, *Francis Sfortia*, and *Lewis Gonzaga*. He added twelve Cardinals to the former number, the Cardinal of *Rieti*, *Spoleto*, *Trani*, *Alexander Saxoferratenſis*, *Bartholomew Roverella*, *James* of *Lucca*, *Francis* Son to his Siſter *Laodamia*, *Francis Gonzaga* Son to the Marqueſs *Lewis*, all *Italians*. But then there were others from beyond the *Alps*; as *Salſeburgenſis*, *Lewis Libretus* of *Artois*, and *Vergelenſis*. Moreover, he ſo ordered his method of living, that he could never be accuſed of idleneſs or ſloth. He roſe as ſoon as 'twas day for his health ſake, and, having ſaid his Prayers very devoutly, went about his worldly affairs. When he had done his mornings work, and walk'd about the Gardens for his recreation, he went to Dinner; in which he uſed an indifferent ſort of Diet; not curious and dainty. For he ſeldom bid 'em get him this or that particular Diſh, but whatever they ſet before him, he ate of. He was very abſtemious, and when he did drink Wine, it was always diluted with Water, and pleaſant rather than rough upon the Palate. After Meals he either diſcourſed or diſputed half an hour with his Chaplains, and then going into his Bed-Chamber, he took a nap, after which he went to Prayers again, and then wrote or read, as long as his buſineſs would permit. The ſame alſo he did after Supper; for he both read and dictated till midnight as he lay in his Bed, nor did he ſleep above five or ſix hours. He was a ſhort Man, gray-hair'd before his time, and had a wrinkled Face before he was old. In his aſpect he bore ſeverity tempered with good-nature, and in his Garb was neither finical, nor negligent, but ſo contrived it, as to be conſiſtent with the pains which he uſually took. He could patiently endure both hunger and thirſt, becauſe he was naturally very ſtrong; and yet his long journeys, frequent labour, and Watchings had impair'd him. His uſual Diſeaſes were the Cough, the Stone, and Gout, wherewith he was often ſo tormented, that no body could ſay he was alive but by his Voice. And even in his ſickneſs he was very acceſſible, but ſparing of Words; and unwilling to deny any Man's Petition. He laid out all the Money he got together; and did neither love Gold nor contemn it: but would never be by, whilſt it was told out, or laid up. He ſeemed not to cheriſh the Wits of his Age, becauſe three grievous Wars which he had undertook had ſo continually exhauſted the Pontifical Treaſury that he was oftentimes much in Debt:

and yet he preferred many learned Men to places both in the Court, and Church. He would willingly hear an Oration, or a Poem, and always ſubmitted his own Writings to the judgment of the Learned. He hated Lyars and Sycophants, was ſoon angry and ſoon pleaſed again. He pardon'd thoſe that reviled, or ſcoff'd at him, unleſs they injur'd the See Apoſtolick; the Dignity whereof he always had ſuch a reſpect for, as upon that account often to fall out with great Kings and Princes. He was very kind to his Houſhold Servants; for thoſe that he found in an errour, through folly or ignorance, he admoniſh'd like a Father. He never reproved any one for ſpeaking or thinking ill of him; becauſe in a free City he deſired every body ſhould utter their minds. And when one told him, that he had an ill Report, he reply'd; go into the *Campo di fiore,* and you'll hear a great many talk againſt me. If at any time he had a mind to change the Air of *Rome* for a better, he went eſpecially in the Summer, to *Tivoli,* or his own Country, *Siena.* But he was mightily pleaſed with the retirement of an Abby in *Siena,* which is very delightful, and cool too by reaſon of its ſituation and the ſhady Groves that are about it. He frequented the Baths at *Macerata* and *Petriolana* for his healths ſake. He uſed thin Cloths, and his Expences in Silver look'd more frugal than Prince-like. For his whole delight (when he had leiſure) was in writing and reading: becauſe he valu'd good Books more than precious Stones; for in them he ſaid there was great plenty of Gems. He ſo far contemn'd a ſplendid Table, that he went oftentimes to Fountains, Groves, and Country receſſes for his own humour, where he entertain'd himſelf not like a Pope, but an honeſt humble Ruſtick. Nor were there wanting ſome who found fault with this his frequent change of places, eſpecially his Courtiers; becauſe no Pope had ever done ſo before him, unleſs in time of War, or of a Plague. But he always ſlighted their Cavils, and ſaid, that for all his pleaſure he never omitted any thing that befitted the dignity of a Pope, or tended to the good of the Court. In all places he Sealed, heard Cauſes, Cenſur'd, Anſwer'd, Aſſerted and Confuted; to give full ſatisfaction to all ſorts of Men. He could not eat willingly alone, and therefore invited either the Cardinal of *Spoleto,* of *Trani,* or of *Pavia,* commonly to Dine or Sup with him. At Supper he uſed to diſcourſe of Learning, and rubb'd up his old Notions of the Ancients; ſhewing how commendable each of 'em was in this or that particular. He frequently exhorted his Relations to Virtue, and deterr'd 'em from Vice, by recounting the good or ill actions of others. *Auguſtine Patritio* was his chief Reader, and *Amanuenſis.* He was alſo ſometimes pleaſed to hear Wit, eſpecially when he had nothing to do: and therefore he had one *Grecus,* a *Florentine,* who would mimick and ridicule any ones behaviour, garb, or way of ſpeech with great diverſion to the Audience. He was an honeſt, upright, plain Man, without fallacy, or guile. And ſo zealous a Chriſtian he was, that there appear'd no colour of Hypocriſie in him. He frequently confeſs'd, and receiv'd the Communion; and at divine Service either performed the Prieſtly Office himſelf, or aſſiſted at the Ceremonies. He always contemn'd Dreams, Portents, Prodigies, Lightning, and the like. There was no ſign in him of fear or inconſtancy: but he ſeemed as little elevated at his good, as dejected at his ill Fortune. He often reproved his Friends, for Cowards, and ſneaking Fellows, that they ſhould be affraid of telling him what miſchances they had (as it ſometimes happens) in the War: becauſe, he ſaid, thoſe things might have been remedied, if he had known of 'em in time. He never forſook his Allies, either upon account of Charges, or fear of his Enemies. He went to War with an ill will, but fought for the Church and Religion when he was forced to't. He was mightily pleaſed with Building: and at his charge were the *Steps* in the *Vatican* Church repaired; the *Portico* of it made glorious and ſtrong. And he had a deſign to carry away the rubbiſh from before the Church-door, and pave the *Piazza*. He was about to make a *Portico*, from whence the Pope might bleſs the People. He built a Caſtle at *Tivoli* before people thought he had begun it: and at *Siena* he built his Countrymen a *Portico* of ſquare ſtone very high and very fine. As likewiſe he made *Corſiniano* (which he called *Pienza*, from his own name, *Pius*) a City: and built there a noble Church with a *Cupalo*, together with a fine Houſe. He erected alſo a Tomb for his Father and Mother at *Siena* in St. *Francis*'s Church, with this Diſtich for an Epitaph.

Sylvius hic jaceo, conjux Victoria mecum eſt,
Filius hoc clauſit marmore Papa Pius.

He had four Nephews by his Siſter; of which the two youngeſt through his Authority, and the reſpect that were ſhewn him, were made Knights by the King of *Spain*. The eldeſt, who had married King *Ferdinand*'s Daughter, was made Duke of *Malphi*; and the ſecond, whom *Pius* (as I told you before) had made a Cardinal, lives yet in ſuch repute of integrity and Vertue, that there is nothing wanting in him that is required in an excellent Perſon: being adorn'd with Wit, Manners, Policy, Religion, Modeſty and Gravity. But to return to *Pius*; who never omitted his Studies though he were advanced to ſuch an eminent Station. When he was a Youth indeed and not yet initiated into Divinity, he ſet out Poems, that were rather light, and jocular, than ſerious and grave: and yet ſometimes even in them he was elevated, nor did he want ſatyrical ſharpneſs amidſt his merry Conceits. There are Epigrams of his extant, that are full of Wit; and he is ſaid to have written about three thouſand Verſes, which were loſt moſt part of 'em at *Baſil*. The remainder of his life he wrote in Proſe onely, his grand Affairs rather inclining him to it; but he alſo loved a mixt Stile, more fit for Philoſophy. He ſet forth ſeveral Books of Dialogues about the Power of the Council at *Baſil*, about the Riſe of *Nile*, of Hunting, of Deſtiny, of God's Preſcience, and of the Hereſie in *Bohemia*. He left an imperfect Dialogue which he began againſt the *Turks* in defence of Chriſtianity. He digeſted his Epiſtles into their ſeveral occaſions and ſeaſons when they were written: and thoſe that he wrote when he was a Layman, a Clergy, a Biſhop, or Pope he put into diſtinct Tomes: Wherein he excites Kings, Princes, and others to engage in the War for Religion. There is an Epiſtle of his extant which he wrote to the *Turk*, to perſuade him from Mahometaniſm to the Chriſtian Faith. He alſo wrote a Book about the Life of Courtiers; as likewiſe a Grammar for *Ladiſlaus* the young King of *Hungary*. He farthermore compoſed thirty two Orations, exhorting Kings, Princes, and Commonwealths to Peace, and in defence of Religion, to promote the quiet and Concord of the whole World. He perfected the Hiſtory of *Bohemia*, but left that of *Auſtria* imperfect. And though he was upon a Hiſtory of all the remarkable Actions in his Time, yet he was never able, for his buſineſs, to finiſh it. He wrote twelve Books and began the thirteenth of things done by himſelf. His Stile was ſoft and eaſie, in which he made ſeveral excellent and pertinent Sermons. For he could readily move the Affections with handſom and graceful Expreſſions. He very aptly deſcribes ſituations of Places and Rivers, aſſuming various ways of Eloquence, as the occaſion required. He was well acquainted with Antiquity; nor could any Town be mention'd, but he could tell its riſe and ſituation: beſides that he would give an account in what Age famous Men flouriſh'd. He would ſometimes take notice of Mimicks for his pleaſure: and left many Sayings behind him, of which I thought fit to add ſome to this account of his Life: to wit: That the Divine Nature was better underſtood by Believing than by Diſputing. That all Sects though confirm'd by humane Authority yet wanted Reaſon. That the Chriſtian ought to be receiv'd upon its own credit, though it had never been back'd with Miracles. That there were three Perſons in the Godhead, not proved to be ſo by Reaſon, but by conſidering who ſaid ſo. That thoſe Men who pretended to meaſure the Heavens and the Earth were rather bold than certain what they did was right. That to find out the motion of the Stars had more pleaſure in it, than profit. That God's Friends enjoy'd both this Life and that to come. That without Vertue there was no true Joy. That as a covetous Man is never ſatisfied with Money, ſo a Learned Man ſhould not be with Knowledg; But that he who knew never ſo much, might yet find ſomewhat to be ſtudied. That common Men ſhould value Learning as Silver, Noblemen, as Gold, and Princes as Jewels. That good Phyſitians did not ſeek the Money but the health of the party diſeas'd. That a florid Speech did not move wiſe Men but Fools. That thoſe Laws are Sacred which reſtrain Licentiouſneſs. That the Laws had Power over the Commonalty, but were feeble to the greater ſort. That great Controverſies were decided by the Sword and not by the Laws. A Citizen ſhould look upon his Family as ſubject to the City, the City to his Country, his Country to the World, and the World to God. That the chief place with Kings was ſlippery. That as all Rivers run into the Sea, ſo do all Vices into Courts. That Flatterers draw Kings whither they pleaſe. That Kings hearken to none more eaſily than to Sycophants. That the tongue of a Flatterer was a King's greateſt Plague. That a King, who would truſt no body was good for nothing, and he that believed every body was no better. That it is neceſſary he that governs many ſhould himſelf be rul'd by many: That he deſerv'd not the name of a King who meaſur'd the Publick by his private advantage. That he who neglected holy Duties did not deſerve the Church Revenue, nor a King his Taxes, that did not conſtant Juſtice. He ſaid thoſe that went to Law were the Birds; the Court, the Field; the Judg, the Net; and the Lawyers, the Fowlers. That Men ought to be preſented to Dignities and not Dignities to the Men. That ſome Men had Offices and did not deſerve 'em, whilſt others deſerv'd 'em and had 'em not. That the burthen of a Pope was heavy, but he was happy who bore it ſtoutly. That an illiterate Biſhop was like an

Aſs. That ill Phyſicians kill'd the body and ignorant Prieſts the Soul. That a wandring Monk was the Devil's Bondſlave. That Virtue had enriched the Clergy, but Vice made 'em poor. That there was great reaſon for the prohibiting of Prieſts to marry, but greater for allowing it again. That no Treaſure was preſerrable to a faithful Friend. That Life was like a friend, and Envy like Death. That he cheriſhes an Enemy who pardons his Son too often. That a covetous Man never pleaſes any body but by his Death. That Mens faults are conceal'd by Liberality, and diſcover'd by Avarice. That it was a ſlaviſh Vice to tell Lyes. That the Uſe of Wine had augmented the Cares and the Diſtempers of mankind. That a Man ought to take as much Wine as would raiſe and not overwhelm his Soul. That Luſt did ſully and ſtain every age of Man, but quite extinguiſh old Age. That Gold it ſelf, and Jewels could not purchaſe Content. That it was pleaſant to the Good, but terrible to the Bad, to Die. That a noble Death was to be preferr'd before a diſhonourable Life in the Opinion of all Philoſophers.

And this is all or moſt that can be written of *Pius*: except I add, that he canonized St. *Catherine* of *Siena*; and laid up St. *Andrew*'s head, that was ſent from *Morea* to *Rome*, in St. *Peter*'s Church with great Veneration, and Proceſſions perform'd by the Clergy and People, in a Chappel built on purpoſe: after he had clear'd the Church in that place eſpecially, and removed the Sepulchres of ſome Popes and Cardinals, that took up too much room.

PAUL II.

PAUL the Second, formerly called *Peter Barbo*, a *Venetian*, (whoſe Father's Name was *Nicolas* and his Mother's *Polyxena*) Cardinal Prieſt of St. *Marks*, was made Pope *Auguſt* 30. 1664. being Pope *Eugenius*'s Nephew by his Siſter, he was juſt going as a Merchant to Sea (an Employment not ungentile among the *Venetians*, and not diſapproved of by *Solon*) and having carry'd his *Scritore*, and other Implements on Board, he heard that his Uncle *Gabriel Condelmerius* was choſen Pope. Whereupon he ſtay'd aſhore, and at the requeſt of his Friends and his elder Brother *Paul Barbo*, apply'd himſelf to his Book though he was pretty well in years, under the Diſcipline and tutelage of *James Ricionius*, who uſed to commend his Diligence. He had alſo other Maſters, but made no great proficiency, conſidering his Age; however he preferr'd 'em all when he came to be Pope (excepting only *Ricion*) to ſhew that it was none of their faults he was not made a Scholar. But *Paul Barbo* who was a ſtout and a wiſe Man, and knew his Brother's nature inclined him rather to eaſe than buſineſs, intreated *Eugenius* (whom he went to viſit at *Florence*) to ſend for *Peter*, and give him ſome Eccleſiaſtical preferment. He did ſo, and *Peter* was made firſt Arch-Deacon of *Bologna*, with which not long after he held the Biſhoprick of *Cervia* in *Commendam*, and was made a Protonotary; one of that Rank who receive the greateſt Fees. In this condition he lived for ſome years, till at laſt he was made a Cardinal

dinal at the ſame time with *Alouiſius*, a Phyſician of *Padua*, whom they afterward called *Patriarch* and *Chamberlain*: which was done at the requeſt of ſome Friends of *Eugenius*'s, who deſired to have a Man that might thwart *Alouiſius* upon occaſion. And indeed it happened afterward that they grew ſuch Enemies as never were known, by the inſinuations of others eſpecially whoſe intereſt it was to foment the Quarrel. For *Peter* was vexed that he ſhould be inferiour to any Man about *Eugenius*, ſince he was his Nephew, and of a *Patrician* Family in *Venice*. Upon this account he fell out moſt grievouſly with *Francis Condelmerius* the Vice-Chancellour, who was *Eugenius*'s Couſin-German: and when he died, he turn'd all his fury upon the Patriarch, though they two had been often ſeemingly reconcil'd by the interceſſion of Friends. Hereupon they were ſuch Enemies to one another in ſeveral Popes Reigns, that they did not ſpare each others either Eſtate, or honour: but mutually reviled each other in words, which I will not relate, leſt I ſhould ſeem to believe 'em. But when *Eugenius* was dead and *Nicolas* the Fifth in his place, he prevailed ſo far upon him by his kindneſs and flattery, that he not onely got the uppermoſt place of all his Nation in *Nicolas*'s Court, but by aſſiſtance of *Nicolas*'s Brother, did ſo animate him againſt *Alouiſius*, that he retrenched the Chamberlain's Office. For *Peter Barbo* was naturally fair ſpoken, and could feign good nature, when occaſion ſerv'd. But he was ſometimes ſo mean ſpirited, that when he could not obtain what he aimed at by praying, intreating, and requeſting, he would joyn tears to his Petitions to make them the ſooner believed. And therefore Pope *Pius* uſed ſometimes to call him the godly *Mary*, by way of joke. He alſo uſed this wheedle with *Caliſtus*, and perſuaded him to ſend *Alouiſius* with certain Gallies againſt the *Turk*; ſhewing him by Argument that ſuch a Perſon was fitteſt for ſuch an Expedition, becauſe he had not onely been a Commander formerly, but had ſtoutly defended the Church-patrimony againſt all its Enemies. *Peter* being at laſt deliver'd from that eye-ſore, made *Caliſtus* always ſo far of his Opinion, that he uſed no bodies advice more than his, as long as he lived. So that he eaſily obtain'd of the Pope whatever he ask'd either for himſelf or his Friends. For he was ready to do friendſhips and kindneſſes for any Man whom he undertook to protect or aſſiſt, not onely before the great Men in general, but with the Pope alſo. Yea ſuch was his humanity, that he would viſit his Domeſticks that were ſick (if they were Men of any account) and apply Remedies to 'em. For he had always at home Medicaments brought from *Venice*, with Oil, Treacle, or other things fit for Medicines; and ſome of theſe he often ſent to the ſick. He took care that the Wills of ſick People ſhould be intruſted with himſelf rather than any body, to diſpoſe of as he thought fit; for if any thing in them concern'd him, he preſently ſold part of the goods by Auction, and turn'd it into Money for his own uſe. He was pleaſed with the Converſation of ſome particular *Romans*, whom he often invited to Dine with him, for his diverſion: and was often very well pleaſed at the Wit, Mimickry, Gibes, Taunts and civil Affronts that came from *Priabiſius* and *Francis Malacaro*. By this means he engaged the reſpect of the Citizens of *Rome* and even the Courtiers alſo. But that he might not ſeem powerful at home onely, he endeavoured to make an Intereſt abroad too. For he went into *Campagna di Roma* to appeaſe certain People that were at variance about their Confines: and whilſt he endeavour'd to reconcile the Count *d'Averſa* to *Neapolio Urſin*, he had like to have been taken and put into Priſon for words which the Count reſented very highly. Wherefore he went away without his Errand, and from that time always ſhew'd himſelf *Averſa's* Enemy. After that *Calixtus* died, into whoſe room *Pius* ſucceeded, when he, endeavouring to change his Biſhoprick of *Vincenza* for that of *Padua*, by troubleſom importunities, and requeſts, ſo far provoked Pope *Pius* and the *Venetians*, that they turned out his Brother *Paul* from being a Senator, and interdicted him from enjoying any Church Benefice, if he would not alter his mind. At which the Man was ſo angry that he waited onely for a time to revenge himſelf, and was very invective in the mean while againſt thoſe that obſtructed his Deſign. But when *Pius* was dead, and he put in his place, he no ſooner came to the honour but immediately he turned out all the Clerks of the *Breves*, which *Pius* had put in, pretending they were either uſeleſs or unlearn'd: whether he had ſo promiſed, or that he hated *Pius*'s Acts and Decrees, no body can tell. For he ſtrip'd them of their goods and preferments without hearing what they could ſay for themſelves, whom he ought to have invited from all parts of the World with Encouragements and Rewards; that Colledge being then full of good and learned Men. For there were Men very skilful in the Laws both Divine and Humane: as likewiſe Poets and Orators, who were as great Ornaments to the Court, as that was honour to them; yet *Paul* turn'd 'em all out, though it had been order'd by Letters Apoſtolick and the Judges of the Pontifical Treaſury, that no Man who bought his place honeſtly ſhould be put out of it. And yet thoſe that were concern'd did what they could to change his mind: and among the reſt I entreated him that it might be referr'd to the publick Judges, whom they call *Auditors* of the *Rota*. At which he look'd upon me with a ſtern aſpect, and told me, " Do you (ſaid he) refer me to Judges, as if you were ignorant, that all the Laws were laid up in my Breaſt? I am reſolv'd (ſaid " he) let 'em all be gone whither they will I value 'em not; I am Pope, " and I may do as I pleaſe, either in reſcinding or approving the acts of " others. When we heard this ſevere Sentence, we travel'd about and ſtrove to rowl an unmovable ſtone, attending Perſons of the Court Day and Night, and vainly beſeeching every mean Servant to procure us admiſſion to the Pope. For we were rejected with reproachful Language, as if we had been excommunicated perſons, or Pagans. But notwithſtanding we attended twenty Nights together; becauſe he did nothing in a manner, but what he did by Night. At laſt I was ſo concern'd for the diſgrace which he put upon us, that (ſeeing I and my Aſſociates could not come to ſpeak with him) I was reſolv'd to ſend him a Letter, which I wrote to this purpoſe: " If you had power to ſtrip us of all we " had juſt and lawful right to, then it ought to be in our power to complain of the injury and diſgrace that you have done us. And therefore " ſeeing we are rejected by you with ſo much ignominy, we will appeal " to all the Kings and Princes far and near, and deſire 'em to convene a " Council, where you may be forced to ſhew the reaſon, why thou robbeſt us of our Livelihoods: When he had read the Letter, he ſent for *Platina*, as a Traytor; put him into Priſon and fetter'd him; and then ſent *Theodore*, Biſhop of *Treviſo*, to examine him. He ſoon concluded me guilty, for diſperſing Libels againſt *Paul*, and mentioning a Council. The firſt Objection I thus refuted; to wit, “That thoſe were called Libels, in which the Name of the Writer was conceal'd; but my name was at the bottom of the Letter, and therefore it was no Libel. And as to my making mention of a Council; That I did not think ſo great a fault, ſeeing the fundamentals of true Faith were eſtabliſhed by the holy Fathers in Synods, which had been ſown by our Saviour and his Diſciples, to the end, that all both great and ſmall might live peaceably together, and have right done them. And that by the Laws of *Rome*, not onely private but publick perſons were to give an account of their lives and how they diſcharged their Truſts. But when I could do no good this way, I was forced to be content and lie in maſſie Chains in the middle of Winter without any fire, and in an high Tower, which was expoſed to all the Winds that blew for four months together. At laſt *Paul* was tired with the importunity of *Francis Gonzaga* Cardinal of *Mantua*, and freed me from the noiſom Priſon, though I could hardly ſtand upon my Legs; and withal he bids me not ſtir from the City: For (ſays he) if you go into *India*, *Paul* will fetch you back. I obey'd his Commands, and ſtayed three years in the City, hoping to find ſome remedy for my misfortunes. But *Paul*, when he was Crown'd, according to cuſtom, remembring that the Canons Regular were formerly turn'd out of St. *Giovanni Laterano* by *Calixtus*, though *Eugenius* had placed 'em there; he recall'd 'em, to perform Divine Service apart from the Canons Secular. And becauſe he had a mind to extirpate the name of *Seculars* from that place, if any one of 'em died, he put no body into his place; or if any Benefice were vacant, he made them renounce their Canonſhips, and ſo tranſlated 'em to other Churches, till at length the profits of that Church being reduced into one body might ſatisfie the Canons Regular without any charge to him, he being before forc'd to keep 'em, they were ſo poor. But by this means *Paul* did much eſtrange the Citizens minds and affections from him: becauſe (as they ſaid) he gave thoſe Revenues which their Forefathers had ſetled (inſtead of Citizens) to foreiners. Nor was *Paul* content to do ſo, but he ſpoke to ſome Canons by themſelves, and threaten'd 'em till they quitted their Canonries. Some indeed contemn'd his Menaces, and expected an opportunity of vindicating their Liberty, which happen'd not till he was dead. It was now reported that the *Turks* had taken moſt part of *Epirus* and were coming into *Sclavonia*, he therefore ſent Nuncio's immediately to all Kings and Princes, to adviſe 'em, to compoſe their civil Diſcords, and make War againſt the *Turk* the common Enemy; but there was nothing done in it, becauſe they were up to the Ears in blood one among another: the *Germans* in one part, and the *English* in another, ſome of whom deſired a new King, others would retain their old one. And then the *Spaniſh* and *French* Princes, fear'd their King's Power, who attempted to bring them to a total ſubjection. But more than this, the King of *Bohemia's* Apoſtacy vexed *Paul* very much, in that he withdrew himſelf from the Church of Chriſt by little and little; and therefore he deſign'd to ſend the King of *Hungary* with an Army againſt him, if the War which he had undertaken againſt the *Turks*, would give him leiſure; and that he could compoſe the difference between the King and the Emperour. For when

Ladiſlaus King of *Hungary* and his Nephew was dead, without iſſue, the Emperour himſelf pretended a right to that Kingdom, which *Matthias* Son to the *Vaivod* was in poſſeſſion of. Thereupon *Paul* thought it beſt to defer that matter till another time, and apply'd himſelf to make up ſome breaches between certain Citizens of *Rome*. For there was a quarrel between *James* Son to *John Alberinus*, and *Felix* Nephew to *Anthony Capharellus*: And therefore he ſent for the two old Gentlemen, the Father and Uncle of 'em, and cauſed 'em to put in Sureties, that they would be friends, though they ſtood out a good while. But *James* Son to *Alberinus*, who could not endure that any Affront ſhould be put upon his Father, attempted ſoon after to murther *Anthony Capharellus*, and gave him ſeveral ſuch grievous wounds that he left him for dead. At which *Paul* was very angry, that *Alberinus*'s Son had broken his Father's Oath, and therefore he demoliſh'd their Houſes, confiſcated all their goods, and baniſhed them from the City, but he afterward recalled 'em and took 'em into favour, reſtoring all their goods; and made Peace between the parties after they had been both ſometime in Priſon. In the year 1465. *Alouiſius Patavinus* the Pope's Chamberlain dy'd. He was Cardinal Prieſt of St. *Laurence*, a very rich Man and prudent in the management of buſineſs, but not ſo wiſe towards his later end: in that he left moſt part of his Eſtate to his two Brothers who were call'd *Scarampi*. Men that were good Gentlemen, but yet not worthy of ſuch a vaſt fortune as he had got out of the Church Revenues (I know what People thought) whereupon *Paul*, who had given him free leave to make a Will and bequeath it to whom he pleaſed, ſeized upon the Eſtate, took the *Scarampi* who had fled and kept 'em (though in no ſcandalous place) till he had thoſe things brought him which were carried away to *Florence*; which done, he freed the *Scarampi*, to whom he gave a good ſhare, and was more liberal to the other Legatees than the Teſtator himſelf had been. And thus *Alouiſius*'s Eſtate, which he got with great induſtry and preſerv'd with greater, (as if in the ſtrength of ſo much Wealth he could have lived *Mathuſalem*'s Age) was ſeized and diſtributed by one with whom he had had ſo many quarrels, ill words and Animoſities, and before whom he would have choſen the *Turk* for his Executor. Nor was Divine Providence thus ſatisfied, but was pleaſed that his body alſo which was already buried ſhould be made a prey; for the Grave was open'd in the Night-time by thoſe to whom he had given the Revenues of St. *Laurence in Damaſo*, and he ſtript of a Ring and all his Cloths. But indeed *Paul*, when he knew of it, was very angry at them: About that time *Frederick* a fine Youth, Son to *Ferdinand*, who paſſing to *Millain*, to fetch *Francis Sforza's* Daughter, his Brother's Wife, to *Naples*, arrived at *Rome*, where he was met by the Nobility and *Rhoderick* the Vicechancelour, and kindly entertain'd by the Pope himſelf, who preſented him with a Roſe, which the Popes uſe to give to ſome Chriſtian Prince every year. *Ferdinand* now minding to puniſh thoſe of his own Kingdom, who had revolted from him when he was engaged with the *French*, ſent ſome Forces to ſet upon the Duke of *Sora*; but the Pope was deſirous to divert that War, and therefore ſent the Arch-Biſhop of *Millain* thither with all ſpeed, to pray him, that he would ſend thoſe Men to him (as he was obliged by his Tenure to do) becauſe he had a Deſign to deſtroy and take off the Count *Averſa's* Sons that had denied Obedience to the Church. For about that time the Count *Averſa* died, when *Paul* was made Pope ; and his body was brought to *Rome*, where it was buried in St. *Maries* the Great. The King, who was *Deiphobus's* bitter Enemy, as having been attempted by him with Plots, Poiſon and open force in the late War, gave Order to the Captains of his Army, cited to go where the Pope bad them, upon the firſt Summons. He had *Deiphobus* and *Francis* to him before and given 'em charge to clear the Rode of Thieves, (who uſed to rob Travellers at the very Gates of *Rome*, as it were) and that they ſhould reſtore *Caprarola* (a Town ſo called) to the Son of *Securanza*, the greateſt part of whoſe Eſtate they had poſſeſt themſelves of : they not onely refuſed to do either, but threaten'd him, and brag'd that they were Count *Averſa's* Sons, nor would they ſpare any one that gave 'em a provocation. *Paul* therefore having privately prepared all things that were neceſſary for a War, with aſſiſtance of the King's Forces, he ſurprized and ſubdued 'em within fourteen days after he attaqued 'em, reducing nine Caſtles under the juriſdiction of the Church: of which ſome were ſo well fortified both by Art and Nature, that they ſeemed impregnable. *Deiphobus* fearing leſt if he were taken he ſhould be ſent to the King, made his eſcape. But *Francis* his Brother and his Son were taken and kept five years in *Caſtel St. Angelo*, till upon the Creation of *Sixtus*, they were freed. And hence afterward aroſe great enmity betwen the Pope and the King; when *Ferdinand* demanded that *Paul* would remit the Tribute which he was to pay the Church, as a reward for his great merits; and would retrench or take off part of it for the future, ſeeing his Uncle enjoy'd the Kingdom of *Sicily*, though he paid Tribute for that and *Naples* too: and told him, That he ought to conſider his Deſerts and what might happen; for that he had always ſome Batalians in Arms, not more upon his own than upon the Pope's account as he found in the late War againſt the *Averſans*. *Paul* on the other hand recounted the Churches merits toward *Ferdinand*; and ſo they ſpun out the Debate a long time by theſe kind of wranglings, each of 'em ſeeking an opportunity to recover their Right. In the mean time the King was very cautious how he cauſed any new Commotions, becauſe he fear'd *James Picenninus's* Power, who had *Sulmona* in *Abruzzo*, and ſome other Towns in his poſſeſſion: whom afterward his Eather-in-law *Francis Sfortia* ſent to the King, who gave him his word that he ſhould come and go in ſafety when he pleaſed. But all things did not go according to *James's* expectation: for he was taken at *Naples* by *Ferdinand*, as ſo was his Son, and there thrown into Priſon, and not long after put to Death; though there was a falſe report given out, that he fell down in the Priſon and broke his Leg,as he was inconſiderately ſtaring through the Window to ſee the King's Galleys that came from *Iſchia*, with Victory over the *French*. There were who thought him ſtill alive : which I can never believe, becauſe there was no Man in all *Italy* more fit (if you look upon him as a Soldier) to ſubvert the Government of King *Ferdinand*. The Duke of *Millain's* Daughter, when ſhe heard of it, tarry'd by the way at *Siena*, as ſhe was going to her Husband at *Naples*, to perſuade the World, that her Father was not any way concern'd with *Ferdinand* in contriving the Death of *Picenninus*. But what People thought of it, we very well know. There were likewiſe ſome, that ſaid, the Pope knew of it before hand, becauſe at that time the Arch-Biſhop of *Millain* went often from the Pope to the King, and from the King back again: and becauſe *Paul* ſaid when he heard of his Impriſonment, that the Judg of Appeals was taken off. But that of *Virgil* is too true,

> *Neſcia mens hominum fati, ſortiſque futuræ.*
> Little do Men their future Fortune know.

For *Paul* could not have made uſe of any one ſo fit to curb *Ferdinand* as *James Picenninus* was, if he had been alive, when their Debate aroſe about the Tribute, for which a War was like to have been proclaimed. For when he had kept his Daughter-in-laws, and his Son's Wedding, and that thereby and by the death of *James* his Kingdom was ſetled, *Ferdinand* was inſtant with the Pope, that he would retrench the Tribute, and give him back certain Towns which belong'd to the Kingdom but were in poſſeſſion of the Church. Thereupon *Paul* ſent to him *Bartholomew Roverella,* Cardinal Prieſt of St. *Clements,* as Legate; who did in ſome meaſure ſatisfie the King. And at that time I believe, they both fear'd, leſt the Eclipſes of the Sun and Moon, which all Men were then aſtoniſh'd at, might portend ſome changes in Government. Nor can you think the heavenly Bodies have no efficacy; for the year after *Francis Sfortia* Duke of *Millain* and *Genoua* died. For He had gotten *Genoua* two years before being after a long War ſurrender'd by the Citizens. For they having rejected the *French* Government, which they had formerly courted, kill'd ſix thouſand of the *French* under the Noſe of King *Renatus*, who came with ſome Galleys well arm'd, to retrieve the City that had now revolted from the *French*. When *Francis Sfortia* Duke of *Millain* was dead, *Paul* ſummon'd the Cardinals to conſult what was to be done. They all concluded that he muſt ſend Letters and Nuncioes to all the Princes of *Italy*, and to all States, to perſwade 'em againſt innovations, and to maintain the eſtabliſh'd Peace: eſpecially at that unhapy time when we were ſo threatned by the *Turk* the common Enemy. And afterward he ſent the Biſhop of *Conca* to *Millain*, to perſuade that State, to have regard to the Allegiance they had ſworn to *Galeatius*, *Francis's* Son. At that time *Galeatius* was abſent in *France*, whither his Father had ſent him with an Army, to aſſiſt King *Lewis* againſt the Princes of his Kingdom, that acknowleg'd not his Authority. For *Francis* was bound by the League he made with him, when he poſſeſt himſelf of *Genoua*, to ſupply him with ſome Auxiliaries: Beſides the Allegiance which they had contracted obliged him to it: for he had married the Siſter of the Queen and the Duke of *Savoy*. When he heard of his Father's Death, he relinquiſh'd the War which he engaged in upon the King's account againſt the Duke of *Burgundy*, and going from *Lions* return'd with a ſmall Retinue and in a diſguiſe to his own Country, where he peaceably poſſeſs'd himſelf of his paternal inheritance by the help of his Mother who kept the people in Obedience till he came. But *Paul*, when the Affairs of *Italy* were thus compoſed, hearing that the *Rhodian* Souldiers were ready to ſtarve, he ſummon'd the Grand Maſter (and the great Clergymen) to *Rome*, to conſider of a Relief, whom after frequent meetings in St. *Peters*, died for grief and Age, and was buried in that Church, not far from St. *Andrew's* Chappel: in whoſe room

Charles Vrſin was choſen and ſent immediately to defend the Iſland. In the mean time when *Paul* heard that there were a great many Hereticks in *Tagliacozzo*, he having heard their cauſe ſeverely branded the Lord of the place, eight Men and ſix Women (which were caught and brought before him) being thoſe that were moſt obſtinate; but dealt more favourably with thoſe that confeſſed their Error and begg'd pardon. They were of thoſe perverſe ſort of Hereticks who ſay, there never was any true Vicar of Chriſt ſince St. *Peter*, but who had imitated Chriſt's Poverty. Then he encreaſed the number of Cardinals, and made ten at one time, of which number were *Francis* of *Savona* General of the Order of *Minors*, M. *Barbo*, Biſhop of *Vicenza*, whoſe Advice he always took in great Affairs, *Oliver* Arch-Biſhop of *Naples*, *Amicus* Biſhop of *Aquila*, and *Theodore Montferrat*; and the reſt were partly *French*, *Hungarians*, and *Engliſh*. Having thus augmented the Colledge, he apply'd himſelf wholly to ſettle the peace of *Italy*. For certain *Florentines*, who were baniſh'd by *Peter Medices*'s Faction in a civil Tumult (as *Deteſalvus Neronius*, *Angelus Accioiolus*, and *Nicolas Soderinus*) had perſuaded *Bartholomew* of *Bergamo*, who had a good Army of Horſe and Foot, to march into *Tuſcany*, and reſtore them and all the other baniſh'd Perſons to their Country, the *Venetians* under-hand lending their aſſiſtance; theſe ſeem'd to be able and to deſign to overthrow the State of *Italy* at firſt daſh. But *Galeatius* D. of *Milan* with the Forces of the King and of the *Florentine* people poſting himſelf in his way, he ſlacken'd his march and endeavour'd to get the better rather by protracting the War than by fighting. One fierce Battel however under the conduct of the Count of *Vrbin* they fought in the Territories of *Bologna* near a Town call'd *Ricardina*, where no doubt the *Bergameſe* had been utterly ruin'd, if *Galeatius* had been there; but he was gone to *Florence* a little before, to ſettle matters relating to the War. Thoſe that were preſent at this Battel ſay, that it was fought with the greateſt obſtinacy and the moſt numerous ſlaughters of any in our Age. But now the *Venetians* bethink themſelves for their own ſafety, rather than that of the *Bergameſe*, and though they ſent ſome Forces to his aſſiſtance, yet they ſought earneſtly a Peace, and referr'd the whole matter to the Pope; who alſo lying under great apprehenſions, if the King of *Naples* and Duke of *Millain* ſhould obtain a compleat Victory, urg'd on the Peace too. It was indeed the Opinion of many Men of Underſtanding, that the Pope was not altogether againſt *Bartholomew*'s Deſign, knowing that if an alteration were made in the Government of *Florence*, he might with greater facility make War upon *Ferdinand* whom he ſo hated, that he endeavour'd to raiſe him up more Enemies in *Italy*. Having hereupon called together the Embaſſadours of the ſeveral Princes, he mediated a Peace upon theſe terms, That each Party ſhould reſtore what they had taken in the War, That *Bartholomew* ſhould retire with his Forces into *Lombardy*, and That for the reſt the Conditions of that Peace ſhould be obſerved, which had been made at *Lodi* between *Francis Sforza* and the *Venetians*. One Point was yet to be Diſputed, Whether the Duke of *Savoy* and his Brother *Philip* ſhould be included in this Peace, who that year taking pay of the *Venetians*, had ravag'd *Galeatius*'s Country with their Forces. *Galeatius* denied to yield to it, profeſſing no Man ſhould ever be his Ally and Friend, who was an Enemy to the King of *France*.

But *Paul* with Promiſes and fair words made ſhift to get *Galeatius*'s Embaſſador to ſign it contrary to his Maſter's order, which ſo enrag'd *Galeatius* that he baniſh'd the ſaid Embaſſador, *Lorenzo da Peſaro,* and ſo infeſted the *Savoyards*, that they were forced to ſue for Peace, which by the interceſſion of the Queen of *France* and Dutcheſs of *Milan*, both Siſters to the Duke of *Savoy*, they at laſt procur'd, upon conditions propoſed by the King of *France*. Affairs thus ſetled, *Paul* had a little leiſure, and inſtituted ſumptuous Plays, and made noble Feaſts after the ancient manner for the people of *Rome*, *Vianeſius* of *Bologna*, Vice-Chamberlain to his Holineſs taking care of them. He propoſed eight Cloaks to be run for each day in the *Carneval*; old Men, middle-ag'd, young Men, nay *Jews*, took their fortune in the Races, as alſo did even Horſes, Mares, Aſſes, Buffals, to the incredible pleaſure of the Spectators. The Race was from *Domitian*'s Arch to St. *Mark's* Church, where the Pope himſelf ſtood to behold it with great ſatisfaction; who after the ſport was over gave to every Boy that ran (daub'd all over with Dirt) a Carlin [a piece of Money]. But *Paul* amidſt all this publick Jollity was on a ſudden ſeiz'd with a terrour unexpected; for news was brought him, that ſeveral young Men, whoſe Ring-leader was one *Callimaco*, had form'd a Plot againſt him; and the Narrative of it was no ſooner made out to him, when (he being already almoſt dead with fear) comes a Fellow that call'd himſelf the *Philoſopher*, a ſad Wretch and a baniſh'd Man, who (firſt begging pardon for his life and liberty to live in his Country) ſhams a Story upon him, that he ſaw in the Wood of *Velitre*, one *Luca Tozzo*, a Citizen of *Rome* but baniſh'd, with a great number of other *Banditi*, and that they were juſt coming upon him. This made *Paul* tremble for fear, apprehending that now, being attack'd both without and within, he ſhould ſurely be undone: and therefore he clapt up a great many both Citizens and Courtiers. *Vianeſius* gave him occaſions of fear, and ſo did any one about him who from a turn of Affairs could probably expect an augmentation either of Dignity or Eſtate. They broke up Mens Houſes without diſtinction, and dragg'd to Priſon any body they ſuſpected, and leſt I ſhould have miſs'd my ſhare in ſo great a Calamity, they came by Night and ſet a Guard about my Houſe, broke open the Windows and Doors, and ſeiz'd my Servant *Demetrius a Luccheſe*, who told them I ſup'd that Night with the Cardinal of *Mantua*; hither then they fly, and taking me in his Chamber, they bring me before *Paul*, who as ſoon as he ſaw me, *Are you too* (ſays he) *in the Plot with* Callimaco *againſt me?* But I, conſcious of my Innocence anſwer'd him ſo fearleſly, that no ſign of guilt appear'd in me. He being negligently dreſt and looking pale urg'd me ſtill, and ſometimes threatned me with Torments, and ſometimes with Death, unleſs I would confeſs. I ſeeing all places full of outrage and tumults, and fearing leſt we ſhould ſuffer miſchief, by reaſon of the terrour and rage that I ſaw had poſſeſs'd them, ſhew'd many rea"ſons, why I could not believe *Callimaco* would attempt nor ſo much as to think of any ſuch Deſign, being without cunning, an ill ſpeaker, unactive, regardleſs, without Wealth, wanting Forces, Dependents, Ammunition, and beſide being almoſt blind; more drouſie than *P. Lentulus* and more unfit for action, by means of his corpulence, than *L. Craſſus*. Moreover, he was no Citizen of *Rome*, that he ſhould concern himſelf for the Liberty of his Country; nor was he a Prelate,

“ that upon the taking off of *Paul*, he ſhould expect the Papacy. What
“ could *Callimaco* do? What dare he do? Was he good either at Diſ-
“ courſe or Action? Had he liſted any Men to aſſiſt him in bringing
“ about ſo important a Deſign; unleſs you will make *Glaucus* and *Petreius*,
“ the Companions of his flight, to be other *Gabinii* and *Statilii*. At this *Paul* turns him to *Vianeſius*, and looking ſternly upon me, (ſays he) this Man is to be forced with the Rack to confeſs the truth; for he underſtands the true Art of Plotting. Would to God *Paul* had dealt more conſiderately with me, he had not then apply'd tortures to me. For when the Truth is to be gathered from circumſtances, the matter of fact not being ſufficiently made out, then thoſe Actions are to be taken notice of that either preceded or enſued upon the Enterpriſe; the life of the Complotter is to be conſidered and his way of living, his Ambition and greedineſs, either of wealth or honour, and what he had before talk'd or written or done, that look'd that way. But *Paul* without regard had to any of theſe, clap'd us all up in Jail: And yet taking advice of ſome who knew the thing well enough, and knew that *Luca Tozzo* had never departed a foot from the City of *Naples*, to create ſo great a commotion with ſuch danger to himſelf, he recall'd a Proclamation he had publiſhed three days before, wherein he had propoſed rewards to them that ſhould bring his Traitor *Luca* to him either alive or dead, not diſcharging however the *Quadratii*, whom he had ſeiz'd and tortur'd upon ſuſpicion of the ſame. He deſign'd it ſhould be thought that there was ſomething in it yet undiſcover'd, leſt he ſhould be charg'd with levity. But *Paul* being rid of that fear, begins to think of us; and ſends into the Caſtle *Vianeſius*, *John Franciſco*, *Sanga* of *Chiozza* and one of his Guard, to force us with any kind of torture to confeſs what we knew nothing of. The firſt and ſecond day many were put to the Rack, of whom a great part died of their pains under the hands of the Executioner. You would have taken Caſtle St. *Angelo* for *Phalaris* his Bull, the hollow Vault did ſo reſound with the cries of thoſe miſerable young Men. *Lucidus* as innocent a Man as any in the World ſuffer'd the Rack, as did *Marſus Demetrius* and *Auguſtinus Campanus* a hopeful young Man and an honour to his Age for Wit and Learning, who I think died ſoon after of pain and anguiſh. The Tormenters were yet not ſatisfied, though weary, having tortur'd twenty Men in thoſe two days, but ſent for me to take my turn too. The Executioners ſet themſelves to their buſineſs, the Inſtruments of Torture were ready, I was ſtript, torn and uſed like a Murtherer or a Thief; whilſt *Vianeſius* ſat like another *Minos* upon a Tapeſtry-Seat, as if he had been at a Wedding or rather at *Atreus* and *Tantalus*'s Feaſt; a Man (I ſay) in Holy Orders whom the Eccleſiaſtical Canons forbid to be Inquiſitors by Torture upon Lay-men, leſt if Death follow, as it often does, they ſhould become Irregular (as they term it) and profane. And to add to my miſery, while wretched I hung on the Rack in torment, he play'd with a Jewel that *Sanga* had, asking him of what Girl he had got that Love-token; and then the Love-talk being over, he turns to me and bids me give him a full Narrative of the Conſpiracy or rather Sham-Plot contrived by *Callimaco*, and to tell him why *Pomponio* writing to me from *Venice* ſhould call me Holy Father? What, ſays he, the Conſpirators had agreed to make you Pope? Beſide he examin'd me whether I had not ſent Letters by *Pomponio* to the

Emperor

Emperour or any other Chriſtian Prince in order to raiſe a Schiſm or procure a Council? I anſwer'd, that I never was a party in the Counſels of *Callimaco*, for there was an old grudg between us; that I knew not why *Pomponio* ſhould call me Holy Father, himſelf could beſt tell, who, he ſaid, was to be brought Priſoner quickly; as for the Popedom, they need not trouble their heads about me, I having been always content with a private life; that I never ſent any Letter to the Emperour, or made uſe of *Pomponio* to that purpoſe, which alſo might be known from him. At laſt having a little pleaſed but not ſatisfied himſelf with my Tortures, he ordered me to be let down, that I might undergo torments much greater in the Evening. I was carried half dead into my Chamber, but not long after, the Inquiſitors having din'd, and drunk luſtily, I was fetch'd again, and *Lorenzo* Arch-Biſhop of *Spalato* was there. They ask'd me then what diſcourſe it was that I had with *Sigiſmund Malateſta* who was then in the City? I ſaid, the diſcourſe we had was onely concerning the ancient and modern Learning, way of fighting, and famous Men, or ſuch like things as are the common ſubjects of talk. *Vianeſius* then threatned me bitterly with yet greater tortures, unleſs I would confeſs the truth, and told me he was to come again the next day, adviſing me in the mean time to conſider where I was and whom I had to do withal. So I was carried back to my Bed-chamber, where I was ſeized with ſuch extream pain, that I had rather have died than endur'd, all the aches of my ſhaken and batter'd limbs coming afreſh upon me. But I was not a little refreſh'd by the kindneſs of *Angelo Bufalo* a Knight of *Rome*, who had been comitted to Priſon a year before by *Paul*, becauſe his Son *Marcellus* had killed *Francis Cappocio*, which was charged to be done by his inſtigation. This *Angelo* and his Nephew *Francis* being my Chamber-fellows did with their own hands aſſiſt me both with Food and Phyſic, otherwiſe I had died of pain and want: Two days after *Paul's* Phyſician, *Chriſtopher* of *Verona*, came to me from the Pope and bad me have a good heart and hope well of him, and I ſhould ſoon have my liberty. I asked him in how long time it might be expected? Nay (ſays he frankly in the hearing of every one) not ſo very ſoon neither; leſt the Pope ſhould be charg'd with levity and cruelty for having with ſo much noiſe taken and tortur'd ſo many Men, and then letting them go immediately as innocent. But *Paul* left not the matter ſo, but altering his mind upon a running report, accuſes thoſe now of Hereſie whom he had before charged with Plotting of Treaſon. *Pomponio* was at this time brought from *Venice* like another *Jugurtha*, in bonds to be tried, a downright honeſt Man and guilty neither of the Plot nor any other ill thing. Being examined why he changed the names of the Men he wrote to, he anſwer'd boldly as his humour was, that it did not concern either his Judges or the Pope, under what name he pleaſed to go, ſo that he had no naughty end in it; for that out of reſpect to Antiquity he was wont to make uſe of many antient names, as ſpurs to edge on the modern Youth to a virtuous Emulation. *Lucillus* alſo who led a very reſerv'd life in the Country near *Rome*, was fetch'd up before them for Treaſon, becauſe in a Letter of his to *Campanus* which they had intercepted, he had faln foul upon ſome body, under the name of *Heliogabalus*, for his Love-tricks, but with ſuch conceal'd expreſſions, that no one who was not conſcious would take it to himſelf. Our diligent Paſtor, *Vianeſius*, frequently viſiting us with tortures, and having tormented *Petreius* the Companion of *Callimaco* (whom they had taken endeavouring to make his eſcape, and he confeſſing nothing, but ſaying that the drunken talk of *Callimaco* was not to be regarded) caſting his eyes about as if he fear'd we ſhould have got Wings like *Dædalus* and fled out of our Priſon, he projected the making a dungeon for us and ſet Workmen about it. When it was finiſhed he put into it *Franciſco Anguillara*, *Gattaluſco*, *Franciſco Alviano*, and *Giaiomo Ptolemeo* who had already pin'd away four years in Priſon. But not a word yet could we hear of our freedom. At this time the Emperor came to *Rome*, (according to a Vow he had made) with a ſplendid Attendance, whom *Paul* entertain'd with great magnificence, at the expence of eighteen thouſand Ducats. I ſaw them from the Caſtle returning under the ſame Canopy from the *Laterean* with a noble retinue; and *Paul* ſtood ſtill upon the Bridg, while the Emperor made ſeveral Knights. The Emperor departing, and *Paul* by having quarter'd the greateſt part of his Forces both Horſe and Foot in the City, being rid of the fear he had leſt the People ſhould have raiſed tumults upon him when the Emperor was there, after we had lain ten months in Jail, he comes to the Caſtle himſelf, and that it might ſeem, that he made ſo great ado not without cauſe, he charged us with many things, but eſpecially that we had diſputed concerning the Immortality of the Soul, and that we held the Opinion of *Plato*, which S. *Auguſtin* ſays is very like to the Chriſtian Faith. 'Tis with good reaſon (ſays the Saint) that *Cicero* makes *Plato* a God among the Philoſophers, who certainly out-went them all for Wit and Underſtanding: and with him therefore I choſe to diſpute, becauſe he reaſons concerning the laſt end of Man and the Divine Nature better than any of the reſt. But, ſays *Paul*, By diſputing you call'd the Being of a God into queſtion. Now this was no more than may be objected to all both Divines and Philoſophers of our times, who for Diſcourſe ſake, and that the truth may appear, do frequently make a queſtion of the Beings of Souls and of God, and of all ſeparate Intelligences. Beſides, as S. *Auſtin* ſays, thoſe are Heretics, who defend with earneſtneſs any falſe Opinion they have taken up. We never declin'd ſound Diſcipline, which (as *Leo* ſays) is wont to be done by the Ringleaders of Error, who are deſervedly called Heretics, according to S. *Jerom*, for maintaining Opinions in oppoſition to the Church. I could give you an Account of my Life from my youth till this time, ever ſince I came to years of underſtanding. No ill action can be charg'd upon me, no theft, no pilfering, no ſacriledg, no cheat upon the publick, no murther, no rapine, nor Simony. I have lived like a Chriſtian, confeſs'd and receiv'd the Communion at leaſt once a year. Nothing ever fell from my mouth againſt the Faith or reliſhing of Hereſie. I follow'd neither *Simoniacs*, the *Carpocratiani*, *Ophilæ*, *Severiani*, *Alogii*, *Paulini*, *Manichees*, *Macedoniani*, nor any other heretical faction. But beſide, *Paul* accuſed us as too great admirers of Pagan Antiquities, of which no Man could be more fond than himſelf, for he procur'd all the Statues of the Antients that he could throughout the City, and plac'd them in his Houſe which he had built near the *Campidoglio*; among the reſt he took away a Porpyhry Tomb of S. *Conſtantia* out of the Church of S. *Agnes*, maugre the denial of the Monks of the place, who yet after *Paul's* death, got it again of Pope *Sixtus*. Beſide, after the old Heathen awy, he coin'd an infinite number of Medals with his own Image, of Gold, Silver and Braſs, and laid them in the foundations of his Houſe; herein imitating rather the antient *Paynims*, than S. *Peter*, *Anacletus* or *Linus*. Upon a debate of our matter before the Court-Biſhops and two Friers, one a *Franciſcan*, the other a *Dominican*, they agreed all, that nothing could be charged upon us that ſavour'd of Hereſie. But *Paul* coming to the Caſtle, and having on purpoſe excluded *Franciſco* who favour'd us, that ſo *Leonardo* our Accuſer might ſpeak the more freely, he repeated what he had ſaid the day but one before; and then ask'd the Opinion of thoſe that were preſent, who though they ſpoke ſomewhat to pleaſe the Pope, yet they made a light buſineſs of it, and endeavour'd to perſuade him into a milder temper. Amongſt them all *Lelio del Val*, a Citizen of *Rome* and an Advocate in the Conſiſtory, defended our Cauſe very generouſly. He confuted all that *Leonard* had ſaid and what the other Advocate had aſſerted; but as they were arguing, mention chanc'd to be made of the *Academy*, which was no ſooner ſaid, but *M. Barbo* Cardinal of S. *Mark*, cries out that we were not *Academicks*, but a ſcandal to the name. Now I cannot think how we ſhould bring any reproach to it at all: we were neither thieves, nor pilferers, nor incendiaries, nor prodigal fools; we were ſectators of the old *Academy*, deſpiſing the new, as eſtabliſhing nothing certain upon which Science might be built; but *Paul* would not have the *Academy* ſo much as mention'd under pain of being pronounc'd Heretical, which was a reflection upon good old *Plato* and let him look to it. *Paul* lov'd in every kind of learning to be thought an acute and ſkilful Man; he deſir'd too to go for a facetious Perſon, ſo that he derided and contemn'd almoſt all Men. He after a ſcornful manner ask'd *Pomponio* what was the name his Parents gave him? who anſwer'd he was *Binomius* [i. e. had two names] which *Paul* not underſtanding, perſiſted to ask his name ſtill. At laſt turning to me, he fell into a rage to ſuch a degree that, beſide charging me with the plot, Hereſie and Treaſon, of which I had cleared my ſelf; he upbraided me too with Ingratitude againſt ſo kind a Friend as he had been to me: If it be a kindneſs for a Man to be turn'd out of that which he has bought with his Mony without telling any reaſon; if to be impriſon'd, tormented, diſgrac'd and ſlander'd be a kindneſs, then *Paul* was my ſpecial bountiful Friend, and I was very ungrateful, who unmindful of ſuch Courteſies, did not depart the City in obedience to his Command, when I had been ſo often deceiv'd by his Promiſes. He went away threatning us and kept us in Priſon a whole year as I believe he had ſworn he would, when he took us firſt and clap'd us up; and he was not willing to ſeem forſworn. At length however we were enlarg'd ſo far as to have the liberty of his own Houſe, but not to ſtir a foot out of it; and ſoon after we had the freedom of the *Vatican*, and in the end, being wearied with the Interceſſions of the Cardinals, he ſet us free. Not long after I was ſent for by *Lewis Gonzaga* Duke of *Mantua* to the Baths, in order to cure my right Arm which had contracted a great indiſpoſition during my impriſonment; which *Paul* forbad me at firſt to do; promiſing to do great things for me in a little time; but I went and return'd, Cardinal *Beſſarion* a Perſon of great wit, and learning, being Security for my coming back. *Paul* commended me that I was as good as my word, and would often boaſt what a kindneſs he had for me, and what great things he would do for me as ſoon as

Borſius d'Eſte was gone, who coming to the City with a great Equipage was very magnificently and ſplendidly received by him. The ſame he had often promiſed to the Ambaſſadours of *Venice* and *Milan*, who had ſpoken on my behalf. For two years I was led on or rather beguil'd with theſe hopes, till at length I reſolv'd to go with the Cardinal of *Mantua* to *Bononia*, of which he was Legat. But *Paul* forbad me, and (after his jeſting manner) ſaid I had wit enough already, and wanted Wealth rather than Learning. And now while I was in expectation that I ſhould be relieved after ſo many troubles and afflictions, behold the Pope dies of an Appoplexy about two hours within night, being alone in his Chamber, having been well that day and held a Conſiſtory. His death happened *July* 28. 1471. in the ſixth year and tenth month of his Pontificate. As to his Perſonage, it was Majeſtic and becoming a Pope; for he was ſo portly and tall, that he was eaſily diſtinguiſhable from the reſt, when at Maſs; In his dreſs though he was not curious, yet he was not reputed negligent. Nay, 'tis ſaid that when he was to appear in public, he would uſe to paint his face. In his Pontifical Veſtments he outwent all his Predeceſſors, eſpecially in his *Regno* or Mitre, upon which he laid out a great deal of Mony in purchaſing at vaſt rates, Diamonds, Sapphyrs, Emeralds, Chryſoliths, Jaſpers, Unions, and all manner of precious ſtones, wherewith adorn'd like another *Aaron* he would appear abroad ſomewhat more auguſt than a Man, delighting to be ſeen and admir'd by every one. To this purpoſe ſometimes by deferring ſome uſual Solemnities he would keep Strangers in Town, that ſo he might be view'd by greater numbers. But leſt he alone ſhould ſeem to differ from the reſt, he made a Decree that none but Cardinals, ſhould under a Penalty wear red Caps; to whom he had in the firſt year of his Popedom given Cloth of that colour, to make Horſe-Cloths or Mule-Cloths of when they rode. He was alſo about to order that Cardinals Caps ſhould be of Silk Scarlet; but ſome Perſons hindred it by telling him well, that the Eccleſiaſtical Pomp was rather to be diminiſhed than increaſed to the detriment of the Chriſtian Religion. Before he was made Pope, he uſed to give out, that if ever he came to that good fortune, he would give each Cardinal a Caſtle in the Country, where they might retire conveniently to avoid the Summer-heats of the City: but when he was once got into the Chair, he thought of nothing leſs. However he endeavour'd by his Authority and by force too to augment the Power of the Papacy: For he ſent the Biſhop of *Tricarico* into *France* to hear the Cauſe of quarrel between the Duke of *Burgundy* and the People of *Liege*, and upon their reconciliation, to take off the Interdict laid upon the *Liegeois* for wrongfully expelling their Biſhop; but while the Legat took great pains to ſubject all matters to the Pope's Judgment, he and their Biſhop too were clapt up by the *Liegeois*. Hereupon the Duke of *Burgundy* makes Peace with the *French* King (with whom he was before at War) and with his aid, gives thoſe of *Liege* ſeveral great defeats, and at length ſacks their City and ſets free the impriſon'd Biſhops: Moreover, *Paul* hearing of the Apoſtaſie of the King of *Bohemia*, he by his Legat, *Lorenzo Roverella* Biſhop of *Ferrara*, raiſed the *Hungarians* and *Germans* upon him, ſo that he had certainly cut off both the King *George* and his Progeny, and utterly rooted out the Heretics, had not the *Polanders*, who laid claim to that Kingdom, held *Matthias* King of *Hungary* employ'd in War, leſt he ſhould have made himſelf Maſter of it. He undertook two Wars of no great moment in *Italy*, which being not openly declared, but begun by picquering Parties, he afterwards abandon'd. For firſt he attempted the ſeizing the Signeury of *Tolſa* by cunning wiles, which failing, with open force, under the conduct of *Vianeſius* he ſet upon it and beſieged it; but the King's Army (in which the *Urſini* ſerv'd) returning from the War they had now ended with *Bartholomew* of *Bergamo*, on a ſudden he raiſed the Siege in great diſorder, though the Enemy was not within ſixty miles of the place; ſo that after a long contention in which he had extreamly diſobliged and almoſt enrag'd the *Urſini* againſt him, he was fain to purchaſe *Tolſa* for ſeventeen thouſand Ducats of Gold, for fear of that potent Family who were related to the Lords of the place. After the ſame manner he ſet upon *Robert Malateſta* Son of *Sigiſmund*, when having taken the Suburbs of *Rimini* by a Stratagem, and for ſometime having beſieged the City, *Lorenzo* Arch-Biſhop of *Spalato* being the chief in the Enterpriſe, *Frederick* D. of *Urbin* came upon him with the King's Forces and thoſe of the *Florentines*, who forc'd him to raiſe his Siege, and foil'd his Army ſhamefully, ſo that he accepted of a Peace upon very diſhonourable terms. *Lorenzo* charg'd the reaſon of the loſs of *Rimini* upon the niggardlineſs of his pay to the Soldiers; and to the great ſlowneſs of his Reſolution, while through ignorance in affairs of that nature, he deliberated long about actions which ſhould be done in a moment. *Paul* was indeed ſo awkard at buſineſs, that, except he were driven to it, he would not enter upon any Affair however plain and unencumbred, nor when begun would he bring it to perfection. This humour of his, he was wont to boaſt, had done him great ſervice in many concerns, whereas (to ſpeak truth) it had been very miſchievous both to himſelf and the Church of *Rome*. He yet was very diligent in getting Mony, ſo that he generally intruſted the diſpoſal of Biſhopricks and Benefices to ſuch Courtiers, whoſe Places being ſaleable, nothing could be beſtowed without a Preſent. All Offices indeed in his time were ſet to ſale, whereby it came to paſs, that he who had a mind to a Biſhoprick or Benefice, would purchaſe of him at a good rate ſome other Office, and ſo get what he would have, in ſpight of any other Candidates, who could pretend upon the ſcore of either Learning or good Life to be capable of whatſoever honour or preferment. Beſide when Biſhopricks were vacant, he would remove the more worthy (as he call'd them) to the more wealthy Seat, by theſe Tranſlations raiſing vaſt Sums of Mony, becauſe more Annates became due at the ſame time. He alſo allow'd the purchaſing of Salaries. With theſe Moneys he would ſometimes be very liberal, giving exhibitions to the poorer Cardinals and Biſhops, and to Princes or Noblemen that were driven out of their Country, and relieving poor Maidens, Widows and ſick People. He took great care too, that Corn and all manner of Victuals ſhould be afforded cheaper at *Rome* than formerly. He was at the charge of ſeveral magnificent Buildings near Saint *Mark*'s and in the *Vatican*. An inſtance of his Munificence was, the Hunting which with great charge he cauſed to be repreſented in the *Campo di Merula*, for the entertainment of the Duke of *Ferrara*: The management of which was committed to his Nephew by his Siſter, whom he had made Cardinal of S. *Lucia*, and at the ſame time conferred the like honour of a Cardinal on *Baptiſta Zeno* his other Nephew. It was a hard thing to gain acceſs to him, conſidering he would ſleep in the day-time and be awake in the night looking over his Jewels and precious Stones; and if after long waiting you came into his preſence, you might hear him indeed, but your ſelf could not be heard; he was ſo very talkative. He was moroſe and peeviſh as well to his Courtiers as Strangers, and would often alter his mind from what he had promiſed. He had a great mind to be thought a politick Man, and would therefore give very ambiguous anſwers; ſo that he continued not long his Friendſhips with any Princes or Commonwealths, himſelf having ſeveral different Intereſts. He lov'd to have great variety of Diſhes at his Table, and generally eat of the worſt; but would be clamorous if what he uſed to like were not provided. He drank often, but his Wine was ſmall and diluted with Water. He loved Melons, Crabs, Sweetmeats, Fiſh and Bacon; which odd kind of Diet, I believe, cauſed the Appoplexy of which he died; for the day before his death he had eat two very large Melons. He was reputed a juſt and yet a Merciful Man; endeavouring to amend even Thieves, Murderers, Traitors and perjur'd Villains, by tedious Impriſonment. But he was a great Enemy and Deſpiſer of Human Learning, branding thoſe for Heretics that gave their minds to it: And diſſuading the People of *Rome* from putting their Children to be brought up to it, telling them that it was enough if they had learn'd to write and read. He was known to be ill-condition'd and inexorable to Petitioners, not onely denying, but reproaching and abuſing them; but yet he would make a ſhew of doing leſs than he would do. Laſtly, one thing he was highly to be commended for, that he kept no ill Men about him; but contain'd his Family and all his Domeſtics in their due bounds; that their pride and inſolence might not procure him the hate of the great Men and People of *Rome*.

The End of the Lives of the POPES,

Written by *B. Platina*.

A CON-

A CONTINUATION OF THE Lives of the Popes.

SIXTUS IV.

FRANCIS *della Rovere*, born the 21. of *July*, *Anno* 1414. at *Celle*, a Village near *Savona*, a City under the Dominion of the Republick of *Genoua*, was created Pope on the 9th. of *Auguſt*, 1471. he was (as ſome write) the Son of a Fiſherman: tho *Onofrio Panvinio* in the Hiſtory of his Life deduces his Original from a noble, and ancient Extraction of the *Longobards*; and reports that *Simon della Rovere*, in the year of our Lord 700. tranſplanting himſelf from *Piemont* to *Savona*, was the firſt of that Family, from whom this *Sixtus* IV. deſcended. His Father's name was *Leonard*, a perſon of Authority and Reputation, having managed many publick Offices for the Service of his Country. This *Francis della Rovere* was in the time of his infancy dedicated by the Vow of his Mother to the Order of S. *Francis*, and at the age of nine years was put into a Convent, and committed to the charge of *John Pinarolo* a Frier of that Society; by whom he was inſtructed in the Rules of the *Franciſcan* Order, and in the firſt Rudiments of Grammar: and being of good Wit and Capacity, he became Maſter of the *Ciceronian* Stile and Language. He afterwards went to *Cheri*, where he ſtudied Logick, and thence travelled to *Pavia* and *Bologna*, where he became a great proficient in Philoſophy and Divinity. Being of twenty years of age, he diſputed with great acuteneſs and ſubtilty in the Schools at *Geneva*; and afterwards taking the degree of Doctor in *Padua* he was made Reader of the Divinity and Philoſophy Lectures at *Padoua*, *Pavia*, *Siena*, and other parts in *Italy*. In proceſs of time his abilities being made known, he was eſteemed and courted by all; and having many Scholars and admirers, amongſt which Cardinal *Beſſarion* was one, he gained a great eſteem and intereſt in all Courts of *Europe*; ſo that in time he was conſtituted General of his Order, Procurator of the Court at *Rome*, and Vicar General of all *Italy*. He was highly eſteemed by *Pius* the ſecond, and *Paul* the ſecond being a great admirer of his abilities and Learning, did at the inſtance and perſuaſion of the Cardinals *Beſſarion* and *Francis de Gonzaga*, admit him, with ſeven others to the order of Cardinals, without any motion or addreſs from himſelf, or ſo much as his own knowledg, being then at *Pavia*, with deſign to go for *Venice*. On this occaſion coming to *Rome* he was created Cardinal the 17. of *September*, 1467. and being by the beneficence, and favour of the Church aſſiſted with many large Contributions, he was enabled to repair the Palace of S. *Peter ad Vincola*, where he formed, and kept his Court after the Rules and Cuſtoms of a Convent. The exerciſe of this eminent Office, and his attendance on the Government of the Church, could not ſo diſtract, or divert his mind from his Studies; but that he found time to write many Tractates, and Treatiſes in Divinity, namely, a Tract of the Blood of Jeſus Chriſt; of the Conception of the Virgin *Mary*, *de futuris contingentibus*; and of the Power of God, againſt the Opinion of a certain Carmelite Frier, who held, that God could not by his Omnipotent Power, ſave any perſon whom he had predeſtinated to damnation. He alſo wrote a Tractate reconciling the opinions of *Aquinas* and *Scotus*, ſhewing that they did not differ in ſubſtance, or reallity, but in words, or ways of expreſſion. All which procured him ſuch fame and credit, that *Paul* the ſecond dying ſuddenly on the 28th. of *July*, he was in a Conclave of ſeven and twenty Cardinals elected Pope on the 9th. of *Auguſt*, 1471.

After his Election he was Crowned the 24th. of *September* following, after which he eſteemed it his firſt buſineſs to reconcile the Diſcords amongſt Chriſtian Princes, and to turn the hatred they conceived one againſt the other, upon their common enemy the Turk. To which end *Beſſarion* was Commiſſionated to be his Legat to *Lewis* XI. of *France*, *Roderigo Borgia* Vice-Chancellor to go his Legat into *Spain*, *Marco Barbo* into *Germany* and *Hungary*, and *Oliviere Caraſa* to *Venice*, and the Knights of *Rhodes*; to every of which Legats he aſſigned a Penſion of 500 Crowns in Gold *per* Month, but the ſucceſs anſwered not the charge, all the Legats returning without any effect, or fruit of their Negotiations. For *Lewis* the 11th. had already levied War againſt *Charles* of *Burgundy*, and the Duke of *Brittany*. *Ferdinand* King of *Aragon* made War on the King of *Portugal* to decide the diſpute between them for the Kingdom of *Caſtile*. The Kings of *Hungary* and *Poland* were in actual Wars, fighting for the Kingdom of *Bohemia*; ſo that the Oratorical perſuaſions of theſe Miniſters of Peace, were not able to prevail on the incenſed, and reſolved minds of theſe warlike Princes. And being now fixed and eſtabliſhed in his Apoſtolical Seat, he received with a ſerenity of countenance, and chearful affability, the Addreſſes and Congratulations which Forein Princes by their reſpective Miniſters made to him at his firſt promotion to the Papal Dignity: which Ceremony being performed, he publiſhed and declared two perſons to be by him created Cardinals, namely, *Peter Riario*, and *Julian della Rovere*; the firſt was of a mean Family at *Savona*, and educated by this *Sixtus* in the *Franciſan* Order, and made Biſhop of *Treviſi*: The other was Son of his Brother *Raphael della Rovere*, whom he had conſtituted Biſhop of *Carpentras*. The firſt took the Title of *S. Sixtus*, and the other of *S. Peter ad Vincola*, who was afterwards Pope *Julian* the ſecond.

And ſuch was the affection which this Pope indulged to his own natural Relations, that he never refuſed to grant their demands, or yield to the moſt exhorbitant of their deſires; for which he was much blamed, and hardly cenſured, with many reflections on his conduct and wiſdom:

for he had enriched this *Peter Riario* with ſeveral fat Benefices, on the Revenue of which he might have lived with ſplendor, and greatneſs. But ſo exorbitant were his expences, that in the ſpace of two years only he ſpent two hundred thouſand Crowns of Gold, leaving a debt of ſeventy thouſand Crowns, with three hundred pounds weight of wrought Plate; and then being diſcontented with diſappointments of his ambitious deſires, he died at 28 years of age, and was buried in the Church of the holy Apoſtles. His Brother *Jeronimo*, tho (as we have ſaid) of mean extraction, was yet by the favour of this Pope made Prince of *Imola*, and *Forli*, and married to *Catherine* natural Daughter of *Galeazzo* Duke of *Milan*; And on this account and reaſon *Aſcanius* the Son of *Galeazzo* was created Cardinal. And farther did the affection of this Pope extend towards his Nephews, and Relations, that he married *Leonard* his Brothers Son to the natural Daughter of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, and ordained him Governour of *Rome*: and he dying ſoon after, his place was beſtowed on *John* the Brother of *Cardinal Julian*, with augmentation of the Signiories of *Sora* and *Senegaglia*; on the reputation of which he married *Jane* the Daughter of *Frederick* Duke of *Urbin*, by whom he had one Son called *Franciſco Maria*, who ſucceeded in the Dukedom of *Urbin* after his Uncle *Guy Ubald*, who died without Iſſue. This Pope moreover created his Brother *Chriſtopher*, and *Domenico della Rovere* Cardinals, as alſo *Jeronimo Baſſo* his Siſters Son, *Raphael Sanſon*, a youth of 17 years of age, Son of his Siſter the Wife of *Peter Riario*, alſo *Schiaſinato* of *Milan*, who was his Chancellor, and Biſhop of *Parma*; likewiſe *John Baptiſta Cibo* of *Genoua*, who afterwards ſucceeded in the Popedom, under the name of *Innocent* VIII. And beſides theſe he raiſed many others to the number of 34, whom he ſucceſſively created Cardinals during his Reign.

And ſo free and liberal was *Sixtus* in his Promotions and Gifts; that nothing was asked of him which he denied; which liberality gave occaſion oftentimes to many Diſputes, when the free nature of the Pope had given Donations to three or four perſons of the ſame thing: to prevent which for the future, the Privy Signet was given to *John de Montemirabile*, a ſevere and reſerved perſon, and one well practiſed in the Affairs of the Court, who keeping an account of all matters which had paſſed the Seal, vacated ſuch Donations as were not regularly granted.

It is doubtful amongſt the Writers of Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, whether it was this Pope *Sixtus*, or *Paul* the Second, that reduced the year of Jubile to 25; howſoever it is certain, that this Pope in the year 1475. did Celebrate the Jubile, which brought a great concourſe of people to *Rome*, amongſt which were ſeveral Kings and Princes preſent, ſuch as the Kings of *Denmark*, *Sweden* and *Norway*, of *Boſna* and *Walachia*, the Dukes of *Calabria* and *Saxony*, with many others of great Quality, who in perſon made their Pilgrimages to *Rome* to gain the Indulgences, Pardons, and Privileges which were granted at that Solemnity.

About this time *Mathias* King of *Hungary* being deſirous to create an Alliance between himſelf and *Caſimir* King of *Poland*, did in the year 1476. make demand of his Daughter in Marriage; but before *Caſimir*, would aſſent thereunto, he ſent his Son *Vladiſlaus* to *Frederick* the Emperor then at *Vienna*, to deſire that he might be eſtabliſhed and confirmed in the right of the Kingdom of *Bohemia*, notwithſtanding that it had formerly been given away by *Paul* the Second to *Mathias* King of

Hungary. On which Quarrel the Knights of the *Teutonick* Order did not only at the inſtigation of *Balthaſar* the Popes Legat make War againſt the King of *Poland*, with aſſiſtance of the King of *Hungary*; but likewiſe the Legat Excommunicated *Vladiſlaus* the new King of *Bohemia* and his Father *Caſimir*, upon pretence that they ſavoured the Doctrine of the * *Huſſites*.

* *John Huz*.

That long continued Difference and Diſpute between the Secular Prieſts and the Mendicant Friers, which had laſted for above two hundred years, was afterwards by the Sentence of this Pope determined in this manner, "That the Seculars ſhould never hereafter tax, or impeach "the Mendicants as Aurhors of Hereſie, but honour and reſpect them, "as thoſe, by whoſe Preaching the truth of the Goſpel had been greatly "enlightened. That all Communicants ſhould be obliged to hear Maſs "ſaid by their Parochial Prieſts, every Sunday, and ſolemn Feſtival, with- "out which the Mendicants were not admitted to Preach. That the "Mendicants ſhould not declare the people diſobliged from making their "Confeſſions to their Parochial Prieſt, at leaſt every Eaſter, according as "they are directed by the Eccleſiaſtical Canons; provided ſtill that the "Mendicants retain their Privilege of hearing Confeſſions, and enjoyning "Penance. Theſe, and ſome other particulars being declared, and determined by this Pope, the Animoſity and hatred between the Seculars, and the Religious, was much abated, and the long continued Controverſie brought to an iſſue. But to paſs now from the matters of Spiritual Government, to Temporal and Secular Affairs, it is to be noted, that about this time moſt mortal feuds and quarrels aroſe between this Pope *Sixtus*, and the two Brothers of the Houſe of *Medicis*, *Julian* and *Laurence*, the original of which proceeded from the great diſpleaſure which *Laurence* took at the Pope for not conferring a Cardinals Cap on his Brother *Julian*, in revenge of which he being very potent in *Florence*, gave aſſiſtance both of men and money to *Nicolas Vitelli*, Count of *Tiferno*, and Lord of the City of *Caſtello*; whereby after he had been ſubdued, and baniſhed by the Pope, and had reſigned his Right and Poſſeſſion to him, he return'd again with the favour of the people, and re-aſſuming his Inheritance, he demoliſhed the Cittadel which *Sixtus* for his better ſecurity had made and fortified with a good Gariſon: Upon revolt of the City the Pope ſent his Nephew Cardinal *Julian* with a ſtrong Army againſt it, and by a long Siege of three months became maſter of it. Nor did *Laurence de Medicis* only ſhow his indignation againſt the Pope by furniſhing men and money to *Vitelli*, but likewiſe by diſappointing him of the purchaſe of *Imola*, the Prince whereof being reduced to great neceſſities for want of money, offered to ſale; to prevent which, and that it ſhould not fall into the hands of the Pope, who now grew above meaſure great and powerful in *Italy*, *Laurence* ſupplied the money, and ſo eaſed the Prince of thoſe neceſſities which compelled him to a ſale of his Patrimony. The Pope growing very angry hereat, and reſolving to revenge theſe affronts, entered into a ſecret Conſpiracy with *Francis de Pazzi*, who was head of that Faction, which was contrary to the Houſe of *Medicis*, whereby it was reſolved, that both the Brothers *Laurence* and *Julian* ſhould be murdered, and that the Commonwealth of *Florence* ſhould be diſpoſed of, according to the pleaſure of the Pope. But that a deſign ſo impious as this ſhould not ſeem to have entered into the heart of a Pope, the whole management was committed to the conduct of *Jeronimo Riario*, who in the firſt place prevailed with *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* to ſend an Army into *Tuſcany* under the command of *Alonſo* his Son, and compel the *Florentines* either to extirpate the Family of the *Medicis*, or force them to abandon their Country; and that then under colour of the Papal Dignity, the King of *Naples* might introduce his own Authority, and ſet up for himſelf: but to make all things ſure in caſe this ſhould fail, *Jeronimo* communicated his deſign to *John Baptiſta Monteſecco*, a man very expert and ready in ſuch attempts, who quickly engaged ſeveral with him in the Conſpiracy; namely *Bartholomew Salvian* Arch-Biſhop of *Piſa* who had conceived a private pique againſt *Laurence*; alſo *Francis de Pazzi*, and *James Poggio*, whoſe Father was a famous Orator in his time. And to put a better face on the matter, and countenance the Plot, *Raphael Riario* Cardinal of St. *George*, a youth, and Nephew of *Jeronimo*, was ſent to *Piſa* on pretence of his Studies; under whoſe protection the Aſſaſſinates having performed their work might be the better ſecured. Sunday being the 26th. of *April*, was the day appointed for this murder, and accordingly the Conſpirators, who were many, aſſaulted the two Brothers in the Church, whilſt they were hearing Maſs: *Julian* was there killed, but *Laurence* having received a ſlight wound, fled into the Veſtery, where he was ſaved from the violence of the Aſſaſſinates; and in the mean time the Arch-Biſhop of *Piſa*, and *James Poggio* endeavoured to poſſeſs themſelves of the Palace belonging to that Signiory: But the rumour hereof ſpreading quickly over all the City, and that *Julian* was killed, and *Laurence* ſtill living, the Party of the *Medicis* took courage, and with Arms in their hands ſeized the Arch-Biſhop of *Piſa*, and *James Poggio*, together with their Companions; and putting a Halter about their necks, they executed ſpeedy Juſtice, hanging them out at a window. *Antonio da Volterro*, and *Stefano* a Prieſt who attempted *Laurence*, incurred the like fate. *Monteſecco* was tortured to make Confeſſion, which having done, he was likewiſe put to death. The Cardinal at the time of this Combuſtion flying to the High-Altar, was ſcarce protected by the ſacredneſs of the place, and the earneſt interceſſion of *Laurence*; notwithſtanding which, having for ſome days been committed to ſafe cuſtody, until he had cleared his Innocence, he was out of reſpect and favour to the Pope ſet at liberty. Howſoever *Sixtus* was not ſo well pleaſed with the grace ſhowed to the Cardinal, but that he reſented the ſeverity they had uſed againſt a Prieſt, and an Arch-Biſhop, to that degree, that at the perſuaſion of *Jeronimo Riario*, he interdicted the people of *Florence*, and made War upon them. *Frederick* Duke of *Vrbin* was made General of the Papal Army, and *Alfonſo* Duke of *Calabria*, Son of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* was alſo ready with another Army in favour and aſſiſtance of the Pope. On the other ſide *Lewis* the 11th. King of *France* ſent a Succor of 300 Horſe to *Florence*, under the Command of *Philip de Comines*, Lord of *Argenton*; and farther to affright the Pope, he ordered a Synod of Prelates aſſembled at *Orleans*, to Decree that no more mony ſhould be carried out of *France* to *Rome* for vacant Benefices. The *Venetians*, and Dukes of *Milan*, *Mantoua*, and *Ferrara* concerned themſelves in the League, that they might repreſs the ambition of the Pope, whom they eſteemed to be full of deſigns to advance his own power, and glory in *Italy*. *Laurence de Medicis* by his vigilance, good addreſs, and conduct,

ſo well accommodated matters with *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, that he engaged that King to his Party, and into an agreement of an Offenſive, and Defenſive War; with which Union and Alliances the Pope being
Anno 1479. diſcouraged, the War concluded without any remarkable ſucceſſes; the Pope ſuppreſſing his reſentments until a more ſeaſonable time, when he could with better effect reak his anger, and revenge on his enemies: which he had certainly performed with the firſt opportunity, had he not been ſurprized with a ſudden alarm from the Turk; who having unexpectedly ſeized the City of *Otranto*, put all *Italy* into fear, and confuſion. This accident confirmed the Peace more firmly between *Sixtus* and the *Florentines*; on whom by way of Penance for their late crime, he impoſed a charge of maintaining 15 Gallies againſt the Turk; whoſe great force having entered into *Italy* would certainly in deſpight of all the power of that Country, have made great devaſtations, had not the death of *Mahomet the Great*, who had taken *Conſtantinople*, put a ſtop to the progreſs of his Arms, and moved *Bajazet* his Son, and Succeſſor to recall *Achmet Paſha* his General with his Army out of *Puglia*: and this happened in the year 1481. when the King of *Cyprus*, and his Son being dead, and the whole power remaining in the hands of the Queen (who was of the noble Family of *Cornaro*) the *Venetian* Senate laid claim to the Kingdom, as devolving to them by right of inheritance, which for many years they maintained againſt the power of the Turk, who made many attempts to make ſeizure of it. About the ſame time alſo *Dabuſon the Great*, Maſter of *Rhodes*, valiantly defended his City againſt *Mahomet*, cauſing him to raiſe his Siege, and retire with diſgrace.

The fear of the Turk by their Retreat out of *Italy* being extinguiſhed, *Sixtus* re-aſſumed his former deſigns, and in order thereunto favoured the party of the *Venetians* who made War upon *Hercules da Eſte* Duke of *Ferrara*: by theſe means all *Italy* was put into a new flame of War, being divided into diverſe Parties and Factions. On one ſide were the Pope, the *Venetians*, *Genoueſes*, and thoſe of *Siena*, with other Cities allied in a Confederacy. On the other were *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, the *Florentines*, *Lodowick Sforza* Protector of the State of *Milan* during the minority of the young Duke. The Pope in favour of his own Party managed his War with the Spiritual as well as with the Temporal Arms: for in the year 1482. he Excommunicated all his Enemies, and as many as took their part, or favoured their Cauſe; and encouraged *René* Duke of *Lorain* and *Anjou* to return into *Italy*, and recover his Kingdom of *Naples*. But *René* being otherwiſe employed, could not make uſe of this opportunity, which was offered; and therewith *Ferdinand* being enraged, entered the Dominions of the Pope with a great Army, and approached to the Gates of *Rome*; with which *Sixtus* being greatly incenſed, iſſued out an Army againſt him under the command of *Robert Malateſta*; and both Armies joyning Battel in a place called *Campo Morto*, near *Velitri*; *Sixtus* had the fortune of the day, and to overthrow his Enemy; many were ſlain on the place, many principal Officers taken and carried in Triumph into *Rome*, and *Ferdinand* himſelf narrowly eſcaped by flight. Three days after which Victory *Malateſta* died not without ſome ſuſpicion of being poiſoned. Not long after a Peace being concluded between Pope *Sixtus*, and the King of *Naples*, all the Priſoners were ſet at liberty; amongſt which were the Cardinals *Colonna* and *Savella*, who at the beginning of the War, were as diſaffected perſons committed to cuſtody. This War being in this manner ended, the Pope turned his Arms upon the *Venetians* in favour of *Hercules* Duke of *Ferrara*, leſt that State being too powerful for him, ſhould augment their Force by the addition of that Dukedom: and in regard that State would not give ear to his admonitions, and deſiſt from proſecution of their War at his command, the Pope made uſe of his ſpiritual Arms, Excommunicating all the Subjects under the Dominions of *Venice*, and entering into League with all the Confederate Princes of *Italy*, waged the moſt dangerous War that ever the *Venetians* had ſuſtained; and certainly had proved fatal to them, had not *Lodowick Sforza* Duke of *Milan* made a ſeparate Peace with them, againſt the ſenſe, and opinion of all the other Confederates. *Sixtus* having by theſe many Wars, and ſeveral ways exhauſted his Treaſury, contrived by ſale of new Offices, never before known, to repleniſh his Coffers; he alſo impoſed new Taxes, and raiſed the old ones: but that which moſt reflected on his Reputation, and blemiſhed him with the character of a covetous perſon, was that he decimated the Prelates, and laid new impoſitions on the Clergy: but to do this Pope juſtice, and give him his due, never was any more generous, or munificent in his gifts, or more delighted to do good offices than this; for he freely, and at his own charge maintain'd *Andrew Paleologo* Prince of the *Morea*, with *Leonard di Pocco Deſpor* of *Albania*, who had been depoſed, and exterminated their Dominions by the *Turk*: he likewiſe with great magnificence and courteſie treated the Qeeens of *Cyprus* and *Boſna*, whom the *Turk* had forced to abandon their Dominions, and fly for refuge under his protection. Alſo when the Kings of *Denmark*, *Sweedland*, *Norway*, and *Gothland*, with the Dukes of *Saxony*, and *Calabria* being moved, and guided by their Devotion, came to viſit the *Roman* See, he received them with great State, and treated them with a magnificence becoming Kings: And when in the year of Jubile *Ferdinand* of *Aragon* King of *Naples* came to gain Indulgences at *Rome*, he remitted to him the yearly Tribute which he was obliged to pay for that Kingdom, and in lieu thereof contented himſelf with the yearly acknowledgment of a White Horſe with its Furniture, which is continued to this day. And farther to demonſtrate his generous and great Soul, he re-built the Hoſpital of S. *Spirito* for maintenance and education of young Children: he built the Church of S. *Mary of Peace*: he adorned the *Baſilicon* of S. *Peter* with new Windows, making the Church more lightſome and pleaſant than before: he repaired the Palace of *Lateran*, as alſo the Churches of the Holy Apoſtles, with ſeveral other Churches. The *Pons Janicularis*, or the Bridg of *Janicula* being ruined, he took up all the Stones, and built another Bridg over *Tybur* in the place thereof, which ſince that time is called by the name of *Ponte Seſto*, or the Bridg of *Sixtus*. He cleared all the Common-ſewers of *Rome*, making conveyances for the ſullage of the City to run into the *Tybur*: he repaired many Aquæducts and Fountains; and brought the brazen Statue of *M. Aurelius* from an obſcure place, and erected it in the more open Area of the Capitol. It was he that reduced the *Vatican* Library into ſuch a condition, as hath made it famous through all the world; for he not only brought Books thither from all parts of *Europe*, but left alſo certain Rents and Revenues for the increaſe of them, with Penſions alſo to the

Library-keepers, and under-Officers. On the Pedeſtal of his Statue in the Library, theſe Verſes are written.

Templa, Domum expoſitis vicos, fora, mœnia, pontes
Virgineam Trivii quod reparatis aquam.
Priſca licet Nautis Statuas dare commoda Portus.
Et Vaticanum cingere Chriſte jugum
Plus tamen urbs debet, nam quæ ſqualore latebat
Cernitur in celebri Bibliotheca loco.

In ſhort, there was nothing which tended to the glory and ornament of the City which was neglected by him; and ſuch was his zeal and power in defence of the Privileges of the Church, that he would never ſuffer them to be infringed, nor did any Prince offer him an injury, or indignity which he did not return with due revenge. As, for inſtance, appears by the War he made in confederacy with *Venice* and *Genoua* againſt the Duke of *Ferrara* and his Allies; the which he managed with ſo much heat, that when the *Venetians* made a ſeparate Peace without his conſent, or approbation, he ſo highly reſented it, that it brought him to a fit of the Gout, which increaſed on him with that violence, that he died thereof on the 13th. of *Auguſt* 1484. having held the Pontifical See for the ſpace of 13 years and four days, having arrived the age of 70 years and 22 days. At his Death this Diſtick was made.

Siſtere qui nullo potuit cum fœdere Sixtus,
Audito tantum nomine pacis obit.

His Body was interred in S. *Peters* Church under a Monument of Braſs, which *Julian* Cardinal of *Liens* cauſed to be erected for him before the High-Altar. After which the Chair was vacant 16 days.

INNOCENT VIII.

SIXTUS being dead the Cardinals entered the *Vatican*, where in the ſpace of 16 days after the deceaſe of the former Pope, they elected *John Baptiſta Cibo* Cardinal of S. *Balbina*, to ſucceed in the Papal Chair: He was a Native of *Genoua*, and born of an illuſtrious Family in the year 1432. his Father being a Knight, and Count of the Empire, and Senator of *Rome*: He lived a long time in the Family and Service of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, and afterwards coming to *Rome*, was received into the Family of the Cardinal of *Bologna*, Brother of Pope *Nicolas* V. He was created Biſhop of *Savona* by *Paul* II. and of *Melſy* and Prieſt Cardinal, with the Title of S. *Balſina* by *Sixtus* IV. after whoſe Deceaſe he was by the common ſuffrages of 24 Cardinals elected Pope, and on the 29th. of *Auguſt* 1484. was Crowned by *Franci* *Piccolomini*, calling himſelf by the name of *Innocent* the Eighth, and at his Inauguration he uſed theſe words. *Ego autem in Innocentia mea ingreſſus ſum.* Tho *Guicciardin* will not allow this Motto to correſpond with his manners, and *Onufrius* ſaith, that he often covered his avarice and covetous deſires, with Drollery, and ſome pleaſant expreſſions. Howſoever he is ſtiled by moſt Writers with the honourable character of pious and affable, and commended for his ſanctity of life, and profound learning. The firſt buſineſs he took in hand after he came to the Papal Chair, was to take off the Excommunication which Pope *Sixtus* had laid on the *Venetians*, and being himſelf in perfect amity, and maintaining a fair correſpondence with the Chriſtian Princes, he endeavoured ſo to reconcile them one with another, that being united in a ſtrict confederacy, they might convert their Arms againſt the *Turk*, who was now become the formidable and common enemy of Chriſtendom: for tho' he was naturally averſe to War, yet his zeal for the Chriſtian Religion moved him to equippe a Fleet at the coſt and expence of 150 thouſand Crowns; which being ſucceſsful in their enterpriſe, gained him great renown, and eſteem with all the Chriſtian Princes; the which he alſo improved by various good offices, and acts of juſtice performed towards them; for he re-bleſſed the *Venetians* after they had been deſecrated and attainted by the Excommunication of *Sixtus*, he eaſed the Church from the burden of extraordinary Taxes, he retrenched many ſuperfluous charges of his own Family; he conferred many benefits, favours, and priviledges on the Orders of S. *Francis*, S. *Auguſtin*, and S. *Dominick*, and thundered out his Excommunications againſt Women that uſed Poiſons and Incantations, and ſuch as cheated and purloined from the *Dataria*, or Exchequer.

But all theſe good actions, and juſt intentions were interrupted by civil Diſcords at *Rome* ariſen between the Families of *Collonna* and *Orſini*, on the ground of ancient hatred, and reſentments between them; and had proceeded to worſe effects and more evil conſequences, had they not been aſſwaged for a while, by the breaking forth of a Forein War with *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*; who having oppreſſed, and ill treated many Lords and great perſonages, and particularly the Count *De Montorio*, who was of great repute, and popular in the City of *Aquila*; they all, together with the City of *Abruzzo*, had recourſe to the Pope for ſanctuary; proteſting, that in caſe he would not receive them into his protection, that they ſhould be forced to yield, and reſign themſelves into the hands and power of ſome Forein Prince. The Pope being moved by their ſupplications, and incenſed againſt *Ferdinand* for his ill deportment towards the Papal See, for he had denied to pay the yearly tribute of twenty thouſand Ducats, and had diſpoſed of the Eccleſiaſtical Benefices according to his own will and pleaſure; he therefore reſolved to receive *Aquila* and *Abruzzo*, and the other complainants, into his care and protection, and to declare War againſt the King of *Naples*: For carrying on of which with better ſucceſs, he entered into a League with the *Venetians*, and drew to his Party the Princes of *Colonna*, of *Biſignano*, *Salerno*, *Altamura*, and Duke of *Olivetto*, with many other Lords, and great Men of *Naples*, making *Robert Sanſeverino* the General of his Army. On the other ſide, the King combined with the *Florentines*, and joyned the *Orſini* to his party; and ſuch were the animoſities on both ſides, that a furious and bloody War began, which was maintained for ſome time with changes and variety of fortune; the evil conſequences of which being by good and wiſe men eſteemed fatal to *Italy*, induced the Count *De Piti-*

gliano, and the Cardinals of *Angioio* and *Sforza* to intercede and mediate between the two parties for a Peace : but the Pope who conceived that he had reaſon and juſtice on his ſide, refuſed to condeſcend unto equal terms, and being farther encouraged by the aids given him from *Charles* the Eighth King of *France* of 300 thouſand Crowns in mony, with the recruits of 4000 *Savoyards*, and 3000 *Switzers*, he became inflexible, and for ſome time continued reſolute to maintain the War: but at length conſidering the fatal conſequences of it, and how ill the effuſion of blood becomes the gentle ſpirit of a Prelate, he hearkned, and condeſcended to Articles of peace on theſe following conditions. That the King ſhould pardon and forgive all the Lords and Barons who were his Subjects, whether they belonged to the City of *Aquila*, or to any other Town, or part of his Dominions who had fled to the Pope for his ſuccour and protection. That he ſhould not farther pretend to any Collation of Benefices. That he ſhould pay all the Arrears of his Tribute at a convenient time appointed. That *Virginio Orſino* ſhould humble himſelf at the foot-ſtool of the Pope, and demand his Pardon. All which Articles being agreed, the King of *Spain*, *Lodowick Sforza*, and *Lorenzo de Medicis*, with two Cardinals, and *James Trivoltii* a great Favourite of the Popes, became Guarrentees for the peace. But no ſooner had the Pope disbanded his Forces, and *Ferdinand* freed from the apprehenſions of War, but with violation of his own Faith, and in deſpight of the obligation of thoſe who were engaged for him, he refuſed compliance with the conditions he had agreed and concluded; for he not only impriſoned the Barons, and others, who had ſided with the Pope, and four months after cut off their Heads, and confiſcated their Eſtates, but likewiſe denied to pay his annual Tribute to the Papal See; covering the breach of his Faith, and the perfidiouſneſs of theſe Acts with vain and frivolous pretences. The Pope greatly incenſed with extreme indignation againſt this diſhoneſt treachery, in which the Guarantees for the late Peace acknowledged him to have reaſon, diſpoſed his affairs for a ſecond War; in order whereunto he in the firſt place Excommunicated *Ferdinand*, abſolved his Subjects from their Obedience, and deprived him of his Kingdom; but becauſe this would prove inſignificant, unleſs it were made good by ſome more effectual means, he ſent to the King of *France* for the aid he had formerly promiſed, and having raiſed a conſiderable Army of *Switzers* and *Italians* under the command of *Francis Cibo*; and having alſo the countenance of all *Italy* in deteſtation of this falſe treatment: *Ferdinand* being terrified therewith, inclined to a Peace, and really to accept with unfeigned devotion, and obedience, ſuch conditions as the Pope ſhould be pleaſed to impoſe upon him; and in farther purſuance of this Peace, the *Urſini* were induced to proſtrate themſelves at the feet of the Pope; in which humble poſture he generouſly granted to them all thoſe Petitions and Requeſts which they ſubmiſſively offered to him; and at the ſame time beſtowed the like favours in the pardon of Cardinal *Baldri* a *French*-man, who had treacherouſly conſpired againſt him. And farther to evidence his natural inclinations to Peace, he reconciled the enmities of *Colonna* and *Urſini*, two potent Families in *Rome*, who by their Diſſentions and Wars had miſerably ſpoiled and vexed each other. This peace produced a League between the King, the *Venetians*, the *Florentines*, and the Duke of *Milan*, and in ſhort begat a general peace in all Chriſtendom,

Phil. Comin.
Onuſ.

ſtendom, which continued for the ſpace of five years; during which time, great preparations were made againſt the Turk, which had in all probability happily ſucceeded, had not that honourable and glorious deſign been unhappily interrupted by the Death of this Pope.

Yet ſome time before his deceaſe, being in the year 1488. he had the honor to have *Zizimé* the Brother of *Bajazet* Emperor of the Turks to be his Priſoner, being taken, and ſent to *Rome* by the Knights of *Rhodes*. And tho this Sultan was ſplendidly received and treated, yet he could not be induced either by fair perſuaſions, or ruder menaces to proſtrate, or humble himſelf at the feet of the Pope; wherefore being remanded back to ſafe cuſtody in the *Vatican*, he lived there for all the time of this Pope, during which; his Brother *Bajacet* Emperor of the Turks ſent yearly to *Rome* forty thouſand Crowns for his maintainance: and to render his Brother more acceptable there, he ſent with an honourable Embaſſy the Key of the Holy Sepulchre at *Jeruſalem* to the Pope, together with the Lance with which *Longinus* pierced the ſide of our Saviour; both which he received with great humility and devotion, lodging the Key in a Chappel in S. *Peter's* Church, where it is to be ſeen unto this day: and laid the Spear in a Marble Cheſt, which he purpoſely erected in a Chappel within the Church of the *Vatican*. In the time of this Pope *Innocent*, there was but one Creation of Cardinals, at which eight only were made; amongſt which *Laurence Cibo* the natural Son of his Brother was one. In the year 1489. he permitted, that the Maſs might be celebrated in *Norway* without Wine, becauſe that the Country being cold, and the diſtance far, the Wine was either frozen, or turned Vinegar before it could be brought thither. This Pope, as we have ſaid, was generous and magnificent in all his actions, performing many things at his own coſt and charge for the honor and adornment of the City. For he built a houſe of pleaſure and delight for recreation of the Popes, called the *Belvedere*; he re-built the Deanry of S. *Narcis* from the foundation; he made many Galleries in the Palace of the *Vatican*; he erected a Fountain in the front before S. *Peters*, and adorned many other places in the City; and having diſpoſed all things in order to the quiet and happineſs of *Italy*, he ended his days, and died the 25*th.* day of *July*, 1491. being about the age of ſixty years. He was buried in a Sepulchre of Braſs, near the Altar which he had lately made for the Spear. *Lionel* Biſhop of *Concordia* Preached his Funeral Sermon, wherein he recounted the moſt memorable paſſages of his life. Over his Tomb this Epitaph was Engraven, *Du Cheſhe.*

Ego autem in Innocentia mea Ingreſſus ſum
Redime me Domine, & miſerere mei.

ALEXANDER VI.

INNOCENT being deceaſed, *Roderigo*, who was made a Biſhop, and afterwards Cardinal *Albano*, and *Porto* by *Sixtus*, was elected Pope, calling himſelf by the name of *Alexander* the Sixth, and ſate in the Papal Chair for the ſpace of eleven years and upwards: he was born at *Valentia* in *Spain*, his Father was *Geoffery Lenzola*, a rich and noble Gentleman, and his Mother was the Siſter of Pope *Calixtus* the Fourth; by the favour of which Uncle he was deſigned from his Youth to be created Arch-biſhop of *Valentia*, and in the year 1456 was actually made Cardinal-deacon of S. *Nicolas*, and Chancellor of the *Roman* Church; and was afterwards by *Sixtus* the Fourth employed upon many important Affairs, and Embaſſies for the Church; and particularly to intercede and mediate in the difference between the Kings of *Spain*, *Portugal*, and *Aragon*, who had all pretenſions to the Kingdom of *Caſtile*; by which Offices and Places, having gained great honour and intereſt, he was by the ſuffrages of two and twenty Cardinals elected Pope.

But ſeveral Writers, ſuch as *Guicciardin Onufrius* and others, brand the Election of this Pope with the infamy of Simonaical corruption; for reporting that moſt of the Cardinals were bribed by ſums of Mony, and promiſes of Offices, and high Preferments to give their Votes in his favour, thoſe who were moſt active, and had taken the greateſt Bribes for this promotion, were the Cardinal *Aſcognus*, who in reward had the Office of Chancellor conferred upon him, likewiſe *Julian* Biſhop of *Oſtia*, and *Raphel Riara*, who were buſie and talking Cardinals. But *Alexander* who was an excellent diſſembler until his turn was ſerved, and who loved the Treaſon, but not the Traytor, or the Office, but not the corrupt ways to it, hated this abominable practice in his heart; ſo that by violent deaths, by Baniſhment, and other various calamities, he found means to bring all thoſe unto ruine, who had thus baſely conſpired to his promotion; and particularly *Baptiſta Orſino* (to whom was given the magnificent Palace of *Borgia*, and *John Michael*, on whom was conferred the Biſhoprick of *Porto*, with all the Wardrobe of the Pope, which was of ineſtimable value) were both put to Death; one being publickly executed in the Caſtle, and the other ſecretly made away by Poiſon. This ſort of treatment towards his Friends induced *Guichardin* in his Hiſtory of this Pope to repreſent him under the notion of a perſon without Truth, without Faith, or Religion, of an unſatiable avarice, and inſuparable pride, and paſſionate in the raiſing and advancement of his Baſtard Sons (which were many in number) to places of dignity and profit; the which character is farther confirmed by all the *Italian* Poets and Hiſtorians of thoſe times, who aſcribe ſtrange and monſtrous cruelties to him, making him the Author of all thoſe Calamities and Miſeries which in his Reign over-whelmed *Italy*, rendering its condition a ſlaviſh and contemptible to Forein Nations. Howſoever his temper was not ſo altogether flagitious, but that it admitted of ſome alloy, and mixture of

Virtue: for he with great care attended to the government of the City, and regulation of the Courts of Juſtice; to which end he ordained Viſitors of the Priſon to examin, and know the cauſes for which perſons were impriſoned, and created four Judges for the tryal of all criminal matters, ſo that Juſtice was the more punctually executed, than in former times. But not to remain too long on his perſonal qualities, let us proceed to the important Affairs of his Government.

And in the firſt place, being created Pope, he was according to cuſtom ſaluted, and congratulated in his Papal Dignity by the Ambaſſadors of Kings, Princes, and States, whom he reſpectively treated with affability and reſpect; perſuading them to peace and concord amongſt themſelves; and by the virtue of ſuch union and confederacy to joyn, and employ their Arms againſt the *Turk*, who was the common Enemy of Chriſtendom. And at that time, being about the year 1493. in honour to *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, he gave him the Title of *Catholick*, in acknowledgment and memory of the many Victories he had obtained over the *Moors*; and gave him a Title to all thoſe Lands and Countries in *America*, which were or ſhould be diſcovered there. And thus as he was civil to Kings, ſo he was kind and more affectionate to his Family. For in the firſt Conſiſtory that he held, he created *John Borgia* his Siſters Son Arch-biſhop of *Montreat*, *Valentine Borgia* his Natural Son Arch-Biſhop of *Valentia*. At this time the Emperor *Frederick* died, having reigned for the ſpace of 54 years. Likewiſe *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* being dead, he ſent his Legat with power to confirm his Son *Alonſo* in the ſucceſſion to the Kingdom; and having contracted an Alliance with him, he ordered him to be Crowned, and inveſted with the Regalities.

At this time, being the year 1494. *Charles* the Eighth, King of *France*, who was of a martial and ambitious ſpirit laid claim to the Kingdom of *Naples*, by virtue of the laſt Will and Teſtament of *René* Duke of *Anjou* and *Lorain*; and being encouraged in the enterpriſe by *Lodowick Sforza*, the Guardian of *John Galeas* Duke of *Milan*, he entered *Italy* with a puiſſant Army, conſiſting of 25000 Foot, and 5000 Horſe, with a great train of Artillery. The Pope apprehending the great ruine and damage which this incurſion of the *French* would bring upon *Italy*, entred into League with the City of *Florence*, and both agreed and reſolved to leavy Soldiers, and joyn in a defenſive League with the King of *Naples*, but the *Venetians* and *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* who were likewiſe moved to enter into the League, did poſitively refuſe to accept the Propoſals, being more inclinable to be unconcerned and Spectators than Actors in that hazardous War. *Charles* being entred into *Italy*, marched victorious thro' *Lombardy*, and having overthrown the Army of *Florence*, ſoon after became Maſter of the City it ſelf: thence he proceeded towards *Rome*, where he entred on the firſt of *January*, 1494. without any oppoſition; it being agreed, that in caſe the *Romans* would peaceably open their Gates, and give free admiſſion to the *French*, that no hurt, or violence ſhould be offered by them to the Inhabitants, but that on the contrary, if they made oppoſition, they would put all into flame and confuſion. The *Romans* therefore finding themſelves in no condition to reſiſt, readily gave a reception to the *French*, affording them plenty of Victuals, and Proviſions; and they on the other ſide performed their conditions, ſeverely puniſhing ſuch as were guilty of Riots, or Tumults. The Pope at firſt being afrighted with the approach of the *French*, fled for ſecurity into the Caſtle, but at length finding all things quiet and ſecure from the outrages of the Gheſts, adventured abroad, and much againſt his will and inclinations entered into a League with them. But *Charles* not much confiding in the Faith which the Pope had given, required for better ſecurity thereof, and by way of Hoſtage, that *Ceſar Borgia* who was called Cardinal *Valentino*, ſhould under colour of being the Popes Legat, accompany him in the War, together with *Zizimé* the Brother of the Grand Seignior, on pretence, that having overcome the Kingdom of *Naples*, he would make uſe of him in the War, which he intended to make upon *Conſtantinople*; but he died ſoon after of a Bloody-Flux at *Capua*. Upon approach of the *French* near to *Naples*, King *Alonſo* being conſcious of his ill government, whereby he had contracted the hatred of his people, and deſpairing of the ſucceſs of his Affairs, ſurrendred up the Kingdom into the hands of his Son *Ferdinand*, and with great fear and ignominy embarked himſelf with the beſt part of his wealth, and fled into the Iſland of *Sicily*; and ſoon after *Ferdinand* conſidering the weakneſs of his Force, and the inequality of the Match between him and the *French*, betook himſelf alſo to the Iſland of *Iſchia*. *Charles* following the favourable courſe of his good, and victorious fortune, with great expedition made himſelf Maſter of all the Kingdom of *Naples*; the which ſucceſs giving an alarm to all the Chriſtian Princes, a general confederacy was agreed amongſt them, for intercepting the *French* on their return out of *Italy*; ſo that the Pope, the Emperor *Maximilian*, the King of *Spain*, *Lodowick Sforza* Duke of *Milan*, and the *Venetians*, uniting their Forces for the common ſafety of *Italy*, compoſed an Army of forty thouſand men. Notwithſtanding which, *Charles* boldly returned out of *Italy*, and with great difficulty having paſſed the *Apenine* Mountains with ſixteen pieces of weighty Cannons which were drawn over by 300 *Swiſſers*, and having by the greater error and neglect of the Enemy paſſed all the narrow and inacceſſible ways about *Zerzana* and *Petra Santa* at length deſcended into the Plains of *Lombardy*. The Confederate Army to hinder the Kings farther paſſage had encamped themſelves at *Fornovo*, near *Tarro*, and at no far diſtance from *Parma*; and there both Armies were engaged. The *French* did not conſiſt of more than 9000 men, and the Confederates of 40000; and yet the *French* had the advantage, and won the Field: and as *Philip de Comines* ſaith, the King entered triumphant into *Aſti*; tho' *Panvinio* and other *Italian* Writers relate the Battel to have been bloody, but the ſucceſs and advantage doubtful. Howſoever, the news hereof being reported at *Naples* to the great advantage of the Confederates, King *Ferdinand* re-aſſumed his courage, and adventured out of his retirement at *Iſchia*; and then the *French* Forces being grown weak, and all Recruits failing them, he recovered his Kingdom with the aſſiſtance of the Catholick King: Not long after *Charles* the Eighth died, and *Lewis* the Twelfth Duke of *Orleans* ſucceeded in his Throne: Likewiſe *Ferdinand* dying without Iſſue, *Frederick* his Uncle became his Succeſſor.

Lewis XII. continuing his claim by right of Inheritance to the Kingdom of *Naples*, and alſo to the Dukedom of *Milan* in right of his Grandmother the Daughter of *John Galeazzo*, entered into a League with the Pope, which was fatal to *Italy*; and with them the King of *Spain*, the *Florentines*, and the *Venetians*, were all combined againſt Duke *Lodowick Sforza*, and King *Frederick*, on conditions that *Lewis* having conquered *Milan*, ſhould cauſe *Cremona* to be reſtored to the *Ventians*; and that *Cæſar Borgia* who was the Popes baſtard Son, having renounced his Cardinals Cap, and taking *Carlotta de Alebretto*, Daughter to the King of *Navar*, and Kinſwoman to the King of *France* for his Wife, ſhould be inveſted in *Romagna*, *Marca*, and *Umbria*, and that the Kings of *Spain*, and *France* ſhould equally divide the Kingdom of *Naples* between them. *Lewis* entering *Italy* with a powerful Army, drove out the Duke of *Milan* from his State, and ſhortly after took Cardinal *Aſcanius* Priſoner, whom he ſent into *France*, where he died in a ſhort time afterwards. The *Venetians* by virtue of the League had *Cremona* conſigned to them; and all matters ſucceeded ſo proſperouſly for *Lewis* in *Italy*, that *Frederick* King of *Naples* being thereby wholly diſ-animated, caſt himſelf with all humble confidence into the arms of King *Lewis*, who treated him baſely, and with the higheſt indignities imaginable. In the mean time, the *French* and the *Spaniards* being to divide the ſpoils of the Kingdom, ſuch differences aroſe betwixt them, as being only to be decided by the Sword, the *French* were all cut in pieces by the valour of *Gonſalvo* a brave Captain, by which means that Kingdom fell into the hands of *Spain*.

In the mean time Pope *Alexander* being attentive to nothing more than to raiſe and enrich his Baſtard Children, encouraged and countenanced his Son *Cæſar Borgia* in the grievous oppreſſions he laid on all the Barons of the Eccleſiaſtical State; for he deſigning and aſpiring to make himſelf ſole, and abſolute maſter of it, made the Family of the *Orſini* the moſt remarkable examples of his inſolent indignities, ſpoiling and haraſſing their Country for the ſpace of a whole Summer. As yet *Cæſar Borgia* had not renounced his Cardinals Cap, and therefore continuing ſtill under the notion of a Prelate, *Guido Ubaldo di Urbino*, and *John Borgia*, and other of the Popes Baſtards, were made Generals of the Eccleſiaſtical Army, who over-running ſeveral Countries, reduced *Braciano* by Siege, and proceeded every where victoriouſly, until *Charles* the natural Son of *Virginio Orſino*, joyning Battel with them, routed their Army, and took the Duke of *Urbin* Priſoner. After this, a Peace being concluded with the *Orſini*, and the Pope perceiving that his buſineſs did not thrive well by War, he endeavoured to advance his deſigns by fortifying the intereſt of his Family with great and potent alliances; and in the firſt place he gave his Daughter *Lucretia* in Marriage to *John Sforza*, Lord of *Peſaro*, breaking his promiſe to a certain Nobleman of *Spain* to whom he had formerly contracted her; then he took her from *Sforza*, and gave her to *Lewis* of *Aragon*, Baſtard Son of *Alfonſo* King of *Naples*; who being killed, ſhe was given to *Alfonſo da Eſté* Duke of *Ferrara*, with whom afterwards ſhe ended her days.

This Pope had alſo three Sons, *Geoffery* the youngeſt was made Prince of *Squillaci*, *Cæſar* who was the ſecond was Cardinal, and *John* the eldeſt was ſent into *Spain*, and there made Duke of *Candia*; but he rambling one night in his pleaſures about the Streets of *Rome*, was by the treachery of his Brother the Cardinal Aſſaſſinated, and his body thrown into the *Tybur*; which kindneſs he did him after they had ſupped the ſame night together at the Table of their Mother *Vanoccia*; with which horrid act the Pope was not ſo much diſpleaſed, as he was terrified, fearing that upon the leaſt diſpleaſure the ſpirit of this miſcreant would be provoked to add parricide to the murder of his Brother. After this he made little account of his Scarlet, or degree of Cardinal; but turning his thoughts wholly to War, he was made General of the Popes Army, and uniting his Forces with the *French*, and joyning with their intereſt, he became Maſter of a conſiderable Principality in *Italy*; for having expelled *Sforza* from *Milan*, and impriſoned the Chiefs of that Family, with aſſiſtance of *Lewis* the 12*th*. he with great cruelty and blood poſſeſſed himſelf of all the Cities of *Romagna*, (*Bologna* only excepted) baniſhing, or putting to death all the ancient Lords and perſons of quality belonging to it. He alſo took *Imola* and *Forli*, baniſhing all the Children of *Riario*, to whom the Inheritance belonged, only their Mother *Catherina* he took Priſoner, and carried her in triumph with him to *Rome*. Next he took *Sinigaglia* by force of Arms, and by treachery ſurprized the State of *Urbin*; for being with all his Army at *Cagli*, where he was kindly received, upon the ſignal given, he ſeized that City, and marched immediately with the ſame deſign to *Urbin*. *Guido Ubaldo da Feltro*, Prince of that State, ſurprized with this ſuddain attempt, and fearing to fall into the cruel hands of this Tyrant, left the City, and with ſome few of his domeſticks ſaved himſelf by flight. Then this *Borgia* turned his Arms upon *Camerino*, which he took, and put many of the ancient Lords and Barons of it to death: with the like cruelty and wickedneſs he treated all the Lords and Barons about the parts of *Rome*, particularly that noble Family of the *Gaetani*, which were Lords of ancient poſſeſſions in the *Volſci*; of which he put *James* the Son of *Honorato Gaetan* to death, then Protonotary of *Rome*: He alſo ordered that *Cola Gaetan* a youth, who was the only Son, and hopes of the Family, ſhould be removed out of the world. He in the next place, by aſſiſtance of the *French*, attacked the Family of *Colonna*, and ſeized on all their State, forcing them to fly into *Puglia*, and *Sicily* for refuge. His next and laſt work was to ſubdue the *Orſini*, but they having always been conſtant and firm friends to the Pope in all times, and againſt all Factions, he wanted ſome colourable pretence to fix a quarrel on them: but at length the occaſion which he ſought, the *Orſini* themſelves adminiſtred; for they growing jealous of the ſucceſſes, and fortune of *Borgia*, and fearing leſt his inſatiable avarice ſhould tranſport him alſo to an appetite of devouring them, they conſidered it prudence to provide in time againſt a danger ſo apparent and imminent as this: Wherefore, conſulting with others, who were poſſeſſed with the like apprehenſions and fears; ſuch as *Bentivolio* Lord of *Bologna*, *Paolo Baglione* the Uſurper of *Perugia*, *Vitellozzo Vitelli*, Lord of the City of *Caſtello*, *Liverotto* Lord *Fermo*, *Pandolfo Petrucci* of *Siena*; they appointed a Council to be held at *Perugia*, where they agreed upon an alliance, and confederacy together againſt *Borgia*; and accordingly ſetting out an Army into the Field, they took *Urbino*, and *Camerino*, and overthrew the Forces of *Borgia* which came to relieve them, and thence made an incurſion into all the Country of *Romagna*. The Pope being greatly troubled, and concerned for theſe loſſes, and turn of fortune, uſed all his ſubtilty and artifices to reconcile theſe differences; and his Authority being very prevalent, he perſuaded the *Orſini* into a Peace, and into an aſſurance of all ſecurity; in ſhort therefore with promiſes, and proteſtations, and conditions of great advantage, he deluded them into a Peace, and into Articles which he never deſigned to perform. With theſe feigned appearances of reconciliation, the Towns taken from *Borgia* were ſurrendred to him; and *Paul*, and *Francis Orſino* Duke of *Gravina*, *Vitellozzo*, and *Liverotto*, then together at *Senegaglia* went to attend *Borgia* at *Imola*, and to receive his Pardon. *Borgia* went forth to meet them, and gave them a moſt courteous reception; and conducting them into an inward Room in his Palace; as if he had had ſomething of importance to communicate to them, he on a ſudden encompaſſed them with his *Gaſcon* Soldiers, and ſtrangled *Vitellozzo*, and *Liverotto*, and in a ſhort time after beſtowed the like fare on the two *Orſini*; all which proceeded from the credulity and eaſineſs of *Paul Orſino*, who againſt the Opinion, and Proteſts, and Diſſuaſions of *Vitellozzo*, being corrupted, as was ſuppoſed, by Mony, condeſcended to the terms of *Borgia*, and to truſt, and believe his Faith, who was a known Tyrant, bloody, and falſe, and his life blackned already with a thouſand inſtances of Murder and Perjury: hereupon *Perugia*, and the City of *Caſtello* ſurrendred themſelves into the hands of the Pope, the Families of *Baglio* and *Vitello* being baniſhed thence. This ſucceſs was followed by the impriſonment of *Baptiſta Orſini* the Cardinal, who was by order of the Pope committed to the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*: in like manner *Renold* the Biſhop of *Florence*, and *James de Sancta Croce* being of the ſame Family, were likewiſe impriſoned; *James* howſoever had liberty to go out upon Bail, but the Cardinal was in a few days poiſoned in the Priſon.

In vigor of this ſucceſs *Borgia*, now called Duke *Valentino*, proſecuted the other Confederates with an Army of 15000 men, for fear of which *Pandolfo Petrucci* leaving his Town of *Siena*, fled to *Lucca* for ſuccor and refuge, whilſt *Borgia* became Maſter of all the Caſtles and Fortreſſes belonging to the Family of the *Orſini*. Thus did he continue his Wars with ſuch great expence, and with a magnificent Equipage agreeable thereunto, that the Coffers of the Pope became exhauſted, the Revenue of the Church not being able to provide for ſuch vaſt deſigns. To ſupply which, this Pope *Alexander* renewed the ancient form of eighty Writers of Breviate, according to the cuſtom of former Popes; every of which Offices were ſold for 750 Crowns of Gold: he ſold alſo all other Offices at exceſſive rates; and created Cardinals for Mony: he alſo entertained the *Marrani* at *Rome*, whom the King of *Spain* had Baniſhed from his Countries, preferring the profit which he ſqueezed from them, more than all the favour and Intereſt of that King. In fine, he omitted no ways and arts, honeſt, or diſhoneſt, to raiſe Mony, ſetting every thing to ſale, that was vendible, or could yield a benefit: But all the Revenue of the Church, and theſe contrivances, and artifices for raiſing Mony, not being able to anſwer the expences of the War, and the immenſe luxury and prodigality of Duke *Valentino*, it was reſolved by the Pope to poiſon all the rich Cardinals, and Prelates at *Rome*, and then ſeizing their Revenue and Eſtates, to ſacrifice their Riches to the luſt and inſatiable avarice of his wicked Son. The Plot being thus laid, the rich Cardinals and Prelates were invited to a Banquet in the Garden of *Beluedere*, where a Table was ſpread near a Fountain, and

Bottles of excellent Wine provided; thoſe for the Pope and his Son were ſet apart, from thoſe into which the poiſon was infuſed, being deſigned for the Gueſts only: But here let us obſerve the juſt Judgment of God, for the Butler and Cup-bearer miſtaking the Bottle, gave the poiſonous Doſe to the Pope, and his Son, and to Cardinal *Adrian* their ſole Confident, inſtead of that which was to have been given to the Cardinals, and his other Gueſts. The Pope being aged at the years of 72, and not able to ſtruggle with the violence of the Poiſon, died at the *Vatican* in the month of *Auguſt*, 1503. and was buried obſcurely in a Chappel of St. *Peter's* Church, under a poor and ignoble Monument: but *Borgia* applying preſent Antidotes, and being a man of a young and robuſt nature, was able for ſome time to ſtruggle with the prevailing force of the Poiſon; howſoever the malignity of it ſo crept into his Vitals, and affected his Blood, that his Body growing macerate and weak, and being ill-diſpoſed, and faint, he was not able to attend to his Affairs, and the diſcipline of his Army; for want of which, and the encouragement of his preſence, the Soldiers forſook their Colours, as being aſhamed of the deteſtable Villany of their Commander, and therewith his whole Army disbanded, leaving him naked, and expoſed to the diſpleaſure of two Popes, which in a ſhort time afterwards appeared, that were his mortal enemies. After which, all the Cities and Fortreſſes which he had by force, and rapine poſſeſſed, returned again to their ancient Maſters the Families of *Colonna*, *Urſini*, *Savelli*, *Vitelli*, and *Barons* of *Rome*, reaſſumed their former right; and likewiſe the Lords of the Signories of *Urbin*, *Peſaro*, *Camerin*, and *Senogalla* were again re-inſtated into the Dominions of their Paternal Inheritance; ſo that every Bird taking his own Feather, left him a poor *Cæſar*, being diveſted of all his Power, and ill acquired Riches.

Notwithſtanding the wickedneſs of this Pope *Alexander* the Sixth, there are thoſe who will allow him ſome grains of Virtue. They ſay that he was of a ready Wit, of a great Memory, and profound Judgment; and of that perſuaſive Eloquence, that it was impoſſible almoſt to refute his Arguments, or deny his Demands. He treated the Cardinals with great affability, and reſpect, and gave high demonſtrations of his care, and concernment for the Chriſtian Cauſe. He knew ſo well how to accommodate himſelf to the humour of the *French*, that he reconciled their Party to him in a firm and ſtrict Alliance; and ſo well how to govern, that amidſt all the violences, and ſlaughters which he cauſed to be committed in *Rome*, no tumult, or inſurrection of the People enſued thereupon. He always went late to bed, contenting himſelf with little ſleep, and a moderate diet: he was a great lover of Learning, and men of Literature; ſo that tho he was covetous, yet he was ſaid, never to have detained the allowance to Doctors, nor pay of the Soldiery, nor wages of Workmen.

Howſoever his Vices were ſo enormous, that theſe mean Commendations could bear no ballance with them. For he was a man of no Faith, nor Honor; he was Cruel, Covetous, and inſatiable of Riches. At any time of vacation from buſineſs, he gave himſelf up wholly to delights, and pleaſures, eſpecially to Women, whom he loved in exceſs; but the Miſtreſs of his Affection was the fair *Vanoccia*, a Roman Lady, whom in the time of his private fortune and condition he kept and owned as a lawful Wife. He was a great lover of Plays and Comedies, and would be always a ſpectator of Shows, and pleaſant divertiſements. In his time he created 43 Cardinals, of which 18 were *Spaniards*. In the year 1500. he celebrated the Jubilee according to ancient cuſtoms, giving Bulls, and Indulgences, for Sins, to all thoſe who perſonally viſited the Church of *Rome*, and to ſuch alſo who being hinderd by their occaſions were made partakers of his bountiful remiſſions. Thus he who could ſo eaſily pardon the ſins of others, muſt expect the final Sentence of him, who is the juſt Judg, and renders to every one according to his demerit.

PIUS III.

A*LEXANDER* the Sixth being now deceaſed, the Duke *Valentino* ſeized on all his Plate and Jewels, and whatſoever was of value, and fortified himſelf in the *Vatican*, and Caſtle of S. *Angelo* with 12000 men, ſuppoſing that he might be able by ſuch a force to over-awe the Cardinals in their Suffrages, and force them to elect ſuch a perſon, as was moſt acceptable to himſelf. The Cardinals, to avoid the awe of ſuch a force, aſſembled themſelves in the *Minerva*, which is a Convent in *Rome*; but that place alſo was preſently ſurrounded by a Band of Soldiers commanded by one Captain *Coreglia*, by order of *Borgia*, who himſelf at that time lay ſick in bed. The news of this reſtraint on the Cardinals, put all *Rome* into an alarm, and great confuſion, ſo that the Citizens ſhut their Shops, chained up their Streets, and took Arms in their hands; all things ſeeming in that fear and dread, as if *Hannibal* had been at the Gates of the City; ſo that *Coreglia* finding himſelf in ſome danger, gave way to the preſent neceſſity, and ſetting fire to the Palace of the *Orſini*, retired without doing other damage. In the mean time the Cardinals having gathered a force of 4000 Foot, reſolved contrary to cuſtom, to ſuſpend the Election, until ſuch time as the Cardinals reſident in foreign parts beyond the *Alps* could convene in ſome other place, where they might be more ſecure, and free in their Voices. *Proſpero Colonna* coming then to *Rome* with *Fabius Orſino* (the Son of him whom *Borgia* had put to death) were by order of the Cardinals ſent to *Borgia*, to intreat him, that he would be pleaſed to remain quiet, and ſuffer the Election to proceed free, and without diſturbance. The like requeſt alſo the Embaſſadours of *France* and *Spain* made to him; with which ſuffering himſelf to be perſuaded, he withdrew his force from *Rome*, and departed thence in a Horſe-litter, being in a weak ſtate, and condition of health: howſoever his own Soldiers kept the Caſtle, tho the Governour of it at the inſtance of Cardinal *Bernardino Carvagiale*, promiſed to act every thing by the order, and direction of the College. In this manner the *Vatican* being cleared, the Cardinals employed themſelves nine days in performing the ſolemn Obſequies of the Pope, during which time the *French* Army was perſuaded alſo to quit the Town at the inſtance of the Cardinal of *Rouen*, who had great intereſt with that Party. So that all things being left free, without appearance of any Commotion or Diſorders during the Election; the Cardinals entered

Guicciardin. l. 6. into the Conclave to the number of 31, where the diſagreement which at other times kept things in delay, was now the cauſe, that matters were put to a ſpeedy iſſue, and a new Pope created in a few days. Cardinal *Amboiſe* the Arch-Biſhop of *Rouen* being ſupported by the intereſt of *France*, and the power of *Borgia* ſeemed to ſtand the faireſt of any for the Election: but the *French* Forces being withdrawn to engage the *Spaniards* in the *Campagna* of *Rome*; the greateſt, though not the beſt number of the Cardinals agreed in the Election, and on the 21. day of *September*, 1503. choſe *Francis Piccolomini* Cardinal of *Siena* for their Pope, who to renew the memory of *Pius* the Second his Uncle, took upon him the name of *Pius* the Third, and was ſolemnly Crowned on the 8th. of *October* following; the See having been vacant ſix months, and three days.

Ceſar Borgia who had during this Election remained with his Army, at *Nepe*, ſo ſoon as he received intelligence that the Pope was Created returned to *Rome*, attended with 150 men at Arms, with the like number of Horſemen, and 800 Foot; and having paid his Reverence, and Obeyſance to the Pope, he returned his thanks to the College of Cardinals, for having Elected a perſon ſo wiſe, ſo religious, and good, and ſo worthy of the Papal Chair. *Borgia* having performed this Ceremony, took up his Lodgings in the *Vatican*, where the *Vrſini*, thirſty of Revenge, aſſaulted him with armed force, and he as valiantly defending himſelf, many were killed on both ſides: and at length *Borgia* by order of the Pope was for his better ſecurity ſent to the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, whence without licenſe from the Pope, he had not liberty to go abroad, all his people forſaking him, and flying where their fear or fortune led them. Theſe troubles to a perſon aged and ſick as this Pope was, haſtned the accompliſhment of his days, ſo that he expired his laſt breath on the 18th. of *October*, 1503. being the 26th. day after his Election; not without ſome ſuſpicion of Poiſon: for having a ſore Leg, it was imagined that by the ſuggeſtion and contrivance of *Pandolfo Petrucci* the Tyrant of *Siena*, ſome Poiſon being injected to the Wound, he was thereby greatly afflicted, and more ſpeedily brought to his end, being aged 74 years, 5 months, and 10 days. He was afterwards buried in the Chappel of S. *Andrew*, belonging to S. *Peter*'s Church, under a fair Monument of Marble, near to the Sepulchre of his Uncle. After which the See was vacant 14 days only.

JULIUS II.

THE Funeral Obſequies of Pope *Pius* being performed, the very firſt night that the Cardinals entered into the Conclave, being the 9th. day of *October*, *Julian de la Rovere*, Biſhop Cardinal of *Oſtia* was Elected Pope, with the common conſent of 37 Suffrages, all of them ſo unanimouſly concurring together, that before his choice, all reports fixed and concentered upon him;and afterwards he gave himſelf the name of *Julius* the Second. He was born in *Savona*, within the Dominions of *Genoua*, his Fathers name was *Raphael*, the Brother of *Sixtus* the Fourth, whoſe Pedigree we have already mentioned; he had two Brothers, *Bartholomew* who was a Frier of the Order of S. *Francis*, Biſhop of *Ferrara*, and Patriarch of *Antioch*; and *John* who was Prefect of *Rome*, and Duke of *Sora*, and *Senegaglia*, and he himſelf from Biſhop of *Carpentras*, was at the ſame time with *Peter Riario* created Cardinal of S. *Peter ad Vincula*, by the ſaid *Sixtus* the Fourth. Having obtained this Dignity, *Julius* appeared extreamly grave and modeſt in all his actions, ſo that he acquired the good eſteem and opinion of all perſons, obliging all thoſe with whom he treated by his courteous and affable behaviour: he afterwards obtained the Title of *Biſhop* of *Albano*, then of *Sabino*, and great Penitentiary, and laſtly of Biſhop of *Oſtia*, *Velletri*, and Legate at *Avignon*. In the time of *Innocent* the Eighth he had gained great power, and intereſt in the Court of *Rome*: but in the time of *Alexander* the Sixth, he was forced to give way to other Favorites, and the difficulties of thoſe times, and retire into *France*, where he remained for the ſpace of ten years: At length (as we have ſaid) having amaſſed great wealth, he was almoſt by the common agreement of the whole Conclave promoted to the Papal Chair, not without the aſtoniſhment, and diſpleaſure of many, who being acquainted with his fierce and impetuous Spirit, did admire (as *Guicciardin* ſaith) how a man known to *Lib.* 6. be impatient of reſt, and tranquility, who had conſumed his Youth in continual Travels, offended many by neceſſity, and exerciſed hatred and hoſtility, could ſo ſpeedily operate on ſo many diſſenting Spirits, and cauſe them to conſpire in an unanimous agreement for his promotion. But on the contrary, it will not ſeem ſo ſtrange, if it be conſidered, that he had been a long time Cardinal, and by degrees gained ſuch intereſt, and authority in the Court of *Rome*, that he was ſtiled the principal Defender of the Eccleſiaſtical Dignity, and Authority, that he was magnificent in his Buildings, generous in his benefits, and ſo punctual to his word, that Pope *Alexander*, who was otherwiſe his mortal enemy, would yet do him that right, as to confeſs him faithful, and juſt to the performance of his promiſes: but yet this good quality which he was ſo careful to preſerve in his private condition; he made no ſcruple, or conſcience to violate that he might become Pope: for the obtaining of which, he made ſuch immoderate promiſes to Cardinals, Princes, and Barons, that he well knew the whole Revenue, and Price of the Papal See, if ſet to ſale, had not been able to have ſatisfied; and therefore 'tis not difficult to imagin, how the promiſes of a perſon, not uſed to beguile, ſhould procure confidence in the minds of the moſt ſcrupulous, and wary perſons. Nor were the Cardinals only poſſeſſed with theſe expectations; but *Ceſar Borgia* himſelf conceived hopes upon his promiſes of being confirmed General of the Armies of the Church, and of a Marriage between his Daughter, and the Popes Nephew called *Francis Maria de la Rovere*, the Prefect of *Rome*. But he ſoon diſcovered the vanity of theſe hopes; for *Julius* being Crowned the 26th. of *November*, and ſetled in the Papal Chair, would afford him no other grace, or favour, than 1503. his liberty, and freedom from impriſonment, upon condition that he ſhould deliver up into the power of the Church, the Fortreſſes of *Ceſena* and *Forli*, which were the retirements of his impious Guards. *Borgia* who had deſerved a thouſand deaths, being in this manner ſet at liberty from the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, embarked at *Oſtia* in a Boat for *Naples*,

Naples, where ſo ſoon as he arrived, he was ſeized by the great Captain *Gonſalvo*, by order from the Catholick King, and being thence tranſported into *Spain*, he made his eſcape, and fled to *John* King of *Navarre*, where in a certain fray, he was cut in pieces by the *Cantabrians*, who are a people that border upon *Aſturias*.

Julius being thus rid of this Peſt of mankind, by whom all *Italy* was embroiled, and ſeveral dominions diſmembred from the Church; he endeavoured to recover all back again; for being a true Defender of the Eccleſiaſtical Poſſeſſions, and Rights, he would compound for nothing, but rather amplifie, than retrench the Dominions of the Church.

The firſt enterpriſe therefore that he undertook, was to drive out and expel *John Bentivoglio*, his old inveterate enemy, who had unjuſtly uſurped a power over the City of *Bologna*; forcing him with his Wife, and Children to remain baniſhed in *Baſſetto*, a Country belonging to the Dominions of *Parma*, and contentedly to conſent to the deſtruction of his Palace, which was a fair and noble ſtructure.

His next deſign was againſt the *Venetians*, for recovery of *Arimino* and *Ravenna* with the Territories thereunto belonging, by force of arms from the *Venetians*; and to that end entered into a League with *Maximilian* the Emperor, the Kings of *France*, of *Spain*, with the Dukes of *Ferrara*, and *Mantoua*, all conſpiring to the total ruine and ſubverſion of the *Venetian* State; the which League was agreed, and ſigned at *Cambray*, a City of *Flanders*. Moreover the quarrel between the Pope and the *Venetians* was augmented by the diſpute they had for the City of *Faenza*, which the Pope laid claim unto, as having always been a part of the Eccleſiaſtical State; the which he reſolved to wreſt from their hands by the Spiritual, as well as by Temporal Arms, having thundered out his Excommunications both againſt the Senate and People. On the contrary the *Venetians* pleaded, that the City of *Faenza* was no part of the Poſſeſſions of the Church, in regard that the Pope, and Cardinals had in a full Conſiſtory amply transferred the Rights and Juriſdiction thereof to *Ceſar Borgia* formerly Duke *Valentino*. That before that Grant, the Popes had never poſſeſſed *Faenza*, but from time to time had given it to new Vicars, without acknowledging other ſuperiority, than the Tribute, which they offered to pay readily, when it ſhould be required. Theſe Arguments were ſeconded by the *Venetians*, with an Army, which appearing before *Faenza*, and the Batteries began, the City yielded it ſelf into the hands of the Enemy; they might with like facility have taken *Imola* and *Furli*; but not to excite the indignation of the Pope too far, they abſtained from farther proceedings, being maſters already of *Faenza* and *Rimini* in *Romagna*, with their Countries *Monteſiora*, *S. Archangeo*, *Veruca*, *Gattere*, *Savignano*, and *Meldole*, with the Haven and Country of *Ceſena*, and in the Territory of *Immola*, of *Toſſignana*, *Solarvola*, and *Montfattagla*.

Guicciardin, lib. 6.

Notwithſtanding this ſucceſs, and force of the *Venetians*, the ſtorm and power of ſo many potent Confederates raiſed againſt them, was too furious, and a match unequal for them to contend with. The firſt beginning to ſo great a War was made the 15th. of *April*, when *Monſieur de Chaumont* with 3000 Horſe, paſſed the Ford of *Adda*, and joyning afterwards with the other Confederates, gave Battel to *Alviano*, the General of the *Venetian* Forces: the Fight was continued, and maintained with

1509.

with great bravery, and reſolution on both ſides; but at length the *Venetians* being overwhelmed with the number of their Enemies, and deprived of ſtrength rather than courage, without turning their backs to the Enemy, they remained almoſt all dead upon the place. After this Defeat, which happened on the 14th. of *May*, 1509. at *Guiaradadda*, the Emperor *Maximilian* took poſſeſſion of *Verona*, *Vicenza*, *Padoua*, and *Trivigiano*. The King of *France*, of *Bergamo*, *Breſcia*, *Cremona*, and *Crema*. The King of *Spain* of *Trani*, *Monopoli*, and *Barletta* in *Puglia*. The Pope had *Ravenna*, *Arimino*, and all *Romagna* delivered to him. The Duke of *Ferrara* was made maſter of *Rovigo*, and the Duke of *Mantoua* was re-poſſeſſed of *Aſola*. So that this Republick, which had not long ſince been ſo renowned, and famed for greatneſs thro the whole world, was now confined within thoſe Fortifications which the Sea had made them, and wherein their Commonwealth took its firſt beginning. When the news of ſo great a Calamity arrived at *Venice*, great was the conſternation of the Counſellors, and the cries and lamentations of the Citizens, placing before their eyes nothing but the utter ruin and deſtruction of their Government, and Country, whoſe glory, and puiſſance a few months before had been ſuch, that they promiſed to themſelves no leſs than the Empire of all *Italy*. But now being reduced to a low, and deſpairing condition, they reſolved to caſt themſelves at the feet of the Pope, humbly ſupplicating his Pardon, and Mercy; and that he would be pleaſed as a tender Father to receive them with pious compaſſion into his Arms and Protection. And now *Julius* having gained all the Cities and Countries from them, to which he could lay any Claim or Title, began to melt with pity in conſideration of their afflicted State: And therefore to comfort them again, he openly abſolved their Embaſſador in the Portico of S. *Peter's* Church, and by them in a ſolemn manner took off the Excommunication from the People: Then Articles of Peace were made, and a League between them: The Pope was to have a full power and authority to beſtow all the Benefices, Livings, and Preferments belonging to the Church within their Dominions: and on the other ſide the *Venetians* were to have *Padoua* reſtored to them; and their Title and Dominion over the Seas confirmed, and continued. The Conceſſion of *Padoua* was greatly diſpleaſing to the Emperor *Maximilian*; nor was the *French* King contented with the Reconciliation which paſſed between the Pope and the *Venetians*; ſo that a miſ-underſtanding being hence created between the Pope and theſe two great Princes, matters broke out into an open War. *Julius* that he might weaken the *French* Intereſt and Party, endeavoured to withdraw *Alfonſo de Eſté*, Duke of *Ferrara* from the friendſhip of King *Lewis*; but he having anciently conceived an implacable hatred againſt the *Venetians*, and being bribed alſo by the *French* Mony, refuſed to give ear to the perſwaſions, or injunctions of the Pope. *Julius* highly enraged hereat, thundered out his Excommunications againſt him, warning the *French* King not to take part againſt him in defence of the Contumacy, and Rebellion of the Duke of *Ferrara*, who was a Feudatary, and held all his Lands and Dominions in right of the Church, and for the better, and more convenient proſecution of this War, he removed his Court to *Bologna*. But theſe menaces and motions not being able to divert the *French* King, nor Emperor from their Alliance with the Duke of *Ferrara*, nor their deſign

Guicciardin, *lib.* 8.

of utterly ſubverting the *Venetian* State; the Pope reſolved to fortifie himſelf by a League with *Spain*, and having hired a great number of *Switzers*, he joyned the Army of the Church with that of the *Venetians*; and having thereby compoſed a Body of about 12000 Foot, under the command of *Franciſco Moralva*, he took the City of *Modena*, and the City and Territory of *Mirandola*, and then returned triumphantly to *Bologna*. But this good ſucceſs continued not long; for the *French* growing ſtrong, did firſt by an Army under Monſieur *Chaumont*, attempt the Siege of *Bologna*; but the Pope being recruited with the Forces of *Venice*, and *Spain*, obliged *Chaumont* to withdraw his Army, after the propoſitions of Peace negotiated by *Laurence Pucci* the Popes Datary of *Florence*, were rendred ineffectual. Afterwards the Pope recommending the defence and ſafety of the City of *Bologna* to the care of the Magiſtrates, and exhorting them to be loyal, and faithful to the Church, departed thence for *Ravenna*, with intention ſpeedily to return to *Rome*. After his departure *Trivulſe* who was conſtituted General of the *French* Army in the place of *Chaumont*, approaching *Bologna* with all his Force, ſo terrified the Cardinal of *Pavia*, who was left there for Legat, or Governor of the City, that he immediately fled, and ſurendred all without ſtriking of one ſtroke: The like panick fear poſſeſſing the Army of the Church, which lay quartered not far from thence, they all fled, leaving their Cannon, Proviſions, and Baggage to the Enemy. *Trivulſe* entering the City of *Bologna*, delivered it into the hands of *Bentivoglio*, whoſe Family had been ancient Lords of it; and not farther to irritate the anger, and diſpleaſure of the Pope, he proceeded no farther, but retired with his Army into the Dutchy of *Milan*.

The Pope (as he had juſt cauſe) reſenting this loſs of *Bologna*, being the chief City next to *Rome* of the Eccleſiaſtical State, did ſeem inclinable to Articles of Peace, and Accommodation; but his actions were guided in ſuch ſort, that they ſeemed rather to proceed from an intention to avoid the preſent danger, than from any deſire he had to Peace: fear, obſtinacy, hatred, and diſdain ſtriving together in him. In the mean time ſeveral accuſations were brought to him of Treaſon and Cowardiſe againſt the Cardinal of *Pavia*, whom the Pope ſo entirely loved, that no prejudicate thoughts could take place in his mind againſt him; and therefore when the Cardinal came to *Ravenna* to clear himſelf of the aſperſions which were caſt upon him; the Pope ſeemed ſo little to be touched, or affected with them, that as ſoon as the Cardinal arrived and demanded Audience, he rejoyced much, and invited him to Dinner. But as he was going to the Pope's Palace, attended with a Guard of Horſemen, the Duke of *Urbin* bearing an ancient grudg, and hatred to him, reproaching him of Cowardiſe, which had cauſed the loſs of *Bologna*, and the flight of the Army; he with a ſmall train ruſht in amongſt his Guard of Horſemen, who out of reverence and reſpect made him way, and with a Poniard ſlew the Cardinal with his own hand: who, tho for the degree he held, ought to have been treated at another rate; yet for his infinite Vices deſerved a more cruel puniſhment. The death of the Cardinal of *Pavia* by the many ill circumſtances of it, did more nearly affect the Pope; for the murther having been perpetrated by his Nephew upon his deareſt Favourite, on a Cardinal of his high Degree, and in a place ſo near his perſon, were all aggravations to increaſe his grief, and ſhame, who had made profeſſions to preſerve and exalt the Eccleſiaſtical Dignity. The Pope not able to bear this grief, nor attemper his fury, departed the ſame day from *Ravenna* to *Rome*; and for the greater augmentation of his trouble and grief, he was overtaken in his journey as he travelled, with a report, that at *Bologna*, *Modena*, and other Cities, Placats were affixed in all publick places, denouncing and publiſhing a Council to be held, and celebrated on the firſt day of *September* following at *Piſa*, where the Pope himſelf was alſo Cited to appear. This Council was convened by the Authotity of the Diſſenting Cardinals, ſuch as *Bernardino Carvagiale* a *Spaniard*, who was the chief leader and director of the Schiſm, *William Briſoner* a *French* Biſhop, *Francis Borgia* a *Spaniard*, Cardinal of S. *Cecilia*, *Renat de Brie* a *Frenchman*, Cardinal of S. *Sabina*, and *Frederick Sanſeverino* an *Italian*, Cardinal of S. *Angelo*; all which agreed, and pretended that a Council might, where was apparent neceſſity, be judicially convoked by them: and that when a Pope was guilty of Simony, infamous and damnable in his manners, Author of ſo many Wars, and notoriouſly incorrigible to the univerſal ſcandal of all Chriſtendom; that then the power of convocating a Council (which was the only remedy and redreſs for ſo many evils) did lawfully devolve unto them, eſpecially having the Authority of the Emperor, and the conſent of the moſt Chriſtian King, together with the Clergy of *Germany* and *France* concurring. The Pope enraged with this bold attempt of his contumacious Cardinals, iſſued out his Excommunications againſt them, depriving them of their Hats, Honors, and Dignities Eccleſiaſtical: Notwithſtanding which, the deſign of the Council proceeded, and on the firſt day of *September* the Proctors of the Cardinals being come to *Piſa*, did there celebrate the Acts for opening of the ſame; with which the Pope conceived yet higher indignation againſt the *Florentines*, for that they had ſuffered the Conventicle, (for ſo he called it) to take beginning in their State, did declare and publiſh, that whoſoever did favour the Conventicle of *Piſa*, did ſtand actually Excommunicated, Interdicted, and ſubject to all the Penalties, ſeverely ordained by Laws againſt Schiſmaticks and Hereticks; and that accordingly *Lewis* XII. King of *France*, together with the Cities of *Florence* and *Piſa*, did ſtand actually Excommunicated and Interdicted. And farther to countermine this Council, he publiſhed a General Council to be held at the *Lateran*; and to do the greateſt deſpight imaginable to the *Florentines*, he conſtituted Cardinal *John de Medices*, who with his whole Family was exiled from *Florence*, Legate of *Bologna*, *Romagna*, and of the whole Army of the League; and to give farther diverſion and trouble in *France*, he incited *Henry* VIII. King of *England*, and *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, to joyn in a League with him; the firſt to enter his Forces into *Aquitaine*, and the latter to wage War on the King of *Navarre*, who being joyned in Confederacy with *Lewis*, did likewiſe lie under the cenſure of Excommunication. Matters being thus diſpoſed, he finiſhed the Articles of a League made with the Catholick King, and the Senate of *Venice*, which was ſolemnly publiſhed on the 5*th.* of *October*, in the Church of *Santa Maria del Popolo*, the Pope and Cardinals being preſent, where it was ſolemnly declared, that the intent thereof was to preſerve the unity of the Church, to defend her from the preſent Schiſm, to recover the City of *Bologna*, which was the right of the Church, to confound the Aſſembly at *Piſa*, and finally, to chaſe and expel the *French*

Guicciardin, *lib.* 10.

by force of Arms out of *Italy*. *Lewis* finding himſelf on all ſides hardly beſet, haſtned the Recruits of his Army, and withdrawing the Forces he had in *Breſcia*, which he had lately recovered from the *Venetians*, and from *Bologna*, which compoſed in all a Body of about 15500 men, he marched by *Ravenna*, in order to joyn with the Troops of the Duke of *Ferrara*, who was then Confederate with *France*. The Popes Army, with the Allies conſiſting of about 13000 Foot, and 1800 men at Arms, marched towards the relief of *Ravenna*, which was then hardly beſieged by the *French* Army, under the Command of *Gaſton de Foix* a valiant and experienced General. The Papal Army being encamped at no far diſtance from the *French*, endeavoured to avoid a Battel, which the Enemy frequently offered them; but finding that unleſs they did fight, *Ravenna* would be taken, for ſuch wide breaches were made in the Walls by the Cannon, that the Enemy was ready to enter, and in ſight of their Army to make themſelves Maſters of the City; to prevent which, and the diſgrace of ſuch a miſchief, time was not farther to be loſt, nor an Engagement to be longer declined; ſo that on *Eaſter* day both Armies joyned Battel: The Fight continued ſo very long, and bloody, that in the ſpace of ſix hours, it was ſcarcely diſcernable to which ſide the Victory inclined. At length, by direction of the Duke of *Ferrara*, the Cannon being brought by a long compaſs about to play on the Flank of the Army, the *Spaniards* and *Italians* began to fly, leaving their Baggage and the glory of the day unto the *French*, which they gained with ſo much blood, and loſs of the principal Commanders, and flower of their Army, that they ſeemed rather vanquiſhed, than Conquerors, and to remain in a condition which afforded them no cauſe of triumph in their Victory. It is ſaid, that twenty thouſand men were ſlain in this Battel, and the numbers almoſt equal on each ſide: amongſt which, 150 Gentlemen belonging to the Court of the *French* King were killed, five of the Family of *Colonna*, with *Gaſton de Foix* their General. Of the Popes Army the Legate *John de Medices*, with ſeveral other Captains was taken Priſoner. The firſt news of this Defeat, and the ill conſequences thereof, (which was the taking and ſacking of *Ravenna*) was entertained at *Rome* with great fear and tumult; ſo that the Cardinals running haſtily to the Pope, urged and preſſed him with earneſt and vehement Petitions to conclude the War, and accept ſuch reaſonable and moderate conditions, as they were aſſured the King of *France* would be ready to offer. On the other ſide, the Embaſſadors of the King of *Aragon*, and the Senate of *Venice* entertained other ſentiments, judging from the advices they had received, that matters were not reduced to ſuch extremities, as the fears and melancholy fancies of the Cardinals ſuggeſted: for that the *French* Army had not gained this Victory with ſo little loſs, but that the great effuſion of blood which it had coſt, had weakened their Force to a degree, as was not in a ſhort time to be recovered; nor was the death of that valiant and wiſe General *Gaſton de Foix*, and other Captains ſlain on the *French* ſide to be repaired in this Age. Likewiſe, it was further urged, that the Vice-Roy was eſcaped with the greater part of the Cavalry, and that the *Spaniſh* Infantry were retreated from the Battel in good order, which being joyned with the *Swiſſers*, which were daily expected, there would be no neceſſity at preſent of yielding to the conditions of the *French*, which

Guicciardin, lib. 10.

in this conjuncture, would be very unequal, and diſhonorable, and that therewith they muſt expect to receive Laws from the pride of *Bernardin Carvagiale*, and the inſolence of *Frederick de Sancta Severin*, and the other diſſenting and Schiſmatical Cardinals. Things being in this manner debated before the Pope, he remained doubtful what to conclude, or reſolve, fear and hope ſtriving within him: But whilſt he thus remained in ſuſpenſe, the courſe of fortune began to turn; for Monſieur *de Paliſſa*, who ſucceeded *Gaſton de Foix* in the command of the *French* Army, on a ſudden departed from *Romagna*, and drew all his Forces into the Dutchy of *Milan*, being alarmed by deſcent of the *Swiſſers* into *Lombardy*, leaving only 300 Lances, 300 Light-Horſemen, and 6000 Foot, with eight pieces of Artillery behind, under command of the Legate of the Council. This news delivered the Pope from the fear of being forced to leave *Rome*, and confirmed the ſtate of his affairs in ſuch manner, that he reſolved to continue the War with better hopes, and expectations of ſucceſs.

For the Pope's affairs having regained their reputation, the new Council lately convened, was on the firſt of *May* opened in the Church of *S. John Lateran* at *Rome*; to this Aſſembly the Diſſenting Cardinals were cited to give their attendance; but they not appearing, were on the 8*th.* day of the Seſſions declared contumacious, and Excommunicated, and deprived of all their Temporal and Spiritual Degrees, Honors, and Offices, and the people abſolved from their Submiſſion, and Obedience to them. It was farther alſo declared, That their Council held at *Piſa*, and afterwards removed to *Milan*, was but a Conventicle, and an unlawful and Schiſmatical Meeting, and all their Acts rendered void, null, and of none effect. In the mean time the Cities of *Lombardy* being encouraged by the *Swiſſers*, who were now come into *Italy* in favour of the Pope, revolted, and re-aſſuming their ancient Liberty, aſſailed the *French* with open force, and overthrew them. The *Venetians* alſo joyning with them, proſecuted their Victory in ſuch manner, that in the ſpace of 70 days after the Battel of *Ravenna*, the *French* Army was almoſt wholly defeated; and the remainder by order of King *Lewis*, was recalled to his aſſiſtance againſt the Kings of *England* and *Spain*, who at that time miſerably infeſted his Country; ſo that in a ſhort time all *Italy* was freed from the ſlavery of the *French*. The Diſſenting Cardinals having loſt their protection at *Milan*, fled from thence to *Lions* where they were kindly received and entertained at the charge of King *Lewis*.

The *French* being thus driven out of *Italy*, all the Cities and Towns belonging to the Pope, did by conſequence return to the Eccleſiaſtical State: *Parma*, and *Piacenza* being dependencies on the Exarchat of *Ravenna*, voluntarily yielded to the Pope, all the other Towns of *Romagna* followed their example, together with *Bolognia*; which caſting off all reſpect to the Family of the *Bentivogli*, expelled them from their Confines; with which the Pope not being ſatisfied, purſued them with the thunder of his Excommunications. *Genoua* being alſo abandoned by the *French*, was poſſeſſed by *Fregoſo*. The *Venetians* ſeized on *Crema*, and *Breſcia*, ſuch of the Family of the *Medices*, as had followed the Popes Party, were re-inſtated in *Florence*; *Peter Joderini*, who had been created perpetual Gonfaloniere, being expelled thence. The State of *Milan* was reſigned to *Maximilian Sforza*, as the true and lawful Prince; all which benefits and happy ſucceſſes being procured by the Arms of the *Swiſſers*, they were in the Council of *Lateran* adjudged and declared to be the Reſtorers of the Liberties of *Italy*.

And now all things being reſtored to this happy ſtate, the Pope required the *Venetians* in virtue of the late Articles, to deliver *Verona* and *Vicenza* to *Maximilian*; which they obſtinately refuſing to perform, he entred into a League with the Emperor againſt them. The *Venetians* on the other ſide, being well acquainted with the temper of the Pope, confederated themſelves in an Alliance with *Lewis* the *French* King, hoping by his aſſiſtance and protection, to defend themſelves from that League; to this intereſt likewiſe the Diſſenting Cardinals adhered; who inſtigating *Lewis* every day againſt the Pope, and raiſing tumults in ſeveral places, gave out a report, that the Abbot of *Clugni* was to be created Pope in the place of *Julio*; the which extremely incenſed and moved him with choler and diſdain, for he had a mind always unquiet; not ſooner ending one enterprize, before he began another; his Plots and deſigns always increaſing. *Guicciardin, lib.* 11. He determined now at the beginning of the Spring to attempt *Ferrara*, a deſign ſo much deſired: He had bought the City of *Siena* for thirty thouſand Ducats. He agreed to lend the Emperor forty thouſand Ducats, receiving *Modena* in pawn. He threatned *Luca* for ſeizing *Garſagnana*. He teſtified ſome anger againſt the Cardinal *de Medicis*, becauſe he ſeemed more inclining to the Party of the *Catholick* King than to his; and ſtudied new Plots and Practiſes to alter the Eſtate of *Florence*. And in this manner, having a thouſand irons in the fire, he was continually plotting how he might drive the *Spaniſh* Army out of *Italy* by the help of the *Swiſſers*, whom he always extolled and embraced; it being his great deſign, as he often uttered, to expel all Foreign Force out of *Italy*. He had alſo moved *Henry* VIII. King of *England* to make War upon *France*, and in deteſtation of *Lewis*, he had transferred by a publick Decree of the Council of *Lateran*, The Title of *Moſt Chriſtian* to the King of *England*, for which there was a Bull prepared, and written, containing alſo in the ſame, a deprivation, and depoſing of the King of *France* from all his Power and Dignities, giving that Kingdom for a prey to any who could conquer it. With theſe great thoughts, and perhaps many other more ſecret intrigues, he fell ſick of a violent Fever, cauſed perhaps, by the violent agitations of his mind; and in a *Anno* 1513. few days died in the *Vatican*, on the 21*ſt.* of *February*, 1513. the Council of *Lateran* ſtill ſitting: He was aged about 70 years, and held the Papal Chair for the ſpace of nine years, three months, and five and twenty days; and was buried in S. *Peter*'s Church, in the Chappel of his Uncle Pope *Sixtus*. This *Julius* the Second had a ſpirit more agreeable to a Soldier, or Martial Governor, than a Paſtor of the Church. He was a Prince of incredible conſtancy and courage, but ſo violent, and of ſuch unmeaſurable apprehenſions, that the Diſcord of Princes, and the Reverence which ſome of them bore to the Church, preſerved him from ruine, more than his own moderation or diſcretion: And yet nevertheleſs he was lamented by ſuch, who knew not how to diſtinguiſh between the tempers which are decent, and agreeable to difference a temporal, from a ſpiritual Prince; for certainly, had he been a Secular, his inclinations, his induſtry, and zeal, to enlarge and advance his Dominions, might have been more commendable, than in him, who pretended to be Vicar to the Prince of Peace.

LEO

LEO X.

POPE *Julio* being dead, and his Funerals performed according to the accuſtomed Rites: the Cardinals being four and twenty in number, entered the Conclave in a peaceable manner, without any appearance of outward force over-awing their Election, or practices of Simony and corruption, or other bad Arts, by which it was manifeſt, that the two former Popes had acquired their Dignity, and ſo on the 11*th.* of *March*, being the ſeventh day after, the Cardinals entered the Conclave. *John de Medicis* of that great and illuſtrious Family in *Florence*, (now Dukes of *Tuſcany*) was by the common Suffrages of 23 Cardinals Elected Pope, taking upon himſelf the name of *Leo* X. At the Age of 13 years he was made a Cardinal by *Innocent* VIII. and now was about the Age of 37 years, when he was created Pope; a thing rare, and unuſual to have a Pope ſo young, and which had not otherwiſe been practicable, but by the concurrence of the young Cardinals, ſuch as the Cardinal of *Aragon*, *Gonzaga*, *Cornaro*, *Petrucci*, &c. the Conclave, before they came to this Election, propoſed, and with many warm Debates conſidered of the ways, how the Secular Power which the late Popes had exerciſed in a diſorderly manner, ſacrificing all to their luſt and ambition, might be reſtrained within ſome limits and bounds of moderation; but thoſe rules and terms agreed upon, were ſpeedily relaxed and diſpenſed with, ſo ſoon as a new Lord or Governor appeared, whom every one courted, being deſirous with humble obſequiouſneſs to gratifie; and freeing him from all the clogs and limits to his power, endeavoured to teſtifie the confidence they had in him. Being thus choſen on the 11*th.* of *March*, he was crowned on the 19*th.* and on the 11*th.* of *April* following, in a moſt pompous and ſolemn manner he went to viſit the Church of S. *John Lateran*, and with ſuch Magnificence and State, as was never equalled by former Popes.

The World conceived great joy and expectations of good at the firſt news of his Election; for being a perſon of unſpotted Chaſtity, of exemplary Piety, and unblemiſhed in his manners; and the Papal Dignity obtained fairly by him without Simony, Corruption, or evil Arts, it was reaſonable to expect, and preſage from ſuch happy beginnings, times of more calmneſs and bleſſings to the Church, than under the turbulent Reigns of the two former Popes.

The Exiled Cardinals (of which thoſe of greateſt note were *S. Croia* and *S. Severin*) hearing of the death of *Julius* II. began their Journey towards *Rome*; and being landed at *Livorn*, they went to *Piſa*, and thence had ſafe conduct to *Florence*. The Pope having received intelligence of their arrival in that City, ſent the Biſhop of *Orvietto* to adviſe them not to proceed farther, until ſuch time as it ſhould be determined in what manner they ſhould be received at *Rome*. For conſidering they had been judicially deprived, and their deprivation confirmed in the Council of *Lateran*, that they ſhould forbear to go in the habit of Cardinals, but preſent, and offer themſelves in ſome other modeſt and penitennitential dreſs, whereby they might teſtifie their repentance and humility, which would be the beſt motives and arguments to reſtore them again to their priſtine condition; the which being accordingly agreed, the Cardinals renouncing their late Schiſm, with all ſubmiſſion and humility returned to *Rome*, and kiſſed the feet of the Pope. Notwithſtanding which, it was judged fit, that the Council of *Lateran* ſhould ſtill be continued, until many diſorders which had crept lately into the Church, were wholly redreſſed.

And now *Leo* being ſetled in the Papal Chair, ſhewed himſelf deſirous to continue, and conſerve the Peace of Chriſtendom, which he thought would be moſt eaſily effected, by perſuading the warlike and martial ſpirits of thoſe times, to ſpend their fury upon the *Turk*, and in the mean time endeavoured to accommodate, and compoſe the differences between *Maximilian* the Emperor and the *Venetians*, touching *Verona* and *Piacenza* by an amicable agreement. At the ſame time alſo he hired the *Switzers* with a great ſum of mony to aſſiſt *Sforza* Duke of *Milan* againſt the *French*; for notwithſtanding his inclinations in the general were towards a peace, yet his diſlikes to that Nation, and the diſpleaſures he had taken on many accounts againſt *Charles* the 12*th*. moved him with earneſt deſires to chaſe the *French* out of *Italy*. To perform which, the *Switzers* were eſteemed the only inſtruments capable for this exploit, and to engage them therein, a largeſs was ſent them of 42 thouſand Ducats, with pretence, (in caſe the matter ſhould come to light) that twenty thouſand of them were upon account of their yearly Penſions, and that the other twenty two thouſand were due on Arrear by preceding Popes, to the three Cantons. The *Switzers* being ſatisfied, and animated with this payment, reſolved to accept of no conditions with the *French*, who being now in *Lombardy*, had forced *Milan* to ſurrender, with all other Cities belonging to that Dutchy, except *Novaro*, and *Coma*, which being defended by the *Switzers*, held out as yet in the name of *Maximilian Sforza*. Wherefore, the *French* having no other work remaining, beſieged *Novaro*, and had ſo battered the Walls, and made ſuch breaches, that they were ready to enter their Men. Howſoever, fearing the reſolution of the Beſieged, who all the time of the Siege, had not ſo much as ſhut their Gates againſt the Enemy; and, underſtanding that Relief was coming to the Town, and an Army under the command of that renowned Captain *Altoſaſſo*, they retired at two miles diſtance from the Walls of *Novaro*; with which the *Switzers* were ſo encouraged, that not ſtaying for the Relief expected, they made a Sally on the *Enemy*, and gave them a total Defeat, taking all their Baggage, with two and twenty pieces of Artillery remaining a prey to the Conquerors. After which, the City of *Milan*, with all the places belonging to it, returned again into the poſſeſſion and power of their Duke; the people of *Milan* giving two hundred thouſand Ducats as a Reward to the *Switzers* for the reſtoration of their Liberty.

Guicciardin, lib. 11.

All things now putting on a face of Liberty, and Peace in *Italy*, the *French* King ſeemed willing to demonſtrate a filial obedience and ſubmiſſion to the Church, and declared himſelf well pleaſed with the Pope, for receiving the Diſſenting and Schiſmatical Cardinals to Pardon, and Grace. The Pope was alſo in like manner ſucceſsful in his Negotiations of Peace, between the Emperor and the *Venetians*; for both Parties having referred the determination of their caſe to his Arbitration and compriſe, a Peace enſued, tho' the Sentence and Determination was not Pronounced and Publiſhed until the year following. *Lewis* likewiſe the *French* King, at the perſuaſions and inſtigation of the Clergy, was very deſirous to come in, and be reconciled to the Papal See; and to that end ſent the Biſhop of *Marſeilles* his Embaſſador to *Rome*, to treat and conclude all matters in diſpute, either relating to Spiritual or Temporal Affairs. At the Arrival of this Embaſſador, the Pope by a Decree of the *Lateran* Council, which ſtill continued, gave Licence to the Biſhop of *France*, and other Prelates, againſt whom his Predeceſſor Pope *Julius* had proceeded by cenſure of Excommunication to come in, and in the ſpace of one years time to purge themſelves of the contumacy with which they ſtood charged. In purſuance of which Decree, the Embaſſador, and other Agents from *France*, did in the name of the King abjure all the Acts and Decrees made and ordained by the Conventicle at *Piſa*; promiſing to acknowledg and hold for true and ſacred, all thoſe Acts and Concluſions which ſhould be declared by the Council of *Lateran*, and that ſix of thoſe Prelates which were preſent at the Convention of *Piſa*, ſhould repair to *Rome*, and in the name and behalf of all the *Gallican* Church, renounce, and diſown that Convention; and promiſe to ſubmit, and hold, and eſteem for Sacred and Obligatory, whatſoever ſhould be determined in their caſe, or in any other matter by the *Lateran* Council; and that then upon ſuch ſubmiſſion, the Council ſhould grant a full and pleanary Pardon and Abſolution for all thoſe Crimes committed by them againſt the Church of *Rome*. But whilſt theſe things were in Treaty, *Lewis* XII. being ſurprized by a Fever, died the firſt day of *January* 1515. at *Paris*, in whoſe place *Francis de Valois* the firſt of that name, Duke of *Angoleſme* ſucceeded. *Francis* having made a Peace with the King of *England*, aſſumed the Title of Duke of *Milan*, as appertaining to him not only by the ancient right of the Dukes of *Orleans*, but alſo as comprehended in the Inveſtiture made by the Emperor in the Treaty of *Cambray*, to recover which, he made a League with the *Venetians*, and paſſing into *Italy* with a powerful Army, declared War againſt *Maximilian Sforza* Duke of *Milan*, who on the other ſide had made an Alliance with the Emperor, the *Switzers*, and the King of *Spain*. The *Pope* being jealous of the *French*, believing, that ſo ſoon as they were become Maſters of *Milan*, they would alſo deſign upon *Piacenza*, and *Parma*, favoured the cauſe of Duke *Sforza*, and encouraged the *Switzers* by his Legate the Cardinal of *Sedan*, to continue firm and conſtant in defence of *Italy* againſt the *French* Arms, that ſo their ancient glory which had been in former years crowned with ſo much ſucceſs, might be maintained by them, and the Title of *Reſtorers of the Italian Liberty*, be for ever continued to their Honor. The *Switzers* having their valour provoked by ſuch incitements as theſe, encountred the *French* Army, which, under the auſpicious Conduct of King *Francis*, was paſſed into *Italy*, near *Marignan*, where after a ſhort conflict, the *Venetians* coming in to the aſſiſtance of the *French*, the *Switzers* were overthrown, and forced to retreat into *Milan*, which afterwards was ſurrendred, and Duke *Sforza* being taken Priſoner, was ſent into *France*, with an allowance of five and thirty thouſand Crowns a year, which he agreed to receive in lieu of his Dukedom. After this ſucceſs, *Parma* and *Piacenza* which had been annexed to the Church by the Arms of *Julius* II. fell into the poſſeſſion of the *French*; for *Leo* not having the courage to defend them, made them a Sacrifice to the Conqueror, and the price of his Peace with *France*, the which was concluded at *Bologna*, where an interview was appointed between the King and Pope *Leo*. The Pope entered the City on the 8*th*. of *December*, 1515. and the King two days after, having been received on the Confines of the Country of *Reggia* by the Cardinals of *Fieſchi* and *Medicis*, whom the Pope had appointed to be his Legates Apoſtolical to him. The King, ſo ſoon as he entered, was immediately conducted into the Conſiſtory, where before the *Pope*, by a Speech delivered by his Chancellor, he profeſſed all Obedience to the Papal Chair, and afterwards was lodged three days in the ſame Palace with the *Pope*, during which time, all the ſigns of good will and amity interceded between them, and all matters agreed which had relation to *Naples*, *Modena*, and other controverſies: And thus all things being amicably concluded, the King returned to *Milan*, and in a ſhort time after into *France*; leaving the Duke of *Bourbon* Lieutenant in his place: The *Pope* alſo went to *Florence*, where having paſſed the Winter, he in the Spring returned to *Rome*.

And now *Pope Leo* being a little at repoſe, deſigned the aſſiſtance of *Maximilian* the Emperor (with whom he was in League) to make his Brother *Julian* Lord of *Siena* and *Lucca*, and thereunto to adjoyn the Dukedoms of *Urbin* and *Ferrara*: but *Julian* unexpectedly dying, the ſame fortune was intended for *Laurence* his Nephew, Son of his Brother *Peter de Medicis*; and in the mean time, until this deſign could be ripened and put in practice, the *Pope* committed to him the Government of *Florence*, with condition that he ſhould act nothing without the privity and conſent of the Citizens. And now to prepare a way for taking the Dutchy of *Urbin* from *Franciſco Maria de la Rovere*, the *Pope* began with his Church Cenſures, cauſing the Accuſations againſt him to be publiſhed, wherein he expreſſed, that being in Pay, and under a Sallary from the Church, he had denied him the Service of thoſe Regiments for which he had received Pay, and had ſecretly compounded with the Enemy. That he had killed the Cardinal of *Pavia*, for which he was abſolved by Grace, and not by Juſtice, as alſo for many other Murders committed by him. Theſe, and other, were the Crimes which were alledged againſt him; but yet nothing animated the *Pope* ſo much with anger and diſdain againſt him, as that he had denied unto his Brother *Julian* his aid and aſſiſtance to return to *Florence*. The Succeſs of the War was this. So ſoon as *Renzo di Cere* the *Pope's* General with a conſiderable Army ſhowed himſelf upon the Frontiers of the Dutchy, the City of *Urbin* with other Towns belonging to it ſurrendred to the *Pope*, the Duke himſelf retiring to *Peſaro*; which alſo yielded together with *Sinigaglia*, and in the ſpace of four days all ſubmitted to the obedience of the *Pope*; and then the Duke with all his Family ſaved himſelf in *Mantua*.

Guicciardin, lib. 12.

Theſe ſucceſſes were followed by new deſigns upon *Siena*, from whence, by force of Arms he compelled the Prince *Borgheſe*, and Cardinal *Alſonſo* his Brother, both Sons of *Pandolſo Petrucci*, ro retire and make place for *Raphael Petrucci*, his old Friend, and Companion in his Exile; at which the Cardinal was ſo enraged, and excited beyond all patience, that he conſpired againſt the life of the Pope, which not ſucceeding, proved afterwards the cauſe of his own deſtruction. For this

Alſonſo

Alfonſo Cardinal of *Siena* revolving often in his mind the ingratitude of this Pope, who by the labors and dangers of *Pandolfo Petrucci* his Father, was with all his Family reſtored to the Government of *Florence*; and yet had in recompenſe of theſe benefits, cauſed him and his Brother *Borgheſe* to be thruſt out of *Siena*; the which thoughts boiling in his mind, he reſolved once with his own hand to ſtab the Pope; but being diverted from that intention by the danger of the Fact, and by the ill fame of a wickedneſs without example, to have a Pope killed by the hand of a Cardinal, he changed the Plot of the Dagger to Poiſon, which by the help of *Baptiſta Vercelli* a famous Chirurgeon, and his familiar Confident, he hoped to effect in this manner. The Pope being greatly afflicted with an old *Fiſtula* in his Fundament, this *Baptiſta* was to be preferred as an able man for this work; and then in dreſſing of the Wound he was to have injected Poiſon into it: but *Baptiſta* being long in getting admiſſion to the Pope's privacy, *Alfonſo* grew impatient of delays, and not being able to contain himſelf, continually uttered ſomething of paſſion, which gave the Pope juſt cauſe of ſuſpicion, that this *Alfonſo* was practiſing ſomething againſt his life: At length by ſome Letters which were intercepted, the Conſpiracy was detected, which the Pope diſſembling, invited *Alfonſo* to *Rome*, with promiſes of Reconciliation and Preferment; and for his encouragement thereunto, he gave him Letters of ſafe conduct, and his promiſe to the *Spaniſh* Embaſſador not to violate the ſame. But ſo ſoon as *Alfonſo* arrived, the Pope ſo little eſteemed the Faith he had given, that he cauſed him to be Arreſted, with his Friend Cardinal *De Sauli*, a *Genoeſe*, one ſo familiar and intimate with him, that it was believed, that one could not be guilty, or deſigning any action without the privity, and conſent of the other. Theſe two Cardinals being committed to Priſon in the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, the *Spaniſh* Embaſſador complained of the breach of Faith, which being given to the Kings Embaſſador, ought to have been obſerved with the ſame ſacred fidelity, as given to the King himſelf. Whereunto the Pope made anſwer, that in matters of a Conſpiracy, deſigning againſt the life of the Pope, no ſafe conduct was ſufficient, unleſs in ſome clauſe of it, the Crime it ſelf had been ſpecified with a peculiar *Proviſo*; and that in caſes of Poiſoning, which is deteſtable to God and man, no ſufficient proviſion can be made for ſecurity of the Offender, unleſs the Crime it ſelf be firſt mentioned, and pardoned. The matter being fully examined, and *Alfonſo* and *Bandinello* in a full Conſiſtory being found guilty, they were by publick ſentence of the Conſiſtory deprived of the Dignity of Cardinals, and delivered over to the Secular Power: which being done, the night following *Alfonſo* was Strangled: but the Sentence of *Bandinello* was changed to a perpetual Impriſonment; from which afterwards for a certain ſum of money he gained a releaſe.

Guicciardin, lib. 13.

Ibidem.

The ſucceſs which the Pope had againſt the Duke of *Urbin*, was different to that which he had againſt *Alfonſo* Duke of *Ferrara*, for he being a watchful man, and a good Soldier, defended himſelf againſt all the contrivances, and attempts of the Pope.

Towards the end of the year 1517. the King of *Spain* died, leaving his Nephew *Charles* of *Auſtria*, ſole Heir of all his Kingdoms, and Dominions in *Naples*, *Sicily*, and *Spain*, between whom, and the *French* King, there paſſed as yet, a fair, and amicable correſpondence. Notwithſtanding which things were troubleſom in *Italy*, and in deſpight of all the endeavours of the Pope, who deſired nothing ſo much as peace, all things were unquiet, and tended to War: for the *Switzers*, whoſe minds were rather inflamed with indignation, in remembrance of their late Defeat at *Marignan*, than abated, or humbled, entered into a League with *Maximilian* the Emperor, to drive the *French* out of all their Poſſeſſions in *Italy*: in oppoſition whereunto, the *French* joyning with the *Venetians*, recovered *Breſcia* out of the hands of the *Spaniards*, and *Verona* from the *Emperor*: And the *Venetians* by the ſupport of this Alliance, made no account of any amity with others, nor offered their Obedience to the Pope, notwithſtanding the endeavours of *Altobello* Biſhop of *Pola*, whom he had commiſſionated to be his Legate at *Venice*, not without ſome juſt reflections, as a matter unworthy the Pontificial Majeſty.

Franciſco Maria Duke of *Urbin* continued ſtill his War againſt the Pope for recovery of his State; but his ſucceſs was ill both againſt the City of *Oſimo*, and alſo before the Town of *Corinaldo*, from whence with great blemiſh of honor he was forced to raiſe his Siege: Nor was he more fortunate in his attempt to recover *Peſaro*; for having put to Sea ſeveral Ships to cut off all Proviſions from the Town, they were encountred by another Fleet ſet out by thoſe of *Rimini*, conſiſting of ſixteen Sail, with Barks, and Brigantines, which going in convoy with Veſſels laden with Proviſions to *Peſaro*, met the Navy of *Franciſco Maria*, and engaging with them, ſunk the Admiral, and deſtroyed their whole Fleet; with which ill ſucceſs, *Franciſco Maria* deſpairing of his Enterpriſe, departed thence. At *Rimini* he alſo was worſted, and forced to return with his Army into *Tuſcany*, where being in great want of Proviſions, and the Soldiers without Pay, lived by Prey and Pillage, whereby they began to be no leſs terrible to their friends, than to their enemies; and to grow weary of the War, having no hope to better their condition either by a Battel, or protraction of time. The Pope alſo on the other ſide became poor, having exhauſted his Treaſury, and doubtful of the Faith of his Allies, eſpecially of the King of *France*, who was ſlow and backward in the payment of thoſe monies agreed by Articles; ſo that Peace being the beſt expedient for good to both parties, propoſitions were made for a Peace between the Legate, and *Franciſco Maria*, which by the Mediation of Monſieur *D'Eſcut*, General of the *French* Forces in *Italy*, and *Don Hugo de Monaco* Vice-King of *Sicily*, was accorded on theſe conditions, That the Pope ſhould pay to the *Spaniſh* Footmen five and forty thouſand Ducats, and to the *Gaſcoins* and *Germans* threeſcore thouſand; and that upon ſuch payment they ſhould all depart within eight days out of the *State* of the Church, the Juriſdiction of *Florence*, and the Territories of *Urbin*. That *Franciſco Maria* ſhould leave, and abandon all his Poſſeſſions in that State within the term aforeſaid, with Licenſe to carry with him all his moveables, and Artillery, with his famous Library, which with great charge and diligence had been collected by *Frederick* his Grandfather by the Mothers ſide. That the Pope ſhould abſolve him of all Cenſures, and pardon all the Subjects of the State of *Urbin*, and thoſe who had been Enemies in this War. The *Spaniards*, *Gaſcoins*, and *Germans* having received their monies, marched to the Kingdom of *Naples*; and *Franciſco Maria* abandoned of all his Allies, returned to *Mantua*, accompanied only with one hundred Horſe, and ſix hundred Footmen.

In this manner ended the War with *Vrbin*, which tho it continued but eight months, yet had exhauſted the Coffers of the Pope of eight hundred thouſand Ducats, the greateſt part of which he had drawn from the Commonwealth of *Florence*, on the ſcore of his great intereſt in that City: and indeed his Charges were the greater, becauſe that with much ignominy, he was forced to purchaſe his peace with paying the Armies of his Enemy: Nor was the advantage which he gained at the concluſion, acquired by the valour of his Arms, or Virtue and Conduct of his Captains; for they being men of lewd lives, cowardly, and baſe, were proſperous in nothing, all their actions tending to increaſe diſorders, and multiply errors; whereby the Pope being at length forced to crave the aſſiſtance of all men, paid dearly for the purchaſe of *Vrbin*.

In this manner the year 1518. began, and continued with peace, and with an unuſual calmneſs in all the Regions of *Italy*, only the ſucceſs of Sultan *Selim* Emperor of the *Turks*, who had been victorious in *Perſia*, *Syria* and *Egypt*, alarm'd the Pope and the Chriſtian Princes; who apprehending with great dread the progreſs of his Arms, the number of his Ships and Gallies, which he was building, and all other Proviſions neceſſary for War, feared leſt he ſhould inveſt *Rhodes*, the Bulwark of Chriſtendom in the Eaſtern parts, or perhaps fall into *Hungaria*; which tho formerly defended by the Valour of the Inhabitants, yet now lay expoſed by its own Civil and Inteſtine Diſſentions; and by the minority of a King, governed by Prieſts and Jeſuitical Councils. Nor was *Italy* free from the like fears of Invaſion by that Potent Prince, which had under meaner circumſtances of power entered the City of *Otranto*, and put all *Italy* into a fear and conſternation: And therefore now to obviate,and prevent the like dangers at a diſtance, the Pope cauſed moſt devout Proceſſions, with the ſolemn Pomp of Images, and Relicks of Saints to be made at *Rome*, and in perſon walked bare-foot with all his Court from S. *Peters* to the *Minerva*, where Prayers were made to God, that he would be pleaſed to divert the fury of this Common Enemy to Chriſtendom. And becauſe Prayers without human endeavours are not available, Letters were wrote to all Chriſtian Princes to joyn in this War; for the more orderly management of which, the task, and enterpriſe which every one was to undertake, was allotted, and contrived in the Conſiſtory, and an Univerſal Truce for five years was publiſhed amongſt all Chriſtian Princes, and States, with grievous cenſures on thoſe, who ſhould be repugnant thereunto. In purſuance of this method and deſign the Emperor and King of *Poland* were to invade the *Turk* on the parts of *Servia* and *Bulgaria*. The *French* King, *Venetians*, and other Princes of *Italy* were to Embark at the Port of *Brunduſiam*, and paſs into *Albania*, and invade *Greece* on that ſide. The Kings of *England*, *Spain*, and *Portugal* were to Rendezvous at *Cartagena* in *Spain*, and with a Fleet of 200 Sail enter the *Helleſpont*, and attack *Conſtantinople* it ſelf; and for carrying on of this Holy War, voluntary Contributions were to be made, and Impoſitions to be laid as well on the Clergy, as the Laity. Now tho theſe matters were begun with great expectation, and the Univerſal Truce accepted with a ſpecious ſhow, and mighty promiſes made of advancing this Enterpriſe, with oſtentation and bravery of words; yet at length private Intereſts, over-ruling the zeal for Religion, and the Univerſal Union, the minds of the Princes became ſlackned in the deſign, and the thoughts of War vaniſhed; every one looking at the peril as uncertain, and far diſtant.

The Peace ſtill continuing in *Italy* until the year 1520. *Martin Luther* a Frier of the Order of S. *Auſtin* began to make ſome diſturbances in *Germany*, which greatly oppoſed the Authority of the Church of *Rome*; The beginnings thereof had their original from certain Indulgences which Pope *Leo* exerciſed in a more ample, and licentious manner than was cuſtomed and practiſed by former Popes. For in the year 1100. being in the Reign of *Urban* II. Plenary Indulgences for Pardon and Remiſſion of Sins were beſtowed on thoſe only who went to the Holy War with intent to deliver the Sepulchre of Chriſt out of the hands of the Infidels. Theſe Indulgences were afterwards in like manner diſpenſed unto thoſe, who either were not able, or willing to undertake the deſign in perſon, provided that they entertained or payed another at their own charge. Afterwards Indulgences and Pardons of this nature became more common, being enlarged to thoſe who took part in the Wars againſt thoſe who reſiſted the Secular Arms of the Pope; tho the ſame were Chriſtians, and Princes, who in defence of their own Kingdoms, and States, oppoſed the Encroachments and Extravagancies of the Eccleſiaſtical Claims. But now Pope *Leo* by the Counſel of Cardinal *Puccio* beſtowed his Indulgences in more ample form, and diſperſed them in all parts of the Chriſtian World, without diſtinctions of times, perſons, or places, not only for the help of ſuch, who were yet living, but with power to deliver the ſouls of the Dead from the pains of Purgatory; it being manifeſtly known, that the deſign of theſe Indulgences was only to obtain money from the people, which the Collectors exacted with an unparallel'd impudence, the matter became ſcandalous, eſpecially in *Germany*, where the Officers ſet the Indulgences to ſale at a ſmall price; and ſometimes in a Tavern this power of redeeming Souls out of Purgatory were ſet for a Stake at a Game at Tables. This ſhame, and diſhonour was increaſed in the Country of *Saxony*, and other parts of *Germany*, when it was known, that the proceed, and benefit of thoſe Indulgences, extorted with great rigor and avarice by the Biſhop of *Arembauld*, (a man fit to be employed in ſuch a Commiſſion) was not to be paid into the Apoſtolical Chamber at *Rome*, but given to *Magdalen*, Siſter to the Pope; and devoted to the avarice of a Woman; for then the matter became deteſtable, and the cries and exclamations lowed in all parts of *Germany*. *Luther* being ſupported by the favour of the Duke of *Saxony*, took this occaſion to contemn theſe Indulgences, and preach every where againſt them, which being a matter very plauſible, his Sermons were heard with great attention by the people. and his Doctrine approved by his Auditors, who came from all parts to hear him: Having this encouragement, he began to queſtion the Power of the Church, and the Authority of the Pope; and as matters grew higher, he diſputed againſt Pardons, and Penance, and Purgatory, upon which the Doctrine of Indulgences had its foundation: on the truth of which Doctrines, he laid ſo much ſtreſs, and was ſo poſitive in the certainty of all his Concluſions, that he would often ſay, he would not refer or ſubmit them to the judgment of Angels. After *Concil. Trent.* theſe beginnings, which ſeemed plauſible and honeſt, and which made great noiſe, and were highly controverted in the world by the moſt acute and ſubtil Wits of that Age; *Luther* proceeded to preach againſt Images in Churches, againſt prayers to Saints, to queſtion Tranſubſtantiation in the Holy Euchariſt, and to allow Marriage to Prieſts, Monks, and Friers, the which he not only maintained by force of Argument, but confirmed by his own example. The Pope in oppoſition hereunto ſent many Religious, and learned men into *Germany* to hinder (if poſſible) by their Preaching and Diſputations the farther ſpreading of theſe Doctrines: The Emperor *Charles* the Fifth in a Diet at *Ratisbon* made a publick, and ſolemn Edict againſt *Luther* and his Concluſions; the Univerſity of *Paris* condemned them; and the King of *England*, *Henry* VIII. wrote a Book againſt them, for which he afterwards received from this Pope *Leo*, the Title of *Defender of the Faith*. But *Luther* being a man of great courage, and ſupported by the favour of the Duke of *Saxony*, little regarded either the Arguments of the School-men, or the Authority of the Princes; ſaying that the Prophet forbad to truſt in men, or Princes, before whoſe judgement the Word of God, and the ſentence of Scripture was to be preferred. Theſe diſturbances in *Germany* were followed by the like in *Switzerland*, where *Zuinglius* by force of Argument diſputed in favour of the Doctrine of *Luther*; which cauſed ſuch confuſions, and diſcord, that for the ſettlement and quiet thereof the Senate of *Zurich*, convened all the Preachers and Doctors of their Country, and requeſted the Biſhop of *Conſtance* to depute ſuch wiſe, and learned perſons, (as he ſhould think fit) to aſſiſt at this Conference, for determination of the matters in queſtion: Great numbers of people being aſſembled at this Convocation, *Zuinglius* propoſed his Theſis, and all the points in diſpute, and offered to anſwer the Arguments of any Opponent, which ſhould be ſet up againſt him. *Peter Faber* a man holy in his life, and of profound judgment, having heard, and weighed all the ſtrength of Argument which the *Jacobins* and others had alledged, refuſed as Moderator in thoſe Controverſies to determin any thing in thoſe matters, which more properly belonged to the cognizance of that General Council, which was ſhortly by Authority of the Pope, and the conſent of all the Chriſtian Princes, to meet, and aſſemble, conſiſting of all the Prelates of Chriſtendom. This Sentence gave *Zuinglius* advantage to advance his Doctrine, and ſay, that theſe were but delays to amuſe the people, and lull them in their ignorance; that doubtful matters were proper to be treated, and diſcuſſed, and determined by the Authority of General Councils; but that matters certain, and clear by Scripture, which was the Word of God, and the rule of our lives, and confirmed by the practice of the Primitive Chriſtians, ſtood in need of no other Authority, than their own plain evidence to confirm them. In fine, the Aſſembly broke up, and the Senate concluded with this reſult, that the Goſpel ſhould be Preached according to the Canon of the Old and new Teſtament, and not according to the Decrees and Conſtitutions of men.

This matter began daily in the Court of *Rome* to ſeem of greater importance, fearing leſt it ſhould greatly ſhake the Power of the *Popes*, and abate the profits of the Church of *Rome*, and diſcompoſe the Union of the Chriſtian Religion; for which occaſion, many Conſiſtories were ſummoned at *Rome*, and many Conſultations held in the Chamber of the Pope amongſt the Cardinals and Divines, for remedy of this growing evil. The Duke of *Saxony*, and *Luther* were at theſe Meetings condemned, and Excommunications thundered out againſt them with moſt grievous Anathema's, the which ſerved only to exaſperate the Duke of *Saxony*, and cauſed him to become a more ſevere and vehement Protector of that Cauſe; which began now to dilate and ſpread more diffuſely amongſt the People, by how much the more it was perſecuted by vigorous and violent courſes. At length the Court of *Rome*, as well as other People, and Nations, did conclude, that the only means to quiet mens minds, and ſettle them in a true Belief and Faith, was to eſtabliſh all doubts and Controverſies by the Authority of a General Council; the which was deſired by Princes, and Lords of Countries, in hopes that thereby the diſorderly lives of Prieſts and Friers would be regulated and reduced to their Primitive Conſtitutions; and that the *Regalia* and Temporal Juriſdictions, which had long been uſurped by the Eccleſiaſtical Power, would at length be reſtored to the Secular Dignity of Princes. But to reduce matters to this eſtate, they did not judg it neceſſary that Eccleſiaſticks ſhould be the ſole Members to compoſe ſuch an Aſſembly, whoſe intereſt it was to maintain their own Corruptions, and determin all matters in favour of themſelves againſt the Rights and Prerogatives of Chriſtian Princes; in whoſe Affairs their Conſents and Suffrages ought to be conſulted. The common people alſo, who had ſome competent knowledg in the Affairs of the world, were deſirous of a Council, in hopes, and expectation, that the libidinous power of the Church, which had for a long time tyrannized over them, might at length be limited, and moderated; and that the Exactions which were charged upon them, under the ſpecious pretences of Alms, and Indulgences, might not be forced, and diſtrained by the violence, and rudeneſſes of the Epiſcopal Officers. The Court of *Rome* did likewiſe deſire a Council, in hopes the Authority of the Church, which began to be ſhaken by the oppoſition of Adverſaries, and the encroachments which Princes made on its Juriſdiction, might thereby be confirmed: but they were for having it regulated according to the practices of modern times, which ſhould not touch on the preſent Abuſes and evil Cuſtoms introduced in favour of the Papal Power; but ſuch an one as was called by the preceeding Pope, and Aſſembled at the *Lateran*, which had produced many happy and advantageous ſucceſſes; for it had extinguiſhed the *Schiſms* of the Cardinals, reduced the Kingdom of *France*, which before was ſeparated, to an Union, and aboliſhed that Sanction which highly entrenched on the Temporal and Spiritual Monarchy of *Rome*; and laſtly had conferred the collation of Benefices on the Pope, which was the great foundation of the Papal Grandeur. Howſoever Pope *Leo* ſtill doubted, that this remedy was not entirely adapted to the nature of this evil: for tho the power of a Council might have an influence over Princes, and great Prelates, againſt whom their Decrees and Determinations might avail, yet could not reach the minds of the common-people, or produce that real alteration, and change, which was neceſſary for the quiet, and ſettlement of the Eccleſiaſtical State. In this condition of affairs *Leo* died, about the end of the year 1521.

But theſe Diviſions and Diſſentions in Spiritual Controverſies did not only diſquiet the Pope; but likewiſe the Plots of certain Cardinals which deſigned againſt his Life and Government; of which a diſcovery being made, ſeveral of them were deprived of their Hats, and Eccleſiaſtical

Benefices: and *Alfonſo Petrucci* being chief in the number of the Conſpirators, was taken, and ſtrangled by a Negro Slave in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo* at *Rome*. *Adrian da Cornetto* being fled, and eſcaped from Juſtice, was for ever without hopes of Reſtauration deprived of the Character and Honor of Cardinal. *Raphael Riario*, and *Bendinello Sauli* were ſuſpended, but afterwards reſtored to the Dignity of Cardinals. *Saderini* was condemned to live in perpetual baniſhment. Thus by the puniſhment and degradation of ſeveral Cardinals, the College being wanting and unprovided of its due numbers; the Pope with much liberality created one and thirty at one time; all perſons of quality belonging to ſeveral Countries of Chriſtendom; ſome of which were advanced for their Virtue and Merit, and others by the Favour and Intereſt of great Perſonages. This Pope created two and forty Cardinals in all during the time of his Reign, beſides the reſtauration of the four rebellious Cardinals deprived by *Julio*; amongſt theſe Cardinals which he had ordained, *Julio de Medici* his Kinſman was one, whom he made his Vice-Chancellor, and was afterwards Pope under the name of *Clement* VII.

About this time *Maximilian* the Emperor dying, *Charles* King of *Spain*, *Naples*, and *Sicily* was elected, to the great regret and indignation of *Francis* King of *France*, who with much envy and emulation was diſpleaſed to ſee the Imperial Dignity added to the many Kingdoms, and Eſtates holden by the King of *Spain*: And becauſe according to the ancient Rule and Canon the King of *Naples* was excluded from all capacity of being Emperor; a Diſpenſation was purchaſed from the Pope, with expence of 7000 Ducats, qualifying the King of *Naples* for the Election. Afterwards the Pope having favoured the cauſe of *Charles*, and he by his aſſiſtance being Elected Emperor, an Alliance, and League was agreed between them to drive the *French* out of *Italy*, a deſign ever pleaſing to the Popes; and particularly to *Leo*, who was impatient of the infamous loſs of *Parma*, and *Piacenza*, which being gained with ſo much glory and trouble by *Julio*, he hoped to regain and reſtore to the Poſſeſſions of the Church. In purſuance of this enterprize, a conſiderable Army of *Germans* and *Switzers* were ſent by the Emperor into *Italy*, and joyned with the Forces of the Pope. *Proſpero Colonna* was made Generaliſſimo, and *Frederico Gonzaga* of *Mantova* General of the Army of the Church, and *Julio de Medici* Legate of the whole Army. The ſucceſs proved agreeable to the preparations, for the *French* were droven out of *Italy*, which had long groaned under their pride and tyranny; after which *Milan* was according to Articles ſurrendred into the hands of *Francis Sforza* the true and natural Lord, and *Parma* and *Piacenza* reſtored to the Church; with the news of which, the Pope conceived ſuch extremity of joy, that he died ſuddenly on the firſt of *December* 1521. at the Village of *Magliana*, where he uſed often for recreation to retire himſelf, from whence the next day his body was removed to *Rome*; not without ſuſpicion of having been poiſoned by his Chamberlain *Maleſpina*; who thereupon being impriſoned, was afterwards releaſed by Cardinal *De Medicis*, ſo ſoon as he came to *Rome*, no farther proceedings being made thereupon, leſt the matter being examined ſhould reflect too far in diſgrace of the *French* King. Thus died *Leo* X. at the age of 45 years, 11 months, and one day, having held the Papal Chair for the ſpace of eight years and twenty days; having at the hour of his death teſtified the great ſatisfaction he received by the reſtitution of *Parma*, and *Piacenza* to the Eccleſiaſtical State, without the effuſion of the leaſt drop of blood.

This Pope was eſteemed a great lover of Juſtice, having been ſevere againſt Thieves and Robbers. He was a great lover of his Recreation, and Pleaſures, ſpending much time in Hunting, and Banquets; and was more delighted with Muſick, than became the gravity and ſeverity of a Pope. He was highly magnificent in his Buildings, and munificent in his gifts, with which and by his Wars he had conſumed ſo profuſely beyond his Revenue, that for maintenance of this charge he was forced to exact mony for making Cardinals, and to ſet ſeveral Offices of his Court to ſale. He was a great lover of Learning, and learned men, to whom he was very liberal in his gifts, imitating therein the ſpirit of his Father *Laurence de Medicis*. He enlarged the Power of the *Poteſta*, or Civil Magiſtracy of *Rome*, and beſtowed on them ſeveral Privileges and Immunities; for which reaſon by a Solemn Decree they made *Julian* his Brother a Citizen of *Rome*, and treated him at the *Campidoglio* with Feaſting, and other Entertainments; where they alſo erected a Statue of Marble and dedicated it to *Leo*, with this Inſcription, *Optimo Principi Leoni X. Med. Joan. Pont. Max. ob reſtitutam inſtauratamque Vrbem, aucta Sacra, bonaſque artes, adſcitos Patres, ſublatum vectigal, datum congiarium S. P. Q. R.* In fine, the face of the City of *Rome* was never more pleaſant, nor chearful, than in the time of *Leo* X. His body was buried for that preſent in a Sepulchre of Brick erected in S. *Peter's* Church, and for afterwards by direction of *Paul* III. tranſlated to the *Minerva*, together with the body of *Clement* VII.

ADRIAN VI.

POPE *Leo* being dead, and his Obſequies ſolemnly performed, the Cardinals on the 16th. of *December* 1521. aſſembled in the Chappel of *Sixtus Quartus* in S. *Peter's* Church; and thence adjourned to the *Vatican*, where 29 Cardinals entered into the Conclave, and having ſung *Veni Spiritus*, they for ſome days were employed in giving Audiences to Forein Miniſters, in ordering matters for the more orderly Government of the City, and regulating the Conclave in relation to their choice: ſo on the 20th. they began ſeriouſly to proceed to an Election. Cardinal *De Medicis* aſpiring to that dignity, ſeemed to ſtand the moſt fair for it, becauſe that by the reputation of his greatneſs, and by the intereſts of his Revenues, and his glory lately acquired in the Conqueſt of *Milan*, he had obtained the Voices of 15 Cardinals: howſoever many conſiderations croſſed his deſires; for it ſeemed irregular, and againſt the common Policy for one of the ſame Family to ſucceed in the place of the Pope deceaſed; for that ſuch Preſidents might ſoon bring the Popedom to a ſtate of being diſpoſed by Succeſſion; for which cauſe all the ancient Cardinals who pretended to be of the *French* action; and all thoſe who were enemies to *Leo*, and diſcontented by him, ſtood in oppoſition againſt him: Moreover all the

Cardinals who were Competitors, and lived in hopes of ſucceeding, could not endure and ſuffer the Election of a perſon under the age of fifty years. Theſe difficulties occurring, retarded the Election for ſeveral days; at length, as they made ſcrutiny according to the cuſtom of the Conclave, Cardinal *Adrian*, a *Hollander* by Nation, was propoſed, one who had been School-Maſter to the Emperor, and by his means made Cardinal under Pope *Leo*: ſo ſoon as he was nominated, the Cardinal *S. Sixtus* began to recount and amplifie his Virtues in a long Oration, which ſo took, that the Cardinals began to yield and give up their Voices for him, the reſidue followed from one to another, ſeeming guided rather by chance, than Counſel; ſo that by the common Suffrages of all the Cardinals, *Adrian* was Elected and Created Pope on the *9th.* of *January*, 1522. the parties themſelves not being able to render a reaſon, why amidſt ſo many dangers and troubles of the Eccleſiaſtical State, they had choſen a ſtranger for Pope of a remote Country, who had never ſeen *Italy*, and perhaps might never have ſeen it, but upon this occaſion; and who had neither been acquainted with the cuſtoms of the Court of *Rome*, nor yet had entertained ſuch converſation with the Cardinals, as to have hoped by their intereſt or his own merit to have attained to the Election; of which, the Cardinals not being able to render any ſolid reaſon, gave out in excuſe of themſelves, that it was an impulſe of the Holy Ghoſt, which did often inſpire the hearts of Cardinals in Election of Popes.

The news of this Election was brought to *Adrian*, then reſiding at *Victoria*, a Town on the Confines of *Biſcay*; upon advice whereof, taking no other name than his own, he cauſed himſelf to be called *Adrian* the Sixth. He was born at *Utrecht*, a City in *Holland*, his Father's name was *Florent*, one that by Profeſſion made Tapeſtry Hangings; and this his Son being a Youth of an ingenious lively ſpirit, was ſent to Study in the Univerſity of *Lovain*; where afterwards being a great proficient in learning, *Margaret* the Daughter of *Maximilian*, then Governeſs of the *Low-Countries*, receiving information of his Virtues and Abilites, made him Curate of a Pariſh-Church in *Holland*; afterwards he was preferred to be Dean of the Cathedral in *Lovain*, and then made Vice-Chancellor of that Univerſity. During this time, *Philip* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, Son of *Maximilian* the Emperor, died, leaving a Son of ſeven years of age, named *Charles*; for whoſe Education and Inſtruction, a Tutor and School-maſter being ſought in all parts, none was eſteemed more proper either for his Virtue or Learning, than this *Adrian*. Having for ſome time honourably acquitted himſelf in this Office, he was ſent Embaſſador to *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, with whom he acquired ſo much favour and intereſt, that in a ſhort time he was made Biſhop of *Tortoſa*; and afterwards Chief Counſellor of State to the Emperor *Charles* V. Likewiſe by the recommendation of the Emperor *Maximilian*, and on account of the great eſteem and reputation he had acquired, he was created Cardinal by Pope *Leo* X. with the Title of S. *John* and S. *Paul*, in the year 1519. And *Charles* his Scholar being choſen Emperor, he committed to his care and charge the whole and entire Government of *Spain*; in which Country *Adrian* reſided when the news was brought him of his Election to the Popedom.

Charles the Emperor having about that time paſſed by Sea into *Spain*, ſent an Expreſs to congratulate his Promotion, deſiring him, that he would be pleaſed to make ſome little ſtay at *Barcelona*, that ſo he might have opportunity to pay his Reſpects in perſon to him, and perform that Reverence and Obedience which he owed to the Apoſtolical See; but *Adrian* was in ſo much haſt, fearing ſome Revolutions in *Rome* and *Italy*, that he would make no ſtay at *Barcelona*; but Embarking at *Taragona* on the 11*th.* of *Auguſt*, he ſoon after with a placid Navigation, arrived at *Genoua*, where he was viſited by the Prelates of *France*, thence proceeding to *Ligorn*, he was there received by Cardinal *De Medicis*, and five other Cardinals, as alſo by the Ambaſſadors ſent from ſeveral Princes of *Italy*, and by *Francis de Gonzaga*, who was General of the Army belonging to the Church. At *Pyrgos* he was met by *Pompey Colonna*, and *Francis Vrſino*, who were Cardinals delegated by the Senate of *Rome*; and thence proceeding to *Oſtia*, he was carried up the River to the Monaſtry of S. *Paul*, where he lodged for one night: And laſtly, on the 29*th.* of *Auguſt*, the people of *Rome*, with the ſeveral Orders of the Clergy, accompanied him with great pomp to the Palace of the *Vatican*; and the next day he was ſolemnly Crowned in the *Portico* of S. *Peter*'s Church.

Pope *Adrian* being now ſeated in his Throne, employed his whole time at firſt, to hear and underſtand the Affairs of *Rome*, for as yet he was altogether ignorant of the State of *Italy*; the which, in ſuch an exigency, in which things at that time were, was a great trouble to conſidering men, who thought it a miſerable diſadvantage to have at that time a Pope a ſtranger, and altogether unexperienced in the Affairs of *Italy*, and of the Court; when the Peſtilence grievouſly afflicted the City, a matter which was interpreted for an ill Prognoſtication, and *omen* of his future ſucceſs: The Treaſury alſo by the Wars, Diſorders, and Luxury of preceding Popes exhauſted, and drained to a farthing; [and all the Jewels and Ornaments of the Pontifical Dignity pawned, and placed in the hands of Uſurers, firſt by *Leo*, and afterwards more monies raiſed upon them by the College, to ſupply the neceſſities and exigences of the Church. *Arimino* alſo was ſeized and poſſeſſed by *Sigiſmund Malateſta*. And news was come that *Soliman* the great *Turk* had inveſted *Rhodes*, and put it into great danger, and prepared with a great Army to invade *Hungary*; all which being matters of great difficulty, did much puzzle and diſtract the mind of *Adrian*, who was as yet raw and unexperienced in the Affairs of *Rome*; the which troubles were ſoon followed by the unhappy news of the loſs of *Rhodes*, having been ſurrendred upon conditions after a ſix months Siege.

And now *Adrian* being warm in his Seat, began in the firſt place to deſign the recovery of *Rimini*, which was ſeized and poſſeſſed by *Sigiſmund*, and *Pandolſo Malateſta*, and the next to compoſe thoſe differences which the Duke of *Ferrara* had continued with his two late Predeceſſors; for the more effectual performance whereof, he ſent 1500 *Spaniſh* Infantry which he had brought with him out of *Spain*, for ſecurity of his paſſage on the Sea into *Romagna*, the which, with addition of other Forces, ſo affrighted *Sigiſmund* and *Malateſta*, that by the mediation of the Duke of *Vrbin*, they ſurrendred *Rimini* to the Pope, upon hopes that the Pope would in lieu thereof, aſſign them ſome other honourable ſupport and maintenance. Afterwards the Duke of *Vrbin* went himſelf

ſelf to *Rome*, where the memory of Pope *Julian* was ſtill ſo precious, as to entitle him to ſome kindneſs from this preſent Pope; on which motive the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures, which were iſſued out againſt him by *Leo* were reverſed, Plenary Abſolution given him, and he again reſtored to the Dutchy of *Urbin* by *Adrian:* howſoever with this clauſe, *ſalvo jure*, &c. that it might be without prejudice to that Grant made to the *Florentines* of the Country of *Montfeltra*, in conſideration of the ſum of 350000 Crowns, which they had lent to Pope *Leo* for defence of that Country.

With the like frank generoſity *Adrian* received *Alfonſo* Duke of *Ferrara* into his favour; and not only inveſted him in the Dukedom of *Ferrara*, and in all thoſe Lands which depended on the Church before the War which Pope *Leo* made againſt the *French*; but alſo in the Towns of *Felix*, and *Final*, which he had taken from the Church during the time of the laſt *Sede Vacante*, on conditions, that he ſhould hold thoſe Lands of the Church with obligation of aſſiſting the Pope with a certain number of men to be ready at his command, when his occaſions ſhould require; and in caſe at any time he acted any thing to the damage and prejudice of the Church, that then he ſhould incur ſevere Forfeitures and Penalties, and loſe his Inveſtiture, and be actually deprived of all thoſe Liberties, Immunities and Rights, to which he pretended and laid a claim.

After theſe Affairs, the Pope re-aſſumed the thoughts ſo often meditated by his Predeceſſors, of driving the *French* out of *Italy*, the which was alſo greatly deſired by the Emperor *Charles*, on ſuſpicion that the matter was practicable and eaſie, in caſe they could induce the *Venetians* to ſeparate from the *French* King; to incline them hereunto, Embaſſadors were diſpatched from the Emperor and the King of *England*, (who, at the ſame time ſent a Herald to denounce War againſt the *French* King, in caſe he would not make a Truce with the Emperor in all parts of the world for three years) in which alſo the Pope, the Duke of *Milan*, and the *Florentines*, were to be comprehended. The pretence of this Truce was grounded on agreement of all Chriſtian Princes, to turn their Forces againſt the *Turk*, who was now grown formidable in *Hungary*, to which place Cardinal *Cajetan* was ſent his Legate with a ſupply of fifty thouſand Crowns to carry on that War. But this deſign was diſappointed by a diſcovery made by ſome Letters intercepted by Cardinal *Julio de Medicis*, wrote from *Francis Soderino*, one of the old Cardinals, and much truſted by the Pope in all his Secrets, to *Francis* the firſt, King of *France*; wherein he perſuaded him to invade the Kingdom of *Sicily*, laying down the Plot and Deſign as eaſie and hopeful. The Pope being greatly moved and enraged againſt *Soderino*, who was Cardinal of *Volterra*, for this perfidious diſturbance of the quiet of *Italy*, and diſappointment of the Holy War, greatly inveighed againſt him in a full Aſſembly of the Cardinals, and afterwards committed him Priſoner to the Caſtle. *Soderino's* Letters were then produced and read, being full of reflections on the Pope; ſaying, That he was a perſon to whom no Faith or Credence could be given; for tho' he pretended the quiet and peace of *Italy*, and the benefit of the Church, yet he deſigned it no farther than was conſiſtent with the advancement of his own, *Charles* the Emperor, to whoſe concernments all other conſiderations were to yield and give place: The

Pope took meaſures of the affections of all the other Cardinals by this character which *Soderino* had given of him,and believing them to be all of the ſame humor, entertained a like jealouſie and ſuſpicion of the Cardinals in general; ſo that he made Confidents of none, but of ſuch men only as were of his own Country: his Secretaries that were moſt intimate with him, and privy to all his deſigns and ſecrets, were *William Eikenwort*, whom he had made Chief Datary, and Biſhop of *Tortoſa*, and the only Cardinal created by him, and *Theodorick Hetius*, both *Dutch-men*, and *John Rufus*, who had been his old Acquaintants and Creatures, by whoſe counſels and advice, he contrived and acted all matters which had relation to the Government; and ſeldom communicated his Councils and deſigns to the College, but only to his *Dutch-men*, whom he often praiſed for their ſincere and real intentions, without fraud or artifice, and for being truly faithful to the Church, and loyal to him. This ill correſpondence between the Pope and his Cardinals, was augmented by the offence he gave to the College, by diſanulling all the Acts and Ordinances they had made, during the vacancy of the See, and before he came to *Rome*; which being made in favour to themſelves, and for their own benefit, he made void for the greater good and emolument of the Church, revoking, and taking into his hands thoſe Benefices which the Cardinals had out of favour and courteſie voted and beſtowed on each other: And ſuch Offices as Pope *Leo* the Tenth had conferred on able and good men, in reward of their Learning and Virtue, he took away to raiſe mony, wherewith to ſupply and ſatisfie the urgent neceſſities of the Church. This manner of proceeding added to the fuel of the laſt diſcontents; made *Adrian* appear not only diſtruſtful, but covetous in a high degree, and every day ſeem more odious and weariſome to the Clergy and Grandees of *Rome*; of which the Pope being ſenſible, would often ſay, That the happy conjuncture of Affairs was greatly conducing to a Prince, who deſired to illuſtrate his Virtues and Actions to the moſt advantage: witneſs the happy ſtate of affairs in the time of the late Pope *Leo*, which were ſo flouriſhing and chearful, that they ſeemed to be the golden days, which afterwards, by that licentiouſneſs which was crept into *Rome*, during the long vacancy of the See, and abſence of this Pope, were changed and altered by a total corruption of manners: to which a contagion of Peſtilence ſupervening, joyned with Famine and War, which greatly afflicted *Italy*; the miſeries of men cauſed them to retort their remembrances on the late more chearful days of *Leo*, and by ſuch unreaſonable compariſons to paſs a judgment between the Wiſdom and Worth of *Leo* and *Adrian*; making the unavoidable miſeries of thoſe times, a matter and ſubject of *odium* and deteſtation of the preſent Pope; tho' in reality he was a perſon of a ſevere life, of great temperance, and deſirous to reform abuſes, which were crept into the Church; and correct, and ſeverely chaſtiſe the diſſolute manners in the City, ſuch as Simony, Extortion and Sodomy; to which end, he called to his aſſiſtance *Caraffa*, Arch-biſhop of *Chieti*, and *Marcello Gazella*, of *Gaeta*, both perſons of gravity and ſobriety, and of ſingular Wiſdom and Learning; with whom he conſulted touching a reformation of manners, and amendment of abuſes: and to ſet by his own example rules of moderation and temperance, he appeared extremely ſevere towards his own Relations and Kindred: an inſtance whereof, he gave in his deportment towards a Couſin of his, whom he having ſetled in his Studies at *Siena*, came one time from thence to *Rome*, without the order or command of the Pope; at which he conceived ſo much anger, that he preſently returned him back again on a hired Horſe, reproving and telling him, that he ſhould learn modeſty and temperance, by his example: Several Relations alſo of his being in a mean condition, travelled a foot through *Germany*, and came to *Rome*, in expectation of ariſing to ſome conſiderable Preferments; but he diſappointed them of their hopes, and returned them back again with no greater largeſs than a plain Suit of Cloth to each, and with ſo much mony as might ſerve to bear their charges and expences back into their own Country. And in this manner, whilſt *Adrian* was intent to introduce honeſty of life and manners into the World, and bring vertue unto faſhion; and employed in perfecting the League and Confederacy between the Emperor and the *Venetians*, and other Allies, in order to the main deſign of expelling the *French* out of *Italy*: It happened that he was ſeized by a Fever, which affecting him at firſt in a gentle manner, was lightly eſteemed by the Phyſicians, but the diſeaſe afterwards increaſing, he ſummoned the College of Cardinals to him, recommending to them the care of the Church, and the welfare of Chriſtendom. He beſtowed his own Cardinals Hat, with his Title on his great Friend and Confident *Eikenwort*, in gratitude for his faithful ſervices performed towards him. After which he died in the *Vatican* on the 14*th.* of *September*, 1523. having held the Papal Dignity no longer than one year, eight months and ſix days; and having lived 64 years, three months, and 13 days, he departed this life, and was buried in the Church of S. *Peter*, with this Epitaph,

Adrianus Papa VI. hic ſitus eſt
Qui nihil ſibi infelicius
in vitâ
Quam quod imperaret,
duxit.

But afterwards Cardinal *Eikenwort* in grateful remembrance of the benefits he had received from him, erected a fair Monument of Alablaſter over him, with this Inſcription,

Adrianus VI. Pont. Max. ex Trajecto inſigni Inferioris
Germaniæ Urbe
Qui dum rerum humanarum
Maxime averſatur ſplendorem, ultrò à Proceribus
ob Incomparabilem
Sacrarum diſciplinarum ſcientiam
Ac prope divinam caſtiſſimi animi moderationem
Carolo V. Cæſari Auguſto Præceptor,
Eccleſiæ Derthuſenſi Antiſtes;
Sacri Senatus Patrium Collega,
Hiſpaniarum Regnis Præſes,
Reipub. denique Chriſtianæ divinitus Pontifex
abſens adſcitus.
Vixit annos 64 *menſes* 6 *dies* 13, *deceſſit* 18 *Cal. Octobris*
Anno à partu Virginis 1523. *Pontificatus ſui Anno ſecundo.*

in this manner Pope *Adrian* died, to the great diſappointment of the Confederates, to whom not only the benefit of the Papal Authority failed by his death, but alſo the Contribution of that mony, to which he had obliged himſelf by the capitulations of Confederacy. He left behind him a mean eſteem and opinion in the world of his Wiſdom, or abilities of mind, either becauſe in that ſhort time of his Reign, he was not able to give better proof; or elſe becauſe he wanted experience in Affairs: howſoever, he departed this life to the incredible joy of all the Court, who deſired to ſee an *Italian* in that Seat, or one at leaſt who had been trained up and practiſed in the Affairs of *Italy*.

CLEMENT VII.

POPE *Adrian* the ſixth being dead, and his Funeral Obſequies performed, the Cardinals to the number of thirty, entered into the Conclave for Election of a new Pope. The two which were chiefly in nomination, and which ſtood moſt fair for the Election were the Cardinals *Medici* and *Colonna*; the firſt ſupported by the Faction of the Emperor, and the other of *France*: but that which made moſt againſt *Colonna*, was the inveterate enmity which Cardinal *Vrſino* bore to him on account of that ancient hatred and quarrel which was hereditary between the two Families, who therefore oppoſed him with all his power and intereſt: And farther upon promiſe given by *Medici* to *Vrcino*, to confer on him the Office of Vice-Chancellor: the conteſt was no longer doubtful, every one preſſing to give his Voice that he might not ſeem the laſt to appear in favour of *Medici*: by which means, two thirds giving their ſuffrages for him (which is neceſſary to the Election of every Pope) an end was put to this Controverſie which had laſted two months and four days. Thus *Julio Medici* being declared Pope, was conducted by all the Cardinals, together with great numbers of Prelates, and Clergy-men to the Church of *S. Peter*, where being ſeated, upon the High-Altar *ad limina Apoſtolorum*, he was there worſhipped, and reverenced by all the Clergy, who preſented themſelves before him to pay him their reſpects and obedience, and receive his bleſſing. He there took upon himſelf the name of *Clement* VII. and was afterwards conducted, and attended with a numerous train to his Lodgings in the *Vatican*.

This *Julio*, now *Clement* VII. was the natural Son of *Juliano de Medici*, who was murdered by the *Pazzi*, and other Conſpirators, as before declared in the life of *Sixtus* IV. He was born a month after the death of his Father, whom he greatly reſembling in all the lineaments of his face, and vivacity of his ſpirit, was committed to the charge and care of his Uncle *Lorenzo*, who educated him in all ſorts of Liberal Sciences and elegancy of manners, which might ſerve to render a perſon of his quality and condition accompliſhed. His Family being afterwards expelled out of *Florence* by the power of *Charles* the Eighth King of *France*, he continued in exile from his own Country for the ſpace of 18 years; during which time, he was created Knight of *Rhodes*, and Grand Prior of *Capua*; and afterwards advanced by his Kinſman *Leo* X. to the Arch-

Biſhop-

Arch-Biſhoprick of *Florence*, and the year following was created Cardinal of St. *Clement*, and then inſtituted Chancellor of the *Roman* Church, which is the ſupreme Office in the Popes Court; and laſtly, being aſcended to the high dignity of Pope, he was crowned on the 25*th.* of *November*, 1523. with the common joy and ſatisfaction of all in general, who were pleaſed with the promotion of a perſon of his great Authority and Sobriety, wholly addicted to buſineſs and council, without mixtures of pleaſures or divertiſements; for which reaſon the world expected great and extraordinary matters from him.

Howſoever, all theſe excellencies in a perſon of his high condition could not hinder or prevent the evils of an inſuing War; nor could the Pope, when the Emperor *Charles* the Fifth, and *Francis* the *French* King, ſent their Embaſſadors to *Rome* to complement him upon his late Election, pleaſe them both, by keeping that even hand of moderation and temperance which became his Office, when Chriſtian Princes are at variance; for the Emperor expected the ſame ſtrictneſs of Alliance as was between him and Pope *Leo* his Predeceſſor, and challenged his favour and partiality on his ſide, for being aſſiſtant and inſtrumental in his promotion: Howſoever, the Election of a perſon of his Authority and Intereſt had a conſiderable Aſcendant over the Affairs of the Church; for the Duke of *Ferrara*, who during the vacancy of the See, had ſeized upon *Reggio*, having underſtood that a Pope of ſo much reputation in the World was Elected, deſiſted from proſecution of his deſign of taking *Modena*, and ſo retired peaceably to *Ferrara*: and *John de Saſſatello*, who had for ſome time vexed and haraſſed *Romagna*, from whence he had been expulſed by the *Gibelines* under the Reign of *Adrian*, did now retire with his contrary Faction of *Guelfs*, being appeaſed by the Authority and influence of this new Pope.

But the ſpirits of mightier and more puiſſant Princes were not ſo eaſily allayed by the charms of mediation or the force of reaſon; for tho' *Clement* being deſirous of the repoſe and quiet of *Italy*, propoſed to *Francis* the *French* King in behalf of the Vice-King of *Naples*, a Truce for five years, with condition, that during that time he ſhould quietly enjoy all the Country on the other ſide of the River *Adda*, the Town of *Loda* only excepted; yet he could not prevail, the *French* King refuſing this fair offer, which afterwards turned to his great misfortune. Whereſore, the Pope finding the difficulty, or impoſſibility almoſt of making this Peace, he remained doubtful to which of theſe two Princes it was moſt to the intereſt of the Church and ſecurity of *Italy*, for him to incline, in which ſuſpence the Count *Carpy* arriving at *Rome* with character of Embaſſador from the King of *France*, ſo well managed his deſign, that he perſuaded the Pope to lay aſide and forget thoſe ancient diſcontents and animoſities, which aroſe between his Maſter the King, and Pope *Leo* the 10*th.* his Kinſman, and to enter into a firm Alliance with him, as the moſt ſecure and wholeſome means to preſerve the quiet of *Italy*. *Clement* hereby being well affected towards *France*, diſpatched an Embaſſador to the King for confirmation of the Alliance, adviſing him to undertake the Conqueſt of *Naples*, which he repreſented as an enterpriſe eaſily effected, in regard that there was no Garriſon there, all the Emperors Forces being at that time employed in the Dukedom of *Milan*. The King well approving this deſign, ordered *John*

Stuart, Duke of *Albania*, who was of the Blood of the Kings of *Scotland*, and his Lieutenant General in *Italy*, to march with a conſiderable force into the Kingdom of *Naples*, asking licenſe of the Pope to paſs thro' his Dominions. But the Pope ſeeming outwardly, and in appearance averſe hereunto, perſuaded the King to deſiſt from this deſign, as a matter of jealouſie to the *Venetians*, and all *Italy*; with arguments alſo inciting to peace and accommodation, as beſt became the Office and quality of a Pope. But the Duke of *Albania*, without attending an anſwer, had (as aſſured of the Popes conſent) paſſed the River *Po*; but before he had marched five days, he was called back again by the King; who underſtanding that ſome Forces and new Supplies were already arrived in the Enemies Camp, and more daily expected, he judged it more adviſable to keep his Army entire, until the new Recruits of *Switzers* and *Griſons* were come, which he had ſent to levy, rather than to weaken his Army by that conſiderable detachment which the enterpriſe of *Naples* would require; during which time, the King continued the Siege of *Pavia*. But the *Switzers* and *Griſons* being at length arrived in the Kings Camp, the Duke of *Albania* repaſſed the *Po* to invade the Kingdom of *Naples*; in which deſign, that the Pope might ſeem to have had no contrivance, he diſpatched away *Paul Vettorio*, Captain of his Gallies, to the Vice-Roy, letting him know, that tho' he had uſed all diligence to divert the King from his purpoſe to invade *Naples*; yet he could not prevail; nor could oppoſe, or obſtruct his paſſage thro' his Country, unleſs he would draw upon himſelf the difficulties of that War, which he was not able to maſter; and that tho' he was forced to ſecure himſelf by new Articles and Contracts, yet he would never aſſent, or agree to any thing which might be prejudicial to the intereſt of the Emperor. In fine, he exhorted both Parties to a Peace, and in order thereunto, propoſed ſeveral expedients for accommodation; but nothing prevailed: the Duke of *Albania* continuing his march, and the King the Siege of *Pavia*.

Du Cheſne.

Onuf. Panv.

And now the Imperialiſts drawing near to the relief of *Pavia*, the treaties and practices of Princes, and the endeavours and ſtudies of Embaſſadors availed little; all the difficulties and dangers of many months being reduced to the fortune and ſucceſs of a few hours. In ſhort, the Battel of *Pavia* was fought on the *24th.* of *February*, 1525. in which the *French* Army was entirely defeated, and the King himſelf taken Priſoner; and all the flower of the Nobility of *France* either ſlain or taken; of which, the Duke of *Albania* having received intelligence, he raiſed his Camp from *Monte Rotondo* near *Aquila*, where he was lodged, and returned into *France*; but the greateſt part of this Soldiery being compoſed of *Italians* and *Corſicans*, returning to *Rome*, were for the moſt part rifled and pillaged in their way by the people of *Campagna*, who were Subjects to the Prince *Colonna*, and by ſome Imperialiſts who belayed the ways for them, killing them within the very Walls of *Rome*; to which place they fled for ſanctuary. All the Princes of *Italy*, eſpecially the Pope, being extremely affected with this unexpected ſucceſs obtained by the Imperial Forces, conducted chiefly by the valour and wiſdom of the Marqueſs of *Peſcara*, remained doubtful in what manner to govern and manage their affairs: for the ballance being now no longer in an equality, but carried down with too much weight on the ſide of the Emperor, his Captains were elevated with this Victory, that they became inſolent beyond all human ſufferance, ſeeming to aſpire to an univerſal Monarchy: The which inſolences were alſo rendered more intolerable by the complaints brought daily to *Rome* from *Parma,* and *Piacenza,* which Countries the Imperialiſts had expoſed to plunder, and deſolation: and the ſuſpicions and jealouſies of the Pope were increaſed by the refuſal the Emperor made of reſtoring *Francis Sforza* to his right of the poſſeſſion of *Milan,* whom the Imperialiſts beſieged in the Caſtle, and afterwards baniſhed from the precincts of that Country. And farther, theſe miſunderſtandings were increaſed for want of a faithful compliance on the Emperors ſide with the Pope, who having paid a conſiderable ſum of mony to *Charles de Lanoia* the Emperor's Agent, on condition to have *Reggio* reſtored to the Popedom, which after the death of *Adrian* had been ſeized by *Alfonſo* Duke of *Ferrara:* when theſe conditions came to be performed, and the ancient League renewed with *Charles* the Fifth, he diſowned the agreement, leſt thereby the Pope ſhould grow more potent, and enlarge his Dominions, endeavouring to leſſen his power by the loſs of his mony, and excluſion from the poſſeſſion of *Reggio.* All theſe umbrages, and matters of diſpleaſure being revolved in the mind of *Clement,* with extreme melancholy, and deſire of redreſs, adminiſtred cauſe ſufficient to him of ill will towards the Emperor, moving in him at the ſame time compaſſion of the unfortunate ſtate of *Francis* the *French* King, then a Priſoner, in reſpect to whom he ſent the Biſhop of *Piſtoia* to condole with him for his unhappy ſucceſs. Whilſt the Pope meditated on theſe matters with ſome ſort of indignation and fear, the *Venetians,* who were troubled at the ſame time with the like thoughts, unexpectedly, ſent with many preſſing inſtances to perſuade the Pope to joyn with them in the good cauſe for preventing the total ſervitude of all *Italy;* which they propoſed to effect by a force of ten thouſand *Switzers,* which they might cauſe in ſhort time to deſcend into *Italy;* which being added to the *Italian* Bands, would be able to make head againſt the Imperial Army; and for their parts they promiſed, according to their cuſtom, far greater matters, than they were able to perform: and for farther encouragement hereunto, they repreſented the ſtate of the Imperial Army in *Italy,* to be tumultuous and inclinable to Sedition, having for want of pay ſeized the Artillery, and fortified themſelves in *Pavia.* Farther, it was not to be doubted, but that *Loüiſa* the Queen Mother, and Regent of *France* would concur with theſe Counſels, and be aſſiſtant to this deſign with all the power of that Kingdom. Moreover, it was not to be doubted, but that the Duke of *Ferrara,* who favoured, and depended on the *French* felicity, would alſo enter into this League; the conjunction of whom was of great importance, conſidering that he was a Prince very rich, his Town of *Ferrara* ſtrong, and furniſhed with all ſtores of Ammunition.

But the Pope conſidering the difficulty of this enterpriſe, and the uncertain concurrence of thoſe many circumſtances which were required to make it ſucceſsful, did for ſome time ſuſpend his reſolution, until the Arch-Biſhop of *Capua* who had been his ancient Secretary and Counſellor, brought him ſuch agreeable propoſitions from *Don Carlos de Lanoy,* Vice-Roy of *Naples,* as gave him aſſurances of an advantageous accommodation with the Emperor; for then diſpoſing his mind wholly to the thoughts of peace, he labored to get the *Venetians* comprehended in the ſame terms of accord: but in regard the chief points inſiſted upon by the Imperialiſts were ſums of money to be paid, their Army already mutining for want of their Arrears, the *Venetians*, who judged it a piece of folly and Cowardiſe to compound with their enemies on the condition of putting weapons into their hands, abſolutely refuſed any agreement on ſuch terms; which made well for the Pope, and facilitated his negotiations with the Vice-Roy, who interpreting this refuſal of the *Venetians* to be an indication of new ſtirs, and commotions, intended againſt the Imperial intereſt in *Italy*, was the more ready to condeſcend to the more eaſie terms with the Pope. In ſhort therefore 25 thouſand Ducats being by the Popes order paid by the *Florentines* to the Marquiſs of *Peſcara*, Chief of the Emperors Force's in *Milan*, a Confederacy was concluded at *Rome* between the Pope and the *Florentines* on the one ſide, and the Emperor on the other, *viz.* That the Pope, and the Emperor ſhould be in a perpetual League, and Allianee, and that the Dutchy of *Milan* ſhould be always defended by the Arms of the Pope, and the Emperor with ſuch numbers of men, as ſhould be agreed by a certain Article, and that the ſame ſhould be poſſeſſed, and governed under the Emperor by *Francis Sforza*, particularly nominated in that Capitulation. That the Emperor ſhould take into his protection all the Eſtate which the Church held; and particularly ſhould have a care of the Houſe of *Medicis*, to maintain and preſerve them in all the Dignities and Offices which they hold in that City: To which Treaty the greatneſs of that illuſtrious Family is in ſome Meaſure obliged. That the *Florentines* ſhould preſently pay to the Emperor a hundred thouſand Ducats more, in recompence of that which they had engaged to contribute to the laſt War, in virtue of that Agreement made with Pope *Adrian*, which was not to expire until one year after the death of one of the Confederates. That the Duke of *Ferrara* ſhould immediately render to the Church *Reggia*, *Rubiera*, and other Towns which he had unjuſtly ſeized, and uſurped, during the laſt vacancy of the Papal See; of which ſo ſoon as the Pope was poſſeſſed, he was in conſideration thereof to pay unto the Emperor one hundred thouſand Ducats. Laſtly, as to *Modena*, and thoſe Towns, conſideration was to be had, and the matter examined, whether they of right appertained to the Church, or the Emperor, and being found only belonging to the Eccleſiaſtical State, they ſhould be freed from all acknowledgment, and dependance on the Empire. In this manner this Alliance was concluded and determined, and the deſigns of uniting with *France*, and *Venice*, which were at firſt laid open as the faireſt game, were now diverted by far different meaſures.

Matters being thus agreed, and concluded in the year 1525, between the Pope and the Vice-Roy, the Cardinal *Salviati* was ſent to the Emperor's Court with Character of Legate, for confirmation of the Articles; his reception was very honorable, but in debating of particulars on the Commiſſion, the Vice-Roy, who for the common ſafety and quiet of *Italy*, allowed that the Inveſtiture might be given to the Duke of *Milan*, did diſſuade the reſtitution of *Reggia*, and *Rubiera*; which being a ſcruple ſtarted after the Accord, did ill affect the mind of the Pope, and confirmed the opinion he had of the Emperor's deſigns, not to endure any increaſe of power and greatneſs in the Church. And farther whilſt theſe things were debating, there fell out in *Lombardy* ſeveral events which hindred the Inveſtiture of *Sforza* in the Dutchy of *Milan*, and therewith broke all the agreements, and meaſures which were formerly taken; for the Emperor not willing to yield to this Inveſtiture, made pretences of forfeiture thereof by *Sforza*, and earneſtly preſſed the taking of the Caſtle of *Milan*: ſo that now the *Pope* having no expectations from the Emperor, began to incline again, and be biaſſed on the ſide of *France*; and the other Confederates, knowing that whilſt his ſucceſſes were proſperous, and towering in *Italy*, the Emperor might eaſily diſpoſe of the *Pope*, and oppreſs him at his pleaſure; which he would certainly do, either out of revenge, or ambition, which is known to be almoſt natural in Emperors againſt the *Pope*.

Wherefore a League and Union being propoſed between the *Pope*, the *French*, the *Venetians*, and Duke of *Ferrara*, with hopes alſo that the King of *England* would joyn in it; all things were deſigned and laid down in a regular manner and form for carrying on the War, and ſuppreſſing the ſuſpected greatneſs of the Emperor: But this *Pope Clement*, who was of a temper naturally ſlow, and irreſolute, weighing the conſequences of theſe matters with his Servants, and Miniſters of his Councils, found them ſo divided, each of them abounding in his own ſence, that belabouring the *Pope* on all ſides, he became much more perplexed and diſtracted in his thoughts, after, than before his conſultations. The truth was, there were two men of great Authority with him, one *Nicolas Seomberg* a *German*, and *John Matthew Giberto* a *Genoeſe*; *Seomberg* was much honoured, and almoſt feared by the *Pope*, but *Giberto* was more favoured and beloved: theſe two having been ancient, and intimate friends to him, whilſt he was Cardinal agreed well together; but afterwards Ambition, and different Intereſts put them at variance; for *Scomberg* being a *German*, naturally affected the intereſt of the Emperor; but *Giberto* loved no man but the *Pope*: and though he had formerly been an enemy to the *French* intereſt, yet now upon the change of Affairs, he ſided with them againſt the Emperor. Thus the *Pope* being diſtracted between the different Counſels of theſe boſom Friends, he that was irreſolute in his own nature, ſuffering himſelf to be guided by the laſt advice of different judgements, ſeemed always ſo tottering and wavering, that he rendred himſelf contemptible and ridiculous to all that knew him. The Arguments uſed by *Seomberg* to diſſuade the League, were, that according to obſervation, Leagues and Alliances of ſeveral Princes had ſeldom, or never any good effect; for that the conjunction of the Armies, and the due proviſions for them, do ſeldom arrive in ſeaſon, or at convenient times; that where ſo many minds and opinions are to concur, and divers intereſts are carried on, there diſtruſts, and diſcontentments do eaſily happen, whereby the favour of fortune, and benign occaſions are diſappointed: howſoever at length being over-born by *Giberto*, he inclined to go through with the League, and in company with the other Confederates to begin a War againſt the Emperor.

For *Francis* the *French* King being now at liberty, and holding himſelf not obliged to the terms he had made, encouraged and gave life to the League, and the people of the Dutchy of *Milan* being greatly oppreſſed by the Imperialiſts, were ready on all occaſions to make inſurrections, and mutinies in the City againſt the Soldiery, and Collectors of the

Contributions : ſo that the Pope being well ſettled, and confirmed in his opinion of the neceſſity of a War, readily entered into confederacy with the *French* King, and the *Venetians*, making the ſubject and ground of the War to be the re-poſſeſſion of *Francis Sforza* into the Dutchy of *Milan*, and the reſtoring to liberty the Kings Children, which were given for Hoſtages : ſo that the Forces of theſe Princes being united together, a moſt cruel War was again renewed in *Italy* ; the ſucceſs of which in ſhort was this : *Lodi* was at the beginning of all taken, and then the Confederate Forces joyning with the *Switzers*, took alſo *Cremona*, and beſieging the Caſtle of *Milan*, forced it to ſurrender upon Articles, and then reſigned it into the poſſeſſion of *Sforza* ; the Pope alſo ſending ſome Forces againſt *Arimino*, which was ſeized and poſſeſſed by *Sigiſmondo Malateſta*, he recovered the City, and expelled the Uſurper : but all theſe ſucceſſes received ſome alloys, by the ill news arrived from the King of *Hungary*, who being overcome, and ſlain in battel, the City of *Buda* yielded to the *Turk* ; the which being grievouſly reſented by the Pope, he called the Cardinals into the Conſiſtory, where having complained of the great ignominy and damage to the Chriſtian Cauſe by this late diſgrace, he with great gravity propoſed, that for the common good of Chriſtendom it was neceſſary to ſurceaſe the Wars in *Italy* ; and that in order thereunto, laying aſide all the conſiderations of incommodity, danger, and dignity of his perſon, he reſolved to meet the Chriſtian Princes in ſome convenient place, where he would with Tears and Prayers incline them to an univerſal Peace, and unite them in a Holy League and Confederacy againſt the common Enemy of Chriſtendom. But whilſt theſe things were meditating, all the deſign was diverted by the treaſon and conſpiracy of the Family of *Colonna*, which ſucceeded in this manner.

The Family of *Colonna* which was always favourable to the Imperial intereſt, obſerving the proceedings of the Pope, was deſirous to act ſomething in prejudice to the Allies, and of advantage to the Emperor ; and therefore Cardinal *Pompeo* a near Kinſman of that Family, retiring from *Rome* to *Freſcate*, with pretence of remaining there to watch againſt any attempts that might be made upon the Kingdom of *Naples*, made great levies of men to be ready at any time to execute his deſigns. The Pope growing jealous hereof, increaſed his own Forces, and commanded the *Colonnians* to depart, and withdraw their Soldiers out of the Dominion of the Church ; the which being effected at the inſtance of the Cardinal *De la Valle*, who perſuaded them to quit the Eccleſiaſtical State, which they could not diſturb without great ſcandal ; the Pope thereby judged himſelf ſecure, and truſting to the power and protection of the League, did againſt the common advice, and perſuaſion of all his Friends, for the cauſe only of ſaving charges, diſband his Forces. The *Colonnians* obſerving now the Pope deprived of all his Guards, and expoſed, as it were naked to their pleaſure, aſſembled their Forces, being about 3000 Foot, and 800 Horſe near *Anagnia*, aſſuming to their ſociety *Caſar Filettin*, their Confederate, and taking a compaſs to *Rome*, to be the leſs ſuſpected, they ſurprized three Gates of the City, making their entry by that of S. *John de Lateran* ; and having paſſed the Bridg of *Siſtus* with their Battalions orderly drawn up, they entered ſome Forces by the Burg of S. *Spirito*. At this action there were preſent *Don Hugo de*

Moncada, *Aſcanio Colonna*, and *Veſpatian Colonna*, which laſt had been inſtrumental in ſoliciting the late accord, and given his Faith to the *Pope*, as well for himſelf, as for the reſidue of his Companions. Likewiſe Cardinal *Pompeo* was there, being ſo far tranſported with ambition, that he not only conſpired, and reſolved to put the *Pope* to death, but to conſtrain the Cardinals by force of Arms to elect him to the Papal Chair. The *Pope* ſurprized with the unexpected arrival of theſe Gueſts, who by break of day on the 20th. of *September* entered *Rome*, reſolved once after the example of *Pope Boniface* VIII. to ſeat himſelf in his Pontifical Chair, and there receive the utmoſt violence of theſe Traitors; but being diſſuaded from that reſolution by his Friends, he retired to the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, where he in vain called for the aſſiſtance and ſuccor of his friends. For *Clement*, notwithſtanding the great opinion which at his firſt Inauguration the world conceived of his worth, and merit, was now fallen ſo low in the eſteem of the people by his avarice, and mean practices, that there was not one man, who ſeeing him betrayed, and contrary to Religious Oaths, and the common Faith of mankind falſly treated, conceived any kind remorſe, or compaſſion of his fate. But on the contrary they began to enumerate the many miſcarriages of his Government; That he had laden the Benefices of the Clergy with new and unuſual decimations; That he had taken away the Revenues belonging to certain Colleges, made void the Stipends which were given to the Profeſſors and Readers of Diverſe Sciences; Nor was the Commonalty leſs diſguſted againſt the Pope than others of greater note; for by reaſon of the Monopolies he had granted upon Corn, to increaſe the benefit and income of his Exchequer, Bread was riſen to that exceſſive price, that it ſeemed as if a Famin had been in the City. He had alſo deſtroyed, and plucked down ſeveral houſes, for making the Streets more large and beautiful, without conſideration given to the Proprietors, tho to the enriching of his own Creatures, whom he had made Superiors over thoſe contrivances. Thus the people being full of hatred, and diſdain againſt the Pope, refuſed in the time of his greateſt exigency to afford him any relief, and defence againſt his enemies; who therefore without oppoſition entered into the new Suburbs, which being ſacked by them, they paſſed no farther for fear of the Cannon from the Caſtle; then they proceeded to the *Popes* Palace, and the great Church of S. *Peters*, which they plundered, and rifled, laying their Sacrilegious hands on every thing that was rich, or of value: but at length the tumult being appeaſed (for this Riot did not continue above three hours, by reaſon that they did no hurt, or damage to any particular perſon) the *Pope*, who found himſelf within the Walls of the Caſtle, without any proviſion, or ſuſtenance for himſelf, or his defendants, ſent to *Don Hugo de Moncada*, deſiring that he might have a parly and treaty with him, for the better underſtanding of matters between them. Tho Cardinal *Pompeo* was greatly averſe to all propoſals, or addreſſes for accommodation, yet *Don Hugo* under the Pope's Faith, having received the Cardinals *Cibo* and *Rodolfo*, who were of the *Pope's* kindred, as Hoſtages for his ſecurity, went into the Caſtle to treat, and diſcourſe with the Pope, where after many words had paſſed, an agreement was concluded in theſe terms. That a Truce ſhould be made between the *Pope* and the Confederates on one ſide, and of the Emperor on the other, for the ſpace of four

1525

months: That in the mean time the *Pope* ſhould withdraw his Army out of the Dukedom of *Milan*, cauſing them immediately to retire on the ſide of the River *Po* towards *Rome*, and call home his Fleet at Sea under the command of *Andrew Doria*; That he ſhould pardon the Cardinal *Pompeo*, with all others of the Family of *Colonna*; and for ſecurity hereof, ſhould deliver *Philip Strozzi*, a wealthy perſon, who had married the Daughter of *Peter de Medicis*, and one of the Sons of *James Salviati*, for Hoſtages; and to ſend them to *Naples* within the ſpace of two months, on penalty of thirty thouſand Ducats for default thereof. And laſtly, that *Don Hugo* ſhould depart from *Rome* with his whole Army, cauſing every thing to be reſtored, which had ſacrilegiouſly been robbed, and plundered from the holy places. The Truce being thus concluded, much to the diſſatisfaction of Cardinal *Pompeo*, and others of the Family of *Colonna*, *Don Hugo* chearfully departed from *Rome*, ſuppoſing that he had thereby performed ſufficient ſervice for the Emperor; and the *Pope* as readily accepted the Agreement, wanting proviſions in the Caſtle, and all other means to make a reſiſtance: But the *Pope* ſo ſoon as he found himſelf at liberty, and freed of thoſe fears, and dangers which encompaſſed him, having no regard to that Faith he had given under ſuch compulſive circumſtances, as Impriſonment, and Arms, nor care of the Hoſtages he had delivered, reſolved not longer to maintain the Truce; and thereupon recalled his Forces to *Rome*, being two thouſand *Switzers*, and ſeven Companies of Italian Infantry, under the command of *John de Medicis*; to which adding new Levies as an Auxiliary force, he in the firſt place deprived *Pompeo* of his Cardinals Hat, and publiſhed both him, and all the Family of *Colonna* Excommunicated, and enemies to the Church; and ſo further proſecuting them by Arms, he demoliſhed and laid waſte *Jubiato*, which was the Country-Houſe, and only place of Pleaſure in which *Pompeo* delighted, and divertiſed himſelf: and ſent *Vitelli* with his Companies to burn and deſtroy all the Towns and Countries of the *Colonnians*; as namely, *Marina*, *Montfortin*, *Gallicano*, and *Tagarolo*.

Whilſt theſe things were in action, the Emperor judging it not time to ſit quiet, and ſecure, commanded *Charles de Lonoia* Vice King of *Naples* to put in a readineſs ſix thouſand *Spaniards*, and ordered thirty Sail of ſtout men of War to be ſpeedily equipped, and ſent to the Coaſt of *Italy*; and wrote alſo to his Brother *Ferdinand* to perſuade *George Franiſpergio* a Captain of great authority, and renown in *Augusta*, that he would ſpeedily with three Regiments of *Germans* paſs into *Italy*; whoſe march, and paſſage over the *Po*, whilſt *John de Medicis* endeavoured to hinder, he was unhappily killed by a ſhot from one of the Enemies Sakers, which breaking his thigh a little above his knee, he was carried to *Mantoua*, where he died within a few days after, to the great prejudice of the Enterpriſe, and loſs to the *Pope*, for being a young man of nine and twenty years of age, whoſe Arms alone the Enemy feared; whoſe time and years his Experience and Virtue ſurpaſſed: and being of a moſt excellent temper, neither too forward, and precipitate, nor yet too wary, and diffident, gave evident indications of becoming with time one of the moſt eminent Captains in the world.

In this manner the Truce being abſolutely broken, a moſt cruel War began again in *Italy*; for the *Imperialiſts* entering the Eccleſiaſtical

State, had ſome skirmiſhes with the Pope's Forces about *Froſolone*; and matters preſſing hard to their diſadvantage, the *French* King was intreated to make a diverſion by attempting the ſubjection of the Kingdom of *Naples*. Hereupon it being determined to invade *Naples* both by Sea and Land, Monſieur *De Vaudemont* who by the ancient Right of King *René* laid claim to that Kingdom, was appointed for that enterpriſe, and being arrived with his Fleet, he at the firſt on-ſett took *Solerno*; and thence with great courage, and hopes marching to *Naples* it ſelf, was repulſed by the Forces under the command of *Don Hugo de Moncada*. Howſoever the Pope re-inforcing his Army with new Levies under the command of his Legate *Auguſtin Trivultio*, one greatly affected to the *French* intereſt, the Imperialiſts were worſted, and at length forced to raiſe their Siege from before *Froſolone*, and retire farther within the Juriſdiction of that Kingdom. But this good fortune paſſed no farther.

For after various ſucceſſes, and many troubles, and deſolations in *Italy*, the Pope wanting mony, grew weary of the War; and being diſappointed by the *French* King, who was great in his promiſes, but little in his performances, having always failed in his times of payment, and neither complied in the ſupplies of men, or mony, he reſolved to cloſe with the propoſitions made him by *Francis de Quignones*, in behalf of the Emperor; in reward of which mediation, he was afterwards promoted to the dignity of Cardinal. In ſhort, the Articles agreed were theſe: That there ſhould be a ceſſation of Arms for eight months, the Pope paying 60000 Ducats to the Imperial Army: That whatſoever had been taken from the Church, the Kingdom of *Naples*, and the Family of *Colonna*, ſhould be made good and rendered: That *Pompeo Colonna* ſhould be reſtored to the dignity of Cardinal, and abſolved from all Eccleſiaſtical cenſures; which condition was more grievous to the Pope than all the reſt: That the *French* King and the *Venetians* ſhould have liberty within a certain time to enter into the League, if they pleaſed: That the Pope ſhould pay forty thouſand Ducats in the ſpace of two and twenty days, and the reſidue in a month after: That the Vice-Roy of *Naples* ſhould come to *Rome*, to confirm the Articles; it being judged a good expedient to cauſe the Duke of *Bourbon* to obſerve the accord. The Capitulations of Peace being in this manner ſigned, both parties ſpeedily retired their Forces; and the Pope reſolving ſincerely to keep and execute the Articles, was alſo perſuaded, that the other party would do the like; of which being aſſured by the coming of the Vice-Roy to *Rome*, he unadviſedly disbanded all his Soldiers, excepting only 200 Horſe, and 2000 Foot, which he ſtill continued in his Pay, being of thoſe valiant Black Bands which had been commanded by *John de Medici*. Matters continued in this poſture for the ſpace of eight days: By which time the news of this accord being made known to the Duke of *Bourbon* and his Army, the Soldiery became enraged, and the Duke raiſed infinite difficulties about ſtanding to the Agreement; and eſpecially the *Spaniſh* Soldiery were ſo violent therein, that a Gentleman ſent by the Vice-Roy to the Duke to perſuade him to accept the Agreement, had been killed by them, had he not conveyed himſelf away from their fury: wherefore the Duke either not being willing, or not able to reſtrain his Soldiery, marched with all ſpeed imaginable to the Walls of *Rome*; to which without farther demur, applying his Ladders at the ſide of the *Vatican*, was the firſt, (that he might give courage, and example to his Soldiery) to ſcale the Walls; in which attempt being ſhot by a Cannon-Bullet, he fell dead from the Walls, and leſt his body lying expoſed to the view of the Soldiery ſhould give them cauſe of diſcouragement, the Prince of *Orange* who was near to him covered his Corps with his Cloak: Howſoever the ſtorm ſucceeded more proſperouſly towards the Mount of S. *Spirito*, where they entered on the 14th. of *May*, 1527. with the ſlaughter of ſome few, who had the courage to make any reſiſtance; and paſſing the Bridg of *Siſtus*, the whole Army conſiſting of *Germans*, *Italians*, and *Spaniards*, to the number of 40000, entered the City, where they committed all the ſlaughter, rapin, and violence which enraged and licentious Soldiers were capable to act, without reſpect to things ſacred, or prophane, or to thoſe Cardinals, who had the name, and report of being inclined to the Emperor's Faction. *Rome* never ſaw ſo ſad and diſmal a day, no not when they had been ſacked by the *Goths*, and other barbarous Nations; for whomſoever they met, they killed, and cut to pieces; the Streets ran with blood, the Altars were deſpoiled, the Churches and Monaſteries plundered, the Nuns and Women raviſhed, and the Palaces of the Pope, Cardinals, and Princes rifled and ſacked; ſo that it is impoſſible to expreſs, what Wealth and Riches lay in heaps, and what precious Commodities belonging to Merchants were made the prey of common Soldiers. And what made the ſpoil yet more great, was the number of Priſoners, every one of which was forced to cut his ranſom, and redeem himſelf at a certain price: And to augment the ignominy, as well as the deſolation of this miſerable fortune, the Prelates were taken by the Soldiers, and in all their Pontificalibus and Habits, were ſet upon Aſſes, and Mules, and led through the ſtreets with contempt and deriſion. The Pope amidſt theſe diſtractions fled to the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, his uſual Sanctuary, where being ſtreightly Beſieged, with great numbers of thoſe who retired thither for refuge, he ſoon began to want Proviſions; ſo that Famin conſtrained him to yield himſelf into the hands of his Enemies upon diſcretion, and on conditions of doing whatſoever the Emperor ſhould as a Conqueror impoſe upon him: And in the mean time, until Meſſengers could be ſent into *Spain*, and return to *Rome* with the Emperor's pleaſure, it was agreed that the Pope ſhould pay to the Army 400000 Ducats, for raiſing of which, all the Veſſels of Gold and Silver belonging to the Churches, which were ſaved from the rapin of the Enemy were to be melted down, and coined; and farther for raiſing mony, divers Cardinals Caps were ſet to ſale, as by publick out-cry to whomſoever would give moſt, who upon payment of the ſums agreed, were to enter into the College and dignity of Cardinals. The perſons who with their mony had purchaſed this quality were *Marino Grimano*, and *Francis Cornaro*, both *Venetians*; likewiſe *Sanſeverino*, *Carrafa*, and *Parmerio*, *Neapolitans*, and *Cardona* a *Spaniard*; and for an Auxiliary help to theſe payments, an impoſt of mony was to be charged upon the whole ſtate of the Church. It was farther agreed that the Pope ſhould deliver into the hands of the Emperor, to hold them ſo long as he pleaſed, the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, *Oſtia*, *Civita Vechia*, *Caſtellano*, with the Cities of *Parma*, *Piacenza*, and *Modena*: That the Pope and the thirteen Cardinals with him ſhould remain Priſoners in the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, until the monies were paid, and afterwards ſhould go to *Naples*, or *Gaietta*, until

Gaietta, until the pleaſure and determination of the Emperor was arrived.

The Duke of *Bourbon* being dead, the Prince of *Aurange* was made General in his place; to whom whilſt things were acting in this manner, advices came, that Monſieur *De Lautrec,* with a very great Army, by order of *Francis* the *French* King, to which alſo *Henry* the Eighth of *England* had joyned his Forces, was marching towards *Rome,* with deſign to reſcue the Pope from thoſe inſolent hands, under which he was a Priſoner: The news of which cauſed great tumults and mutinies amongſt the Soldiery, who being deſirous to depart quietly with their Prey, before they were forced to diſgorge it again, uſed all imaginable inſolences towards the Pope, to compel him to a payment of their Arrears, with the monies promiſed: but he not being maſter of one peny, was conſtrained to deliver into their hands the perſons of ſeveral rich men, which they had named, for ſecurity of the mony promiſed. But the ill fortune of *Clement* ſtopped not here, for ſo ſoon as the news of the Popes impriſonment was heard at *Florence,* the Inhabitants judged it a ſeaſonable opportunity to recover their liberty, and thereupon betaking themſelves to Arms, they forced the Cardinal of *Cortona,* with *Hippolito,* and *Alexander de Medicis* to abandon the City, and ſo re-aſſumed unto themſelves the free adminiſtration of a Common-wealth, under the Authority of a Gonfalonnier, created according to their ancient conſtitution for the ſpace of a year: for indeed the hatred they had conceived againſt the Houſe of *Medicis,* was for many reaſons, great and heinous; eſpecially becauſe they had been forced with their own mony to bear out the pride and greatneſs of that Family, in all the Wars they made in defence of the Dutchy of *Urbin,* and in the Wars which Pope *Leo* made againſt the *French:* for which reaſons, they perſecuted thoſe Citizens that had been friends to the *Medices;* they reverſed and defac'd through the City the Arms of that Family; they brake the Images of *Leo,* and *Clement,* which were rare pieces of Sculpture, and famous through the world; and in ſhort they omitted nothing which might affect the Pope with indignity and diſhonour, and nouriſh diviſion and diſcord in the City.

At *Rome* the Army was very diſorderly and tumultuous, governing themſelves, rather than obeying the command of their General the Prince of *Aurange*; for they were wholly diſpoſed to prey and violence, to get Ranſoms, and receive the mony promiſed them by the Pope, no care being had of the intereſt of the Emperor; nor was there any reſolution taken to remove the Army from *Rome,* where the Peſtilence raged, and was entered into the Caſtle of S. *Angelo,* to the great hazard of the Pope's Life, many being dead thereof who ſerved about his perſon: during which time, as the Imperial Army yielded little obedience to their Captains, ſo they made no great diſturbances, nor gave fears to their enemies; for the *Spaniards* and *Italians* flying from the infection of the Plague lay diſperſed about the Confines of *Rome;* and the Prince of *Aurange* was gone to *Siena* to avoid the Plague, and keep that City in Devotion and Obedience to the Emperor. Wherefore all matters of action at that time were quiet, and in repoſe, until Monſieur *De Lautrec,* who was Captain General of the League made between *Henry* the Eighth of *England,* and *Francis* King of *France,* for ſetting the Pope and all *Italy* at liberty, appeared in *Piedmont*, whoſe ſucceſs was ſo fortunate, that he took *Genoua*, compelled *Alexandria de la Paglia* to ſurrender, and having for four days battered *Pavia*, he forced it to yield at diſcretion, giving it up to the plunder and cruelty of his Soldiery; and laſtly ended that years Champaign with glory, wintering his Army in the City of *Bologna*.

The Imperialiſts being a little mortified, and abaſed with this ſucceſs of *Lautrec*, were deſirous to make the beſt bargain they could with the Pope, before he were forced from them, and agreed upon the payment of 60000 Ducats to the *Germans*, and 30000 to the *Spaniards*, with engagement to pay the reſidue at a certain time, to ſet the Pope and Cardinals at liberty, and afford them ſafe conduct to *Orvieto*, which was nominated and choſen by the Pope for the place of his ſecurity, and retreat. Upon this accord the Pope being guarded by the Imperialiſts, with leſs caution than before, gave him opportunity in the diſguiſe and habit of a Merchant to make his eſcape; which he rather determined to do, and recover his freedom in that manner, than to expect the formal conduct of the Imperial Guards, ſuſpecting that *Don Hugo de Moncada* who was Vice-Roy of *Naples* in the place of *Lanoia* dead of the Plague, and who had no good will towards him, would play him ſome trick, and baffle with him at the concluſion of all.

The Pope being now at liberty in *Orvieto*, after ſeven months impriſonment, was inſtantly congratulated by the Duke of *Urbin*, the Marquiſs of *Salutta*, and other Captains of the League, to whom having returned thanks for their kind and obliging Offices, he deſired them to withdraw their Forces out of the Dominions of the Church, aſſuring them that the Imperialiſts had promiſed to depart thence, in caſe the Confederates would ſhew them the firſt example: He wrote alſo Letters to Monſieur *Lautrec*, giving him to underſtand, that he with great ſence acknowledged the influence which his appearance in *Italy* had contributed towards his liberty, having much facilitated, and eaſed the conditions on which he was to receive it: and that the reaſon why he did not expect the glorious time, in which he was to have been delivered by his powerful hand, was, becauſe his neceſſities compelled him to procure his liberty with the greateſt ſpeed; for he obſerved, that the conditions impoſed on him, always changed from bad to worſe: that in the mean time the Church was oppreſſed, his Authority contemned, and he rendred uncapable of being that happy inſtrument of mediation, which was now required to ſettle peace among Chriſtian Princes. Thus far were excellent words, and ſuch as became a Biſhop under his mortifying circumſtances; but his words, and anſwers in other things, according to his natural temper, were in ſubſtance different at one time, to what they were at another. For when *Gregory Caſtle*, the King of *England*'s Em-
1528. baſſador came to him about the beginning of the year 1528, deſiring him to continue firm to the Confederates, he would ſome time give him hopes, and then again excuſe himſelf, as being ſo unfortunate, as to have neither Men, Mony, nor Authority remaining to him.

The Pope having now abandoned *Rome*, and Monſieur *Lautrec* upon
Ibidem. his march towards *Naples*, the Imperialiſts on the 17. of *February* left the City in a naked and poor condition, deſpoiled of all its Ornaments, and Riches, and applyed themſelves to Counſels in what manner they might

might have a ſtop to the proceedings of *Lautrec*, who departed from *Bologna* the 9th. of *January*. No ſooner were the Imperialiſts departed, than the *Urſins* with their Tenants and Paiſants entered to complete the ſpoil and deſolation of that City, of which not only the Houſes were ruined, and the Riches carried away, but all the Statues, Columns, and curious pieces remained a prey to theſe Locuſts.

Lautrec in his march towards *Naples*, took not the neareſt way, but rather for the more commodious carriage of his Cannon, and for the benefit of Forrage, and other Proviſions, fetched a compaſs by the way of *Puglia*: his Army conſiſted of 400 Lances, 6000 Footmen, old and Veterane Soldiers; beſides the Forces of the Marqueſs of *Salutta*, who marched in the Van, and the Regiments of the *Venetians*, and the Black Bands of *Florence*, which were in much eſteem and reputation with Monſieur *Lautrec*.

In ſhort, at the firſt appearance of *Lautrec* within this Kingdom, *Capua*, *Nola*, *Acerra*, *Averſa*, and all places yielded to him: but *Naples* endured a long Siege: at which Monſieur *Lautrec* dying of a Fever, and moſt of the Captains and Soldiers dead of the Plague, cauſed by the Contagion of thoſe that were privately ſent out of the City to infect the Camp, the enterprize upon that Kingdom had an end.

In the mean time whilſt theſe things were in action, *Saſſatello* rendred to the Pope the Rock of *Imola*, and *Sigiſmund Malateſta* upon ſome conditions reſigned *Rimini* into his hands; and the Pope having a great deſire to re-inſtate his Friends and Relations, and to advance his own Intereſt and Power again in *Florence*, he ſeemed inclining to the party of the Emperor, in whoſe power only it was to ſettle the Affairs of his Family in their priſtine ſtate: and therefore perceiving the Affairs of the *French*, and the other Confederates to decline in *Italy*, he forgot all the former injuries done to him by the Emperor, and entered into a perfect friendſhip and fair correſpondence with him. And farther to advance himſelf in the good opinion of the Emperor, he called for a review of the cauſe of Divorce between *Henry* VIII. of *England*, and *Catharine* his Queen, and Aunt to the Emperor; for which having at the time of thoſe great oppreſſions he lay under from the Empror granted a Bull, did now on terms of reconciliation, cauſe the ſame to be revoked. And now the Pope following his reſolution, and cloſely attending a fair concluſion with the Emperor, a Peace was concluded between them at *Barcelona*, much to the advantage of the Pope; proceeding perhaps (as may be believed) from a ſenſe the Emperor might have conceived of the unjuſt and hard uſage he had exerciſed towards him: and becauſe the urgency of his Affairs did call him into *Italy*, he might imagine that the countenance and favour of the Pope might be uſeful: and for theſe reaſons it was accorded, and agreed, That a perpetual Peace and Confederation be made between the Emperor and the Pope: That the Pope ſhould grant free paſſage to the Emperors Army through the Eccleſiaſtical State, in caſe it ſhould depart out of the Kingdom of *Naples*; That the Emperor ſhould re-inſtate the Sons of *Laurence de Medicis* in the ſame condition of greatneſs and power at *Florence*, as they had been in before their expulſion thence, or their Predeceſſors had enjoyed at any time before: That the Emperor ſhould by ſuch ways and terms as were moſt convenient, either by force of Arms, or otherwiſe, cauſe the poſſeſſion of *Crevia*, 1529.

Modena, *Reggio*, and *Rubiera* to be reſtored to the Pope. That theſe particulars being performed, the Pope ſhould in conſideration thereof yield unto the Emperor the whole and abſolute inveſtiture of the Kingdom of *Naples*, with the Tribute only of a White Horſe yearly to be given in acknowledgment of Fealty; together with the nomitation of four and twenty Cathedral Churches, which had formerly been in diſpute, but now were determined to belong to the Emperor; the Churches only which were not under Patronage to be reſerved to the Pope: That when the Emperor ſhould have paſſed into *Italy*, that the Pope and he ſhould have an interview, and meet at *Bologna*, or ſome other convenient place, to conſult about their Affairs, and matters relating to the Peace and ſettlement of the Church. And that the Emperor, and his Brother *Ferdinand* ſhould exerciſe their Temporal Arms againſt the *Lutherans*, and others who had revolted from the Roman Church, and ſecond the Spiritual Weapons of Excommunications, and Eccleſiaſtical cenſures, which were iſſued againſt them: That the Pope ſhould grant Plenary Abſolution to all thoſe, who had lately been injurious to the Apoſtolical See, or had by any violent, or hoſtile acts committed outrages againſt it: And laſtly, to confirm, and conſummate all theſe Articles by the more endearing terms of Alliance, the Emperor was to give *Margaret* of *Auſtria* his natural Daughter in Marriage to *Alexander de Medicis* Son of *Laurence*, late Duke of *Urbin*, with twenty thouſand Ducats of yearly Revenue; on whom the Pope intended to eſtabliſh the temporal greatneſs of his Family; having not long ſince created *Hippolito* Cardinal, who was the Son of *Julian*.

1529, This Peace was ſoon afterwards followed by another between the Emperor and the *French* King, treated at *Cambray*, of which the Pope was the chief Mediator by the Arch-Biſhop of *Capua*, who was ſent thither as Legate. The concluſion of this grand Affair did much facilitate the Emperors deſign upon *Florence*, which he committed to the charge and management of the Prince of *Orange*: who in purſuance of thoſe commands having muſtered his Forces about *Aquila*, he was deſired by the Pope to come to *Rome*, that he might the better conſult, and reſolve with him upon the proviſions and ways of carrying on the War. The Prince of *Orange* accordingly coming, was received by the Pope with great reſpect, to whom towards payment of the Army, thirty thouſand Ducats were iſſued out of the Popes Treaſury, and ſoon after forty thouſand more; with which, and with three pieces of Cannon taken out of the Caſtle S. *Angelo*, the Prince departing, he encamped before *Peruſa*, which was in the firſt place to be reduced to the obedience of the Church. This place being held by *Malateſta*, *Baillon* was ſurrendred upon compoſition; and thence the Prince entering on the Lands and Country belonging to the *Florentines*, encamped before *Spella*, which was in a ſhort time delivered to him.

Whilſt theſe things were acting, the Emperor departed from *Barcelona* with a great Fleet, wherein were a thouſand Horſemen, and nine thouſand Foot, with which he arrived at *Genoua*, to the great terror of all *Italy*, and eſpecially of the *Florentines*, who thereupon made choice of four Embaſſadors to congratulate his arrival, and endeavour to make ſome agreement with him for compoſition of their Affairs. When theſe Embaſſadors were admitted to the preſence of the Emperor, and that the Ceremonies of Congratulations were paſt; they declared, That their City was not ambitious, or deſirous of great enlargements, or extents of juriſdictions, but only to conſerve their own with their Rights and Liberties, being willing to be beholding to the power of any mighty Monarch, who would be pleaſed to take them into his protection. That they had aſſociated and entered into Confederacy with *France*, it was no matter of their own choice, but in obedience, and compliance with the Pope, who at that time commanded them; but that now they had thrown off all conſiderations of his Temporal Power, or his Families over them; and that their Commiſſion extending no farther than to a Treaty with the Emperor, they could not give ear to any thing which had reference to the Pope. This anſwer being unpleaſing to the Emperor, the Embaſſadors were refuſed farther Audience at *Piacenza*, tho they had followed the Court of the Emperor with that expectation from *Genoua* to that place; ſo that their Negotiation was at an end for that time.

1530. By this time, being about the beginning of the year 1530. the Pope arrived firſt at *Bologna*, and the Emperor ſoon after came to him; where he was received by the Pope with great honour, and lodged in the ſame Palace with him; and ſuch ſigns of familiarity and friendſhip paſſed, as if there had never happen'd any of thoſe diſguſts and violent actions between them, which we have formerly mentioned, or at leaſt that they had with a real and unfeigned pardon been entirely forgotten. Thus matters appearing fair and clear between them, the Emperor intended to paſs ſome time in *Italy*, in regard his Affairs in other parts ſeemed not much to require his preſence: for that *Soliman* the Magnificent, who was then Grand Signior, and had beſieged *Vienna*, was forced to raiſe his Camp, and return to *Conſtantinople*; and the Peace being newly concluded with *France*, nothing ſeemed in outward appearance which might give him cauſe of a vocation, or diverſion from the Affairs of *Italy*. Wherefore it was reſolved that the Emperor ſhould proceed to *Rome*, and there be Crowned, taking *Siena* in his way, for better diſpatch, and expedition in the deſign upon *Florence*: but whilſt theſe things were meditating, Letters came from the Electoral College to the Emperor, earneſtly intreating him, that he would be pleaſed ſpeedily to return into *Germany*, to conſider about the matter of Summoning a General Council for Reformation of Religion, and Election of his Brother *Ferdinand* to be King of the *Romans*; and alſo to prepare matters for reſiſtance of the *Turk*, who had ſworn to return thither again in a ſhort time. Theſe matters ſeeming of conſiderable importance, were the cauſe that the Emperor changed his reſolution of proceeding to *Rome*, and was Crowned at *Bologna* by the hand of the Pope, at which there was a great confluence of people, tho not that magnificence and pomp as had been uſual at the Inauguration of other Emperors. The day of his Coronation was the Feaſt of *S. Matthias*, a day thrice auſpicious to him, being the day of his Nativity, the day on which he took the *French* King Priſoner, and the day on which he was inveſted in the Imperial Dignity.

This Solemnity being paſt, the Emperor prepared for his Journey into *Germany*; howſoever before his departure, the Pope having ſetled his own buſineſs with him touching the ſubjection of *Florence*, other matters of difference relating to the *Venetians*, to the Inveſtiture of *Francis Sforza* into the Dutchy of *Milan*, and *Alfonſo d' Eſte*, Duke of *Ferrara*, were referred by compromiſe to the ſentence and determination of the Emperor; the expectation of which judgment gave for ſome time quiet and repoſe to the Affairs of *Italy*. After which, the Emperor proceeded to *Germany*, and the Pope returned to *Rome*; where after ſome ſhort time, he received the joyful news of the ſurrender of *Florence*; which having endured a long Siege by the Emperors Army under the command of the Prince of *Aurange*, and after his death of *Don Ferrand de Gonzaga*, yielded it ſelf by common conſent of the people to the government of twelve Citizens, who being of the Faction of the *Medices*, did without attending the Declaration of the Emperor, leave *Florence* entirely to the pleaſure and diſpoſal of the Pope; at whoſe inſtance and perſuaſion the Emperor declared *Alexander de Medicis* Prince, and Duke of *Florence*; and the ſame right of Honour and Dignity to deſcend from him to his Heirs for ever: the which Power and Title hath ſince that time continued in that Illuſtrious Family. Whilſt theſe things were acted in *Italy*, a Diet was aſſembled at *Ausbourg*, at which *Ferdinand* the Emperors Brother was elected King of the *Romans*; where alſo notice being taken of the great increaſe of the *Lutheran* Doctrin, which had ſpread it ſelf in all parts of *Germany*, and had taken root in the greateſt and moſt Princely Families; it was concluded by all ſides and parties, as well *Lutherans*, as others, that the only means to reform Affairs, and confirm thoſe Doctrines which were ſound and Orthodox, was only in the Power and Authority of a General Council: for the moderate Party which was inclined to the Papal Intereſt, conſidering the many abuſes crept into the Church, and the exorbitant power of the Clergy, hoped that a Council would reduce matters to more equal terms. The *Lutherans* on the other ſide, having formed a great and numerous Party, did apprehend that many of the dignified Clergy, that were to be Members of that Council, would prove well inclined and affected to them; where matters being debated with freedom and candor, the nakedneſs of the Church of *Rome* would be expoſed, and its Corruptions diſcovered. This being the general ſenſe of all *Germany*, which the Emperor was willing to ſatisfie, he ſent to the Pope, urging him to ſummon a Council; to perſuade him whereunto, he deſired him to recal unto his memory, the perſonal Conferences they had entertained at *Bologna*, and the aſſurances he had there given him of faithfulneſs and adherence to the Church; promiſing him, that neither his Authority nor Dignity ſhould be brought into any danger; for that he would be there preſent in perſon to overawe any contrivances which might be deſigned againſt either. Nothing could come more ungrateful than this propoſition to the Pope and Cardinals, who were not willing to expoſe the exceſſive abuſes and exactions of the Court of *Rome* to the teſt of a Council; where perhaps, the authority of Indulgences, the largeneſs of Diſpenſations, and other Errors being diſcuſſed, would give admiſſion into thoſe ſecrets, which were not to be touched, or opened. The Pope alſo had ſome ſecret reſerves of his own, which he would not have committed to the ſcrutiny of a Council: he was not willing perhaps to have it debated, that he was born Illigitimate, which incapacitates him of being a Cardinal, and conſequently of being Pope. Nor would he have the ſuſpicion of Simony, with which he practiſed with Cardinal *Colonna*, called into queſtion; beſides many other particulars, of which he feared to be cenſured by the Council: upon conſideration of all which, after conſultations had with the Cardinals deputed to the diſcuſſion of that matter, many reaſons were given to the Emperor, againſt the preſent Aſſembling of ſuch a Council; but when the time ſhould appear more ſeaſonable, that then the Indictions might be regulated with many proper and cautious circumſtances; as that the Council ſhould be celebrated in *Italy*, and that the Pope ſhould be perſonally preſent at it: and that the *Lutherans* ſhould promiſe to ſubmit the determination and deciſion of their Controverſies and Opinions, to the judgment and ſentence of a Council, and in the mean time deſiſt from the declaration, or propagation of their Doctrins: the which being a matter difficult, and unpracticable, the propoſition for a Council became ineffectual, and the thoughts thereof laid aſide until the Reign of another Pope.

Tho the Pope did not think fit to gratifie the deſires of the Emperor, and all *Germany* with a General Council; yet the Emperor not unmindful of the Arbitration he had accepted for ſettlement of the Affairs of *Italy*, did about the beginning of the year 1531. reaſſume the conſideration of thoſe matters. 1531. In the firſt place therefore he decreed that the City of *Florence* ſhould be governed by the ſame Magiſtrates, and by the ſame model, and form of rule, as it had formerly been in the time of the *Medices*; that *Alexander* the Pope's Nephew ſhould be chief in the Government, and ſo ſucceſſively his Heirs for ever: all the ancient Privileges and Immunities formerly granted by him, or his Predeceſſors were again reſtored and confirmed; with condition notwithſtanding of forfeiture, in caſe the Magiſtrates or People of that City ſhould attempt any thing againſt the authority and greatneſs of the *Medices*: the which Sentence he pronounced with a Deſpotick power, not by virtue of a compromiſe, or reference to him by the parties concerned, but by an Authority inherent in the Imperial Dignity. And tho this determination was pleaſing to the Pope, yet by the other relating to the Duke of *Ferrara* he was much offended: for after that Controverſie had been opened, heard, and examined by many Doctors and Teſtimonies, and Writings produced, the Emperor according to the counſel, and report made him, pronounced, that *Modena* and *Reggio* appertained of right to the Duke of *Ferrara*; who paying a hundred thouſand Ducats to the Pope, the Tributes ſhould be reduced to their ancient cuſtom, and he inveſted in the Juriſdiction of *Ferrara*. But the Pope would neither allow that part of the Sentence, nor accept the payment of the mony, wherein the Duke was condemned, refuſing the Tribute, which was offered to him according to the uſual cuſtom: ſo that there was neither open War, nor a ſetled Peace between the Pope, and the Duke of *Ferrara*; for having a regard, and ſome reſpect to the Emperor's Award, and Sentence, he feared to Aſſail him with open force, contriving in the mean time ſecret plots, and devices wherewith to enſnare him.

1532. Matters thus continued with ſome tranquility, until the year 1532. which was more ſignal for Forein Wars, than for the Commotions of *Italy*: For *Francis* the *French* King, not forgetting the ſufferings he had ſuſtained by the Emperor, contrived all ways imaginable for his revenge, not being ſcrupulous or aſhamed of ſecret practiſes and treaties with *Soliman* Emperor of the *Turks*, in deſpight of his Title of *Moſt Chriſtian*, to ſtir him up, and incite him to a War againſt *Charles* the Emperor; inviting him to make a ſecond attempt by laying ſiege to *Vienna*. *Soliman* being full of anger, and diſdain for the late foil he had received before that City, was eaſily perſuaded to try his fortune in another Expedition; but the Princes and Free Towns of *Germany* concurring with their Forces, and uniting them to the Imperial Troops, compoſed a moſt formidable Army, which being conducted by *Charles* the Emperor, who was the greateſt Captain of his age, and his name terrible to the *Turks*: *Soliman* made only ſome incurſions into *Hungary*, and then returned again to *Conſtantinople*,

But before this news came, and whilſt theſe things were in action, *Henry* VIII. King of *England*, and *Francis* the *French* King being both highly diſpleaſed with the Emperor, met together at *Boloign* in *France*, where they held ſeveral Conſultations how to improve the preſent ſtate of Affairs to their own advantage. And giving it for granted, that the *Turk* would Winter in *Hungary*, and afford the Emperor ſufficient employment for the year following; they reſolved to make uſe of this juncture of Affairs to their mutual benefit: in purſuance of which, it was determined between them, that the *French* King was to invade the State of *Milan*, and the Pope was to be induced to aſſiſt in the ſame deſign, and to determine the cauſe of Divorce of Queen *Catherine* in favour of King *Henry*, then depending in the Court of *Rome*: with which meſſage and inſtructions the Cardinals of *Ternon* and *Gramont* were ſent Embaſſadors to the Pope. But King *Henry* having not the patience to attend the reſult, contemned the authority of a Divorce by the Papal Power, contenting and ſatisfying his own Conſcience with what had before been diſputed, and determined in the Courts of *England* about that matter: and having underſtood, that the Legate *Campeius* had been ſent into *England* with a Bull of Divorce, which afterwards upon change of the Pope's mind he had burnt, the King was ſo enraged thereat, that he reſolved not to have farther dealings with the Pope; and thereupon Proclamation was publiſhed, that no perſon, of what eſtate or condition ſoever, ſhould purchaſe, or attempt to purchaſe from the Court of *Rome*, any thing prejudicial to the Juriſdiction or Prerogative of this Realm, upon pain of Impriſonment, or other puniſhment, according to the pleaſure of the King.

Baker's Chron.

But the retirement of the *Turks* out of *Hungary* put a period to the deſign of Invading the Dutchy of *Milan*, and to the expectation the King of *England* had of receiving a favourable ſentence at *Rome* in the point of Divorce; for the reſult of the Interview of theſe two Kings being known at *Rome*, haſtned the Pope to make a League with the Emperor, which was concluded at a ſecond meeting at *Bologna*, where the ſame Ceremonies, and terms of amity, and friendſhip paſſed between them, as had been formerly at the firſt. After which the Emperor by the way of *Genoua* paſſed into *Spain*; and the Pope returned to *Rome*, accompanied thither by the two Cardinals, *Ternon*, and *Gramont*; the which according to their Commiſſion inſiſted greatly to have the Divorce of Queen *Catherine* confirmed by the Pope's Authority; alledging the great damage and ruin, that an obſtinate perſiſtance to the contrary might bring to the Church; but the Cardinals of the Emperors Faction labouring to the contrary, and the Pope underſtanding what *Henry* had already acted in that point in *England*, iſſued an Excommunication againſt him and his whole Realm, unleſs, before the end of *September* following, he did revoke all the Acts he had made to the prejudice of the Apoſtolical See, and the Papal Authority.

Theſe *French* Cardinals, finding their Negotiations in reference to *England* to be unſucceſsful and deſperate; treated, notwithſtanding an interview between the *Pope* and the *French* King, to be held at *Marſeille*; colouring their deſign, with the ſpecious pretence of finding ſome expedient to accommodate matters between King *Henry* and the *Pope*; a Charity ſo great and Chriſtian, and of that high importance, as might challenge the labors and endeavours of the moſt Chriſtian King: and farther, it was pretended that a League and Union between the Chriſtian Princes was there to be negotiated againſt the *Turk*. But the deſire of the *Pope* being in reallity to marry his Niece *Catharine de Medicis* to the ſecond Son of the King of *France*, was eaſily perſuaded to condeſcend to a propoſition ſo agreeable to his own inclinations: in purſuance whereof, the *Pope*, with a great retinue of Cardinals, Embarked at *Piſa* on his own Gallies, and in a few days of proſperous Navigation, he landed at *Marſeille*, where being ſaluted with three hundred pieces of Cannon at his arrival, he was lodged for the firſt night in the Palace of the Duke of *Montmorency*, Grand Maſter and Mareſchal of *France*. The next day he made his entry through the City, habited in his Pontifical Veſtments, and carried in his Chair upon Mens ſhoulders; before him a White Horſe was led by two men, with ſilken Reins, carrying the Sacrament of the Altar; then followed the Cardinals in their Habits, mounted upon their Mules; after which came *Catharine de Medicis*, Dutcheſs of *Urbin*, attended with a great number of Ladies and Gentlemen, both of the *French* and *Italian* Nation; in which equipage the *Pope* paſſed the ſtreets to the Lodgings which were provided for him. The day following the *French* King came, and with great ſolemnity went to perform the Offices of Duty and Obedience to the *Pope*.

Theſe Solemnities and Ceremonies being paſt, matters of publick concernment were in the firſt place taken into conſideration by thoſe who were by the King and the *Pope* delegated to conſult thereof: and tho' the Marriage was the main point, which moved the *Pope* to undertake this Journey, yet it was in the laſt place, and as it was accidentally, and by the by treated of: The firſt thing aſſumed, was the propoſal about a General Council, but that was ſoon rejected, and executed with the ſame reaſons and replies as were given to the Emperor. In the next place, the King of *England*'s caſe was warmly inſiſted upon by the Commiſſioners of the *French* King, as it had been formerly agreed between the two Kings at *Bulloin*; but thoſe inſtances produced little effect; for the Miniſters of the King of *England* being in a huff, were always, to the diminution of the *Pope*'s Authority, Appealing to a Council; with which, the *Pope* referred their Cauſe to be farther debated at his return to *Rome*: and the *French* King being deſirous in all things to ſatisfie and comply with the *Pope*, he told him, that it would not be diſpleaſing to him, in caſe he proceeded againſt that King according to the Rule of Juſtice, and the ancient Canons of Eccleſiaſtical Cenſure; by which fair and friendly compliance, the *Pope* would not refuſe, at the inſtance of the *French* King, to create four Cardinals, tho' much againſt his own inclinations, fearing thereby to have rendered the *French*

Faction too ſtrong, which already was more prevalent in the Court of *Rome*, than the Pope deſired. In the laſt place, tho' the firſt in deſign, the Marriage between the Duke of *Orleans* and the Pope's Niece was treated and concluded; and the parties married by the Pope himſelf: by which a ſtrict and firm Alliance and friendſhip, being created between the *French* King and the Pope, it ſeemed as if all thoſe profeſſions of amity and good will, which had lately interceded at *Bologna*, between the Emperor and the Pope, had vaniſhed, or ſignified little; and now amongſt other Articles, it being capitulated, that the Duke of *Orleans* ſhould be inveſted in the Dukedom of *Milan*; it was with no leſs wonder conſidered, that the intereſt of *Francis Sforza* the true and right Heir to that Dutchy, and for which, both this and other Popes had ſo earneſtly contended, could ſo eaſily be made void, and transferred over to a Forein Prince, who could pretend no other right thereunto, than the might and power of his own Arms.

With entertainment of theſe Affairs, a months time being ſpent at *Marſeille*, the *Pope* returned to *Rome*; where, ſo ſoon as he arrived, he foretold his own death, acquainting his Friends and Domeſticks about his perſon, that he had not long to live; and therefore, in order to his Burial, he commanded the Ring to be provided, and the Veſtments in which Popes were uſually interred: howſoever, before his death, he thundered out his Bulls of Excommunication againſt *Henry* VIII. King of *England*, and all the people of his Realm; with which the King being highly incenſed, immediately withdrew his Obedience from the Papal See, and declared himſelf Head under *Jeſus Chriſt* of the Church of *England*; forbidding mony to be tranſported out of *England* to *Rome*, and commanded the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* to renounce his Title of
1534. Legate from the *Pope*: the which was the beginning of that bleſſed Reformation, which hath purged the Church of *England* from Errors, rendred it pure in its Doctrin, introduced the true and glorious light of the Goſpel, which will, with Gods aſſiſtance, for ever remain ſure and immoveable, in ſpight of all the contrivances either of the Fanatical irreligious malice, or the power or policies of the *Roman* Church: And moreover, it was the beginning of that liberty which we now enjoy, and the enrichment of this flouriſhing Nation, which now keeps its Treaſures and Acquiſitions to its ſelf, which in former days were emptied into the Coffers of the *Pope*, to make Foreiners opulent and its people poor.

But to return to *Pope Clement*; being taken with a pain in his ſtomach, a Fever enſued upon it; of which, according to his own prediction, he departed this life the 25*th.* day of *September*, 1534. leaving behind him in the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, many Jewels, in the Pontifical Chamber infinite Offices, but a very ſmall ſum of mony: he had at divers Ordinations created three and thirty Cardinals; all which (except Cardinal *De Medicis*) were made to pleaſe others, rather than himſelf. He had been exalted to the Popedom with wonderful felicity, and with the general applauſes, and grand expectations of the world; but in a ſhort time he fell ſtrangely in their opinion; for being of a temper naturally irreſolute and diffident, ſuffered himſelf to be devided by his two familiar friends, men differing in their humors, affections, and intereſts; which laid him low in the eſteem of mankind, and hated and deteſted by the *Romans*; and yet he was ſober, abſtemious, and a greater conqueror of himſelf; but accounted covetous, of no fidelity or faithfulneſs to his word, nor readily inclined to do any man a good office, unleſs forced thereunto by ſome conſtraining neceſſity; and yet he was grave, and well adviſed in his actions, if timorouſneſs had not oftentimes corrupted his judgment. He proved ſuch diverſity of fortunes, that it is hard to determine, whether his bad or his good fortune was greateſt: for what evil can be compared to the ſacking of *Rome*, which he beheld with his own eyes; his own, and the long impriſonment of the Cardinals; the deſolation of his own Country, of which he was an inſtrument, for the promotion only of the Family of the *Medices*. He died in the *67th.* year of his age, having held the Papal Chair ten years, ten months, and ſeven days: His Corps were firſt interred in the Church of *S. Peter*, but afterwards tranſported to the *Minerva*, by his own Relations, and laid by the Body of Pope *Leo* the tenth, over which they erected a ſtately Monument of Marble.

PAUL III.

THE Funeral Rites of *Clement* VII. being performed with due ſolemnity, the Cardinals entered the Conclave the *12th.* of *October*, 1534. and the ſame day towards night agreed unanimouſly in their Election, and publiſhed *Alexander Farneſe*, Dean of the College of Cardinals, to be with general conſent choſen Pope. The motives which the Cardinals, might have to haſten with ſuch facility and unanimous aſſent this Election might be various; for his family was great and ancient; He had been forty years a Cardinal, and thereby acquired a competent knowledg of the Affairs of the World, and of the practice of the Court of *Rome*; and being 68 years of age, and of a weak and tender conſtitution of body, the more robuſt and ambitious Cardinals expected, that his Reign could not be long, before he made way for one of them. And in regard, that in all the actions and negotiations of his life, he had ever ſhewed an indifferency, not inclining either to the Imperial or *French* Faction; the parties of neither ſide did make it their buſineſs or concernment to oppoſe him; for tho' the Family of *Farneſe* were *Guelfs*, and *Urſins*, rather than *Gibellins*, and of the party of *Colonna*; yet this *Alexander* did contain himſelf within that happy neutrality, that neither Faction had a prejudice to him, or did violently oppoſe him; ſo that all parties concurring with a common voice in his Election, did without farther demur or delay, ſalute and pay their reſpects and ceremonies of Worſhip to him, as Univerſal Biſhop: the which Election was ſo free and eaſie, neither conſtrained by an overawing force of armed Bands, nor by the power of a prevailing Party; that for many ages the like had not been known to the great joy of good men, who are always pleaſed with regular proceedings.

Alexander being thus choſen, he took on himſelf the name of *Paul* the Third; in conſideration, as ſome conjecture, that he was born in the Reign of *Paul* the Second, in *Canino*, a place in *Tuſcany*, which was the paternal ſeat of his Fathers.

Being now Pope, he declared much againſt *Nepotiſmo*, or advancing Favourites or Nephews to eminency or greatneſs; and therefore expreſly forbad his Natural Son *Pier-luigi* to come to *Rome*, or medling with the Affairs of the Church or State, requiring him to promiſe unto himſelf no other benefit or advantage by his promotion to the Papal See, than only to live a quiet and a comodious life. Howſoever, he was not ſo firm or conſtant to this reſolution, but that he promoted the Son of this *Pier-luigi*, a youth of 14 years of age, to the dignity of Cardinal, by the name of Cardinal *Farneſe*; and another alſo yet younger than the former, named *Aſcagno Sforzo*, his Siſters Son; the which unreaſonable promotions, at a time and conjuncture of Affairs ſo unfit, afforded juſt matter of diſcourſe and obloquy to the *Lutherans* and Reformers of Religion; who, beſides the impieties of former Popes, had yet ſome thing material to object againſt the levity and weakneſs of the preſent Government; howſoever, as if he intended to make amends for this unripe fruit, he aſſumed others of more mature age and wiſdom to this Dignity, whom he promoted either for their Virtues or Learning, or Nobility of their Families; amongſt which, *John Maria de Monte Arezzo*, Arch-Biſhop of *Siponto*, was one, who was afterwards made Pope by the name of *Julius* the Third: He alſo created *John Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, as alſo *Renard de la Poole* Cardinals, together with many others to the number of ſeventy one, during his Reign or time that he was Pope.

And as this Pope *Paul* the Third was very bountiful in theſe promotions, ſo he was no leſs magnificent and ſtately in his Structures; having in the firſt year laid the Foundations of that ſumptuous Building at *Rome*, called by the name of *The Palace of the Farneſi*, which is one of the moſt noble and magnificent Edifices, not only in *Rome*, but in all *Europe*: the which I the more willingly mention, becauſe that being my ſelf at *Rome*, I obſerved it to be moſt agreeable to the antique Buildings of old *Rome*: and that beſides the outward Magnificence, it was rarely furniſhed within ſide, with many excellent Statues, as that of *Hercules*, of *Flora*, and a Gladiator, eſteemed the beſt pieces in the world, which are in the Court, or Area below: Then above ſtairs you have the Statues of *Julius Cæſar*, and *Auguſtus*, *Homer*, *Herodotus*, *Pindarus*, *Cicero*, *Seneca*, and others; but that of *Caracalla* is beyond them all: he looks fierce, and wants nothing but motion to make you believe it is alive: there are alſo ſome Idol gods, and a Statue of *Socrates* on a Pedeſtal of the ſame Marble: but the moſt famed piece of Art, is the *Toro Farneſe*, which is a furious Bull held by the Sons of *Dirce*, who are tying their Mothers Hairs to the Horns of the Bull; it was brought from *Rhodes*, and eſteemed at a very high value. This Palace was begun by *Antonio Gallo*, an excellent Architect, and finiſhed by *Michael Angelo Buona rota*. Upon the Frontiſpiece of the Gate, theſe Verſes are engraven.

Tertius has Paulus ſtruxit Farneſius ædes,
Quarum forma oculos ponitur ante tuos,
Aſpicis immenſos hoſpes qui frontis honores,
His ſimiles, dices, Roma nec orbis habet.

Thus much had the pacifick and quiet ſpirit of *Paul* the Third effected; that amidſt the troubles and inquietudes of Government, he was able to attend to ſuch an expenſive piece of Structure; the which ſhews his averſion to War: for ſtately Buildings and ornaments of Cities are always the happy effects of Peace: and indeed, the Maxim which this *Pope* obſerved of keeping himſelf in a diſcreet neutrality between the Emperor and the *French* King, did marvellouſly contribute to his eaſe and proſperity; for by that means he was courted by them both, and lived without the troubles and expence of War, untill he was neceſſitated thereunto by other emergencies. Moreover, the firſt year of this Popes Government was ſo very happy in the ſeaſonableneſs of the Weather, and fruitfulneſs of the time, accompanied with ſo many other auſpicious circumſtances, as made thoſe, who had ſuffered in the late cloudy and tempeſtuous times of *Adrian* and *Clement*, bleſs the returns of *Rome's* glory and proſperity, as if the Golden Age had again entered, attributing all to the conduct and wiſdom of *Paul* the Third; of whoſe great Parts and Abilities they had received apparent inſtances in the Reign of *Clement* VII. who ſo kindly accepted the ſolicitations and labors which this *Alexander* when he was Cardinal had performed to relieve him when he was beſieged in the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*, by bringing *Lautrec* to his aſſiſtance, that he gained the primary ſtation of authority and eſteem with him; ſo that being ſick, and oppreſſed with a pain in his ſtomach, he would often ſay, that if the ſucceſſion to the Popedom were hereditary, or could be diſpoſed of by Will and Teſtament, he ſhould judg no other ſo worthy to be his Heir as this *Alexander*; who now, as we have ſaid, being elected *Pope* on the 12*th.* of *October*, was Crowned on the ſecond of *November* following, with all the Ceremonies uſual at that Solemnity.

Being thus ſetled in his Pontificate, he reſolved to adhere to his ancient principle and maxim of Neutrality; and therefore could never be perſuaded to revoke, or annul the League which was made between *Clement* the Seventh his Predeceſſor, and *Charles* the Emperor at *Bologna*: for tho' that League was principally calculated, and deſigned to drive the *French* out of *Italy*, to which, tho' perhaps the dominion of the Imperialiſts might be equally grievous and oppreſſive; yet conſidering, that ſuch a breach of Articles in favour of the *French*, could not be performed without innovations, which muſt neceſſarily produce Wars and diſturbances in *Italy*, nor effected without impeachment of that Neutrality, which he had often avowed to be indiſpenſably belonging to the Office of *Popes*, who were the common Parents of all Chriſtian Kings; and therefore he would never give ear to thoſe ſuggeſtions which the *French* Miniſters and Faction, would frequently inculcate in favour to that King. And whereas the former *Pope* was always averſe to the inſtances which the Emperor, and *French* King, and other Princes made to him for a General Council to be held for reforming abuſes crept into the Church, and ſuppreſſing the Opinions of *Luther*, which they called heretical, and which began to dilate, and ſpread themſelves in all parts of Chriſtendom: Now this *Paul* the Third was of ſuch a different ſenſe herein to his Predeceſſor, that he freely declared for a Council, ſhewing himſelf willing to meet the deſires of the Princes, and promiſed in a ſhort ſpace to appoint the time and place where ſuch a Council ſhould be held and celebrated. And farther to confirm and improve this good correſpondence with the Chriſtian Courts, he diſpeeded his Emiſſaries and Legates into all parts, whoſe care it was as well to advance the private intereſts of his Family, as the common benefit of the Church; and particularly, to ſolicit and promote ſuch a good correſpondence and peace between the Emperor and the King of *France*, that uniting their Forces for the common ſafety of Chriſtendom, might joyntly make War upon the *Turk*, and other enemies to the Chriſtian Faith: but herein his deſires found little ſucceſs, for the *French* being beaten out of *Italy*, could not ſupport the proſperity of the Emperor, againſt whom breathing nothing but revenge, could never be induced to unite their Arms in a common Cauſe; or joyn in a deſign then preparing by the Emperor againſt the Kingdom of *Tunis*, which one *Barbaroſſo* had uſurped: who having by the help of Soldiers and a ſtrong Fleet, furniſhed and equipped at the expence of *Soliman* Emperor of the *Turks*, droven *Mulcaſſes* King of *Tunis* out of his Country, did with the Pyracies he committed, very much infeſt the Coaſts of *Spain* and *Sicily*; and being arrived to a conſiderable power, threatned to invade the Kingdom of *Naples*. This growing greatneſs of *Barbaroſſo*, and the daily Pyracies he committed, were ſufficient provocation to *Charles* the Fifth to wage War againſt him; and being a Tyrant, and an Infidel, the Pope alſo became concerned in this Holy Cauſe, to concur with the Emperor, for whoſe aſſiſtance, he furniſhed out nine Gallies, which were fitted at *Genoua*, beſides three others which were the uſual Guard of the Coaſt; over this Fleet *Virginio Orſino*, a perſon of great quality was conſtituted Admiral, to whom was joyned *Paulo Giuſtiniano* a Noble *Venetian*, and one of great experience in Sea Affairs. The preparations of the Emperor alſo were very great, his Fleet was commanded by Prince *Doria*, who was made Commander in Chief at Sea, to whom the Pope made a preſent of a ſhort Sword, or Poniard, with a Hilt ſet with Jewels, and the Scabbard rarely Engraved, and conſecrated with the uſual Ceremonies; likewiſe a Cap of Velvet Embroidered with Pearls, which were the accuſtomary Donatives which Popes made to Generals that were employed in a Holy War againſt Infidels. The Marquiſs *Del Vaſſo* was created General of the *Italian* and *German* Infantry, and being on his Voyage towards *Tunis*, he touched in his way thither at *Civita Vecchia*; to which place the Pope went in perſon to bleſs the Army, that he might evidence to the world the great zeal he had for the Chriſtian cauſe: the which office of Benediction he performed on the top of a high Tower, from whence ſurveying the Fleet of Ships and Gallies, he ſolemnly prayed with a Choire of Prieſts for the happy ſucceſs of this enterpriſe, making thouſands of Croſſes on the empty Air; and then deſcending into the Church, he delivered the Banner and Scepter of the Chriſtian Religion into the hands of *Virginio Orſino* his General.

The ſucceſs of this Expedition was, that the Emperor having landed a great Army on the Coaſt of *Tunis*, defeated *Barbaroſſo*, and put his Forces to flight, took the City of *Tunis*, and reſtored *Mulcaſſes* the vanquiſhed Prince to his Kingdom on conditions of Homage and Tribute; for better ſecurity of which payment and performance, he built two Caſtles at the *Goleta*, which being Garriſoned with *Spaniards*, ſerved for Block-Houſes to that Port; and having releaſed twenty thouſand

Chriſtians from Captivity, which *Barbaroſſo* had by his depredations at Sea and Land, taken and enſlaved, he returned with his Fleet to *Sicily*, and then to *Naples*, where he ſolemnly entered in a triumphant manner, with ſuch joy and feſtivals as are due to ſuch ſucceſſes. Nor was this good news leſs welcome to *Rome*, were Proceſſions of Thankſgivings were made, and *Te Deum* ſang in the moſt ſolemn manner, and farther to teſtifie the great joy which the *Pope* conceived for this ſucceſs, *John Piccolomini*, and *Alexander Ceſarini*, were ſent from him to congratulate with the Emperor for this glorious and happy Victory.

Whilſt the Emperor was in his paſſage between *Sicily* and *Naples*, advices were brought him of the deceaſe of *Francis Sforza*, who was the laſt Duke of *Milan*, by whoſe death that Dutchy devolved to the Empire, being afterwards governed by *Antonio de Levæ*, in form of a Province: howſoever, the Title thereunto was not ſo clear on the Emperors ſide, but that the King of *France* laid his claim unto it, not only by right of inheritance, as deſcended from his Great-Grand-Mother *Valentina*, but by virtue alſo of a conceſſion granted by publick Act from *Maximilian* the Emperor to King *Lewis* XII. of *France*, on a valuable conſideration of mony paid for it, after *Lodowick Sforza* had been taken and droven from thence. But this pretence ſeemed of little moment to the Emperor, who judging this Dukedom of great importance to his State, came from *Naples* to *Rome* with intent to perſuade the *Pope* to joyn with him in a League againſt the *French*, that ſo *Italy* might be more in repoſe and quiet, by expulſion of the *French*, who were always eſteemed great diſturbers of the peace of it. On the 5*th.* of *April*, 1536. *Anno* 1536. the Emperor came to *Rome*, where being received by the Cardinals, Biſhops, and all the Orders of the Clergy, with the Citizens, he was conducted to the Church of S. *Peter*, where the Pope attended him on the ſteps of the Porch: and the uſual Ceremonies being paſſed, he was lodged in that apartment of the *Vatican* Palace, which was built by *Innocent* VIII. During the reſidence which the Emperor made at *Rome*, he entertained frequent Conferences with the Pope concerning a League to be entered into between them and the other Princes of *Italy*, for expelling the *French* out of that Country; who having been always known under the character and notion of the diſturbers of their peace, they could never hope or expect quietneſs, whilſt that reſtleſs people had any hold, or poſſeſſion in their Quarters. And farther, the Emperor in a publick Aſſembly of the Pope and all the Cardinals, and Forein Miniſters, did moſt ſeverely inveigh againſt *Francis* the *French* King, as the moſt ungrateful and faithleſs of all the Princes of the Univerſe: but being ſharply anſwered and replied upon by Monſieur *Bellay* the Embaſſador of *France*, the Emperor became more moderate in his terms and diſcourſes on that ſubject; during which time, there was a moſt profound ſilence amongſt all the Cardinals in that Auguſt Aſſembly. But then, as to the propoſition made of a League between the *Italian* Princes for expulſion of the *French*, the Pope did with ſingular reſpect to the Emperor, approve, and praiſe the pious affection he had for the care and repoſe of *Italy*; but yet as to himſelf, he could not recede from his principle and reſolution of Neutrality, which he had grounded on the foundation of his Paſtoral Office and Charge, which enjoyned him to ſeek, and endeavour to the utmoſt of his power, an Union and Peace between Chriſtian Princes;

and therefore he heartily urged him to a Peace with the King of *France*, offering himſelf to become the Mediator and Umpire in the accord between them: But ſo far was the Emperor *Charles* tranſported with anger and diſdain, againſt *Francis* the *French* King, that he treated him with all the terms of obloquy, that his rage could ſuggeſt; concluding, that nothing could determin, or put a period to the differences between them, but only the death of one of them two; and therefore did publickly defie and challenge *Francis* to a ſingle Combat: but the Pope being deſirous to mitigate this heat, with fair words and gentle perſuaſions embracing him, deſired him not to give way to his paſſion; and when the Embaſſadors of *France* would have anſwered ſomething farther in favour of their King, he required them to be ſilent, reſolving not to give ear to any of their Expoſtulations. Hence, a cruel War aroſe between the Empire and *France*; for the Emperor having remained 14 days at *Rome*, departed thence with deſign to Invade *France*; and ſo paſſing through *Tuſcany*, and the Juriſdiction of *Genoua*, at the perſuaſion of *Antonio de Leva*, he entered *Provence*, where, for want of all Proviſions, and by reaſon of the Diſtempers and Sickneſſes which at that time reigned in that Country, his Forces were reduced to great difficulties; which was the reaſon that this War did not continue a year, before a Truce was concluded of ten months between them: the opportunity of which quiet interval, the Pope improving for making a firm and conſtant Peace, laboured to appeaſe the incenſed ſpirits of thoſe two Princes by an interview at *Nice*, which he propoſed as a place for their Meeting, and where he himſelf offered to be perſonally preſent: for tho' being 73 years old, his age might excuſe him from the fatigue of ſuch a Journey; yet for the ſake of the peace of Chriſtendom, and the piety of this work, he offered himſelf to be Arbitrator of their Controverſies: the which being aſſented unto by the two Princes, about the beginning of *June*, 1538. the Emperor, and the *French* King, and the Pope alſo perſonally appearing at the place appointed, where the *Pope* taking the Propoſitions and the Demands on both ſides into conſideration, he found ſo many difficult and knotty points to be determined, that deſpiring of any concluſion in manner of a Peace, he propoſed a Truce for ten years between them; during which time, all acts of Hoſtility were to ceaſe, and free Commerce and intercourſe of Trade to be admitted between their Subjects: the which being accepted by both parties, the Emperor and the King returned to their Dominions, and the *Pope* to *Rome*; where he was received with the common joy and acclamations of all the City.

But to return from theſe ſecular Diſturbances and Treaties, to matters more nearly relating to Religion and the Church. It was now about twenty years that *Luther* had preached his Doctrins in *Germany* and other parts; and that the Chriſtian Princes had long deſired a General Council; againſt which, this *Paul* the Third having never ſhewed himſelf averſe, but rather teſtified a willingneſs and inclinations thereunto, 1537. it was now thought fit to aſſign the time and place for aſſembling this Council; the which was publiſhed by a Bull, penned with great caution and ſubtilty, by ſix Cardinals and three Biſhops, leſt the words ſhould prejudice, or any wiſe infringe the Papal Authority; the which was dated in publick Conſiſtory the 12*th.* of *June*, and ſigned by all the Cardinals: the Tenure of which was to this effect.

“That ſince the time that this Pope entered into the Papal Dignity, he never had more paſſionately deſired any thing, than to purge the Church of Chriſt, (the care of which was committed to his charge) of all Errors and Schiſms, and to reſtore it to the ancient Diſcipline and ſeverity of the Primitive times; to effect which, he judged no expedient ſo agreeable and proper as a General Council, the which he had often ſignified both to the Emperor, and other Kings; in hopes that after all Errors were corrected, and exploded, and abuſes in manners reformed; that ſuch a Sacred Convention would procure, and beget a right underſtanding between all Chriſtian Princes, that laying aſide all Quarrels and Animoſities amongſt themſelves, they would unite together in a War againſt Infidels, for recovery of the Countries they had uſurped, and reſcue of our Chriſtian Brethren who ſuffer under their ſervitude, and ſlavery. To which end, by virtue of that abſolute Power committed to him by God, and by, and with the conſent of his Brothers the Cardinals, he did Indict, and publiſh a General Council to be held at *Mantoua*, at, or upon the 27th. of *May*, of the year following: Commanding and requiring all Biſhops, and Prelates of what degree or place ſoever, to be aſſiſtant, and preſent thereunto, as they were obliged by Oath, and by Holy Canons, and Decrees inſtituted on ſuch occaſions. Deſiring and intreating the Emperor, and all Chriſtian Princes, for the love of Jeſus Chriſt, to be preſent and aſſiſtant there in perſon, if it were poſſible, and conſiſtent with their Affairs; and if not, then to depute their Embaſſadors, and Miniſters with plenary Power, and Authority; as they had already promiſed both to *Clement* and himſelf, &c.

Hiſt. Trent.

The Pope alſo publiſhed another Bull at the ſame time, to purge, (as he called it) the City of *Rome* from Vices, and corruption of manners; that ſo, as his intentions were to reform all that was amiſs in the Chriſtian world, (of which in ſpiritual matters he was the Head, and Chief) ſo it was moſt pious to begin at home; that the ſtreams from the original Source might deſcend more pure and limpid into other parts.

But the firſt Bull indicting a Council at *Mantoua*, had not been long publiſhed, before the Duke of that place, conſidering, that for the ſecurity thereof, it would be neceſſary to maintain a ſtronger Garriſon, than uſual; the extraordinary charge, and expence of which he demanded of the Pope; with many other hard conditions derogatory to the Papal Power, and ſuch as did infringe that liberty which was always accorded to places, where General Councils had been celebrated: it was therefore thought fit to aſſign another place; the which being not as yet agreed, the time of Aſſembling was deferred from *May*, until the firſt of *November* following.

The month of *November* approaching near, the Pope publiſhed another Bull, appointing the Council to be held at *Vicenza*, a City under the Juriſdiction of the *Venetians*, upon the firſt of *May* next, in the year 1538. deputing for his Legates the Cardinals *Campeggio*, *Simonetta*, and *Jeronimo Alexandro*, alledging for cauſe of ſuch prolongation the nearneſs of the Winter, which would be very incommodious to thoſe, who were to travel thither from remote parts. Howſoever upon divers obſtacles, and inconveniences thereupon occurring, the place for meeting of this Council was altered, and the time deferred for ſome years after, as will appear by the ſequel hereof. In the mean time *Henry* the Eighth, King of *England*, who in the year 1535, was by Act of Parliament Authorized Head of the Church of *England*, did now abſolutely throw off all Obedience to the Papal See; at which time the whole Clergy of *England* was charged by the King's Learned Council to be in a *Præmunire* for ſupporting and maintaining the Legantine power of Cardinal Baker's Chron. *Woolſey*: and were thereupon called by Proceſs into the Kings Bench: but before that day of appearance came, they in their Convocation concluded an humble ſubmiſſion in writing, and offered the King a hundred thouſand pounds to have their Pardon by Parliament, which offer after ſome pauſe, and deliberation, was accepted, and their pardon promiſed. Until this time the Popes, that is, *Clement* VII. and this preſent *Paul* the Third had ſubtilly diſſembled matters between them and *Henry* King of *England*, intending if neceſſity had required to have confirmed his Divorce from Queen *Catherine*; to which end Cardinal *Campeggio* was ſent into *England*, and joyned in Commiſſion with the Cardinal of *York*, with Authority to give Sentence in favour of the King; and that the matter might receive a ſpeedy diſpatch, and not be ſpun out by length of time, required in the ſolemnity of Judgment, and paſſing Sentence; a Brief was ready framed, and drawn up, and the Bull, or Seal thereunto affixed, whereby the Marriage with Queen *Catherine* was made null, and void, in the moſt ample manner, and with Terms and Clauſes ſo full, as nothing could be more expreſſive, nor more large than that Inſtrument, with inſtructions notwithſtanding not to preſent or publiſh the ſame, unleſs they received aſſurances, that *Henry* would continue firm and conſtant in his Obedience to the Authority of the Church; and in this manner things ſtood, and thus far had proceeded in the year 1528. *Clement* the Seventh being then Pope; and ſo remained in ſuſpenſe until the time of this preſent *Paul* the Third, when *Henry*, bidding defiance to the Papal Authority, proceeded to actions never ro be reconciled with that Church; whereupon the Pope iſſued out his Bull, dated the 30th. of *Auguſt* 1535. whereby he cited King *Henry* to appear perſonally before him, and the College of Cardinals at *Rome*, to give anſwer to all thoſe Cruelties, Sacrileges, Adulteries, and other Crimes whereof he ſtood accuſed: and in caſe of refuſal, he pronounced him, and all his Subjects to remain under cenſure of Excommunication; declaring him actually deprived of his Crown, and Kingdom; his Subjects abſolved from all Obedience; all actions of Religion interdicted and forbidden to be performed, or celebrated in his Dominions: commanding all Eccleſiaſtical perſons to depart from his Kingdoms, and the Nobles to riſe up in Rebellion againſt him. But all this lightning and thunder of Excommunication did little terrifie the reſolved mind of King *Henry*, but rather incenſed him to proceed in that courſe, which ſince that time, hath laid the happy beginning of that bleſſed Reformation, under which by Gods mercy we enjoy the true and glorious light of the Goſpel.

On theſe terms *England* ſtood in reference to the Pope, when publication was made of a General Council to be held at *Mantoua*, and then altered to *Vicenza*; in which caſe King *Henry*, judging himſelf concerned in deſpight of his Excommunication, publiſhed a *Manifeſto* in his own name, and in the name of all his Nobility, whereby he proteſted againſt any ſuch Convocation aſſembled by the Pope's Authority, as being in it ſelf of none effect; excepting alſo againſt the place, as unſecure, and the Country as infeſted with continual Wars. But whereas he was deſirous of a General Council, as being the only means whereby to reform the diſſolute matters of the Clergy, and ſuppreſs the exorbitant Tyrannies, and Uſurpations of the Clergy, he ſhould willingly give his conſent thereunto, provided that ſuch Convocation were aſſembled by the Authority of the Chriſtian Kings and Princes, who had the ſole power and diſpoſal of ſuch matters; for as to the Pope, he eſteemed him only as a Biſhop in his own Dioceſs, with no farther extent of Juriſdiction, than that which reacheth thereunto; the which alſo was moſt reaſonable at this time, when the abuſes of the Court of *Rome* were the chief matters to be reformed, and to be preſented to the cogniſance and cenſure of ſuch a Council. Beſides this great defection of *England* from the Papal Obedience, which gave a fatal blow to the Church of *Rome*, the Doctrine of *Luther* daily grew, and dilated it ſelf in all parts of *Germany* and *France*, with much diſturbance; for allaying of which, and eſtabliſhment of the truth of the Goſpel there was no other remedy mentioned, and cried up by all parties, but a General Council; but this admitted of ſo many ſcruples, diſputes, and nicities, as to the time and place, that nothing could as yet be reſolved. In the mean time the *Turks* taking advantage upon the diſcord amongſt Chriſtians, entered *Dalmatia* with Fire and Sword, and took the ſtrong Town of *Cliſſa*, which the Pope had fortified with all ſorts of Proviſions, and Ammunition; which misfortune the Pope greatly reſenting, ordered ſolemn Proceſſions to be made in *Rome*, at which he was preſent in perſon, and walked on foot; and ſent his Legates to moſt Chriſtian Princes, exhorting them to lay aſide the Quarrels, and Wars amongſt themſelves, and unite together againſt the Common Enemy, in order whereunto a League was made between the Pope, the Emperor, and the *Venetians*; the conditions whereof were, that the Emperor ſhould ſet 82 Gallies to Sea, and the *Venetians* the like number, and the Pope 38; with which force of 200 Sail, they agreed to inveſt the *Turks* Dominions in ſome parts of *Greece*. *Andrea D'Oria* was conſtituted Admiral of the Emperor's Fleet, *Vicenzo Capello* of the *Venetians*, and *Marco Grimano* Patriarch of *Aquileia*, of the Pope's; and in caſe any deſcent were made, or Forces landed, then *Fernando Gonzaga*, Vice-King of *Sicily* was to be *Generaliſſimo*, or Commander in chief: but the ſucceſs did not anſwer ſo great preparations, which proved rather diſhonourable, than advantagious: for this formidable Fleet being at Sea, near the Promontory of *Antium*, had ſight of the Fleet of *Barbaroſſo*; and might with much eaſe have charged and vanquiſhed them; but *Andrea d'Oria* the Emperor's Admiral refuſed to engage; ſo that leaving the Enemy, they all divided themſelves into three Squadrons under their reſpective Commanders, ſailing away in manner of a flight, to the great ignominy, and ſhame of the Chriſtian Arms; which inglorions action did greatly diſpleaſe the Pope, and more eſpecially the *Venetians*, who inſtead of ſome great benefit which they expected in return for all their expence, and hazard, loſt *Caſtlenuovo*, which was ſoon afterwards taken by the Enemy.

Howſoever this publick Diſgrace was in ſome manner repaired by the favour, and good will of the Emperor towards the Pope, who beſtowed on his Son *Pier-luigi* the City of *Novara*, and gave *Margaret* of *Auſtria*, the Widow of *Alexander de Medicis* in marriage to his Nephew *Ottavio*, with a Portion of 250 thouſand Ducats.

It happened about this time, that *Francis Naria da Meltro*, Duke of *Camerin*, died, the Pope immediately reſolved to make ſeizure of *Camerino*, pretending that that place was devolved to the Church, ever ſince the death of *John Maria Varano*, whom *Leo* X. had made Duke of that place; for that he leaving no Heirs Male, *Feltro* had by Uſurpation taken poſſeſſion of that place, in right only of *Julia* the Daughter of *John Maria Varano*, whom his Son *Guido Ubaldo* had taken to Wife, and held the ſame in deſpight of *Clement* the late Pope. And now whereas the preſent Duke was a youth of tender age, and no experience, the Pope made uſe of this opportunity to lay his claim, (which he had concealed during the life of the old Duke) and to make it good raiſed an Army, and marched againſt *Camerino*, with which this young Duke being terrified, ſurrendred the place without other difficulty to the Pope, who having ſatisfied all pretenders to any Arrears by disburſement of great ſums of mony, he inveſted his Nephew *Ottavio Farneſe* in the place, creating him Duke of *Camerino*, chief Prefect of *Rome*, and Cenſuary of the Church.

By this and other expences the Chamber was greatly exhauſted of its Treaſure; to recruit which the Pope laid new Gabels and Impoſitions on all Commodities in his Dominions, and eſpecially upon Salt; the which ſo diſcontented the People of *Perugia*, that from a mutiny they took Arms, and appeared in open Rebellion; but being ſoon quelled by the Popes Forces, all their Immunities and Privileges were ſeized, whereby they were forced to ſend their Meſſengers to *Rome*, with all humility and ſubmiſſion to beg Pardon from the Pope, promiſing all Loyalty and Obedience for the future.

1539. *Aſcanius Colonna* making alſo ſome diſturbance on the like occaſion, was for his contumacy deprived of his Eſtate in *Campagna*, *Paliano* was diſmantled, and his Fortreſs of *Rocca* entirely demoliſhed.

Things being thus reduced, and ſettled in the Temporal State, he converted his thoughts to the quiet and ſecurity of the Church: and conſidering that diſturbances in the world proceeded commonly from want of good Inſtruction, and corruption of manners, he commanded the Biſhops to their reſpective Dioceſſes, enjoyning them to reſide there, and teach their Flocks with good Lectures, by their own exemplary lives.

1540. In the year 1540. he augmented and enlarged the Immunities, and Priviledges of the Chamber, and the Authority of the Referendaries: He gave liberty to Clergy-men to diſpoſe of their Eſtates by Teſtament without leave or interruption of the Apoſtolical Chamber: He gave liberty alſo to Jews which were converted to Chriſtianity to diſpoſe of their Eſtates according to their own will and pleaſure, and reformed many abuſes in the adminiſtration of Civil, and Criminal Cauſes; and towards the end of this year conſtituted Cardinal *Farneſe* his Nephew Legate at *Avignon* in the place of the Cardinal *D'Auch* deceaſed.

The Pope (as we have declared before) ſhewing himſelf unreſolved in the matter of a Council, being very wavering as to the time, and place, tho he ſeemed always ready to agree thereunto; and from the firſt time that he was created Pope, evidenced an earneſt deſire above all things to comply with the Chriſtian Princes in that particular; at length the Emperor and Princes of *Germany* finding their Country toſſed, and embroiled with various diſputes of Religion, reſolved to call a Diet at *Regensburg*, ſuppoſing that a National Aſſembly might ſettle, and determin Controverſies in want, and for defect of a General Council; and in purſuance thereof a Diet was opened at *Regensburg* about the beginning of *March*, 1541.

Hiſt. Trent.

1541. At this Diet the Emperor himſelf was preſent with great hopes that all Controverſies about Religion would be here determined, and *Germany* united in the ſame opinion. Hereunto the Pope ſent Cardinal *Gaſpar Contarini* to be his Legat; a perſon of excellent prudence, and learning, accompanied with ſeveral others well inſtructed in the intereſt of the Court of *Rome*, and with publick Notaries skilful in drawing up Authentick Acts, and Forms of Law, to whom above all things it was committed in charge, not to receive any Papers, or Memorials which might tend to the leaſt abatement, or diminution of the Papal Authority; but in ſuch caſe to break up abruptly, referring thoſe matters to the determination of a General Council. In ſhort, after long Conferences, and Debates, the Diet broke up on the 28th. of *July*, the Emperor referring all that had been done, or tranſacted there to a General Council, or to a National Synod of *Germany*, or to a Diet of the Empire; promiſing to go himſelf into *Italy*, to treat with the Pope on that matter, and in caſe the Pope ſhould appear refractory thereunto, that then notwithſtanding he would within the ſpace of eighteen months, by virtue of his own Authority iſſue forth his Writs for calling a Diet of the Empire, for ſetling the Affairs of Religion, and prevail with the Pope to ſend his Legat to it: And in the mean time he commanded the Proteſtants not to receive any other new Doctrines, than ſuch as had already been debated; and enjoyned the Biſhops to reform the abuſes of their Churches. He forbad alſo the diſſolution of Monaſteries, or any ſeizure to be made on the Eſtate of the Church, and any perſon or perſons whatſoever to change, or alter his or their Religion. And for the better ſatiſfaction and contentment of the Proteſtants, that in thoſe points which were ſtill under Controverſie, he left every man free, and at liberty in his own judgment; and farther, that ſuch Monaſteries as were not yet demoliſhed, ſhould ſtill remain, but howſoever ſhould be reduced to a Godly and Chriſtian way of practice. That the Goods of the Church ſhould not be ſeized, but left for maintainance of the Miniſters without any diſtinction or difference relating to their Sect in Religion. He alſo prorogued the Aſſembly at *Ausburg*, until ſuch time as the points there in Controverſie could come to the deciſion of a General Council, or a Diet of the Empire.

After this the Emperor paſſed into *Italy*, and at *Luca* met the Pope, where in a long diſcourſe he treated at large concerning a Council, and the management of a War againſt the *Turks*; the reſult of which was this, That the Pope ſhould ſend a Nuntio into *Germany*, to adviſe the Diet which was to be held at *Spira* on the beginning of the next year following, and aſſure them of his reſolution to aſſemble a General Council at *Vicenza* at the time formerly prefixed. But in regard this City was under the Dominion of the *Venetians*, The Pope thought fit to intimate firſt this intention to the Senate, before he ſignified this reſolution

tion at *Spira*: the which was adviſedly conſidered, for the *Venetians* rejected the propoſal, being jealous of the ill conſequences, which the concourſe of ſuch multitudes might procure to their State; and in regard they had lately made a Peace with the Sultan, they apprehended, that a Treaty and Conſultation held in one of their Towns, for uniting in a Confederacy againſt him, and carrying on a War, might be the occaſion of a Rupture, and breach of the peace, which lately they had with great charge, and much labour concluded: upon which anſwer from the *Venetians* the *Pope* was forced to take other meaſures. In the mean time the Cardinal *Contarini* lay under the ſevere cenſure of the *Pope*, having been accuſed, for behaving himſelf with too much eaſineſs at *Regensburg* in matters which concerned the intereſt of the Church, for that he ſeemed as if he had been a little ſhaken, and ſtaggered with the ſubtil Arguments againſt the Doctrine of Tranſubſtantiation, and heard with too much indifferency, the diſcourſes which tended to the diminution of the Papal Authority. But the Cardinal *Fregoſa* being his friend, defended him in deſpight of all his enemies, until ſuch time as returning to the *Pope* at *Luca*, he rendered ſuch an account of all matters tranſacted in his Embaſſy, as gave the *Pope* entire ſatisfaction.

This was the ſtate of Affairs towards the end of the year 1541. when at the beginning of 1542. the *Pope* diſpatched *John Mora* the Biſhop of *Modena* to the Diet held at *Spira*, under *Ferdinand* the Emperor's brother, giving them to underſtand that the *Pope* continued his reſolution of holding a General Council, which he had for ſome time deferred in expectation of that good iſſue which it was hoped the Diets, and National Conventions would have produced in the ſettlement of Religion: but ſeeing that thoſe means had failed, he now again re-aſſumed his former deliberation about a Council, which he ſhould gladly cauſe to be aſſembled in *Germany*, were not the fatigues of ſo long a Journey, and the alteration of Air dangerous to a perſon of his age: and therefore after he had thought of *Mantoua*, *Vicenza*, *Ferrara*, *Bologna*, and *Piacenza* for places proper and convenient for ſuch a Convention, He did at length pitch upon *Trent* as a City without exception, being ſituated on the Frontiers of *Germany*, and therefore did now unalterably appoint a Council there to be opened on the 13th. of *Auguſt* next enſuing, deſiring all thoſe there preſent at this Diet that they would lay aſide all Animoſities and Factions, and appear at this Council with clear and ſincere ſouls to favour the cauſe of God, and the truth of the Goſpel. Upon this propoſal *Ferdinand*, and the other Princes which favoured the Cauſe of the Roman Church, returned their thanks to the *Pope*, ſaying, that ſince there was no City in *Germany* judged convenient for this Council, that they were contented with this aſſignment of *Trent*, where they promiſed to come, and there to be aſſiſtant. But the Proteſtants refuſed to accept of this intimation, alledging that the Pope had neither Authority to indict a Council, nor that *Trent* was a place convenient for it; which was the cauſe that no farther reſolution was taken hereupon at this Diet.

Howſoever the *Pope* proceeded forward in his intention, and publiſhed his Bull dated the two and twentieth of *May*, for aſſembling a Council at *Trent* to meet on the firſt of *November* following; the which was diſpatched from *Rome* to all the Princes of Chriſtendom, but without any great ſucceſs. For in the month of *July*, *Francis* the *French* King had denounced War againſt the Emperor, having in a *Manifeſto* publiſhed his reaſons for it in ſuch ſevere terms, as greatly reflected on the honor of the Emperor, and which ſo much provoked him to anger in that ill humor wherein he was newly returned from his unhappy adventure before *Algier* into *Spain*, that when the Bull was delivered to him, he gave this anſwer; that he was in no manner ſatisfied therewith; in regard that it made no diſtinſtion in the terms, and ſtile thereof between him and the King of *France*: for tho he had refuſed no pains, nor ſpared expence to compaſs the aſſembling of a Council; and that the *French* King on the contrary had endeavoured by his Embaſſadors at *Spira* to nouriſh diſcords, and ſo to embroil the affairs of Religion, as to put them into a condition beyond all hopes, or poſſibility of accommodation; yet this Bull treated the diſſervices of the *French* with the ſame equality of merit, as it did the unwearied zeal of Him the Emperor, whoſe great incumbence it had always been to render faithful and effectual Offices of Duty to the Church: And then rehearſing the many provocations the *French* King had given him, he deſired the Pope to conſider, if the Behaviour of that King towards him did correſpond with a deſign, or intention of advancing the intereſt of Chriſtendom, or did appear with ſuch a face, or guiſe of Peace, and Reconciliation, as was neceſſary at ſuch a time when a General Council was to be convened; of which we may then conceive the moſt promiſing aſſurances of ſucceſs when it commences with Candor, Friendſhip, and Charity, which are the beſt, and moſt excellent diſpoſitions towards the eſtabliſhment of truth, and peace. But ſeeing that the *French* King hath ever countermined, and diſturbed this courſe, ſome other way was to be found for the ſettlement of Religion beſides a Council; and in the mean time he deſired that the Pope would attribute the diſappointment thereof to the *French* King only, to whom it was neceſſary, that he ſhould declare himſelf a publick enemy, incaſe he ever hoped to expect good from a Council, in the ſettlement of Peace, and Religion in the world. The *French* King being well aſſured that the War which he had commenced at this unſeaſonabe time would certainly be interpreted, as prejudicial to Religion, and as if he favoured the Proteſtant Cauſe; did therefore, to foreſtal ſuch ſuggeſtions, publiſh moſt ſevere Edicts againſt the Proteſtants; forbidding them to aſſemble at any Meetings, cauſing all their Books written in defence of their Doctrin to be burnt, and enjoyning the Sorboniſts to make ſevere inquiſitions concerning ſuch, who obſerved not Fiſh days, or days of Abſtinence, or ſaid not their Prayers in Latin, or in any manner contradicted, or withſtood the Principles, or Doctrins of the Catholick Church. Moreover, he wrote an Apology for himſelf to the Pope in anſwer to what the Emperor had accuſed him of; recalling to memory the hard and ſacrilegious uſage which he had practiſed againſt *Clement* VII. how he had ſacked *Rome*, and impriſoned the Pope, and at the ſame time in a moſt hypocritical manner, illuding God Almighty, had made Proceſſions at *Madrid* for the Popes deliverance, when he himſelf was the ſole Author of his confinement: farther purging himſelf of being any impediment, or hinderance to the proceedings of a Council, or giving an interruption to the quiet, and ſettlement of Religion.

Hereupon the Pope, that he might ſhew himſelf the common Father of Chriſtian Princes (on which title he laid the great ſtreſs of his Authority)

rity) deſired to interpoſe himſelf, as Mediator of their differences; and to that end, diſpatched Cardinal *Contarini* to the Emperor, and Cardinal *Sadoler* to the *French* King; but *Contarini* dying in his journey, Cardinal *Viſeo* was conſtituted in his place, who being a perſon not very acceptable to the Emperor, was not a proper inſtrument to effect the Pacification intended. Howſoever, tho the War proceeded, and that acts of Hoſtility were committed in divers places, yet the Pope proſecuted the deſign of a Council, judging it his honor to be now poſitive, as to the time and place, and accordingly towards the beginning of *November*, he ſent three Cardinals, *viz. Peter Paul Pariſio*, *John Morone*, and *Reginal le Poole* an *Engliſhman* to be his Legates, for preparing matters in order to the Council, which was appointed to be holden at *Trent*: beſides whom, many other Biſhops were ſent, who were all men of excellent Learning, and ſubtil Diſputants; but the Proteſtants refuſing to meet at that place, by virtue of the Pope's Authority; theſe learned Doctors became all of one ſide, and finding none to make oppoſition againſt them, they might with much facility have confirmed, and eſtabliſhed what Fundamentals and concluſions they had pleaſed. But as yet things were not prepared for any publick Act, nor had the Legates Inſtructions as yet to conclude any thing, but only entertain the Prelates, and Embaſſadors which were ſent thither. The appearance at firſt was very thin, and few Princes had ſent their Miniſters to *Trent*; howſoever the Emperor tho he entertained little hopes of a good iſſue of theſe proceedings, yet he reſolved for prevention of Plots, or Deſigns againſt him to ſend *Don Diego de Mendoza*, and Cardinal *Granvel* to be his Embaſſadors at that place; who being arrived, preſſed the Pope's Legates to proceed to the buſineſs, that their time might not be there conſumed to no purpoſe; which the Legates endeavouring to evade, and ſtill to put delays, and impediments in the way, it was ſo diſpleaſing to the Emperor's Miniſters, that they proteſted againſt thoſe delatory excuſes; to which the Legates giving no anſwer, *Granvel* was recalled, and ſent to reſide at the Diet at *Noremberg*, which was opened about the beginning of the year 1543. ſo that nothing moved forward in this Council by reaſon of the many obſtructions, and eſpecially of the fierce War, which now grew very hot between the Emperor, and the *French* King, and of the Plague which was begun at——ſo that after ſome few Seſſions to little purpoſe, the Council was by order of the Pope adjourned to *Bologna*.

1543. The Pope having advice that the Emperor, who had now entered into a League with *Henry* VIII. King of *England*, againſt *France*, intended to paſs into *Flanders* by way of *Italy*; he reſolved to meet, and ſpeak with him, pretending that his Errand was no other, than like a Father, and Spiritual Paſtor to perſuade, and exhort him to Peace, and Unity, and to impart ſome things to him relating to the Council of *Trent*; tho in reallity he had a more ſecret, and peculiar deſign under the covert of theſe publick intereſts: which was, to procure the Dukedom of *Milan*, for one of his Nephews; and for an inducement thereunto intended to make offer of a good ſum of mony, which he ſuppoſed might be very prevalent with the Emperor at a time when his Wars in *Flanders* were preſſing, and expenſive. And therefore departing from *Rome* on the 26th. of *February*, and not regarding the coldneſs of the ſeaſon, which was inconvenient to one of his age, he travelled through the Dominions of the Church, and taking *Modena*, *Reggio*, *Parma*, *Ferrara*, *Ancona*, *Perugia*, and *Viterbo* in his way, he at length came to *Bologna*, where he remained until the middle of Summer, when *Charles* V. arrived at *Genoua*, where he was received into the Palace of Prince *D'Oria*, prepared for him in all Royal and ſumptuous manner; he was there complemented by ſeveral Princes of *Italy*, and particularly by *Pierluigi Farneſe*, whom the Pope had expreſly ſent to the Emperor, intreating him to aſſign a time, and place where the Pope might have diſcourſe with him in order to ſome matters of great concernment. The Emperor who was preſſed to make all the ſpeed poſſible into *Flanders*, and had reſentment of things which he took unkindly from the Pope, made ſeveral excuſes, pretending that his Affairs would not permit him the leiſure for ſuch a meeting; and that in caſe the Popes buſineſs were exhortations to Peace and Reconciliation with *France*, the matter was too far gone for him to afford any ear thereunto, until he had firſt received ſome revenge, and compenſation for the injuries which had been offered him. *Pierluigi* not ſucceeding in this requeſt, the Cardinal *Farneſe* was immediately diſpatched in poſt to *Genoua* to urge the Emperor with more preſſing inſtances; and being a perſon very elequent and importunate, he prevailed with the Emperor to meet, and diſcourſe with the Pope at *Buſetto*, a place between *Vicenza*, and *Cremona*; provided that this interview ſhould not retard him in his journey, for above the ſpace of three days. Accordingly the Pope came to *Buſetto* on the 20th. of *June*, and the next day alſo the Emperor arrived, when falling immediately upon buſineſs, the Emperor would by no means hearken to the propoſition which was made him for inveſting his Nephew *Ottavio* in the State of *Milan*; and tho a ſum of mony was offered for it, which the preſent neceſſities did greatly require; yet being ſupplied with two hundred thouſand Crowns by agreement with *Cormo de Medicis*, whereby he releaſed to him all the Fortreſſes of the State of *Florence*, he would upon no terms give ear to the propoſition concerning *Milan*; which when the Pope perceived, and that his arguments, and importunities for it, were all inſignificant; he turned his diſcourſe to matters of more publick concernment, deſiring him to conſider the preſent State of the Church which was torn in pieces by diverſity of Sects in Religion, which took their advantage of thoſe confuſions, which the Wars between him and *France* had cauſed; and farther he repreſented to him the great danger in which his Brother *Ferdinand* was engaged by the formidable forces of the *Turk*, which threatned *Hungary*; in conſideration of all which, he begged of him to put an end to his Wars againſt Chriſtians, that he might repreſs and give a ſtop to the violent incurſions of the common enemy: all which diſcourſe had no other effect, than only that hereupon *Julio Orſino* was diſpeeded with thirty Companies of Foot to Guard and defend the confines of *Hungary*: and thus the Pope having ſpent five days at *Buſetto*, with no other advantage to his Affairs, he returned again to *Bologna*, where he celebrated the Feaſt of S. *Peter* the Apoſtle.

About this time *Barbaroſſo*, who had been inſtigated by the *French*, to do all the damage they were able to the Emperor, had coaſted along the ſhore by *Naples*; and having ſtaid ſome time before the Iſle of *Ponzo*, they at length appeared near *Civita Vecchia*, at the mouth of the *Tybur*, which gave ſuch an alarm to *Rome*, that the Inhabitants had certainly abandoned the City, and fled to the Mountains, had not *Poline* the *French* Envoy aboard the Fleet of *Barbaroſſo*, written a Letter to Cardinal *Rodolfo*, giving him aſſurance, that there was no deſign upon *Rome*; with which the tumult was quieted, and their fears diſſipated.

Now began the year 1544. which was very remarkable for the unexpected Peace concluded between the Emperor and the *French* King, on the 18th. of *September* at *Creſpy*, a Caſtle in *Valois*, after the bloody Battel of *Ceriſoles*: the which was received with extreme joy by all the Chriſtian Princes, and eſpecially by Pope *Paul*, who being returned from *Bologna* to *Rome*; had lately made ſolemn Proceſſions for the Peace and quiet of Chriſtendom; the which unexpected news ſurpriſing the Pope, was interpreted by him, as a return of thoſe Prayers and Supplications, he had made for Peace, tho inwardly he conceived ſome ſecret reſentments, that he had not been concerned as Mediator in it. Upon this news of Peace, the Pope thought it ſeaſonable to publiſh an other Seſſions of the Council to Commence in *March* following, which had on occaſion of the late Wars been prorogued: but this haſty indiction of a Council was not pleaſing to the Emperor, who expected to have been firſt conſulted; eſteeming that it had been more agreeable to his Authority, and more acceptable to the humour of *Germany*, had he been made the principal Author of this Council: Howſoever that he might ſeem to be the firſt mover of the work, and the Pope only to act in the ſecond place, he iſſued out many Commiſſions to the Prelates of *Spain*, and of the *Low-Countries*, and to many Divines at *Lovain*, to meet together, and conſider of ſeveral Theſes, and Propoſitions which were to be debated in the Council, which being reduced to ſix and thirty Heads, he required their ſolution of them poſitively, without any proofs, or references to Holy Scripture. All which ſolutions being made, were confirmed by the Empror's Magiſterial Authority, and Edicts, requiring all people to yield entire faith and belief thereunto. *Hiſt. Trent.* And farther, the Emperor not being able to conceal the diſpleaſure he had conceived againſt the Pope, vented his choler frequently to the Nuntio in very ſevere and ſharp terms: and whereas the Pope in the month of *December* had created thirteen Cardinals, thoſe three which were *Spaniards* amongſt them were forbidden by the Emperor to accept the Dignity, or to take the Title, or wear the Habit.

1545. Tho the Emperor had teſtified this open diſpleaſure againſt the Pope, yet he ſo far complied with him, as to ſend *Don Diego de Mendoza*, who had lately been his Embaſſador at *Venice*, with ample Commiſſion to the Council of *Trent*, as did alſo the other Princes who were in amity with the Pope: but the Proteſtants who had ſent their Commiſſioners to the Diet at *Worms*, over which *Ferdinand* preſided in the place of the Emperor, refuſed to ſend their Embaſſadors to *Trent*, alledging, that the Aſſembly held at that place, was not legitimate, nor could be termed with the quality and character of a General Council. The Pope being highly incenſed at this refuſal and ſeparation of the Proteſtants, which he eſteemed an affront to the Papal Authority, diſpatched his Nephew the Cardinal *Farneſe*, in quality of Legate, with ample inſtructions to the Emperor; wherein beſides ſome other particular intereſts, he encharged him moſt eſpecially to incite the Emperor to make a War of Religion againſt the Proteſtant Princes; of which he conceived the greater hopes, in regard that by frequent advices from his *Nuntio*, he was aſſured of the diſpleaſure, and diſdain the Emperor had of the Proteſtant Cauſe, and that he willingly gave ear to thoſe ſuggeſtions which adviſed him to compel their Aſſents, and Compliance by force of Arms. To this propoſition, the Emperor made Anſwer, that he acknowledged this Counſel which the Pope gave him to be good, and almoſt neceſſary, and which he reſolved to follow; but howſoever, that it was to be executed with its due caution; and that a Truce was firſt to be concluded with the *Turk*, which was ſecretly treating: and then that ſome diſcords, and diſſentions were to be ſowed amongſt the Proteſtant Princes; for that being united together, their numbers were ſo formidable, and great, that inſtead of maintaining the Catholick Religion, he ſhould put it into apparent danger, and hazard, which a doubtful ſtate of War may produce.

This Treaty, tho ſecretly carried, was yet ſuſpected, by the Proteſtant Princes, who took a moſt ſenſible alarm from the Sermon of a Cordelier Frier that preached one day before the Emperor, King *Ferdinand*, and the Legate, and uſed many invective Speeches againſt the *Lutherans*; he told the Emperor plainly, that it was his duty to defend the Church by force of Arms; and that God had put the Sword into his hands for extirpation of this Hereſie, and deſtruction of this peſt of Mankind, which he ought not to ſuffer to live in this world. This Sermon and diſcourſe made great noiſe, being interpreted for the ſenſe of the Legate, and to be an effect of the Treaty which he ſecretly held with the Pope, and that the Frier Preached in that manner by his order: wherefore to abate, and ſurceaſe thoſe reports, the Cardinal departed ſecretly by night, and with all expedition returned into *Italy*.

In the mean time the Debates at the Diet at *Worms* proceeded, where the Emperor in perſon endeavoured to perſuade the Princes to contribute towards a War againſt the *Turk*; which they abſolutely refuſed to do, until aſſurance were given them, that the Peace between them and the Emperor ſhould be continued, and maintained without any reſpect to the determinations, and concluſions at *Trent*, which they could not eſteem a General Council, or to have any Power and Authority to oblige them to an obſervation of thoſe Decrees and Canons which were formed therein: To which the Emperor replied, that he could not aſſure them of Peace, or obſervation of any Articles, which ſhould exempt them from the determination of that Council, to which all Chriſtians were obliged to ſubmit; and that he ſhould not know how to excuſe himſelf to other Kings and Princes, in caſe he ſhould endeavour to procure that exemption for *Germany* only, from obedience to the Council, which was chiefly convened, in reſpect, and in order to the ſettlement of their Affairs. With which this Diet was diſſolved on the 4th. of *Auguſt*, and another publiſhed to be held in the month of *January* following at *Regensburg*.

In this manner time paſſed without any iſſue or determination of Diſputes: the Proteſtants refuſed to own or acknowledg the Council of *Trent* to be lawfully Convened; and the Pope could not ſuffer the points of Religion to be debated in the Diets of *Germany*, which were aſſembled by the Secular Authority. So that the *Pope* publiſhed a Jubilee to be held at *Rome* on the 15th. of *July*, 1546. in the Bull for which, after he had amply ſet forth the great care and pains he had uſed for the ſuppreſſion of Hereſie, which could not be compaſſed by any other human 1546.

means, than by a General Council: yet ſuch was the obſtinacy of Hereticks, that they contemned and ſlighted its Sentence, and denied Obedience to its Authority: And therefore as the laſt remedy, and ultimate prevention of theſe growing evils, he declared, that he was forced to make a League with the Emperor, that he might by force of Arms, reduce thoſe to the Church, who were by no other more gentle means capable to be reclaimed from their Hereſies and Rebellion: for the ſucceſs of which, he exhorted all good Catholicks to have recourſe unto God by Prayers, Faſtings, Confeſſions, and Communion.

The Emperor on the other ſide, on the 20th. of the ſame month, publiſhed a Remonſtrance againſt the Elector of *Saxony*, and the Landgrave of *Heſs*; in which, omitting to mention any particulars about Religion, he charged them with diſobedience to his commands, and oppoſition to his deſigns; that they had made Alliances, and entered into Confederation with other Princes of the Empire againſt him; that they had ſeized Biſhopricks, and Eccleſiaſtical Benefices into their own hands, under the ſpecious pretences of Religion, Peace, and Liberty. And therefore that as ſeditious Rebels, Traitors, and Diſturbers of the Publick peace he reſolved to proceed againſt them; abſolving the Nobility from their Oath of Allegiance to them, and requiring the people to withdraw themſelves from their Obedience, not to joyn with them, nor afford them any aid, ſuccor, or aſſiſtance.

Tho the *Pope* and the Emperor were joyned in the ſame League, and intended the ſame thing; yet the motives of this War mentioned in their Remonſtrances were diſpleaſing to each other, as not correſponding to their mutual intereſts: for the Emperor was unwilling to have this War ſtiled a War of Religion, leſt that denomination ſhould engage a ſtronger, and a more numerous party than he was able to Maſter: the *Pope* howſoever was deſirous to have it ſo named, and believed, that the Emperor having to contend with a numerous, and formidable Enemy, his Power might be attempered, and his greatneſs reduced to ſome tolerable equality in the Ballance of Chriſtendom.

1547. Notwithſtanding theſe different conſiderations, the *Pope* united his Army with that of the Emperor's; who now caſting off all thoughts concerning the tranſaction of Affairs at *Trent*, attended wholly to the War: in proſecution of which, on the 24th. of *April* 1547. both Armies were drawn up, and ſtood ranged one againſt the other near the River *Albis*: the Proteſtant Army conſiſted of eighty thouſand Foot, and fifteen thouſand Horſe: that of the Emperor's was much inferior in number, not amounting with the three *Italian* Regiments, and ſix hundred Horſe ſent by the *Pope*, to more than three and forty thouſand men. Howſoever the Emperor gained the Victory, the Elector of *Saxony* being woudded, and taken Priſoner, and his whole Army defeated: and in a few days after the *Landgrave* of *Heſſe* by mediation of *Maurice* his Son-in-Law, and the Duke of *Brandenbourg*, with all ſubmiſſion came in, and preſented himſelf before the Emperor. The Duke of *Saxony* was in the firſt place tryed and condemned to dye; but afterwards procuring a remiſſion of the Sentence, he yielded to ſome other very ſevere terms, and conditions, with exemption notwithſtanding from being obliged to the Acts, and determinations of the Council of *Trent* in points of Religion, with which the Emperor was willing to diſpenſe,

Onuf.

penſe, provided he would ſubſcribe and oblige himſelf to other Articles. The *Landgrave* tho he was hardly preſſed to that point alſo, yet would not ſubſcribe; but only in general terms, that he would refer himſelf to the Decrees, and Determinations of a Council, that was free, and holy, and purged from the leven of a corrupt Head, and Members, as did alſo Duke *Maurice* of *Saxony*, and the Elector of *Brandenbourg*. Howſoever the Duke of *Saxony* was condemned to perpetual impriſonment, and the *Landgrave* during the pleaſure of the Emperor. By which great Victory the Emperor becoming abſolute Maſter of all *Germany*, and having gained much Cannon and Artilery, and exhauſted great ſums of mony from the Towns and Countries which were in ſubjection to thoſe Princes, whom he had conquered, he was arrived to that pitch of heighth, and greatneſs which the *Pope* could not gladly allow; and in this condition, for ſecurity of the peace, and quiet, and for the better regulation of the Affairs of *Germany*, the Emperor aſſigned a Diet to be held at *Ausbourg*.

Upon the firſt news of this Victory, the *Pope* to outwerd appearance ſeemed to be tranſported to an extremity of joy; and thereupon immediately diſpatched away the Cardinal *Francis Sfondrato* with Congratulatory Letters for the ſucceſs of this Victory, ſtiling the Emperor *Invictiſſimus, & Maximus Imperator*. Howſoever his ſecret thoughts did not correſpond with theſe external Demonſtrations; for ever ſince the denial which the Emperor had made of inveſting his Nephew in the Dutchy of *Milan*, he had conceived a grudg againſt him, which he diſſembled, until this time, when his diſpleaſure being exalted with a jealouſie that the Emperor by this ſucceſs would aſpire to the abſolute Dominion of *Italy*; and obſerving with what little regard the Prelates of the Empire had comported themſelves, during the Council of *Trent* towards the Papal Authority: and reflecting farther, that he could never obtain from the Emperor the confirmation of his Son *Pier-luigi*, in the States of *Parma*, and *Piacenza*, which he had conferred upon him; he could no longer ſuppreſs theſe reſentments, but vented with all the ſpight imaginable many reproaches againſt *Charles*, ſaying, that out of malice to him, he had joyned himſelf to *Henry* VIII. King of *England*, who was condemned of Hereſie, and Excommunicated from the Church. In which paſſion he prorogued the Council, which in compliance with the Emperor he had called at *Trent*, to be now transferred, and held at *Bologna*; for which he ſeemed to have received ſome juſt motives from the Behaviour of certain Prelates, who having banded themſelves into Factions, ſeemed to intend ſomething in diminution of the Pope's Dignity, and Prerogative: to prevent which, all thoſe Prelates which ſided with the *Pope*, pretending that the Air of *Trent* was too ſharp for them, removed to *Bologna*; from which place the Emperor was not able to diſſuade the Pope, with all the excuſes and intreaties he could uſe. This and other matters raiſing and exalting theſe feuds, the *Pope* applied himſelf to the *French* King, intending to joyn in League with him, and other Princes of that party; and the Emperor finding no effects, or iſſue of Affairs at *Trent*, repaired to the Diet at *Ausburg*.

The Diet there began on the firſt of *September*, where the Emperor 1547.
preſiding in perſon, laboured with all the earneſtneſs, and with all the art, and endeavours he was able, to compoſe the differences, and ſettle a

Peace in *Germany*; but in regard the point of Religion was the cauſe of all their Troubles, whenſoever that came into queſtion it occaſioned great Commotions. For the Eccleſiaſtical Electors, or ſuch as belonged to the Church did deſire, and urge that an entire, and abſolute reference of all things ſhould be given to the Council at *Trent*, without any reſerve, or condition. The Secular Electors who adhered to the Doctrin of *Luther* were contented alſo to refer the matters in diſpute to the Council, provided that neither the Pope, nor any other deputed from him, ſhould preſide thereat; and that the Council ſhould be free, and holy, and that what Biſhop ſoever was thereunto admitted, ſhould be abſolved from any Oath he had taken, which might render him partial to the Papal See.

During the time of this Diet at *Ausbourg*, the Pope remained in a continual trouble of ſpirit, not knowing what thoſe Seſſions might produce. During which on the 10th. of *September*, advice was brought him, that his Son *Pier-luigi* Duke of *Piacenza* was murdered in his own Palace by certain Gentlemen who had conſpired againſt him, and who in an ignominious manner had thrown his Body into the Streets to be a ſpectacle to the people: And in a few hours after ſeveral Troops arrived from *Milan* by order of *Ferrand Gonzaga*, Governor, to take poſſeſſion of the City. The which unhappy fate, and violent death of a Son, as it ſenſibly touched the Pope with natural grief; ſo the loſs of ſo fair a City did ſerve to augment the ſence of this miſchief, which by all the circumſtances of it, did appear to have been perpetrated by the knowledg and contrivance of the Emperor.

This unexpected outrage cauſed great conſternation at *Bologna*, and gave interruption to the proceedings of the Council at that place; for the Pope in his great affliction could not bend his thoughts to any tranſactions there; only he forced his mind to read the particulars of what was debated, and concluded at *Ausbourg*, which were twice a week diſpatched thence by an expreſs: the which Diet being held until the year 1548. with various diſcourſes, and arguments, and nothing as yet concluded: But being the general ſenſe of all that it was neceſſary for the common quiet of *Germany* to center at length in ſome reſolutions, and that ſuch reſolutions tending to a compoſure could not be expected from the Council which was now transferred from *Trent* to *Bologna*, at leaſt during the Reign of this Pope; wherefore it was propoſed to make choice of ſome few perſons to whom the care of this work ſhould be committed; but not being able to agree in the perſons to be elected, the choice was remitted ſolely to the Emperor, who at length pitched upon three perſons, namely *Julius Pflug*, *Michael Sidon*, and *John Iſlebe*, to be the Compilers of a Formulary of Religion; the which after ſeveral conſultations being reduced to a method, it was reviewed, and examined ſo often, by ſuch different Heads, and Judgments, with additions and retrenchments, puttings out, and in; that at length being finiſhed, it looked like a patched piece, compounded by men of diſſenting Judgments, and differing deſigns. Howſoever being compleated, it contained five and thirty Chapters, or Heads, a Copy of which was delivered to the Legat by order of the Emperor to be ſent to *Rome* to receive the Pope's Opinion, and Approbation thereunto. But leſt this Formulary of Religion ſhould give ſcandal to the Pope, and Cardinals, as if the 1548.

Emperor in a Diet had given new forms of Faith and Religion: the Title Page of this Book was qualified by an *Interim*, that is, that the ſame Heads and Points contained in that Book ſhould be no longer Authentick, or eſteemed Catholick, or obliging Doctrins, than until ſuch time as the ſame ſhould be altered and changed by the more unerring determinations of a General Council, to whoſe judgment they were ſubmitted. When this Book came to *Rome*, where the Pope was now retired, it cauſed great conſternation and noiſe. The Clergy exclaimed highly, That a Temporal Prince in an Aſſembly composed only of Seculars ſhould adventure to handle all matters and Points of Religion: upon which the Learned Men, and ſuch as were read in Hiſtories, called to mind the *Henoticon* in the time of *Zenon*, the *Ecthesis* in the time of *Heraclitus*, and the *Typus* of *Conſtance*, who were Emperors; and the Schiſms and Diviſions in the Church cauſed by the Imperial Conſtitutions relating to Religion, with which they compared and adjoyned this *Interim* of *Charles* V. And farther, that which gave the greateſt cauſe of fear, was, leſt this *Interim* ſhould be an Introduction to a greater Change; and that the Emperor intended this compliance with the Proteſtant Doctrins, to be a prelude, or a preparative to a total defection from the Church of *Rome*, after the manner, and example of *Henry* VIII. King of *England*.

The Pope, who was wiſe, and accuſtomed to diſſemble matters, until ſuch time as he was able to remedy, or revenge them, reflecting with mature conſideration on this preſent emergency, did make another judgment thereof than appeared to ordinary underſtandings; for he concluded that this new Formulary did tend more to the prejudice of the Emperor than to the Eccleſiaſtical State: wondering greatly that a Prince of ſo much Prudence, ſhould ſo far be elated with his late Succeſſes, as to believe himſelf able to be the Arbitrator and Moderator of all mankind; or be in a Capacity by his ſingle Intereſt to oppoſe both the great, and prevailing parties in the world. It was poſſible for a Prince adhering to one of them to ſuppreſs the other; but to oppoſe both at the ſame time, would be a match unequal. For the Pope wiſely foreſaw that theſe Doctrins for the moſt part would be as diſpleaſing to all Catholicks in general, as to the Court of *Rome*, and would be no leſs contradicted by the Proteſtants; ſo that being oppugned on all ſides, it would conſequently fall by the contrariety of Factions. To which end, the Pope ſeeming in himſelf little concerned, did yet under-hand ſuggeſt jealouſies in the minds of the *German* Prelates; the which being dexterouſly inſinuated by the Cardinal *Sfodrato* the Pope's Legate, who according to his Inſtructions gave in a memorial to the Emperor, repreſenting the ill foundation and conſequences of this new Formulary of Doctrins, and then took his leave, and departed, that he might not be preſent when the ſame was publiſhed. In ſhort, this matter ſucceeded according to the judgment of the Pope: for tho the Emperor did moſt ſtrictly forbid, and inhibit any perſon to oppugn the Doctrins contained in this Book of *Interim*, either by Practice, Writings, or Preaching: yet notwithſtanding the Proteſtants on one ſide did not forbear to refute this Confeſſion of *Auſburg* by their publick Writings and Diſputations: and on the other *Francis Romeo* General of the Dominican Friers did by command from the Pope appoint ſeveral Learned men of that Order to refute that

Formulary of the *Interim*: In *France* alſo many wrote againſt it, and in a ſhort time great numbers both of Catholicks and Proteſtants oppugned it with heat of Argument, it having hapned in this matter as in others of the like nature, that where middle terms, or moderate expedients have been propoſed between the extremes of oppoſite Factions for accommodating or reconciling their differences; there the event hath been no other, than that the contrary parties have impugned the expedients, and both have been hardned, and confirmed in their own Tenents, and Opinions.

These debates and troubles gave a ſtop to the proceedings of the Council at *Bologna*, for the ſpace of two years; and until almoſt the end of the year 1549. when at the beginning of *November* news came to the Pope then at *Rome*, that the Duke *Ottavio Farneſe* his Nephew, (who having againſt his own inclinations been detained by the Pope at *Rome*, out of tenderneſs to his life, leſt he ſhould incur the ſame fate, as *Pierluigi* had done) was privately eſcaped out of the City, and was then actually dealing with *Ferdinand Gonzaga* the Governour of *Milan* to inſtate him in *Parma*, in deſpight of *Camillo Orſino*, who was to keep and defend the Town in right of the Eccleſiaſtical State. The which news ſo ſurprized the mind of the Pope with ſenſible grief, and commotion of ſpirit, who was not as yet recovered of the ſorrow he had conceived for the fate of his Son *Pierluigi*, that he preſently fell into a ſwound, or *Leipothymie*, from which being revived, was ſeized by ſo violent a Fever, that in three days he died thereof, being the 10th. of *Movember*, at his Palace of *Monte Cavallo*, where he uſually reſided, becauſe it was eſteemed a place of the beſt Air in *Rome*. He had held the Papal See 15 years, and 28 days, and was arrived to the age of 81 years, eight months, and 10 days: He was buried in S. *Peters* Church without any great pomp, or State; and afterwards the See was vacant two months, and 29 days. 1549.

JULIUS III.

THE Cardinals having (as cuſtomary) celebrated the Funeral Obſequies of the Pope deceaſed, for the ſpace of nine days, did on the tenth enter into the Conclave; but then conſidering the ſmall appearance of Cardinals, few being then preſent, the formal receſs and retirement into the Conclave was deferred for ſome time. And here it is to be obſerved, that the Cardinals were divided into three Factions; the firſt ſavoured the Emperor; the ſecond was inclined to the *French* King; and a third conſiſted of ſuch Cardinals as had been the creatures of the late Pope deceaſed, and by him promoted to ſeveral Benefices, and Dignities; the Cape, or chief of which, was Cardinal *Farneſe*, Nephew to *Paul* the Third, who tho young, was yet active, ſubtil, and of a judgment ſolid, and of as good experience in the Court, as could be expected in a perſon of his years. This laſt party as it was numerous, ſo it was compoſed of ancient Cardinals, men of great Authority and knowledg in the world, and ſuch as were able to bear down the ballance in favour of any perſon to which they inclined; for which reaſon great courtſhip was made to Cardinal *Farneſe*, both by the *Imperial* and *French* Miniſters; whoſe arguments on both ſides were ſo forcible to draw him to their party, that being doubtful unto which he ſhould incline, reſolved on a neutrality, as the ſafeſt courſe whereby to ſteer, tho' in reality, he ſeemed on occaſions to lean moſt to the *French* party.

This was the ſtate of affairs at *Rome*, when about the beginning of the month of *December*, 1549. the Cardinals entered into the Conclave: *Farneſe* in the firſt place propoſed to his own Party, the choice of Cardinal *Poole*, an *Engliſh* man, a perſon againſt whom for the nobility of his extraction, his godlineſs and exemplary life, nothing could be objected: and being alſo acceptable to the *Imperialiſts*, and diſpleaſing to no party, he found many friends ready to give their Votes for him, amongſt which, the moſt conſiderable were the Cardinals of *Trent*, *Sforza*, and *Creſcentio*, who had drawn alſo *Morone* and *Maffei* to their Party; who being all men of conſiderable intereſt, did agree immediately to preſent him in the Conclave, and aſſume him to the Papal Dignity. But ſome of the old Cardinals, who ſeemingly aſſented thereunto; yet being inwardly envious to ſee a younger man preferred over their heads, did adviſe to delay the time for a while, leſt the Election, which ought to be mature and grave, ſhould ſeem to have been overhaſty and precipitate, tho' in reality this delay was cauſed by that hopes which every one entertained of being himſelf the perſon that ſhould be elected: by which means the choice of *Poole* being until the next day ſuſpended, the contrary party, ſuch as *Monti*, *Ceſis*, and *Gaddi*, who were all Pretenders and Candidates, had time to make their Parties; Cardinal *Salviati* labouring all the night for the excluſion of *Poole*. The next day the Cardinals being aſſembled in the Chappel to the number of 49. Cardinal *Fortone*, one of the *French* Faction, publickly accuſed *Poole* of Hereſie, and for that reaſon proteſted againſt his choice. Howſoever, his Friends eſteeming his report falſe and ſcandalous, preſſed forward the ſcrutiny; in purſuance of which, the Votes being put into a Chalice, 26 were found in favour of *Poole*; but in regard that 33 at leaſt out of 49, were required to make the Election legitimate, *Poole* was excluded, to the great diſappointment of himſelf, and the *Imperial* Party, who eſteemed the choice to have been ſecure and certain. In relation hereof, I have been the more large, becauſe it concerned one of our Country-men, and may have reference to ſome particulars, which are to follow.

After which, ſeveral other Cardinals experienced their fortunes; but to no effect, the Factions being every day more heated and embroiled, ſo that they could not come to any agreement: at length they reſolved to nominate nine perſons, out of which the *Imperialiſts* might chooſe one that was moſt acceptable to them. The perſons propoſed were three *French* men, *viz. Lorene*, *Tornon*, and *Bellai*: three *Italians*, *Salviati*, *Ridolfi*, and *Trani*: and three *Imperialiſts*, *Theatino*, *Monti*, and *San Marcello*, againſt whom nothing was objected; excepting *Monti*, whom Cardinal *Ghiſa* accuſed of a wicked life, publiſhing many Vices of which he was guilty, and rendering him unworthy of the Prieſthood and Holy Orders, into which he was entered. Howſoever, at length the Cardinals growing weary with ſo long a continuation of the Conclave, reſolved generally to adhere unto *Monti*; to which alſo Cardinal *Farneſe* aſſenting, laboured with all his power to reconcile *Ghiſa*, and *Monti*, which after ſome words and ſecret Conferences together, being happily concluded; all parties concurred in the Election, and on the ninth of *February* 1550. *Monti* being accompanied by 42 Cardinals, deſcended into the Church of S. *Peter*, where being ſeated in the Chappel of S. *Andrew*, all the Cardinals paid their reſpects and obedience to him, which they teſtified, as was uſual, by kiſſing his feet; which being finiſhed, he called himſelf by the name of *Julius* III. in memory of *Julius* II. from whom he deprived the beginning of his greatneſs. He was afterwards Crowned by Cardinal *Cibo*, on the 21*ſt*. of the ſame month of *February*.

His Reign began with the year of Jubilee 1550. the which in its regular courſe ought to have commenced the *Chriſtmas* before; but in regard the Chair was then vacant, that ſolemnity was deferred until the 24*th*. of *February*, being the Feſtival of S. *Matthias*, when the four Gates were opened, according to the accuſtomed manner, and great numbers of people flocked from all parts of *Italy*, who having viſited the four principal Churches, namely, S. *John* of *Lateran*, S. *Peter's*, S. *Paul's*, and S. *Maries* the Great, received the Indulgences, Priviledges, and Abſolutions, which are the fruits and rewards of that Devotion; with which this Holy Year ended on the day of the *Epiphany* of the year following. Amongſt the other Pilgrims, which were but few in number, from the Weſtern parts, by reaſon of the Wars and Confuſions about Religion; *Stephen* the Patriarch of the great *Armenia*, in company with an Arch-Biſhop and two other Biſhops, came to *Rome* to gain the Jubilee. This people who had been always of the Eaſtern Church, and ſubmitted to their own Supreme Patriarch called, were perſuaded by the Miſſionaries from *Rome* in the time of *Paul* III. to ſubmit to the *Roman* Church upon promiſes of Preferments and increaſe of their Revenue; in which Faith they have ever ſince continued, adhering to all Points of that Church; tho' perhaps little regard hath been had to an augmentation of their Benefices; for I have been acquainted with one of their Patriarchs accompanied with two Dominican Friars, who were ſo poor, that in their Travels to *Rome*, they have begged Alms to defray their charges.

During this year of Jubilee, and the firſt of his Reign, the Pope Indicted the Council which *Paul* III. had transferred to *Bologna* to be held at *Trent*, and to begin in *May* following. *Charles* V. was then at the Diet of *Augsburg*, when this Bull of the *Pope* was delivered to his hands, which he cauſed to be promulged in the hearing of all the Princes who were preſent at the Diet. In obedience to theſe ſummons, ſome of the Biſhops of *Germany*, *Spain*, and *Italy*, attended and made their perſonal appearance; to which place alſo the *Pope* ſent Cardinal *Creſcentio* to reſide as his Legate, aſſiſted by the Arch-Biſhop of *Sipontino*, and the Biſhop of *Verona*: and being deſirous to perform acts of Favour and Grace ſoon after his Inauguration, he beſtowed twenty Cardinals Hats, amongſt which, he gave one to a Youth of thirteen years of age, called *Innocent de Monte*, born at *Piacenza*, one of poor and mean Parentage, whom he received and adopted by that name into his Family, none knowing the ground or reaſon for it, which gave a large and copious Theme to the Paſquils at *Rome*.

About that time *George Martinuno*, who governed the Affairs of *Tranſilvania*, during the minority of that King, was at the inſtance and requeſt of *Ferdinand* created Cardinal by this Pope *Julius*; but he afterwards ſecretly plotting and conſpiring with the *Turks* againſt the Prince, who was under his charge and tuition, upon diſcovery and proof made of his treacherous deſigns, was juſtly put to death. This *Pope*, who was of a pacifick temper, and naturally inclined to peace, had alſo farther inducements thereunto by the long experience he had in the affairs of the Church, which he had obſerved to thrive and proſper moſt with the lenitives of peace, rather than by Arms and Slaughter, which were incongruous and diſſentaneous to thoſe principles on which the Church was originally founded: howſoever, the *Pope* contrary to theſe principles was unhappily forced and ingaged in a War on this occaſion, which we ſhall here relate with as much brevity as we are able. *Paul* the Third, after *Piacenza* was loſt, and his Son *Pierluigi* ſlain, committed the charge and defence of *Parma* to *Camillo Orſino* (who was reputed a great Soldier in his time) to keep and defend that City in the name and behalf of the Church, ſtrictly commanding him not to reſign or entruſt that care into any other hands, without expreſs and poſitive Commiſſion. *Paul* being dead, and *Julius* III. being in treaty for the Succeſſion, promiſed Cardinal *Farneſe*, who (as we have ſaid) was Chief of a powerful Party, to deliver *Parma* into the hands of his Brother *Ottavio*, in caſe he would favour him with his Vote and Intereſt; which he aſſenting unto, and *Julius* being made *Pope*, the conditions were complied with; the Commiſſion of *Camillo* being vacated, and the Government of the City ſurrendred to *Ottavio*: provided notwithſtanding, that it ſhould not be in the power of *Ottavio* to conſign the City into the hands of any Prince whatſoever, without the knowledg, licenſe, and conſent of the *Pope*: and that *Ottavio* might be the better enabled to maintain the Garriſon againſt the force and temptation of the *Imperialiſts*, a ſtipend was allowed him of 2000 Crowns a Month. In a ſhort time *Ottavio* finding that the *Imperialiſts* were preſſing upon him, and that he was not able to defend the City againſt *Charles* V. without greater ſupplies both of men and mony, deſired the *Pope*, that he would either augment his Allowance, or elſe give him the liberty to joyn and enter into Alliance with ſome other Prince, that was able to ſecure and defend him againſt the artifices and violences of the Emperor. The *Pope* not penetrating the depth of the matter, without due and mature conſideration anſwered, that confiding in his prudence, he gave him licenſe to provide for his ſafety, in ſuch manner as he thought moſt expedient. *Ottavio* taking theſe words in the largeſt ſenſe, and ſuppoſing he had obtained licenſe to do and act as he pleaſed, agreed privately with *Henry* II. King of *France* to receive a *French* Garriſon into *Parma*; which being done, and the *Pope* too late complaining thereof, as a matter concluded without his knowledg or permiſſion; and alſo apprehending that the Emperor would certainly believe that this was acted by his aſſent and concurrence, that he might diſabuſe the world, and perſuade the Emperor to the contrary, he baniſhed Cardinal *Alexander Farneſe* to *Florence*, and calling the Emperors forces to his aſſiſtance, made War upon Duke *Ottavio*; ſo that all *Italy* on a ſudden began to be embroiled and enflamed with War. For *Parma* was preſently beſieged by *Fer-*

nando Gonzaga, who was Governour of *Milan* under the Emperor; and by *Angelo de Medici* Legat for the Pope: and in the mean time Monſieur *de Thermes*, General of the *French* Forces, was raiſing Men in *Mirandola*, and making preparations of Ammunition and proviſions for a War, and *Peter Sirozzi*, and *Oratio Farneſe*, Captains of *Henry* the *French* King, made incurſions as far as *Bologna*, ſpoiling and laying waſte the Country round about; wherefore, the *Imperialiſts* having joyned the *Pope's* Army laid ſiege to *Mirandola*, ſo that *Parma* and *Mirandola* were both beſieged at the ſame time: in this manner the War continued for the ſpace of a whole year, without any memorable action on either ſide, only fire and ſword, and miſerable devaſtations raged in all parts of *Italy*; of which the *Pope* being touched with an inward compaſſion, and being naturally inclined to Peace, having began this War more in compliance with the Emperor, than his own humour or affections, or with intention to poſſeſs himſelf of *Parma*, did at the inſtance of certain *French* Cardinals make a Peace, with which the Siege was raiſed both from before *Parma* and *Mirandola*: howſoever, with this accommodation on the *Pope's* ſide, the Wars did not end between *Henry* of *France* and *Charles* the Emperor, but being continued from one year to another, produced nothing but ſlaughter, ruin and miſeries to their People. In the mean time the *Pope* having proclaimed, that the Council held at *Bologna* ſhould be transferred to *Trent*, Commanding by his Indictions and Bulls, all Patriarchs, Arch-Biſhops, and Biſhops, to repair thither, and having ſent thither Cardinal *Creſcentio* to preſide as his Legat, together with his two Aſſiſtants before named, the eleventh Seſſions was commenced on the firſt of *May*, 1551.

1551. Howſoever, before it could be agreed to transfer the Council again to *Trent*, many, and ſerious Debates were held thereupon, and the reaſons of *Paul* the third for adjourning it to *Bologna* being very forcible, it had ſtill been continued there, had not the conſiderations of pleaſing the Emperor prevailed, which in that conjuncture was eſteemed neceſſary: and alſo it was reſolved, that all the Acts and determinations which had been concluded and agreed in the former Seſſions ſhould be eſteemed authentick and ratified, and not farther to be called into queſtion or debate, either in any Diet, or in this Council: for which reaſons the Proteſtants refuſed to appear at *Trent*, alledging that the place was neither ſecure for them, nor the Council free in ſuch manner, as that every one might deliver his Senſe, and debate his Opinions; and that unleſs the concluſions made in that Council might be again examined, and that the Divines, who compoſed the Confeſſion of *Augsburg*, might have a Deciſive, as well as a deliberative Voice, and that unleſs the Pope not being permitted to preſide in the Council, the Biſhops might be abſolved from their Oath, which obliges to the Papal See, and ſuffered freely to give their own true and real Sentiments, it could not be expected, that any happy reſult ſhould iſſue from this Council, and therefore they were reſolved to abſent themſelves, and not give their attendance according to the citations and ſummons from the Pope. Wherefore the Emperor entering into a cloſer Treaty with the Eccleſiaſtical Electors, and others inclining to the Church of *Rome*, adviſed them to attend perſonally the General Council, to which all due and humble obedience was to be given, promiſing them all ſecurity, and ſafety both in going and returning; For as he was in the quality of Emperor, ſo he was Advocate of the Church, and the Defender of Councils, the which Office, that he might be in a better capacity to perform, he would take up his reſidence at ſome place on the Frontiers; where he would be aſſiſtant to their Liberty, that every one might have a freedom to propoſe, and ſpeak what he in Conſcience judged moſt agreeable to the Word of God, and the Doctrin of the Ancient Fathers.

This Declaration of the Emperor ſeemed to be made and erected as a Battery or Counter-work to the Pope's Bull. For whereas the Pope pretended to govern and direct Councils, the Emperor reſolved to take the care and charge to ſee them orderly and regularly directed. The Pope pretended to preſide, and to be himſelf the Rule, and have the caſting Voice: and the Emperor commands that all Deciſions be made according to Scriptures and the Holy Fathers. The Pope directs, that the concluſions made at former Seſſions ſtand in force, the Emperor leaves them free to be diſputed, and debated as every Mans conſcience directed: In ſhort, the Court of *Rome* not being able to digeſt theſe contradictions, complained much of the encroachments which the Emperor made on the Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, and that his Declaration was another Convocation of a Council.

The Emperor having declared his reſolution to grant his Paſſes, and ſafe-conduct to all ſuch as ſhould go to this Council. The Proteſtant Princes began to diſcourſe in all parts of *Germany*, of ſending the moſt acute and learned Men amongſt them to *Trent*: and accordingly *Maurice* Duke of *Saxony* commanded *Melancthon*, and other Divines of ſingular note and reputation, to repair thither. In like manner, the Duke of *Wirtemberg* provided others of equal Learning; but conſidering that a ſafe-Conduct, or Paſſeport from the Emperor was not ſufficient, as had been formerly experienced at the Councils of *Conſtance* and *Baſil*; the Emperor was deſired by thoſe Princes to obtain by the means of his Ambaſſadors ſafe-conducts, under the publick Seal of the Council: which the Emperor promiſed to do, and accordingly gave order to Count *Montfort*, one of his three Ambaſſadors reſiding at *Trent* to procure the ſame, the which afterwards gave occaſion of much Debate and Diſpute, in what manner, and with what Expreſſions it was to be formed.

The Pope, though to outward appearance, ſeemed very deſirous to have the Council commence and be continued at *Trent*, according to the time appointed: yet did not ſeem much concerned, or greatly preſſing to have the Catholick Prelates aſſemble: only the Emperor ſeemed moſt urgent, conceiving the determinations of a Council to be the only means to quiet and appeaſe the diſturbances in *Germany*; and therefore inſtantly preſſed the Electors of *Cologne*, *Triers*, and *Metz*, together with ſeveral Biſhops of *Spain*, and ſuch as were in his Dominions of *Italy*, to haſten their Journey unto *Trent*: ſo that during the ſpace of eight months, that the Council continued, the whole Aſſembly of Perſons actually preſent, comprehending alſo the Preſidents and Princes, did not exceed the number of ſixty four.

Time being protracted unprofitably from the firſt of *May* to the firſt of *September*: a Seſſions was then held; at which it was declared, that con- 1651.

conſidering the ſmall appearance of Biſhops by reaſon of the abſence of the *German* Nation; the Seſſions of the Council had been until that time deferred. But now in regard that two of the Electors were already come, which gave hopes, that many others of the ſame Country would follow their example, and ſpeedily attend the Summons of the Holy Council; it was reſolved in expectation thereof to adjourn for the ſpace of forty days, that is from the firſt of *September* to the eleventh of *October*. At which time theſe particular Articles would be then treated and diſcuſſed. Firſt of the Sacraments in general: and next of Baptiſm, the Euchariſt, and Confirmation in particular: After which, the Count *de Montfort* made a Speech in behalf of his Maſter the Emperor; and ſeveral Commiſſions and Letters of Credence from divers Princes were publickly read by the Secretary of the Council.

After which, *Amiot* Abbot of *Belloſane* preſented a Letter from *Henry* the *French* King, directed to the Council, and delivered to be read by the Secretary; the Superſcription whereof was this, *Sanctiſſimis in Chriſto Patribus Conventus Tridentini.* Againſt which the *Spaniſh* Prelates took great exception, cryed out with a loud Voice, That that Letter was not directed to them, who were a General Council, and not an Aſſembly, as that Superſcription would inſinuate, and therefore deſired that the Letter might not be read, but that in caſe the Bearer had any thing to propoſe from his Maſter, he might be heard by a Committee, or at ſome private Houſe: the word *Conventus*, gave great ſcandal, and an occaſion of much noiſe and diſturbance; until ſuch time as the Arch-Biſhop of *Metz* riſing from his Seat, asked them, how they would be able to admit audience to the Proteſtants, who ſtiled them *Conventum Malignantium*, when they ſo ill reliſhed the title of *Sanctiſſimum Conventum*: howſoever, the *Spaniards* continued their Exclamations until the Legat and his Aſſiſtants, together with the Emperors Ambaſſadors, retiring a while into ſecret Conference, returned again, and gave their aſſent to have the Letter read, being willing to have the word *Conventus* taken in the largeſt and moſt favourable ſenſe. The Contents and ſubſtance of which Letter dated the 13*th.* of *Auguſt* was to this effect. That the King out of due reſpect to that Council, and according to the cuſtom of his Anceſtors had thought fit to ſignifie to them the reaſons why he had not ſent any of his Biſhops to that Aſſembly convened by Pope *Julius* the 3*d*, under the Title of a *General Council*; the which was cauſed by the Obligation he had upon him, both in juſtice and honour to aſſiſt the Duke of *Parma*; for which cauſe there being a neceſſity laid upon him of making War againſt the Pope and the Eccleſiaſtical State, there could be no ſecurity or ſafety either to his Ambaſſadours, or Biſhops in any Dominions of the Church, whilſt this miſunderſtanding between him and the Pope remained: and therefore he hoped they would accept this, as a juſt reaſon and excuſe, to whom he appealed as favourable and impartial Judges in the caſe, *&c.* After the Letter a Proteſt was read, containing all the Particulars, of which Mounſieur *de Termes* Ambaſſadour for *France*, complained at *Rome* to the Pope, in name of the King, the ſubſtance whereof was this: That having taken upon him the protection of *Parma*, he had endeavoured to repreſent his Reaſons for it to the Pope and Cardinals; giving them to underſtand, that his principal Motives thereunto were reaſonable, pious, and Royal, and ſuch as had no mixture of intereſt, but purely reſpected the welfare and benefit of the Church; as might appear by the Articles of agreement with *Parma*, which only reſpected the Church, and the peace and liberty of *Italy*: of which, having informed the Pope, his Holineſs ſeemed not willing to underſtand the ſame, ſeeming more inclinable to gratifie his own humour, than prevent thoſe miſchiefs which would embroil all *Europe*, and interrupt the proceedings of the preſent Council, which he could not eſteem, or ſtile with the Character of General, but of a particular Convention, aſſembled only to ſerve a turn, and promote private intereſts; ſo long as he who was the moſt Chriſtian King, and the eldeſt Son of the Church was excluded thence; not being able to ſend his Ambaſſadors or Biſhops thither with that ſecurity to their Perſons, and freedom in their Votes, as was required in a General Council, *&c.* This Proteſt being read, the Anſwer thereunto was deferred until the eleventh of *October*.

In the mean time this Proteſt afforded matter of Diſcourſe to all Chriſtendom: ſome were of Opinion that the Pope hereupon would be induced to diſſolve the Council, which could have no Authority, or be termed General, ſo long as the *French* Nation, which was a principal Member, was excluded from it: But the *Pope* was of another Opinion, pretending, that his ſincere endeavours of perſuading that Nation to joyn themſelves to it, was ſufficient; and the Imperialiſts, who cared not much for their Company, judged that ſcruple immaterial; ſince that being cited, and required to appear thereat, as members of the *Catholick Church*; their cauſeleſs and obſtinate abſence ought not to prejudice the proceedings of the Council; for in regard the greater part include the Minor; the whole body of *France* was obliged to own thoſe Acts of the Council to be Canonical and Obligatory, having by their abſence, when they might have been preſent, or by their ſilence aſſented thereunto.

Howſoever, the Parliament of *Paris* was of another judgment: for tho' it be true that the greater number carries the point, in thoſe Aſſemblies, where is a common concurrence in Votes: But where one part abſents it ſelf, and refuſes to joyn, the Acts of the other cannot oblige the diſſenting Party, and in that caſe that Rule takes place, *Prohibentis potior eſt conditio*; of which nature are all ſuch Eccleſiaſtical Aſſemblies, which how numerous ſoever they may be, their Acts having only an Authority to oblige their own Countries, but not ſuch as have diſſented, or are not concurring with them: which was the ſenſe and opinion of ancient times, as we may read in the Treatiſes wrote by S. *Hilarius*, *Athanaſius*, *Theodoret*, and *Victorinus*, expreſly upon this Point: for which reaſons certain Canons have been received in ſome Churches, which have been rejected in others: and as St. *Gregory* teſtifies, that upon the ſame account, the Canons of the ſecond Council of *Conſtantinople*, and of the firſt of *Epheſus* were not received by the Church of *Rome*. But leſt the *French* King ſhould by this manner of Nonconformity ſeem Schiſmatical, or be ſuſpected of an intention to alienate the minds of his People from the *Catholick* Religion; he publiſhed divers ſevere Edicts againſt the Proteſtants; promiſing rewards to ſuch, who ſhould detect and accuſe them.

Now according to the Promiſe made to the Abbot of *Bellozare*, that an Anſwer ſhould be given to the Letters and Proteſt of the *French* King his Maſter, on the eleventh of *October* following; the Cryer of the Council at the Church-gate, made Proclamation, that in caſe any were there preſent for the moſt Chriſtian King, he ſhould then appear. But the Abbot knowing well, that no Anſwer would be given him, but ſuch as was forged at *Rome* by the *Spaniſh* Party, had by Order from his Maſter the King withdrawn himſelf; wherefore, none appearing to receive and hear the Anſwer, Order was given to have the Anſwer, which was prepared for that time to be publickly read in the Council, the ſubſtance whereof was this; That the Council was not conſcious of having given any ſuch offence to his Majeſty, that he ſhould have cauſe to paſs ſuch hard Cenſures upon it: that it had been at firſt convened by the Authority of *Paul* the 3*d.* and now continued under this Pope *Julius*, and therefore could not be ſuſpected of having had its original from any private Deſigns of advancing particular intereſts, as his Majeſty would inſinuate, and therefore they deſired his Majeſty would be pleaſed to ſend his Biſhops to the Council, that they might concur in this holy Work, which was carried on with no other aim, than a juſt and a ſincere intention to ſettle Religion on its true baſis, and to produce peace and quietneſs in the World: Adding farther, That in caſe his Majeſty ſhould upon any private conſiderations, or animoſities, decline this happy Union, denying the preſence and attendance of his Miniſters at this Sacred Aſſembly; that yet notwithſtanding, they were well aſſured that all thoſe Acts performed there, would have the ſame force, and Authority obligatory upon Mens Conſciences, as if his Majeſty had by the preſence of his Ambaſſadors and Biſhops concurred therein.

Nor did the *French* King only deny to ſend his own Subjects to the Council, but alſo prevailed with the *Suiſſes* and *Griſons*, by his Ambaſſadors, to do the like, who being well acquainted with the ſecret Deſigns and Intrigues of the Court of *Rome*, inſtilled that prejudice in their minds to this Council; that as well Catholicks, as Proteſtants then aſſembled in a Diet at *Baſil*, denied and diſclaimed all concurrence with that Council, and as an evidence thereof, recalled *Thomas Plant* Biſhop of *Coire* from thence.

Notwithſtanding all theſe difficulties and oppoſitions, the Council proceeded in their Decrees, and determined eleven Points, with *Anathema* againſt all ſuch, who ſhould not cloſe in faith and in belief thereof. Firſt, againſt thoſe, who ſhould deny the very Body and Blood of *Jeſus Chriſt*, together with his Soul and Deity, to be really and ſubſtantially contained in the *Euchariſt*; but confeſs it to be only in ſign or figure, or myſtically: the which converſion of the Elements of Bread and Wine, into the Body and Blood of Chriſt, they called *Tranſubſtantiation*. Secondly, againſt thoſe, who ſhould hold that the whole Sacrament of the *Euchariſt* is not contained in one of theſe two Species; Thirdly, againſt thoſe who hold, that the Body and Blood of Chriſt is then only contained in the Species when the ſame is received, and not before, or after. Fourthly, againſt thoſe, who hold, that the chief fruit and benefit of this Sacrament, is the remiſſion of ſins, Fifthly, againſt thoſe, who hold, that Chriſt in the *Euchariſt* is not to be adored with the Service of *Latria*, or carried in Proceſſion, or publickly expoſed to Worſhip and Adoration. Sixthly, againſt thoſe, who being come to the age of diſcretion ſhall not communicate once a year, and that at *Eaſter*; with five other Points relating to the Sacrament, all which were confirmed as irrevocable, and immovable fundamentals, of which it was not lawful to doubt, much leſs to diſpute. Theſe and other Points being already paſſed in the Council, were taken as granted, and concluded, and therefore were not to be again re-aſſumed to Debate: But now in regard the matter of the Paſsports to be given to the Proteſtants, was again to be conſidered, it was judged fit, that the Tenure thereof ſhould be reſtrained with prudent cautions, that when the Diſſenting Party ſhould intermix with their Aſſembly, it ſhould not be in their Power to unravel thoſe Doctrines which had been already ſetled, and determined; but giving them for granted, ſhould proceed to examine other Points of leſſer moment, which they limited to four Articles. Firſt, whether it were neceſſary to Salvation that Chriſt's faithful People ſhould receive the Sacrament of the Euchariſt in both kinds. Secondly, Whether he that receives in one kind alone, receives leſs than he that communicates in both. Thirdly, Whether the Church be guilty of an Error in having ordained, that the Laity ſhould communicate in one kind only. And then Fourthly, Whether the Sacrament of the Euchariſt may be given to Children. Theſe Points of limitation being thus laid down, the Preamble to the Paſsports ran in this manner; That whereas the Proteſtants did deſire to be heard upon theſe Points before they were finally determined, and for the end they might have free and ſafe admiſſion to this Council, without any let, hinderance, or interruption whatſoever: It was therefore by the Authority of this Council ordered, and enacted, That out of a deſire, and zeal they had to reduce the erring Chriſtians into the true way of the Goſpel, they did with humble Charity condeſcend unto their Demands, giving, and granting unto them the publick faith, and aſſurance to come, and repair freely to this Council, and there to debate of the preceeding Particulars, Provided that they came, and gave their perſonal attendance there in Council, at, or before the 25th. of *January* next following, and in the mean time that the Points being frequently debated and diſcuſſed, might be prepared and made ready for determination againſt the end of that Month.

The Tenour of this Paſsport being read, and conſidered by the Proteſtants, appeared ſtrangely captious, and ſuch as gave them juſt occaſion of aſtoniſhment and admiration; for conſidering that the Proteſtants had not onely in all their Diets, but in all their publick Remonſtrances and Writings avowed their reſolutions to hear all matters in Diſpute to be examined in their preſence, and that without ſuch perſonal intercourſe and conſent, they would never receive or obey any Precepts or Articles which ſhould be enjoyned, or impoſed upon them from *Trent*: It ſeemed ſtrangely magiſterial and ſurprizing, that the Council ſhould aſſume a liberty to ſay, that the Proteſtants deſired to be heard onely upon thoſe four Points; it being moſt evident that the Deſign of the Paſsport was no other than to delude unthinking Men by a fair appearance of invitation, and ſafe-Conduct, and yet keep the Authority of the Pope, and of the *Roman* Church upon its guard and reſerve; wherefore the Proteſtants rejecting the allurements of ſuch feigned Diſguiſes, by general agreement reſolved not to repair unto the Council, unleſs it were under the protection of ſuch a ſafe-conduct as was given by the Council of *Baſil* to the *Bohemians*: one Clauſe of which was, That the Holy Scriptures ſhould be the Judg of all Controverſies; which in caſe they could not obtain, they might have wherewith to excuſe themſelves before the Emperour.

The Pope having underſtood theſe reſolutions of the diſſenting *Germans*, more earneſtly urged the coming of the Catholick *Suiſſes* to the Council, with whom alſo the Emperour joyned in the Invitation; but the *French* King had ſo charmed them by his Ambaſſadours, who being a Perſon well verſed in all the Intrigues and contrivances of the Court of *Rome*, had wrote a Treatiſe on that Subject, ſufficient to create in them a Diffidence and jealouſie of the *Roman* Counſels, and ſo expoſed the Deſigns intended againſt them, that not onely the Proteſtant, but alſo the Catholick *Swiſſers* did at a Diet held at *Bade* unanimouſly concur not to ſend their Deputies to *Trent*, by which the *Griſons* alſo taking an Alarm, conceived a jealouſie, that ſomething was contriving at *Rome* to their prejudice, and for that reaſon recalled *Thomas Plant* the Biſhop of *Coire* from his reſidence with the Council.

Whileſt theſe matters were in Treaty two Ambaſſadours from the Duke of *Wirtemberg* arrived at *Trent*, whoſe Commiſſion was publickly to repreſent the Confeſſion of their Doctrine before the Council, giving them to underſtand, that in caſe they would admit their Divines to a Debate, and grant them a free Paſſport as large and ample in the Tenure of it, as was that of *Baſil*, that then they ſhould appear in the Council, and expound and explicate their Doctrine, and Tenents according to the true ſenſe and meaning of them: but before theſe Divines were admitted, it was ordered by the Legat, that they ſhould firſt preſent and make known to the Preſident the Summary of their Commiſſion, that ſo it might be conſidered whether the particulars therein contained were ſuch as were lawful, and which might be regularly admitted into the Council, which was the method of their procceedings. But the Ambaſſadours whoſe Inſtructions were, not to own, or acknowledg the Authority of the Pope, or power of convoking, or preſiding in Council either in Perſon, or by his Deputies, could not be perſuaded to make applications to the Preſident, being a matter contrary to the principal Article reſolved in *Germany*.

1551. About the ſame time alſo being the beginning of *November* the Emperour arrived at *Inſpruck*; which being a City not above three days journey from *Trent*, was for that preſent made the place of his reſidence, that ſo he might with more eaſe receive daily Advices of the proceedings of the Council, and be more near at hand to adminiſter aſſiſtance to his Wars at *Parma*. The news of the Emperour's near approach did not much diſturb the thoughts of the Pope, who depended on the reiterated Promiſes which the Emperour had made him of being firm, and ſteady to the intereſt of the Church, and the Court of *Rome*. But to the Ambaſſadours of *Wirtemberg* he ſtudied not much to give a Reply, or new Inſtructions to his Legat; but onely recommended to him a firm conſtancy in defence of the Papal Authority, which having in the time of *Paul* the Third convened that Council, and which had by the ſame Power been ever ſince continued; he ought not in the leaſt Point give way to ſchiſmatical, and ſeditious motions: but with courage and zeal, defend the Right and Title which the Pope ſingly had both to Aſſemble, and to preſide as Head in all Eccleſiaſtical Councils. The Ambaſſadours having continued at *Trent* without being heard, preſſed very earneſtly for a Diſpatch, and that their Doctrines might be read in the Council, and a ſafe Conduct granted to their Proteſtant Brethren according to the form of that given at *Baſil*, that ſo they might have liberty to deliver their Doctrines, and Argue, and Diſpute in maintenance thereof without interruption, or danger to their Perſons. But the Legat would not yield to either of the Propoſitions; ſaying, That as to their Doctrines, they were already notified in their own Books, and lay before the Council to conſider, and either to approve, or condemn them; and that the Cenſure given ought to be concluſive, and received with humility and ſubmiſſion, as a final Determination. And whereas they deſired that their Doctrines ſhould be read in the Council, it ſeemed as if the Diſſenters intended to give Laws, and Precepts, and teach the Church what was Orthodox, and what Erronious: And as to the form of the Paſſport in any other latitude than what had lately been preſcribed, it ſeemed ſo inſufferable an indignity to the Council, and to the Church of God to have their former reſolutions queſtioned, and again unravelled, that all good Chriſtians were obliged to engage their Lives for the prevention thereof.

At the ſame time the City of *Straſbourg*, and five other Towns ſent their Ambaſſadours to *Trent* with the like Orders to repreſent their Doctrines before the Council; who finding the ſame repulſe, did joyntly addreſs themſelves to the Emperour, complaining that contrary to the Promiſes of his Imperial Majeſty their Doctrines could not be read in the Council, or received into conſideration: but the Emperor being willing to content them, acquainted them that the Ambaſſadours of *Saxony* were ſhortly expected, and that when they came, they ſhould have a fair hearing, and be admitted to a charitable and friendly Conference.

1552.

On the ſeventh of *January* 1552. the Ambaſſadours from *Maurice* Elector of *Saxony* arrived at *Trent* to the great joy of the other Electours, and Prelates of *Germany*, who uniting together in the ſame Intereſt, made their firſt Addreſſes and applications to the Emperor's Embaſſadours: acquainting them that their Princes, being deſirous to cultivate Union, and Charity amongſt Chriſtians, had ſent their Divines to the Council, who were moderate Men, learned in the Law and Goſpel, and ſuch as were lovers of Peace, and Chriſtian Charity, and that all the other Proteſtant Princes would in like manner ſend their Miniſters to the Council under the protection of ſuch a paſſport, or ſafe Conduct, as had been granted at *Baſil*, Provided, that all matters, and points already Determined might be again examined, and called into queſtion; and the Pope not admitted to preſide as Chief of the Council, but be equally liable to the Sentences, and Cenſures of the ſame with other Biſhops. And in the mean time their deſire was to be admitted directly to the Council without any intermediate Addreſſes to *Creſcentio* the Pope's Legat; and that in publick Aſſembly their Commiſſions might be read, and their Doctrines expoſed to publick conſideration; But theſe Propoſals, though gently received and hearkned unto by the Emperour's Ambaſſadours, who were unwilling to diſoblige the Electours of *Saxony*, and *Brandenbourg*, were violently oppoſed by the Pope's Legat, and Nuncio's; who alledged, that it was a matter of high indignity to the Council, which repreſented the Church Catholick, to have their Decrees and Determinations canvaſſed and reverſed by an inconſiderable number of Sectaries, who ſeemed to come prepared and armed rather to confound, than eſtabliſh the Council: for ſeeing that their Principles were to diſown the Pope's Authority, on which that Council was founded; and then to be admitted to a freedom of Speech, in which they might vent their blaſphemous Doctrines and reproaches to the diſhonour of the Apoſtolical See, was ſuch an Indulgence to Impiety, and a betraying the Power of the Church, as rather than admit, were ready to ſacrifice their lives, or at leaſt withdraw from any Meetings, where ſuch matters were Debated, or Acts Decreed. But notwithſtanding theſe poſitive refuſals, the Emperor's Ambaſſadours endeavoured to induce the *Pope's* Party to admit the Diſſenters to audience in the Council; for that their very entrance to it did imply a tacite owning of the *Pope's* Authority though the uſual Ceremonies and Compliments, which were but ſuperficial Points, were permitted by them, the which would be an act moſt religious and Chriſtian, for perhaps ſuch charitable condeſcenſion would be a means to prevent a War, which might endanger the ſafety of the whole Church: to which the Cardinal of *Toledo*, one of the Emperor's Party, farther added, That he had often heard in Sermons, how that the ſalvation of one Soul was ſo dear and precious to Jeſus Chriſt, that for the ſaving thereof he would deſcend on Earth, and be again crucified: and then, ſaid he, let us conſider, if we intimate this example, in caſe for the ſaving of all *Germany* we ſhould deny to recede from the leaſt punctilio of our honour and prerogative. At length, to be ſhort, after many Debates and Conſultations in deſpight of the Legat and his Adherents, the Authority of the three Electours, and the Cardinal *Madrutio* promoted by the mediation of the *Imperial* Ambaſſadors prevailed.

But then another difficulty aroſe concerning the treatment of theſe Ambaſſadours when introduced to the Council, with what place and precedency was to be granted to them; and how, and where the Divines were to be ſeated, who expected a rank, and freedom of Voices and ſuffrage equal with others; which ſeemed very dangerous to be yielded to known Hereticks, who by Antient Canons, and Papal Decretals were never admitted to a Communion or Society with other Chriſtians, unleſs having firſt renounced their Errors, they deſired with humility to be taught, and directed: this Point though at firſt diſputed with the ſame difficulties as the former, yet at length it was concluded: That the neceſſity ought to excuſe the tranſgreſſion of ſuch Canons, which after mature deliberation had been diſpenſed with in all the Diets of *Germany*; and that the like might be ſafely practiſed at this Council; in caſe that in the Preamble to this Admiſſion, it were declared, that ſuch Indulgence was yielded out of charity and compaſſion, to the end that Men who were gone aſtray, and fallen into error might be reclaimed and reduced to the true Faith, and Orthodox Doctrine of the Church. And though the Legat would not yield to any of theſe means of Accommodation, yet it was concluded againſt him; that on the 24th. of this month of *January* a General Convocation ſhould be held, at which the Ambaſſadours of *Saxony* ſhould be received, and heard; and that in the mean time the Divines who remained at ſome diſtance from *Trent* might repair thither, and that the 25th. ſhould be the day of Seſſion;

which being agreed, a Committee was choſen to draw up this Decree, together with the Preamble to the Admiſſion, and the ſafe Conduct.

The Imperial Miniſters having made this report to the Proteſtants, and ſignified in an eloquent Speech the tenderneſs the Council had for them, and willingneſs to condeſcend to their weak Conſciences: the Proteſtants retired a while, and having conſidered the minutes of the ſafe Conduct; made their exceptions to it, being in four particulars diſferent to that of *Baſil*, formerly granted to the *Bohemians*, and on which they were obliged by their Inſtructions to inſiſt. As firſt, That in Council they might have a Vote, and free ſuffrage. Secondly, That the holy Scripture, and practice of the Primitive Church, Antient Councils, and Fathers who were Expoſitors of the Scriptures might be the Judges of all Controverſies. Thirdly, That all Ambaſſadours during the continuance of the Council, might have the free Exerciſe of their Religion in their own Lodgings. Fourthly, That nothing ſhould be ſaid or acted which might tend to the defamation of their Religion, or render it ridiculous. Theſe particulars being offered to the Council, were generally concluded to be unreaſonable, and ſuch as might enſnare their wiſdom in inextricable difficulties; and therefore it was reſolved not to change, or alter any thing in the minutes of the ſafe Conduct, in expectation that the Proteſtants obſerving their reſolution and conſtancy might with time be induced to condeſcend to their terms.

Matters being thus protracted till the 24th. of *January*, the General Convocation was held at the Houſe of the Legat, where the Electors, all the Fathers, and the Emperor's Ambaſſadours were preſent; who having taken their Places, the Ambaſſadours of *Saxony* were called in, who having made their Reverence and Salutes to the Aſſembly, one of them began his Speech with this Compellation, *Reverendiſſimi, & Ampliſſimi Patres, & Domini*; My Lord and Maſter, *Maurice*, Elector of of *Saxony*, after his hearty Wiſhes and Prayers, that God would inſpire all your Counſels with his Holy Spirit, hath commanded me to let you know, that he hath a long time deſired to ſee a General, Chriſtian and free Council held and celebrated, wherein all Errors might be refuted, and abuſes in the Church corrected and reformed; and that the Holy Scriptures might be made the Rule of our faith and practice; in which good work that he might be aſſiſtant, he hath ſent his Divines to repreſent their Confeſſion to this Council, being commanded to abide at ſome Leagues diſtant until a ſafe Conduct could be procured for them; for having underſtood, that according to a conſtitution of the Council of *Conſtance*, it was not neceſſary to keep faith with Hereticks, or thoſe who were ſo reputed; and that the *Bohemians* being ſenſible of ſuch Tenents, had with due caution armed themſelves with aſſurance of ſafe Conduct under the Seal of the Council of *Baſil*; ſo in like manner his Maſter the Elector did deſire and expect the ſecurity of ſafe Conduct for his Divines, Counſellors and their domeſtick Servants in a more ample and large form than what appeared in that Draught and Copy which had lately been preſented to him. Which requeſt being granted, and admiſſion given to the Divines to take their place in Council, his next Propoſition was to have them heard upon thoſe Points and Articles, which were in Controverſie between the Proteſtants and the Catholicks; and though the ſame had already been determined by the Council,

cil, yet that they might again be reviſed, and examined, and determined by the Word of God, and according to the common belief of all Chriſtian Nations.

After theſe Ambaſſadours had finiſhed their Oration, thoſe of *Wirtemberg* were introduced, who having delivered their Meſſage almoſt to the ſame intent, and purpoſe with the former, they were cauſed to retire; and after a Debate whether any addition, or alteration ſhould be made in the form of Safe Conduct, it was generally concluded in the Negative, leſt by giving the liberty propoſed, the Council ſhould be intrigued in moſt inextricable Diſputes, of which Volumes had been wrote already without hopes of arriving at any definitive Sentence or Determination.

The next day being the 25th. of *January*, which was the day of the Seſſion, all things were managed with great Order, and Solemnity; and after Maſs was ended, the Council ſat, and in the firſt place determined all points relating to the Sacrifice of the Maſs, and Sacrament of Ordination, that thoſe material Points might be paſſed before the arrival of the Proteſtants, in expectation of whom (as was then declared) and in hopes that they came provided with real, and peaceable intentions to acquieſce in the truth, and confirm the Decrees of their Mother the Church, and not to ruine, and deſtroy its fundamental Principles, they had prorogued their next Seſſion until the 19th. of *March* following; and as to the form of the Safe Conduct it appeared to them ſo large, and ample, that nothing could be deviſed, or imagined, to render it more extenſive, or of greater validity.

With this, and the like tenderneſs of brotherly compaſſion the Council ſeemed to outward appearance to treat the Proteſtants, though the chief motive thereunto, was to pleaſe the Emperor, who apprehending great confuſions and Wars in *Germany*, on the ſcore of Religion, was earneſt by all the Sollicitations his Miniſters could make to bring matters to ſome tolerable accommodation. The Emperor alſo being deſirous to abate ſomething of the Authority and arrogance of the Church, imagined that the Proteſtants might be made uſe of, as the happy Inſtruments to effect the ſame, and that the depreſſion of the Papal power might encreaſe the grandeur of the Imperial. The *Pope* and his Party diſcovering theſe ſecret agitations, did after this laſt Seſſion think little of the farther proceedings of the Council, and therefore on force of this jealouſie entertained private Treaties with *France* managed by the Cardinal *Tournon* in behalf of that King, in purſuance and execution of which it was believed, that an entire, and abſolute diſſolution of the Council would neceſſarily follow of it ſelf, without any Act of the *Pope* therein.

Howſoever theſe matters not as yet diſcovered; the Proteſtants teſtified their diſlike of the Narrowneſs of the Paſsport, as not comprehending that amplitude, which their Princes required. And alſo obſerving that the general Congregation proceeded to prepare all matters in Controverſie concerning Marriage, adoration of Images, worſhip of Saints, Purgatory, and the like, which they called Minute points, to be offered againſt the next Seſſion, all which were to be paſſed without the intervention of the Proteſtants, they took juſt offence againſt the proceedings, and complained thereof to the Emperor's Miniſters: of which alſo the Emperor himſelf taking notice, diſpatched an Expreſs both to *Trent*, and *Rome*, giving them notice, that this haſty precipitation of Affairs gave juſt cauſe to ſuſpect, that nothing was intended fairly towards the Proteſtants, who on theſe due and reaſonable Reſentments would become more obdurate in their Opinions; to prevent which, he laid his Commands on the Prelates not to act, or join in any farther proceedings; which reſolution being ſignified at a General Congregation, all Synodical Actions and Decrees were ordered to ſurceaſe, until the pleaſure of the Council ſhould be known to the contrary.

The Pope being greatly incenſed at this, and other actions of the Emperor, gave licenſe to this Prorogation for a few days onely, and that afterwards they ſhould again aſſemble, and reaſſume their Debates with ſuch Chriſtian fortitude as became their Eccleſiaſtical functions, without reſpect to any worldly conſideration.

During this vacation a Frier preaching on the Parable of the Tares ſowed amongſt the Wheat, applyed that Doctrine to the preſent diſſenting Opinions, which he called *Hereſies*, and which ought, (as he ſaid) to be extirpated with Fire, and the Gallows; at which and other Affronts the Proteſtants taking particular exceptions greatly complained of their ill uſage, which tended to make the breach wider; and the Elector of *Triers* took this pretence to depart, feigning alſo an excuſe of his health; though in reality a ſecret intelligence which he held with the *French* King was the cauſe thereof.

About the beginning of *March* the Ambaſſadours of *Saxony* received Letters from their Prince to proſecute their Demands with new inſtances to the Council, giving them to underſtand, that for the more effectual diſpatch thereof, he intended perſonally to wait on the Emperor; which was cauſe of great amuſement to the Papal Party: but in a few days, it was generally bruited, that a League was made between the *French* King and the Proteſtant Princes to make War upon the Emperor; which news giving an Alarm to the Electors of *Metz* and *Cologne* they departed, taking *Auſpruck* in their way homewards, entered into ſerious, and private conſultations with the Emperor. The Ambaſſadours likewiſe of *Maurice* Duke of *Saxony* fearing leſt in thoſe rumours, their Perſons were not ſafe, privately withdrew from *Trent*, and by different ways returned to their own Country. Notwithſtanding which the Ambaſſadours and Divines of *Wirtemberg* and two of *Strasbourg* remained ſtill in *Trent*; where not having been able to procure Licenſe for their Confeſſion to be received and read in Council, they printed ſeveral Copies of them, and cauſed them to be diſperſed in all places, which gave publick offence to the whole Council; nor could the Intereſt of the *Imperial* Ambaſſadours prevail farther, for the Papal Party ſuſpecting that all thoſe inſtances made by the Emperour in behalf of the Proteſtants, tended to no other end than to depreſs the Court of *Rome*, embraced all occaſions of excuſes, and delays: for now the Emperor's intereſt was grown weak at *Trent* by the retirement of the *German* Biſhops, who upon the Alarm of Wars in their Country were retired to their own homes: indeed the report of Wars raiſed by the *French* King in Confederacy with the Princes of *Germany* againſt the Emperor was confirmed, and Manifeſts and Proteſts in defence of Religion and the liberty of *Germany* were printed and publiſhed; and in purſuance thereof on the firſt of *April* the Elector of *Saxony* laid ſiege to *Ausbourg*; the which combuſtions had ſo great influence on the Affairs of *Trent*, that the *Italian* Biſhops departed, as did alſo the Proteſtants; and a ſmall number of Prelats remaining, and the Legat greatly indiſpoſed in his health, the Council broke up, being prorogued for the ſpace of two years, during which time it was hoped, and expected that the preſent ſtorms would be blown over, and Men return to a more mild, and calm temper of ſpirit.

In this manner the Gown gave way to the Sword, which commonly decides the moſt knotty difficulties, and puts an end to long Diſputes of Councils, and the Schools. For now *Henry* II. King of *France* having joyned his Arms with *Maurice* Duke of *Saxony*, and other diſcontented Princes of *Germany* made War on the Emperor; the King was inveterately angry for the injury he had received in the matter of *Parma*; the Duke incenſed by reaſon of the ill-treatment of his Father-in-law *Philip* the *Lantgrave* of *Heſſe*, whom the Emperor ſuffered to languiſh in a tedious impriſonment; and all in general being jealous, and fearful of the Emperor's growing greatneſs, (whatſoever there might be of Religion pretended in the caſe) united their Arms upon different conſiderations. The Duke with a ſtrong Army marched to *Oenipont* in *Rhetia*; and with ſuch expedition that the Emperor was forced to riſe, and retire from thence at midnight to *Villaco* in the Dukedom of *Auſtria*, on the confines of *Italy*; by which means the Duke became Maſter of *Oenepont*, a place diſtant about three days Journey from *Trent*. But in regard the ſucceſſes of this War were various, and not pertinent to our preſent Treatiſe, we ſhall proceed to matters more nearly relating to the Life, and Reign of this Pope *Julius* III.

The Council of *Trent* being diſſolved, and the Pope quiet in *Rome*, he made choice of a certain number of Cardinals in reſemblance of a Council to inſpect the preſent Errors, and abuſes which were crept into the Church; and the diſſolute, and corrupt manners of the Clergy; and to conſider of means to correct, and reform them: But whilſt they attended to theſe matters, they found themſelves ſo engulfed, and immers'd in difficulties, which were paſt their wiſdom to redreſs, that after ſeveral meetings being unable to conclude any thing, the buſineſs grew cold, and frequent delays, and adjournments from one week to another put an end thereunto without any effect: onely it was agreed that the prorogation of the Council which at firſt was limited unto two years only, ſhould now be farther enlarged to the term of Ten.

The Pope who had been in repoſe until now, was alſo diſturbed by the commotion of his Neighbours: for *Vrtado de Mendoza* who (after having been Ambaſſadour from the Emperor to the Pope) was now conſtituted Governour of *Siena*; to ſecure which from the civil Diſcords, which then aroſe, and to keep the City in obedience to his Maſter, he began to lay the foundations of a Cittadel; of which the Inhabitants being apprehenſive, leſt it ſhould ſubject them to a perpetual ſlavery, reſolved ſecretly to reſign themſelves into the protection of *France*; and having ſecretly for that purpoſe diſpatched their Ambaſſadours to *Henry* the Second, they received ſuch favourable aſſurance of aid and defence from him, that the People, in a tumultuous manner, aroſe in Arms, and being encouraged by the Count *Petigliano* and *Farneſe*, (who maintained the *French* intereſt in that part of *Tuſcany*,) they raiſed their Forces with ſuch expedition, that falling on the *Spaniards* in a kind of ſurprize, they cut them to pieces; and having demoliſhed and ſubverted the very foundation of the Cittadel, they returned to their antient form of Government, ſeeming to outward appearance to have recovered their priſtine Liberty. The news of this revolt of *Siena* was brought to the Emperor, whilſt he was at the ſiege of *Metz*, the principal City of *Lorain*; upon receipt of which, he inſtantly diſpatched his Orders to *Don Pedro de Toledo*, Vice-King of *Naples*, that he ſhould in perſon attend this War and endeavour the recovery of *Siena*. *Don Pedro* having received theſe Orders in the depth of the Winter, which was the beginning of the year 1553. began his march with a formidable Army 1553. of twenty thouſand Men, compoſed of *Italians*, *Spaniards*, and *Germans*. The *Pope* remembring the times of *Clement* VII. when a *Napolitan* Army ſacked *Rome*; and fearing to be ſurprized with the like calamity, levied ſpeedily eight thouſand Men, the conduct of which he committed to *Camillo Orſino*. So that now all Chriſtendom being in Arms, the *Pope* ſent his Legats to the Emperor, and the *French* King, to pacify, and mediate their differences in order to a general Peace; but ſo far were the ſpirits of theſe Princes exaſperated againſt each other, that no gentle remedies were available, or any other tryal, but ſuch as ſhould be determined by the judgment of the Sword: and now no preparations being made but for War, the *Pope* conſtituted *Guido Vbaldo*, Duke of *Vrbin*, General of all the Forces of the Church; whilſt Cardinal *da Eſte*, and Monſieur *de Termes*, an excellent Soldier defended *Siena* with a ſtrong Gariſon in the name of the *French* King. The *Imperial* Army being on their march took *Montechio*, and beſieged *Montalcino*, a Fortreſs belonging to *Siena*, where happened many Skirmiſhes, and Rencounters, with great ſlaughter on both ſides: and Wars being begun in *Siena*, *Montalcino*, *Orbitello Groſſetto*, *Chiuſi*, and many other places, all *Tuſcany* was in Arms, Fire, Sword, Rapine, and Violence, raging in every part thereof: but amidſt of theſe Combuſtions, *Don Pedro* dying after a tedious ſickneſs at *Florence*, the *French* gained the advantage; and the *Imperialiſts* having placed ſtrong Gariſons in the Fortreſſes which they had taken, returned again with their Troops to *Naples*. And this was the iſſue of the firſt years War.

But then the ſecond was more fatal to *Siena*, proving the final overthrow of the Liberty and Government of that Republick. For *Henry* King of *France*, on whoſe protection *Siena* depended, being incenſed againſt *Coſmo de Medicis* Duke of *Florence*, for favouring the Emperor's Party againſt the people of *Siena*, did about the beginning of the year 1554. *An.* 1554. ſend *Peter Strozzi*, one baniſhed from *Florence*, and the mortal Enemy of Duke *Coſmo*, with a formidable Army into *Tuſcany*; but the Arms of the Duke prevailed, and obtained ſuch ſucceſs againſt thoſe of *Strozzi*; that the Marqueſs *Marignano*, who was the Duke's General, adventured to attempt *Siena*, in which he was ſo ſucceſsful that he ſurprized the Baſtion next adjoyning to the Poſt *Camollia*, putting all the Country round, which was the moſt fruitful and flouriſhing Soil of *Italy*, to fire and ſword: to the relief whereof, *Strozzi* coming with all his force, was overthrown by *Marignano*; which unhappineſs reduced *Siena* to its ultimate extremity; and being at laſt conſtrained to ſurrender by reaſon of Famine, many were made Priſoners, the City ſacked and plundered, and the Spoils and Booty brought to *Florence*, many of the people, eſpecially thoſe of the Nobility diſdaining to become Subjects to the Duke of *Florence*, retired to *Montalcino*, a place ſtrong, and impregnable by nature, ſetting themſelves in the form of a Republick under the protection of *France*.

The people of *Siena* lamenting their unhappy fate, accuſed Pope *Julius* in a great meaſure to be the Author of it; for that he had by his Money brought up great ſtores of Proviſion, Victuals, and Amunition in *Marca*, *Umbria*, and *Tuſcany*, and therewith relieved and ſupported the Army of *Florence*: and that not conſidering the publick intereſt of *Italy*, nor the common juſtice of mankind, he, for gaining a poor and inconſiderable Title of Marquis of Mount *Sabino*, with a little Land to his Brother *Baldwin*, and on the promiſe of obtaining the Daughter of Duke *Coſmo* for Wife to his Brother's Son, had baſely and ungratefully betrayed the City where he was born, and expoſed it to utter ruin and deſolation. But all this obloquy, and defamation, little moved the mind of the Pope, who perceiving that all his ſollicitude, and care for the general Peace and quiet of Chriſtendom availed little, reſolved to enjoy, and give himſelf up to Buildings, and other divertiſements: ſo that placing all his thoughts on a Country-houſe, Gardens, and Vineyards which he had erected, and made without the *Porta del popolo* at *Rome*, he was ſo enamoured of his new Paradiſe, where he continually made Feaſts and Banquets, that he ſeemed wholly to have caſt off all care of the Church, and ſenſe of the miſeries of Chriſtendom; and what was moſt undecent, and miſbecoming a Perſon of above ſeventy years of age, and of his gravity and function, he immerſed himſelf in pleaſures, as if there had been no other Life, to the great ſcandal of the World, and damage and greater danger of *Rome*.

In this year 1554. *Edward* the Sixth King of *England* died, and the Queen *Mary* ſucceeding, immediately ſent her Ambaſſadours to *Rome* to ſignifie to the Pope the converſion of her whole Kingdom from Hereſie to the Catholick Church, and to acknowledg, and Vow all Obedience to the Papal See, deſiring to have the Excommunication taken off, and a general Pardon and Abſolution given to her Catholick Subjects: on which grateful Meſſage the Ambaſſadours coming, were received with great kindneſs, and ſolemn Proceſſions of Thanſgiving celebrated, at which the Pope aſſiſted in Perſon. The ſame year *Philip* Son of the Emperor *Charles* the Fifth was married to Queen *Mary*, the Kingdoms of *Sicily* and *Naples* being ſettled upon him, together with *Milan*, *Flanders*, and ſome other of the United Provinces: with which news *Philip* diſpatched his Ambaſſadour the Marquis *de Peſcara* to the Pope, to acquaint him therewith, and according to the cuſtom of former Kings to do homage for the Kingdom of *Naples*, which he held in Fee from the Pope.

And now Pope *Julius* the Third, being by reaſon of his great age, and
the torment of the Gout, which miſerably afflicted him, become very in-
firm, was perſuaded by the Phyſicians to change his Diet, and his uſual
regimen of living; the which ill agreeing with his habit of Body, brought
him to a Fever, with which taking his Bed in the month of *February*,
1555. 1555. he lingred therewith until the 23*d*. of *March*, and then died at
his Palace, being aged ſeventy ſeven years, ſix months, and fourteen
days: he was afterwards carried without any great Pomp or State to
the

the Church of *S. Peter*, where his Corps having been publickly expoſed for three days to the view of the People, he was afterwards buried in an ordinary Sepulchre of Bricks near the Altar of *S. Andrew*. After which the See was vacant ſeventeen days.

This *Julius* was tall of Stature, of a plain Country Viſage, his Noſe great; his Eyes ſhewed him to be Cholerick and haſty, but ſoon pleaſed; his Diet was groſs and plain, being much pleaſed with a ſort of large Onions, which were ſent him from *Gaeta*, the alteration of which Diet haſtned his Death: When he was firſt Pope, he ſo ſtrangely favoured a young Boy, whom he called *Innocentius*, that without any apparent motive for it, he beſtowed upon him a Cardinals Hat; which when the reaſon was asked; He replied, What reaſon had you to chooſe me Pope? Fortune favours whom ſhe pleaſes. He was very facetious in his Diſcourſe, but more familiar in his Converſation than was decent; for without reſpect to the Majeſty of his Office, and gravity of his Function; He would often ſhoot ſuch Bolts, and uſe ſuch Expreſſions as were unſeemly, and which thoſe that heard, pitied, and bluſhed for him.

MARCELLUS II.

JULIUS the Third dying on the 23*d.* of *March*, and his Funeral Obſequies being performed after the accuſtomed manner; the Cardinals to the number of thirty ſeven entred the *Conclave*, and without much faction or diſpute, choſe *Marcellus Cervinus* Cardinal of St. *Croſs* at *Jeruſalem* to be Pope, of which publication was made with the uſual Ceremonies on the 9*th.* of *April*, 1555. the See having been vacant for the ſpace only of eighteen days. His Father was *Robert*, or as ſome call him *Richard*, Treaſurer of the Marquiſat of *Ancona*, and the place of his birth was *Montſano*: his Father pretended to great skill, or knowledg in Aſtrology, by which art calculating the Nativity of his Son at the time of his birth, it appeared that the Stars under which he was born, would be very propitious to him in his promotion to Eccleſiaſtical preferments; for which reaſon *Marcellus* being firſt ſent to have his Education in the Univerſity of *Siena*; he came from thence to *Rome*, where he dwelt with *Felix* the Datary of *Clement* the 7*th.* afterwards he obtained the Office of Secretary to *Paul* the Third, and by him created Cardinal of St. *Croſs* of *Jeruſalem*; and laſtly, as we have ſaid, elected Pope on the 9*th.* of *April*.

The day following he was conſecrated Biſhop by the Cardinal of *Naples*; and the very ſame day, without much Pomp or Solemnity was Crowned with the Pontifical Miter by the Cardinal of *Piſa*, who was Arch-Deacon. And as he refuſed to change his Name, calling himſelf no other than *Marcellus* the Second, in imitation of *Adrian* the Sixth, ſo he ſurvived a much leſs time than he, having poſſeſſed the Papal Chair not above twenty one days after his Election; ſo that there remains little more obſervable of him, than that after his Choice, he would give no invitation or encouragement to his Kindred or Relations, of coming to *Rome*, in hopes of benefit and preferment by his greatneſs: howſoever, his intentions were good and his Deſigns great, having drawn a Scheme and Method whereby to reſtore Peace and Unity in the Church, and the Papal Power to its ancient luſtre.

This Deſign of his, he communicated to the Cardinal of *Mantoua*, maintaining that there was no other way to reconcile differences in Religion, but only by a General Council; and that the reaſon, why hitherto that means had been ineffectual, was no other, than becauſe, they began at the wrong end, and proceeded not with the due method: for that firſt they ſhould begin with an entire reformation of Manners, which would ſuperſede, and quiet all ſuperficial Debates and Diſputations about words, and reduce Controverſies to ſuch a ſubſtantial iſſue as would be eaſily determinable by a Council. That for want hereof, his five immediate Predeceſſors had much erred, for that they abhorred the name of *Reformation*, not out of a diſlike to that deſirable State, but from a belief, that it would be a means to abate and diminiſh the Papal Authority, whereas on the contrary, he was really perſuaded, that a Reformation was the only means to render it more Glorious and powerful, as moſt plainly appeared, and was proved by the Hiſtories of paſt-times, in which thoſe *Popes* only were famous and renowned, who had ſupported their Papal Chair by an exactneſs in Manners and purity of Life: that Reformation reſpected the extrinſecal and circumſtantial appendages of Religion, and ſerved only to retrench the luxury and ſuperfluous pomp of the Clergy, which made the Prelates envied and contemptible; when as a modeſt train, and decent comportment adjoyned to a ſeverity, and mortified way of living, rendered the Prelats awful and revered; and ſuch Men encompaſſing the Papal Chair made it appear more holy and Apoſtolical; and above all, ſo fortified it with the Divine Protection, that nothing would be able to remove or ſhake the firmneſs of that Throne which was eſtabliſhed on ſo ſure a foundation.

Theſe Deſigns being publiſhed, and diſcourſed of in the Court of *Rome*, were received with different Sentiments: ſuch as were of the *Pope's* party applauded the intention, as pious, glorious, and ſuch as ſavoured of Peace, Charity, and Zeal to Religion: but thoſe who were of a contrary Faction made another interpretation, conſtruing all the *actions* of this *Pope* to be regulated by Aſtrological Schemes, to which he gave much credence, in regard that both his Father, and himſelf had been much advanced by that Art. Moreover, amongſt other things projected by this *Pope*; he intended to have erected a new Order of Chivalry, conſiſting of a hundred Knights, of which the *Pope* was to be the chief Commander; all which were to enter into an Oath of Allegiance and Fidelity to the *Pope*, never to deſert his Cauſe or perſon, but always to advance his Power and Intereſt: and for maintenance of this degree, five hundred Crowns of yearly Penſion was to be iſſued out of the Apoſtolical Chamber to every perſon of them: the which allowance was never to be augmented or enlarged, nor could other Revenues be bequeathed or purchaſed for an additional maintenance; only they were capable by their Virtues and merits of being created Cardinals without any impeachment of their Vow, or rules of their Order. Out of theſe he intended to chuſe his Nuntio's, and Miniſters for all Treaties and Negotiations, his Governours of Towns, and Legats, and in ſhort, to extract all his Officers out of this Society: And ſo far was this Project reſolved, that ſeveral wiſe Men and perſons of merit living at *Rome*, were already nominated, who were to be liſted and admitted into this Order.

Thus did the Pope with ſubtle reaſonings and refined Diſcourſes draw his Methods and Schemes of Politicks, which would have proved more rude and prickly in the handling. But whilſt the Court of *Rome* was filled with talk and novelty, unexpectedly, and on a ſudden, the threed of all theſe deſigns were cut off by the death of the Pope, who having, as is ſaid, wearied, and tired himſelf with the many ſuperfluous and painful Ceremonies, which he ſuſtained in the Holy Week before *Eaſter*, and at his Inauguration, fell into a fit of an Apoplexy, and died the laſt day of that month of *April* in which he was created, having been Pope no longer than twenty one days; which was a far ſhorter time than what the predictions he had made by his Art in Aſtrology had flattered his belief.

PAUL IV.

THE Funeral Rites and Ceremonies of *Marcellus* being ended; the Cardinals to the number of ſixty four returned again to the Conclave, where as preliminaries to the future Election, the Cardinals of *Augsbourg*, ſeconded by Cardinal *Moron* inſtantly preſſed, that to the other Articles which were accuſtomary, and which Popes ſwear to maintain after their Election, theſe two ſhould be farther added; namely, That within the term of two years next following, the *Pope* ſhould oblige himſelf by Oath to convene a Council to finiſh the matters of Reformation already begun, and to determine the Diſputes and Controverſies in Religion, and endeavour by all means to induce *Germany* to accept the Doctrines of the Council of *Trent*; Secondly, That in regard the College of Cardinals, by the licentious munificence of former Popes was become very numerous, That the ſucceeding *Pope*, ſhould not have power to create above four in the ſpace of two years next following. The which being premiſed after ſome ſharp, though not long Conteſts, *John Caraffa* commonly called Cardinal *Chieti*, was by general conſent elected *Pope*, being then ſixty nine years of age: though there was a ſtrong Party made againſt him, yet by the powerful intereſts of the Cardinals *Farneſe* and *Ferrara*, prevailed, who having formed a Party of forty four, the diſſenting number was obliged to condeſcend to a concurrence with the plurality of Votes.

This *Pope* who took on himſelf the name of *Paul* the 4*th.* was the Son of *Anthony Caraffa* Count of *Montorio*; he was firſt created Biſhop of *Chieti* by *Julius* II. He afterwards received a Commiſſion from *Leo* X. to gather the Peter-pence in *England*, where he reſided for the ſpace of three years. He was afterwards made of the Privy Council to *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, and therein confirmed by his Heir and Succeſſour *Charles* V. By *Hadrian* VI. he was recalled to *Rome* to joyn with other Fathers, whoſe incumbence it was to conſider

der in what manner the lives and practices of the Clergy might be reformed and amended; under *Clement* the *7th.* he not only refuſed the Arch-biſhoprick of *Brunduſium*, but quitted alſo his Biſhoprick of *Chieti*; and retiring to Mount *Pincio*, from the noiſe and buſtle of the World, and almoſt from human Society, he there inſtituted a new Order of *Regulars*: afterwards going to *Venice*, he affected a Society and Communication with learned and religious Men, renowned for Wiſdom and Sanctity of life; with whom he firſt inſtituted the Order of *Theatini*: from the name of his Biſhoprick, called both *Chieti* and *Theatina.* At length *Paul* III. in the year 1536. calling him to *Rome*, made him reaſſume his Biſhoprick, creating him Cardinal of *Santa Maria trans Tiberim*, and Arch-biſhop of *Naples*: and then under *Julius* III. He was made Biſhop of *Tuſculum*, *Oſtia*, and *Velitres*: and laſtly, being elected Pope in remembrance of his late Friend and chief Benefactor, who had called him to all his promotions, he cauſed himſelf to be named *Paul* IV.

In all the courſe of his former Life, being of a moroſe and Saturnine temper, he ſhewed great ſeverity and exactneſs of Life; ſo that his Election ſtrook a great fear and terrour to all ſuch who were ill inclined to a Reformation, imagining that his humour would tranſport him to ſuch ſevere proceedings, as would be terrible and inconſiſtent with thoſe methods, which gently lead men to converſion and reformation of manners: a teſtimony of which he had given, by being the firſt Author and Contriver of the Inquiſition, having adviſed and perſuaded *Paul* III. to appoint, and authorize a certain number of Cardinals to be Inquiſitors of ſuch who had embraced the new Doctrins of *Luther*, and to proceed to Capital Puniſhments in ſuch manner as is provided in the Canon *de hæretico comburendo*, the which ſeverity of Councils being by ſome interpreted for zeal towards God, and by moſt to be a ferocity in his Nature, his Election was entertained with fear and dread, by all thoſe who were dependants on the Court of *Rome*. However he ſo palliated and diſguiſed his humour at the beginning, that he comported himſelf with an humble and affable behaviour towards all, but eſpecially towards Strangers, whom he treated and careſſed in that friendly manner, that his Servants and Dependants were glad to be ſo happily miſtaken: but this good Nature being forced and conſtrained, did ſoon vaniſh, and then his fierce and ſupercilious temper returning to its natural courſe, all his actions were influenced with a ſpirit of Pride and haughty ſeverity. An inſtance of which, he gave to the Steward of his Houſe, when he demanded of him, in what manner he was pleaſed to be ſerved; his Anſwer was ſhort, ſaying (as became a Prince.) His Coronation he ordered with more Pomp and Ceremony than was ever before practiſed; and in all things he affected Magnificence and State, and was no leſs indulgent to his Nephews, than the moſt tender and fondeſt of the Popes.

Soon after his Coronation, he ordered the firſt Conſiſtory to be publick, that he might with the greater State and Pomp give Audience to the Ambaſſadors of *England*, who in the time of Pope *Julius* had been diſpatched thence from Queen *Mary*, and *Philip* her Husband. The Ambaſſadors being introduced to his preſence, and proſtrating themſelves at his feet, did one after the other (for ſo the Pope would have it) confeſs and acknowledg the faults,and errors of the Kingdom of *England*, in having ſtrayed and deviated from the flock of Chriſt, and the Sheepfold of the Church ; but now repenting, and returning again, did humbly beg Abſolution. and to be received into the boſom of the Church, though by the obſtinacy and perſeverance in their Errors,they had rendered themſelves unworthy of ſuch mercy and indulgence. The *Pope* having for ſome time beheld theſe Ambaſſadours at his feet, and contemplated their humble poſture with ſome ſatisfaction of ſpirit, raiſed them at length from the floor, and embraced them with the tenderneſs of a Father, teſtifying great ſatisfaction in the happy converſion of this Kingdom : and becauſe the Queen and King were the happy Inſtruments of this bleſſed and religious work ; in reward of ſo much Piety; he confirmed their right and title to *Ireland*; and by virtue of that Power, which he had received from God to diſpoſe of all Earthly Crowns, he conferred on them that Kingdom, dignifying them amongſt their other Titles with that of King and Queen of *Ireland*. Which piece of vanity, though ridiculous to others, was extreamly pleaſing to the *Pope*, who fancied himſelf in that Throne of Fools Paradiſe, to which the Devil had in his pride exalted himſelf, when he tempted our Saviour with all the Kingdoms of the Earth. But then afterwards in private Conference with the Ambaſſadours, he blamed *England* for having but in a part ſhewed their penitence, for that whilſt they retained any thing of the goods of the Church, and did not make reſtitution to the utmoſt farthing, a Curſe would remain on the Kingdom, and the people remain in a perpetual ſnare and danger of Damnation. He farther told them, That the ſooner, and the more readily they paid the Peter-pence (for collection of which he had ſent an Officer into *England*) the more eaſily would the Gates of Heaven be opened to them ; for how could they expect that St. *Peter* ſhould turn his Keys whilſt they denied him thoſe Fees which were the dues of his Office. In fine, the Ambaſſadours having behaved themſelves with humility, (which was the only means to procure the favour of this *Pope*) they departed from *Rome*, laiden with Praiſes, Honours, and Graces from his Holineſs : and then attending to a full Reformation in *England* ; he purged the Univerſities of *Oxford* and *Cambridg*, of thoſe Tenents and Lectures which had been there taught by *Peter Martir*, and *Bucer*, and deprived *Cranmer* of his Arch-biſhoprick of *Canterbury*.

Having thus obtained his pleaſure and Deſigns over *England*, he next endeavoured to gain an Aſcendant over the Emperor and King of *France*; both of which courted him to that Degree, that he expected to have them both at his Service and Devotion : but in regard it was impoſſible to entertain them both in the ſame equality of reſpect and dearneſs; both parties ſtrained to outvy each other in Propoſals of advantage, which might give them admiſſion to his favour : in purſuance of which, the Cardinal of *Lorain*, (who was well acquainted with the humour of the *Pope*) publickly declared in a full Conſiſtory, that beſides the many ſteps which the King of *France* had made in Obedience to the Papal Chair, he did ackowledg that the *Gallican* Church had need of Reformation; towards which, he was ready to afford all the aid and aſſiſtance to the *Pope* that he was able, and to act therein by ſuch ways and methods as his Holineſs ſhould direct, whether it were by ſending his Prelats to the Council, or by any other means, that ſhould be eſteemed more proper and expedient. The which ſo took with the *Pope*, that *France* for that time gained a preeminence in his favour.

And yet notwithſtanding this pride and rudeneſs in his nature, he did ſeveral things at the beginning to gratify and pleaſe the people of *Rome*, which he performed by abating the Taxes and Impoſts laid on Proviſions, and in other things acted with ſuch obliging circumſtances, that the people in acknowledgment for ſuch abundant favours, erected a Statue of Marble for him in the Capitol. He regulated the Manners of the *Jews*, and retrenched that liberty and freedom they uſed; and for the better diſtinction of them, ordered them to wear yellow Hats. He publiſhed ſeveral ſevere Decrees againſt ſuch as denied the Divinity of Jeſus Chriſt, and that he died for the redemption of Mankind. In ſhort, beſides many good Laws and Acts which he ordained againſt corrupt and diſſolute Manners, which were grievous to the Clergy, who were unaccuſtomed to a ſeverity. He ſelected a hundred Citizens of the Gentry of *Rome*, which he created Knights of the *Faith*, to be a ſtanding Life-Guard to the *Popes*. He repealed ſeveral Decrees of *Julius* III. and impriſoned many of thoſe who had been his Creatures and familiar Friends.

Amongſt the Counſellors, and Familiar Confidents which he entertained, there was none who had at firſt a greater ſhare in his favour, than *Oſio*, whom he declared Datary, and chief Notary or Regiſter of Petitions, and created Biſhop of *Riete*: but he being of a rude and moroſe temper, did always claſh againſt the humour of the *Pope*, which was hard, and inflexible like his; which therefore ill according together, *Oſio* was by the inſtigation alſo of the Pope's Relations, who were always buſie at his ear, deprived of his favour, and ſent Priſoner to the Caſtle, where he remained for the ſpace of four years.

In the next place, by a new Decree, he retrieved all thoſe goods and Eccleſiaſtical Revenues which had been alienated from the Church ſince the time of *Julius* II. to his days. He reformed alſo the abuſes which were crept into the Office of the Penitentiaries, and regulated the Habit and Tables of the Clergy, and refuſed to admit any into Benefices, but ſuch as had been approved for holineſs of Life, and ſeverity of Manners. Towards the three Conſervators of *Rome*, he behaved himſelf with great reſpect, enlarging their Power and Authority, adjoyning thereunto the juriſdiction of *Tivoli*, which belonged to the Cardinal of *Ferrara*; and to the people he enlarged their Priviledges, and confirmed all their former Immunities by a new Charter.

But all this Indulgence and kindneſs towards the Citizens, was but in order to ſome Deſign of a higher nature, which ſoon after diſcovered it ſelf: for whilſt he was thus buſied in matters of Government, and things laudable enough in themſelves, he ſuffered ſome reports of a Plot againſt his Life to take impreſſion in his mind; which being ſuggeſted by many probable circumſtances, he immediately ſeized on the Perſons of as many as were ſuſpected to be guilty thereof, and committed them to Priſon; and then joyning with the *French* and *Switzers*, he commenced a War againſt *Philip* King of *Spain*, by which thoſe antient Fewds and Animoſities between thoſe Kings, which had for ſome time been extinguiſhed, or as it were raked up in the Embers, began again to revive, and be enflamed. The original, and cauſe whereof was this.

Ever ſince the time that *Rome* had been ſacked by the *Spaniards*, who had plundered, and ſequeſtred the Eſtate, and Rents of the Family of *Caraffa*; this *Pope Paul* the 4th. conceived an implacable anger, and an inveterate hatred againſt that whole Nation: the which alſo was encreaſed by that ill treatment, and injuſtice, which the Vice-King of *Naples* once uſed towards his own Perſon; for he being created by *Paul* III. Arch-Biſhop of *Naples*, was debarred from the poſſeſſion, and benefits thereof by the Vice-King, on no other pretence, than that he was ſuſpected to favour the *French* Party; the which ſo enraged his impetuous ſpirit, that with all the arguments, which ſubtilty, and malice could draw from the Topicks of Religion, and publick good to the Church, he endeavoured to perſuade *Paul* III. to a War againſt *Naples*, promiſing him to aſſiſt him with the whole Eſtate of his Family, and with all the intereſt he had (which he pretended to be very great) in that Kingdom: but *Paul* III. being too prudent to give ear to his perſuaſions and diſcourſes, commended his Piety, and zeal towards the Church, but refuſed to engage himſelf in that hazardous War. So that the anger and fury of this *Paul* IV. being ſuppreſſed until he became Pope, did then burſt forth, and vent it ſelf: So that then with thoughts full of diſdain againſt the *Spaniards*, and with imagination that the *Napolitans* would gladly ſhake off their yoke, and be eaſed of the *Spaniſh* Servitude, and that *France* would enter into the Alliance with him, he poſitively reſolved on a War, ſwallowing already into his thoughts the enjoyment and addition of that Rich Kingdom to the Dominions of the Church. This Deſign was promoted by a ſtricter Union with *France*, occaſioned in this manner: *Henry* King of *France* had taken from *Charles Sforza* Prior of *Lombardy* two Gallies, the which coming afterwards into the Port of *Civita Vecchia*, *Alexander* the Brother of *Charles*, and Chief Clark of the *Camera*, or Chamberlain, made ſeizure of them, and without any reſpect to that Protection under which they were within the *Pope*'s Harbour, he carried them away by force to *Gaeta*: of which the *French* Miniſters at *Rome*, complaining to the *Pope*, he conceived not onely anger and indignation againſt *Alexander*, but ſuſpecting that ſuch an action could not be contrived without the privity of his Brother the Cardinal, he loudly exclaimed againſt him, and clapt his Secretary *Lotini* into Priſon, who was lately returned with ſome ſecret Negotiations from the Emperor *Charles* V. the which ſerving to encreaſe and heighten the differences between them, many Cabals, and Conſults were formed amongſt the Cardinals of the *Imperial* Faction: at which the *Pope* being alarm'd he reinforced his Guards, and levied Soldiers, and to break the ſeditious Meetings clapt the Cardinal, and *Camilla Colonna*, and the Abbot of *Briſegna*, who was a *Spaniard*, into Priſon: *Mark Anthony Colonna*, who upon theſe ſtories, was fled from *Rome*, was cited to appear there, and give anſwer to the Accuſations charged againſt him: but afterwards the Gallies being again reſtored to the *French* King, Cardinal *Sforza*, and *Camillo Colonna*, upon Bail given were freed from Impriſonment; but *Alexander Sforza* who was Chamberlain not appearing upon the Summons, was deprived of his Office; and becauſe *Mark Anthony Colonna* did not appear at the time prefixed by the Summons, all his Eſtate within the Territories of the Church was ſequeſtred, and ſeized to the uſe of the *Pope*: with which *J*[illegible] of

Aragon the Mother of *Colonna* being greatly affrighted, eſcaped ſecretly from *Rome* about the beginning of the year 1556. contrary to the Command, and Injunction of the *Pope*; with which he was ſo incenſed, that he then reſolved to act, and put all thoſe miſchiefs into practice againſt the Houſe of *Colonna*, which he had before only meditated, and contrived in his thoughts; and in purſuance thereof, he in the firſt place excommunicated *Mark Anthony*, and his Father *Aſcanio Colonna*, and having confiſcated all their Eſtate within the Dominions of the Church, he beſtowed it on his Nephew *John* Count of *Montorio*, whom he created Duke of *Paliano*; and not long after he declared *Anthony Carraſa* another Nephew to be Marquis of *Montebello*, having lately diſpoſſeſſed Count *Bagno* of that Marquiſate for having converted thoſe Moneys which the King of *France* ſent to the *Pope* for carrying on the War in *Italy* to his own uſe. All which ſerved to incenſe the ſpirits of a great and powerful Faction, and raiſe thoſe Wars, which ended in the miſerable deſolation of *Italy*. But the *Pope*, who was of Opinion, and often ſaid, that a happy Peace was onely to be concluded by a calamitous War, did in Order thereunto fortifie *Paliano* with all Proviſions requiſite thereunto; for that being a place ſituate on the frontiers of *Naples*, was of great importance in that conjuncture: And leſt the Truce which was made for five years between the Emperor and *France* ſhould be an obſtruction to this War, he diſpatched *Charles Caraſſa* his Legat to *Henry* II. pretending, that his Meſſage was in order to a farther accommodation, and to convert the Truce into an everlaſting Peace: but the Negotiations of *Caraſſa* being of another nature, he poſſeſſed *Henry* with great hopes and expectation of ſucceſs by a War with *Naples*; wherefore though at firſt he ſent but two thouſand Men for aſſiſtance of the Pope, (ſeeming to reſerve ſome little reſpect to the Truce ſo lately concluded) yet afterwards the *Pope*'s forces not being able to withſtand the Power of the *Imperialiſts*; a greater Army of twelve thouſand Foot, and two thouſand Horſe were ſent to *Naples* under the conduct of *Francis* Duke of *Guiſe*. With theſe Auxiliary aids the ſpirit of the *Pope* being highly ſwelled, and become implacable, he impriſoned *Juliano Seſarini Camillo Colonna*, with his Brother the Arch-Biſhop of *Taranto*, and divers others, whom he ſuſpected to be in any manner affected, and inclinable to the *Imperial* Faction. *Ferdinand* of *Toledo* Duke of *Alva* then Vice-King of *Naples*, being alarmed by theſe proceedings reſolved not to attend the aſſaults of the Enemy; but rather, that he might be beforehand with them, made incurſions into the State of the Church, and without much reſiſtance took *Pontecorvo Froſolone*, *Anagna*, *Marino*, *Valmontone*, *Paleſtrina*, *Tivoli*, *Oſtia*, *Cave*, *Genazzano*, *Nettuno*, *Albano*, *Vicovaro*, *Monte Fortino*; and in ſhort, made himſelf Maſter of all the *Campania* of *Rome*: The *Pope* on the other ſide with the aid and aſſiſtance of the *French*, and *Switzers*, recovered ſeveral of thoſe places again; but the War being continued for the ſpace of a whole year with great fury, and reſolution on both ſides, that Country became moſt miſerably haraſſed, and laid deſolate by fire, and ſword. By the vaſt expences of this War the *Pope*'s Treaſury being much exhauſted, many exorbitant ways were contrived to repleniſh it again; as namely, the Tithes upon all Benefices were doubled, the *Gabelles*, and Cuſtoms were raiſed to an intolerable degree, half a years Revenue was exacted from all Offices: and the Debts which particular Perſons owed to their Creditors, were required to be paid into the Treaſury: upon which the Debtors being diſcharged, Debentures were given from the Pope to the Creditors, and the ſame charged as a Debt upon the Church. He farther ſeized on all the Horſes in *Rome* to ſerve in the War, and compelled all the Friers of what order ſoever to labour on the Works, and carry Earth to the Fortifications: many of the Churches he converted into Granaries and Store-houſes, wherein to lay Proviſions; beſides many other Exactions, and agrievances, which he impoſed on the People, who were by this time poſſeſſed with a deteſtable hatred againſt his Perſon, and his Actions. Howſoever, neither the Cries, nor Exclamations of his Subjects, nor the miſeries of his Country were able to incline the fierce and reſolute Spirit of the Pope to any terms of Peace, whilſt he found himſelf ſeconded by the *French*, and *Switzers*: Howſoever in the Month of *Auguſt* following, the *French* having received a Defeat at the Battel of St. *Quintin*, in which a great part of the Nobility of *France* were taken Priſoners; and thereby alſo the expectation of the Pope being in ſome meaſure defeated; his haughty Spirit began to abate and hearken to ſome terms, and propoſals of Accommodation: for then the ſad Sepectacle of *Italy*, laid waſte with fire and ſword appeared before him, and the dreadful apprehenſion of Treaſon againſt his Perſon, which was plotted to betray *Rome* into the hands of *Mark Anthony Colonna*, and *Aſcanio della Corona*, who at the beginning of the War revolted to the *Spaniſh* Party, did much affright him: ſo that as I ſay, the Pope's mind being become more flexible, a Peace was concluded on the thirteenth of *September* 1557. by the mediation of the *Venetians*, the Duke of *Florence*, and Cardinal *Sforza*, and ſigned by the Cardinal *Caraffa* in behalf of the Pope, and by the Duke of *Alva* in the name of *Philip* King of *Spain*. Which being concluded the Duke of *Alva* coming to *Rome*, with Chriſtian humility kiſſed the feet of the Pope, and received abſolution; and being treated with high honour obtained the freedom of all thoſe who had been impriſoned on account of the late War. 1557.

Matters being by theſe means reduced to ſome tolerable quiet, the Pope diſpatched his Legats both to *Spain*, and *France* to labour a cementing of that Peace, which he himſelf of late had been an inſtrument to break; recommending more particulary in their Inſtructions the confirmation of the Dukedom of *Paliano* on his Nephew. So that now being wearied with War, the fatigues, and expence, and unquietudes of which he had never before been acquainted with, the *Pope* betook himſelf to his more agreeable trade of regulating the Manners of Men, and the corruptions and abuſes crept into the Church: but in regard the particulars hereof were various, and burthenſom, he committed the greateſt part of that trouble to the Conduct of Cardinal *Caraffa*: Attending himſelf with ſedulity and attention to the Court of Inquiſition, as the ſole Tribunal then capable to ſuppreſs Hereſies, and the preſent diſtempers of the Age; and therefore to the cogniſance of that Court he reduced ſeveral Crimes triable at other Bars of Judicature; ſo that the Priſons of the Inquiſition were filled with Maleſactors: and in this way of Judicial proceedings, he was the more paſſionate, becauſe he had been the firſt that perſuaded *Paul* III. to erect that Court, and had contrived the Methods, and Rules for the proceedings thereof: and therefore coming now himſelf to the Popedom, he put all thoſe Orders into practice, which he had formerly meditated, conſtituting Cardinal *Aleſſandrino* Inquiſitor General, together with ſixteen Cardinals, who were made Judges of the Court; whoſe firſt work was to publiſh an Index *Expurgatorius* of all Books in the leaſt manner ſuſpected, or attainted of Hereſie, forbidding all Perſons under pain of Excommunication to read them, or have them in their poſſeſſion. He recalled Cardinal *Poole* from his Office of Legat in *England*, on account (as ſome believe) of an old Pique that had been between them, and having accuſed Cardinal *Morone* of Hereſie, by reaſon as ſome believe of his friendſhip to *Poole*, he impriſoned him in the Caſtle together with the Biſhop of *Cava*, and had (as was certainly believed) deprived them of all their Revenues and Dignities, had not his malice againſt them been interrupted by his Death, acting in every thing with a bitterneſs agreeable to the virulency of his nature.

About this time the Emperor *Charles* V. being wearied with the turmoils, and troubles of this World renounced his Imperial Crown to his Brother *Ferdinand* of *Auſtria*, who was already elected King of the *Romans*, and his Kingdom of *Spain* and other Dominions to his Son *Philip* II. But this Abdication the Pope would not underſtand, not admitting on the ſcore of old grudges which he owed to *Charles*, that according to antient Canons an Emperor could make ſuch a renunciation without conſulting firſt, and taking the advice, and conſent of the Pope; and for that reaſon, he would never acknowledge *Ferdinand* for Emperour, nor under that Notion, and Character receive Ambaſſadours from him.

In this manner with a froward ſeverity acting all his Affairs, he would admit of no excuſes that any Man made for a failure in his Duty; and particularly having commanded all Monks, Friers, Abbots, and Priors to return to their Monaſteries, he would not admit an Excuſe from any Non-Reſidentiary, unleſs he had obtained a Licenſe on occaſion of ſome publick Service for the Church: and for diſcovery of ſuch Treſpaſſers he employed Officers, or Viſitors as ſevere as himſelf, who upon ſtrict enquiry having found any Non-Reſidentiaries, they immediately proceeded againſt them as Diſobedient, and Delinquents, committing ſome of them to Chains, and others to the Gallies.

This Severity howſoever was much applauded, when after an unknown and unpractiſed manner of Juſtice, he ſpared not the Crimes of his Nephews, into whoſe hands he had committed the moſt important Government of the Eccleſiaſtical State: for they having miſbehaved themſelves; the Pope in a publick Conſiſtory diſcharged Cardinal *Caraffa* of his Government, and *Legantine* Power in *Bologna*: the Duke of *Palvano* he diſmiſſed from being General of the Eccleſiaſtical Army, and Admiral of the Gallies belonging to the Church, and the Marquis of *Montebello* from being Captain of his Guards: which Sentence againſt them the Pope thundring with impetuous Rage, certain Cardinals would have offered ſomething to mitigate his fury, and extenuate the faults of his Nephews; but thoſe Lenitives adding more flame to his Fury, he inſtantly charged the Cardinal *Caraffa* without farther delay to depart from *Rome*, and remain confined to the City *Indivina*, and the other two unto their reſpective Caſtles: in places of theſe, he conſtituted other grave Prelats, whom he eſteemed able, and worthy to bear that ſhare of Government, which by reaſon of the infirmity of his old age he was uncapable to ſupport.

And having thus diſpoſed the Affairs of his Temporal Government, he returned his thoughts to perfect that Reformation, which he had then projected when he firſt came to the Papal Chair, believing that the accompliſhment thereof would be the greateſt Ornament of the Apoſtolical See, and give it a reputation over all the world. In purſuance whereof, he erected a Congregation compoſed of twenty four Cardinals and forty five Prelats, and other Perſons of the moſt wiſe, and learned of all the Court, to the number of one hundred and fifty. Theſe he divided into three Claſſes or Chambers; to each of which he allotted eight Cardinals, and fifteen Biſhops, and as many others, as made up the number of fifty; the chief incumbence and buſineſs of whom was to examine, and enquire into the ſeveral degrees, and natures of Simony; the which being ſtated, and concluded by this Congregation, Coppies thereof were taken, and publiſhed, and ſent to all Univerſities, and Schools of learned Men, requiring them to take notice of the particular Caſes ſtated, and concluded by the Holy See, which was the Chief Doctor, and Cathedratical Caſuiſt in all Points of Religion, and Conſcience. And though he himſelf, as he affirmed, had no need of ſuch Regulations being well acquainted with the mind of Chriſt, and verſed in the Duty of that Office to which he was called; yet that he might in all his endeavours for Reformation, foreſtall the Objection which might be made him of, Phyſitian, cure thy ſelf; he reſolved to begin at home, and reform the Crimes of Simony, which were objected as the crying ſins of the Court of *Rome*, and that when he had gone ſo far, he would then remonſtrate unto other Princes the Simony of their own Courts, which was more riſe, and more intolerable in them than was ever allowed, or practiſed at *Rome*.

But when the particular Caſes of Simony came diſtinctly to be handled; inſtancing in what manner Money might be taken, and in what not; there aroſe ſuch diverſities of Opinions, that at length the concluſions came to be laid before the Pope, as the ultimate Moderator of all Differences: the which he having with ſome perplexity conſidered, he finally reſolved, That it was not lawful to receive any Price, Money, Alms, or any reward whatſoever for conferring any ſpiritual Graces, or Benefices Eccleſiaſtical; and that as to the Diſpenſations in caſes of Matrimony, though it had been the cuſtom to receive Money for them, he reſolved, that the ſame ſhould never be again brought into practice by himſelf. Howſoever, ſo many ſcruples and Objections aroſe in many particular matters, that nothing could ever be drawn to general Heads; and ſo being environed by difficulties which procured delays, nothing came to a full reſolution: the which a certain Cardinal having obſerved, propoſed to have theſe Queſtions reſerved for a General Council: at which the Pope being moved with extreme Choler, replied, That he had no need of any Council being the ſupreme Head and above it; but the Cardinal being deſirous to mollifie, and appeaſe his anger with ſome qualifications of his Speech, ſaid, that though it was true that a Council was not neceſſary for giving force, and Authority to the Pope's Determinations; yet it might be convenient to have a Council, for ſettlement

ment of that Uniformity of Worſhip which was neceſſary in all Chriſtian Churches: to which the Pope aſſenting, farther added, That in caſe he ſhould at any time call a Council, that the ſame ſhould be held at *Rome* and not at *Trent*, which was in the midſt, and almoſt the Neſt of the *Lutherans*. Moreover, in caſe he ſhould at any time call a Council, it ſhould be compoſed of none but Catholicks; for that they might with as much reaſon admit a *Turk* to thoſe Debates, and Conſults of Religion, as a *Lutheran* or any other Heretick: and that it was unreaſonable, and prepoſterous to ſend ſixty able and learned Biſhops and forty Doctors to a Town within the Mountains, (as had been done twice already) on ſuppoſition that they were better able to govern the World, than the Vicar of Jeſus Chriſt, joined to the wiſdom of his College of Cardinals, who were ſelected out of the moſt wiſe, religious, and excellent perſonages of the Chriſtian Church.

During his time this *Pope* at four ſeveral Ordinations created nineteen Cardinals; and changed the Feſtival of St. *Peter* which by antient Canons was celebrated on the 18th. of *January* to the end of *June*, ſuppoſing that ſeaſon of the year moſt convenient for that Solemnity.

It is certain that this *Pope* intended well, and deſigned with the ſtricteſt ſeverity the reformation of Manners; but his way of acting therein was ſo fierce, and with thoſe diſobliging circumſtances, having a motion with his Head which ſpoke anger, and ſpight; that he could perform nothing though never ſo holy, and laudable, but what was ill cenſured by evil Tongues, and indeed he was generally hated, and that even by good Men. And though all the good actions which this *Pope* performed, were done with ſo ill a meen, as made them appear bad; yet he had the good Conduct, and fortune to prove a ſucceſsful Inſtrument in making that memorable peace between *Philip* King of *Spain*, and *Henry* King of *France*; for which happineſs and Rejoycing, Tilts and Tornaments being appointed at the *French* Court, King *Henry* himſelf acting a part in it, was unfortunately ſlain, and his Son *Francis* II. being then a Youth, ſucceeded in his Throne.

About which time the Pope being fallen into a Dropſie with which finding himſelf to decay, and his end approach; he ſummoned all the Cardinals to his Chamber; deſiring them to caſt their thoughts upon ſome Perſon, excellently qualified both for holineſs of Life, and Wiſdom, whom they might judg worthy to ſucceed him in the Apoſtolical Chair, but in an eſpecial manner he recommended to them the continuance of the Inquiſition, to which he gave the Epithet of moſt holy, declaring to have by good experience proved, that the ſame had been the ſupport of his Authority, and would be the chief Baſis, and Pillar of the Papal Dignity.

But ſo ſoon as it was noiſed abroad, that the *Pope* drew towards his end: the People aroſe in a tumult, and without Counſel or Rule running through the City curſed the name and actions of *Paul* IV. damning all the Family and Party of *Caraffa*; and having opened all the doors of the common Priſons, they ran to the Houſe of the Inquiſition, of which having opened the Gates, and releaſed the Priſoners, they ſet fire to the Building, which conſumed the Priſon, and the place of Judicature together with all the Proceſſes, Papers, and Records of that Court; and had proceeded to have offered the like to the *Minerva*, where ſeveral of the Judges of the Inquiſition were lodged, but that the Rhetorick, and perſwaſions of ſome who had power with the Rabble diverted their fury.

In fine, this Pope died the 18th. of *Auguſt* 1559. being aged eighty three years, one month, and twenty two days, and having governed four years, two months, and twenty ſeven days, and his Body was carried with little Pomp, and buried in a Sepulchre of Brick, in the Church of *St. Peter*, after which the See was vacant four months, and ſeven days, but no ſooner was the breath out of his Body, than the furious, and mad Rabble ran to the Capitol, where he had a Statue of Marble erected by an excellent Artiſt, and placed amongſt the Conſervators of *Rome*, the Head and right Hand of which they having taken off, drew them for three days together through all the filth, and ordure of the City, and afterwards wearied with the ſport, they threw them into the *Tybur*: and, finally by publick Decree of the People of *Rome*, it was commanded, that in what place ſoever of the City the Arms of *Caraffa* were found either painted, or engraven, they ſhould be defaced, or broken; the which was executed with ſo much readineſs, that in one days time, there were no ſignals, or memorials of the *Caraffian* Family remaining in the whole City. By all which it appears, that this *Paul* IV. had been happier, and more reverenced had he died with the Title onely of Cardinal *Caraffa*, and with the Opinion of being worthy to govern, though he had never reigned. 1559.

Dignus fuiſſet Imperii ſi non regnaſſet.

PIUS IV.

PAUL the Fourth being dead, and his Funerals performed, the Cardinals after the Accuſtomed manner entered the *Conclave* to the number of forty four for Election of a new Pope: the Conteſts on which were ſo many, and ſo obſtinately maintained by the intereſts of powerful Cardinals, whoſe equal Authority, and Grandeur of Families were in ſuch an even ballance, that after a thouſand ſhufflings, and alterations of Suffrages which happened in the ſpace of four months and ſeven days; all the Votes came at length on the 24th. of *December* 1559. being the Eve of the Feaſt of *Chriſtmas* to terminate in the choice of *John Angelo de Medicis* Cardinal of *Santa Priſca*: On the Feaſt of *Epiphany*, or *Twelfth-day* 1560, he was crowned to the common joy and ſatisfaction of the whole City of *Rome*, which conceived great expectations of good Government, from the Teſtimonies of Piety and Virtue which he had given by many inſtances of his paſt Life, in conformity whereunto he took on himſelf the name of *Pius* IV.

This *Pope* was of the Illuſtrious Family of the *Medicis*, born at *Milan*, to which place his Father amidſt the turbulencies, and inteſtine Diſcords of *Florence* was conſtrained to fly for refuge: He was in his youth educated and trained up in all the Methods of good Literature, in which having run through all the Studies and Exerciſes of Philoſophy and Phyſick, and then ſtudying the Civil Law he took his degree of Doctor, applying himſelf afterward to the practice of the Law. In the time of *Clement* VII. he was made one of the Protonotaries which they call *Partecipanti*: under *Paul* III. He exerciſed many conſiderable Charges, and Offices, amongſt which he was made Commiſſary of the Army of the Church, then Arch-Biſhop of *Raguſa*, and laſtly, before his preferment to the Popedom, he was by *Paul* IV. made Prieſt and Cardinal of *Santa Priſca.*

Du Cheſne, and others who write of the Election of this *Pope*, report, that the Debates thereupon having been long, and intricate, the Choice came at length to be decided by the Holy Ghoſt, which in the form of a Dove, entering the Chappel of *Sixtus*, after many flights round, came at length to pierch on the Cell, or Seat of Cardinal *Santa Priſca*, which being obſerved was agreed to be the Holy Omen, by which the Holy Ghoſt pointed out the Perſon to be Elected, concluding all Controverſies by a Miracle: but other more judicious Authors are ſilent in ſuch a foppery, and particularly *Onufrius Panvinius*, who writing the life of this *Pope*, mentions nothing of this nature, though he profeſſes to have known him, and to have frequented his Table when he was Cardinal, which was always incompaſſed with Men of Learning, and parts, who converſing one with another with much ingenuity and Candour, ſeemed to form a College of wiſe, and virtuous Perſons: and he farther declares, that having been preſent at the ſolemnities of his Election, and Inauguration, he had ſeen, and obſerved all the paſſages of it. He moreover pretends to have had a perſonal acquaintance with him, and that he was in his own nature generous and compaſſionate, having by many, and great Charities he had performed, obtained the Title of *Father of the Poor*; and thus having acquired a general eſteem amongſt the Cardinals of a meek, gentle, and pious temper, he found a more eaſie acceſs to the Papal Chair, which had lately been poſſeſſed by gall, and bitterneſs, and from whence nothing but Thunder, and Lightning and terrours had proceeded.

But this *Pope* being deſirous to rectifie this harſh humour of the Chair, gave himſelf the name of *Pius* IV. And for inſtances thereof; his firſt care, and incumbence was to paſs an Act or Decree of General Pardon to all ſuch who during the vacancy of the See had committed any enormous Crimes, and in common to all the people who had with inſolent deſpight broken the Statue, and defaced the Arms of *Paul* IV. Then his next buſineſs was to enquire into, and redreſs the Oppreſſions, and grievances impoſed by his Predeceſſour, referring the examination of thoſe matters to a Committee of wiſe and ſober Men, who rectifying that which was amiſs, all things might at length return to their due and accuſtomed Channel: upon reviſion of which caſes, many Decrees paſſed by *Paul* IV. in point of Simony were repealed, or at leaſt moderated: many Friers who had with too much ſeverity been expelled their Monaſteries, were reſtored: the puniſhments, and cruelties of the Inquiſition were regulated with more moderation; and in fine, many of thoſe who under colour of Hereſie, though in reality out of malice, or other deſign had been committed to that Priſon; were by Order of the new Inquiſitors releaſed and ſet at liberty; amongſt which Cardinal *Morone*, was one.

Now as Mercy is always to be accompanied with Juſtice: it was reſolved, that thoſe intollerable miſeries, and devaſtations which all *Italy* almoſt had ſuſtained in time of *Paul* IV. ſhould be conſidered, and the Family of *Caraffa* who had been the Inſtruments and wicked Incendiaries in all thoſe Calamities ſhould be queſtioned and tried for the ſame: in order whereunto, on the *7th.* of *January*, being the day after the Incoronation, the Cardinals *Charles*, and *Alfonſo* coming from the Conſiſtory were ſeized, as was alſo the Count of *Montorio*, then called Duke of *Paliano*, who was the Brother of *Charles* the Cardinal, together with Count *Aliſe* his Wife's Brother, and *Leonard de Cardini* one of the Kindred; for theſe having been evil Counſellours, and worſe Inſtruments of the fury and cruelty of the late *Pope*, were all committed Priſoners to the Caſtle, as were alſo ſeveral other Servants, and Miniſters of the late miſchief. The Proceſs againſt them for their Crimes was encharged to certain Cardinals in Commiſſion with the Biſhop of *Saguna*, and Governour of *Rome*, the Indictments being preferred againſt theſe Perſons, and the Depoſitions ſeverally made and taken, which work took up the ſpace of nine months, in which time the proofs, and teſtimonies being given, and every thing prepared for a Trial, the whole Proceſs was read before the *Pope* and Cardinals in publick Conſiſtory; where the Accuſations being proved, and made clear by ſeveral credible Witneſſes, Cardinal *Charles Caraſa* was by the *Pope* himſelf convicted of Felony, and the Count of *Montorio*, with Count *Aliſe*, and *Leonard de Cardine* found guilty by the Governour of *Rome* of Murther, and other enormous Crimes, and all delivered into the hands of the Civil Judges, that Sentence of death might be paſſed upon them; in execution of which, the Cardinal and the two Counts were ſtrangled, and *de Cardine* beheaded. *Onufrius Panvinius* tells us, that he having had a familiar converſation with this *Pope*, had often heard him lament the ſadneſs of this Tragedy, which he was conſtrained to execute in reſpect to the Duty he owed to Juſtice; and for example, and caution to the Nephews, and Relations of ſucceeding *Popes*, who when they ſoar aloft on the wings of good Fortune, may by the fate of others be fore-warned, how they commit the like exceſſes, for which they may be queſtioned, when times ſhould alter.

Howſoever, this *Pope* himſelf, according to the cuſtom of his Predeceſſors admitted his Siſters Sons to *Rome*, raiſing them to all thoſe Benefits, and Dignities he was able to beſtow upon them; amongſt which he had the fortune to have *Charles Barromeo* to be his Relation, a perſon of that modeſt, wiſe, and induſtrious temper, as might deſerve that honour and preferments which he deſigned for him; for being ſkilful and well experienced in the Civil Law, and in the management of worldly Affairs, he committed the moſt important charge of all matters relating to Government to his fidelity, and conduct; of which *Barromeo* ſo well acquitted himſelf, that being created Cardinal, he gained the reputation of a wiſe Miniſter during the time of this *Pius*, and afterwards by the holineſs of his life in ſucceeding times was canonized for a *Saint*.

To this *Barromeo*, and to Cardinal *Morone*, he communicated all his thoughts and Councils, taking their Opinion in the higheſt emergencies and exigencies of State; amongſt which nothing appeared more difficult, and worthy of diſquiſition, than two things, namely the recognizing, or acknowledging *Ferdinand* for Emperor, and reviving again the Council of *Trent*. The firſt as we have ſaid, was denied by *Paul* IV. on allegation, that the Conſtitution of an Emperor did eſſentially require the *Pope's* authoritative approbation; but in truth the obſtruction was in the Electors, who challenged a right of electing the Emperor. But now it was reſolved to wave all that, and to grant the Emperor's deſires, before they were demanded, that ſo the frankneſs of this *Pope's* nature might be diſtinguiſhed from the ſeverity of his Predeceſſours. In purſuance whereunto, Letters were wrote to the Emperor, adorned with all his Imperial Titles, wherein the *Pope* approved the Surrender which *Charles* had made of the Empire, and the ſucceſſion of *Ferdinand* thereunto; the news hereof, was received with that ſatisfaction by the Emperour, then at *Vienna*, that he immediately diſpatched his Ambaſſadour, the Count *d' Arco*, with Letters to the *Pope*, congratulating his exaltation to that ſupreme Dignity, and rendring him thanks for having out of his wiſdom, and paternal juſtice, freely determined that point in his favour, which *Paul* IV. againſt all ſenſe and reaſon had denied him. But yet things did not ſo ſmoothly paſs, but that the Ambaſſadour being arrived at *Rome*, encountred ſome difficulty before admiſſion to his Audience; for he having in his Inſtructions, Orders only to acknowledg Reverence to the *Pope* in behalf of his Maſter, the expreſſion ſeemed to ſound low, and to intimate, as if the Emperor intended to infer an Equality with the *Pope*; and therefore to clear that ſcruple, it was required, that the word Reverence, ſhould be changed into Obedience. The Ambaſſadour having no ſuch warrant in his Inſtructions abſolutely refuſed to accept his Audience upon thoſe terms, alledging that Imperial Miniſters had never uſed that Stile towards any of his Predeceſſours; in which reſolution alſo he was farther confirmed by the advice of the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour: Howſoever the Cardinals, *Morone*, and *Madrutius*, perſuading him to the contrary, their opinions prevailed, becauſe the Emperor had in all points of difficulty, directed him to be governed by their Sentiments.

This difficulty being overcome; It was reſolved, That the *Pope* ſhould with the ſame free ſpirit declare his intentions ſpeedily to aſſemble a General Council at *Trent*, or rather a continuation of the ſame after divers Prorogations; that ſo he might foreſtall the deſires of the Chriſtian Princes, whom he underſtood were ready with their Addreſſes to that purpoſe. But in regard the turbulent commotions about Religion were heightened with that fermentation in all parts of Chriſtendom, as would not admit of thoſe ſlow Methods of cure, which were to proceed from the Debates and Reſolves of a General Council: it was in the firſt place deſired by the Duke of *Savoy*, that Authority might be given him by the *Pope* for a Conference touching certain points of Religion to be held within his Dominions, for better inſtruction of the people, who were ready to fall off, and revolt from the Church of *Rome*: and indeed this expedient ſeemed moſt urgent at this time, in which many, who having made a total defection from the Church, and finding themſelves perſecuted in *Poland*, *Germany*, *Provence*, *Puglia*, and other parts, were fled into the Vallies of *Mont-cenis*, *Luſerne*, St. *Martin*, and the places adjoyning, where they maintained themſelves in ſeparate Congregations under certain Miniſters, until ſuch time as the Doctrin of *Zuinglius* ſhould be planted, and ſetled in the City of *Geneva*. And whereas the Duke being reſolved to reduce his Country to the profeſſion of the Catholick Religion, had by the Authority of the Inquiſition eſtabliſhed, condemned ſome to the Gallies, and others to the Fire: yet finding that theſe ſevereties operated little upon minds already prepoſſeſſed with an Opinion of Religion and Conſcience, he was deſirous to make trial of the more gentle and ſoft means of Inſtructions, leſt his people becoming deſperate under their hardſhip and torments, ſhould be perſuaded to believe it lawful to take up Arms in defence of their Perſons, and their Religion.

The *Pope* ill reliſhed this Propoſal, declaring that he would never conſent to have his Authority put to compromiſe, or his Power compounded for: than he was well acquainted with what obſtinacy the Hereticks maintained their Doctrines, which were never to be confuted but by the Sword; the which he eſteemed to be the moſt effectual way of inſtruction; and having perſuaded the Duke to that Remedy; a War was begun in the Valleys, which continued for a long time.

Nor were the diſturbances in *France* leſs grievous than in *Savoy*: where many were put to death for no other cauſe than for their zeal to the true reformed Religion, and the ſalvation of their own Souls: though it is true, that many, who were ambitious and deſirous of Novelty, did under this guiſe, and cloak of Religion, and with pretence of reſcuing the King, and the Dignity of the Sovereign Magiſtrate from the uſurpations, and tyranny of the Duke of *Guiſe* and his Party, take up Arms, and enter into Rebellion againſt their King; but being afterwards beaten, and many killed, others were afterwards tried, and for their Offences juſtly condemned to die: and to all others, who being miſguided by Religion ſhould lay down their Arms in the ſpace of twenty four hours, Proclamation was made, that they ſhould be received to mercy by a full and plenary Pardon from his Majeſty.

But now the humours of the people being moved, and hopes conceived of obtaining liberty of Conſcience: great tumults were raiſed in *Provence*, *Languedoc*, *Poitou*, and other places; ſo that how to ſuppreſs theſe tumults, and quiet the minds of the people, which were ſeavered with the heats of Religion, was the greater matter debated in the Councils of *France*: and whereas it was objected by the Cardinal *Armagnac*, that no Eccleſiaſtical remedy could be applied, without the aſſent and concurrence of the *Pope*; this ſcruple was ſoon exploided by the contrary Opinion of the moſt of the Council: who alledged, that God had given to every Nation a full Power, and Authority within it ſelf to provide remedies neceſſary, and agreeable to the preſent, government of their State, without having recourſe to forein and far diſt[illegible]owers: for as it were unreaſonable in caſe of fire, and terrible incendiations within the City of *Paris*, to expect till waters were brought from the *Tybur* to extinguiſh the flames: and in the mean time neglect the uſe of the more near and convenient ſtreams of the *Seine*, and *Mearne*: ſo alſo would it be in this great conflagration of civil War to neglect remedies at home, until we can fetch them from remote and diſtant Countries. In ſhort, therefore it was agreed that a National Council ſhould be aſſembled, compoſed of all the Prelates of the Kingdom, whoſe buſineſs it ſhould be to conſult, and find out means to give a ſtop to the growing evils, and to the courſe of thoſe infections which were ready to poiſon, and overwhelm the whole Kingdom.

Howſoever, leſt this Edict for ſummoning a National Council ſhould be ill taken by the *Pope*, and interpreted for a point of diſreſpect to the Apoſtolical See, without his conſent thereunto, or at leaſt an intimation given thereof: it was ordered that the Ambaſſadour reſiding at *Rome*, ſhould by word of mouth repreſent the many dangers, and growing evils within the Kingdom of *France*, which could be cured by no other remedy than a National Aſſembly, and that the dangers thereof were ſo preſſing, as not to admit the ſlow Methods of forein Aſſiſtance.

Theſe matters being exactly in this manner repreſented to the *Pope*, were very ill reſented by him, judging that ſuch an Aſſembly of Prelates could not be convened without a breach of the Eccleſiaſtical Canons, nor without prejudice to the Papal Authority; which to make more clearly appear, he reſolved to diſpatch the Biſhop of *Viterbo* into *France*, to make known unto his Majeſty; That ſuch an Aſſembly was never admitted by former Popes in any Country or Kingdom whatſoever; they being well aſſured, that ſuch a meeting would ſerve to no other end, than to adminiſter unto greater diviſion and confuſion, and produce a Schiſm in the Church Catholick; and, That it would ſerve farther to exalt the pride of the Prelates, inſpiring them with an Opinion of ſome ſuperiour Authority inherent in them, above that of the Pope, or of the King; but if he would apply a true, and an effectual remedy, none could be ſo ſucceſsful as a General Council, which he had reſolved ſhortly to aſſemble; and that in the mean time nothing could be ſo available, as that the Biſhops be commanded to repair to their reſpective Dioceſes, and the Curats to their Pariſhes, and there to watch over their Flocks, and hinder Thieves, and Wolves from breaking within the Fold: and finally, deſired that their Spiritual Authority might be reinforced by the Power of the Civil Magiſtrate, and the Arms of Regal force.

The Biſhop of *Viterbo* being with theſe Inſtructions diſpeeded into *France*; he was farther commanded in his Journey thither to negotiate matters in the ſame form at the Court of *Savoy*; and to incite the Duke to make War upon *Geneva*, which they called the Neſt of Hereſie, and the root from whence ſprang all the falſe Doctrines of the new Religion; the Biſhop accordingly did not fail on his part to repreſent all matters to the Duke agreeable to his Inſtructions, and found in him a ready diſpoſition to embrace all the Propoſals made him by the Pope, eſpecially the Enterpriſe againſt *Geneva*, provided, that with the conſent both of *Spain* and *France*, he might poſſeſs and enjoy that City. This Demand was e[illegible] atmitted on the ſide of *Spain*; but they well knew, that it would never be granted by *France*, which had long aſpired to that Dominion; to which the *Spaniards* would not accord, being more willing to ſee that place the Capital Throne of the new Religion, than a Seat of the *French* Power; for that being near to the Dukedom of *Burgundy*, might prove an ill Neighbour to that part of the *Spaniſh* Dominions. Howſoever, that the King of *Spain* might follow the Pope's inclinations in concurrence with the *French*, as far as prudence and caution directed, he diſpatched *Don Antonio de Toledo* his Ambaſſadour into *France*, to offer unto that King his utmoſt aſſiſtance, and to joyn his Arms unto his, for the total ruin and extirpation of Hereſie.

But the Court of *France* would yield no ear to either of theſe Propoſitions; they would gladly indeed have had the poſſeſſion of *Geneva*, but the Enterpriſe ſeemed difficult whilſt the Civil Wars continued, and whilſt *Geneva* remained in League with the *Swiſſes*, who had promiſed to afford their utmoſt ſuccour, and aid unto that place: and as to the National Synod, they perſiſted in their reſolution, promiſing the Pope that nothing ſhould be attempted therein derogatory to his Power and the Authority of the Church. But this aſſurance did little ſatisfy the jealouſie of the Pope, who ſuſpected the very Prelates to be tainted with Hereſie, and to have an inclination to ſet up a *Gallican* Church, as they called it, ſeparate, and independant of the *Roman* See.

The fear and jealouſie hereof, conſtrained the Pope poſitively to reſolve on a General Council, and to haſten the convocation thereof with all ſpeed poſſible, ſuppoſing that the convention of a General Council would break the former Meaſures, and invalidate the Authority of all National Synods: This being agreed, the next thing propoſed, was the place; which the Pope would have had to be his own Town of *Bologna*, but that he knew it would be generally diſliked by the Prelates; nor would the *Spaniards* conſent to have it held at *Milan*, for though they were zealous Catholicks, yet in matters of worldly intereſt they diſtruſted the Pope, as much as other Princes: In fine, *Trent* was agreed to be the moſt commodious, and leaſt ſubject to exceptions of any: howſoever, the *French* were of another Opinion, as was alſo the Emperour who propoſed *Wormes*, *Triers*, *Conſtance*, or *Hagunaw*, as more convenient; for that the Proteſtants did ſo abhor the name of *Trent*, that they would take a prejudice to any thing formed there; nor would they endure to have the Council ſtiled a Continuation of a former, but one new, and eſtabliſhed on its own foundation: nor was this the only ſcruple of the Emperor; for he declared, that he could not anſwer for the Empire, unleſs it were firſt prepared and diſpoſed by a General Diet, nor would the Clergy of his hereditary Countries be induced to be preſent at the Council, unleſs the Cup in the Sacrament were firſt granted to the Laity, and Licenſe for the Prieſts to marry; but all theſe matters being diametrically oppoſite to the Papal intereſt, the Pope declared his reſolution was, rather to give his life, than his aſſent thereunto.

In the mean time, the numbers of thoſe of the Reformed Religion encreaſed greatly in *France*; ſo that it was reſolved, in caſe a General Council were not ſpeedily aſſembled, that a National Synod ſhould meet at *Meaux* on the 13*th.* of *January*, 1561. for the tumults and combuſtions about Religion were ſo preſſing, that they required a ſpeedy and an effectual cure: the fear of which ſo touched the Pope, as did alſo the Declaration of the Emperor; that taking no notice of the exceptions of either, he reſolved to ſurmount the difficulties, and therewith ſigned the Bull for calling a Council, to commence on *Eaſter* day, 1561. giving this Title thereunto, *Indictio Concilii Tridentini*, as if it had been to be a New, and not the continuation of a former Council: howſoever, in the body of the Bull, the word *Continuation* being mentioned, it gave great ſcandal and offence to all, though the *Pope*'s Legats endeavoured to ſmooth it over, by ſaying, that the *Continuation* could be no impediment to any revirſion of what had formerly paſſed, nor hinder the Council from repealing any Act which had been decreed, and ordained in the times of *Paul* and *Julius* III.

And

Howſoever, leſt this Edict for ſummoning a National Council ſhould be ill taken by the *Pope*, and interpreted for a point of diſreſpect to the Apoſtolical See, without his conſent thereunto, or at leaſt an intimation given thereof: it was ordered that the Ambaſſadour reſiding at *Rome*, ſhould by word of mouth repreſent the many dangers, and growing evils within the Kingdom of *France*, which could be cured by no other remedy than a National Aſſembly, and that the dangers thereof were ſo preſſing, as not to admit the ſlow Methods of forein Aſſiſtance.

Theſe matters being exactly in this manner repreſented to the *Pope*, were very ill reſented by him, judging that ſuch an Aſſembly of Prelates could not be convened without a breach of the Eccleſiaſtical Canons, nor without prejudice to the Papal Authority; which to make more clearly appear, he reſolved to diſpatch the Biſhop of *Viterbo* into *France*, to make known unto his Majeſty; That ſuch an Aſſembly was never admitted by former Popes in any Country or Kingdom whatſoever; they being well aſſured, that ſuch a meeting would ſerve to no other end, than to adminiſter unto greater diviſion and confuſion, and produce a Schiſm in the Church Catholick; and, That it would ſerve farther to exalt the pride of the Prelates, inſpiring them with an Opinion of ſome ſuperiour Authority inherent in them, above that of the Pope, or of the King; but if he would apply a true, and an effectual remedy, none could be ſo ſucceſsful as a General Council, which he had reſolved ſhortly to aſſemble; and that in the mean time nothing could be ſo available, as that the Biſhops be commanded to repair to their reſpective Dioceſes, and the Curats to their Pariſhes, and there to watch over their Flocks, and hinder Thieves, and Wolves from breaking within the Fold: and finally, deſired that their Spiritual Authority might be reinforced by the Power of the Civil Magiſtrate, and the Arms of Regal force.

The Biſhop of *Viterbo* being with theſe Inſtructions diſpeeded into *France*; he was farther commanded in his Journey thither to negotiate matters in the ſame form at the Court of *Savoy*; and to incite the Duke to make War upon *Geneva*, which they called the Neſt of Hereſie, and the root from whence ſprang all the falſe Doctrines of the new Religion; the Biſhop accordingly did not fail on his part to repreſent all matters to the Duke agreeable to his Inſtructions, and found in him a ready diſpoſition to embrace all the Propoſals made him by the Pope, eſpecially the Enterpriſe againſt *Geneva*, provided, that with the conſent both of *Spain* and *France*, he might poſſeſs and enjoy that City. This Demand was e[illegible] atmitted on the ſide of *Spain*; but they well knew, that it would never be granted by *France*, which had long aſpired to that Dominion; to which the *Spaniards* would not accord, being more willing to ſee that place the Capital Throne of the new Religion, than a Seat of the *French* Power; for that being near to the Dukedom of *Burgundy*, might prove an ill Neighbour to that part of the *Spaniſh* Dominions. Howſoever, that the King of *Spain* might follow the Pope's inclinations in concurrence with the *French*, as far as prudence and caution directed, he diſpatched *Don Antonio de Toledo* his Ambaſſadour into *France*, to offer unto that King his utmoſt aſſiſtance, and to joyn his Arms unto his, for the total ruin and extirpation of Hereſie.

But the Court of *France* would yield no ear to either of theſe Propoſitions; they would gladly indeed have had the poſſeſſion of *Geneva*, but the Enterpriſe ſeemed difficult whilſt the Civil Wars continued, and whilſt *Geneva* remained in League with the *Swiſſes*, who had promiſed to afford their utmoſt ſuccour, and aid unto that place: and as to the National Synod, they perſiſted in their reſolution, promiſing the Pope that nothing ſhould be attempted therein derogatory to his Power and the Authority of the Church. But this aſſurance did little ſatisfy the jealouſie of the Pope, who ſuſpected the very Prelates to be tainted with Hereſie, and to have an inclination to ſet up a *Gallican* Church, as they called it, ſeparate, and independant of the *Roman* See.

The fear and jealouſie hereof, conſtrained the Pope poſitively to reſolve on a General Council, and to haſten the convocation thereof with all ſpeed poſſible, ſuppoſing that the convention of a General Council would break the former Meaſures, and invalidate the Authority of all National Synods: This being agreed, the next thing propoſed, was the place; which the Pope would have had to be his own Town of *Bologna*, but that he knew it would be generally diſliked by the Prelates; nor would the *Spaniards* conſent to have it held at *Milan*, for though they were zealous Catholicks, yet in matters of worldly intereſt they diſtruſted the Pope, as much as other Princes: In fine, *Trent* was agreed to be the moſt commodious, and leaſt ſubject to exceptions of any: howſoever, the *French* were of another Opinion, as was alſo the Emperour who propoſed *Wormes*, *Triers*, *Conſtance*, or *Hagunaw*, as more convenient; for that the Proteſtants did ſo abhor the name of *Trent*, that they would take a prejudice to any thing formed there; nor would they endure to have the Council ſtiled a Continuation of a former, but one new, and eſtabliſhed on its own foundation: nor was this the only ſcruple of the Emperor; for he declared, that he could not anſwer for the Empire, unleſs it were firſt prepared and diſpoſed by a General Diet, nor would the Clergy of his hereditary Countries be induced to be preſent at the Council, unleſs the Cup in the Sacrament were firſt granted to the Laity, and Licenſe for the Prieſts to marry; but all theſe matters being diametrically oppoſite to the Papal intereſt, the Pope declared his reſolution was, rather to give his life, than his aſſent thereunto.

In the mean time, the numbers of thoſe of the Reformed Religion encreaſed greatly in *France*; ſo that it was reſolved, in caſe a General Council were not ſpeedily aſſembled, that a National Synod ſhould meet at *Meaux* on the 13*th*. of *January*, 1561. for the tumults and combuſtions about Religion were ſo preſſing, that they required a ſpeedy and an effectual cure: the fear of which ſo touched the Pope, as did alſo the Declaration of the Emperor; that taking no notice of the exceptions of either, he reſolved to ſurmount the difficulties, and therewith ſigned the Bull for calling a Council, to commence on *Eaſter* day, 1561. giving this Title thereunto, *Indictio Concilii Tridentini*, as if it had been to be a New, and not the continuation of a former Council: howſoever, in the body of the Bull, the word *Continuation* being mentioned, it gave great ſcandal and offence to all, though the *Pope*'s Legats endeavoured to ſmooth it over, by ſaying, that the *Continuation* could be no impediment to any reviſion of what had formerly paſſed, nor hinder the Council from repealing any Act which had been decreed, and ordained in the times of *Paul* and *Julius* III.

And now *Francis* II. King of *France*, being dead, and his Brother *Charles* IX. a Youth of ten years of age, ſucceeding, gave great expectations of a happy change to the Proteſtants, for that the King of *Navarre* having declared himſelf of the Reformed Religion, to whom of right as firſt Prince of the Blood, the Government belonged, during the minority of the King, and that he was ruled much by the Councils of the Admiral *de Coligni*, who was the grand Protector of the Reformed, gave them hopes, that the ſeverity of proceedings againſt them would be abated, and liberty of Conſcience granted to the whole Kingdom: the which, though it did not take effect fully to their deſires, yet at an Aſſembly of the Eſtates at *Orleance*, it was ordained, That an Arreſt of judgment ſhould be given, and all penal Proceſſes ſtopped which were made againſt any for account of Religion: and at the ſame time Orders were given to the Prelates to prepare themſelves for their Journey to *Trent*.

At this time the Proteſtant Princes were aſſembled at *Naumbourg*, with intention to guard themſelves from the Plots which would be contrived againſt them in the Council of *Trent*; and to take off the reproach of Diviſions, and diſagreement in the points of Faith amongſt themſelves. But ſuch was the variety then of Opinions, that it was difficult to concur in one Symbol of Faith; for the Confeſſion of *Augsburg* had lately been printed in ſeveral Editions, and every one with ſome difference from another. And as to a General Council, they petitioned the Emperor, that ſuch an one might be convened as was free, and where the Pope might not preſide, and overawe the Votes of the Proteſtants; the which requeſt they made rather in excuſe for their not going to *Trent*, than out of any proſpect of a conceſſion to their grant.

In the mean time the Pope having ſent two Nuntios to the Emperor, he adviſed them to go to *Naumbourg*, accompanied with two of his Ambaſſadours, and receive the ſenſe of the Aſſembly which was there convened: The Proteſtants received the Ambaſſadours with great reſpect, and heard the Nuntios with equal civilities; but ſtill continuing firm to their Principles, declared that they could not acknowledg the Pope's juriſdiction, and therefore could not eſteem themſelves obliged to make known unto the *Pope* the Opinion they had of a Council, having already ſignified their thoughts thereof unto the Emperor: with the like coldneſs they were received at *Norimberg*, *Frankfort*, *Ausbourg*, and other Proteſtant Towns. *Elizabeth* Queen of *England* at the ſame time refuſed to admit the Abbot *Martininguez* ſent by the *Pope*, within her Dominions: And the King of *Denmark* in like manner denied entrance to the Nuncios within his State, ſaying, That neither his Father nor he having ever had to do with the *Pope*, he knew no buſineſs his Nuntios could have with him. Thus did theſe Nuntios meet Oppoſitions in all parts, nor did they find any encouraging compliance in the Emperor himſelf, who inſiſted on the Indiction of a new Council, which was not founded on the *Continuation*, or baſis of a former. *France* likewiſe made many exceptions to the Bull of Indiction, being for a *New* and not for a *Continuation* of the old Council; Nor was this all; many other
1561. things concurring in that Kingdom to the diminution of the Pope's Authority: for not only were the penal Laws againſt the Proteſtants taken away, but alſo at a Convention of the Eſtates at *Orleance*, the Pope's Annates or yearly Revenue was taken off, and all Moneys forbidden

bidden to be carried to *Rome*; the agreement between *Leo* X. and *Francis* the First was made void; and all Friars, and other Religious were made ſubject to the Biſhop of their Dioceſe. So that *France* ſeemed in a manner to be loſt: only *Spain* being a people not given much to innovation, adhered to the *Pope's* Authority, and to a Continuation of the Old Council.

The Feaſt of *Eaſter* approaching, which was the time appointed for the opening the Council; the *Pope* deputed the Cardinals of *Mantoua*, *Warmia*, *Seripanda*, and *Simonette* to be his Legats, and Preſidents of the Council, and haſtened all the Biſhops of *Italy* to repair unto *Trent*, that ſo they might counterballance the number of the *French* and *Spaniſh* Biſhops, who came, as was believed, with no other intention, than to gain one Point, which was, that a General Council in its Determinations, was ſuperiour and above the Authority of the *Pope*; a Poſition which the Biſhops of *Italy*, who had the honour of being the Head of all the Clergy, ought on no terms whatſoever to admit.

But as yet there was a very thin appearance of Biſhops at *Trent*; for the eyes of all were fixed on the iſſue, which the Convention of the Eſtates at *Orleans*, and the Conference at *Poiſſy* would produce, which in every Act ſtruck at the *Pope's* Authority, and expoſed unto the people the corruptions and abuſes of the *Roman* See. In fine, after all, the Queen Regent wrote a Letter to the *Pope*, wherein ſhe repreſented to him the great numbers of Proteſtants in *France*, and the daily increaſe of them; to ſuppreſs which, a Reformation in many things was neceſſary; as namely, to take away Images out of the Churches; the Spittle, and Exorciſms in Baptiſm, to grant the Euchariſtical Chalice to the Laiety, to admit the Divine Service in the vulgar Tongue, and expunge the late Feſtival of *Corpus Chriſti* out of the Kalendar: All and every Point of which were ſuch mortal blows to the Church, that the *Pope* could not think thereof with any patience, nor give other anſwer thereunto, than that thoſe, and other matters ſhould be deferred to the deciſion of the Council.

With theſe expectations and diſcourſes, the time was protracted untill the month of *December*, by which time there was a conſiderable appearance of Biſhops at *Trent*, ſo that the *Pope* commanded without farther delay, that the Council ſhould be commenced; but by reaſon of ſome other Obſtructions, and at the deſire of the Emperor's Ambaſſadours it was again deferred until the middle of *January* following. 1561.

1562. The firſt Seſſion was held the 18*th.* of *January*, at which the firſt preliminary afforded great matter of Diſpute; for it was there to be made a ſtanding Rule, That nothing ſhould be propounded, but what was firſt moved by the Legats, *Proponentibus Legatis*: which being oppoſed by four *Spaniſh* Prelats, was notwithſtanding over-ruled by the greater number, and the next Seſſions appointed for the 26*th.* of *February* following.

In the mean time, on the 17*th.* of *January* the Edict was made at St. *Germaines*, whereby the Proteſtants had liberty given them to have their Churches, or Temples without the Cities, to live under the protection of the King in obſervance of their own Diſcipline, Provided, that they taught nothing contrary to the Doctrin of the Old and New Teſtament, and to the Council of *Nice*.

At *Trent*, after ſeveral Congregations held there, another Seſſions commenced the 26*th*. of *February*, at which ſome matters were determined in relation to Precedency, and the *Index Expurgatorius*; and then the Council adjourned until the 14*th*. of *March*, which time being come, nothing paſſed at that Seſſion worthy of obſervation, only they adjourned until the 14*th*. of *May*; and then again to the 4*th*. of *June*.

At the beginning of this Seſſion, the Marquis of *Peſcara*, who was Ambaſſadour of *Spain*, inſtantly urged that this Council might be declared a *Continuation* of the former under *Paul* and *Julius*; but the Emperor's Ambaſſadours made ſuch fierce oppoſition, that nothing for that time was concluded therein: after which, the Marquis *de Peſcara* departed from *Trent*, upon pretence that the affairs of his Government required his preſence at *Milan*; though in reality it was to avoid a concurrence with the *French* Ambaſſadours, who were then upon their Journey to *Trent*, namely, the Lord of *Lanſac*, *Ferrier* who was a Preſident of Parliament, and *Fabre* Lord of *Pibrac*, one alſo of the Long-Robe, who arrived two or three days after the departure of the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour.

And now miſunderſtandings encreaſed between the Court of *Rome*, and the Council of *Trent*, the Cardinal of *Mantona* himſelf, who was one of the *Pope*'s Legats, being ſuſpected of not having had ſufficient zeal for the Authority of the Court of *Rome*, becauſe he had not ſeconded the Votes of the *Spaniſh* Party, who would have declared this preſent Council a *Continuation* of the former: ſo that it came to be debated at *Rome*, whether it were not neceſſary to recall the Cardinal of *Mantona* from his Preſidency, or to place ſome other Collegue in Commiſſion above him. On the other ſide, the Council was as much diſſatisfied with the Court of *Rome*, as the Court of *Rome* was with *Trent*, becauſe that many things were deſigned there to moderate the Papal Authority, and give a greater latitude of Power to Princes, and Arch-Biſhops in the exerciſe both of the ſpiritual and temporal Juriſdiction: nor were the Prelates free from all variance amongſt themſelves, whoſe intereſts ſeveral times interfering one with other, adminiſtred ſubject of Diſpute, which ended in Reproaches, and Obloquies of one againſt the other.

The *French* Ambaſſadours being admitted to Audience in a Congregation aſſembled the 26*th*. of *May*; *Fibrac* made a very eloquent and pathetical Oration, wherein he reproved the indiſcreet and ill-guided zeal of thoſe, who would not part with one inſignificant ceremony, to gain the common quiet and peace of the Church, and the ſalvation of many Souls. He alſo openly declaimed againſt the violence impoſed in the Council, which ought to have been free; And conſidering that preceding Councils had for ſome Ages paſt ſuffered their Opinions and Sentiments to be overſwayed by a ſuperiour Power, and ſerve an intereſt for whoſe ſake they were not aſſembled, he did therefore now exhort the Fathers then preſent, that they would take ſuch meaſures as might without mixture of other conſiderations, cure and heal the Diſeaſes of the Church, produce Peace, and propagate Charity in the World; and ſecure the Flock of Chriſt from Uſurpation and Oppreſſion. This Speech ſo ſtartled the Council, that the Prolocutor having nothing to reply, gave an end to the Congregation of that Day.

On the 4th. of *June* a Seſſion was held, in which the Commiſſions of Ambaſſadours were read, and an Anſwer given by the Prolocutor to the Speech of *Pibrac*, which was ill reſented by the *French*, and then the Seſſion ended, and another appointed on the 16th. of *July*.

In the mean time ſeveral Congregations were held, whereat the chief matter debated was the adminiſtration of the Sacrament of the Holy Communion to the Laiety in both kinds: the *Imperial* and *French* Ambaſſadours contended for it, as did alſo the Miniſter of the Duke of *Bavaria*; and on that ſubject joyned together in a Memorial: in which they repreſented, and produced the Writings of the Popes *Paul*, and *Julius*, wherein they had acknowledged the neceſſity of yielding the Cup to ſuch of the Laiety, as ſhould demand it, it being the only means whereby to conſerve the Kingdom of *Bohemia* in obedience to the See of *Rome*. That already in the Kingdom of *Hungary* the People did force the Prieſts to adminiſter the Sacrament to them in both kinds, threatning for want thereof to ſeize their Eſtates, and take away their lives.

After many Debates on divers Subjects at ſeveral Congregations, at length the day of Seſſion came being the 16th of *July*; at which the Decrees were read, and four Canons confirmed with *Anathemas* thereunto annexed. Firſt, That the faithful Laiety are not obliged by any Command to communicate in both kinds. Secondly, That the Church upon very good grounds, and reaſons had taken away the Cup from the Laiety. Thirdly, That whoſoever receives the Bread onely, receives Jeſus Chriſt, as fully, and intirely to all ends, and purpoſes of ſpiritual Grace, and Salvation. Fourthly, That the Communion is not neceſſary for Infants. All which was impertinent to the queſtion demanded, namely, whether ſuch as were not ſatisfied herewith might not receive the Sacrament in both kinds, if deſired by them: wherefore to pleaſe the *Germans*, who made great noiſe about this Point, the determination thereof was referred to the following Seſſion: likewiſe many other matters were enacted, and decreed for Reformation of abuſes committed by the Queſtors, who were a ſort of Raſcals, and Caterpillers, who under the pretence of recommendatory Letters to all Good People, exhorting them to contribute their Alms to pious Works, ſuch as the building of Hoſpitals for the ſick, and for maintenance of Orphans, framed a thouſand damnable Artifices to extort Money from the People; in which for the more formality they diſguiſed themſelves in ſtrange Habits, and by ſound of Bell carried before them, aſſembled the People, and offered their Indulgences to ſale, terrifying thoſe who refuſed to buy them with a thouſand Curſes, and Maledictions; the which Money by agreement with Officers at *Rome* was appropriated to their own uſe, and a part to the benefit of thoſe, who had procured the Authority for raiſing theſe Collections. So that this abuſe was condemned, and wholly aboliſhed. Likewiſe other Decrees paſſed for regulation of Dioceſes, Pariſhes, and Non-Reſidencies: And in the mean time Poſts ran continually from *Trent* to *Rome*, and back again with Treaties, and Negotiations between the Ambaſſadours of ſeveral Princes, and the Legats, beſides a thouſand other Intrigues formed by the Prelats, who were encreaſed to a number four times greater, than in the time of the two preceding Councils under *Julius* and *Paul* III. All which in the concluſion produced ſo little, that we may well apply that ſaying.

Parturiant montes naſcetur ridiculus mus.

The *French* Ambaſſadours attended all this time in the Council without any reaſonable ſatisfaction; for they obſerved that the moſt material Points of Religion were debated and determined in the abſence of their Biſhops, all being carried by the Vogue, and ſuffrages of *Spaniards*, *Portugueſes*, and *Italians*: Whereſore they earneſtly wrote to the King to haſten his Biſhops, who might maintain and ſupport the Points they had to propoſe for a Reformation; for want of whom and that nothing could be propoſed in the Council, but by the Legats, that clauſe availing in the Method agreed, *Proponentibus Legatis*, the Court of *Rome* became abſolute Moderator in all Diſputes, carrying every thing at pleaſure, by the great numbers of their Penſionary Biſhops; and in ſhort, that there was very little hopes of any good reſult from the determination of this Council.

After this Seſſion; matters were preparing at ſeveral Congregations againſt the next, which was appointed to be held on the 17th. of *September* for confirmation of the Sacrifice of the Maſs: in diſcuſſing of which Point; an unlucky queſtion was ſtarted, Whether Jeſus Chriſt did then offer, and ſacrifice himſelf, when he firſt inſtituted the Sacrament of the Euchariſt: For if he did not at that time ſacrifice himſelf, then the Maſs which is founded on this Inſtitution, *Do this in remembrance of me*, is no ſacrifice: and if he did ſacrifice himſelf, it muſt have been propitiatory, and then the Sacrifice on the Croſs had been unprofitable, and unneceſſary; for it is ſaid, *He Offered himſelf but one; and then the ſins of mankind had been expiated by the Sacrifice of the Euchariſt*: the which created ſo much doubt, and Diſpute, that ſome were of Opinion, that it were beſt to leave the ceremonies of the *Roman* Maſs free, and undetermined by any particular Decree or Canon of the Church: the which Opinion though diſpleaſing to the generality of the Council, was yet ſeconded by the Biſhop of *quinque Eccleſiæ*, the Emperor's Ambaſſador; who moved that *Germany* might not be obliged to any uniformity of Ceremonies, and particularly might have the Cup granted to their Laiety in the Sacrament, and not be obliged to have their Service in the *Latin* Tongue. The which he repreſented in the name of his Maſter to be ſo agreeable and neceſſary to the preſent State of that Country, that without ſuch a Diſpenſation it was impoſſible, to contain his people under any obedience to the Church, or oblige them to make reſiſtance againſt the *Turk*, whoſe violences they leſs feared, than the impoſitions, and tyrannies of the Papal See. This matter being argued with great heat on both ſides, and without any determination, it was moved, that this propoſal of the *Germans* ſhould be remitted to the Pope; but this alſo was oppoſed by the Biſhop of *Lavaur*; who argued that it was very improper to remit that to the Pope, which he had referred to the judgment of that Aſſembly: and that it might reaſonably be queſtioned whether that reference were made to him under the notion of being Superiour or inferiour to the Council; and then in that caſe, that queſtion was firſt to be detemined. Howſoever, at length it was carried in the Affirmative, and the queſtion referred to the judgment of the Pope to conſider, and determine under what reſtrictions and circumſtances the Cup might be granted to the Laiety, In this manner with a thouſand Diſputes and difficulties, another Seſſion was held on the 17th. of *September*. At which after the uſual Ceremonies were performed; they immediately fell upon the particulars treated in the preceding Congregation, containing nine ſeveral Articles, all which were confirmed, and ſtrengthened with *Anathemas*: the contents of which were to eſtabliſh the Doctrine of the neceſſity of a perpetual Sacrifice, to verifie the Sacrifice of the Maſs, and that the ſame was truly and really propitiatory. The Ceremonies alſo of this Sacrifice, and the purity of the Canon of the Maſs, and the celebration of it in the *Latin* Tongue, were all confirmed: as likewiſe that the Maſs might be performed without other Communicants than the Prieſt onely; that it might be celebrated in honour of the Saints, and that the Wine ought to be uſed with a mixture of Water. To which particulars the Fathers gave their Placet, 22, or 23, only excepted, amongſt which, the chief was the Arch-Biſhop of *Granada*, who could by no means be perſuaded to reliſh the Doctrine, that Jeſus Chriſt did offer himſelf in the firſt inſtitution of the Holy Euchariſt. Moreover, other Decrees were read, and paſſed, relating to the regulation of Biſhopricks, giving the Biſhops full power to inſpect the nature of Diſpenſations, whether they were fairly or ſubreptitiouſly procured; as alſo Authority to viſit Hoſpitals, and Colledges, and ſurvey the Buildings of religious Foundations, with this clauſe, and under this Character howſoever, as being Delegates of the Holy See. Likewiſe other things paſſed of no great moment, with which this Seſſion was concluded. 1562.

The Decrees of this Seſſion were ſatisfactory to very few: for the Emperor remained highly diſpleaſed, that the matter of the Cup was referred to the Pope, well knowing that the conceſſion of this Point would have been much more acceptable to his Subjects from the Council, than from the *Pope*, againſt whom they had demonſtrated a deteſtable averſion. Exceptions were alſo made to that Decree, which gives the Biſhops a Power over religious Houſes contrary to the intention of the Donors, who deſired that the Revenues, and management thereof ſhould be adminiſtred by Lay-perſons: for thus ſaid they, was the manner how the Clergy poſſeſſed themſelves of the Lands, and Revenues of Hoſpitals, and Colledges, and other religious Foundations, making themſelves Owners, and abſolute Maſters of what they were onely Stewards, and Adminiſtrators: and this formerly the Parliament of *Paris* looked upon as an Uſurpation, and encroachment of the Clergy on the Civil Right, and Juriſdiction; the like judgment alſo they gave of Wills and Teſtaments, the inſpection into which by the Biſhop, was judged an intrenchment of the Secular Power.

Howſoever, the Pope remained extreamly ſatisfied with the concluſion of this Seſſion, all things having been managed according to his own Orders, and Inſtructions. And now for the future he reſolved to ſtand upon his guard, and countermine the Plots, and Artifices of the Cardinal of *Lorain*, who came, as he was well aſſured, with vaſt deſigns, as did alſo the *French* Biſhops who were armed with Maxims diametrically oppoſite to his Authority; againſt whom and the other *Ultramontanes*, he reſolved to reinforce his numbers, and power in the Council, by new recruits of *Italian* Biſhops.

The ſame day that this laſt Seſſion was concluded, the *French* Ambaſſadours received Letters from their Maſter, requiring them to move the Council, that a ſtop might be given to their proceedings in matters of Doctrine, until the Biſhops from *France* ſhould arrive, and that in the mean time they would prepare matters tending to the Reformation of manners and abuſes crept into the Church, which was the only Sovereign remedy capable to cure the diſtempers of the Church: the which Inſtructions the Ambaſſadours having made known to the Legats, by whom according to due Order all matters were propoſed, received this Anſwer from them: That they could not invert the Rule and Method already deſigned, for deciſion of the Doctrines of Faith, and Reformation of Manners, but were forced to proceed, in their uſual courſe, without any delay and interruption; and if their King had any thing to propoſe it might be done by them his Ambaſſadours, whom he had deputed to repreſent his concernments at the Council. This Anſwer did little pleaſe the Ambaſſadors, ſo that they appeared openly diſcontented: and the Pope on the other ſide fearing leſt the power and wiſdom of the Cardinal of *Lorain* ſhould be ſtronger than his Auxiliaries of *Italian* Biſhops, endeavoured by his Legat in *France* to take him off, perſuading him that his Negotiations in the Council could procure him no reputation, in regard that all things were already done, and concluded.

And indeed they were much in the right, for the Legats [illegible]ing a deſire to diſpatch, and put a period to the Council, were reſolved to hearken to no delays, but to proceed to the two Articles of Doctrine, namely, the Sacraments (as they called them) of Ordination and Marriage, which were the onely Points remaining to be examined, and determined. On which Points the Congregations began to treat on the 25th. of *September*, and continued their Diſcourſes and Treatiſes thereupon until the ſecond of *October*. 1562. But all theſe Diſputes which aroſe upon theſe Subjects ſeemed impertinent, and loſs of time to the Biſhop of *quinque Eccleſiæ*, and the other *Hungarian* Prelats, as alſo to the *Polanders* and *Spaniards*; who at a private conference amongſt themſelves concluded, that their meeting was chiefly with deſign to reform abuſes in manners which were crept into the Church, rather than to determine matters of Faith; that in this work it was neceſſary to begin the Reformation at the Court *Rome*, which was the Head and ſource from whence the ſtreams ought to be derived in their purity; reflecting with deep ſenſe of diſpleaſure, on the encroachments which the Court of *Rome* made on their Epiſcopal Dignity: and in order hereunto the Arch-Biſhop of *Braganca* was of Opinion, that the firſt thing to be done, was to reduce the Cardinals to their primary Inſtitution; for that until the 10th. Century they were meer Prieſts; and onely began from that time to exalt their Dignities, and yet until the 12th. Century they were eſteemed inferiour to Biſhops; though ſince that time by ſeveral degrees and ſteps they have ſo elevated and promoted their quality with Titles, and extention of Power, that a Biſhop is eſteemed to have had honour ſufficient, in being onely admitted a domeſtick Chaplain to a Cardinal, and therefore to bring the Epiſcopal Dignity again into requeſt, it were neceſſary to have it expreſly declared by the Council, that that *Hierarchy* is *Jure Divino*, and that Biſhops hold their Power and Authority immediately from Jeſus Chriſt, and not from the Pope. The which queſtion came at a ſeaſonable, and an opportune time to be dicuſſed; for one Article under conſideration being then to define that the Order of Epiſcopacy was above that of Prieſthood, it fell naturally into the Enquiry, Whether that Superiority was by Divine Right or not. Now the Legats at firſt not comprehending the meaning and deſign, why this queſtion was propoſed with ſo much heat, ſuffered it to proceed to a free examination: but ſo ſoon as they diſcovered by the Biſhop of *Fortoſa*, who was a *Spaniard*, and yet a Penſioner of *Rome*, that the Arch-Biſhops of *Granada* and *Barganca* intended on the conſequences of this Determination to infer, that their Order being eſtabliſhed by Divine Right, and not received from the Papal Chair, their Power would ſeem more inherent in themſelves, and leſs dependant on the Supreme Biſhop. So that the Legats being awakened by this intimation, denied to have that queſtion put on the tryal, and notwithſtanding the high and paſſionate Words which intervened between them and the Arch-Biſhops of *Spain*, they poſitively forbad the Divines to treat farther on that Subject. Howſoever after the Legats had conſidered, that the Authority of theſe great Men had ſo deeply impreſſed this Opinion in the minds of the inferiour Clergy, as was not to be defaced by the ſingle daſh of an over-ruling Power; they appointed four Devines to confute the Arguments of the *Spaniſh* Prelats, and to prove that the Biſhops held their Power from the Pope, and not immediately from Jeſus Chriſt; and that Epiſcopacy was no otherwiſe of Divine Right, than as the whole Order of that *Hierarchy* was inherent in the Pope, as the Head and ſource from whence all Eccleſiaſticall Power was derived; by vertue of which, it was in him onely to ordain Biſhops over particular Churches, to augment, enlarge, or reſtrain their juriſdiction; and to depoſe, ſuſpend, and transfer their truſt and dignity unto others, as he in his wiſdom, and infallible judgment ſhould determine, and command. In defence of this Opinion, *Lainez*, General of the *Jeſuits*, an Orator of particular Note, was appointed in a ſet Speech, and at a Congregation purpoſely called to hear him on this queſtion: and thereupon ſuch liberty was given him of Diſcourſe, that he declaimed for the ſpace of two hours without any interruption, alledging every thing which with any appearance of colour might be deduced from Scripture, or the Antient Fathers; all which was concluded with the general Applauſe of the Papal Party; whileſt others of the contrary Opinion were offended and netled in the higheſt degree. Amongſt the reſt the Biſhop of *Paris* at the next Congregation ſpake high, and proteſted publickly againſt this Doctrine, which (as he ſaid) was invented by *Cajetan*, who thereby merited the reward of a Cardinals Hat, that the gentle Government of the Church was degenerated into Tyranny, that the Spouſe of Jeſus Chriſt was made a Slave, and proſtituted to the Arbitrary pleaſure of a ſingle Perſon. That for his part he was weary of thoſe affronts and contempts which were daily offered to the Epiſcopal Dignity, on which every petty Monk began to trample; nor could he longer ſupport the neglects which the Order of begging Friers put on that Sacred Function, nor the inſolences of the upſtart Company of *Jeſuits*, who being neither Seculars nor Regulars, but a mix'd compoſition of both, acknowledged no other Juriſdiction but their own. All which was delivered with ſuch heat and vehemence, as moved the bloud, and farther incenſed the minds of all thoſe who were already enflamed with Reſentments againſt the Speech of *Lainez*; ſo that there was a common murmur through the whole Council, univerſally concluding that the Speech of the Biſhop of *Paris* was a clear refutation of all the frothy Oratory, delivered by the General of the *Jeſuits*: howſoever the Legats ſtill perſiſted in their Aſſertion, and for ſupport thereof were forming a new Party againſt the *Spaniſh* Prelates. But theſe Diſputes, and heats were for a while ſuppreſſed by the many inſtances which were made by the *Spaniards*, *French*, *Germans* and others for a Reformation; deſiring that all other Debates, and Controverſies being laid aſide, the Council would be wholly intent to that great work of rectifying abuſes, which was the onely means that could produce peace, and quiet in the Church. But the Legats withſtood this ſhock, and endeavoured by delays and Artifices to evade this Aſſault made upon the Papal Power: on which they dreaded the ſtorm, which the Cardinal of *Lorain* would make thereupon; for he being now on his Journey to *Trent*, gave out in all places through which he travelled, that his Deſign was to abate the greatneſs and pride of the Pope, and to eaſe the People of their Oppreſſions, and Tyrannies which they ſuffered by the Court of *Rome*. This Cardinal was a Perſon of great Power, Intereſt, and Revenue in *France*, and therefore impatient of ſubjection to a Foreiner, and deſirous himſelf to be Pope, or ſupreme Head of the *Gallican* Church; to break all theſe Meaſures, and countermine theſe Plots, the Legats propoſed ſeveral, and different means: ſometimes it was reſolved, that the Pope ſhould come to *Bologna*, that his near reſidence might over-awe the Council: but not knowing how this might operate; the next expedient was to adjourn the Council to ſome other place, to prorogue it for ſome certain time, and in fine, if all ſhould fail, then to diſſolve it. But this Remedy ſeeming too violent, it was judged more convenient to ſuſpend for a while the ordinary courſe of the Congregations, hoping that with time the ſpirits, and heats which *Lainez* Diſcourſe had raiſed, would abate, and be alloyed. But this Remedy produced a contrary effect; for the Prelates being at leiſure, banded together, and dividing into ſeveral Factions, and Meetings, formed as many Councils, as were Parties, or intereſts. Thus ſeven days paſſing without Congregations, the *Spaniards* grew weary of the delays, and with a haughty and arrogant manner aſſociating themſelves together, came to the Legats, and poſſitively demanded, that Epiſcopacy ſhould be declared to be by Divine Right; to oppoſe this *Spaniſh* ſtiffneſs, natural to the humour of that Nation, eighteen or twenty Prelats were ſet up to contradict this Demand, and require that no Determination ſhould be made of that Controverſie. So that the Legats making uſe of theſe diviſions to excuſe themſelves, not being able to ſatisfie both Parties, all things remained in ſuſpence, and in the mean time there was nothing but confuſion, and tumult, and Conſults, how, and in what manner to make Parties, and Intereſts; which gave the Legats juſt cauſe to fear the ill effect which theſe Diſorders might produce.

After this intermiſſion of Congregations: on the 3d. of *November* they began again to meet; when many Expedients were propoſed to accommodate the Diſputes which made ſo great a noiſe, namely, Whether Epiſcopacy, and the Reſidence of Biſhops in their reſpective Dioceſes

ceſes

caſes, were inſtituted by Divine Right. As to the latter the Cardinal *Mantua*, one of the Legats, did propoſe to have the queſtion remain undecided; but howſoever, that every Biſhop ſhould be obliged under ſevere penalties to reſide in his Dioceſs; it being not material, whether ſuch reſidence were *Jure Divino*, or not, provided that every perſon obſerved and performed his duty therein. But the firſt queſtion was controverted with more paſſion, the Biſhop of *Segovia* averring, that the Order of Epiſcopacy was declared by the Council held under *Julius* III. to be *Jure Divino.* Upon reading the Act, though the *Roman* Party would not dare to ſay, that the Councill had erred in that Point; yet they endeavoured to evade the force of it, by diſtinguiſhing between the Order abſtractively, and the Juriſdiction of it.

During theſe Conteſts the Cardinal of *Lorain* arrived at *Trent*, where he made his entry on Horſe-back with a great Train, and Pomp, ſupported between the two Cardinals of *Mantoua* and *Seripande*, who were the principal Legats. By this addition the Council began to be numerous; the Prelats onely amounting to the number of two hundred and eighteen, which though much inferiour to Antient Councils, were howſoever a greater appearance than any, that had yet been known in *Trent*. The favourers of the *Roman* Party looked on this increaſe, as a recruit of *Auxiliaries*, which were come in to reinforce their Enemies; and therefore to redouble their vigilance, and augment their force, the *Pope* diſpeeded all the Power he had of Cardinals and Biſhops to the Council; fearing that the Union which was formed between the *Spaniards*, *French*, and *Germans*, would be too powerful for his *Italian* Adherents.

The 23d. of *November* was the day when the Cardinal of *Lorain* made his firſt appearance in the Congregation: when as a Prologue to all the reſt, the King's Letters were firſt read, containing little more, than to pray, and exhort the Council in general terms, that they would bend all their labours, and endeavours, towards a Reformation, and to thoſe means, which might reſtore Peace and Unity in the Church.

The Letters being read, the Cardinal, in an elaborate and pathetical Speech began to relate the calamities which the Wars about Religion had cauſed in *France*: deſiring the Council that for a remedy thereof they would be pleaſed to be indulgent to the Proteſtants, in condeſcending to their weak, and tender Conſciences ſo far, as was conſiſtent with the Doctrines of Faith: and then declaiming againſt the corruptions which were crept into the Church, he inſtantly deſired, that an inſpection might be made into the many abuſes of which the Clergy were guilty, to whom he ingeniouſly applyed the Hiſtory of the Prophet *Jonas*. We, *ſaid he,* are the cauſe of all theſe ſtorms, we that have departed, and fled from the face of God, caſt us into the Seas, and the tempeſt will abate. This Diſcourſe was ſeconded by the *French* Ambaſſadour *du Ferrier*, much to the ſame purpoſe, and then concluded, thus: If you aſk me, why *France* is not in Peace, and what is the cauſe of all theſe diviſions which thus miſerably rend, and tear out the bowels of that diſtreſſed Nation? I muſt anſwer you in the ſame manner as *Jehu* did to *Joram* 2 *Kings* c. 9. v. 22. when he aſked, *Is it peace,* Jehu? *How can it be peace, ſo long as the whoredoms of thy mother* Jezebel, *and her witchcrafts are ſo many?* In fine, he frankly told them, That in caſe they took not ſome courſe to reform the diſorders in *France*, all the blood that was there ſpilt, would be laid to their charge: and though this plain dealing did infinitely diſpleaſe the favourers of the Court of *Rome*, yet they judged it ſeaſonable to diſſemble their Reſentments, fearing leſt *France* in that doubtful ſtate, ſhould make a total defection from the See of *Rome*.

And now it is curious, and worthy our obſervation to conſider, that whileſt the ſpecious Propoſal of Reformation was offered, it was plauſible, and conſented unto in general terms by every Party, and Intereſt; but when they deſcended to particulars, and would apply the remedies to the reſpective abuſes, then there appeared a ſtrange, and prodigious diverſity in their Opinions, every one being willing to reform others, but not himſelf, or his Party, eaſily obſerving the Moat in their Brothers Eye, but not the Beam in their own. The Court of *Rome* would gladly aſſent to a reformation of Princes and Biſhops, but not yield to any inſpection, which might be made into the corruptions of their Conſiſtories, or into the Power which they had uſurped. The Biſhops could eaſily agree to a reformation of Manners in the Courts of the Pope, and of their reſpective Princes, but could not hear of having their Authority, or Revenues retrenched. The Kings and Princes inſtantly preſſed to have a Reformation of the Clergy both of the Head and of the Members, but could not endure to hear of having their *Regalia* diminiſhed, or the Power of conferring, and diſpoſing Benefices according to their pleaſure. Wherefore it was impoſſible, that all their different Intereſts could ever be reconciled, or at the end concenter in a ſingle *Tertio*, or common agreement.

Wherefore being wearied with theſe Debates, and finding out new Expedients, which could never ſquare with the form of ſuch Diſſenting Intereſts; they again re-aſſumed the old and weariſom Debates about the being of Reſidencies, and Epiſcopacy by Divine Right in which nothing of the former heats were abated. The Biſhop of *Auranch* declared poſitively, that his Opinion was, that Epiſcopacy was by Divine Right, and that the Authority of the *Pope* differed not from that of an ordinary Biſhop, but onely in degree, and was reſtrained within the limits of the Canons: He farther applauded the Decrees of the Parliament of *Paris*, which declared the abuſive Bulls of the Pope to be void in their own nature, and forbad to have them put into Execution; and thus much, ſaid he, the Power of my Maſter is able to verify, and make good. But the heats about Reſidencies began to abate; it being made appear, that if that Point were once gained, it would not onely be an eclipſe, but a total ruin of the Papal Authority; for if the Reſidence of Biſhops were declared to be by Divine Right, it would follow, that the Pope thenceforth remains deveſted of all Power to transfer, diminiſh, divide, or make any change, or alteration in the Epiſcopal Sees. All which though the *Spaniards* knew very well, and that their aim was onely to advance their own Intereſt and Authority, yet they would ſeem to maintain the contrary, and that this Conceſſion would ſerve to render the Papal Power more conſiderable, and glorious. In fine, it was agreed to ſend this Point about Reſidences to the Pope by the Biſhop of *Ventimille*. Thus was this whole year conſumed in theſe Controverſies, the laſt day of *December*, concluding with a Congregation, at which it was reſolved that the Seſſion ſhould be deferred for fifteen days.

1563. At the beginning of this year 1563. the *French* propoſed thirty four Articles in order to a Reformation; the moſt part of which reſpected the Clergy, tending to the correction of abuſes in Ordinations and promotion of unworthy Perſons both for their lives and knowledg, to places of eminence and honour in the Church. Some alſo related to the Court of *Rome*, and to the retrenchment of its Revenue, the exaction whereof was an agrievance to the People of *France*. Other Articles forbad Plurality of Benefices; and Moneys, or Rewards to be given for adminiſtration of the Sacraments. It was alſo required that Divine Service might be rendred and performed in the *French* Tongue, at leaſt that the principal Prayers be pronounced both in the *French* and in the *Latin* Tongue. That the Communion be delivered in both kinds. That Biſhops within their reſpective Dioceſes have a juriſdiction over the Religious in Monaſteries, as well as over Seculars. That all Abuſes be taken away in the ſuperſtitious worſhip of Images, and the fond and vain Imaginations which Men conceive of Reliques, Pilgrimages and Indulgences. That the Doctrine and practice of Penance ſhould be again renewed, and eſtabliſhed according to the cuſtom of the Primitive Church. All or moſt of which Articles were ungrateful to the Legats, both for the ſubſtance of them, and circumſtances with which they were delivered; the Ambaſſadours at the ſame time declaring, that in caſe they were not granted, ſuch proviſions would be made in *France* by a National Council as were agreeable to the State of their Affairs. Howſoever the Legats ſeemed favourably to accept them, and diſpatched them to the *Pope* by the Biſhop of *Viterbo*.

And now by this time the *Pope* was ready to make a return of the concluſions he had made in the Point about Reſidencies, diſpatched from *Trent* by the Biſhop of *Ventimille*; the matter of which, though couched with great Art, and in ſuch ambiguous terms as might admit of various interpretations; yet that artificial fraud could not paſs on ſuch ſubtil Heads, who for their Learning and Experience were choſen out of the wiſeſt Men of *Europe*; for they eaſily diſcovered the *Pope*'s intent to advance himſelf above an Univerſal Council; they could have been contented to have admitted him the Chief *ſuper Eccleſias Univerſas*, but not *ſuper Eccleſiam Univerſalem*; that is over all Churches in particular, but not over the Univerſal Church as it was aggregated into one body in a General Council. Hereupon great Conteſts aroſe; the Penſioners of *Rome* produced in favour of the *Pope*'s Authority a Canon made by the Council of *Florence*, which having been received by the *Spaniards*, gave them ſome trouble in what manner to make an Anſwer thereunto. But the *French*, who had never received the Articles of that Council for Canonical, oppoſed the Councils of *Conſtance* and *Baſil* againſt it, which had determined, that General Councils were ſuperiour to the *Pope*: but the *Italians*, who maintained, that the Council of *Baſil* was Schiſmatical, and that the Canons of *Conſtance* were partly received, and partly rejected, ſo heated their *French* Opponents, that Reaſons and Arguments being on both ſides declined, the Diſpute ended with high words and reproaches of one againſt the other. Which the Legats well obſerving, and that there could be no good iſſue of ſuch high Conteſts, deſired time to remit theſe matters to the *Pope*'s Cenſures; and ſo proceeded again to the Point about Reſidencies: the which having already cauſed inextricable difficulties (for the *Pope*'s words did not pleaſe the Council) the Cardinal of *Lorain* propoſed ſomething by way of Accommodation, putting in ſome gentler terms which might ſerve the turn of both Parties: but the Legats penetrating with their accuſtomary Acuteneſs into the words, found that the ſenſe would bear an Interpretation, which might be expounded in favour of the Opinion that Reſidencies were conſtituted by Divine Right. Wherefore ſlighting, or laying aſide the words which the Cardinal had projected, they framed another according to their own humour, and preſented it to the Congregation: the which ſo incenſed the Cardinal of *Lorain*, that from thenceforward, he began to deal plainly, and expreſs himſelf in free, and high terms, proteſting that for the future he would meddle no farther, for that he obſerved a ſecret Combination, which in Cabinet Conſults aſſumed to its ſelf an Authority to diſpoſe matters differing from the Sentiments of the General Council. That the Legats ſought nothing more than occaſions to break up the Council in diſcontent. That nothing was acted, but according to the will of the Legats, who moved by ſuch meaſures only as they received from the *Pope*, whoſe reſolution in every thing they expected from *Rome* according to the old ſaying, That the Holy Ghoſt was brought every week from *Rome* to *Trent* in the Courriers Portmantle. That he for his part was reſolved to have patience until the next Seſſion, at which if matters were not managed with more fair proceedings, he was reſolved to retire into *France* with his *French* Nation then at the Council, where renouncing all farther applications to *Rome*, or *Trent*, they were reſolved to aſſemble a National Council, by which they would eſtabliſh ſuch a form of Concordat, as ſhould be agreeable to the preſent ſtate of their Country, and which might ſecure the ſafety of the King and the quiet of his People. To the ſame purpoſe the *French* Ambaſſadour expreſſed himſelf at *Rome*; but the *Pope* who had been long uſed to ſuch kind of Menaces, and a noiſe about National Councils; little regarded their Cenſures, or Threats: but briskly anſwered, That the Council was free even to a licentiouſneſs; that if there were Parties, and Factions, they were unknown to him, and were only made by the *Ultramontane* Biſhops, whoſe deſign was to trample on the Authority of the Papal Chair: And in this manner ſuch diſtractions, and diſputes aroſe at *Trent* occaſioned by the Power and Intereſt which the Cardinal of *Lorain* had there with the greateſt part of the Clergy, that the Congregations were for ſome time ſuſpended, until the Cardinal of *Ventimille* returned from *Rome*, freighted with abundance of Complements, and Salutes, and eſpecially with ſupplies of Money for the *Pope*'s Penſioners; and then the Congregations being again commenced, and with them the Diſcords renewed; it was agreed, that the next Seſſion ſhould be deferred until the 22*th*. of *April*, which was preſently after *Eaſter*. The Cardinal of *Lorain* though he ſeemed outwardly to conſent hereunto with ſome reluctancy, and only in compliance with the reſt of the Council, yet in reality he was well enough pleaſed, hoping that a ſhort time would put an end to the life of this *Pope* who was very aged, and infirm; when he imagined that his Greatneſs, and Authority would be very inſtrumental in promoting ſuch a Perſon to the Papacy, as would be facil, and eaſie in granting every thing agreeable to his deſires.

And now to allay a little the heats about the Divine Right of Epiſcopacy, and Reſidencies, the Council diverted their thoughts, and Diſcourſe to eight ſeveral Points relating to Marriage. During which time, and the Interval between that and the next Seſſion, the Cardinal of *Lorain* took the opportunity to viſit the Emperor's Court at *Inſpruck*, which adminiſtred great cauſe of jealouſie to the *Pope*; who not onely obſerved the Cardinal's diſaffection from his proceedings in the Council, but likewiſe from his Letter, wherein complaining of the many Factions and Intrigues which his *Italian* Biſhops had cauſed, he concludes, that if matters were carried on with the ſame Meaſures, there would remain nothing more for him, either to conſider, or act, than onely to pray unto God to direct the Council with his Holy Inſpiration.

The Cardinal of *Lorain* being arrived at *Inſpruck*, where he remained five days, had frequent Conferences with the Emperor, and his Son the King of the *Romans*, touching the many diſorders and corruptions of the Council at *Trent*; as alſo of the means how, and in what manner the Cup might be reſtored to the Laiety; how Marriage might be granted, and diſpenſed to Prieſts; and Divine Service performed in the Vulgar Tongue; but more eſpecially their thoughts were buſied about reformation of the Church, and the diſſolute Manners both of the Head and Members of it.

The Cardinal being returned to *Trent*, kept all his Diſcourſes and Negotiations at *Inſpruck* as a Secret, declaring himſelf onely in general terms, that he obſerved in the Emperour a paſſionate deſire of a Reformation, but yet without any diminution or abatement of the Papal Authority. About this time the Cardinal of *Mantoua* died, who was the firſt Preſident of the Council, by whoſe deceaſe the Cardinal *Seripanda* being the next Legat, took on him that Office, until ſuch time as the *Pope* nominated two other Cardinals (namely *Moron* and *Navagier*) to ſucceed into his place, the which he did with admirable expedition to prevent the inſtances, which the *French* might make in the behalf of the Cardinal of *Lorain*.

And now the Point of *Celibacy*, or ſingle lives of Prieſts, which was one of the eight particulars relating to Marriage, came into queſtion, which was reſerved until the time that the Cardinal of *Lorain* could be there preſent; in handling of which all the Divines agreed, that it was Hereſie to believe, that the Prieſts of the *Weſtern* Church being under a Vow, and an Eccleſiaſtical Canon to the contrary, were capable of entering into a lawful State of Marriage; onely the difficulty was, whether it was in the Power of the *Pope*, in ſome caſes to grant a Diſpenſation to a Prieſt againſt his Vow of *Celibacy*, and Chaſtity; and whether the preſent emergencies and neceſſities were ſuch, as might induce the *Pope* to grant ſuch Diſpenſations. In diſcuſſing of which queſtion, it was confeſſed, that the Oriental Churches did frequently confer Holy Orders on Perſons, who were already married; but yet that it was never their cuſtom, to give liberty to unmarried Prieſts to change the State of their ſingle life. But others extended this liberty yet farther; not reſtraining even Monks from that ſatisfaction, in maintenance of which they alledged the Authority of St. *Auſtin*; whoſe Opinion it was, That Monks taking Wives, their Marriage was Legal, though it was undecent, and what rendered them Prevaricators from their Vows to God, and their Promiſes to the World. In fine, though the generality of Voices would not proceed ſo far as to make the marriage of Monks lawful, yet by Plurality of Votes, it was carried, that in ſome caſes a Diſpenſation might be granted for a Prieſt to marry: for which Sentence, and for hazarding that queſtion on its tryal, the *Pope* much blamed his Legats; in excuſe of which, they alledged their inability to withſtand the earneſt Inſtances which the Emperors, and the Duke of *Bavaria*'s Ambaſſadours had made in that particular.

About this time the Cardinal of *Lorain* received the bad news of the death of his Brother the Duke of *Guiſe*, who was murthered by a Ruffian before the City of *Orleans*; which allarm'd the Cardinal, and cauſed him to ſet a more ſecure Watch, and Guard over his own Perſon; nor was the Council leſs concerned in the death of this great Man, who was eſteemed the Head, and Chief Protector of the Catholick Party in *France*.

Amidſt theſe troubles the Biſhop of *quinque Eccleſiæ* returned from *Inſpruck* to *Trent* bringing two Letters with him from the Emperor; one whereof was to the Council, inſtantly exhorting them to labour in the work of Reformation; and another to the *Pope*, earneſtly entreating him not to diſſolve the Council, leſt thereby he ſhould give ſcandal to the Hereticks, and cauſe them to reproach, and divide both the Church, and its Aſſemblies. But above all, he deſired that the Council might be free, and not confined by the Orders of his Court, nor by ſuch Methods of proceeding as ſtop'd the mouths of all but his Legats, *there* being nothing to be propounded but by their words, *Proponentibus Legatis*: and in fine he complained, that after all the labours, and Diſputes of the Biſhops, and Divines to ſet things right, there was no concluſion, or eſtabliſhment of any matter, until it had firſt received its approbation from *Rome*. This bold Letter which the Emperor adventured to write with more plain dealing than ever *Charles* V. or his other Predeceſſors durſt to uſe, highly offended the *Pope*, cauſing him to return a ſmart Anſwer to it in terms very diſobliging to the Emperour; *telling* him amongſt other things, that he was very acute in obſerving the Diſorders of the Council; but in the mean time was blind in diſcerning from whence they proceeded; which if well conſidered, were chiefly from himſelf, and from others who inſtead of receiving Laws, were pleaſed to give them, and that had he followed the example of *Conſtantine*, and *Theodoſius*, thoſe diviſions and diſcords which appear in the Council would never have entered, or would ſpeedily have vaniſhed.

Howſoever, the Emperor ſtill continuing to oppoſe the Pope, joyned with the Cardinal of *Lorain*, and the *French* Party, to examine, and confute the Arguments which the Papal Faction brought to ſuſtain the clauſe of *Regens Eccleſiam Univerſalem*, which ſet up the Pope above the Authority of a General Council. So that the *Pope* perceiving, that there was no hopes of gaining either the Emperor, or the *French* to his ſide, reſolved to joyn himſelf to the *Spaniards*, who having received the Council of *Florence* were eaſily perſuaded to admit the clauſe, againſt which the others had objected. So that the *Pope* having his chief ſupport from the *Spaniſh* party treated the Ambaſſadour of that Nation with a diſtinguiſhing kindneſs, and reſpect; for which reaſon the Count *de Luna*, then Ambaſſadour for *Spain* at the Emperor's Court, wrote to the Secretary of the Embaſſy at *Trent*, as alſo to the Arch-Biſhop, and Biſhop of *Granada*, *Leon*, and *Segovia*, deſiring them to perſuade the other *Spaniſh* Biſhops to moderate their paſſions againſt the Court of *Rome*, and convert them into a zeal for the Papal Intereſt; ſo that the like inclinations ſwaying that whole Nation, the Count *d' Avila* who was Ambaſſadour for *Spain* at *Rome*, became extreamly partial to the *Pope*'s ſide; for when the *Imperialiſts* at a Conference with the *Pope* demanded, that the Cup might be given to the Laiety, and that Prieſts might be permitted to marry, the *Spaniards* oppoſed both; by which Diviſions the Pope gladly made his excuſe to determine neither Point, pretending in that doubtful condition to refer all to the determination of the Council.

About this time the Cardinal *Seripanda* one of the Legats died, as had not long before his Colleague the Cardinal of *Mantoua*, ſo that for ſome time the Congregation adjourned, until the ſupply of new Legats were come from *Rome*, who were daily expected.

And now the *Pope*, who with long delays and general terms had wearied out the patience of thoſe, who expreſly contended for a Reformation, began to conſider of the ways, and means, how he might abſolutely throw off the thoughts of it, and handſomly acquit himſelf with the *French* Nation thereupon. He was once inclined, as was ſaid, to have granted all the Points demanded, which did not intrench upon the Papal Authority, and voluntarily have yielded a Licenſe for Prieſts to marry, and to the Laiety the Communion in both kinds: but then conſidering that theſe conceſſions would open a gate to other Demands, and to ſuch a croud of Novelties, which preſſing in at this breach might ruine, and over-run all the conſtitutions, and Canons of the Church; he therefore reſolved to keep himſelf firm to the preſent State of Principles, and Governments, which he doubted not but to maintain, in caſe he could work off the Emperor from the *French* Party; to which end, he ordered the Cardinal of *Moron* who was to ſucceed into the place of one of the deceaſed Legats to paſs from *Trent* to *Inſpruck*, there to treat with the Emperor; and repreſenting to him, how fatal ſuch Novelties would be to the Church, endeavour to perſuade him not to inſiſt farther on thoſe Points, but leaving the *French* to their own Opinions, to take part with the *Pope*, and the King of *Spain*, whoſe friendſhip was more ſtable, and ſecure, than that of *France*. At this time news came to *Trent*, that the King had concluded a Peace at *Orleans* with his Proteſtant Subjects; and it was ſuggeſted at *Rome*, that this Peace was made by contrivance of the *French* Biſhops, who ſecretly, and in their hearts were tainted with Hereſie; at which the *Pope* was ſo incenſed, that at a Congregation of Cardinals convened the 31. of *March*, he ordered the Judges of the Court of Inquiſition to proceed againſt ſuch Perſons, as were Inſtrumental in that Peace: and accordingly *Coligny* Cardinal of *Chatillon*, St. *Romain* Arch-Biſhop of *Axi*, *John de Monluc* Biſhop of *Valence*, the Biſhop of *Troye*, the Biſhop of *Pamiers*, and the Biſhop of *Chartres*, were all accuſed of Hereſie, and cited to appear at *Rome* before the Tribunal of the Inquiſition. By theſe Accidents the quarrels of *France* encreaſing both at *Trent*, and at *Rome*, the *French* Divines being diſpleaſed both with their ill treatment, and with the long delays in all matters at *Trent*, reſolved to take their leave of the Council; which the Legats eaſily granted; and to which the *French* Ambaſſadours ſo readily aſſented, that they even forced them to retire, by denying to them their Penſions, in caſe they continued in that ſtation againſt the pleaſure of the King; howſoever three Friers who were Penſioners of *Rome* continued ſtill there at the *Pope's* charge, reſolving to ſee the utmoſt iſſue of all thoſe Affairs.

The 22. of *April* having been the day formerly appointed for the Seſſion, a general Congregation was held the day before; at which the Legats declaring that matters were not prepared for a Seſſion, did propoſe, that it might be again deferred until the 3d. of *June* following: to which the Cardinal of *Lorain* replyed, that it ſeemed derogatory to the wiſdom and gravity of that Council, ſo often to appoint times for a Seſſion, and then again to ſubject them to farther delays; wherefore it would be much more adviſable to prefix the 21th. of *May* following for the time when a day ſhould preciſely be appointed for holding a Seſſion: This Propoſition ſo generally pleaſed the Council, that with a common Voice they aſſented thereunto; and though this unanimous concurrence with the Cardinal in this matter of ſmall importance adminiſtred ſubject both of jealouſie and envy to the Legats; yet they could well enough reliſh any thing of delay, in hopes that the moſt violent and hot ſpirits being wearied with long expectation, would either abate of their mettle, or elſe retire in diſpair or diſcontent.

The Cardinal *Moron* was detained at *Inſpruck* for a longer time than he expected, by reaſon that the Emperor ſuffered all his Papers and Memorials to be inſpected, and examined by certain of his own Divines; which the Cardinal highly reſented as an indignity to the *Pope*, whoſe Propoſals were more ſacred, than to be expoſed to the cenſures of a few ſilly Prieſts; and indeed it was believed, that this manner of treatment proceeded from the dictates of the Cardinal of *Lorain*, who at that time had diſpatched one of his Gentlemen to the Emperor, deſiring him to ſpeak plainly to the Cardinal *Moron*, giving him to underſtand, that the Council ought to be free, and not to be tranſlated from *Trent* unto any other place, as ſome had contrived out of no good intent to the publick welfare.

In the mean time the *Pope* was dealing with thoſe Ambaſſadours who reſided with him at *Rome*, to prevail with their Maſters, to refer all Diſputes about Reformation to himſelf, rather than the Council: for that the abuſes in diſcipline were never eſteemed the cauſes of Hereſies, as plainly appeared in the Primitive Church, where Hereſies were very importunate and troubleſom, notwithſtanding the purity of their Government, and the incorruption of their Manners. That it was impoſſible to extract a Reformation from the common conſent of ſuch different Intereſts, moſt of which being guided by a zeal without prudence, ſerved onely to diſcover the nakedneſs of the Church, and make it maniſeſt to all the World, that her Evils were incurable.

After a long vacation, for ſome weeks a Congregation was held on the 14*th.* of *May*, when the Cardinal of *Lorain* made a long and Eloquent Oration about Biſhops, and the means how to prevent the abuſes in their Election; he firſt began with thoſe of *France*, which was onely an Introduction to his Satyr againſt the Court of *Rome*, which he termed the ſource and original of all the abuſes and corruptions in the Church:

he inveighed chiefly againſt thoſe Cardinals who held Pluralities of Biſhopricks; ſhewing that all the tricks and contrivances for holding ſeveral Benefices *in Commendam*, and the like, were only Artifices to delude that wiſe God, who would neither be mocked nor deceived. Which Diſcourſe might proceed well enough from the mouth of another; though it became not the Cardinal who was known to poſſeſs a Revenue from the Church of a million of Livers *per annum*; to all which the Cardinal *Moron* who was newly returned from the Emperor, replyed with great ſharpneſs, nor ſparing the Cardinal himſelf in the leaſt, which ſerved to enflame thoſe Feuds, which had taken their Original from former cauſes.

And now upon return of Cardinal *Moron* from the Emperor, every one began to diſcourſe of the iſſue, which his Negotiations had produced; on which Subject, the common report was, that the Emperor had promiſed to defend the Authority of the *Pope* againſt the oppoſition and reſiſtance of Hereticks. That he would not paſs beyond *Inſpruck*, nor conſent to have the Council removed from *Trent* to *Bologna*; nor could he accept the Propoſition of coming to *Bologna*, and there be crowned by the hands of the Pope without the advice, and conſent of a Diet. This, as we ſaid; was what appeared above-board, and the more common Diſcourſe of the Town: but the truth, and the ſecret of it was this, That the Cardinal *Moron* had perſuaded the Emperor, and the King of the *Romans* to conſent to have the Council diſſolved; for in regard the intention and deſign of the Council was really no other, than to reform the Church, and the many corruptions in the ſeveral Members of it, and whereas it was apparent by plain experience, that a Council compoſed of ſuch different Intereſts, and Members, who were wedded to their own Parties, and their ſelf conſervation, would never endure a Reformation, which ſhould impair, or leſſen their condition: which being granted for a certain truth, the continuance of this Council would ſerve onely to multiply trouble, and inflame diſſentions: of which the Emperor being perfectly made ſenſible, conſented to have an end put to the Council: but leſt a ſudden diſſolution of it, ſhould make too great a noiſe, and render it ridiculous, or contemptible to the Proteſtants; it was judged moſt convenient to have the Council die of a Conſumption by ſuffering the Members to retire by degrees, whereby it would come to expire without noiſe, or trouble: and indeed every one growing now ſenſible, of the little fruit, which might be expected from the continuation of this Council, were of themſelves inclined to retire; many of them reflecting on the ſaying of *Gregory Nazianzen*. That the troubles of the Church are always augmented by the Aſſemblies of the Biſhops.

1563. Now when the 20*th.* of *May* was approaching which was the day appointed to conſider of a time to be prefixed for the following Seſſion; it was thought fit, at a Congregation held on the 19*th.* to defer the day for appointing a Seſſion until the 10*th.* of *June* following, by reaſon that the ſpirits of Men were ſtill boyling with high fermentation, all Controverſies being ſtill in diſpute, and nothing tended to a concluſion. And in the mean time the Count *de Luna* Ambaſſadour from *Spain*, being to be introduced publickly into the Congregation, gave occaſion to revive that antient quarrel about precedency between the Crowns of *France* and *Spain*, the which Point being obſtinately maintained by both Parties, various ways, and expedients of Accommodation were contrived both at *Rome* and *Trent* to ſatisfie and content both Parties: but the *French*, who reſolved not to retire the leaſt ſtep backwards, declared, that they would keep that ſtation and rank which was due to their place, and rather than recede in the leaſt, they would abandon the Council, and proteſt againſt all the Acts of it. So that the Count *de Luna* found great difficulty in being admitted to a place in the Council; nor could he be received there but at a time, when it was purpoſely contrived that the *French* Ambaſſadour ſhould be abſent. At *Rome* alſo the like Diſpute aroſe between the two Ambaſſadours, which the *Pope* finding impoſſible to be reconciled with indifferent terms, thought fit at length to ſpeak plainly to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour and tell him, that he was reſolved to maintain the King of *France* in his priviledg of Precedency, of which he had ever been poſſeſſed: Hereupon the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour deſired liberty to make his Proteſt; which being admitted, and he introduced into the *Pope*'s Chamber with four Witneſſes, he kneeled down, and having declared that his Maſter juſtly challenged the Precedency, as well on the Title of ancient Right as from the grandeur of his Kingdom of *Spain*, and the large extent of his other Dominions: he proceeded farther to magnify the conſtancy of his Maſter to the Catholick Cauſe, which he had with Valour and ſucceſs defended againſt all its Enemies, having never condeſcended, as the *French* had lately done, to terms prejudicial to the Church, nor diſpenſed with the Articles of Faith with ſuch eaſineſs as they had done by their Treaty with Hereticks at *Orleans*. The *Pope* being greatly overſwayed with this laſt argument, began to relent of his former Sentence, and gently replyed, That he was ready on all occaſions to ſerve and favour the Catholick King, and therefore not to appear poſitive in his own Opinion, he intended to remit the conſideration of this knotty difficulty to the Colledg of Cardinals.

Thus gently was this matter managed at *Rome*; But at *Trent* it made greater noiſe and diſturbance; for notwithſtanding the various contrivances and Propoſitions which were made to accommodate and ſalve the honour of both Nations in this Point, nothing proved effectual; the expedient offered to have a ſeparate place both in the Chappel, and in the Congregation for the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour, which ſhould neither ſeem above or beneath the *French*: and that when the Incenſe and Peace were given at High Maſs, they ſhould be performed at the ſame time by two Cenſors, and two Officials, that ſo neither Ambaſſador could have cauſe to complain, that the other was preferred before him. But this equality and concurrence was diſpleaſing to the *French*, who would not be contented with indifferent terms which ſhould conſerve the Point undecided, but required that judgment ſhould be clearly given in right of their Precedency; in default of which the Cardinal of *Lorain* did not onely threaten to cauſe great diſturbances; but the *French* Ambaſſadours declared their reſolution to make their Proteſt; not (as they ſaid) againſt the Legats, who acted according to their Inſtructions; nor againſt the Catholick King, who had reaſon to ſupport and maintain his own Right; nor againſt the Count *de Luna*, who obeyed the Orders of his Maſter; nor yet againſt the Papal Chair, to which they bore all Devotion and Obedience; but againſt *Pius* IV. who falſly ſtiled himſelf *Pope*, having by Simony and corruption ſubreptitiouſly got himſelf to be Elected, and placed in the Apoſtolical See. In proof of which they produced two Cedules for conſiderable ſums of Money. One of which the Cardinal *Caraffa* had received from the Duke of *Florence*, for the favour and aſſiſtance he had given in the Election of the Cardinal of *Medicis*; the which was afterwards ſent by the ſaid *Caraffa* to the *French* King; the other Cedule, though not produced, was poſitively alledged to remain in the poſſeſſion of the Cardinal of *Naples*, ſubſcribed by the proper hand-writing of the Pope himſelf. And farther, beſides this high manner of proceeding by Proteſt, the Ambaſſadour *du Ferrier* prepared an eloquent Speech in *Latin*, which was afterwards publiſhed in Print, though not ſpoken in the Council, wherein, after he had proved the right of Precedency to belong to his Maſter, he reproached the perſon and conduct of *Pius* IV. for having ſowed the ſeeds of Diſſention and War between two ſuch great and powerful Allies; and that having by a criminal Ingratitude forgotten all thoſe Obligations, which the Apoſtolical Chair owed to *Pepin*, *Charlemagne*, and *Lewis* his Son, Kings of *France*, by whoſe favour it had been exalted to its preſent greatneſs; he did therefore proteſt, that he would never more acknowledg this Pope for the Vicar of Jeſus Chriſt, nor own the Acts of this Aſſembly as of a General Council, having never been free, but reſtrained wholly to the Dictates of this Pope: And therefore he did in the name of his Maſter, Order and Command all the Prelats of the *French* Nation to retire unto their reſpective Dioceſſes, until ſuch time as a more free and lawful Council were convened. To this high pitch and degree of Diſſention were both Parties tranſported, that no other event or iſſue thereof was expected, than a ſpeedy and raſh diſſolution of the Council, of which every one, growing weary, wiſhed to ſee an end of their fruitleſs labours; but the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour remitting ſomething of his former heat, deſired time to acquaint his Maſter with all the preceding paſſeges; in which Interval theſe Heats abated, and the Council proceeded to other matters.

And now after all theſe ſtirs and combuſtions, and the many proteſtations which the Cardinal of *Lorain* made againſt the Pope, and his complaints againſt the abuſes and corruptions of the Court of *Rome*; on a ſudden his humour and affections changed, without any viſible cauſes which might move him thereunto; ſo that now inſtead of inveighing againſt the Pope, or being the chief in private Cabals againſt him; he with wonderful addreſs applyed himſelf to the Legats, and received the flatteries of Cardinal *Moron* with a pleaſing reliſh, contenting himſelf to hear the Legats tell him, that they deſired to act nothing without his privity, wiſhing that he would bear a ſhare of the burthen with them, being infinitely ſatisfied to have all their Affairs guided by his direction. But this dearneſs between them laſted not long, before the Queen Regent wrote a Letter to the Cardinal, in which ſhe required his ſpeedy return into *France*, where his preſence would be much more ſerviceable to the Crown, than it could be at *Trent*, from whence no good effect either towards Peace or Reformation could be expected. That having now concluded a Peace with her Proteſtant Subjects, which ſeemed to be well eſtabliſhed, and permanent, there was no farther neceſſity of giving them other ſatisfaction from Acts of the Council, or Conceſſions of the Pope; and therefore, that for the future he ſhould give Order to the *French* Clergy, not to combat with the Papal Authority, but rather to be concurring in whatſoever might fortifie, and confirm the ſame: To which part and action the Cardinal ſeemed eaſily to incline; in regard that ſtanding on ill terms with the Proteſtants, who were mortal Enemies to the Houſe of *Guiſe*, he found it neceſſary to ſupport himſelf with the favour of the Court of *Rome*, to which notwithſtanding all former quarrels, and Piques, he profeſſed himſelf a true Friend and an obedient Servant.

And now a new Ambaſſadour called *Birague* arrived at *Trent* from the Court of *France* with Letters, rendering an account unto the Council, of the Peace lately concluded with the Proteſtants, for which, and for the Articles granted to them in the free exerciſe of their Religion, there was ſuch a neceſſity, that without ſuch an accord, the Crown, and welfare of *France* would have been expoſed to utmoſt extremity; the which being performed with deſign of reducing the ſtraying, and wandering Sheep into the path and fold of the Church; it was hoped, that the Council would put a good Interpretation on this tranſaction, and approve of this Cure, and remedy which was unavoidable. The Council being doubtful what Anſwer to make unto this Letter, deſired time to conſider thereof, intending to diſpeed it by the Ambaſſadour *Lanſac*, who was preparing for his return into *France*; *Birague*, having in the mean time Commiſſion to paſs unto the Court of the Emperor. And now the Congregation proceeded to examine the Point about Eccleſiaſtical Ordinations; in the diſcuſſing of which, the Biſhops did not ſo ſtrictly adhere to the matter in hand, but that they made frequent excurſions into the abuſes of the Court of *Rome*; and thence deſcended to the old controverted Points about the Divine Right of Epiſcopacy, and Reſidences, which were never mentioned without Heats and Quarrels. In the treating of which, *Lainez* General of the *Jeſuits*, undertook to give a more home-blow than any had done before him, which he did with ſo much heat and vehemence, as if the ſalvation of mankind had depended thereupon: He took that occaſion alſo to excuſe Diſpenſations, the Impoſitions and Taxes laid by the Church, the Riches of the Court of *Rome*, and all thoſe things which are commonly termed Abuſes; thence he proceeded to exalt the Papal Authority above the Council, above all the Church, nay above the Clouds, and higher than we can imagine: the which Diſcourſe, though diſpleaſing both to the *Spaniards* and *French*, and all but the Penſioners of *Rome*, was highly applauded by the Legats, to whom his long Orations did never ſeem tedious, as if they had choſen him for the Interpreter, and Explainer of all their thoughts and deſigns; to which end, when his turn came to ſpeak, he was commanded to take his place in the middle of the Aſſembly, and heard always with patience, and applauſe of the Legats, when the Chiefs of other Orders were ordered to ſpeak in their places, and were brow-beaten, and diſcouraged. Howſoever, a certain *Benedictin* Monk offered to confute *Lainez*, and prove that the Poſition maintained by him, namely, That the Tribunal of the Pope, is the ſame with that of Jeſus Chriſt, was impious, and ſcandalous. But the Cardinal of *Lorain*, who had now changed his Deſigns and Intereſts, moderated the zeal and heats of both Parties; and the Legats laboured to pen ſuch a Determination of that matter, as might by the ſubtilty, and ambiguity of thoſe words ſeem to content all Parties: which Inſtrument, though the Cardinal of *Lorain* ſeemed to remain ſatisfied, yet the Canoniſts of *Trent*, and Penſioners of *Rome* made a thouſand difficulties, imagining that the words did not ſcrew or ſtrain up the Papal Authority to its true Note and Degree. About this time, *Maximilian*, who was no great friend to the *Pope*, having been lately choſen King of the *Romans*, ſent his Ambaſſadour to *Rome* to give him notice of his Election; but not in the ſame method which his Predeceſſours had practiſed, who promiſed, and ſwore to whatſoever the *Popes* impoſed upon them: for before he would paſs that point, he deſired firſt to know what terms the *Pope* would require of him; to which anſwer was made by the Cardinals, That he ſhould acknowledg his confirmation to the *Pope's* Authority, and ſwear Obedience to him in ſuch manner, as his Predeceſſours had formerly practiſed; which though the Ambaſſadour in the name of his Maſter refuſed to do, in ſuch ſtrict ſenſe as the *Pope* required, and would only promiſe Devotion, Reverence, and compliance with the Apoſtolical Chair; yet the *Pope* was pleaſed to accept thereof, and interpret thoſe expreſſions to be equivalent to the term of Obedience, and accordingly granted the Confirmation, which was never demanded, and accepted the Obedience, which was never offered.

At a Congregation held on the 21*ſt*. of *June*, all things were preparing againſt the Seſſion appointed for the 15*th*. of *July* following, that nothing might then obſtruct the proceedings, or give occaſion to defer the time, as had formerly been done, to the great diſ-reputation of the Council, and ſcandal of its Enemies. The great difficulties in the queſtions ſo often diſcuſſed about Reſidencies, and Inſtitution of Biſhops were ſtill undecided; and therefore the great care then incumbent on the Legats was to frame, and pen thoſe points in ſuch words, as might pleaſe at leaſt the plurality, or major part of the Congregation, which being tired out, and wearied with the frequent recital of thoſe Arguments *Pro*, and *Con*, were willing to accept of indifferent terms, or ſuch, as might bear a dubious Interpretation, or ſuch perhaps as contained no ſenſe at all; and others were for having thoſe Articles buried in ſilence; only the *Spaniards* remained unchangeable and unwearied, being ſtill conſtant to their Principles. Howſoever, the Legats were reſolved to exhibit their Decree about Reſidencies, in the manner they had already penned, namely, That all thoſe, who have a Cure of Souls, were obliged by the Commandment of God, to have a particular knowledg and acquaintance with every Member of their Flock; which not being to be performed but by a continuance in the Pariſh or Dioceſe, it was thence inferred, and interpreted that Reſidencies were by Divine Right.

The ſecond Point about Epiſcopal Inſtitution was concluded in general terms, that the *Hierarchy* of Biſhops was an Ordinance of God. Howſoever, theſe terms did not pleaſe the ſubtle and hot-headed wits of neither ſide. The *Spaniards* did not think the words plain and explicite enough: and the Biſhop of *Tarante*, and the other Favourers of *Rome*, who were jealous of the leaſt ſhadow of that which might infringe or abate the Papal Authority, were apprehenſive, that ſuch conſequences might be deduced from thoſe words, as might plainly infer, that the Orders of that *Hierarchy* were rather by Divine, than Papal Inſtitution: but theſe people were more jealous of the *Pope's* Authority, than the *Pope* himſelf; for though this very form of words had been debated above a hundred times at *Rome*, and approved, and propoſed by the Legats, yet theſe Canoniſts, and zealous favourers of *Papirius* were violent ſticklers againſt and oppoſers of the Decree; howſoever, the Aſſembly by plurality of Voices paſſed the Decree, and ordered, that they ſhould remain in the ſame form and words delivered.

In fine, the 15*th.* of *July*, which was the day of the Seſſion, being come, which had been ſo often adjourned, and with ſuch impatience expected; all the points of Doctrin were reduced to four Chapters, and eight Canons with *Anathemas*. The firſt eſtabliſhed, that Eccleſiaſtical Ordination is a Sacrament; That under the New Teſtament there is but one viſible Order of Men, which can offer the Sacrifice of the true and real Body and Blood of Jeſus Chriſt: That there are ſeveral degrees higher and lower of this Order: That Prieſthood hath a character impreſſed upon it; and inſpires with it the Holy Ghoſt. That Unction is neceſſary at the inſtitution of a Prieſt: That the *Hierarchy* of Prieſts is by Divine Right: That Biſhops are ſuperiour to Prieſts: That the Biſhops and Prieſts who were eſtabliſhed by the *Pope*, or by Authority derived from him, are only true, and Evangelical in their Orders.

Then proceeding to the eight Canons which reſpect Reformation; the firſt was that about Reſidence, which had made ſo much noiſe and diſturbance, the words of which obliged every Paſtor to be acquainted with and to feed his flock; in explanation of which, this Canon forbad all long abſence from their charge under ſevere penalties; howſoever, that clauſe was moderated with a Diſpenſation for three months, and with a proviſo, unleſs the benefit, and ſervice of the Church and State ſhould require it. The other Canons had reſpect only to the collation and regulation of Orders; and that they were not to be conferred upon debauched perſons, or ſuch, as were unworthy of them; and directed the manner and government of Seminaries, in which Prieſts were educated; with ſeveral other matters of little importance; all which paſſed, and were enacted in the Council without any oppoſition or diſturbance: though the *Spaniards* would never more be reconciled to the Cardinal of *Lorain*, for deſerting their party, in the point of Reſidencies, to which he had ſo often promiſed, and aſſured them of his conſtancy; but what he loſt on one ſide, he gained on the other; the Legats, and favourers of *Rome* crying up his wiſdom, and conduct, and true zeal to the Church and the Apoſtolical See.

All *Europe* in the mean time was in great expectation of the iſſue of this Seſſion, which had been preparing for the ſpace of ten months, and with the wit and contrivance of two or three hundred Prelats and Divines. At the end of which, nothing could be more ſurprizing to the World, than to find their expectations ſo wholly defeated, and the product of this mighty Machine, or Engine to be ſo inconſiderable as not to have yielded matter ſufficient to have employed the brains of one intelligent perſon for the ſpace only of a ſingle Week: the contradictions which appeared in their Canons, and the weak preambles to all their concluſions were the common talk, and ſubject of ſport and deriſion in all places, and adminiſtred matter and diſcourſe for the Proteſtants to treat, and rally upon in their Sermons; particularly *Vergere*, who had once been the *Pope's* Nuncio in *Germany*, but now become a preaching Miniſter in the *Valtoline*, (which is a Country of the *Griſons* did with great perſpicuity, and ſtrength of reaſon lay before his Flock the many falſe reaſonings, and vain conteſtations amongſt the Biſhops, and the ſcandalous proceedings of the whole Council; the reports of which, with all the particular paſſages he diſpatched to all places, where the moſt Eminent Divines, and Preachers of the Proteſtants reſided; for he being a near Neighbour to *Trent*, was in a better capacity to receive true and conſtant information of all paſſages, than thoſe who reſided at farther diſtances: for which the *Pope* and the Cardinal *Moron* were ſo offended at him, that they endeavoured by menaces to affright, and drive him to more remote parts: but he reſolved ſtill to continue his Station, notwithſtanding ſeveral attempts that were made upon his life.

The Seſſion being in this manner ended, the Legats deſigned to haſten all remaining Points, and contract them in ſuch a compaſs, as might tend towards a ſpeedy end, and concluſion of the Council. The points of Indulgences, Invocation of Saints, Images, and Purgatory, were gathered all into a bundle, requiring no great examination, in regard that being matters which entrenched on the Intereſt of no Party, adminiſtred little cauſe of diſpute or oppoſition: only a Controverſie aroſe about Clandeſtine Marriages, or ſuch, as were contracted without the conſent of Parents, which the *French* would have to be declared in themſelves void, and null, by reaſon of the inconvenience and ruins which ſuch ſort of Marriages have proved to certain Families in that Kingdom: but herein a difficulty aroſe, for that Marriage which is one of the ſeven Sacraments being once celebrated, is of force, and not to be again diſſolved, but by Authority and diſpenſation of the Church. After divers Debates thereupon, the Biſhop of *Metz* was ſo happy as to find a form of words for that Canon, which contented all Parties, which was this, That though the Church hath ever forbidden, and deteſted Clandeſtine Marriages, yet whoſoever denies Clandeſtine Marriage to be a Sacrament, let him be *Anathema.* The Marriage of Prieſts admitted now of no farther difficulty; for though the Emperor, the King of *France*, and the Duke of *Bavaria*, demanded that priviledg in behalf of their people, yet that Point was now laid aſide, and all inſtances in that matter were denied to be heard, or admitted to farther queſtion, or examination in the Council.

After this the Legats propoſed thirty eight Articles in order to a Reformation, which contained the many abuſes, and encroachments which Secular Princes had made upon the Rights of the Church: but the Cardinal of *Lorain* was for abbreviating the Articles, and for cutting off all thoſe which might adminiſter matter of Controverſie, ſo that by a ſpeedy diſpatch thereof, the Council might tend towards a concluſion; which cauſed many to wonder, that the zeal which he had ſo warmly evidenced at firſt for a Reformation, ſhould ſo ſoon vaniſh and be evaporated. A Copy of theſe Articles being communicated to the Ambaſſadours, every one made his obſervations, reflections, and additions thereunto, as was moſt conſiſtent with the affairs of their reſpective Maſters: For the chief Remarks and alterations of the Ambaſſadours tended to ſomething which might abate the Power and Authority of the *Pope* over the Ordinaries, and the juriſdiction of the Biſhops themſelves over the Civil aud Municipal Courts. But the *French* were the moſt ſevere of any in the rules of Reformation. For they would have the number of Cardinals reſtrained to twenty four; that the Nephews of *Popes*, during the life of the *Pope*, ſhould not be capable to receive a Cardinals Hat; that Cardinals ſhould be made uncapable to hold Biſhopricks; that criminal cauſes againſt Biſhops ſhould not be judg'd at other Tribunals, than ſuch as are within the Dominions of *France*. That Biſhops ſhould be endued with plenary Power to give abſolution in all Caſes. That Eccleſiaſtical perſons ſhould not be concerned, or intermedle in ſecular Affairs; and in ſhort, that they do no act or thing which may infringe the Law of *France*, or intrench on the Liberties of the *Gallican* Church. Theſe particulars for reformation of the Church thus delivered, were to be prepared againſt the next Seſſion, and as reſolved ſo to be enacted; and for Reformation of the Courts of Princes, it was by agreement of the Ambaſſadours reſerved as the chief matter, and ſubject for a ſubſequent Seſſion.

Theſe Propoſals were in no manner acceptable to the *Pope*, who could not endure ſuch fatal attempts on the power and prerogative of the Church; to avoid which, nothing could be a defence or remedy, but only the diſſolution of the Council; to which end he earneſtly wrote to all his Nuncios reſiding in the Courts of forein Princes, commanding them to uſe their utmoſt art and skil to perſuade the reſpective Princes to be aiding and concurring herein. And farther, gave orders to his Legats at *Trent* to grant freely whatſoever could not be refuſed, and with all decent ſpeed to put a final end and concluſion to the Council: but this Deſign encountred ſome rubs and obſtructions from the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour and others of that Party, who complained of the private Cabals which the Legats held with certain Cardinals, and other Confidents, in excluſion of the *Spaniſh* Intereſt. But their complaints were little regarded by the Legats, whoſe greateſt incumbence thence was, to ſatisfy the Biſhops, without whoſe concurrence the Council could not be diſſolved. For now the intention of the Biſhops being to make uſe of this occaſion to enlarge their power, and obtain ſome priviledges which were derogatory to the Papal Chair; made that point of gaining the good will of the Biſhops to be the more difficult; becauſe that their pretences of ſubjecting Monaſteries and regulations of Friers, and certain priviledged Churches to the Epiſcopal Juriſdiction, which were exempted from it by Orders of the *Pope*, found moſt oppoſition from the Generals of the reſpective Orders; and indeed the Ambaſſadours themſelves did not much favour this Demand, which ſeem'd too highly to advance and exalt the pride and power of the Biſhops.

Whilſt theſe things were under Debate, the *French* Ambaſſadours received a large Pacquet from their Maſter, in anſwer to the late Propoſals projected for a Model to reform abuſes in the Courts of Princes: the which much diſpleaſed the King, and his Miniſters of State, who wondered at the daring attempts of the Clergy on the King's Royal Power and Authority, under a pretence of Reformation, contenting themſelves in the mean time with a ſlight, and ſuperficial review of their own abuſes: and therefore perſuaded the Fathers of the Council, to attend unto matters purely Spiritual, and to ſuch Acts as might ſerve to reform corruptions crept into the Church, and to correct the debauched lives of Prieſts and Monks, (the ſcandal of which had been the cauſe of all the Schiſm in the Church) rather than to intermedle with the ſacred Prerogative of Kings, or abett, and maintain the Clergy in their oppoſition and contumacy againſt their Sovereign. Thus much the Ambaſſadours had Orders to ſignifie to the Council, with farther Inſtructions, that in caſe they ſhould, notwithſtanding this intimation, proceed to encroach on the King's *Regalia*, that then they ſhould make their Proteſt, and retire to *Venice*; all which the Ambaſſadours made known to the Cardinal of *Lorain*, and declared to the Legats, requiring the Biſhops to ſuperſede their pretenſions to thoſe honours and priviledges which were the ſole Right and Prerogative of Kings. The Biſhops who were reſolutely bent to maintain thoſe Emoluments which ſo nearly concerned them, proteſted before the Legats, that they would neither enter more into the Congregation, nor give their advice, or Voice in any matter, unleſs they were firſt ſecured of the Rights to which they pretended, which a hundred of them obliged themſelves by ſolemn Oath never to remit. All which violent Conteſts took up ſo much time, that when the 15*th.* of *September* was come, which was the day before the Seſſion, nothing was duly prepared in order to paſs into a Canon; and therefore the time was prorogued until the 11*th.* of *November*, that ſo in the interim the Cardinal of *Lorain* might have ſufficient time to make his Journey to *Rome*, where he was greatly deſired by the Pope, and all that Party. 1563.

The Cardinal being arrived at *Rome*, was received with all the joy, and honours imaginable, he was lodged in the Pope's Palace, and immediately in perſon viſited by him, which was a Complement that never Pope had made before to any under that character of a Cardinal. After which there paſſed ſuch kindneſs between them at ſeveral private Conferences, that the Pope ſeemed to refuſe nothing which might engage, and oblige the Cardinal, having at his inſtance granted an alienation from the Church of three hundred thouſand Livers a year to the King of *France*, which Bene had formerly been demanded, and ſollicited with great importunity, but could never be obtained, until this endearment happened between the Cardinal and the Pope. For now their mutual intimacy and friendſhip began to be ſo great, that the Pope opened his boſom and heart to him, giving him to underſtand, that the Council being become a burden to him, which he could not ſupport, he had therefore ſent a private Bull to his Legats, either to prorogue or adjourn it to ſome other place, as ſhould be moſt agreeable to the ſtate of Affairs: but the Cardinal who profeſſed to have the ſame Intereſt, for that his occaſions required his preſence in *France*, yet could not concur in Opinion either to have the Council prorogued, or adjourned to another place; but rather to diſpoſe matters in order to a Concluſion, which might eaſily be effected, by laying aſide all thoſe Points which might adminiſter matter or cauſe of Diſpute; promiſing to contribute to this Deſign all the power and intereſt he had with the Ambaſſadours and Biſhops, that ſo every thing might terminate happily, and to the ſatiſfaction of the Court of *Rome*. The Pope being overjoyed with theſe promiſes, was comforted in the higheſt degree by the conſolatory expreſſions of the Cardinal; in return for which, he promiſed to uſe all his endeavours to create him his Succeſſour, by engaging ſuch a number of Cardinals in his favour as ſhould ſecure his Election; promiſing in the mean time to make him the chief Inſtrument of all his grand Deſigns. Thus was the one elevated in his hopes, and expectations of high preferments; and the other encouraged against the refractory oppoſition of the *French* Prelats, who were now grown mutinous, and the Papal Authority rendered contemptible to them. For at that time *Chatillion* had voluntarily renounced his character of Cardinal, and called himſelf by the title of *Count de Beauvais*, and in contempt of that Dignity, was married in the habit of a Cardinal, as if he intended by that action to have rendered that Honour ridiculous.

The *French* Prelats alſo being diſguſted, five of them retired from *Trent*, having eaſily obtained their licenſe from the Legats, whoſe chief endeavours and labour was now to appeaſe the Sedition and mutinies of the Biſhops, who were come to that unbridled uſurpation, and entrenchments on the temporal juriſdiction of Princes and Magiſtrates, that they conſtrained the Legats to read in the Congregation that Model of a Decree which they had projected for Reformation of Secular Magiſtrates; the particulars of which were ſo licentious and extravagant, as deſerve to be noted for diſcovery of that Pride which reigned amongſt the Clergy of thoſe days, the contents of which are theſe: That a Clergy-man was not liable to the Sentence of a Secular Court, nor could he be tryed at that Bar, though he himſelf ſhould conſent thereunto, that the Secular Judges ſhould not intermedle with cauſes relating to Matrimony, to Hereſie, to Tenths, Advowſons, or rights of Patronage, nor with any other cauſes whether civil or criminal, wherein the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſure was or might be concerned, That no Injunction be iſſued out of a Secular Court, to hinder the proceedings of the Eccleſiaſtical in points of Excommunication, though taken out againſt the Emperor himſelf or againſt Kings. Nor ſhall the Civil Law contradict, or interfere with the Eccleſiaſtical in matters which relate to the Affairs, Goods, or Poſſeſſions of the Church; which is endued with a Power of conſtituting its own Courts, and Officers of ſeveral degrees, ranks, and qualities. That the Clergy ſhall be exempt from Taxes, Impoſts, Tithes, or Subſides whatſoever. That Princes or Magiſtrates ſhall not have power to quarter Soldiers, Officers, or Horſe, within the Houſes, or on the poſſeſſions of the Clergy, with ſeveral other Articles of like tenure, which were ſo repugnant to the Power of Kings, that it ſeemed to ſhake their Authority, and ſet up another Soveraignty within their own Kingdoms independant of the Regal Juriſdiction: for which reaſon the *French* Ambaſſadours having made their Proteſt againſt theſe Articles in the ſpace of fifteen days afterwards, retired from *Trent* to *Venice*, according to the Orders which they had received from *France*.

The news of this retreat of the Ambaſſadours was very unwelcome to the Court of *Rome*, and eſpecially to the Cardinal of *Lorain*, who apprehended that this unexpected accident would much eclipſe his Credit and Reputation with the Pope, and defeat the hopes he had conceived of his new preferment; which that he might ſtill keep up, he promiſed the Pope to write, and accordingly did write unto the King in ſuch terms, as plainly evidenced, how far he had abandoned the Principles he brought from *France*, and ſacrificed them to a new and ſtrange Intereſt which he had acquired at *Rome*. After which, the Pope wrote to the Legats to prepare for the following Seſſion according to the time appointed, and to commence immediately after the return of the Cardinal to *Trent*; and then ſpeedily to wind all things up, ſo as to put a final concluſion to the Council, in which there ſeemed no great difficulty, for that the *French* and *Germans* being drawn off, they had none to deal with, but onely with the *Spaniards*. Howſoever, the *Pope* reſenting highly the retirement of the five *French* Biſhops, accuſed them of Hereſie, and cited them to make their defence before the Tribunal of Inquiſition at *Rome*: in like manner, he iſſued out Proceſs againſt *Jane* Queen of *Navarre* Widow of *Anthony* of *Bourbon*, upon an accuſation of Hereſie, in order to depoſe her from her Crown and Dignity; the which Decrees were divulged, and affixed on all publick places. And though the Cardinal did in diſlike thereof, repreſent unto the Pope, that this manner of proceeding was contrary to the received Maxims of *France*, and the liberty of the *Gallican* Church, and that it was not ſeaſonable to proceed with ſuch rigour againſt a Queen, who was an Ally of *France*, and the Relict of one lately ſlain in Battel againſt the *Hugenots*; and that it was too early to ſummon Biſhops to receive judgment at *Rome*, againſt which the Council of *France* had ſo lately proteſted: yet the Cardinal having performed this Office in a cold, and perfunctory manner, as if he intended rather to acquit himſelf with his Maſter, than gain his Point, gave no ſatisfaction to the Government of *France*; which therefore making uſe of the Ambaſſadour Monſieur *d' Oiſel* in this Negotiation; his endeavours ſucceeded ſo well; that the Proceſs againſt the Queen of *Navarre* and the five Biſhops, was ſuperſeded, and the whole matter buried in ſilence: And that the King might ſhew, how little he regarded the Decrees of the Council; he proceeded actually to alienate the Lands of the Church, before the Licenſe and Grant of the *Pope* arrived his hands, and raiſed thereupon two millions and five hundred thouſand Livres. By this time the Cardinal of *Lorain* was returned, and the eleventh of *November* came, which was the day appointed for the Seſſion; after the uſual ceremonies of which were performed, the Article about Clandeſtine Marriages was read, and after ſome Conteſts thereupon, was paſſed by plurality of Voices: but yet it did not paſs the raillery of ſome witty Men; who reflected on the words of the Canon, which pronounces *Anathema* againſt thoſe, who deny Clandeſtine Marriage to be a true Sacrament; and yet in the concluſion ſaith, that the Church hath ever diſapproved and deteſted it. Afterwards the Decrees of General Reformation were read, which are too long to be here inſerted, upon paſſing of which, the Cardinal of *Lorain* declared, that the *French* Nation did ſo far accept them, as they were not prejudicial to the Priviledges, Rights, and antient Conſtitutions of the Kings of *France*. Howſoever, amongſt all the Chapters of General Reformation, there was not one Point of thoſe many touched, which the People of divers Nations required; nothing being therein contained, or reſolved, but what ſerved to advance the *Pope's* Authority over the Clergy, and warrant the Power of the Clergy in oppreſſion of the People. Amongſt theſe Points of General Reformation, there was one which made void all Titles, or Rights to Benefices which were obtained by Simony; which in the Opinion of ſome, would have ruined the greateſt part of the *Pope's* Annates, or yearly Income, had it been ſtrictly obſerved: but this was as duely obeyed, as the Canon which prohibits Cardinals to enjoy plurality of benefices; in both which, time and experience have ſhewn us, how little either the one, or the other hath been regarded. Another Chapter which ordained that thoſe who had publickly ſinned, ſhould do publick Penance, ſeemed, as if it deſigned to reſtore the Primitive Diſcipline; but that was again ſpoiled by this clauſe *Ni aliter Epiſcopo videatur*, with theſe, and matters of the like nature this Seſſion concluded.

And now the Scene of Affairs began much to change their face; for every one growing weary of Diſputes, paſſed every thing almoſt without examination, or conteſt. The *Pope* was infinitely tired, and fainted under the burthen of the Council. The *French* who now expected no benefit from this Aſſembly, followed the dictates of the Cardinal of *Lorain*, who had intirely devoted himſelf to the Papal Intereſt. The *Germans* had long ſince abandoned the Council, deſpairing of any good, or cure from it: onely the *Spaniards* to whom delays have been always pleaſing, and to whom by force of gravity all fatigues of long continuance are rendered Eaſe, were thoſe, who willingly would have protracted the longer courſe of the Council; but not being able to ſtem the Torrent, with which other Nations precipitated the Council to a concluſion, they yielded to the ſame humour, and concurred with the Cardinal of *Lorain*, and others in their Deſign to put an end to the Council at the next Seſſion.

The Points about Indulgences, on which *Luther* had grounded his firſt quarrel with the *Pope*, adoration of Saints, Purgatory, Images, and Faſts, were all ſlubber'd over, and paſſed in the ſpace of fifteen days: The greateſt difficulty was that which related to the Reformation of Princes, againſt which the Ambaſſadours of *France* had ſo ſeriouſly proteſted; which being a knotty, and inſuperable Point, it was reſolved to leave it undecided: and in lieu thereof to perform ſomething for the better ſatisfaction of the Clergy; allowing unto the Biſhops ſome enlargement of Power over their reſpective Chapters. But as to the Decree which was drawn up, for reforming, and moderating the Authority of Princes, they thought fit in lieu thereof to renew the tenure of the Antient Canons, not enforcing them with Menaces, or *Anathemas*, but onely with exhortations to Princes, to conſerve, and maintain the Church in its priviledges, concluding with gentle terms full of reſpect to the Sovereign Power.

The expreſſions of this Article being thus moderated to the ſatisfaction (as the Cardinal of *Lorain* imagined) of temporal Princes, he endeavoured to perſuade the *French* Ambaſſadours to return again from *Venice* to *Trent*, which they abſolutely refuſed to do; for though the Article for reforming Princes was revoked, yet ſeveral other Acts being paſs'd to the prejudice of the *Gallican* Church, the Ambaſſadours pretended that their return and preſence, would imply or argue a concurrence, or an aſſent to all the Decrees of the Council. Notwithſtanding this refuſal, the Council proceeded forward to conſider of the reformation of Friers, Monks, Abbots, and other Religious; in reſpect to whom, few Rules were altered, onely ſome additions were made, according to the Propoſals and deſires of the Generals of the reſpective Orders.

All other things (as we have ſaid) proceeded ſmoothly, the Point of Indulgences being ſuperficially touched; for conſidering the many difficulties comprehended in that queſtion, which might, if diſtinctly treated, have taken up a long time in the examination of every Point;

it was thought fit to couch all in few words, prohibiting the abuſes thereof in general terms. Thus did matters haſten towards an end, but what did more eagerly precipitate a concluſion, was the Pope's indiſpoſition of health; for it was feared in caſe the *Pope* ſhould die during the Seſſion, that then the Council would by the example of that of *Conſtance*, take upon themſelves a Power of electing another; ſo that notwithſtanding the oppoſition of the *Spaniards* (who deſired to proceed with gravity, and phlegm, until they could receive an anſwer of what they had wrote to *Madrid*) the ultimate Seſſion was appointed for the 9th. of *December*: but in regard that time ſeemed too long to Perſons impatient of an end, the day was ſhortned to the third of that month, and to be continued on the day following in caſe the Affairs ſeemed too weighty and various to be ended at one ſitting. The *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour with fourteen of his Biſhops not being able to withſtand this general Torrent, promiſed to concur with the others on theſe two conditions; Firſt, that the *Pope* ſhould regulate all matters not determined by this Council; and Secondly, That in the Chapters of Indulgences, the word (*gratis*) ſhould not be uſed, leſt it ſhould prejudice the Indulgences granted by the *Cruſada* of *Spain*.

All the difficulties being now overcome, the Seſſion was held on *Friday* the 3d. of *December*, at which, after the Sermon and uſual Ceremonies, all the Acts prepared according to form were read, but being too long for the work of one day, the remaining part was left until the day following: at the concluſion of all, fearing leſt in any of the Decrees of Reformation, ſome words ſhould have eſcaped, which might ſeem to entrench, or diminiſh the *Pope*'s Authority; it was determined that the Interpretation of the Canons, and the liberty to diſpenſe with any of them ſhould remain in the breaſt, and at the free pleaſure and will of the *Pope*; in confirmation of which it was publickly declared by common Voice, that the intention of the Council in all, and every of their Canons was to maintain the Papal Dignity in its antient Power and Authority, without any abatement or diminution thereof. And finally an Act was read, and publiſhed, whereby it was declared, That the place or rank which any Ambaſſadour or Repreſentative had holden, or poſſeſſed in that Council, ſhould give no Title, or ground of claim for the like degree, or place for the future; the Council not pretending to determine any thing in prejudice of the rights and priviledges of Kings, Princes, or States. Laſtly, at the breaking up of the Council, Excommunications and *Anathemas* were read againſt all Hereticks in general, mentioning *Luther*, *Zuinglius*, or others in particular. And then the period was cloſed with loud acclamations in praiſe of the *Pope*, the Emperor, the Kings, the Legats, and all the Fathers: which was performed in a different manner to the practice of other Councils, which ended with acclamations and bleſſings pronounced with the confuſed noiſe, or murmurings of the whole Aſſembly: but at *Trent* it was performed by way of Reſponſes, or Antiphonas; in which the Cardinal of *Lorain* pronounced the firſt Sentence, and was again anſwered by all the Prelats; which being the part of a Deacon, or Chanter, ſeemed an Office too mean to be perſonated by his Eminence, and not onely gave ſubject of raillery to the World, but ſubjected him to a thouſand Cenſures at his return home, where it was charged upon him, that in the

Acclamations, or Antiphonas, then made, there was no mention of the King of *France*. And in the laſt place it was ordained, That all the Prelats ſhould ſign the Decrees before their departure upon pain of Excommunication; for execution whereof a form of Congregation being appointed, the Hands, or ſubſcriptions conſiſted of four Legats, two Cardinals, three Patriarchs, twenty five Arch-Biſhops, two hundred ſixty eight Biſhops, ſeven Abbots, thirty nine Procurators, or Subſtitutes in behalf of ſuch as were abſent, and ſeven Generals of the Religious Orders: the ſubſcriptions of the Ambaſſadours were not required, to avoid the late Conteſtations, and Diſputes about place. And yet notwithſtanding this number of Biſhops, there was not one of *Germany* preſent in the laſt Convocation, which was far the moſt numerous, and ſolemn of any: for *Hungary*, or *Poland*, there were very few Biſhops preſent; there appeared not one for *Sweden*, *Denmark*, *England*, or the *Low-Countries*. The Biſhops of *France* which came onely towards the latter end, being joyned with the Biſhops of *Spain*, could not in all make above the number of forty; ſo that of the two hundred and odd Biſhops of which this Council was compoſed, there was at leaſt one hundred and fifty of them *Italians*, who were Creatures, and Penſioners of the *Pope*. For which reaſon this Aſſembly was juſtly termed the Council of the *Pope*, and his *Italians*.

The Council being in this manner broken up, every one returned to his home, and Country; and all things being concluded to the ſatisfaction of the *Pope*, cauſed great joy in the Court of *Rome*, where the Legats, and the other Favourers thereof were received and welcomed with applauſe, and commendations; and the *Pope* to gratifie his Friends, who had taken ſuch pains, and ſerved ſo well in this important Affair, promoted nineteen of them to the Dignity of Cardinals, and amongſt the reſt the Arch-Biſhop of *Taranto* was in a ſingular manner remembred, and gratified.

Nor had the *Pope* ſo much taken up his thoughts with the Council, but that being tranſported with a Spirit of munificence and Building, he could attend to raiſe, and continue his Name by mighty, and Excellent Structures; and figuring to himſelf a model of the antient *Rome*, as if he intended to have reſtored it to its antique glory, he commanded the antient Monuments to be conſerved, the Streets reſtored, and at his great expence the Aqueducts which brought the Water from diſtant places to the City to be again repaired. It was this *Pope* who re-built the Baths of *Diocletian* upon Mount *Quirinus*, converting them into a Church, and to a Monaſtery, which he perſonally conſecrated. He fortified the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, and repaired the ruins of the Caſtle of *Civita Vecchia*, and made many other Structures for convenience, and Ornament of the City.

1564. Whileſt he was intent upon theſe Affairs, a certain number of Villains deſigned to have murthered him, and to have perpetrated this wickedneſs at the time when he was buſied in reading a Paper which they were to conſign into his hand: the Perſon who was to deliver him the Writing was one *Acolti*; and the Contents, or ſubſtance thereof was a perſuaſion to reſign up his Papal Authority into the hands of ſuch a Perſon, whom they ſhould deſcribe to him; for they pretended to have received a Revelation, and ſeen a Viſion, that the Succeſſour to this *Pope* ſhould be of an Angelical Spirit; elected by the common conſent of all Chriſtendom, that he ſhould become the Univerſal Monarch of all the World, reform the Manners of Mankind, teach them, to live up to the perfection of humane Life; and in ſhort, convert all People and Nations to the Chriſtian Faith. *Acolti* having delivered his Paper, and being about to ſtrike the fatal blow, his heart failed him: upon which one of the Aſſaſſinates diſcovering the Conſpiracy, they were all ſeized, and juſtly executed with ſuch torments as the blackneſs of the Crime deſerved.

Not long after this, being on the 10th. of *December*, 1565. the *Pope* died, having governed five years, eleven months and a half; he had during his time created forty five Cardinals, ſome out of favour to Princes, and others in reward of their own worth, and merit; and had he lived, his intention was to have made up his number a full hundred, ſo that they might have been called, *Centum Patres.* But he died in the 77th. year of his age, and his body was buried in the Baths of *Diocletian*, lately converted into a Church by him, and called *Sancta Maria Angelorum.* And the See was vacant twenty nine days.

PIUS V.

PIUS the Fourth being dead, and his funeral Rites after the accuſtomed manner being performed, the Cardinals entered the *Conclave* to the number of fifty two, and by common conſent with the concurrence of Cardinal *Borromeus* (afterwards canonized for a Saint) and of Cardinal *Farneſe*, the two leading Men at that time, elected *Anthony Ghiſler* to the Succeſſion in the Papal Chair. This *Anthony Ghiſler* ſo called by *Papyrius Maſſonius*, but by *Cicarella* named *Michael*, was born of mean and ordinary Parents at a Town called *Boſchi*, not far from *Alexandria della paglia*, which lies between *Montferrat*, and the State of *Milan*; he was entered into the Order of *Jacobin* Friers, at the age of fourteen years, and then changed his name to *Michael*; he was ordained Prieſt at *Genua*, and proved a moſt ſtrenuous Preacher, and Maſter of a moſt powerful, and moving Eloquence; he was afterwards conſtituted Prior of his Convent of *Vigevani*, and Commiſſary of the Inquiſition; he was by *Paul* the 4th. made Biſhop of *Nepi*, and then Cardinal *de Sancta Sabina*, but in regard, that he was born at *Boſchi* not above ſix miles diſtant from *Alexandria*, he was commonly ſtiled Cardinal *Aleſſandrino*; and then as we have ſaid, without much faction or debate, he was with common conſent on the 7th. of *Jan.* 1566. created Pope.

All the Writers of his Life, give him the commendation of unblemiſhed Virtue, of a ſtrict and ſevere Devotion, and of a moſt excellent Spirit in the government of the Church; but for a more perfect Character of him take the words of *Papyrius Maſſonius*, which are theſe:

"He did never ſeek, or purſue honours, but walking always in the "direct, and even path of Virtue, he was always courted and overta-"ken by them: the Dignity of Cardinal had changed nothing in his "humour, and ſerved onely to render his Virtues more conſpicuous to "the World: for he ſtill reſerved the ſame ſweetneſs and affability in "his nature, the ſame ſeverity in his life and diſcipline, and the ſame "freedom and candour in his Advice and Counſel, as he had maintained "in his private condition, having always a more ſtrict regard to Juſtice "and Truth, than to the favour and flattery of great Perſonages; and "in delivering his Advice, as his words were plain and ſincere, ſo his "geſtures, and countenance enforced them with prevailing Authority. "Thus was his advancement to the Papal Authority raiſed on the Pedeſtal of his own merit, ſo that there is no place left for doubt, but "that his Election proceeded from Divine Providence, or Inſpiration, "rather than from the judgment, or direction of Men: for he had no "fumes, or vanities of an antient Family to boaſt of, no grandeur of "richneſs, nor favour of Princes, which might aſſiſt, and concur to his "Inſtalment, and prepare his way to the Papal See; onely the ſame "Vertue which had accompanied him from his youth, gave him favour "in the eyes of the World, and lead him by the hand to this degree of "Sovereignty.

On the Feſtival of St. *Anthony*, being then of the age of ſixty two, he was Crowned *Pope*, but not without the fears and apprehenſions of the World, who imagined, that his quick and hot nature being prone to ſudden anger, being conjoyned with that ſeverity of Life which he had always profeſſed, would render him as froward and impetuous as *Paul* IV. But his teaſty nature, which was ſubject to ſudden anger, was as eaſily, and quickly paſt; and then his good nature returning again, he would execute his paſſion, which being free from Pride and Ambition, and worldly conſiderations, did never tranſport him beyond the limits of Decency and Reaſon. Being now ſeated in the Papal Chair, the Eſtabliſhment and Ornament whereof he eſteemed to be holineſs of Life in himſelf, and purity and religious deportment in the Clergy; he endeavoured to put thoſe Rules of Piety into practice, which the Council of *Trent* had preſcribed for reformation of Manners and Diſcipline amongſt Prieſts and religious Perſons. In order unto which, he deſigned to baniſh all the *Corteſans* from *Rome*, which was a work of no ſmall adventure at that time, when theſe Ladies of pleaſure poſſeſſed the moſt ſumptuous and magnificent Palaces of the City, and were favoured by the Patronage of ſome Senators and Cardinals, who to hinder that unkind action, alledged, that the Church would not onely loſe a conſiderable Revenue, which did ariſe from the pains of that induſtrious ſort of People, but alſo Strangers be deprived of thoſe entertainments of Muſick and Dancing, which they promiſed to themſelves during their reſidences at *Rome*: howſoever, though theſe conſiderations did not wholly avail with the *Pope*, yet they did moderate the rigour of his Sentence; ſo that ſome of the *Corteſans* were permitted Licenſe to remain and abide in a certain corner of the City, being forbidden to paſs through the high and publick ſtreets, and to frequent any of the Churches, excepting two or three which were appointed for them, where Maſſes were allowed, and Sermons preached on Texts proper to their condition, and in order to reduce them to contrition, and converſion of life.

As he was ſevere in this manner againſt the *Corteſans*, ſo he carried a ſtrict Eye over all the Clergy; enjoyning all ſuch as enjoyed any Benefices from the Church to have the Crown of their head conſtantly ſhaved, and never to wear Silk in any of their Habits and Garments, unleſs in their Stoles and Veſtments in which they officiated, or celebrated Maſs; the like modeſty, and grave deportment he ordained amongſt all the Officers of his own Family, where he appointed three Lectures of Divinity to be read every Week for entertainment of the Clergy: and commanded his *Suiſſes*, and Soldiers of his Life-Guard to comport themſelves with Civility towards all, without Extortion or Inſolence.

As to his own Relations, he commanded them all to retire from *Rome*, having provided for them in other places with ſmall Penſions; excepting onely one young Nephew, who was a Student in the *German* College; and another called *Michael Bonnello* who being a youth of excellent parts, and a hopeful diſpoſition, was at the great inſtance of Friends promoted to the degree of a Cardinal.

A certain rich *Jew* at *Rome* called *Elias*, one learned in the *Rabbins* and *Moſaical* Law, and Maſter of a Synagogue, did uſually frequent the Society of this Cardinal *Alexandrino*, before he came to be Pope; between whom queſtions being often controverted about Religion; the Cardinal by the force of Reaſon and the Example of his holy life ſo prevailed at length upon the *Jew*, that he promiſed to become a Chriſtian, and profeſs that faith, ſo ſoon, as this Cardinal ſhould be created Pope; the which promiſe *Alexandrino* immediately challenged ſo ſoon as he was promoted to the Papal Chair, the *Jew* was not able to reſiſt or deny the engagement; but believing that this unexpected advancement of his Friend to the Popedom, was an impulſe of the Holy Ghoſt for his converſion, did immediately profeſs the Chriſtian Faith; and together with his Wife, three Children, and a Nephew, were all baptized by the Pope himſelf about the Feaſt of *Pentecoſt* in the year 1566. And thus much ſhall ſerve for a Character in general of the humour, and temperament of this Pope *Pius* V.

Now as to the management of his temporal Power; he was extreamly zealous againſt the Proteſtants on the one ſide, and againſt the *Turks* on the other: For as to the firſt he ſent Cardinal *Commendone* to be preſent at a General Diet in *Germany*, convened by the Emperour *Maximilian*, and to be there aſſiſtant to the *Roman* Catholicks, and offer ſuch cautions, and Caveats in their proceedings, as might defend, and ſecure the Papal Authority, as much as was poſſible.

Then to ſubject and ſubdue the Proteſtants in *France*, he furniſhed King *Charles* IX. with an Army of four thouſand four hundred Foot; and nine hundred Horſe under the command of the Count St. *Fleur*; and farther to ſupply the occaſions of this King with Money, he gave licenſe to ſell, and alienate ſo much of the Church Lands in *France*, as might ſuffice for the carrying on of this War, in which Truſt of Sales the Cardinals of *Lorain*, and *Bourbon*, being made Commiſſioners, the Lands belonging to the Church, which were then ſold, amounted to the value of one hundred and fifty thouſand Crowns of yearly Revenue.

In the next place, it was this Pope *Pius* V. who out of his great zeal, excommunicated *Elizabeth* Queen of *England*, with all her Subjects of the ſame profeſſion. And in the year 1569. conferred on *Coſmo de Medicis* Duke of *Florence*, the Title of Great Duke of *Tuſcany*; in Gratitude for which the *Duke* coming to *Rome* to acknowledg the honour done him, was there crowned with a Ducal Crown by the hands of the Pope, about the Circle of which this Motto was engraven, *Pius quintus Pont. Max. ob eximiam Dilectionem, ac Catholicæ Religionis Zelum præcipuumque Juſtitiæ ſtudium donavit.*

Then to demonſtrate his zeal againſt the *Turks*, the prevailing Enemies over Chriſtianity under the conduct of *Solyman* the Magnificent, who at that time was entered into *Hungary* with an Army of two hundred thouſand fighting Men: He inſtantly deſired, and exhorted the Chriſtian Princes unto Unity amongſt themſelves, that they might repulſe the common Enemy of the Chriſtian Faith: And to ſhew that he would not perſuade others to that performance, in which he did not readily offer himſelf to be an Example; he freely ſent unto the Emperour a Preſent of ninety thouſand Ducats, with promiſe to furniſh fifty thouſand Crowns more every year, ſo long as the Wars ſhould continue.

And indeed at that time there needed Counſel, and Arms, and Money to reſiſt *Solyman*, who had beſieged the ſtrong Fortreſs of *Segeth*, which was then commanded by Count *Serini*, whoſe Family like that of *Hannibal* againſt the *Romans*, had ever ſworn enmity, and irreconcileable Hatred to the *Turks*: It happened, that though *Solyman* dyed in the Siege againſt this City, yet the aſſaults, and force were continued by *Mahomet* the *Grand Viſier*, who concealed the death of *Solyman*, until he had firſt adviſed the news thereof unto his Succeſſour *Sultan Selim* the Second, during which time, he plied the Town with ſuch continual ſtorms, as reduced the Defendants to the laſt extremity; and to a reſolution of ſelling their Lives at the deareſt rate; which they accordingly performed by a Sally of five hundred Men, in which all of them being ſlain with their Leader Count *Serini*, the Town was ſoon after ſurrendered into the hands of the *Turk*.

It was now the year 1570. when *Sultan Selim* ſucceeding his Father the Great *Solyman*, and being a Prince as ambitious and as deſirous to enlarge his Empire, as was his Predeceſſour, reſolved upon the Conqueſt of *Cyprus*, then belonging to the *Venetian* Dominions. But that he might not ſeem to attempt the Countries of his Neighbour, before he had firſt denounced War; he diſpatched a *Chiaus* to *Venice*, demanding the ſurrender of the Kingdom of *Cyprus*, as a dependance on the City of *Conſtantinople*, and a Member of the *Grecian* Empire, to which he had gained a Title by the power of his Sword. This Meſſage or Summons being delivered in full Senate, was ſeconded by many Incurſions made into *Dalmatia*, and *Sclavonia*, and great preparations for tranſporting Soldiers into *Cyprus*. The *Venetians* being thus aſſaulted by the potent Enemy of Chriſtendom, applyed themſelves to the *Pope*, deſiring him that he would be pleaſed out of his paternal commiſeration to the Chriſtian Cauſe, to adminiſter ſome effectual help from his own hand, and exhort all other Chriſtian Princes to enter into a League, and unite their Forces againſt the common Enemy of the Chriſtian Faith: In compliance with this Requeſt, the *Pope* prevailed with the King of *Spain* to furniſh the *Venetians* with fifty Sail of Galleys under the Command of *John Andrew d' Oria*, a valiant, and experienced General, requiring him to obey *Mark Anthony Colonna* Commander in Chief of the Pope's Gallies; and accordingly in the Month of *Auguſt* 1570. a very conſiderable Force met at the Rendezvous in *Candia* conſiſting of one hundred and eighty Gallies, eleven Galeaſſes, and ſix Ships of War. But the *Turks* being more forward in this Expedition, had a Month before that time landed a formidable Army in the Iſland of *Cyprus*; where after having taken the Cities of *Nicoſia* and *Famagoſta* with great effuſion of blood, they made themſelves Maſters of the whole Iſland; whileſt in the mean time the two great Commanders *Colonna* and *D'Oria*, being at variance, for *D'Oria* refuſed to yield to *Colonna*, the deſign was fruſtrated, and the Fleets returned home without any Action conſiderable in that Voyage, which verified the truth of that ſaying of *Livy*, *Quam plurium imperium bello inutile.* However this ill ſucceſs did not diſcourage theſe Allies from making farther trial of their fortune; for being all concerned to reſiſt the *Turk*; they renewed their League again for the ſucceeding year which was *An.* 1571. And that they might prevent the miſunderſtandings which the year before had happened between the two Generals; it was agreed, that *Don John d'Auſtria*, who was natural Brother to the King of *Spain* ſhould be Commander, or Generaliſſimo of the whole Navy, that *Mark Anthony Colonna* General of the Pope's Gallies, ſhould be his Lieutenant, and accordingly preparations being made, *Meſſina* in the Iſland of *Sicily* was appointed for the place of Rendezvous, where about the Month of *Auguſt* the whole Fleet joyned together, conſiſting of one hundred *Venetian* light Gallies, 6 Galleaſſes, two Ships beſides Brigantines, Felucas and other ſmaller Veſſels under *Dominico* a Nobleman of *Venice*. The Pope's Gallies were twelve, commanded by *Mark Anthony Colonna*, and the Fleet of *Spain* commanded by *Don John d'Auſtria* conſiſted of eighty one Gallies, amongſt which the three Gallies of *Malta* were comprehended, and twenty two Sail of Ships. With this Force this mighty Fleet departed from *Meſſina* on the 16th. of *September* 1571. and ſailed to *Corfu* a ſafe Port belonging to the *Venetians* in the *Adriatick* Sea: where having advice that the *Turks* Armata, was in the Gulf of *Lepanto*; they weighed Anchor, and ſtood directly for that place, where on the 3d. of *October* they joined Battel with the *Turks*, and gave them that memorable overthrow; which hath ever ſince diſabled them from forming any conſiderable Force at Sea againſt the Chriſtians: for in that fight, the which continued not above five hours, the moſt formidable Fleet that was ever equipped, or ſet out from *Conſtantinople*, was deſtroyed; for they loſt one hundred and ſeventeen Gallies, eighty Brigantines, or ſmaller Veſſels which were ſunk, or burn'd, or put aſhoar, forty Sail of Gallies, or thereabouts were taken in the purſuit. Of the *Turks* were killed thirty two thouſand Men, amongſt which were many *Baſhaws* and *Beglerbegs*, and three thouſand five hundred Captives were taken, and fifteen thouſand poor Chriſtians were releaſed, who had been chained to the Oar in the Gallies of the *Turks*: Of the Chriſtians after the fight was ended, upon the numbers wanting in every Veſſel, the account of the ſlain amounted to ſeven thouſand ſix hundred fifty ſix. This ſignal Victory was attributed as much to the devout Prayers, and Benediction of the Pope, as to the valour of the Soldiers, and conduct of the Captains: the report of which as it filled all *Europe* with joy, ſo it made way for the glories of *Don John*, who was received into *Meſſina* with all the Triumphs, and Feſtivals which that City could expreſs; alſo *Antonio Colonna* was with the like honour, and triumph received at *Rome*. Nor did the *Venetians* General want ſuch encouragements and honours, as that Republick commonly beſtows in reward of Valour and Merit; In memory of which ſignal Victory, they ſtamped divers Medals with this Inſcription, *Anno Magnæ Navalis Victoriæ Dei gratia contra Turcas*.

This memorable Victory was obtained in the time of this *Pius* V. who was certainly one of the beſt of the Popes, and therefore I know not why we may not ſay without offence to any; that this happy ſucceſs might be given in reward of the Devotion, and Piety of this *Pope*; for I am perſuaded that God hath a particular care of godly Kings, and Princes, for whoſe ſake as he often bleſſeth their people, ſo he beſtows ſome memorable bleſſings on them of ſignal Remark in their Reign. On which perſuaſion, I am apt to believe, that as God beſtowed this Victory on the Chriſtians in the time of this *Pius* V. againſt that great *Sultan Selim* II. So now in theſe our days, he hath given Victory, and unexpected ſucceſs to the Chriſtians before the Walls of *Vienna* againſt *Mahomet* IV. in reward of the great Piety, and Devotion of *Leopold* the Emperour, whoſe Devotion, and Prayers joyned to the Arms of the King of *Poland*, and of other Princes, have operated Miracles, and delivered *Germany* in a wonderful manner from the power of the *Turk*.

And yet notwithſtanding the religious temper of this Pope, we find that he excommunicated Queen *Elizabeth*, as far as his Bull would operate he depoſed her from Royal Dignities, and conferred her Crown on *Mary* Queen of *Scots*; and perſuaded *Philip* King of *Spain*, to ſeize on the effects of the *Engliſh* Merchants at *Antwerp*, and other parts of the Low-Countries, and to aſſiſt the Catholick Subjects in *England* in their Godly, and Religious Conſpiracies, as *Gabutius* calls them, againſt the Queen their Natural Sovereign. *Pius oblatam occaſionem haud contemnendam eſſe ratus, efflatigabat ab Rege ut Anglorum in Elizabetham* pie conſpirantium *ſtudia foveret*. Thus we ſee, how far a miſtaken zeal may tranſport good Men, which though it may in ſome meaſure excuſe from the aggravation of a Crime, yet it cannot prove ſufficient to ſet Men entirely upright at the great day of the juſt Ballance.

Lib. 3. *cap.* 9.

This *Pope* added alſo to his other Excellencies, the Virtue of loving wiſe, and learned Men, and ſuch as were endued with a vivacity, and acuteneſs of parts; for he ſcarce preferred any to conſiderable Dignity, but ſuch as were excellent in ſome degree or other; and of the twenty one Cardinals which he created at three ſeveral times, there were five of them at leaſt who were Men of extraordinary Abilities, and famous in their Generation.

He founded certain publick places for Learning, and Piety, amongſt which he endowed a College in the Univerſity of *Pavia*, for the Education of Youth, and affixed over it the Arms of the *Ghiſlers*; at *Boſchi* the place of his Birth, he built a Monaſtery for *Dominican* Friers, and endowed it with a competent Revenue; and to demonſtrate his gratitude to his Antient benefactors, he created a Magnificent Sepulchre in memory of *Paul* V. by whom he was created Cardinal: and in ſhort he made many new Buildings, and repaired ſeveral that were decayed in the *Vatican*, and both within and without the City of *Rome*.

After all which about the middle of *March* 1572. he became indiſpoſed by a ſtoppage of Urin, of which he commonly had a fit in that Month; the which illneſs encreaſing upon him gave him notice, that his end approached, from which time converting all his thoughts to holy and pious Meditations, he ſpent the ſhort remainder of his time in the preparation of his Soul for Death, which happened on the firſt of *May* following; the ſame day he died, his Body was embowel'd, and three little ſtones found at the neck of his Bladder, which the Phyſitians declared to be the cauſe of h[illegible] death.

He was generally lamented by all, and eſpecially by vertuous Men, for conſidering his principles, his Enemies had nothing worſe to object, than that he gave a Diſpenſation to *Philip* King of *Spain* to marry with the Daughter of his Siſter and of *Maximilian* his near Kinſman, and yet would never be induced to conſent unto the Marriage of *Margaret* of *Valois* Siſter of the King of *France* with *Henry* King of *Navarre*, making the difference of Religion a greater bar to Marriage, than the degrees of conſanguinity forbidden by the Levitical Law.

The day after his death his Body being clothed in the habit of a *Jacobin* was carried into the Church of St. *Peter*, where the people aſſembled in great numbers to render him Honour, and Veneration, every one touching their Beads, and Roſaries at his Body, in the ſame manner as was their practice at the Reliques of Saints; and afterwards he was honourably buried in the ſame Church; where his Body lay depoſited, until afterwards *Sixtus* V. in grateful remembrance of the benefits he had received from him, tranſported it to the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore*, and erected a ſtately Monument over it in a Chappel built for that purpoſe, with this Epitaph inſcribed upon it.

Pio V. *Pont. Max. ex Ordine Prædicatorum Sixtus* V. *Pont. Max. ex Ordine Minorum grati animi monumentum poſuit.*

GREGORY XIII.

PIUS the Fifth being dead, and his Funeral Rites after the accuſtomed manner being performed; the Cardinals entred the *Conclave*, and with common conſent elected *Hugo Buoncompagno*, who was Prieſt and Cardinal of St. *Sixtus* to the dignity of *Pope*; he was born at *Bologna* of the antient Family of the *Buoncompagni*, his Father was called *Chriſtopher*, and his Mother *Agnola Maraſcalchi*, by whom he was at firſt educated in the Studies of the Civil Law, in which having made great proficiency; he took his degree of Doctor in the Univerſity of *Bologna* at the age of twenty eight years, and in a ſhort time was made Judg of the Court of Trade, erected in that City for tryal of Mercantile Cauſes; afterwards in hopes of better preferment he went to *Rome*, where he was conſtituted an Aſſiſtant to the Senator, who was Judg of the Court held in the *Capitol*, and

and the year following he was made Clerk of the Signet for Diſpenſations, and other Beneficences. In the time of *Paul* III. he was employed at the Council of *Trent*, and made Vice-Auditor of the *Camera*: under *Julius* III. he was made Secretary Apoſtolical, and ſent Vice-Legat with Cardinal *Cigalla* into the Campaign of *Rome*. Under *Paul* IV. he was ordained Prieſt and Biſhop of *Veſte*, and in the year 1562. he was employed to the Council of *Trent*, where he remained until the prorogation thereof. Under *Pius* IV. he was conſtituted Aſſeſſor of the Papal Chappel, and on St. *Gregory's* day was created Cardinal of St. *Sixtus*, and employed by him for his Legat into *Spain*; from whence returning again to *Rome* in the time of *Pius* V. he performed his ſeveral Offices with ſuch Integrity and general Satisfaction; that having acquired a ſingular Fame and good Eſteem, he was by the common conſent of all the Cardinals, and particular concurrence of *Morone*, *Granvel*, *Farneſe*, *Altemps*, and *Borromeo*, who were the Leading Men in the *Conclave*, promoted to the Papal Chair, and on the 13th. of *May* 1572. declared Pope, ſtiling himſelf by the Name of *Gregory* XIII. out of the great Devotion, and reſpect he had to Saint *Gregory Nazianzen*, on whoſe Feſtival he had been created Cardinal. In which Election there was nothihg more remarkable, than that it was made in the ſpace of four or five hours, different to the Cuſtoms, and former practices of *Conclaves*, in which by Factions, and Artifices of prevailing Cardinals Elections have been protracted for ſeveral Months.

On the day of *Pentecoſt* or Whitſunday *Gregory* XIII. being Crowned, and eſtabliſhed in the Papal Chair, his firſt Enterpriſe was in proſecution of the Deſign commenced by his Predeceſſour againſt the *Turk*, in which the *Spaniard* and *Venetians*, being already engaged; the *Pope* for better ſtrengthening of this League diſpeeded *Fulvio* Cardinal of *Urſino* into *France* unto *Charles* IX. with Letters exhorting him to enter into the Alliance, and ſacred League which he, with other Princes, had formed againſt the *Turk*; but that King being then engaged in a War with his Proteſtant Subjects, had neither Men nor Mony to ſpare; ſo that the Legat returned to *Rome* with fair words, and profeſſions only of Obedience to the Papal See.

Howſoever the Allies being encouraged by their late ſucceſs, proceeded in the War; in order unto which, *Colonna* was confirmed General of the Gallies by this *Pope's* Commiſſion, and with his Fleet joyned to that under the command of the Providitor General *Soranzo*, and to 20. Gallies ſupplyed by *Don John* of *Auſtria*, (who promiſed to follow them with the main body of his Fleet unleſs he were diverted by the Wars in *Flanders*) they ſailed to the Rendezvouz at *Corfu*. Towards the end of

1572. *July* 1572. they arrived at *Corfu*, and there joyning with *Foſcarini* General of the *Venetians*, compoſed a conſiderable Fleet, conſiſting of one hundred and thirty Gallies, ſix Galleaſſes, and ten Ships, with which they eſteemed themſelves of ſufficient ſtrength to encounter the *Turks*, whoſe force, (notwithſtanding the late Defeat) was reported to conſiſt of two hundred and fifty Sail; but they being for the moſt part Veſſels built in haſte, and framed of Green and unſeaſoned Timber, were notwithſtanding their numbers eſteemed of inferiour force to the well-built and equipped Fleet of the Chriſtians; who on that confidence reſolved to attaque the *Turks*, then anchoring on the Coaſt of *Mavoiſia*.

The Chriſtians being come as near to them at *Cerigo*, weighed their Anchors, and had ſight of the *Turks* about *Capomalio*: upon which *Uzun Hali* Captain *Paſha* of the *Turk*'s Armata not adventuring to ſtand a ſhock with ſo well compoſed, and ſo well ordered a Force, turned the ſtern of his Gallies to the Enemy, and rowed to the *Weſtward*, directing his courſe to the Iſle of *Cervi*: the Chriſtians in the mean time toaing their heavier Veſſels, purſued them ſo ſlowly, that the Night came on before they arrived within ſhot of the Enemy; at which time *Uzun Hali* putting a good face on the buſineſs as if he intended to engage, but with hopes that the Night would ſoon ſeparate them; he turned the Prow of his Gallies on the Enemy, whom when he obſerved coming on with heat and valour; he tacked about, and baſely put himſelf into flight, and rowed away ſo hard, that the Chriſtians not being able to overtake him, returned again to *Cerigo*; where having remained for the ſpace of two days, they returned again in purſuit of the *Turks*: and on the 10*th.* of *Auguſt*, they diſcovered them at an Anchor in the Port of *Quailes* under Cape *Matagan*. The *Turks* on ſight of the Chriſtians not daring to engage with them, fled and ſaved themſelves in the Port of *Coron*; from whence the Chriſtians returned again to their Rendezvouz in *Cerigo*. By this time advices came that *Don John* was arrived with his Fleet at *Corfu*, and that he was highly diſpleaſed, that the Confederates ſhould endeavour to engage the Enemy without the conjunction of his Forces; *Colonna* was ſenſibly touched at this diſpleaſure of *Don Joh*[illegible], as were all the other Commanders, and therefore it was agreed to return unto *Corfu*, to unite themſelves with *Don John*; which being accordingly performed, and the Forces joyned; the whole Fleet conſiſted there of one hundred and eighty light Gallies, eighteen Ships, and ſix Galleaſſes: Upon this conjunction of Forces a Council of War being held, it was reſolved, to ſurpriſe the *Turks* in *Coron*, but they having Watches on the top of the Hills, diſcovered the Chriſtian Fleet at a diſtance, by which means they had time to retire to the Port of *Modon*, which being a ſecure and well guarded place, they could not be provoked by all the inſults, and defiance the Chriſtians could make to adventure a Battel with them: for now not farther confiding in their Maritime Forces, they applyed themſelves to fortifie the Hills, and Eminencies about the Town with Canon, for bette[illegible]efence and ſecurity of the Haven; by which this Enterpriſe on *Modon* appearing difficult, the Chriſtians reſolved to attempt the Caſtle of *Navarine*, and to that end landed three thouſand *Italians*, and one thouſand two hundred *Spaniards* under the command of Prince *Alexander Farneſe*, intending the next day to raiſe Batteries againſt the Caſtle; but being adviſed by ſome fugitive Slaves which eſcaped from the *Turks*, that great preparations were making, and eight thouſand Horſe were already in a Body, for the relief of the Caſtle, the Deſign was given over, and the Forces recalled again aboard the Fleet; upon whoſe retreat a Body of ten thouſand Horſe appearing the Chriſtians had been greatly worſted, had they not embarked under the ſecurity of their own Cannon. It being now about the 7*th.* of *October*, that the Winds were high, the Rains falling in great abundance, and the Seas unſafe for Gallies; and no hopes appearing, that the Enemy would be drawn to an Engagement; it was reſolved to conclude the Deſigns of this year; And ſo the Chriſtian Fleet ſailing to the *Weſtward*, *Dohn John* and *Colonna* directed their courſe to *Meſſina* and *Foſcarini* to *Corfu*. When the ſucceſs of this year was told the *Pope*, his Anſwer was; That it was well it was no worſe, for if the firſt year of his Reign had been celebrated with the like Glory, as was the former; his beginning would have been too happy, and auſpitious. Therefore that the enſuing year might prove more fortunate, he intended to make it his chief employment of the whole Winter, to offer his Prayers and Supplications to God with Faſting, Maſſes, and Proceſſions, that he would be pleaſed to favour, and aſſiſt the Cauſe, and Arms of the Chriſtians againſt the Enemies of the Croſs of Chriſt.

But whilſt the *Pope* was meditating of theſe things, and contriving means to proſecute the War with moſt advantage; the *Venetians* unexpectedly about the beginning of the year 1573. clapt up a Peace with the *Turks* by the mediation of their *Bailo*, who then with the *French* Ambaſſadour at *Conſtantinople* had treated the Conditions with good ſucceſs; to which *Sultan Selim* the more readily inclined; for having done right to his honour by the Conqueſt of *Cyprus*, and by taking ſeveral Fortreſſes in *Dalmatia*, he more eaſily condeſcended to terms of Peace without diminution, or diſparagement as was ſuppoſed to the greatneſs of his Power. But both the *Pope* and the *Spaniards* were not ſatisfied with the *Venetians*, for having without their conſent and privity, and contrary to the Articles of their League made this Peace with the *Turk*: In excuſe for which the *Venetians* diſpatched their Ambaſſadours to the *Pope* and King of *Spain*, giving them to underſtand, that the extream urgency of their Affairs, which by many circumſtances were rendered difficult had forced them to an Accommodation with the *Turk*; and in like Terms they expreſſed themſelves to Cardinal *Buoncompagno* the *Pope*'s Nephew, whom *Gregory* had in the year 1574. ſent unto *Venice* to complement *Henry* King of *Poland*, who by the death of *Charles* IX. was returning by that way into *France*, to take poſſeſſion of that Kingdom.

In this manner the *Pope* being eaſed of his Expenſive War againſt the *Turk*, convetred the current of his Treaſure to the aſſiſtance of *Henry* III. againſt his Proteſtant Subjects in *France*, for ſupply of which he raiſed the ſum of four hundred thouſand Crowns by Impoſitions, which he laid on Cities belonging to the Church; and conf[illegible]ed the Bull given by *Pius* V. for ſale of Church-Lands; of which there remaining as yet to the value of fifty thouſand Crowns of yearly Rent, unſold: he conſtituted the Cardinals of *Bourbon*, *Guiſe*, and *Lewis d'Eſte*, Commiſſioners for the Sales.

Nor was this *Pope* in other matters eſteemed leſs generous, and magnificent; for to the Duke of *Bruſwick*, who came to viſit him at *Rome*, he made a Preſent of ſeven thouſand Crowns, and erected many Churches there from the foundation, and built Colleges and Churches to the number of twenty ſeven in divers remote parts of the World for Seminaries and places of Worſhip, and Religion. And for the more ſolemn, and *An.* 1575. ornamental Celebration of the Jubilee in the year 1575. he enlarged the Street leading from the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore* to the *Lateran*, for the more commodious paſſage of Pilgrims; and having repaired the *Portico* or Porch of S. *Maries*, which was become ruinous, he cauſed this Inſcription to be engraven over it. *Gregorius* XIII. *Pont. Max. Eugenii labantem Porticum refecit, & magnificentius reſtituit. Viam rectam ad Lateranum aperuit.* Anno Jubilei MD.LXXV.

In this year aroſe dangerous Diſcords, and Civil Diſſentions between the antient, and the new Nobility of *Genoua*; to which latter the Commonalty of the City adhered, having by them been poſſeſſed with an Opinion, that the Antient Nobles, in favour of whom moſt of their Laws ran, intended to uſurp ſuch an Authority over them, as ſhould be little different from Slavery; this jealouſie made ſo deep an impreſſion in the minds of the people, that they betook themſelves to Arms, and had proceeded to blood and ruin, had not a ſtop been made thereunto by the Wiſdom, and Oratory of *Senarega* the Chancellour, who being a moderate Perſon, and one, of whoſe prudence and honeſty the people had a great Opinion, perſuaded both Parties to remit their differences to the Pope, the Emperor *Maximilian*, and the King of *Spain*. The which being accorded on all hands, *Senarega* was in behalf of the New Nobility diſpeeded to the *Pope*; with whom whilſt he was ſtating the caſe between both Parties, Intelligenee was brought to *Rome*, that *Don John d'Auſtria*, was then at *Gaeta* preparing a very great Fleet againſt *Genoua*, in expectation, and with probable hopes to prevail by the means and advantages of thoſe inteſtine Diſcords of the City. But the *Pope* at the requeſt and upon the applications made by *Senarega*, diſpatched a Letter to *Don John*, exhorting him to deſiſt from his Deſign, which was ſo diſpleaſing to him, that in caſe he perſiſted therein he was reſolved to raiſe all the force of *Italy*, to oppoſe his Enterpriſe; the which Menaces having given a ſtop to the proceedings of *Don John*; ſeveral perſons were ſubſtituted Arbitrators in theſe differences by the *Pope*, the Emperor, and the King of *Spain*; namely, Cardinal *Morone*, *Caſtacciaro*, *Borgia*, and *Idiaquez*; who taking the ſtate of the whole matter into their conſideration, rectified, and reformed many antient Statutes, eſtabliſhed new in their places, and ſo governed all things with that even hand, that an accord was made and concluded in the Month of *May* 1576. with that ſatisfaction to both Parties, that the Citizens, and Inhabitants who had retired from *Genoua* for fear of the civil Diſſenſions, returned again to enjoy their ropoſe and eaſe according to their accuſtomed Liberty.

Nor was the *Pope* leſs concerned for the Peace of *Poland*, where great differences aroſe amongſt the Nobility (as hath been accuſtomary) about the Election of a King. For *Henry* III. of *France*, having (as we have ſaid) reſigned his Elective Government to take poſſeſſion of his hereditary Kingdom of *France*; the Election of a new King adminiſtred great cauſe of diſpute, and argument; by reaſon of the many powerful Princes which ſtood in competition, and were Candidates for the Election; as namely the Emperor *Maximilian* II. and *Erneſt* his Son, with his Brother the Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, *Stephen Battori* Prince of *Tranſilvania*, *Alphonſo* II. Duke of *Ferrara*, together with the Great Duke of *Moſcovy*. The Conteſts between theſe mighty Rivals proceeded to that degree, that nothing but force of Arms could determine the Controverſie; which the Arch-Biſhop of *Gueſne* with many other Aſſociates intending to prove, forſook the place of Election, and with armed Bands declared for *Maximilian* the Emperor; againſt whom another party appeared in favour of *Anne* Daughter of the Royal Family of *Jagellona* in *Poland*, intending in right of her to confer in Marriage the Crown upon *Battori* Prince of *Tranſilvania*: but theſe diſſentions were ſoon after concluded by the death of *Maximilian* the Emperor; *Battori* being after his Marriage with *Anne* by general conſent of all the Nobles received, and crowned King of *Poland*; and thereupon ſent his Ambaſſadours to *Rome*, to pay his Reſpects and obedience to the Papal Chair.

In the year 1576. a grievous Peſtilence afflicted moſt parts of *Italy*, eſpecially *Trent*, *Milan*, and *Venice*: it is recorded of Cardinal *Borromeo* who was Arch-Biſhop of *Milan*, that he was in a moſt pious manner charitable to the Poor, and others of his City at that time of common Calamity, to whom he not onely contributed a maintenance for their Food, and Medicines for their ſickneſs, but in perſon viſited ſuch as were afflicted with the Peſtilence, and adminiſtred to them the Sacraments of the Church and other ſpiritual comforts; for which and other works of like piety he was afterwards canonized for a Saint. Nor was *Venice* leſs afflicted with this ſpreading Contagion, of which moſt of the Friers, and other Religious, whoſe duty it was to viſit the ſick, died of the ſame Diſeaſe; for which reaſon the Pope ſent his Indulgences into the aforementioned places, that all ſuch who died with a ſorrow for their ſins, ſhould obtain the ſame pardon, as if they had confeſſed, and communicated, and received the other Sacraments of the Church required for dying perſons.

It will not be very pertinent to this Hiſtory to relate the Troubles which happened in *Portugal* in the days of this Pope; which in reality were very great, cauſed by the raſhneſs of *Sebaſtian* King of that Country; who ſuffering himſelf to be perſuaded by *Mahomet* King of the *Moors*, who was expelled his Kingdom, tranſported an Army of thirty thouſand Men into *Africa*, to reſtore again the expelled King to his Government. But as this deſign was commenced againſt the Opinion, and counſel of the King of *Spain* and the other Friends of King *Sebaſtian*; ſo accordingly the ſucceſs was unfortunate, for his whole Army was defeated near the City of *Alquivir*, and himſelf ſlain in the year 1578. 1578. *Sebaſtian* dying in this manner without Iſſue, Cardinal *Henriquez* Uncle to the deceaſed, and Son of King *Emanuel* was Crowned King; but he being at that time Aged and infirm, and unfit for Matrimony convened an Aſſembly of eleven Barons of the Land, to conſider of a Succeſſour, that ſo future Conteſts, and civil Wars for the Crown might, if poſſible, be avoided. Whilſt this matter was under conſideration the Cardinal King died, and then all things were in confuſion; the Commonalty cryed up for *Don Antonio*, who was the baſtard Son of *Don Alvize* Brother to the Cardinal; but the Nobility declared for King *Philip* of *Spain*, to whom the right of ſucceſſion to the Crown did legally appertain according to the Opinion of all the Doctors of the Civil Law, this Controverſie came at length to be decided by the Sword, in which King *Philip* having the advantage, ſent an Army of thirty thouſand Men under the Command of the Duke of *Alva* into *Portugal*, where having taken ſeveral Towns, at length made himſelf Maſter of *Lisbon*; where *Philip* ſoon after arriving was acknowledged King, and Fealty paid him by all the Nobles, and Commonalty of the Land; and having remained ſome ſhort time at *Lisbon* returned in peace to his Court at *Madrid*. Whilſt theſe things were in action, the Pope ſent Cardinal *Riario* to accommodate differences, and moderate between both Parties; but coming too late, after the Controverſie was decided, he changed his Office of Mediation to Complements, and joy for the ſucceſſes of the Conquerour.

About this time Pope *Gregory* confirmed the Excommunication which *Pius* V. had publiſhed againſt *Elizabeth* Queen of *England*; and outed *Gilbert Truckheſius* Biſhop of *Cologna* of his Arch-Biſhoprick, for marrying, and for adhering to the Confeſſion of *Augsbourg*: He alſo rectified the Kalendar, which we call the *New Stile* or *Gregorian Account*, differing ten days from that which we uſe in *England*, called the *Julian Account*: the which was to commence in all places where they would receive it in the year 1583.

About this time alſo there happened an irreconcilable difference between the Grand Maſter of *Malta* and the chief Knights of that Order; which aroſe to that degree and height, that the Knights depoſed their Maſter, put him into Priſon, and having accuſed him of many enormous Crimes, they created *Marturin Romagaſſo* a *Gaſcon* to ſucceed him in his place. On the other ſide, the Grand Maſter appealed to the Pope, and complaining of the many injuries he had ſtuſtained, deſired that he might be removed to *Rome*, and his cauſe heard before the Apoſtolical Tribunal. The Pope highly reſenting this inſolence, and indignity which the Knights had exerciſed towards their Maſter, diſpatched his Legat to *Malta*, who by virtue of a Writ from the Pope, brought the Grand Maſter to *Rome*; and with him came three hundred Knights on three Gallies; where being arrived, the Pope favoured the Cauſe of the Maſter, and in evidence thereof, ſent eight hundred Horſe to meet him, which with great pomp and triumph conducted him to the Palace of Cardinal *d' Eſte*, where he was lodged with much honour. After a few days alotted for his refreſhment, he was admitted to Audience with the Pope, and having in humble manner kiſſed his feet, he repeated the Hymn of *Nunc dimitis*, or *Lord letteſt thou now thy Servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have ſeen thy Salvation.* Which piece of flattery ſo pleaſed the Pope, that he would give no credence to the Calumnies, and charge of his Accuſers, but diſmiſſed his Cauſe, and returned him back to his Lodging with honour, and entire ſatisfaction. After which, *Romagaſſo* his Rival coming to *Rome*, to hear and ſee how matters were carried; and finding himſelf diſcountenanced both by the Clergy and by the Princes, conceived ſo ſad a reſentment of this miſcarriage, that falling ſick with grief, he ſoon after departed this life about the beginning of *November* 1581. Two Months after which the Grand Maſter being alſo tranſported with a different paſſion died at *Rome*; both which accidents ſo happily concurring, obviated all the difficulties which might offer about a new Election, *Hugh de Verdal* a *Gaſcon* being choſen by common conſent, without trouble or other tumult.

The year 1583. began with two unfortunate Calamities which much afflicted the Pope, and the City of *Rome*: the firſt was Famine, and want of Bread-corn which ſo miſerably pinched the poor, for the ſpace of two Months, that many of them were ſtarved to death. The other was a ſad and doleful Tragedy, which began at *Rome*, and ended at *Padoua*; the cauſe and matter thereof in ſhort was this. The Head

Bayliff of *Rome* with his Followers, underſtanding that a certain *Bandito* was come for a Spy to *Rome,* and for a Sanctuary was fled to the Palace of *Orſini*; by one means or other, he ſeized, and brought him from that place; but it happened that as he was carrying him from thence, *Raimand*, *Orſini*, *Savillo*, and *Ruſtici* being on Horſe-back, with their Servants unhappily met the Baliff, and commanded him to releaſe the Priſoner, who was illegally ſeized within the priviledges of the *Orſini*. The Bayliff refuſing ſo to do, *Ruſtici* ſtrook him over the Head with his Cane, which ſo incenſed the Bayliff, that he commanded his Followers to revenge this affront with their Arms; which they readily obeying, immediately ſhot *Ruſtici* dead from his Horſe; and ſo mortally hurt *Orſini*, and *Savello*, that in two days after they died of their wounds. This unhappy accident troubled all *Rome*, but eſpecially incenſed the party, and Creatures of *Orſini* to that degree, that riſing in a tumult, they ran with Weapons in their hands to kill all the *Sbiri* or Bayliffs they could find, and having way-laid all the Avenues, where they could make an eſcape, the confuſion continued for the ſpace of two days, and rendered the City a ſad ſpectacle of blood, and maſſacre. In the mean time the Pope, and civil Government not being able to apply a Remedy, gave way to the fury of the people, which (as it was believed) would have been inflamed higher by oppoſition of the civil Magiſtrate; The Head bayliff having hidden himſelf for ſome days was at length taken, and beheaded at *Rome*. But this evil ended not here: for from this fatal accident, another quarrel aroſe between *Vitelli* who was Deputy to *Buoncompagno* General of the Church, and *Lodwick Orſino* Brother of *Raimond*, who was lately killed; in proſecution of which, *Orſino* taking with him ſeveral perſons in diſguiſe, and Masks, aſſaulted *Vitelli* in his way from *Monte Magnopli* to *Rome*, and ſhot him dead with a Carbine in his Coach, for which offence *Orſino* being condemned to baniſhment, he departed from *Rome*, and went to live at *Padoua*, where having taken up his Lodgings, he ſoon after committed a like murther on *Vittoria* the Wife of *Paul Guiordano*, and her Brother; for which Crime being proſecuted by the Juſtice of *Venice*, he fortified himſelf within his Houſe, reſolving to preſerve himſelf by force of Arms; but not being long able to hold out againſt the Soldiers which were ſent againſt it, the Houſe was almoſt levelled to the ground, and the Defendants taken Priſoners, which being all puniſhed by Death, or other Sentences of Juſtice, this fatal Tragedy was at length ended.

After theſe ſorrowful Stories, the Pope being willing to cheer and comfort the City, created nineteen Cardinal, amongſt which his Nephew was made one with the title of St. *Sixtus*, and *John Anthony Fachineſti* of *Bologna*, who was afterwards made Pope by the name of *Innocent* IX. After which he received no ſmall contentment to ſee his ſtately ſtructure of the *Jeſuits* College finiſhed at *Rome*, over the Gate of which theſe words were Engraven. Greg. XIII. P. M. *Religioni, & Bonis Artibus* MDLXXXIII. in memory and in gratitude for which the *Jeſuits* at their own expence painted in their wide Court, or *Area*, all the Colleges, and Foundations which this *Pope* had built, and endowed in divers parts of the World: and particularly in reference to their own College, this Inſcription was engraven in Capital Letters. *Gregorio* XIII. *Pont. Max. Hujus Collegii Fundatori Societatis Jeſu ampliſſimis* *ab eo Privelegiis Munita, & Ingentibus Aucta Beneficiis, Univerſa in hoc totius Ordinis Seminario parentis Optimi Maximi Memoriam, ſuique grati animi Monumentum* P.

Nor were theſe favours ill beſtowed on the *Jeſuits*, who had always been ſo induſtrious, and true Drudges to the See of *Rome*, that they brought Proſelytes from the moſt remote parts of the World; and in the year 1585. after a long Navigation of three years, conducted four Ambaſſadours to *Rome* from the Iſland of *Japan* in the *Eaſt-Indies*, ſent from ſome great Lords, and from the Community of Chriſtians converted in that Country to the Faith of the Goſpel. The arrival of ſuch Strangers at *Rome* filled all the City with Diſcourſe and Novelty; and were entertained with free treatment at the expence of the Church, being lodged in the *Jeſuits* College, who were the Authors, or Apoſtles of their converſion: though ſome years afterwards by the indiſcreet management of the *Jeſuits*, who uſurped too much on the civil Juriſdiction and temporal Power of that Kingdom, Chriſtianity was totally extirpated by the moſt cruel perſecution that the moſt fierce Enemies to the Goſpel of Chriſt had ever exerciſed againſt his people: for the particulars whereof, which are moſt doleful, and Tragical to relate, and not pertinent to this Hiſtory, we ſhall refer the Reader to the Writers of the Deſcription of *Japan*. But as to theſe four Ambaſſadours who were all young Men, not much exceeding the age of twenty years, they had remained but few days in *Rome* before Pope *Gregory* departed this life. He was rather ſurprized with death, than reduced thereunto by long ſickneſs, his indiſpoſition being diſcovered by his countenance, before he was really ſenſible thereof within himſelf; his Diſtemper was eſteemed by the Phyſicians to be a Quinſy with which he was ſuffocated, and died the tenth day of *April*, 1585. being aged eighty three years, and three months. He may be numbred amongſt the good Popes, having ended his days with a general good eſteem of all, and eſpecially of the people of *Rome* who bewailed his death, and in honour to his memory engraved theſe words, under his Statue of Braſs which he had in his life-time cauſed to be erected in the *Capitol*.

Gregorio XIII. *Opt. Max. ob farinæ vectigal ſublatum*
Urbem Templis & Operibus Magnificentis exornatam
H. S. *Octingenties*
Singulari beneficentiâ in egenos diſtributum
Ob Seminaria Exterarum Nationum in urbe, ac toto pene Terraram Orbe
Religionis propagandæ cauſa inſtituta
Ob paternam in omnes gentes caritatem
Qua ex ultimis Novi Orbis inſulis Japoniorum Regum Legatos
Triennii Navigatione
Ab obedientiam Apoſtolicæ Sedi Exhibendam
Primum venientes Romam Pro Pontificia dignitate accepit.
S. P. Q. R.

The Pope being dead, his Corps were with funeral Pomp brought into St. *Peter's* Church, and buried in a Chappel which he himſelf had erected, which was afterwards richly adorned, and beautified by his Kindred and Relations.

He was naturally of a chearful Countenance, and pleaſing Aſpect, and being of a good habit of Body, and ſound temperament by temperance and ſobriety, he conſerved that good conſtitution unto old Age: he uſed much Exerciſe, and delighted in Riding, being ſo active, that to his latter time he could mount on Horſeback without the help of his Servants; the place of his Recreation, and retirement was *Monte Dragone* at *Freſcati*, about ten Miles diſtant from *Rome*, where he frequently enjoyed the freſh Air, which is accounted the moſt healthful of all *Italy*. This Palace now belongs to the Prince *Borgheſe*, and is ſituated in a moſt delightful proſpect from one of the open Galleries, of which I copied theſe Verſes.

Theſſala quid Tempe, qui quæris Adonidis hortos?
Hæc tibi pro cunctis villa Dragonis erit.
Proſpicis hinc Tybur, colles, & rura Catonis
Pulchrior aſpectu quæ tibi Scena ſubit.

The greateſt care and trouble which this Pope ſuſtained in the time of his Reign, was to ſuppreſs the unruly numbers of the *Banditi*, who were grown to that bold inſolence, that they commanded and pillaged all the Cities round; nor were the Lives, nor Eſtates of honeſt men ſafe, nor ſecure within the Cities. It is incredible to relate what numbers they murthered in divers places, and what Robberies they committed; and though this *Gregory* ſent many Troops of armed Soldiers againſt them, yet he was not able to extirpate thoſe bands of villanous Men; that work being reſerved for *Sixtus Quintus*, whoſe Life is the next which offers its ſelf to our Pen.

SIXTUS V.

GREGORY being dead, the Cardinals to the number of thirty nine entered the *Conclave* on *Eaſter* day, being the eleventh of *April*, which were all that were then preſent at *Rome*; to which in a ſhort time afterwards three more were added, namely, the Cardinals of *Auſtria*, *Madrucci*, and *Vercelli*: The *Conclave* being divided into no leſs than ſix Factions, prolonged the choice by the many Scrutinies that were made; but at length all things ſeemed to favour Cardinal *Montalto*, and the minds of the *Conclave* to encline towards him; for he was conſidered as a perſon learned, peaceable, pleaſant in his Converſation, and one, who was free of dependancies or Relations; for he had only ſome Nephews by a Siſter who were all ſo young, and of that tender age, that they were never likely to put him to expence, or intrude into the management of Affairs: beſides he had been always obliging in his carriage, and given demonſtrations of due honour and reſpect to all the Cardinals; he was alſo of a quiet behaviour, living in a modeſt retirement, and having at any time entertained a Diſpute, or controverſie with any Cardinal in the Conſiſtory, he would rather gently yield the queſtion, than ſeem obſtinate in any impertinent adherence to his own Opinion. When at any time he had been reviled, as once he was in the Conſiſtory, where one of the Cardinals called him the Aſs of *la Marca*, he laughed, and took it for a jeſt, and as an effect of that intimacy, and familiarity which was between them. In ſhort, his plauſible carriage made him acceptable to all, and opened a way to his Election, which happened the 24*th.* day of *April*, the See having been vacant fourteen days only.

This *Pope* was named *Felix* or *Felice*, born of poor and obſcure Parents at *Montalto* in the Marches of *Ancona:* at the age of fourteen years he took the habit of St. *Francis* and became a *Cordelior* Frier, in a Convent at *Aſcoli* not far diſtant from the place of his birth. As he grew forward in years, he became a good proficient in his Studies, and ſo ſubtil a Diſputant, that he was always challenging and provoking his fellow Students to Diſputations, which moved them to that anger and envy againſt him, as made them often to fly into paſſions, and revile him with the meanneſs of his birth, terming him with the reproach of being the Son of a Hog-driver, or the Boy of a Swineherd; all which he took very mildly, and without diſpleaſure to be accounted of mean Parentage; for he would often in jeſt, ſay, that he was born of an Illuſtrious Houſe, which was ſo conſpicuous, that the very Sun-beams darted through it. But when he had paſſed from his Sophiſtry to more ſubſtantial Learning; he took his Degree of Doctor of Divinity in the City of *Fermo*; and ſoon after, in company with certain other learned Fathers he went to a publick Diſputation held at *Aſcity*, where in preſence of Cardinal *Carpi*, who was then Protectour of the *Franciſcan* Order, he ſhewed ſo much ſubtlety, and acuteneſs of Wit in defending certain concluſions, that he acquired the eſteem both of a learned Diſputant and an elegant Oratour. In the year 1551. he was ordained Preacher at *Siena*, and the year following at *Camerino*; and afterwards by order of his General he was appointed one of the *Lent* Preachers in the Church of the holy Apoſtles at *Rome*, and therein acquitted himſelf with great honour and applauſe. Afterwards he was made one of the Council of the Inquiſition, and conſtituted by Pope *Pius* IV. Vicar General of his Order, and together with Cardinal *Buon-compagno* made Legat Apoſtolical in *Italy*. *Pius* V. created him Biſhop of St. *Agatha*, and Cardinal with title of St. *Jerome:* And laſtly, (as we have ſaid) he was on the 11*th.* of *April* 1585. choſen *Pope*, giving himſelf the name of *Sixtus* V. though deſired by others to aſſume the name of *Nicholas* in honour to *Nicholas* IV. whoſe memory he was obſerved much to affect, as appears by a ſtately Monument, which he at his own charge, when Cardinal, erected over the Sepulchre of that *Pope* in the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore* at *Rome:* But the name of *Sixtus* prevailed with him, both in Complement to Cardinal St. *Sixtus*, as alſo in honour to the memory of *Sixtus* IV. who was a Frier likewiſe of the ſame Order.

Sixtus being thus Elected, he contrived to be Crowned on *Wedneſday* the firſt of *May*; which day had often proved auſpicious to him; for on a *Wedneſday* he was firſt initiated into the habit of St. *Francis*, and on a *Wedneſday* he was created Vicar General, Cardinal, and Pope; on *Sunday* following he went to St. *John* of *Lateran* (according to uſual cuſtom) to take poſſeſſion of his ſublime Office. But before we proceed to the particular Affairs which occurred in his Government;

it may not be unpleaſant to the Reader to recite ſome delightful paſſages which happened upon his Election. For when the Scrutiny was paſt, and that *Montalto* thought himſelf ſecure of his Election, he immediately began to caſt off his diſguiſe of Humility, with which he had for above fifteen years cloaked his Ambition: for no ſooner were half the Votes recited in his favour, by which he found himſelf ſecure of his Election ; but being impatient to enjoy the honours of the Papal Throne; he aroſe on his Feet, before the Scrutiny was wholly finiſhed, and placing himſelf in the middle of the Hall; he threw away his little Staff, which he uſually carried for a ſupport of his crooked old Age, and then ſtrutting and ſtretching himſelf bolt upright, he ſeemed a foot higher than before, that all wondered to ſee the Pope grown in a moment ſo much taller, than when he was Cardinal: and with that he began to hum, and ſpit with as much force as any young Man of thirty years of Age and of ſound Lungs was able to do. At which the Cardinals looking one upon the other, wondred at this ſtrange Metamorphoſis, ſhewing ſome kind of diſſatisfaction at their Choice; and therewith the Cardinal Deacon cryed aloud, Hold, fair and ſoftly, here is an Errour in the Votes, the Scrutiny is not good. But *Montalto* would by no means be ſo put off, but boldly replyed, It is good, it is good, and began to ſing *Te Deum Laudamus*, with ſuch a clear and Audible Voice, that he made the whole Hall ring again; though an hour or two before, he did not ſpeak a word without Coughing, or ſpitting three or four times.

And therewith placing himſelf before the Altar, with his Eyes on a Crucifix, he ſaid a ſhort mental Prayer, as was accuſtomary ; and then the Maſter of the Ceremonies asked him, Whether he was pleaſed to accept of the Papal Office? At which turning about with a Majeſtick, and grave Countenance; he replyed: We are not now to receive that which we have already accepted; but if you had another Popedom to confer, we were capable alſo to receive that, for by the Grace of God, we are well aſſured, that we have force, and vigour ſufficient to Rule, and govern two Worlds with as much facility, as we can do this one Popedom.

When the Maſters of the Ceremonies veſted him in his Pontifical Habit, they obſerved with what marvellous vigour he extended his Arms, to cloath himſelf with his Robes, which he performed with ſuch haſte and agility, as if he feared to loſe his Office, and Honour, by appearing ſlow and unactive, which Cardinal *Ruſticucci* attentively obſerving, ſaid to him, Moſt Holy Father, the Papal Dignity is a moſt admirable Medicine, for it turns old Cardinals into young Men, and ſickly and unfirm perſons, it makes ſound and robuſtious; To which the Pope replyed, That it was very true, for he found it ſo by good experience. But what was moſt remarkable in this *Pope* was, that no ſooner was the Scrutiny paſt, than immediately the Scene was changed with him; for he was now no longer the humble, modeſt, and infirm Cardinal *Montalto*, but the haughty, Majeſtick, and grave *Pope Sixtus* ; he was now no longer familiar, and jocular with the Cardinals, but ſevere, and moroſe, diſdaining to maintain an eaſie converſation with any, nay, even with thoſe who had promoted him to the Papal Dignity.

Being thus habited in his Pontificalibus, and conducted to St. *Peter's* Church, where was a great concourſe of people from all parts of the City to behold the new *Pope*; and being come to the *Portico*, he was met by the Canons of that Church ſinging that *Antiphona. Ecce Sacerdos Magnus, qui in diebus ſuis placuit Deo, & inventus eſt Juſtus*; which is, Behold the High Prieſt, who in his days, was pleaſing unto God, and was found juſt. As he paſſed forward into the Church, he went making Croſſes, and ſcattering his Benedictions on the people, with ſuch firmneſs of Hand, and ſtrength of Arm; that they all wondered at the change, and as if they could not give credit to their Eyes, they cryed aloud, which is the *Pope?* which is the *Pope?* Others alſo running to one, and other, ſaid, is this the Cardinal, who the other day was ſo feeble and decrepit, that he ſeemed ready to fall at every ſtep? is this he, who walked always ſtooping, with his head hanging down, and awry towards one ſhoulder, but how is he now changed! with what vigour and Majeſty doth he now walk like another *Aaron!* It is reported, when his Phyſicians came to pay him their reſpects and adoration, as he ſat in his Throne in St. *Peter's* Church, that one of them ſhould ſay to him, Your Holineſs ſeems to have another garb, and meen, than when you were Cardinal: To which the *Pope* replyed; 'Tis true indeed, for when we were Cardinal, we went always ſtooping, and poring on the ground to find the Keys of Heaven-gate; but now having found them, we need not to look ſo low, but rather caſt our Eyes aloft towards Heaven; having need of no other matter now upon Earth.

The Ceremonies in S. *Peter's* being over, he was conducted by the Cardinals to the uſual Lodgings of the Pope, where having left him alone, he refreſhed himſelf only with a little Bisket, paſſing the whole day with great abſtinence; and being alone, his Servants obſerved him to walk in his Chamber quick and faſt, but in a thinking and penſive manner, at which they much wondered; becauſe they never knew him before to move from his Chair, to walk in that manner; and being in this melancholly motion, the Steward of his Houſe came to him, (as uſually) to know what he was pleaſed to order for his Supper; whereunto the Pope replied, with his Eyes fixed on him, and with a ſtern countenance. "It "is not accuſtomary to demand of great Princes what it is that they are "pleaſed to eat; but prepare us ſuch a Supper as is Royal, and then we "ſhall chooſe that Diſh which is moſt agreeable to our Palate. Then he commanded, that the Cardinals *Aleſſandrino*, *Medici*, *Ruſticucci*, *Eſte*, *San-Siſto* and *Altemps*, ſhould be invited with him to Supper: which being accepted by them, they all appeared, except only *Eſte*, who for ſome reaſons excuſed himſelf; and being ſat down at the Table, the Pope began a diſcourſe of the great honour which was due to the Papal Dignity; and of the high favour which Chriſt had beſtowed on the Pope in making him his ſupreme Vicar on Earth, repeating often thoſe words, *Thou art* Peter, *and upon this Rock will I build my Church*. And then with vehemence of Speech he proceeded: O ſaid he, how profound are the Judgments of God: Chriſt would not ordain on Earth more than one *Peter*, one high Prieſt, one Vicar, one Head; To one ſingle perſon only, he gave Authority to govern his Flock, and to feed his Sheep. *Tu es Petrus*, Thou, Thou only art High Prieſt: *To thee will I give the Keys of Heaven*. To Thee only do I give the Keys to open, and ſhut, and to bind and looſe. To Thee, to Thee only do I give Authority to ſuſtain, and govern my Flock: to Thee only who art my Vicar, and not to others, who are Servants, and ſimple Miniſters of thine.

The Cardinals had all this while wit enough to underſtand, that this whole Diſcourſe was levelled only at them, and at the beginning to take them off of all expectation of governing, or managing Affairs for him. For he was willing to eradicate that Opinion out of their minds, which they had conceived of him; that being a weak and an infirm perſon, he would eaſily have ſubmitted to the management and direction of his Cardinals; which was true enough, and which doubtleſs was the chief motive at his Election. And to evidence farther his reſolution to rule alone, he would ſcarce ſuffer any of them to interpoſe a word, but he would take them ſhort; and ſtill repeat that ſaying, *That in the Church there ought to be but one Commander.*

With this ſatisfaction the Cardinals after Supper returned to their own Lodgings, diſcourſing as they went of the Complement the Pope had paſſed on them, and of the manner how he had unfoulded his mind and thoughts; but above all, Cardinal *Medici* ſeemed to be moſt concerned, having had the faireſt game in all appearance at the Election; and therefore could not contain himſelf from ſaying: I ſee a great ſtorm coming towards us, but who is to be ſaved, ſhall be ſaved.

The day following, or ſome ſhort time afterwards, the Pope called before him the Governour of *Rome*, and all the Judges of civil and criminal Cauſes, to whom he recommended with great fervour and zeal of ſpirit an impartial, and ſevere Adminiſtration of Juſtice, but uttered his words with ſuch vehemence of ſpeech, that they ſeemed rather like Menaces, than gentle Exhortations, concluding at their diſmiſſion with theſe words: *Non veni pacem mittere, ſed gladium,* I came not to bring Peace into the World, but a Sword.

The reception he gave to Ambaſſadours and forein Miniſters, as alſo to Princes, and great Lords of *Rome*, was with a cheerful Aſpect, and Countenance; but their Audience was but ſhort, excuſing himſelf, that the firſt days of his Pontificate were taken up with ſo much ſolid buſineſs, that he had not leiſure to beſtow much time on ſuperficial Complements. Howſoever he ſhewed himſelf more benign, and obliging to the Ambaſſadours from *Japan*, who (as we have ſaid) arrived in the latter days of Pope *Gregory* late deceaſed; and to whom *Sixtus* was very ambitious to ſhew the glory of his Coronation, which being now preparing with great pomp and magnificence, he was deſirous to have the report of his State and Grandeur extend to the remote confines of the World.

And now *Sixtus* being ſeated in his Chair, he was affected with the ſame deſire, which commonly poſſeſſed the mind of Popes, of ſhewing his greatneſs, and glory to his near Relations; in compliance wherewith, he gave orders for conducting his Siſter *Camilla* with her Sons to *Rome*, warning them beforehand, that they ſhould content themſelves with that ſober modeſty which became the meanneſs of their birth, and the gravity of thoſe who were related to the Papal Chair, where nothing but decency, and awful reverence did reſide. But ſo ſoon as news came, that the Lady *Camilla* was near the City, the Cardinals *Medici*, *Eſte*, and *Aleſſandrino*, intending to oblige the Pope, went forth to meet her, and having detained her at a Palace near adjoyning, until ſhe was dreſſed in the habit of a Princeſs, they afterwards conducted her to *Rome*, where the Pope expected her with great impatience: but being preſented ed before him in that garb and habit by Cardinal *Aleſſandrino*; the Pope would not ſeem to know her, ſaying, where is my Siſter? Behold her, quoth the Cardinal, Moſt Holy Father here before you. No, replyed the Pope, this cannot be ſhe; for I have but one Siſter, and ſhe a poor Country Woman living in a Cottage; but this wherewith you preſent me here, is a Princeſs of *Rome*: when I ſee her, in ſuch a homely, and Country habit, as I left her in, I ſhall then own her, and acknowledg her for my Siſter.

The next day *Camilla* returned to him again in her own ſimple, and Country habit, accompanied only with her Daughter, and the two Sons from that Daughter; and then when he ſaw her he tenderly embraced her, and ſaid, This indeed is my Siſter, we now acknowledg you in this habit; and none ſhall make you a Princeſs but my ſelf; for his humour was to be obliged by none, nor would he have his Cardinals to boaſt and glory in a report of having clothed, and adorned his Siſter, and ſetting her up in the garb and ſtate of a Princeſs.

The firſt of *May* was now come, which was the day appointed for his Coronation, which was performed with all the ſolemnity and pomp that could be contrived. After which he proclaimed that publick Prayers ſhould be made, that God would be pleaſed to illuminate his Vice-gerent here on Earth with Grace and Wiſdom ſufficient to govern the vaſt extent of his Univerſal Church, granting to ſuch as were devout Supplicants in his behalf, Indulgences and Pardons in a moſt ample manner. Which being performed, he armed his mind with ſuch conſtancy, and reſolution in the adminiſtration of Juſtice, as ſeemed to ſurpaſs the uſual ſeverity of former *Popes*; and for the firſt Aſſay, and proof thereof, he cauſed four Men to be hanged, for carrying prohibited Arms, notwithſtanding the great Interceſſions, and Intereſt which particular Friends made in their behalf. The which piece of Juſtice was moſt ſeaſonable in thoſe days, conſidering the inſolence of the *Banditi*, or baniſhed Men, who in the late times of *Gregory*, did ſo infeſt all parts of *Italy*, that neither the City nor Country, could ſecure the Eſtates or Lives of honeſt Men from their rapine and violence.

Nor was he rigorous only in his own proceedings, but required the like ſeverity in all the Officers and Miniſters of Juſtice, that acted under him: ſo that if he obſerved any of his Judges either remiſs in their duty, gentle, or inclinable to mercy, or moderation in what the Law inflicted; he would preſently diſcharge them from their Office, and place others more ſevere, and moroſe; and in caſe he obſerved any of a Saturnine tetrical aſpect; he would preſently enquire after him, and having received any tolerable character of his condition, he would eſteem him a Man fit for his turn, and prefer him before a mild and gentle temper, which he thought very diſagreeable to the conſtitution of Magiſtracy.

As to his Politicks, he thought Intelligence to be the life of Government, and therefore would have Spies over every Cardinal to watch his moſt private actions; that nothing was either ſaid at his Table, or whiſpered in his Bed chamber, but what was reported to the *Pope*. He appointed alſo Spies over the Princes and Barons of *Rome*; and over the Prelats of the Court who obſerved their actions, and remarked their Diſcourſes: others alſo crept into Shops, and inſinuated themſelves among the vulgar at publick Meetings; others had a Station allotted in the Monaſteries, that the very Secrets of the Cells were diſcovered: the like courſe was taken in all Towns and Cities of *Italy*; and with ſuch ſecrecy was every thing managed, that one Spy was not acquainted with the walks, nor buſineſs of the other. To all the Nuntios, and Inter-Nuntios reſiding in the Courts of forein Princes, it was ever an Inſtruction the moſt warmly recommended of any, to be diligent in their Advices; and not to content themſelves with the common reports of the Town, but to penetrate into the ſecrets and Cabinets of Princes; to which end, no Mony was ſpared which might corrupt the chief Miniſters, and Secretaries of Councils.

He ordained certain Viſitors to review all criminal Cauſes, which for the ſpace of ten years paſt, had been recorded in any Court, within the Eccleſiaſtical State, with power to reverſe the ſame, and proceed againſt the Offender, in caſe the Sentence upon due examination ſhould be found remiſs, or moderated below that rigour which the Law required: In proſecution of which, many who were already dead were mulct, or fined in the Patrimony they had left; others who for the ſpace of four or five years paſt had been releaſed from Priſon, either by the Interceſſion of Friends, or by Bribery, or by other indirect means, were remanded back again, until the extream rigour of the Law was ſatisfied.

He farther iſſued out Warrants of diſcovery of all Thefts and Robberies committed; charging the people upon pain of Excommunication, to reveal and inform every matter of bribery, corruption, or misbehaviour which they knew, or of which they could accuſe their Judges, who had for the ſpace of five or ſix years ſat in the Seat of Judicature. By theſe means every day one poor Judg or other, who perhaps alſo was out of employment, was dragged away to Priſon, and cloſe ſhut up for what Crime he knew not, or perhaps had forgot the Sentence he had paſſed in the Caſe, for which he was accuſed. Theſe and many ſuch like caſes of ſeverity ſtrook ſuch a terrour into the minds of thoſe who ſat on the Tribunals of Juſtice, or managed any publick employment; that every one became cautious, and nice in the Sentences he gave, or how, by fear, or bribery he remitted the leaſt ſcruple, or ſeverety which the Law enjoyned, or required.

Farther, he gave ſtrict charge to all Sindicts and Governours of Towns and Caſtles, to give in a particular Liſt, or account of all Felons within their reſpective Precincts, who had for the ſpace of ten years paſt been accuſed, or branded with Capital Crimes; and alſo of all ſuch, who had been convicted for ſcandalous and infamous perſons and Incorrigible, during the time of their Sindicate; In which Liſts he required ſuch an exact impartiality; that upon Information given againſt the *Sindic* of *Albano*, how in the Liſt of the Diſſolute and Incorrigible, he had ommitted to inſert the name of his Nephew; he was ſentenced by the Pope himſelf to undergo the Strapado in the publick Market-place, from which puniſhment all the Interceſſion, and Prayers, and Intereſt which the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour could make in his behalf, was not able to deliver him. By theſe means the Liſts of Diſſolute Perſons which were immediately directed to the hand of the Pope, were ſo very exact, that no perſon was exempted, who was guilty of the leaſt Crime. Which when the Pope ſaw, and obſerved every Week, as they were ſent him, he was greatly pleaſed, and eſpecially with thoſe which were filled with a great number of names; for in reading of them, he would often ſay, O happy Gallies, which I intend to build: O happy I, who have firſt ſound Men for my Gallies, before I found Gallies for my Men. The which ſeverity of the *Pope* (from whom there could never be any expectation of Pardon) ſo terrified all ſorts, and conditions of People; that every one comported himſelf with the greateſt modeſty and gravity imaginable, that an Oath, or a rude, or uncilvil word was not heard through any of the Streets of *Rome*: but every one being alarm'd, and dreading, as if he had always a Conſtable, or a Pourſuivant at his back, walked with his Beads in his hand, repeating a Pater-Noſter, or ſome other Prayer, with a ſorrowful and penitential countenance.

By theſe Methods all the *Banditi*, who being grown licentious under the gentle Government of other Popes, and who ſpoiled and deſtroyed all *Italy*, were now by the Juſtice of this *Pope* almoſt wholly extirpated; for ſuch as fled out of the State of the Church to the Dominions of other Princes, he ſo proſecuted, by laying Fines on any who ſecured or ſuccoured them, and ſetting a price on the Head of every conſiderable *Bandito*; that in a ſhort time he reduced them to a ſmall number, and totally ſuppreſſed the pride and inſolence of that Peſt of Mankind. And thus reſolutely was *Sixtus* bent to puniſh the Enormities of wicked Men; that whereas it had been the cuſtom of former *Popes* to ſhew Acts of Mercy and Pardon on the day of their Coronation, opening the Priſon Gates, and enlarging the Priſoners; this *Sixtus* abſolutely refuſed to grant releaſement to any, though inſtantly urged by the Cardinals, alledging, That there were Rogues ſufficient about the Streets, without ranſacking the Priſons for them: That he had taken a reſolution, when he was firſt made *Pope*, to chaſtiſe the wicked, and not ſuffer their Villanies to corrupt and intermix with the Vertues of good Men. By theſe ſeverities all people lived in quiet and peace one with the other: no Sword was drawn in the City, nor quarelſom words or uncivil language uttered: it being a common ſaying to Men at variance together, Remember theſe are the times of *Sixtus*. Thus when the *Banditi* were ſuppreſſed, the good and benefit was ſo great to all *Italy*, that the Citizens of *Rome* erected a Statue of Braſs to the memory of this *Rome*, on which theſe words were engraven.

Sixtus V. *Pont. Max. ob quietem publicam compreſſa Sicariorum Exulumq; licentiâ reſtitutam Annonæ inopiam ſublevatam, urbem edificiis, viis, aquaductu illuſtratam* S P Q R.

And farther, to demonſtrate the inflexible humour of this Pope; it is obſervable, that a poor Youth of about ſeventeen years of age, making a reſiſtance againſt the Bayliffs, who came to deſtrain an Aſs, for ſome Duties owing, and by Law ordained to be paid; in which ſeizure though the Officers made a miſtake, for that the Aſs did not belong to the party who owed the Mony; yet becauſe he offended againſt the courſe of Juſtice, by making oppoſition to it, he was condemned to die; nor could the perſuaſions or Interceſſions of the G. Duke's Ambaſſadour, nor of the Cardinal of *Medici* prevail in his behalf, or mitigate the rigour of the Sentence: and when the Governour of *Rome* alledged that the youth being under age could not by Law be put to death for this Crime: the Pope replyed, If he want years, I will lend him tend of mine.

Nor did *Sixtus* exerciſe this ſeverity only towards his own people; but he was brisk, and haughty towards all Chriſtian Princes, for in a few days after his Coronation, or at moſt in two months after, he quarrelled with *Henry* III. King of *France*, with *Henry* King of *Navarre*, and with *Philip* II. King of *Spain*. The occaſion of his quarrel with *Spain* ſeemed to have had no other cauſe or ſoundation than his own pride, and deſire of uſurpation, and which happened in this manner. It had been the cuſtom ever ſince the time of the Emperour *Charles* V. for the King of *Spain* by his Ambaſſadour at *Rome*, to preſent yearly on the *29th.* day of *June*, which is the Feſtival of St. *Peter*, a white Horſe, with a Purſe of ſeven thouſand Ducats in Gold to the Pope, for a Tribute, and acknowledgment for the Kingdom of *Naples*, which that King holds, as feudatary to the Eccleſiaſtical State: And now on the uſual day *Sixtus* appearing on a Throne with pomp and magnificence, to receive his Tribute, which the Ambaſſadour in a quaint Speech, and with fine Complements preſented: he ſeemed not very well ſatisfied therewith, but returned this tart and Satyrical Reply; You think now, ſaid he, that you have made a fine Speech, and indeed ſo you have, for you have made us change a Kingdom for a Beaſt; and ſtill ſeeming uneaſie, as he was about to riſe; he added theſe ſuſpicious words: But we believe, that this buſineſs will not proceed long in this manner. Theſe words immediately touched the Ambaſſadour to the quick; and giving him juſt cauſe of reflection thereupon, he diſpatched them for *Spain* by the firſt Poſt, and to the Duke of *Oſſuna* then Vice-King of *Naples*; the which adminiſtred not only cauſe of jealouſie, and incited the Vice-King to be watchful againſt the leaſt commotions; but was the cauſe of miſunderſtanding and ill correſpondence between *Sixtus* and *Philip* of *Spain*.

But the quarrel which he had with the *French* King was of another nature, and grounded on more ſubſtantial differances: and conſidering the fierce reſolution of *Sixtus* might have produced more prejudicial conſequences. The Diſpute had its beginning from a Meſſage ſent by the Pope to the *French* Ambaſſadour, ſignifying to him by break of day in the morning, that it was the Pope's pleaſure, that in the ſpace of two days times he ſhould depart from *Rome*, and from the juriſdiction of the Eccleſiaſtical State: the occaſion of this intimation was this. The Pope for reaſons beſt known to himſelf, had recalled from the Court of *France* his Nuntio the Biſhop of *Bergamo*, with intention to diſpeed *Fabio Mirto* the Arch-biſhop of *Nazaret* to reſide in this place; for he being a perſon of prudence, and noted for his admirable conduct, and dexterity in the management of Affairs, the Pope took an extraordinary liking to him, eſpecially for having managed the Office of Nuntio at other times with great ſucceſs; but the *French* King ſo ſoon as he received Intelligence that this Arch-biſhop of *Nazaret* was coming Nuntio to *Paris*, and underſtood by his Character, that he was a perſon zealous, and entirely devouted to the Intereſt of the Pope; he immediately diſpatched an Expreſs to him with Letters, deſiring him, that whereſoever thoſe Letters ſhould be delivered to his hands, he ſhould remain and abide, until new Orders ſhould come to the Pope, whom he had inſtantly deſired, that the Biſhop of *Bergamo* might ſtill continue in his Office. The

Arch-biſhop of *Nazaret* being proceeded as far as *Lions*, when he received the King's Orders, ſeemed greatly ſurprized with this unexpected interruption; ſaying, that his Maſter the Pope, who was impatient of Injuries, would highly reſent an Affront of this nature; and that whereas he had Inſtructions to return back from what place ſoever, he found the leaſt difficulty, or interruption in his Journey; he was reſolved the next day to ſet his face towards *Rome*; the which would produce an ill correſpondence with *France*; for the Biſhop of *Bergamo* would certainly be recalled, and the Kingdom left without the reſidence of a Nuntio.

So ſoon as this News was brought to *Rome*, the Pope reſented it in a fierce manner, and with high words againſt the *French* King, threatned revenge with Thunderbolts of Excommunication, and other Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures: and in the heat of this fury, without the conſultation of a Conſiſtory, he ſent immediately to the *French* Ambaſſadour to depart from *Rome*, and out of the Dominion of the Church. On the other ſide, when this news arrived at the *French* Court, the King expreſſed his reſentments thereof to his Council, and calling together all the Miniſters of forein Princes, he in their preſence, ſtated the difference in the caſe between himſelf and the Pope, proteſting againſt the Injuries he had received. In fine, after ſeveral Letters which paſſed by Expreſſes between the King and the Pope, without any good underſtanding on either ſide, for the Pope was reſolved not to yield his Point; at length by the mediation of forein Ambaſſadours at *Paris*, and the interpoſition of Cardinal *d' Eſte*, and other Cardinals at *Rome*, the matter was accommodated, ſo that the King received the Arch-biſhop of *Nazaret* at *Paris*, and the Pope recalled the *French* Ambaſſadour, the *Sieur St. Godart*, to *Rome*, whom in his fury he had lately diſpeeded from thence.

But ſuch quarrels as theſe, were like the fallings out of Friends, which are eaſily reconcilable; and of ſmall importance in reſpect of thoſe grand Fewds which were commenced between the Pope, and *Henry* King of *Navarre* on the ſcore of Religion: for in regard, that in the Reign of *Gregory* XIII. a League was made againſt the Proteſtant Religion, and directed againſt the perſon of the ſaid *Henry*, which Pope *Gregory* refuſed to ſubſcribe: but now this *Sixtus* V. who was of a towring Spirit, and one who delighted out of the pride of his heart, to mortifie Princes and contend with great Perſonages, not only ſubſcribed to the League in a moſt ſolemn manner; but with terrible maledictions iſſued out his Bulls of Excommunication againſt the perſon of *Henry* King of *Navarre*, and the Prince of *Conde*, declaring them guilty of Hereſie, and to be the chief Fomentors and Protectors of the heretical party: and that conſequently the ſaid *Henry*, his Heirs, and all deſcended from him, was by the juſt Cenſures of the Canonical Law rendered uncapable to ſucceed in the right of any Principality, and particularly to the Crown of *France*; and accordingly he did abſolve all his Subjects from their Oath of Allegiance, and the Obedience they had ſworn to him.

Notwithſtanding all theſe Menaces of the Pope, and the power of the League, *Henry* comported himſelf with that Courage, and generoſity of mind; that the Pope could not but much admire the heroick ſpirit of that King, and conceived ſuch an extraordinary Opinion of his abilities and worth, that he would frequently ſay, that there were only two Princes in the World, namely the King of *Navarre*, and *Elizabeth* Queen of *England*, whoſe Friendſhip and correſpondence he would court and deſire; but that the guilt of Hereſie had rendered them uncapable of his Acquaintance. And in ſuch eſteem thoſe two were with him, (notwithſtanding the prejudice he had to them, for the cauſe of Religion,) that in his ordinary Diſcourſe he would uſe this ſaying, That to make things go well in the World, there was need only of three Perſons, *viz. Elizabeth*, *Henry*, and *Sixtus*. It is ſaid, alſo that Queen *Elizabeth* conceived ſuch an eſteem for this Pope *Sixtus*, that ſhe would often commend his Talent, and excellent Qualities for Government. And that when ſome would diſcourſe of her Marrying; ſhe would often ſay, that if ſhe did marry ſhe would have no other Huſband than Pope *Sixtus*; which being reported to him again, he replyed thereupon, That if they two ſhould lie one night together, they ſhould beget another *Alexander* for the World.

The Duke of *Oſſuna* in the time of this *Sixtus* was Vice-King of *Naples*, a Perſon eſteemed the wiſeſt Governour and the beſt Politician of his Age; and yet was highly blamed by this *Pope*, for not revenging the murther of *Starace*, who in a popular Inſurrection was aſſaſſinated by the people, for no other reaſon, than that he was eſteemed a Confident, and a Creature of *Oſſuna*: upon which neglect, and default the *Pope* entertaining Diſcourſes frequently with the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour, would often ſay, That two Inſtruments were neceſſary for the people, that is, Bread and cold Iron, repeating thoſe words often, Bread I ſay and cold Iron. But *Oſſuna*, who had no need of thoſe Admonitions, not long after, (or ſo ſoon as it was convenient) revenged the blood of his Friend *Starace* in ſuch a ſignal manner; that the *Pope* changed his Note, and began to applaud him, and beſtow the Character on him of a moſt excellent Governour. Theſe Commotions happened at *Naples* ſome few days after *Sixtus* was elected *Pope*, and before he was ſcarce warm in his Chair: for had he been well ſetled therein, it may reaſonably be collected from ſome ſayings of his, that he would rather have nouriſhed and fomented thoſe broils, then inſtigated the Vice-King to puniſh the Authors of them; for having always had an ambition, to convert the feud of that Kingdom into an actual poſſeſſion, he would have made uſe of thoſe late diſturbances, to inflame the minds of the people and exaſperate them againſt the Government, as a means to introduce his own Authority into the place thereof; and ſo much may be collected from his words one day to Cardinal *Ruſticucci* when diſcourſing of the death of *Starace*. This Man, ſaid he, might have done us great Service, had he lived at leaſt one year longer.

Sixtus all this time would not ſuffer or endure any Counſellour to adviſe or direct him in his Affairs, but affected to manage all by his own wiſdom and conduct: howſoever he was deſirous of Confidents, and familiar Acquaintance, with whom he might diſcourſe matters, and uſe for Spies to inform him of all paſſages in the World: amongſt this ſort of Creatures, his Nephew Cardinal *Montalto* poſſeſſed a conſiderable ſhare of his Affection; for though he was but a young Man, yet he was of a mature judgment, and for his years well practiſed in the Affairs of the World: howſoever he gave him this caution, that he ſhould beware how the kindneſs he had for him, did encourage him to a confidence of making any requeſt for Benefits, or favours either for himſel, or others : the like Admonition he gave alſo to his Siſter, and his other Nephews, whom he tenderly loved, and laboured to make rich ; oftentimes forbidding them, to ask any thing of him: For, ſaid he, *I charge you, never to make any motion to me in behalf of any ; for we reſolve to do all our ſelves ; and conſider, that what bribes ſoever you take, are but unlawful, and ill-gotten goods ; but what Money you receive from us, will be hollowed, and bleſſed.*

Notwithſtanding this ſeverity, and moroſe humour of *Sixtus*, he would ſometimes divertiſe himſelf with more pleaſant and delightful entertainments ; amongſt which he took a particular contentment to read a Book of Memoirs, or recital of ſeveral paſſages, which in the time, when he was a young Frier, he had wrote for his own remembrance ; the which being now Pope, he was much pleaſed to read, and contemplate. One whereof was, That being at *Macerata*, he had occaſion to buy a pair of ſhooes, for which the Shoo-maker demanded ſeven Guilios or three ſhillings and ſixpence *Engliſh*. Frier *Montalto* deſirous to get them cheaper, offered him three ſhillings, and aſſured him, that ſome time or other he would bring him the other ſix pence : Yes, ſaid the Shoo-maker, and when ? when you are Pope I warrant you, Yes, ſaid he, ſtay but till then, and I promiſe to pay you the Money with full Intereſt until that time. The Shoo-maker laughing, delivered him the ſhooes, and ſaid, ſince I find you diſpoſed to accept the Popedom, be ſure you remember to pay this Debt, when you are exalted to that Dignity. *Sixtus*, as I ſay, reading this paſſage in his Book ; immediately wrote to *Macerata*, to know if this Shoo-maker were living ; which when he underſtood, he ordered the Governour of the place to ſend him up by one of his Officers. The poor Shoo-maker ſurprized, and affrighted with the news that the Pope deſired to ſee him in *Rome*, for he neither remembred any thing either of the Shooes, or of the Giulio, it being a matter of forty years ſtanding ; ſo that at every ſtep he made, he was ſtill thinking, and wondring at theſe Summons, recalling to mind all the ſins he had committed in his life, conſidering for which of them he was thither cited. Being come to *Rome*, and introduced to the Pope's preſence ; He asked him, whether he remembred ever to have ſeen him at *Macerata* ? the poor Shoo-maker trembling, told him, No. Nor do you remember ever to have ſold me a pair of ſhooes ? No, ſaid the poor Fellow ſhrinking up his ſhoulders : but, ſaid the Pope, we will remember, that we are your Debtor, and have ſent for you to pay you your Money ; for we owe you a *Giulio* on account of a pair of ſhooes, which we are now to pay you with Intereſt according to agreement : and ſo calling for the Steward of his Houſe to pay him the *Giulio*, with the Intereſt upon it for forty years, which amounted to two *Giulios* more, he then diſmiſſed the Shoo-maker, bidding him go in peace. The Shoo-maker having received his three *Giulios* ; murmured, and complained very much, that the Pope ſhould ſend for him, and bring him, from ſo remote a place, and from his Trade and Employment, which was above twenty Crowns charge and damage to him, only to give him three *Giulios*, or eighteen pence ; which he always carried in his hand, and complained to every one he met. The news of the Shoo-maker's laments being brought to the Pope by his Spies ; he preſently ſent for him again, and demanded of him, if he had a Son ? the Shoomaker anſwering, yes, and that he was an honeſt good Prieſt of the Order of the *Servi*; whereupon the *Pope* cauſed him to be called to *Rome*, and before the departure of his Father, inveſted him in a ſmall Biſhoprick within the Kingdom of *Naples*: and then bid the Shoo-maker make up his Account, and ſee, to what ſum the Intereſt of his *Giulio* had amounted. Many are the ſtories of this nature recounted of this *Pope*, which we ſhall omit, contenting our ſelves to have given the Reader this familiar Tale, which ſeems too light, and frivolous for Hiſtory: yet ſince it is our end, and deſign to give a Character of the *Popes*; their humour, and diſpoſition, may ſometimes be more clearly ſhewn by familiar paſſages, than by the more profound tranſactions of buſineſs.

The *Jeſuits*, who formerly were in high eſteem with *Gregory* XIII. and influenced his Counſels in ſuch manner, as that he acted nothing but by their pleaſure and direction; were very ſtudious to inſinuate themſelves in the like good Opinion of *Sixtus*; and to that end courted Cardinal *Montalto*, inviting him often to the Recreations, and Exerciſes of their Schools, that (if poſſible) they might prefer a Confeſſor to the *Pope*: which motion when it was made to *Sixtus*; he in great indignation anſwered, That it were better, that the *Jeſuits* confeſſed to the *Pope*, than the *Pope* to the *Jeſuits*.

Howſoever, they ſtill continued their courtſhip towards him, and invited him one day to hear Maſs in the new Chappel built by *Gregory*; and being introduced thereunto by way of the Cloiſters, he was detained a while by the young Scholars, who rehearſed many Verſes in honour of their great Benefactor Pope *Gregory*, particularly recounting the thouſand Benefits and Donations they had received from him; hoping by this example to excite *Sixtus* to the like bounty; but he not being a perſon to be wheedled with fine Verſes; after he had heard all they could ſay, he told them plainly: *Fathers*, ſaid he, *you are much miſtaken, you take us to be* Gregory, *and we are* Sixtus; *and we promiſe you ever to remain the good* Sixtus, *and never to be the bad* Gregory.

At another time being perſuaded by them to come to a ſolemn Feſtival celebrated at their College; they with that occaſion ſhewed him the magnificence, and neatneſs of their Houſe, and the convenience of their Offices; all which *Sixtus* much approving, merrily told them, *That he would rather ſee their Treaſury, than their Refectory*: to which the Father Rector anſwered: *That they had never been ſo poor, as at preſent. Continue ſo ſtill*, ſaid *Sixtus*, *for unleſs you be poor, you ſhall never be truly Religious*; *for your Poverty is beneficial to the Church*, *and your Riches prejudical to the Popes*. By theſe ſharp Replies, the *Jeſuits* had touched the pulſe of the Pope, and finding that nothing was to be gotten by him, would never trouble him afterwards with Requeſts or begging Petitions. Howſoever, *Sixtus* in his heart loved and affected this people, being excellent Spies, and ſuch as brought him the beſt Intelligence; and therefore he was often heard to ſay, *That the* Jeſuits *were the beſt ſort of Religious Orders*, *and uſeful in the Church*, *and that he loved them heartily*, *becauſe they asked him nothing*.

Sixtus had for a long time got a fancy, or project in his head to confine all the *Courteſans*, or Whores in *Rome* within a place, or circuit of the

City, as the *Jews* were; and having communicated this Deſign to the Governour of *Rome*, he was made ſenſible by him of the great difficulty of the thing; for that their numbers filled the greateſt part of the City: howſoever, not being able to ſuffer the propudious, and ſhameleſs *Courteſans* to live intermixed with the honourable, and vertuout Matrons; he baniſhed the moſt common and impudent ſtrumpets from the City, confining the remaining part within a certain limit, and quarter of the Town. But this remedy of Vice, encreaſed two great Evils: for the ſmall number of *Courteſans* did not abate the Sin, but procured greater cuſtom and Trade to the Ladies of Pleaſure, who having more employment then they could turn their hands unto: the looſer ſort of *Italians* for want of Women burned in luſt one towards the other, and addicted themſelves to that abominable, and unnatural Crime of *Sodomy*; of which the Pope being made ſenſible, he reverſed his Sentence, and gave licenſe to the baniſhed Whores to return to their uſual ſtations: howſoever ſtrict Orders were given, that Prieſts ſhould not entertain Wenches in their Houſes under the notion of Servants, or Houſe-keepers; which yet was ſo connived at, that when it was told the Pope, that a certain Cardinal kept a Miſtris; *The better*, ſaid he, *for having his Conſcience ſtained with this ſcandal, he will be the more cauticus, how he ſpeaks boldly, or with freedom in our preſence.*

This firſt year of the Pontificate of *Sixtus* was in the Month of *December* ended with the promotion of eight Cardinals, all Men of honour, and merit, amongſt which *Hippolito Aldobrandino* of *Florence* was one, with title of Cardinal *Pancratio*, who was afterwards created Pope, and called *Clement* VIII.

Sixtus being now at eaſe in his Chair, began his ſecond year with the long deſired work of raiſing the *Obeliſke*, called by the *Italians Aguglia*, or *Guglia*, which had lain for many years neglected in the *Circus* of *Nero*, where now is the *Sacriſtia* or Veſtry of St. *Peter*'s Church. This *Obeliſke*, as ſome Writers affirm, was made by *Nycoreus*, who raigned in *Egypt* about the time of *Numa Pompilius*; and that at firſt it was one hundred and fifty Cubits high, but in raiſing of it, it broke, and ſo was ſhortned fifty Cubits, which afterwards with ſeveral others of leſs magnitude was brought to *Rome*, and conſecrated to *Octavianus Auguſtus*, and *Tiberius* his adopted Son, as may be ſeen by this Inſcription now remaining. *An.* 1586.

Divo Cæſari Divi Jalii F. *Aug. Tiberio*
Cæſari Divi Aug. F. *Auguſto Sacrum.*

But being erected in the times of Chriſtianity, it was conſecrated to the Holy Croſs, with this Motto:

Sanct. Cruci Sacravit Sixtus V. *Pont. Max.*
E *priore ſede avulſum, & Ceſ. Aug. & Tib. ablatum.*

On the Baſis of it on the South-ſide are theſe words:

Sixtus V. *Pont. Max.*
Cruci Invictæ Obeliſcum Vaticanum.
ab impurâ ſuperſtitione expiatum juſtius, & felicius
Conſecravit Anno MD. LXXXVII. *Pont.* II.

To erect this *Obelisk* without breaking it, was accounted a matter of that difficulty, and Art, that none would undertake it: till at length *Domenico Fontana*, a rare Architect of *Como*, contrived the Engins to perform the work, which were ſo many, that the materials of them, the labour, and the workmanſhip, coſt thirty ſix thouſand Crowns; there is a Book extant in the *Vatican* Library, which I have ſeen, that deſcribes all the Inſtruments and Engines which were formed for that Deſign. The whole weight of the *Obelisk* reſts on four Lions of Braſs, which are placed on a Pedeſtal.

Beſides this great Work, *Sixtus* alſo was very induſtrious this year, and intent in great and mighty works of Munificence and Charity. For he raiſed, and repaired four other *Obeliſques* in divers parts of *Rome*. He built alſo a Chappel in *Santa Maria Maggiore*, which he dedicated to the Manger of Chriſt, *ad præſepe*; which he adorned with rare, and precious ſtones of the fineſt Marble, Porphiry, Alablaſter, Agats, and the like, which cover the walls of the Chappel within; he erected a ſtately Sepulchre or Monument in memory of *Pius* V. He was at great charge and expence in bringing the Water by Aqueducts to his Palace of *Monte Cavallo*, antiently *Mons Quirinus*. He alſo brought Water to *Rome* by Pipes from the poſſeſſions of Prince *Colonna* far diſtant from *Rome*; yet by the help of two thouſand Men which he employed for the ſpace of eighteen Months, he happily finiſhed the ſame; the charge of which amounted to 27000 Crowns, comprehending the ſum of twenty five thouſand pounds, which he gave to Prince *Colonna* in purchaſe of that ſtream of Water, which he had taken from his Land. To which Aqueduct he gave the name of *Felice*, which was the name he owned, when he was a Frier.

He built alſo the Portico of the *Lateran*, which is a Noble Structure. He cauſed a Statue of St. *Peter* to be caſt in Braſs, and placed it on the Pillar of *Trajan*, and another of St. *Paul*, which he ſet on the Column of *Antonius Pius*. He enlarged many of the Streets in *Rome*, made them ſtrait, and ſo wide, that five Coaches might paſs a breaſt. He built a very ſtately Church and dedicated it to St. *Jerome*, and endowed it with a plentiful Revenue. But amongſt all the magnificent ſtructures which he hath raiſed, there is none ſo famous and worthy of his Name, as the *Vatican* Library, being about three hundred and eighteen foot in length, and ſixty nine in breadth; on the Walls are painted all the General Councils in *Freſco*, with the famous Libraries mentioned by antient Authors, as alſo the manner of raiſing the *Guglia* or *Obeliſque* before St. *Peters*. At the entry to this Library are two Statues of Marble, that on the right hand repreſents *Ariſtides*, an antient Philoſopher of *Smyrna*; that on the left, is *Hypolitus*, who firſt invented the perpetual Kalendar, he lived fourteen hundred years ago. The Books are all kept in Preſſes containing twenty thouſand Manuſcripts, and ſixteen thouſand Books which are printed; round about the firſt Chamber the Pictures are placed of all thoſe who have been Library-keepers ſince *Sixtus* V. The Books commonly ſhewn here to Strangers, are, The antient Copy of the *Septuagint*, a vaſt Bible in *Hebrew*, a little Book written on the bark of a Tree, certain Sermons, with Annotations wrote by *Thomas Aquinas*, and with his own hand, an old *Terence* wrote one thouſand two hundred years ago, a Letter which *Henry* VIII. of *England* wrote to *Anne* of *Bolen* with his own hand, as alſo his Book againſt *Luther*: hereunto is added the Duke of *Urbin*'s Library, bequeathed to this place, as alſo that of the Prince Palatine *Frederick*, tranſported from *Heidelberg* to the *Vatican*, after that Town was plundered by the Duke of *Bavaria*. All which, and many other rare Works of the like nature, were performed at the charge of this Pope, which are now extant at *Rome*, and commonly ſeen and obſerved by Travellers. Beſides all which, he built ſeveral other Colleges, Monaſteries, and places of Charity at *Bologna* and in his own Countrey. And at a vaſt expence he turned the poor Village of *Montalto*, where he was born, into a City, encompaſſing it about with a Walk, to perform which he was forced to cut through a Rock, and threw down a high Hill, to make it equal to the lower Level; and to give ſome more eſteem and honour to this place, he made it a Biſhoprick, endowing it with a thouſand Crowns of yearly Revenue, beſides many other Priviledges and immunities which he beſtowed both on the Dioceſe, and the Government of the City: during the time of which Work, he built a Bridge at *Rome* over the *Tybur*, which was of great uſe and benefit to the Trade and Commerce of the City, called at this day *il ponte Siſto tras Tevere*.

Thus far have we diſcourſed concerning the humour and diſpoſition of this Pope, his Conduct and Wiſdom in the management of Affairs relating to *Rome*, and the Church, together with his Munificence and greatneſs of his Soul in matters of building, and ſtately Structures, which have perpetuated his memory to theſe times. Let us now proceed to other particulars which may demonſtrate his dexterity and conduct of Affairs relating to Negotiations with forein Princes; and in what manner he ſtudied to fortifie the Eccleſiaſtical State, as well with the Sword of St. *Paul*, as the Keys of St. *Peter*.

In order whereunto, in the firſt place, he formed and ſetled the Militia of the Church in ſo good a method, that he was able within the ſpace of one Month to bring twenty thouſand fighting Men into the Field; and in the next place, he conſulted with the moſt knowing Enginiers in what manner the Eccleſiaſtical State might be moſt commodiouſly, and with moſt advantage fortified, the which was executed with moſt Labour and Art on that ſide which borders on the Kingdom of *Naples*; which was a juſt cauſe of jealouſie to the *Spaniards*, who by the words and actions of the Pope, had long ſuſpected, that his Intentions and Deſigns tended towards that Kingdom, the poſſeſſion of which he had for a long time ſwallowed in his thoughts, reſolving not longer to content himſelf with the bare feud, or tribute for it: the which jealouſie was encreaſed, when they found the Pope intent in building ten new Gallies, for defraying the coſt of which, and of their maintenance, he impoſed a new Tax on the people of *Rome*, and the whole Eccleſiaſtical State.

About this time the *Cantons* of *Switzerland*, which continued firm to the Church of *Rome*, ſent their Ambaſſadours to the Pope, not onely to make their acknowledgments of Obedience to the Papal See; but likewiſe to inform his Holineſs of the unhappy ſtate and condition of their Countrey, cauſed by the neighbourhood of the Proteſtant *Cantons*, who daily ſent Preachers into their Dominions, who ſeducing many from the Catholick Doctrine, their number and force did daily encreaſe. For prevention of which, and to confirm the doubtful in the Catholick

tholick Religion they deſired, that the Pope would be pleaſed to ſend his Nuntio into thoſe parts, which would be an encouragement to the people to continue in the way of truth, as well as honour to their Countrey. The Pope with all readineſs embracing the Propoſition, diſpatched *Baptiſta Santorio* Biſhop of *Fricarico* and Steward of his Houſhold, to be, and remain his Nuntio within the Dominions of the Catholick *Cantons*.

Santorio being there arrived, found all things in great diſorder, the people living without, (as it were) any reſpect, or dependance on the *Roman* See, by reaſon that for many years the Popes had not thought this Country worthy the charge or maintenance of a Nuntio therein. But now *Santorio* appearing there with the Character, and in the quality of a Nuntio, cauſed ſpeedily a Diet to be convened in the Month of *October* 1587. at which two things were agreed, and concluded highly advantageous to the Papal Authority. The firſt was, that all the Deputies, which were preſent in great numbers received the Communion from the hand of the Nuntio, and then entred into a ſtrict League and Confederacy together, ſolemnly ſwearing before the Altar to maintain and uphold the Papal Authority, and to ſacrifice their lives and fortunes in the defence thereof. In the ſecond place they gave full power and Authority unto the Nuntio to exerciſe a free and Arbitrary Juriſdiction over all Eccleſiaſtical perſons within their Dominions, ſubjecting them to his Courts as well in criminal, as in civil Cauſes: which was a conceſſion, that the Wiſe Republick of *Venice* did never judge fit to grant, notwithſtanding all the bluſter and noiſe with which the Popes required, and challenged it from them. But this Power given to the Nuntio, was the cauſe ſoon after of ſome diſturbance amongſt the *Cantons*; for it happened, That one day the Nuntio having Complaints brought him againſt a certain Prieſt for ſcandal and misbehavour, he immediately iſſued out his Warrant to the chief Conſtable and his Officers to take, and ſeize the Perſon of that Prieſt, and put him into ſafe cuſtody: the Prieſt hearing of this proſecution, fled into the Dominions of the Proteſtant *Cantons*, where the Officers purſuing him, took him, and by violence and force brought him thence, and ſecured him in the Nuntio's Priſon. The news of this Attempt allarm'd all the Proteſtant *Cantons*, who by way of Repriſals ſeized the firſt Prieſt they could meet, and confined him within their own Priſon, reſolving not to ſet him at liberty without the releaſe, or enlargment of the other. This Accident cauſed great diſturbance and commotions both amongſt the Proteſtants, and Catholicks: Diets being called on both ſides, matters ran ſo high, that a general rupture, or War was feared of all the *Cantons* The Nuntio being alſo ſenſible of theſe diſorders, and not knowing unto what they might amount, wrote to the Pope the whole ſum of this matter, to which he returned anſwer in this manner: *We have ſent you to pacifie, and quiet matters, and not to make diſturbances; to give eaſe, and repoſe to the Catholicks, and not to put Arms into the hands of the Hereticks; to convert the one, and not to put the others into danger: No people will be contented to loſe their own right; the point of Juriſdiction is more nice and brittle than a Chriſtal Glaſs, and therefore thoſe caſes are to be managed tenderly, and with ſevere caution; troubles, and diſquiets are dangerous to Catholicks, but to Hereticks it may be profitable* *to fiſh in troubled Waters: to give to Hereticks is a great evil, but to take from them is highly dangerous. Be therefore prudent in this caſe, both for your own quiet, and for mine.* The Nuntio collecting from this Anſwer, that it was the Pope's pleaſure to accommodate theſe matters; He ordered it ſo, that the Prieſt ſhould be ſet at liberty, but by way of eſcape, rather than by formal enlargment; the like expedient the Proteſtants took, as to the other Prieſt, by which means theſe matters were pacified, and concluded.

Henry III. King of *France*, (as before related) having compoſed his quarrel with the Pope about reception of his Nuntio the Biſhop of *Nazaret*; ſo good and fair a correſpondence paſſed between them, that the King adventured to demand licenſe of the Pope to raiſe a hundred thouſand Crowns from the revenue of the Church. *Sixtus* who was unwilling to deprive the Church of ſuch a ſum, nor yet to diſoblige the King by a plain and poſitive refuſal; entertained his Ambaſſadour the Marqueſs *Piſani* with a delatory Anſwer, ſuch as this, *We ſhall conſider, we ſhall do nothing raſhly, but with Mature conſideration*; which being often repeated, and the Ambaſſadours wearied with ſuch inſignificant puts off, which according to the ſtile of *Italy*, and *Rome*, imported no leſs than a civil denial, acquainted the King with their Sentiments in the caſe, which were, that nothing could be expected from the Pope's bounty or conceſſion; upon which advice, and upon a belief that this refuſal was inſtilled by ſuch Inſtruments as were employed in the Catholick League, and particularly by the Duke of *Guiſe*, and his party: the King reſolved to ſtand on his own bottom and to ſteer a courſe between the League, and the *Hugonots*, for as he durſt not confide in the Catholike League, ſo he feared the iſſue of the War againſt his Proteſtant Subjects, both which though to appearance were equally dangerous, yet a peace with the latter ſeemed moſt ſafe, and deſireable; in purſuance of this Counſel, a peace being concluded with the Proteſtants by negotiation of the Queen, the promotors of the League, of which the Duke of *Guiſe* was the Chief, diſpatched an Expreſs immediately to *Rome*, giving the Pope to underſtand the matter in theſe preciſe words: "That the cauſe of Religion was betrayed: That the cauſe of the *Hugonots* was openly, and publikly favoured: That the meaſures of the War were broken, and all expectation of good, and benefit loſt, which might redound by means of the League to the Catholik Cauſe: That the heart of the King ſeemed much eſtranged to the Catholick party, reſolving to eſpouſe, protect, and maintain the Hereſie in *France*.

The Pope, ſo ſoon as he received this Intelligence, called the *French* Ambaſſadour, to whom with words full of diſdain and fury, he complained of the proceedings of the King, whom he mentioned as one infected with Hereſie, and already alienated and eſtranged from the Papal See; and having called a Conſiſtory, Letters were wrote to the Nuntio *Nazaret*, with Orders to intimate the Pope's juſt complaints to the King, giving him to underſtand, how much he did reſent the Reſolution he had taken to the prejudice of the Catholick Church, which was of ſuch ill conſequence, as took deep impreſſion in the mind of the Pope, and would be recorded with everlaſting Characters of Infamy in the Hiſtories of his Reign. The Nuntio having received theſe Inſtructions, and being backed by the inſtigation of the Duke of *Guiſe*, repreſented the

Pope's ſence in warm and paſſionate terms: In return unto which, the King, contrary to the equal temper of his nature, retorted an Anſwer in briſk and ſharp Expreſſions: *That it was a fine and eaſie matter for the Pope to ſtand and behold at a diſtance the miſeries and afflictions of his Countrey, and to give Counſel without aſſiſtance, or contribution to the War; for want of which, and of a licenſe to alienate ſo much of the Lands of the Church, as might ſerve to raiſe the ſum of a hundred thouſand Crowns; he was forced for preſervation of his Kingdom, and Regal Dignity, to accept thoſe Conditions, which they called, ruinous to the Church.* And then moderating his paſſion a little, in more gentle and mild terms, he deſired the Nuncio, *to aſſure the Pope; That he would ever adhere, and remain conſtant to the Faith of the Catholick Church, and act in every thing to the advancement of it, ſo far, as he was able, and that the want only of Money had forced him to this reſolution.* Theſe particulars being wrote to *Rome*, quieted a little the mind of the Pope, who did all the time before, do nothing either in the Conſiſtory with the Cardinals, or in his Diſcourſes with the forein Miniſters, but rail and ſtorm againſt the *French* King. But being now ſatisfied by his Nuntio that the King had changed his mind, and would be induced to continue the War againſt the Proteſtants, provided he could be aſſiſted with Aid from the Church; the Pope immediately appointed a Bull to be drawn up, and ſealed, giving Authority and Power to the King, not only to raiſe a hundred thouſand Crowns out of the Eſtate of the Church, as the King had demanded, but alſo twenty thouſand Crowns more, for better encouragement, to continue and perſevere in the aſſurances given; enjoyning the Nuntio to raiſe thoſe ſums on the Clergy, without any contradiction, or delatory proceedings.

Thus as *Sixtus* was zealous, and profuſe in ſuch Expences as he judged conducive to the ſupport of the Papal Authority; ſo he was no leſs generous in works which might tend to the honour and ornament of it: In which conſideration reflecting one day on the manner and garb, in which he deſired his Nuntios might live in the Courts of forein Princes; he thought it would be more magnificent to buy, or purchaſe Palaces for them, in the Capital Cities, and Courts, rather then to rent Houſes, which appeared mean and low in the Eyes of the World. The *Venetians* ſo ſoon as they underſtood the Pope's Deſign herein, which they were extreamly forward to gratifie, immediately wrote to their Ambaſſadour reſiding at *Rome*, ordering him to acquaint the Pope, that the Senate out of their good will and affection to the Papal See, had reſolved to beſtow on the Nuntios Apoſtolical a Palace, wherein to reſide at *Venice*, and to remain to them, and their Succeſſors for ever: And accordingly gave poſſeſſion, to *Mattuecci* the Pope's Nuncio then reſiding, of a magnificent Palace in the ſquare of St. *Francis* at *Venice*; and by Deeds and Conveyances under the Seal of St. *Mark*, paſſed over the right, and title thereof unto the preſent Nuntio and his Succeſſors for ever. The Pope having received the news hereof, confirmed by the Authentick Copy of the Deed, was ſo greatly pleaſed, that with a Letter full of kind Epreſſions, he returned his thanks to the Republick for their generous Preſent; and leſt he ſhould ſeem to be backward or defective in the like liberal returns, he aſſigned to the Miniſter of *Venice* another Palace at *Rome*, in lieu of that which they had preſented to his Nuntio at *Venice*. Other Princes according to this Example were enclined to accommodate the Papal Miniſter with a Habitation ; in expectation of a like exchange at *Rome*; but the truth was, the Pope began to grow ſenſible of an inconvenience in this ſort of Preſents; for that he could neither find Palaces in *Rome* ſufficient to receive ſo many Miniſters, as were ſent him from foreign Princes, in lieu of thoſe which were allotted to his Nuntios in the reſpective Courts ; nor ſituation of places ſo fitted to the humour and rank of each Repreſentative, but that the condition of the Palace being more or leſs magnificent, might adminiſter cauſe of exception and quarrel to the reſpective Miniſters : for which reaſon the Pope conſidering better of this matter, refuſed after the Preſent made him by *Venice*, to accept the like from any other Prince, declining the Obligation with a Complement, and an Excuſe; and that rather than put the Prince to ſo great an Expence, he was reſolved to purchaſe Houſes for the convenience of his Nuntios with his own Money.

Thus as *Sixtus* was haughty in his nature , and affected high and glorious matters ; ſo he was ſevere and moroſe, judging every criminal action, or misbehaviour in Men, to proceed from a contempt, or want of fear, which Men ought to bear towards his Government. Several inſtances of which might be given; but becauſe we would not enlarge into many particulars, we ſhall only mention one Story not unpleaſant to be related, which was this : The Statue of *Paſquine* (into the hand of which all Libels are put at *Rome*, from whence they are called *Paſquils*) was one day covered with a very dirty Shirt ; and that other Statue called *Marforio*, asking the reaſon of it, *Paſquine* anſwered, *Becauſe his Landreſs had left him, to be made a Princeſs*; alluding to the Lady *Camilla* the Pope's Siſter, who from a Landreſs was promoted to be a great Lady. The report of this *Paſquil* was immediately brought to the Pope, who conceiving thereat a ſecret indignation, endeavoured by his Spies to detect the Author of it ; but this being a ſecret known only to the Party himſelf, the diſcovery ſeemed impoſſible by other means than the Confeſſion of the Author ; to procure which, the Pope publiſhed an Edict, wherein he he promiſed upon the word of a Pope to give two thouſand Piſtols, together with the ſafety of his life, to any perſon, who ſhould reveal the matter and confeſs himſelf to be the Author of this *Paſquil* ; and on the contrary threatned the Gallows and Torments to whomſoever ſhould be diſcovered, and by ſufficient teſtimony be proved guilty.

The Author being more covetous of the two thouſand Piſtols, than wiſe, went directly to the Pope, and confeſſed and acknowledged himſelf to be the Perſon, who made the *Paſquil* : which when the Pope heard; he admired not a little at the boldneſs of the Man, and earneſtly looking on him, gave him this Anſwer : *We are obliged to maintain the word and faith we have given you , and therefore we order , that the Money promiſed you, ſhall be paid* : which being performed, and a Receipt given for it, the Pope farther added : *It is true*, ſaid he, *We promiſed you the Money , and your Life, both which we have performed ; but howſoever we have reſerved another Reward for you in our breaſt, which is a Sentence that both your Hands and Tongue be cut off, that ſo you may not be able to ſpeak, or write more Satyrs of this kind.* In purſuance of this intention of the Pope, this perſon was taken into cuſtody, and immediately his Confeſſion produced as a teſtimony againſt him before the Judges; by which being convicted, immediately without delay his Hands were cut off, and his Tongue bored through; which ſort of ſevere proceeding affrighted all *Rome*, which was not accuſtomed to ſuch Cruelties; the which action, with ſeveral others of the like nature, ſtrook an awe, and fear into the minds of all Men, ſo that generally people walk'd with great circumſpection, leſt they ſhould fall into the mercileſs, and unrelenting hands of *Sixtus*. Cardinal *Buoncompagno*, who was conſtitued Grand Penitentiary by *Gregory* XIII. dying this year with great Riches; that Office by his deceaſe becoming vacant, it was expected, that the Pope would have conferred the place on Cardinal *Montalto* his Nephew: but to convince the World, that merit, and not affection prevailed in his mind, he readily conferred that Office on Cardinal *Aldobrandino*, a perſon of ſingular prudence and Learning, and one whom he gladly found an occaſion to gratifie the ſervices he had performed to the Church; the choice of a perſon ſo deſerving was acceptable to all Men, and of whom the Pope conceived ſuch an eſteem, that he communicated to him all the ſecrets of his Councils, being confidently aſſured of the prudence, ſincerity, and profoundneſs of his judgment.

1587. The year 1587. being the third year of the Pontificate of *Sixtus*, was now entred, when the People of *Rome* reflecting on the great plenty, and abundance of all proviſions within the City, cauſed by the care and wiſe contrivance of the Pope, whilſt all the neighbouring Dominions laboured under want, and ſcarcity: and all beholding the City of *Rome* by the munificence of this Pope adorned with ſtately Edifices; the Citizens received ſo much ſatisfaction thereby, that they erected a Statue of Braſs to him in the Capitol with this Inſcription: *Sixto* V. *Pont. Max. ob quietem publicam compreſſa Sicariorum, Exulumque licentia reſtitutam Annonæ enopiam, ſublevatam urbem, Edificiis, Viis, Aquæ ductu illuſtratam*,, S. P. Q. R.

Sixtus for his divertiſment did often uſe to walk about the City Incognito, or in diſguiſe; in which kind of perambulation paſſing, once in his Coach by the Convent of the Holy Apoſtles he was pleaſed to alight and enter into the Covent; the Gate being open, he went firſt into the Porters Lodge, who was then a *Probationer*, or in the firſt year of his Novitiate: the Pope ſurprizing him, whilſt he was eating a diſh of Beans, was pleaſed with the remembrance of his own poor condition, when in the like poſture he was forced to content himſelf with the ſame Diet; in contemplation of which, he ſat down on the ſtairs, and taking a wooden Spoon began to eat heartily, and help the Porter to make an end of his Meſs. The ſtanders by wondered at the humour, and fancy of the Pope, and eſpecially to ſee him eat up the oiled Beans ſo heartily; which when he had done, he aroſe up and thanked the Porter: ſaying, *Theſe Beans will add two years of life to us, becauſe we have eaten them with a good appetite, and without fear*. And then lifting up his eyes to Heaven, he ſaid, *Bleſſed be thy Name, most Almighty Father, that thou haſt granted this favour to thy High Prieſt, to eat once in peace and quietneſs.* Thus much he was apprehended to ſay, out of the caution and fear he had of Poiſon; for he was confident, that the Porters Beans were free from ſuch Ingredients; though he could not be ſecure of his own Diſhes at home; of which living in continual ſuſpition, he confined his Cook always to his Kitchin, keeping a Guard always upon him to keep him from all correſpondence or communication with others. The Pope thus pleaſed with his Entertainment, commanded that the Porter, who was a *Probationer* only, ſhould be immediately veſted in the Friers Habit; which being performed in his preſence; he gave him his Bleſſing at departure, adding theſe words: *We have been what you are, do you endeavour to be what we are.*

But we muſt not omit to recount one pleaſant paſſage, before we return to more ſerious, and important Affairs. *Sixtus* out of an affection to the Friers of his own Order, had a deſire to celebrate this year a Chapter General, over which he would preſide in Perſon, giving Licenſe not only to ſuch Friers as were invited thereunto; but alſo to all others, who had the curioſity to be there preſent: and not to burthen the Order with the expence, which ſuch a concourſe of people might bring, he declared that he would bear the charge on his own account; by reaſon of which, never was any Chapter at *Rome* celebrated with ſuch State, and Magnificence as this. At this Chapter a new General of the Order being choſen; the Pope commanded, that after the Election all the Friers ſhould walk in Proceſſion to kiſs his Feet at the *Vatican*; giving the Friers to underſtand the day before, that he gave licenſe to every one of them to demand ſome grace, or favour from him, by which diſtinguiſhing Act of Benevolence, he might give ſufficient teſtimony to the World of that love, and affection which poſſeſſed his heart towards the Companions of his Order.

The Friers receiving this gracious Meſſage by their Cardinal Protector, were highly exalted in their Spirits, and every one began to conſider with himſelf what Boon, or Gift, or Privilege would be moſt correſponding to his own convenience. In the mean time the report of this exceſſive Grace flying about into all Convents of the City: the Friers of other Orders began to envy the happineſs and fortune of the *Cordeliers*: the *Dominicans* murmured againſt *Pius* V. who had never evidenced the like reſpect towards them: the Cardinals alſo repined, and blamed the prodigality, and exceſs of the Pope, in promiſing favour to every individual Frier of his Order; when on all the Cardinals together, he never beſtowed one ray of his Bounty, nor granted one Privilege to the whole Sacred College.

But theſe Diſcourſes little touched the mind of *Sixtus*, who the next day gave admiſſion to the Friers one after the other, as they were in Precedendy and Seniority; at the reception of whom the Pope ſat in his Chair of State, and his Secretary on his left hand at a little Table, to take their Names, and a Brief of the Petitions and Requeſts they made, the which for the moſt part were ſo ridiculous, and extravagant, as yielded the Pope ſubject ſufficient for laughter and paſs-time: For one being a *Nepolitan*, whiſpering in the Pope's Ear, deſired, that he might have Licenſe to renounce his Order, and Marry, or elſe, that he might have a Diſpenſation to keep a Wench, and not be liable to the Cenſure of his Superiors: ſome of them demanded to be made Cardinals, others to be made Arch-biſhops, Biſhops, and Abbots, with other Dignities: ſome would have crept into the Offices which belonged to other Orders: one particularly demanding to be made Chief Maſter of the Sacred Palace, which belongs to the *Dominican*: and another deſired to have Biſhops removed to make places for them. In ſhort, their Requeſts were ſo exorbitant, that to ſatisfie them all, *Sixtus* muſt have overturned the whole Order of Friers, and unhinged all the Dignities, and Rules of the Church. Only it is obſervable that a poor Lay-Brother, who had been a Cook, and Butler in a Convent, being one of the laſt to kiſs the feet of the Pope ; ſhed many tears of joy at his admittance to ſo unexpected an honour, which having done the Petition he made was this : *That ſince his Holineſs was pleaſed to ſuffer ſuch a poor wretch as he, to ſpeak to him, all he had to deſire, was only this, that he would vouchſafe out of his great bounty to build a Fountain for his Convent which ſuffered very much (as his Holineſs well knew) for want of Water.*

The Friers having thus in their order expoſed their ſeveral Petitions, they were called in together : and then in a full Aſſembly, the Pope made this general Anſwer to them all ; *Had your Petitions, and Demands, been correſpondent to Our Expectation, we ſhould have made no difficulty of giving ſatisfaction to your deſires : We imagined, that You, who are Perſons ſequeſtred from the World, would have entertained no thoughts of particular Intereſt : for Friers having their Wills reſtrained, and bound up with Chains of Obedience ; can poſſeſs nothing in reference to their own Perſons , but only with regard to the publick benefit ; to which Rule had you confined your Deſires, Our Bounty had been enlarged to the ultimate conceſſion of what You could demand ; which we are now forced to deny, leſt We ſhould offend againſt the Rules of your primary Inſtitution, and Vows, which require You to mortifie, rather then Me to gratifie your Ambition.*

Thus were the Fries all diſmiſſed from the Pope's preſence, where Petitions and Deſires became the common talk and laughter of the Town, and ſerved to diſcover the ſecret, that the minds of mortified Friers are as capable of vain thoughts and ambitious deſires, as thoſe of ſecular Men, who profeſs not the like ſtrictneſs of mortification and ſanctity. Howſoever, the poor Lay-brother's requeſt for a Fountain was taken into conſideration ; for that being agreeable to the Munificent humor of *Sixtus*, was received, and immediately ordered to be put in execution, by bringing Water to the Convent from the Pope's Gardens at *Monte-cavallo*, which flows there in plentiful ſtreams. But now to proceed unto more ſerious mattes.

Towards the end of this year 1587. *Stephen Battory* Prince of *Tranſylvania*, and King of *Poland*, having Reigned in that Kingdom for the ſpace of nine years, departed this life ; his death was univerſally lamented by all, having proved a moſt excellent Prince, and a zealous Champion of the Chriſtian Religion againſt the *Turks* : for he recovered the Dukedoms of *Suevia*, and *Smolensko* from the *Moſcovites*, and united them again to the Crown of *Poland*. He alſo behaved himſelf with conſtant reſolutions againſt the *Turk*, who having in the year 1584. demanded according to ancient Articles aſſiſtance of ſome *Poliſh* Troops againſt the *Perſians* : *Battory* reſolutely denied them to him, ſaying, *That, whereas the white Eagle of* Poland *had lately moulted her Feathers, and was diſplumed, and become weak, ſhe had now recovered her Wings, and her Train, and had ſharpned both her Beak , and her Talons :* Which brisk Reply and bravery of *Battory* in all the actions of his Reign, did calm the ſpirit of the *Turks*, and checked thoſe frequent Incurſions which they made into *Poland*.

But *Battory*, as we have ſaid, dying this year, the Nobility of that Kingdom were very deſirous to elect a King, who might in Wiſdom and Courage prove equal to the valour of the deceaſed Prince. Many there were, who offered themſelves Candidates for that Election. *Rodolphus* the Son of *Maximilian* the Emperour, was one, who for being of the Houſe of *Auſtria*, ſeemed qualified for that Crown: Some caſt their eyes on the Duke of *Parma*, who for his prudence, and experience in War, was one of the moſt renowned Captains of thoſe days: but being an *Italian*, it was ſuſpected, that his humour would not be agreeable to the cuſtoms of *Poland*. The Vaivod of *Tranſylvania*, and Cardinal *Battori* were others, who appeared fitly qualified for this Dignity: the firſt being a young Man, and full of ſpirit, aſſiſted with the advantage of his own Riches, and in great reputation with the *Turk*, appeared with a luſtre deſerving a Crown, but having been Nephew to the late King, his Alliance prejudiced his pretentions, not being conſiſtent with the policy of that Nation to have a Succeſſion in the ſame Family; the ſame conſideration alſo was an impediment to the Cardinal, though otherwiſe a Prince of excellent Endowments.

The Duke of *Ferrara* was another propoſed, but he, as well as the Duke of *Parma* was an *Italian*, whoſe humour was inconſiſtent with the Poles.

Many Nobles alſo of *Poland* it ſelf ſeemed fitly qualified both in Riches and Vertue for that Dignity; amongſt which *Zamowski*, the Grand Chancellour, had a moſt conſiderable party: for, he having managed all the Affairs of that Kingdom during the Reign of *Battori*, who communicated all his Councels with him, and entruſted him with the greateſt ſecrets of State; by which he became the moſt experienced in Affairs, and high in Reputation, living little inferiour to the Royal Pomp: howſoever the Nobles not enduring at that time ſubjection to any of their own degree and Countrey; and having never for the ſpace of ſix hundred years admitted a Prince of their own to reign over them, they would neither now introduce a Novelty, repugnant to their ancient Cuſtoms and Conſtitutions.

Upon the preceding conſiderations the election falling on none of the foregoing Princes; the Votes came at length to concenter between the Prince of *Sweden*, and the Arch-Duke of *Auſtria* called *Maximilian*, Brother of the Emperor *Rodolphus*, a perſon of that affable, and obliging deportment, as took much with the humour of the *Polanders*. Howſoever, the contrary party, and the moſt prevalent, objected, That being Brother to the Emperor, he might be too potent, and in time by the power of *Germany* ſubvert the Government, and turn it from an elective to an hereditary Kingdom: wherefore totally declining *Maximilian*, this party reſolutly fixed on the Prince of *Sweden*, a youth of twenty years of age, greatly favoured by the *Poles* for being deſcended from the Family of *Jagellona*; which for having added the Dukedom of *Lithuania* to their Commonwealth, was ſo highly eſteemed by them, that the merit to that Family could be no otherwiſe extinguiſhed, than by tranſferring the Crown to the Prince thereof. But theſe conſiderations in favour of *Sweden* were turned to quite contrary Sentiments by the differing party, ſo that the whole Body of the Nobility being divided between theſe two Princes, the Election ſtill remained in ſuſpence; both deſigning to determine the Diſpute by force of Arms.

Whilſt the Election remained under theſe doubtful circumſtances, *Sixtus* wrote to the Arch-biſhop of *Naples* then Nuntio, reſiding at the place of Election, ſecretly to favour the ſide of *Maximilian*, but yet with ſuch caution, as not too far to engage himſelf; but that in caſe fortune favour'd the Prince of *Sweden*, he might without a blemiſh declare himſelf for that party, that ſo he might own in ſome meaſure his Election unto him.

Maximilian to make good his cauſe appearing before *Cracovia* with an Army of ſixteen thouſand fighting Men, demanded of the Citizens to receive him in; but they refuſed it, and ſent with all diligence to the Prince of *Sweden* to expedite his March, for that delays in this caſe were dangerous, and that the day of his Coronation was fixed to be celebrated on the Feaſt of St. *Luke*, then approaching: In the mean time, they repaired their Fortifications, and ſtrengthened their Suburbs, making daily Sallies on the Forces of *Maximilian*, and moſt commonly were ſucceſsful therein, to the great encouragement of the Citizens.

In a ſhort time after, Ambaſſadours arrived at *Cracon* from the Prince of *Sweden*, adviſing that the Prince, though detained by contrary Winds, was come as far as *Donzilca*, and that though it was impoſſible for him to be ſo ſoon with them as St. *Luke*'s day; yet certainly he would not fail to be there by St. *Martin*'s, which was on the 15th of *November*, and be ready to receive that Dignity on the *Sunday* following; for according to the cuſtom of that Countrey the Coronation muſt always be ſolemnized on the Lord's Day.

During all this time the Army of *Maximilian* was greatly weakned for want of proviſions; and having neither Wine, nor good Beer, they were forced to drink bad Waters, which with the cold and moiſture of the ſeaſon cauſed Fluxes and Dyſenteries and other diſtempers amongſt the Soldiery, which reduced them to ſmall numbers. Howſoever *Maximilian* leaving the City of *Cracovia*, marched towards *Pietricovia* with intention to ſtop the march of the Prince of *Sweden*: but finding that the Army of his Enemy was greater than his own, and that he received the worſt in many Skirmiſhes, he retreated to *Bellone*, and thence to *Pitſchen* on the frontiers of *Sileſia* belonging to the Duke of *Briga*. But being purſued thither by the Enemy, he was there beſieged, and afterwards taken Priſoner towards the end of *January* 1588.

The Pope who was greatly concerned for this diſgrace of *Maximilian*, diſpeeded Cardinal *Aldobrandino* into *Poland* to treat a Peace, and an Accommodation between *Maximilian* and the Prince; the which after various difficulties and diſputes was happily concluded about the beginning of *March* 1589. The Articles of which were, that *Maximilian* ſhould renounce all Title and pretence to the Crown of *Poland*, by reaſon of the late Election, or any other demand whatſoever; and that the Prince of *Sweden* ſhould remain the lawful and undoubted King: which being agreed, the Prince took poſſeſſion, and was named *Sigiſmond* III.

The Pope, who was no leſs zealous for the ſucceſs of the King's Arms in *France* againſt his Proteſtant Subjects; ſent a Sword to the Duke of *Guiſe*, who was chief of the Catholick League, as he had lately done to the Prince *Farneſe*, who was Governour of *Flanders*; the which was delivered by a Biſhop who was purpoſely ſent to preſent it, and therewith to tender his paternal love and benediction to the Duke, aſſuring him that he poſſeſſed a large room in the heart and breaſt of the Pope. The Ceremony of delivering this Sword was performed with ſuch pomp and triumph at *Paris*, & with ſuch popular acclamations of the multitude in favour of *Guiſe*, as adminiſtered juſt cauſe of jealouſie and fear to the King; and though *Guiſe* was ambitious enough to be pleaſed therewith, yet being immoderate and irregular, his modeſty told him, that they were undecent. The King in the mean time being eclipſed by the popular grandeur of *Guiſe*, and by the troubles of a Civil War with which his Kingdom was infeſted, did ſeem to reſent the favours which the Pope ſhewed to *Guiſe*, as unſeaſonable; of which when *Sixtus* had knowledge, and of the popular acclamations at the delivery of his Sword, he was much troubled; for he being of a humour always deſirous to maintain Sovereignty in its higheſt degree of Honour, and Power, did by a Letter to the King exhort him to maintain his Prerogatives, and conſerve the honour of his Crown againſt the Inſolences and Rebellions of his Subjects: adding, *That a Canker in the bowels of his State was curable only by cauterizing, and by Fire and Sword: and that it was neceſſary to vent ſome of that blood, which was too redundant in the veins of his Subjects.*

The King made frequent reflections on this Letter, and often gave it to the Duke of *Guiſe* to read and conſider: and being one day in Parliament, where many Debates aroſe touching the ways and means, by which the Civil Wars might be accommodated, and a good underſtanding produced between him and his Subjects; the King declared the great averſion of his mind to Blood, or other Extremities; which though he might juſtly by the Counſels and Perſwaſions of the Pope, yet he was more tender of the lives of his Subjects, than to cure his troubles by ſuch ſevere Remedies; and to confirm the truth thereof, he produced the Pope's Letter, cauſing it publickly to be read in that Aſſembly: which when the Parliament heard, they bleſſed themſelves, and as well the Catholicks as Proteſtants, remained aſtoniſhed and ſcandalized at this cruelty of the Univerſal Paſtor, who with ſuch little remorſe could ſuck the blood of Chriſt's Sheep, as if he had rather been the Wolf, than Shepherd of the Chriſtian Flock. Which when the Pope underſtood, and was informed of all the Satyrs and Libels which the Proteſtants had compoſed on this occaſion, he was greatly diſturbed, that the King ſhould ſo publickly expoſe his Counſels, which he deſigned for his ſecret directions; and having ſignified his reſentment thereof by his Nuntio, he would never afterwards adventure to write him a Letter, but on all occaſions of buſineſs referred himſelf by word of mouth to the report of his Nuntio.

And now *Sixtus*, whoſe thoughts were ever employed on means which might enlarge or make great the Church; did much incite *Philip* II. King of *Spain*, to make War on *Elizabeth* Queen of *England*, preſſing him to re-aſſume his Right to that Kingdom which he had once governed; and for encouragement thereunto, he promiſed Count *Olivarez* the Kings Ambaſſadour at *Rome*, that ſo ſoon as the *Spaniſh* Army ſhould be landed on any part of the *Engliſh* ſhoar, he would immediately contribute a million of Crowns to that Deſign. Nor was the Pope moved hereunto out of a zeal onely to Religion, but out of a ſecular Deſign; ſuppoſing that the chief Flower of the Nobility and Soldiery of *Naples* being drained thence on this Enterprize, he might have a more facile paſſage to the poſſeſſion of that Kingdom.

In purſuance therefore of this Deſign, a great and wonderful Fleet of vaſt Caracks, to the number of one hundred and fifty Sail, being ſet to Sea, on which were twenty three thouſand Land Soldiers, with two thouſand pieces of Cannon, of which the Duke of *Medina Sidonia* was made General; they entered the Channel of *England*, where being met by a ſmall Fleet of Ships, under the Command of Sir *Francis Drake*, ſeveral broad-ſides paſſed between them: but at length the Divine Providence aſſiſting *England*, and defending the Proteſtant Cauſe; the valour of the *Engliſh*, and the ſucceſsful direction of the Fire-ſhips, prevailed with admirable ſortune over the *Spaniards*, againſt whom alſo God himſelf fighting (as we may ſay) by his Storms and Tempeſts: totally defeated and deſtroyed this invincible Armada, as we may more at large read in our Chronicles of *England*.

Sixtus having received the news of this unhappy defeat, wrote Letters to *Philip* to condole with him for the loſs: and therewith taking an occaſion to blame the management and conduct of his Officers, he attributed the miſcarriage of all to the want of care and experience of the chief Commanders: by which reflection of diſgrace, his intent was to prevent all Demands from him of reparation for this loſs; and on this ſubject he proceeded in a publick Conſiſtory to blame and tax every Individual Chief, both in the Army and in the Council, of ill administration; onely he took upon him to excuſe *Alexander Farneſe* Governour of the *Low-Countries*, and to anſwer the aſperſions which his Enemies had charged upon him, declaring him to be the only perſon, who for his perſonal Valour, and excellency of his Conduct, was the moſt approved Captain of that Age.

This Letter of Condolance wrote by the Pope, was diſpatched to his Nuntio at *Madrid*, to be delivered to the King, whoſe conſtancy of mind, and evenneſs of temper was ſuch, that though the Nuntio well knew he had no need of Cordials, or conſolatory Exhortations, yet the Commands of his Maſter were to be obeyed, and the formality obſerved. Whilſt King *Philip* was reading the Letter, he often ſmiled, as if the ſtile had rather been to congratulate his Victory, than to condole for his loſs: Howſoever he thanked the Nuntio, and promiſed to return an Anſwer thereunto ſpeedily, the which he accordingly did in the ſpace of two days after, in words to this effect.

“That his Holineſs would be pleaſed, together with him, to render
“thanks to God Almighty, for being pleaſed to conſerve the remnant of
“his Fleet from ſuch dreadful Storms and Tempeſts, and for beſtowing
“on him Riches and Power ſufficient to ſet out and equippe another
“equal to the former. That he had ſent his Fleet to fight againſt the
“Enemies of Chriſt, but not to Combat with the Seas and Winds, and
“therefore ſaw no cauſe to blame his Officers either Civil or Military:
And in fine, perceiving the ſubtil manner of the Pope to foreſtall his demands of ſuccours or reparations, he concluded his Letter in this manner: “That the loſs did as well concern the Pope as himſelf, by whoſe

"directions, and encouragement he had undertaken that Enterpriſe: "That he having had the glory to have loſt a Fleet in the Service of "Chriſt; had already performed his part; and that now for the future "the next attempt belonged to the Church, in which he promiſed to "follow, but not to precede. It was believed, that the King wrote with this reſolution, and indifferency of mind to the Pope; to let him know that this misfortune did not abate his Courage or force in defence of his own Dominions; for the King was jealous, and had cauſe ſufficient to ſuſpect, that the Gallies which the Pope had lately built, and the vaſt ſums of Money, which he had lately amaſſed, were with deſign on the Kingdom of *Naples*; on which the Count *Olivarez* Ambaſſador at *Rome*, having always a vigilant Eye, did conſtantly inculcate to the Pope in his Diſcourſes: *That ſo much as his Maſter had loſt in ſeeking the Conqueſt of other Kingdoms, as much he did not doubt but to recover on any Prince who ſhould attempt on his Dominions.*

This year 1588. famous for the deſtruction of the *Spaniſh* Armada, was ſignalized alſo towards the end thereof on the 23. of *December* by the death of the Duke of *Guiſe*, a Prince of ſuch popular eſteem, that he appeared greater than the King, and ſo eclipſed the Sovereignty, that not longer enduring to be ſo clouded, he reſolved to break through the obſcurity, by the deſtruction of the Duke, whom the King cauſed to be aſſaſſinated by eight Executioners, as he was entering into his Cloſet, being thereunto called by his Command; theſe Officers of the King's diſpleaſure ſo effectually performed their work, by the mortal ſtabs they gave him, that he had not time to utter one word, but only breathed out his life with dying groans: the ſame day the Cardinal his Brother was impriſoned, and the next day being the Eve of *Chriſtmas* was put to death: the which misfortune to the Houſe of *Guiſe* was followed by the impriſonment of the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, the Pope's Legat at *Avignon*, the Arch biſhop of *Lions*, and of the eldeſt Son of the Duke of *Guiſe*.

The news of the Duke's death was diſpeeded to *Rome* with ſuch diligence by an Expreſs, that the Pope received it on the 3. of *January* 1589. at the ſame time, that he was diſcourſing with the Cardinal *Joyeuſe* touching the Affairs, and intereſt of *France*. The Pope at the arrival hereof, did not ſeem troubled, or in the leaſt manner ſurprized; for though the Duke was a zealous Defender of the *Roman* Catholick Religion, yet conſidering that he was ambitious, and popular, and one who checked the Sovereign power; the Pope who was a great Aſſertor of the Monarchical Authority in its Supreme degree, received the news of his unhappy fate without any remorſe, or reſentment; and ſo ſhrinking up his ſhoulders, ſaid: *Had we been King of* France, *we ſhould have done the ſame.* And when the particulars were all recounted, he added, *Such is commonly the deſtiny of Men, who committed many Errors with ſubtil Arts, but then know not how to conſerve themſelves with mature judgment, and due caution.* But when about four days after that, Intelligence came, how that the Cardinal *Guiſe* was likewiſe put to death, and that the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, and the Arch-biſhop of *Lions* were impriſoned; he then began to fume and ſtorm like an enraged Bear, venting his paſſion with ten thouſand violent expreſſions againſt the King, clapping his hands, and ſtamping with his feet on the floor, in ſuch manner as affrighted all his Servants, and Attendance.

Henry III. of *France* being acquainted with the humor of *Sixtus*; and how apt he was to reſent the leaſt injuries towards Eccleſiaſtical Perſons, and encroachment on his Authority; diſpatched *Girolamo Gondi*, a *Florentine* Gentleman, with all expedition to *Rome*, to join with his Ambaſſador the Marqueſs *Piſani*, in making excuſes for the death of the Cardinal, and the impriſonment of the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, and Arch-biſhop of *Lions*, being thereunto neceſſitated contrary to his own nature, for the conſervation of his own Life and Crown. *Gondi* being arrived at *Rome*, and having conſulted together with the Ambaſſador, the way and manner to addreſs themſelves unto the Pope; and being admitted to Audience, the Pope with a ſtern Countenance looked on them, and with ſharp and ſevere terms began to reproach the King, wondering how he could dare to violate the Immunities, and Priviledges of the Eccleſiaſtical State, and the Dignity of Cardinals, and againſt all Laws both Divine and Humane, could entertain ſo much wickedneſs in his heart, as to murther a Cardinal, and impriſon two others of eminent Dignity in the Church, as if they had been ſubjected to the Secular power.

The Ambaſſadours for Reply hereunto, in modeſt terms, but yet with grave, and unmoved conſtancy, began to relate the Treaſon and Plots of which the Cardinal was guilty, contrary to the Faith and Allegiance which he owed unto the King, with whom alſo the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, and the Arch-biſhop of *Lions* had been Complices. *It is true*, ſaid they, *it would have beſt become the Righteouſneſs and Judgment of a King, to have proceeded in a judiciary way, according to all the methods and rules of Law, but the Cardinal aſſisted by the Power of his Brother, and by the Authority of the two other potent Prelates, was become too ſtrong for the Law, or to be treated by the uſual formalities of common Proceſs; for they having forced the King to abandon his Palace, and fly in diſguiſe through the Streets of* Paris, *there remained no mild terms of Accommodation, but either the King muſt become a Subject unto them, and diveſt himſelf of his Dignity, and reſign his Power into the hands of thoſe Guardians, as if he were in his pupillage, or years of minority, or elſe he muſt ſerve himſelf of thoſe means, which God appointed him for conſervation of his Crown and Regal Office in which he was Anointed. In fine*, they concluded, *that the King was an obedient Son of the Church, and was ready to ſatisfie the deſires of his Holineſs, to the utmoſt of his power; and to that end he had expreſly ſent this* Gondi *now preſent before him, humbly to beſeech his Holineſs to pardon what is paſt, and as a teſtimony and evidence of his reconcilement to ſend him his Bleſſing.* But *Sixtus* having neither by theſe Reaſons, nor yet by the gentle and ſubmiſſive terms of the Ambaſſadors, abated the fury and anger which appeared in his Countenance: Replyed with a loud Voice; *That he was well aſſured, that* Gondi *was diſpatched on an other Errand, than this; and that by any thing they had ſaid, there was no judgment to be made of ſorrow, or repentance in the King for the Crimes he had committed, or of ſuch obedience, which they profeſſed to the Apoſtolical Sea, ſo long as contrary to the Priviledges thereof, he detained the Prelates in Priſon; and that in caſe he expected Abſolution, he was to ſeek it with tears, and by a Perſon expreſs, and employed to no other purpoſe, and that there ought to be a Seſſion of Prelates thereupon, to* *to conſider whether ſuch repentance were real and unfeigned.* And at laſt concluded with theſe ſharp words. *You,* ſaid he, *think you have to do with ſome poor ſimple Frier, that is unacquainted with Men and the World; but you ſhall find that you have to do with* Sixtus, *who is ready to expend his blood in defence of the Dignity of the Holy See.* After which he diſmiſſed the two Ambaſſadors, and the next day called a Conſiſtory, in which he appeared with a countenance full of Choler which boiled in his breaſt; and then began to exclaim againſt his Legat *Moroſini* reſiding at *Paris*, as if he had conſented to the death of the Cardinal, or at leaſt might have prevented both that and the impriſonment of the Prelats, in caſe he had vigorouſly appeared againſt ſuch indirect Counſels: In the next place he railed againſt ſome Cardinals, who had the boldneſs to excuſe the murther which the King had committed; wondering that Cardinals ſhould ſo little eſteem their dignity and degree, as to expoſe the ſanctity of their purple to be profaned by the unhallowed violences of an uſurped juriſdiction. As to us (ſaid he) it concerns little what Affronts are put on the Cardinals Dignity, but we are ſure that it is of a high conſequence to you: for we cannot believe that you would readily conſent to be diſpoiled of your Authority, your Liberties, Prerogatives, and other Priviledges with which you are adorned, of which you will certainly be, if this Murther of a Cardinal be connived at, or paſſed by without any reſentment. We therefore are reſolved to perform our duty, and do that which God and his Laws require at our hands: and if from thence, as you may poſſibly object, ill conſequences enſue to the Kingdom of *France*, we ſhall remain acquitted in the ſight of God; for juſtice muſt be done, though the World ſhould be ruined and diſſolved thereby.

The Cardinals remaining all ſilent, none daring to make a Reply. The Pope proceeded, and ſaid: We ſhall depute a Congregation of Cardinals to examine this caſe, and ſearch farther into this matter; and accordingly the perſons nominated were *Anthony Sorbellone*, the Arch-biſhop of *Santa Severina*, *Facchinetto*, *Lancilotto*, *Saſtagna* and others; the which Deputation was now the common Diſcourſe, and filled all the World with high expectation of the ſucceſs and iſſue thereof.

The King being informed of theſe proceedings redoubled his Guards, & cautions in the Court of *Rome*, to which place he diſpatched the Biſhop of *Mans*, a perſon of ſingular probity and eloquence, to make his defence: and having received his Inſtructions, and being fully informed of all the reaſons and arguments which might be produced in behalf of the King, he arrived at *Rome*, where having firſt conſulted the Ambaſſadours, he was with them admitted unto Audience with the Pope: to whom he began with moſt profound humility to argue and plead; That the King had not incurred the puniſhment of any Eccleſiaſtical Cenſure, having in no manner violated or infringed the Liberties or Immunities of the Church. For that the Cardinal having been found guilty of high Treaſon againſt the King, was by the fundamental Laws and conſtitutions of *France*, ſubjected to the Secular Power; and in regard he was a Peer of that Realm, his Cauſe was more immediately triable in the Parliament of *Paris*, and in a grand Aſſembly of all the Princes and Officers of the Crown; ſo that if the King had treſpaſſed againſt any Laws, it was againſt the priviledges of his own Parliaments, and not againſt the juriſdiction of the Eccleſiaſtical State. In the next place he argued that a King of *France* according to the priviledges of the *Galican* Church, could not incur the Cenſure of Excommunication.

But theſe Arguments and ways of reaſoning were in no wiſe pleaſing to the humour of *Sixtus*, being againſt the Idea and Scheme, that he had figured to himſelf of the Power of the Church and Keys: but rather ſerved to inflame his paſſion, and therefore ſetting aſide all thoſe Arguments as not worth an Anſwer, he declared and ſentenced, That in caſe within a certain time limited, the King did not free and ſet at liberty the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, and the Arch-biſhop of *Lions*: and that in caſe within the ſpace of ſixty days after ſuch releaſement, the aſſurance thereof were not intimated to himſelf and the Apoſtolical See, by writings under the King's own hand and the Royal Signet, That then in ſuch caſe the King remained actually Exommunicated, and incurred all the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures, as expreſſed in the Sacred Canons and Conſtitutions of the Church. Farther, The Pope cited the King to appear at *Rome* either in Perſon, or by his Proxy within the ſpace of ſixty days after intimation of theſe Summons ſhould be given him; to render an account, and to give anſwer to the accuſation charged upon him, for having murthered the Cardinal of *Guiſe*, and impriſoned the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, and the Arch-Biſhop of *Lions*: and for default of ſuch appearance, that then the King did actually incur the pain of Excommunication from which he could not be abſolved by any other perſon whatſoever, than only by the Pope himſelf, unleſs at the point of Death; nor then neither, unleſs upon a confident and faithful aſſurance, and Vows to act and obey all matters and Injunctions whatſoever, which ſhould be enjoyned and commanded by the Holy Church.

Two Months, and ſome few days after the Pope had iſſued out this Excommunication; it happened that the King being at the Head of a great Army near St. *Clon* about two Leagues from *Paris*, was on the firſt day of *Auguſt* 1589. ſtabbed in the Belly by a *Dominican* Frier, who was a youth of about twenty three years of age: and with him ended his quarrel with the Pope. 1589

Such being the fate of *Henry* III. the news thereof flew ſpeedily to *Rome*, where the *Spaniards* cauſed a report to be ſpread, That the Affairs of the King of *Navarre* were reduced to a mean and a low condition, and almoſt deſperate; and that not only thoſe of the League, but alſo the whole Kingdom had declared the Cardinal of *Bourbon* to be King by the name of *Charles* XI. Upon this grand Criſis of Affairs, the Pope reſolved to diſpeed Cardinal *Cajetan* in quality of his Legat into *France* with a numerous train of Prelates famous for their Wiſdom and Learning, intending to furniſh him with the ſum of a hundred thouſand Piſtols to defray the charge and pomp of his ſublime Character.

Whileſt things were thus preparing, Advices came from the Duke of *Luxemberg*, that *Henry* of *Vandoſme* King of *Navarre*, having been victorious in many bloody Battels, was acknowledged by all the Nobility to be the true and lawful King of *France*: and that he, (namely the Duke of *Luxemburg*) was deſigned Ambaſſadour by the ſaid Nobility unto his Holineſs, to inform him of the reaſons which moved them to ſuch an acknowledgment, and to demand his Counſel and direction as the common Father, how, and in what manner they might apply ſuch remedies,

medies, as might tend to a happy and a well grounded peace. The Pope diſcovering thereby, that the Agents of the League had falſely repreſented the ſtate of Affairs to him, immediately diſpatched a Letter in anſwer to the Duke of *Luxemburg*, acquainting him, that his Perſon ſhould be welcome at *Rome* and civilly treated; together with another to the Nobility of *France* in the Camp of *Navarre*, exhorting them to remain firm and conſtant to the Catholick Religion; adding, that as to the perſon of the King, it was indifferent to him, who it was that reigned, provided he were a true Son of the Church, and ſuch as the Nobility deſired.

And now the Legat being upon departure, the Pope altered many particulars of his former Inſtructions, and expreſly warned him to keep, as much as was poſſible, an even and ſteady hand in all the pretenſions of of Secular Princes; but that he ſhould be ſure always to incline towards the ſide of the Church and Religion: that he ſhould not ſhew himſelf an open Enemy to the King of *Navarre*, until his caſe was deſperate and paſt all hopes of being reclaimed to the Church; but that ſo ſoon as he found him wavering, he ſhould then encourage him; but ſtand a Neuter, until he profeſſed himſelf a true Convert, and from that time to declare for his Perſon and Intereſt.

But the Legat not well obſerving theſe Rules, but running quite contrary in favour of the League, and making his aboad at *Paris*, which had declared it ſelf againſt the King of *Navarre*; did greatly incur the diſpleaſure of the Pope, who not approving his Negotiations, gave a ſtop to thoſe ſums of Money which he had deſigned for him.

In ſhort therefore, this deportment which the Pope uſed towards *Henry*, did greatly contribute towards his eſtabliſhment: for the World obſerving that ſo wiſe a perſon as the Pope, profeſſing no other quarrel to him, than only on the ſcore of Religion; and that this ſcruple being removed, he was ready to ſide with him againſt all other Intereſts: and that he had induced the wiſe and politick Senate of *Venice* to acknowledg him for King of *France*: there is no doubt but that theſe favourable appearances did bring great reputation to the Arms of *Henry*, and much facilitated his aſcent to the Crown.

Having in this mannner laid down the methods and ways of proceedings in Secular Affairs, and with foreign Princes; let us now before we conclude the Life of this great Man, return to the treatment which he exerciſed towards his own People, and the rules he obſerved in the maintenance and nouriſhment of his own natural Body.

Sixtus having now for five year obſerved many things relating to Government: nothing appeared more extravagant than the gallantry which people uſed in their Clothing; which was become ſo exceſſive, that for the regulating thereof, he conſtituted Cardinal *Aldobrandino* to be the Reformer; by whoſe care and wiſdom, ſuch ſumptuary Laws were enacted, as reduced all perſons into a modeſty of dreſs and habit; which being impoſed with ſevere penalties on the Tranſgreſſour, which *Sixtus* would never remit, all the Rules were obſerved and obeyed during the time of this Pope, who did not ſupervive for many Months after.

It is obſervable that this *Sixtus*, when he was a Friar, and a Cardinal, and not incumbered with a load of buſineſs, was very temperate, and abſtemious in his Diet: but being made Pope and burdened with an intenſe application of mind to buſineſs, he ſeemed to want greater nouriſhment to keep up his ſpirits, which otherwiſe might have ſunk under the weight of Affairs; and therefore did eat much, and drink often of divers ſorts of delicious and exquiſite Wines, and would often ſit two or three hours at Meals diſcourſing of Theological and Political Subjects: howſoever his Diet was ordinary and courſe, and his Table as frugal as of any Pope that ever preceded him. He ſlept a little, having his mind always intent to Studies or buſineſſes, giving Audiences to forein Ambaſſadours, or hearing Conſults and Advices of his Cardinals, or adminiſtring Juſtice, ſo that he was never obſerved to be idle or at leiſure.

He was ever chiding in a clamourous manner with his Servants, and yet he loved them, preferring many of them to high degrees, and dignities, having made three of them Cardinals, and Biſhops, beſides *Caſtruccio Ardas*; as he was forward to advance thoſe who had merited well from him, ſo he was rigorous and ſevere againſt any who offended either out of negligence or malice. An example of which, he ſhewed in the condemnation of *Bellochio* his Cup-bearer to the Gallies, for having affixed the *Annulus Piſcatorius*, or the Pope's Seal, to a certain writing which *Sixtus* had refuſed to paſs; nor could he be diſſuaded by all the Intreaties which the Friends of *Bellochio* uſed; and being caſt into the Gallies, he died miſerably in two Months time of his diſgrace and ſervitude.

He was extreamly tender and affectionate to his own Kindred and Relations, and in an eſpecial manner to his Siſter *Camilla*, one of whoſe Grandſons by a Daughter, a youth very young, he raiſed to be a Cardinal in the firſt Month that he was made Pope, who ſo well improved himſelf by time, in the dexterous management of all Affairs, that he became ſo very uſeful to his Uncle the Pope, that he beſtowed a Revenue upon him of an hundred thouſand Crowns of yearly Rent. The Palace of *Montalto* is to this day to be ſeen at *Rome* rarely furniſhed, and famous for the abundance of rare Pictures, Statues, and Urns, and the Garden one of the beſt in all *Rome*.

He was infinitely covetous and contriving for Money, for raiſing of which, he laid Taxes on thoſe things which were never before charged, and ſold thoſe Offices, which were never until his time ſet to ſale; ſo that he advanced the Papal Revenue to above ſix hundred thouſand Crowns a year, above the ordinary Income: and in the firſt year of his Reign, he laid up a million of Gold in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, ordaining that this Money ſhould never be employed in any thing whatſoever, unleſs it were towards maintenance of a War for recovery of the Holy Land. In the third year alſo of his Pontificate, he laid up another million to the ſame end and purpoſe, ſwearing himſelf never to make uſe of the ſame, but for that War, or for ſome other War in defence of the Church againſt Infidels or Hereticks; and this Oath of his, he would have all Popes obliged to conſerve and keep inviolate. And that he might the better accumulate Wealth in this nature, as he was ſparing in his Diet, ſo he was alſo in his Clothing, cauſing his very Shirts to be patched before he would give them to his Servants: and beſides theſe two millions, he laid up three other in the ſame Caſtle; ſo that at his death, five millions were found of his hoard and heaps. And yet notwithſtanding all his Riches which he had ſpared, he had been moſt profuſe in his publick Buildings, and magnificent in Noble Structures, Aqueducts, and other things of common uſe and benefit; and beſides all this, he employed a ſtock of two hundred thouſand Crowns to maintain plenty in *Rome*, during the times of ſcarcity and famine in other parts of *Italy*.

He ordained that the number of Cardinals ſhould not exceed ſeventy in all, amongſt which four at leaſt ought to be Doctors in Divinity, choſen out of the ſeveral Orders of Friars, as well *Mendicants* as *Regulars:* and that Cardinals ſhould never be ordained, but in the *Ember Week* of *December*, as had been obſerved from the time of *Clement* I. though in the promotions of Cardinal *Allen*, and *Moroſini*, he himſelf tranſgreſſed that Rule: and created in his time thirty three Cardinals.

For more ſpeedy deciſion of matters of Law, and that Suits might not ſpin out into many years, he erected a Court of Conſcience, compoſed of wiſe and godly Men, and ſuch as feared God. He enacted that Adultery ſhould be puniſhed with Death; and prohibited Judicial Aſtrology.

About four Months before his death, he began to find himſelf indiſpoſed, and complained of an illneſs in his Head; of which diſtemper, and of the nature of his Diſeaſe, he often diſcourſed with much reaſon, according to the Rules of *Gallen* and *Hippocrates*; howſoever during the time of this indiſpoſition, he omitted nothing of his buſineſs, and ate and drank of ſuch Meats and Liquors as are uſeful for Men of the beſt health; having often in his Mouth the ſaying of *Flavius Veſpatian* the Emperor, *That a Prince ought to die on his feet and in action*, ſignifying that a Prince ought to dye in the work of his Vocation. But being more grievouſly ſeiſed by a malignant Fever on rhe twentieth of *Auguſt* 1590. on the thirtieth of the ſame Month in the Evening he died, being in the ſeventieth year of his Age, having governed the Papal See five years, four months and three days. The Night after, his Body was carried in a Hearſe to the Church of St. *Peter* near the *Vatican*, for he died at his Palace of *Monte Cavallo*; from whence Cardinal *Montalto* cauſed it to be tranſported with ſolemn and Princely equipage to a Chappel which *Sixtus* had built adjoyning to the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore*. After whoſe death the See was vacant eighteen days.

URBAN VII.

URBAN the Seventh, called *John Baptiſta Caſtagna*, was born at *Rome*; his Family came from *Genoua*, being deſcended from the Antient Nobility of that City; but his Mother was a *Roman* of the houſe of the *Ricci*. He was educated in all the uſual Methods of good Literature; and applying himſelf chiefly to the Studies of the Canon and Civil Law, he became ſo good a Proficient therein, that he attained the degree of Doctor in the Univerſity of *Bologna*: In the time of *Julius* III. he accompanied his Uncle *Veralli* into

France, who was employed in that Court in quality of Legat; and acting there under his Uncle, he gave clear demonſtrations of quickneſs of parts and vivacity of Spirit, fit for great and important undertakings: returning afterwards to *Rome*, he dwelt in the Houſe of the Arch-biſhop of *Roſano*. *Paul*. IV. made him Governour of *Peruſa*: and *Pius* IV. who immediately ſucceeded him, ſent him with the Character of his Legat into *Spain*; in which employment he was continued by *Pius* V. for the ſpace of ſeven years. *Gregory* XIII. recalled him out of *Spain* to *Rome*, and beſtowed on him the Arch-biſhoprick of *Roſano*, without reſervation to himſelf of any quit-rent thereupon: and afterwards delegated him his Nuntio to *Venice*, and with that Character gave him a Commiſſion to treat a Peace in the *Low Countreys* between King *Philip* and thoſe States. At his return to *Rome*, he was made Councellour of the Eccleſiaſtical State, and aſſumed into the number of Prelates of the Office of the Inquiſition; in which Employments he continued until the year 1583. when he was created Cardinal by the ſaid *Gregory*, with the Title of Saint *Marcellus*, at a promotion of nineteen Cardinals, and ſoon after he was ſent Legat to *Bologna*. He was alſo held in great eſteeem by *Sixtus* V. and entruſted by him in the management of the moſt important Affairs both in Church and State; and by him judged the moſt probable perſon to ſucceed him in the Papal Chair; the which he expreſſed one day, when contriving in what manner to enlarge the Street from *Santa Croce* to *Santa Maria Maggiore*, and thence how it might be continued in a direct line to *Santa Maria del popolo*, he turned about to Cardinal Saint *Marcellus*, and told him, That to finiſh that work, would belong to him; meaning, that the ſucceſſion being his, it would appertain to him to compleat what he had happily begun.

Nor was it onely the Opinion of *Sixtus*, that Cardinal *Marcellus* was to be his Succeſſour; but the common Voice and rumour of the people, fixed the Papal Dignity upon him; the which accordingly ſucceeded: for ſo ſoon as *Sixtus* was dead, and the uſual Obſequies of his Interment ſolemnized; the Cardinals, to the number of fifty four, on the 7th. of *September* 1590. entred the *Conclave*, where a very great party laboured much for the election of Cardinal *Collonna*; who though he were a perſon of merit and worth, yet he was ſo higly oppoſed by a contrary faction; that both parties being intrigued in difficulties, did as it were by mutual conſent concur in their ſuffrages for Cardinal St. *Marcellus*, who was a perſon without exception, and grateful both to Princes, Cardinals and People; for no ſooner was the Scrutiny begun, then all things ſo appeared in his favour, that on the 14th of *September* at Night, the Cardinals were aſſured of the perſon on whom the Election ſhould fall; more Votes appearing for him than the Complement required; howſoever, though the Election was deferred until the next day at Noon; yet ſo unanimous and conſtant was every perſon to his Vote, that the delay of time produced no alteration: ſo that on *Saturday* the 15, he was with common conſent declared Pope. And then clothing himſelf in his Pontifical Habit, whilſt he took the Rocket, which is made of a fine ſort of Tiffany, he was obſerved to ſay theſe words: *Who would think that this light Habit ſhould be of ſo weighty a Burden?* And now being ſeated in his Chair, and adored after the accuſtomary manner by the Cardinals, he was pleaſed to call himſelf by the name of

Urban VII. ſignifying thereby the urbanity of his Diſpoſition, which was inclinable to uſe all Perſons with an obliging and gentle treatment.

The ſame Evening that he was created Pope, he preſented two thouſand Ducats to Cardinal *Sans*, and a thouſand to Cardinal *Albano*, in conſideration of the want and poverty of their condition: and when Cardinal *Albano* deſired him only two days ſorbearance of the payment of three thouſand three hundred Crowns which were lent him by *Sixtus* V. he freely forgave him the Debt, as he did ſeveral other great ſums of Money, which he had lent when he was Cardinal.

The ſecond day after he was choſen Pope, not finding himſelf well diſpoſed in his health, he determined to remove from the *Vatican* to *Montecavallo*, as being a more wholeſom and pleaſant Air; but being put in mind, that it was not the cuſtome for Popes to remove or paſs the ſtreets of *Rome* without an Equipage, and attendance of Cardinals, Prelates, and other Lords, which was never done untill his Coronation was ſolemnized; in compliance with ſuch admonition, he deferred his removal until that function was performed; when the day following his indiſpoſition turning to a malignant Fever, he grew worſe and worſe, and on the 27th. of *September* he expired his laſt breath, dying on the thirteenth day of his Papacy, and in the Seventieth year of his Age, and was buried in St. *Peter*'s Church. Some do alledg, that having not been Crowned, he ought not to be numbred amongſt the Popes; but this matter is otherwiſe determined by an Antient Canon, which ſays: *Ut is qui electus eſt in Apoſtolatum ſi juxta conſuetudinem inthronizari non valeat; electus tamen ſicut verus Papa obtinet auctoritatem regendi R. Eccleſie & diſponendi omnes facultates illius, quod B. Gregorium ante ſuam coronationem cognovimus feciſſe*, &c.

Urban being dead, the Sea was vacant two months and nine days.

GREGORY XIV.

GREGORY the Fourteenth, called *Nicholas Sfrondati*, of a Rich and antient Family in *Milan*, was on the 5th of *December* of this year, elected Pope: his Father was *Francis Sfrondati* a Senatour of *Milan*, and by *Charles* V. was conſtituted Governour of *Siena*. Pope *Paul* III. who was always inquiſitive after wiſe and able Men, whom he might raiſe and prefer unto places of Truſt, made him Biſhop of *Cremona*, after the death of his Wife, and Cardinal with the ſame Title. This *Nicholas* being deſcended from *Francis* a wiſe and excellent Parent, was educated in all manner of Learning and good Literature agreeable to his rank and quality; he firſt ſtudied at *Peruſa*, afterwards at *Pavia*, where he took his degree of Doctor of the Civil Law: *Pius* IV. created him Biſhop of *Cremona*, with which Title he reſided at *Trent* three years, during which Council, the affability he uſed in his Converſation, was very pleaſing to the other Fathers, and the knowledge he had in the Law, made him uſeful in the ſervice of the Pope; though he was one of thoſe Prelate who contended much, that Reſidences were *Jure Divino*. *Gregory* XIII promoted him to the Dignity of Cardinal, and in honour to his memory, when he came to be elected Pope, he called himſelf by the name of *Gregory* XIV.

The *Conclave* in which he was choſen was very memorable, as namely for the number of Cardinals there preſent, who were fifty four; alſo for the many pretenders to the Papal Dignity, who were no leſs than ſixteen, all perſons of great worth and merit; alſo for the Leaders and Heads of Parties, who were ſix; and for the time that the *Conclave* continued being almoſt two months, which at firſt, according to the common Opinion, was believed not to laſt two days, all perſons concluding that the Election would terminate in the perſon of Cardinal St. *Severina*, one of great Learning and experience in Affairs, and moſt zealous for the welfare and honour of the Papal Chair: But he being a perſon of a moroſe humour and auſterity of life, was rejected; and endeavours made for Cardinal *Colonna*, a Prince of that high reputation and merit, that at *Rome* his Election was generally believed and concluded to be certain; but for want of ſome Votes, both he and *Mandovi*, who ſtood equal with him, were laid aſide. Cardinal *Aldobrandino* was the next brought to the Scrutiny; and after him Cardinal *della Rovere*, but thoſe who delighted to find difficulties in all matters, rendred their Elections void, like the former. At length to bring things to a period, ſeven Cardinals were propoſed, who were eſteemed Men of that Integrity, and of that general good reputation with all, that none of them could be choſen amiſs, and that (as it was believed) the choice would come to terminate in one of them: but upon a Scrutiny made, the ſame difficulties occurred, as in the former; the like alſo happened to *Paleotto* and *Santi quatro.* At length after divers and various turnings of Affairs, Cardinal *Montalto*, followed by many other Cardinals to the number of twenty ſix, who were his own Creatures, moved for the Election of Cardinal *Cremona*, and with this train went to his Chamber, where they found him on his knees at Prayers; in which poſture *Montalto* told him, that he ſhould prepare himſelf againſt the next day to receive his promotion to the Papal Chair: and accordingly the next Morning early he raiſed him from his Bed, and cauſing him haſtily to cloth himſelf, conducted him with ſeven Cardinals to the Chappel, where Scrutiny being made, *Cremona* was with common conſent, and ſuffrages, of all elected Pope: preſently after which, the Adoration was made with all the other uſual Ceremonies.

So ſoon as he was promoted to this Dignity, he made large Preſents to many of the Cardinals, giving a thouſand Crowns to each, telling them that it was to defray the charges they had been at, during the long time they had reſided in the *Conclave*. He beſtowed alſo great ſums to pious uſes: and ordered that the domeſtick Servants of his Family ſhould be clothed in new and rich Habits: He provided againſt the ſcarcity and dearneſs of Corn and other proviſions; and reſtored thoſe *Romans* to their Places and Offices which *Sixtus* V. had taken from them. Howſoever the day but one after he was choſen, finding himſelf indiſpoſed, he refuſed to give Audience either to Cardinals, or to the Ambaſſadours of Princes; yet notwithſtanding on the 18th of *December*, being the Feaſt of the conception of our Lady, he forced himſelf in deſpight of his diſtemper, to paſs all the Ceremonies of his Coronation, and on the 13th to the take ſolemn poſſeſſion of Papal Chair at the *Lateran*; all the ſtreets thorough which he paſſed were hung with Tapiſtry and other Ornaments, and thronged with people to receive his Benediction; at which great honours, though he was obſerved to ſmile, and carry a countenance not becoming the gravity of a Pope, yet he would often praiſe God, and ſay, *Lord, I thank thee, that with all theſe honours and worſhip, thou haſt not ſuffered the heart of thy ſervant to be puffed up, or tranſported with worldly glory.* And for the greater ſolemnity of this Proceſſion, the People of *Rome* erected a triumphal Arch, with this Inſcription:

> *Gregory* XIV. *ob Egregia, & Felicia Pontificatus auſpicia priſtina Munera, & Beneficia Capitolio reſtituta, Civitatem egeſtate, atque annonâ laborantem opportunâ liberalitate ſublevatam, inſignibus ejus virtutibus* S. P. Q. R.

On the other ſide were Inſcribed.

> *Optimo Principi Gregorio* XIV. *Pont. Max. ab ineunt ætate per gradus veræ Sapientiæ, Pietatis, Beneficentiæ, cæterarumque virtutum ad Apoſtolici Faſtigii gloriam, & Majeſtatem evecto, ob fauſta Sacri, Auguſtique Principatus initia, & non dubiam ſpem rerum Maximarum Reipub. Chriſtianæ oblatam,* S. P. Q. R. *Fornigem Triumphalem pro tempore excitavit*; On the other ſides were divers Verſes Inſcribed out of Holy Scripture, ſignifying the great hopes and expectations they had from the adminiſtration and good Government of *Gregory*.

On the 19th of this Month of *December* he held the firſt Conſiſtory, commonly called the *Conſiſtory of Peace*, becauſe as is uſual, the Popes do with fair words harangue the Cardinals and endeavour an amicable correſpondence with them; after which, he at this Conſiſtory created his Nephew Cardinal.

On the 18th of *January* he publiſhed a form of Jubile, whereby he ordained, That all Chriſtians ſhould offer up their Prayers unto God in his behalf; that he might have grace faithfully to feed the Flock of Chriſt, and wiſely and ſucceſsfully to adminiſter the Affairs of the Univerſal Church.

On the 6th of *March* following he created ſix Cardinals; and a ſhort time afterwards, he made his Nephew Count *Sfrondati* Duke of *Mont-Marcian*, and General of the Forces of the Church, ſending him into *France* with an Army for aſſiſtance of the League, in which War he ſpent five hundred thouſand Crowns of Gold. At *Whitſunday*, which happened that year on the 9th of *May*, he beſtowed on the Cardinal-Friers a Licence and priviledg to wear red Hats, for until that time, their Hats were of the ſame colour with the habit of their Order: the which favour of wearing red Hats and Caps, was demanded in the time of *Pius* V. *Gregory* XIII. and *Sixtus* V. but it was refuſed, and thoſe Cardinals confined to their own colour.

In the Month of *Auguſt* the Duke of *Ferrara* came to *Rome*, to receive his Inveſtiture into the Dukedom from the hands of the Pope; where he was received with great pomp and honour, and his Table, and other Charges, defrayed at the expence of the Pope.

On the 22th of *September* he began to find himſelf indiſpoſed of a Fever, the which encreaſing daily, cauſed by the Stone and retention of his Urin, he expired his laſt on the 15th day of *October* 1591. with exceſſive pains. Being dead, his Bladder was opened, a ſtone taken from thence weighing two ounces and a quarter. His Body was carried that Night to St. *Peters*, where it was buried in the Chappel of *Gregory*. He had been Pope ten Months and ten days, after which the See was vacant fifteen days.

INNOCENT IX.

IF ever any Perſon was elected to the Popedom with the common and general conſent of the whole *Conclave*, and without thoſe factions and parties which uſually ariſe at thoſe Meetings, it was certainly this *Innocent* IX. who in the *Conclave*, which choſe his Predeceſſour *Gregory* XIV. had ſo fair a proſpect of this promotion, that he miſſed of it then, but by ſome few rubs only, which he had time afterwards to remove: and ſo probable was the Papal Diadem to be his, that the Mitre of *Gregory* fell on his Head, when he came in an humble manner to pay his Reſpects and Obedience at the feet of the Pope; the which accident ſeemed to foretel and be prophetick of that fortune which afterwards enſued.

An. 1591. In this manner on the 29th of *October* 1591. the Papal Chair was again ſupplied by *John Anthony Fachinetti* commonly called Cardinal of *Santi Quattro*, taking on himſelf the name of *Innocent* IX. but his time was ſhort; for he reigned only two Months: his Father and Mother were *Natives* of *Gravegni* a City in *Navarre*, but he was born at *Bologna*, and there educated in good Learning until the year 1544. when he took the degree of Doctor: Afterwards coming to *Rome*, he was entertained in the Family of Cardinal *Farneſe*, who ſent him for his Vicar to *Avignon*, and afterwards to *Parma*. *Pius* IV. created him Biſhop of *Nicaſtro*, a City in *Calabria*, and in the year 1591. employed him at the Council of *Trent*. In the year 1566. *Pius* V. delegated him his Nuntio at *Venice*, where he was a ſucceſsful Inſtrument in making a League and Confederacy between the Pope, the King of *Spain*, and the *Venetians* againſt the *Turk*. *Gregory* XIII. created him Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, Preſident of the Court of Inquiſition, and Cardinal, with the Title of *Santa Quattro*, by which appellation he was commonly known. And laſtly, after the deceaſe of *Gregory*, he was unanimouſly elected on the day before mentioned.

The firſt thing he did after his Election, and which he was ſo ready to perform without loſs of time, that even then, when he was veſting himſelf in his Pontifical Habit, he ſigned the *Bolle*, *De non alienandis bonis Eccleſiæ*; and then declared with words proceeding from the depth of his heart, that he was reſolved to provide for the afflicted people of *Rome*, and contrive ſome effectual means to relieve the neceſſities of the City, which laboured almoſt under a Famine or ſcarcity of Bread: To which end he ſummoned a Congregation, and commanded that the Barons of

Rome ſhould bring their Corn into the City, and made *Vitelli* Overſeer of the Proviſions, or *Præfectus Annonæ*.

On *Sunday* the ſecond of *November* he was Crowned, but not on the ſtairs aſcending to St. *Peters*, but in a little Apartment which looks towards thoſe ſtairs, by which means a thouſand Crowns were ſaved of the expence: the next day he held the firſt Conſiſtory, at which he returned his hearty thanks to the Cardinals for favouring his Election, propoſing ſeveral things which he eſteemed convenient for conſervation of the Eccleſiaſtical State; amongſt which he gave them to underſtand, how neceſſary it was to keep always a conſiderable ſum of Money in the Treaſury, as a reſerve at all times to ſupply the neceſſities and emergencies of the Church: the which had been an ancient practice in the Republick of *Rome*, whereas *Tacitus* ſaith, they ever reſerved a ſecret Treaſure diſtinct from their running Caſh, never to be uſed but then only, when the ultimate exigencies of State required it.

In the next place, he wrote Epiſtles to all Patriarchs, Arch-biſhops, and Primates, giving them advice of his promotion to the Papal Dignity, exhorting them within their reſpective Juriſdictions to make Prayers for him, that God would inſpire him in ſuch manner with his heavenly grace, as might enable him to ſupport the great and important burthen of Eccleſiaſtical Government.

The 29th of this Month of *November*, the Duke of *Mantoua* arrived at *Rome* to do him homage, and was received with a chearful welcome, being lodged in the Pope's Palace, in the Apartment belonging to his Nephews.

On the 11th of *November* he iſſued forth a regulation of the prices of all Proviſions, which were mounted to an exceſſive rate: On the 18th he created two Cardinals, namely *Segas* Biſhop of *Piacenza*, and *Anthony Fachinetti* his great Nephew, whom he alſo conſtituted Referendary of both the Seals.

On the 21th he began to find himſelf indiſpoſed in his health, which increaſing to a high degree, did on the 23th give indications of a malignant Fever, which in eight days time put an end to his Life, and dying on the 29th of *December* 1591. his Body was buried in the Church of St. *Peter*, having raigned only two Months: and the Sea was vacant a month and a day. And now to ſhew the frailty of humane condition, and the uncertainty of great Places, one year, four months and three days, made an end of four Popes.

CLEMENT VIII.

IN the place of *Innocent*, Cardinal *Hippolito Aldebrandino* was elected Pope, and poſſeſſed the Chair thirteen years or thereabouts. He was deſcended from an antient Family of *Florence*, which had continued from the *Langobards* for the ſpace of a thouſand years, originally called *Hildebrando*, or *Hildebrandino*, and ſo by corruption *Aldebrandino*: his Anceſtors had held the chief Offices and Dignities in that City, having the honour to have had the chief and ſupreme Magiſtracy of *Gonfaloniere* twenty three times in their Family, of which great promotions and Dignities in that City, none can boaſt ſo much as this, unleſs the Houſe of the *Medici*, who in this Age are Dukes of that City and Country.

This *Hippolito* was the Son of *Silveſter Aldobrandino*, born at *Florence*, where, and at *Piſa*, having ſtudied the Law, he gained conſiderable knowledge therein, to which having added an excellency in the gift of Eloquence, and a juſt and upright mind, he became fit and qualified for Government, and for management of the moſt important Truſts and charges of State. After many Honours and Places which he had obtained, as well at *Florence*, as with the Dukes of *Ferrara* and *Vrbin*; he was at *Rome* made Auditor of the *Rota* and *Datary*, under *Sixtus* V. who afterwards created him Cardinal, and ſent him under Character of his Legat into *Poland*. He afterwards was employed in matters of great importance under *Vrban* VII. *Gregory* XIV. and *Innocent* IX. in all which acquitting himſelf with ſingular Juſtice and Wiſdom, he prepared his way to the attainment of that Supreme Dignity, after which the Cardinals ſo much thirſt and languiſh.

The Funeral Obſequies of *Innocent* being performed, the Cardinals having celebrated the Maſs of the Holy Ghoſt, and heard an Oration pronounced by the Biſhop of *Traw de eligendo Summo Pontifice*, they entered the *Conclave* on the 10th of *January*, to the number of fifty two, ſinging the Hymn of *Veni Creator Spiritus*.

Many and various were the endeavours, and practices amongſt the Cardinals, during the time of this *Conclave*: *Montalto* who was the great ſtickler and promoter of Elections, deſigned the choice for Cardinal *Santa Severina*, being a Perſon much eſteemed for his Vertues and Learning, but ſuch oppoſition appearing againſt him, as could not be withſtood, divers others were put into the predicament, as *Como*, *Paleotto*, and others: *Colonna* had a fair proſpect of ſucceſs, and ſo alſo had *Madruccio*, but were all excluded by contrary Factions: ſo at length *Montalto* propoſed Cardinal *Aldobrandino*, who being nominated, was generally acceptable, and eſteemed for his rare Qualities, and the excellency of his Vertue and Piety; and diſquiſition or trial of Votes being made, there ſoon appeared a unanimous conſent and concurrence to create him Pope, which was accordingly effected on the 30th. of *January* 1592. and publication made in the *Conclave*, that *Aldobrandino* was choſen: whereupon *Madruccio*, *Montalto*, and others aſſembling together, went in company to his Cell to congratulate his Election; which he received without any alteration, or change of Countenance; and being conducted thence to the Chappel *Paolina*, he was there by publick Scrutiny of all the Cardinals, and with their common and unanimous Vote Elected Pope.

It is ſaid, that after his Choice, he kneeled down before the Altar, and inſtead of ſhewing that joy which *Sixtus* V. and others had betrayed, he let fall abundance of tears, ſeeming to be filled with great fear and confuſion: and when according to the uſual Formality, it was enquired of him by the Maſters of the Ceremonies, whether he accepted of his Election to the Popedom, he remained ſilent without returning any Anſwer, ſo that the Cardinals who were ſtanding near his Perſon, made Anſwer for him, that he did accept it: but the Maſters not accepting this aſſent from the mouth of others: told him, That his conſent could not be Recorded from the words of others, but only from his own; wherefore being thus urged, he with abundance of tears expreſſed himſelf in this manner: *O Lord God, who ſeeſt the hearts of all Men, and from whom no ſecrets are hid, and knoweſt what is preſent, and what is to come; if this Election which thou haſt made of me, to be thy Vicar on Earth, ſhall not be to thy Glory and Service, and good of thy Faithful People, Grant I beſeech Thee, that my Tongue may cleave to the root of my Mouth,* Ut linguæ mea adhæreat faucibus meis: *but if thou by thy Providence doſt foreſee that I ſhall be uſeful, and ſerviceable to thy Holy Church, then do I in Vertue of thy Divine Aſſiſtance, accept of this Office, and be it unto thy Servant according to thy Will.*

And thus being, as accuſtomary, veſted in his Habit, and placed in the Chair, he was with great joy of all the Cardinals, adored by them; calling himſelf by the Name of *Clement* VIII. he was afterwards conducted to S. *Peters*, where he was met by the Canons, ſinging the uſual *Antiphona: Ecce Sacerdos Magnus, qui in diebus ſuis placuit Deo, & Inventus eſt Juſtus.*

All the Ceremonies of his Election and Inauguration being compleated; he immediately applyed his mind to the Affairs of Government. And in the firſt place, after the Example of *Sixtus* V. he reſolved to deſtroy and extirpate that vile and abominable ſort of Men, called *Banditi*, who were Vagabonds, and Robbers, and committed moſt execrable Murthers and ſpoils in all parts of the *Roman* Territories: to effect which he ſent ſeveral Troops of armed Men againſt them, who cut them in pieces, and deſtroyed them without any remorſe, or compaſſion, as the Enemies and Peſt of humane Society. But that which was of greateſt importance to him, was the ſucceſs of the League againſt *Henry* King of *Navarre*; to ſupport and ſtrengthen which, he diſpatched the Biſhop of *Viterbo* into *France* with Inſtructions, and Money to favour the Party and Intereſt of the Allies againſt the King and his Proteſtant Party, who ſtood Excommunicated by Pope *Sixtus*. It is not our part here to relate all the paſſages, and ſucceſſes of that War, being that which appertains to the Hiſtory of *France*; we can only ſay, that *Henry* IV. being victorious in all the Battels which he fought, and having entered all the Provinces of that Kingdom with Triumph: we may imagine that *France* ſtood at that time on its vertical point of becoming all Proteſtant. But certainly that wiſe King conſidering that Victory in War is not ſufficient to ſettle a Prince quiet and ſecure in his Throne, unleſs his Inauguration be attended with the affection of his People, and a concurrence or conformity with the profeſſed and Eſtabliſhed Religion of the Country, did ſuffer himſelf to be overborn by thoſe Arguments which were produced in favour of the Church of *Rome*, whoſe greateſt weight conſiſted in thoſe conſiderations which had reſpect to the Union and Peace of the Kingdom. And thereupon, all the pretences of oppoſition to their lawful Sovereign being taken off from the People; *Meaux, Lion, Orleans* and *Bourges*, with other places, which ſtood in Rebellion againſt him, ſubmitted to his pleaſure, and the King was received into *Paris* with all joy and triumph imaginable.

The King having made profeſſion of the *Roman* Catholick Faith, was abſolved by the Arch-biſhop of *Bourges* in the Church at St. *Denys*; at which the Pope was highly diſpleaſed, in regard the abſolution of Monarchs in caſes of Hereſie could not be performed but by the Pope himſelf in Perſon, or by immediate Deputation from him: Howſoever the Duke of *Nevers* being ſent Ambaſſadour to *Rome*, carrying with him from the Nuntio Atteſtations of the King's ſincere converſion; which was confirmed not long afterwards by the *Sieur du Perron*, the Excommunication was taken off, which Pope *Sixtus* had thundred againſt him; and having received him for the eldeſt Son of the Church, the Pope ſolemnly gave him his Abſolution and bleſſing in the year 1595.

In this year Pope *Clement* reſtrained the liberal Grants of Indulgences, which having for Money been iſſued to every Chapman, they became common even to contempt; for remedy of which, he impoſed a greater difficulty on the conceſſions of them. He alſo at that time relieved the people of *Rome* by abatements on the price of Corn, having cauſed great quantities to be imported from *Sicily*: he likewiſe ſuppreſſed by his Naval Force the many Pirats which inſeſted the *Mediterranian* Sea: and concluded a League between himſelf, the Emperor, the Prince of *Tranſilvania*, and the Princes of *Germany*, againſt the *Turk*: for the effectual proſecution of which, he afterwards in the year 1597. ſent ten thouſand Men into *Hungary* paid at his own charge under the conduct of *Francis Aldobrandino*, which being joyned with ſix thouſand, which the Emperour ſent into *Tranſilvania*, and other Forces raiſed, and paid by the Circles of the Empire, compoſed a ſtrong and formidable Army againſt the *Turk*.

However the Wars between *France* and *Spain* ſtill continuing without any probable appearance of accommodation, the *Turk* availed himſelf of thoſe unhappy diviſions; and forced the Emperor to raiſe the Siege of *Raab*; and ſhamefully cauſed the *Tranſilvanians* to retreat from *Temeſwar*, and being victorious in all parts of *Hungary*, threatned to enter *Germany* by force of Arms: with which the Pope being greatly alarm'd, and fearing the ſucceſs of the common Enemy of Chriſtendom, bended all his thoughts towards making a Peace between *Spain* and *France*, which he hoped to effect in that juncture of time, when the circumſtances of Chriſtendom made it almoſt neceſſary to put an end unto the War: In this grand Affair he employed Cardinal *Alexander de Medicis*, (who was afterwards his Succeſſour) to be his Legat to *Henry* IV. of *France*, and by his Nuntio who reſided with *Phillip* II. in the Court of *Spain*, he uſed many inſtances and warm Exhortations, perſuading both of them, that laying aſide the hatred and animoſities which were between them, they would ſeriouſly apply themſelves to embrace ſuch Conditions, which might produce Amity and a Chriſtan peace between them, that ſo they might joyn in a League againſt the *Turk*, who was now victorious, and breathed out ruine and deſtruction to all Chriſtendom: but becauſe theſe two Princes were high ſpirited and haughty, as not to be the firſt to condeſcend and ask a peace, the General of the *Cordelier* Friers was employed by the Pope, to carry the Offers and propoſals of mediation between one and the other, in which he had ſuch ſucceſs, that labouring with the Legat, and Monſieur *de Sillery*, who was afterwards made Chancellonr of *France*, they agreed at

St. *Quintin* on the moſt difficult and diſputable Points and Conditions, which were afterwards perfected and concluded at *Vervins*, in the year 1598.

But that which had like to have interrupted and ſpoiled all this Treaty, was the reſtitution of the Marquiſat of *Salluces*, which the *French* King demanded of the Duke of *Savoy*: but leaſt this pretention ſhould fruſtrate and defeat the former Agreement, the King was contented to conſtitute the Pope ſole Arbitrator and Judg of this difference, promiſing to ſtand to his Umpirage and Award, provided that his Sentence were publiſhed in one year after the Date of this preſent Peace. But this Peace did not produce that union of Arms againſt the common Enemy, as the Pope expected; the Kings reſolving to make uſe of this Peace for the quiet and repoſe of their Subjects; and therefore taking no notice of any preparations againſt the *Turk*, they diſpatched their reſpective Letters to the Pope, freighted with Salutes and Thanks for the good Offices he had performed towards the happy eſtabliſhment and concluſion of a Peace.

But before this Peace was agreed in the Month of *October* 1599. *Alfonſo d' Eſte* the ſecond of that Name Duke of *Ferrara*, died without iſſue Male, by which the City of *Ferrara*, and the Territory thereunto belonging, devolved to the Papal Chair, which the Pope made known to the Cardinals in a full Conſiſtory; with his Claim thereunto, according to antient Articles agreed between the Anceſtors of the Duke of *Ferrara*, and the See of *Rome*: But news coming afterwards that *Ceſara d' Eſte* Baſtard brother of the Duke deceaſed, had made ſeiſure, and taken poſſeſſion of the Dukedom by vertue of his Brothers Teſtament, reſolving to defend his Title thereunto by force of Arms; the Pope was greatly troubled and incenſed, and immediately gave Orders to raiſe an Army of twenty five thouſand Foot, and three thouſand Horſe, to march under the Command of his Nephew Cardinal *Aldobrandino*; (*John Francis Aldobrandino*, being as we have ſaid, at that time in *Hungary*) and to make theſe temporal Arms the more available, he accompanied them with the Spiritual Artillery of Excommunication, which he cauſed to be thunderout and affixed in all the publick places of *Ferrara*. The Cardinal being proud of the honour to be ſo great a General, uſed ſuch diligence in raiſing and providing his Army, that in leſs than two Months after his departure from *Rome*, he had compleated Leavies, and appointed his general Rendezvouz at *Rimini*. With the unexpected news of this ſpeedy diſpatch, *Ceſare d' Eſte* was much ſurpriſed, and being now in great fear and doubt of his ſucceſs, began to conſult of what moderate and reaſonable propoſitions he might offer unto the Pope: wherefore he deſired his Friends at *Rome* to intercede for him, and by their hands offered many and various expedients, condeſcending every day to Conditions more favourable to the Pope than the former; but the Pope refuſing all other terms than thoſe, which made him Maſter of the City and Juriſdiction of *Ferrara*, he was at length obliged to yield thereunto, whereby that Dominion devolved to the Church, and the delivery thereof was agreed by Articles ſigned at *Faenza*; of which when the Pope received advice, he ſang *Te Deum*, and rendred thanks publickly to God; and with the general concurrence and Counſel of the Cardinals in a full Conſiſtory, he conſtituted Cardinal *Aldobrandino* his Legat at *Ferrara*; giving him *order* to take poſſeſſion of the City; which about the end of *February* 1598. was accordingly ſurrendered with all quietneſs and peace, not ſo much as with a Sword drawn, or a Musket fired: before which time *Don Ceſare* retired to *Reggio* and *Modena*, of which Cities he was ſhortly after created Duke by the Emperor, and inveſted in the Government thereof, and alſo made Prince of the *Roman* Empire. Afterwards the Pope reſolving to make a Journey to *Ferrara*, to ſettle and eſtabliſh Affairs in his new Dominions; he cauſed on *Sunday* being the 12th of *April* (according to the uſual Cuſtom, when Popes travel) the Sacrament of the Altar to be carried the day before his departure; and then the next day after Maſs, laying his Veſtments aſide, and clothing himſelf with his ſhorter Garments, the *Antiphona* was ſung: *In viam pacis*, with other ſhort Prayers for the happy ſucceſs of this Journey: and then mounting into his Horſe-litter he was accompanied to the Gate of the City by the Cardinals, where turning towards them, he gave them his Benediction, and proceeded on his way in this order. Firſt, after the Baggage belonging to the Kitchin, the Horſe-litters and Horſes appertaining to the Pope preceded, led by the Grooms of the Stables clothed in red; next following the Carriages with the Robes; next to them a Squadron of Light Horſemen with four Trumpets before them; then the Pope's Family, with the Guard of *Switzers* on foot armed with Carbines and Halberts: after followed the Governour of *Rome*, who accompanied his Holineſs as far as *Ponte Molle*, then went the Standard-bearer carrying a Crucifix, and immediately after him went the Pope in his Litter, and then followed the Cardinals, *Baronius*, *Arigoni*, *Monte* and St. *Georgio*, on Mules with Ombrelles in their hands, with a great number of other Prelates, ſome on Horſes, and others in Coaches: In this manner they travelled untill *Thurſday* in the Evening, (being treated on the way by ſeveral Cardinals) when they arrived at *Loretto*, and there for Devotion and for refreſhment remained until *Sunday*. When the Pope being on his departure, preſented to the Lady *Loretto*, a ſtately Croſs with ſix Silver Candleſticks, and two Baſes of maſſive Silver, with a thouſand Crowns in Money, and rich Veſtments with which the Pope was clothed when he ſaid Maſs in that Chappel. Departing on *Sunday* from *Loretto*, they arrived that Evening at *Ancona*, where being received with Triumphant Arches and ſplendid entertainment, they were pleaſed to remain untill the *Friday* following; during which time Cardinal *Aldobrandino* arrived, and was received by the Pope with all the demonſtrations of kindneſs and reſpect imaginable. On *Thurſday* being *Aſcenſion day*, and the day before the Popes departure; the *Sacrament* of the Altar took its journey forward for *Sinigaglia*, where the day following it arrived, as did the Pope, being received by the Duke of *Urbin*, with a ſumptuous and ſplendid Entertainment. From *Sinigaglia* they came to *Fano*, which being the City where the Pope was born, he was received with all demonſtrations of joy and triumph; from thence they travelled to *Peſaro*, where the Duke of that place was not wanting in his reſpects and duty, and next place to *Rimini* where the Duke of *Modena* came to kiſs the feet of the Pope. On *Tueſday* they came to *Ravenna*, on *Thurſday* they arrived at the Church of St. *George*, not far diſtant from *Ferrara*, where was a ſtately Monaſtery poſſeſſed by Monks of the Order of *Mount Olivet*; the Sacrament being there arrived in the

Morning, was met about a Mile diſtant from the Church, by the Clergy, and Religious of *Ferrara*, with all reverence and devotion: where the Pope coming afterwards about an hour before Sun-ſetting, retired into the *Convent*, where his Lodgings were prepared, being the very ſame in which *Clement* VII. had formerly been received: and here all things were prepared for the ſolemn *Cavalcade*, and entry into *Ferrara*.

We ſhall not need to entertain the Reader with the Order and ſumptuous manner of this *Cavalcade*, as we have done of the Pope's Journey to this place; it is ſufficient to mention that the entry into *Ferrara* was truly Royal and Magnificent, and what might ſuit with the State and glory of the greateſt Monarch in *Europe*. During the time of the Pope's reſidence in that place, which was from the Month of *April*, until the middle of *December* following, ſeveral matters and actions of importance ſucceeded: and particularly a contract of Marriage between four perſons of the ſame Name, Family, and bearing the ſame Eſcutcheons and Arms; to wit, between *Philip* III. King of *Spain*, and *Margaret* of *Auſtria*, Siſter of the Arch-Duke *Ferdinand* of *Auſtria*; and between the Arch-Duke of *Auſtria Albert*, late Cardinal, with the *Infanta Iſabella Clara Eugenia* Siſter of the King of *Spain*; the which moſt illuſtrious Perſons were joyned together by the hands of the Pope, during the time that the Pope reſided at *Ferrara*. For though in the life of *Philip* II. the Marriage was agreed between his Son and the Lady *Margaret*, yet not being celebrated before his death the conſummation thereof was deferred until the days of mourning for the deceaſed King were accompliſhed: which happening to be at the time, when Pope *Clement* was at *Ferrara*; it was thought fit that the Lady *Margaret* in her paſſage to *Spain*, ſhould take *Ferrara* in her way; which accordingly ſhe did, being ſplendidly treated by the State of *Venice*, as ſhe journied through their Dominions, and being conducted by the Governour of *Milan* with a numerous train ſhe entered the City of *Ferrara*, where ſhe was magnificently received by the whole Colledg of Cardinals, and lodged at the expences of the Pope. The ſame Evening that ſhe arrived, ſhe made her viſit to the Pope, and being admitted to his preſence, ſhe kiſſed his feet; and then his Holineſs vouchſafed to ariſe and bow to her, and give her his bleſſing: after her the Arch-Dutcheſs preſented her ſelf; who was received with like forms of bleſſing. On the *Sunday* following, which was the day appointed for the Marriage, the Queen appeared richly adorned like a Bride, and being conducted into the Cathedral, which was magnificently prepared, ſhe was there by the hand of the Pope eſpouſed to *Philip* the third King of *Spain*, the Arch-Duke *Albert* repreſenting the perſon of the ſaid King; and then the Arch-Duke himſelf eſpouſed the *Infanta* of *Spain*, the Ambaſſadour of *Spain* ſtanding in her ſtead, and in repreſentation of her perſon. After all which Ceremonies and Feſtivals were ended, at which there was a concourſe of almoſt all the great perſonages of *Italy*; the Queen took her journey by way of *Mantoua* into *Spain*, where ſhe was ſplendidly treated by that Duke. And the Pope having alſo reſided for the ſpace of eight Months at *Ferrara*, to the great ſatisfaction of his new Subjects, who were not uſed to ſuch ſights, nor to ſuch plenty of Money, as the concourſe of ſuch great Perſonages had brought them, were highly pleaſed with the Eccleſiaſtical Government. At length the Pope intending

tending for *Rome*, departed from *Ferrara* with many expreſſions, and evidences of love, and affection towards his people, recommending them to the care of Cardinal St. *Clement*, whom he had made Governour of that City, and Juriſdiction belonging to it. On the 20th of *December* the Pope arrived at *Rome*, full of joy and triumph for the happy acquiſition of his new Dukedom; but this contentment was much allayed by the ſudden irruption of the *Tybur*, which overflowing all its banks, made ſuch an inundation as drowned all the City, and the Countrey round about; which was not only of damage to many in their Eſtates and ruine of their Houſes; but divers perſons were drowned with all their ſubſtance and Eſtate; never did *Rome* endure ſuch deſolation; for on *Chriſtmas* Day the Churches being filled with Water, there was neither Maſs, nor Prayers nor Prieſt, that was heard or ſeen within thoſe Walls, and the Pope himſelf was forced to pray on the tops of the Hills of *Rome*: the Poor that had ſaved themſelves, were yet in great miſery and want, and though ſpared by the Waters, might have periſhed by Famine had not the charity of the Pope and Cardinals adminiſtred a relief to them; and herein eſpecially Cardinal *Aldobrandino* was ſignally uſeful; for he viſited the Houſes of the Poor in Boats, and ſupplied them with Bread and other Victuals, as their occaſions required. The like almoſt we read of in the Life of *Adrian* I.

An. 1599. And now the year of 1599. being entered, the Pope began to make preparations for the following year, which was called and appointed for the year of Jubilee; and in order thereunto he exhorted all Chriſtian Princes to peace and unity; eſpecially his labours were more intent and concerned for peace and good correſpondence in *Italy*, inviting all Sovereign Princes by his Apoſtolical Letters (as they called them) to *Rome* to gain the Jubilee, promiſing all thoſe Bleſſings, Indulgences and Pardons, which are of as high moment, as the Salvation of their Souls. And becauſe I am of Opinion that the form of this general Letter may be curious and pleaſing to the Reader, I have undertaken to tranſcribe the ſame, as tranſlated from the *Latin*, the words are theſe:

Clement *the Biſhop, Servant of the Servants of God, to all the Faithful in Chriſt, who ſhall read theſe preſent Letters, be Health, and the Apoſtolical Benediction.*

Iſaiah 61. Since that by the Grace of God (beloved Children in Chriſt) the acceptable year of our Lord, which is the year of Remiſſion and Pardon doth approach: and the day is come of Eternal Salvation and redemption from your ſins: *Cor*. 6. Now that we are come to the year ſo much deſired by all Chriſtian people, which is the moſt Holy Jubilee, and which ſince the birth of Chriſt born of the bleſſed Virgin *Mary*, is the year 1600. and which is now according to the uſual cuſtom to be celebrated with ſo much the greater joy and concourſe of people, by how much it is to be repreſented without corruption, in the pure Original, and primary Inſtitution thereof: for in regard we have by antient Tradition and teſtimony of our Fore-Fathers received aſſurance, that it was accuſtomary for the Church of *Rome* to grant Indulgences and remiſſion of ſins to all ſuch who in every Age, that is in the term of every hundred years, came to *Rome* to viſit the Churches of the Holy Apoſtles

St. *Peter* and St. *Paul*: aad becauſe that this Cuſtom ſhould not be eſteemed by the World, as a vain and ſuperſtitious rite of Gentiliſm, *Boniface* VIII. our Predeceſſour thought fit to confirm the ſame by his Apoſtolical Decree to all Ages: howſoever other Popes who were our Predeceſſors, have undertaken to reduce the ſame to a ſhorter term of years.

And indeed, it hath not without the Divine and myſterious Ordination, been Enacted and Decreed, That within the Age and Memory of Man, this great benefit of God to mankind ſhould be celebrated and remembred: who when like the Sun of Righteouſneſs, he aroſe from the Incloſures of the Virgins Womb, to beſtow eternal Salvation on all the World, he was pleaſed to appoint, that the remembrance of this Benefit ſhould be celebrated in no other place than this (of *Rome*) which is the Rock and the Receptacle of the Chriſtian Religion, where all the Subjects, as Sons of one Father, and Sheep of one Shepherd, reſort to the Chair of St. *Peter*, and to the firm Rock of Faith, which ſhall never by the continued Courſe of Ages nor variety of times, be altered or changed: that the World may ſee one Sheep-fold, and one Shepherd, and the true ſplendour of one Faith, and all the Members thereof joyned and cemented together under one Head, with the bonds of Love and and Charity:. And laſtly, That they may ſee, with what Unity in the *Roman* Church, the religious Solemnity of this year is obſerved in its due courſe, which we may truly ſtile the Holy year. This year therefore we may reaſonably call the Holy year of Our Lord, and the acceptable year; becauſe that Jeſus Chriſt himſelf, who is the Author of our Salvation, the Son of God, who was ſent by the Eternal Father in the fulneſs of Grace and of the Holy Ghoſt, hath ſo named it: *To heal the contrite in heart, to proclaim liberty to the Captives, and the opening of the Priſon to them who are bound, to proclaim the acceptable year of our Lord.* And whereas we though unworthy, do ſit in the Seat of Chriſt upon Earth, and are ſtated in this ſublime Place, watching as a Centinel and a Guard Apoſtolical, do declare, publiſh and preach to all you who are the faithful in Chriſt this year of Jubilee; which, though it be a year of Repentance, yet it is alſo a year of Jubilee, and of ſpiritual joy and comfort. *Iſaiah* 61.

Now becauſe the love of Chriſt, for whom we are Ambaſſadours to all Nations, conſtraineth us, and the zeal which we have for your Souls, doth conſume our Spirit; we exhort and beſeech you all by the blood which Jeſus Chriſt hath ſpilt, and by his coming in the laſt day of Judgment, eſpecially at this time of Jubilee: *That every one be converted from the evil of his way, and turn unto the Lord with a pure heart, and good conſcience, and faith unfeigned, becauſe the Lord is gracious and merciful, full of compaſſion and long-ſuffering.* Wherefore according to the duty of our Paſtoral Office, we do call and chearfully invite you Our dear Children in Chriſt, namely the Emperor, the Kings and Catholick Princes, with all the faithful of Chriſt whereſoever diſperſed in the moſt remote parts of the World, that they would be preſent at this joyful ſolemnity of the Jubilee; though we cannot but at the ſame time be miſerably afflicted with conſideration of the great numbers of people who have ſeparated themſelves from the Union and Communion of the Catholick and Apoſtolical Church, within the laſt Age of one hundred

2 *Cor.* 5.
Pſalm 68.
Hebr. 12.
Iſaiah 35.
1 *Tim.* 1.
Joel 2.

years paſt did with one mind and heart celebrate this holy year of Jubilee: for the eternal ſalvation of whoſe ſouls, we would gladly and willingly ſpill our blood and give our lives. Wherefore you who are obedient Children and Catholick, and beloved of God and us, *Venite, & Aſcendite ad locum quem elegit Dominus.* Come unto this ſpiritual *Jeruſalem* and to this holy Mount of *Sion*, not according to the Letter, but Allegorically and by ſpiritual underſtanding; becauſe that from this place, the holy Light of Evangelical Truth hath from the firſt beginning of the Primitive Church been diffuſed through all Nations. This is that happy City, whoſe Faith the Apoſtle praiſes and commends in theſe words: *I thank my God through Jeſus Chriſt for you all, that your Faith is ſpoken of throughout the whole World.* This is the City where the Chief of the Apoſtles *Peter* and *Paul*, did vent their Doctrine with the effuſion of their blood; that *Rome* being the ſacred Seat of St. *Peter*, might become the capital City of the World, the Mother of all the Faithful, and the Majeſty of all the other Churches. Here is the Rock of Faith placed, and from hence ſprings the Fountain of the Prieſtly Unity; from hence are derived the clear ſtreams of the pureſt Doctrine; here are found the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, with full power to bind and looſe: And laſtly, Here is conſerved the Treaſure of Indulgences which ſhall never fail, of which the *Roman* High Prieſt is the principal keeper and diſpenſer. And though he doth diſpenſe ſome part hereof every year, as occaſion doth require, yet more eſpecially in this Holy year of Jubilee, a greater affluence thereof is diſperſed, when according to the ſolemnity of the moſt antient Churches of *Rome*, when the gates are opened by the pious and liberal hands: that ſo entering into the preſence of God with joy, and having caſt off from their ſhoulders the yoke of ſin and the tyranny of the Enemy, you may be reconciled unto God by means of the Sacrament; and therefore come you as true Children, Heirs of Heaven, and Poſſeſſors of Paradiſe.

Deut. 26.

Rom. 1. 8.

Given at *Rome* near St. *Peters*, in the year of our Lords Incarnation, 1599. *June* 18. in the 8th year of our Pontificate.

The Copy of this Letter being ſent to all Chriſtian Princes in communion with the Court of *Rome*, the Pope buſily employed himſelf in making preparations and proviſions for entertainment of Pilgrims, who in the following year of Jubilee crouded in thoſe numbers to gain the Indulgences and Pardons, as of Men and Women the account made, amounted unto three Millions of Perſons.

But the Pope was not ſo buſily employed in his preparations for the Jubilee, but that he attended to the deciſion of the Controverſie of the Marquiſat of *Saluces*, which (as we have ſaid) was at the late Treaty at *Vervins*, put into his hands and power to be concluded and determined in the ſpace of one year: In order unto which, the Preſident *Bruſlard* was diſpatched to *Rome* in behalf of the *French* King, and the Count *d' Archonas* of the Duke of *Savoy*, and both met there about the beginning of this year 1599. the Cauſe being pleaded before the Pope, both Parties preſſed the Arguments ſo home in favour of the right of their reſpective matters, that the Pope eſteeming the Point difficult to be decided, required ſome longer time before he would undertake to paſs his judgment: and in the interim propoſed, that the Marquiſat ſhould remain in his hands as a Depoſitary, and an indifferent perſon between both Parties. And though neither the King nor the Duke were well pleaſed with theſe delatory proceedings, yet the King was contented to allow two Months for ſuch determination; but the Duke, who had been poſſeſſed by the ſuggeſtions of his Miniſter at *Rome*, that the Pope required to be the Depoſitary, with deſign to beſtow the Marquiſat on one of his Nephews, conceived ſuch a jealouſie of the Pope's intentions, that he began to decline the Umpirage; which when the Pope underſtood, he with great Indignation refuſed to interpoſe farther, reſolving neither to meddle with the Arbitration, nor the Depoſite. The King who knew well, in what manner to do right unto himſelf by his Sword, was not much concerned for the rejection which the Pope had made of the Arbitration: and the Duke being contented to have his Cauſe paſs by other formalities than that of the Conſiſtory, judged his right more ſecure and more eaſily convincing by a perſonal Treaty with the King himſelf; which matter being now taken out of the hand of the Pope, we leave to the temporal determination of theſe Princes, and proceed to other matters more agreeable to this Hiſtory.

Henry IV. of *France* being in good favour and correſpondence with *Clement* VIII. treated with him about obtaining a Divorce, or rather a diſſolution of Marriage between him and *Margaret* Dutcheſs of *Valois*; to which this Pope might perhaps be more inclinable and eaſie on ſome Reflections he made on the ill conſequences which the delays of the like Divorce to *Henry* VIII. of *England*, produced to the Papal Power. The Cardinal *d' Oſſac*, with the Preſident Monſieur *de Silery*, having Orders to proſecute this matter in the Court of *Rome*, repreſented to the Pope the ſtate of the marriage with Queen *Margaret*, and that though the King their Maſter had ever ſince his converſion to the Catholick Religion, entertained reverend and obedient thoughts towards the Papal See, and might on ſcore of being the eldeſt Son of the Church expect more than ordinary favours, yet on conſideration of the Nullity of this Marriage, he deſired nothing more than common Juſtice. The Pope who was very deſirous to favour and oblige the King, referred the diſquiſition and examination of the Marriage to the Cardinal *Joyeuſe*, the Biſhop of *Modena*, who was Nuntio for the Pope in *France*, and the Arch-biſhop of *Arles*, whom he delegated to conſider of thoſe reaſons which were offered to invalidate the legality of the Marriage. In the mean time *Henry* treating a Contract of Marriage with his Miſtris *Gabriele d' Eſtrees*, God diſpoſed otherwiſe of that intention; and the Delegates who were willing to comply with the deſires of the King, declared the Marriage Null, having been in the third degree of conſanguinity, by which both parties were ſet at liberty and put in the ſame eſtate and condition as before their Matrimony. Of which the King having received Information from his Ambaſſadour Monſieur *de Sillery*, then reſiding at *Rome*, he immediately diſpatched the *Sieur d' Alincourt* Governour of *Pontois*, to render his humble thanks to the Pope for his obliging determination, and to demand his Counſel concerning the Alliance which he intended to make with the Houſe *de Medicis*, having placed his affections on the Princeſs *Mary* Niece to the Grand Duke of *Florence*. The *Sieur de Sillery* taking Poſt upon this Errand arrived at *Rome* the 6th of *February* being *Aſh-wedneſday* in the year 1600. and the *An* 1600.

the year of Jubilee, which made the *Lent* the more Solemn and devout than of common years: for it was commanded that Prayers of forty hours continuance ſhould be made in the Churches of the *Jeſuits*: the Pope himſelf with the Colledg of Cardinals began the firſt hour, and every hour afterwards was employed in Prayers, and ended with an Exhortation made by ſome Cardinal or Learned Prelate.

To gain the Indulgences of this Jubilee, though many Perſonages of great quality did reſort to *Rome*, yet none was of higher dignity than the Duke of *de Bar*, who Incognito and with a ſmall train and equipage, travelled to *Rome* to gain a Diſpenſation for his Marriage, which he had celebrated between himſelf and the Princeſs *Catharine*, the Onely Siſter of the *French* King: for having performed the ſame within the degrees of conſanguinity, forbidden by the Church, the Biſhop of *Lorain* and others had refuſed to admit him to the Sacrament and Communion of the Church. Thus we ſee, whileſt the King ſues for a Divorce, the Duke deſires a confirmation and diſpenſation of his Marriage, and both were granted, though the ſame reaſons and conſiderations were in both caſes; the ſame ground which might diſſolve the one, might null the other, and the ſame ſalve might ſerve for both Cures: In ſhort, The Duke *de Bar* applyed himſelf with all the humility and ſubmiſſion imaginable to the Papal Chair, and carrying with him the King's Recommendatory Letters to the Cardinals *Aldobrandino*, *Oſſac*, and his Ambaſſadour, he obtained as much favour in his Cauſe as he could expect or deſire.

On the other ſide, in purſuance of the late Divorce, the *Sieurs de Sillery* and *Alincourt* went to *Florence* to treat a new Marriage between the King and the Princeſs *Mary de Medicis*. As the Duke of *Florence* received the honour of this Match with great readineſs, it being an addition to the grandeur of his Houſe; ſo the Pope to forward the ſame, contributed on his part a hundred thouſand Crowns with many Jewels by way of Dowry or Portion, which was agreed to be ſix hundred thouſand Crowns in ready Money. So ſoon as the Articles were ſigned, the Duke of *Florence* publiſhed the intended Marriage; and the King to bring it to a conſummation, being then at *Lions* in order to his Journey to *Grenoble*, deputed *Bellegarde* his Grand *Eſcuyer* with Commiſſion to the Grand Duke, to eſpouſe *Mary de Medicis* in his Name: and the Pope to have a farther hand in this work, deputed his Nephew Cardinal *Aldobrandino* to be his Legat at *Florence* and to be preſent at the Nuptials, which he accordingly performed, and beſtowed the Benediction in the Pope's Name.

The Cardinal having performed this piece of ſervice, haſtned away by order of the Pope to *Tortona*, there to find the Duke, and ſtipulate with him the conditions of a firm Peace; for the King had already commenced a War, and taken ſeveral places both in *Savoy* and *Breſſe*. The Cardinal repreſenting before the Duke the danger and inequality of a War with *France*, perſwaded him to reſign his pretenſions and intereſt to the Marquiſat of *Saluces*; and having obtained this promiſe, he proceeded to *Lions*, where managing this Affair with the King, a Peace was concluded and publiſhed in the year 1601. on Conditions, that the Duke ſhould quit all claim to the Marquiſat of *Saluces*, in exchange of *Breſſe* and ſome other Countries.

In the mean time the Queen embarqued at *Ligorne* with ſeventeen Gallies, arrived happily at *Marſeille*, and thence was conducted with great honour and pomp to *Lions*, where meeting with the King the marriage was conſummated, and the Nuptial Benediction given by Cardinal *Aldobrandino* the Pope's Legat before the great Altar of St. *John*'s Church in the City of *Lions*. All theſe kindneſſes paſſed between the Pope and the King; the Pope reſolved to make uſe of this good Correſpondence to intercede in behalf of the *Jeſuits*, whoſe whole Order having for certain reaſons been baniſhed, and exterminated from the Dominions of *France*, was now at the inſtance and deſire of the King reſtored again under certain Conditions to their poſſeſſions and habitations in that Kingdom.

And in regard the Emperor was at the ſame time hardly preſſed by the *Turk*; the Pope as at other times furniſhed him with a hundred thouſand Crowns, which was a ſeaſonable Recruit and ſupply in thoſe exegencies of the Empire.

And now it was about the year 1603. that *Elizabeth* Queen of *England* dying, and *James* VI. King of *Scotland* ſucceeding to the Crown, *An.* 1603. when the Pope conceived great hopes and expectations, that by means of this King, (whom he fancied to be a favourer of the *Roman* Church) the Kingdoms of Great *Britain* would ſubmit unto and acknowledg the Papal Authority; but what ground or reaſons there were for ſuch an Opinion, or why the *Roman* Catholicks in *England* had conceived, and (for forty years together) had framed ſuch a fancy to themſelves, no rational account can be given: but this conceit ſoon vaniſhing by the contrary effects which appeared, the Papiſts of *England* made two Remonſtrances to the new King in favour of their Religion, deſiring at leaſt that a liberty of Conſcience might be granted to them; but theſe had no more effect, then the Declaration which the Proteſtants made the ſame year in favour of their Religion in *France*.

The Cardinals *Bonviſi* and *Oſſac* dying this year at *Rome*, *Henry* the *An.* 1604. *French* King did greatly urge the Pope for a promotion of Cardinals, recommending ſeveral of his own Creatures and Friends to that Dignity: And though the Pope was very deſirous to have reduced the Order of Cardinals to their ancient number, yet being overcome by the inſtances of ſome Friends, he beſtowed a Cardinals Cap on the Son of one of his Nephews, being a Youth of about fourteen or fifteen years of age; and ſuffering himſelf to be prevailed with by the paſſion of Princes, he created in this very year at leaſt eighteen Cardinals, amongſt which there were not above two *French* and two *Spaniards*. The firſt which was found in this Liſt was *Serafim Olivari* Patriarch of *Alexandria*, who was originally of *Italian* extract, but born at *Lions*, and proved to be a Prelat of Incomparable parts and Learning, being always educated amongſt Men and buſineſs; the Biſhop of *Eureux* was another promoted to this Dignity, which were the two *French*-Men, who received this honour by the recommendations of their King: all the others were *Italians*, unleſs the Biſhop of *Cracovia* who was a *Polander*, and *Madrutio* Biſhop of *Trent*, who was a *German*, and two *Spaniards*. Cardinal *Aldobrandino* preferred alſo his Secretary *Erminio* to this honour; and the Pope himſelf forced *Anſelme Marzat* a *Capucin* to accept the red Hat; which he had often refuſed, proteſting that ſuch preferments were againſt

gainſt the Rules, and a violation to the Orders of St. *Francis*, but the expreſs commandment of the Pope prevailing; he unwillingly (or at leaſt ſeemed ſo) from the meer conſideration of obedience, ſubmitted to the promotion.

About this time three Queſtions were moved, and diſcuſſed at *Rome*, the firſt was managed by a notable Diſputant and a great Sophiſter; his Poſition was this: That it was not an eſſential, or a fundamental point of Faith, to believe that *Clement* VIII. was the true and lawful Succeſſor of St. *Peter*: it was a bold Theſis for that time and place; for he was impriſoned for his impertinence, and it had coſt him dearer, had not the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour interceded for him. Another publiſhed an Opinion, That Confeſſions wrote in Letters and ſent by the Poſt, were as available, as thoſe which were whiſpered into the Ear of the Prieſt. A third was about Grace and Free-will, in ſuch manner as held and maintained by *Pelagius*; which latter was debated in the preſence of the Pope and Cardinals, but remained without determination, by reaſon of more important matters which at that time lay before the Conſiſtory.

For then the Canonizing of *Ignatius Loyola* for a Saint, was firſt propounded: alſo the Deputies of the Clergy of the City of *Milan* preſented themſelves before the Pope and Cardinals, deſiring that their antient Arch-biſhop *Charles Borromeo* might be canonized. Upon theſe two motions the Pope conſtituted a certain Committee of Cardinals to enquire into the ſanctity of the Lives, and of the Miracles which were done at the Invocation of the Names, and at the Sepulchres, of theſe Saints.

After which an Ambaſſadour was introduced into the Conſiſtory from the Emperor, repreſenting the many occaſions of advantage which were loſt in *Hungary* for want of Money to carry on the War; to which the Pope gave Anſwer, That his Coffers at the preſent were empty, but howſoever he would lay a Tax of decimation on the Clergy, whereby to ſupply the urgencies of the Emperor againſt the common Enemy.

Thus did this Pope (who in reality merited the name of a good Man) employ his whole time in the Conſiſtory, either deſigning to make peace between Chriſtian Princes, or to carry on a War againſt the *Turk*, who is the common Enemy of Chriſtians; and in theſe good works of Piety he inceſſantly laboured, being frequently in conſultation concerning the temporal and ſpirtual Affairs in the Church; in diſcharge of which, his fortune was to be aſſiſted with many wiſe and able Cardinals, ſuch as *Joyeuſe*, *Seraſim*, *Olivari*, and *Perron*, and other Counſellours; who amongſt ſeveral other matters adviſed him to take a Guard of *Corſi*, or Men of the Iſle of *Corſica*, who being quartered in ſeveral parts of the City, might be ready to ſuppreſs the *Banditi* who began again to be troubleſom and to infeſt *Rome*, as well as other parts of *Italy*; from which time until the reign of *Alexander* VII. this Guard was maintained, when upon ſome Affronts and violences offered to the *French* Ambaſſadour, they were diſbanded and diſmiſſed, never afterwards to appear in *Rome*.

An. 1605. The Arch-biſhoprick of *Ravenna* in this year 1605. becoming vacant, the Pope beſtowed it on his Nephew Cardinal *Aldobrandino*, who was no ſooner received into that City with ſuch pomp and ſolemnity, as became the dignity of that Epiſcopal See, than news arrived of the Pope's indiſpoſition, which ſpeedily poſted the Cardinal back to *Rome*; for the Pope falling ill on the 10th of *February*, his Sickneſs ſtill increaſed notwithſtanding all the Remedies and care which *Aldobrandino* and his Phyſitians could uſe : for after he had ſat in the Papal Chair for the ſpace of thirteen years one month and three days, he expired his laſt breath on the third of *March*, in the ſixty ninth year of his Age, and was interred in St. *Peter's* Church, and the Sea was vacant twenty nine days. *An.* 1605.

LEO XI.

CLEMENT the Eighth having departed this Life, and his Funeral Obſequies being performed, the Cardinals to the number of ſixty one, entered the *Conclave* on the 14th of *March*, and having according to the accuſtomed manner ſung the Hymn of *Veni Creator*, and celebrated the Maſs of *Spiritus Sanctus*, and every Cardinal having received the Sacrament from the hand of the Dean of the *Conclave*, they immediately made the firſt Scrutiny, whereby it might appear unto whom the plurality of Votes was moſt probable to incline; but at firſt the *Conclave* was ſo divided, that no perſon had any conſiderable number of Votes beſtowed on him; for *Bellarmine*, who had the moſt, accounted but eleven, and *Baronius* but eight, and all others an inferiour number: at length after ſeveral other Scrutinies, *Baronius* by the aſſiſtance of Cardinal *Aldobrandino*, arrived to thirty, thirty one, thirty two, and thirty ſeven, but ſtill wanting ſome few more to make the number ariſe unto two thirds of the *Conclave*, the Election was imperfect: nor could he ariſe higher, by reaſon that the *Spaniſh* faction oppoſed him out of a pique and exception they had taken againſt him, for what he had wrote in the 11th Tome of his *Eccleſiaſtical Annals*, diſproving the title of the King of *Spain* to the Kingdom of *Sicily*. Whereupon Cardinal *Joyeuſe* concurring with *Aldobrandino*, (without whom nothing was to be done in the *Conclave*) nominated *Alexander de Medicis*; who was no ſooner propoſed then a ſtrange concurrence, and union appeared in the minds of all the Cardinals towards him, ſo that he was as it were elected by an unanimous conſent, and ſaluted Pope on the firſt of *April* 1605. calling himſelf by the name of *Leo* XI. He was then of the age of ſeventy years, or thereabouts, of a chearful and ſanguine Aſpect, grave in his Speech and deportment, and of a ſtrong and vigorous Complexion, only he ſomtimes was ſubject to pains of the Cholick; he was a great lover of the *Virtuoſi* and Learned Men, and zealous for the intereſt of the Church.

After his Election, he ſeemed not in the leaſt manner altered or tranſported, conſerving ſtill a Majeſty becoming the gravity and ſeriouſneſs of the Papal Chair unto which he was promoted. Nor did he aſcend unto this height on a ſudden, but by degrees and previous diſpoſitions; for beſides the advantages of his birth being the Son of *Octaviano de Medicis*, Couſin of *Coſmo*, Great Duke of *Tuſcany*, he had exerciſed many honourable and important Offices: for in the firſt place he had been Arch-biſhop of *Florence*, and *Francis* the Great Duke of *Florence* had ſent him his Ambaſſadour at *Rome*. *Gregory* XIII. created him Cardinal under the Title of St. *John* and St. *Paul*; and the 13th of *December* 1593. *Clement* VIII. deputed him his Legat to *Henry* IV. King of *France* and *Navarre*; in which Office he was a good Inſtrument in making the Peace between this *Henry* and *Philip* II. King of *Spain*, in recompence of which, and to evidence the reſpect he had for him, King *Henry* preſented him with a Jewel of ten thouſand Crowns: and finally being choſen Pope to the general ſatisfaction of all *Rome*, he was on the 2d. of *April* carried with the uſual pomp to the Church of St. *Peters*, where *Te Deum* was ſolemnly ſang; after which the people of *Rome* coming to ſalute him, he promiſed to abate their Subſidies and Taxes, to adorn the City, to treat the Nobility with favour and reſpect, and conſerve and maintain the privilidges of all People reſpectively according to their qualities and conditions.

On the 10th of *April* being *Eaſter-day*, he was ſolemnly Crowned, but the day of Proceſſion to St. *John de Lateran* where the Pope takes the poſſeſſion was deferred until the ſeventeenth inſtant, when the *Florentines*, and the ſeveral Orders of the City did endeavour to outvy each other in ſuch demonſtrations as might evidence the ſatisfation and contentment they received by this Election: amongſt which the *Florentines* erected a Triumphal Arch with this Inſcription on the one ſide thereof:

> *Leoni* XI. *Florentino* P. O. M. *Florentini ad declarandum fidem, letitiam, & animi alacritatem.*

And on the other ſide:

> *Dignus eſt Leo in virtute Agni accipere librum, & ſolvere ſeptem ſignacula ejus.*

But this joy and contentment did not continue long, for the Pope being wearied with the tedious length of theſe Ceremonies, and overheated with the Weather and weight of his Veſtments, took an extream cold which turned to a Fever, which encreaſing daily on him, he expired his laſt breath on the 25th day after his Election, and in the ſeventieth year of his age; the ſame Evening his Body was carried to the Chappel of *Sixtus*, and the next day, being the 28th of *April*, to the Church of St. *Peters*, where according to the uſual cuſtom great numbers of people thronged to kiſs his feet. The ſadneſs at *Rome* for this ſudden accident was certainly very great; but none had ſo much reaſon to lament this loſs, as his own Family, who had not time to receive the honours deſigned for them, and particularly his great Nephew *Octaviano*, on whom he intended to beſtow his own Cardinals Hat. After which the Papal Sea was vacant for nineteen days.

PAUL V.

LEO the Eleventh being deceaſed, the ſame Cardinals who had elected the preceding Pope to the number of ſixty one, entered the *Conclave* on the 8th of *May*, where the day following the firſt Scrutiny was made; but without effect, by reaſon of the diverſity of Votes and diviſions amongſt the Cardinals. *Sauli* was then propoſed, but excluded: *Bellarmine* was then next, who in all probability might have carried the Prize, had not the Scrutiny been deferred after the Pratica was made for him. *Camerino* and *Clemente*, were alſo put to the Votes, but excluded; only Cardinal *Toſco* had gained ſo great a Party, being aſſiſted by *Aldobrandino*, *Montalto* and others of the beſt Intereſt, that his Election had certainly been perfected, had not *Baronius* and *Farugio* croſſed the matter, which cauſed a loud cry for *Baronius* but by a like accident of contradiction, as well *Baronius* as *Toſco* was excluded: at length after diverſity of Succeſſes, Cardinal *Borgheſe* being nominated, ſuch unanimous conſent appeared in all the *Conclave*, that every one ſeemed to aſſent, having no other objection againſt him, than the ſmall number of his years, having ſcarce attained to the age of fifty three, but that ſcruple not availing, he was conducted to the Chappel of *Paolin*, where he was elected, and having veſted himſelf in his Pontifical garments, was worſhiped as Pope on the 16th of *May*, which being performed, he took on himſelf the name of *Paul.* V.

This *Camillo*, for ſo was his Chriſtian Name, was born at *Rome*, his Father was *Antonio Borgheſe* of *Siena*, but his Mother was a *Roman* Lady. His Studies were chiefly in the Civil Law, in which having taken his degree of Doctor, he became ſo famous, that he was made Referendary both of one and the other Signet. In the year 1588. he was conſtituted Vice Legat of *Bologna*. *Gregory* IV. made him Auditor of the Chamber, which is an Office that requires great dexterity and experience in Affairs. *Clement* VIII. created him Cardinal, with the title of St. *Chruſogono*, and afterwards made him his Vicar, which is one of the four principal Dignities of *Rome*.

In this manner he ſtill advanced in greatneſs & honour, untill he came to the height of the Papal Dignity, ſeeming to have ariſen thereunto rather by the force of his own merits and Virtue, than by fortune or favour, and recommendation of Friend or Patrons. On the 29th of *May* being *Whitſunday* he was Crowned with all the uſual Ceremonies; and then he beſtowed freely his general Indulgences, exhorting all People to pray for the encreaſe of God's Church, the tranquility and peace of the Chriſtian State, and extirpation of Hereſie He abated or took off ſome of the Taxes which lay moſt heavy on the People, moderated the price of Proviſions at *Rome*, and contrived a great abundance of all things neceſſary or convenient for humane life. And to give ſome indication to the World of his magnificence and generous Mind, he built a Chappel in the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore*, juſt oppoſite to that of *Sixtus* V.

which he enriched and adorned with Porphiry and Marble, and endowed afterwards with a conſiderable Revenue.

Paul V. being thus ſetled in the Papal Chair, and inveſted with all the Power attendant on that ſupream degree, made it the ſcope and chief end of all his deſigns and Councel, to ſcrue up the Eccleſiaſtical Authority to the ſublime pitch of greatneſs, or (to uſe his own words) to reſtore *it to that State from which his Predeceſſours, and particularly* Clement VIII. *had by their remiſſneſs, or want of care, ſuffered it to elapſe and decay*. And indeed his own natural diſpoſition, and the courſe of his life ſeemed to have fitted him for ſuch a work as this; for having been educated a Lawyer, and made Auditor of the Chamber, whoſe title is, *Sententiarum, & cenſurarum intus, & extra latarum univerſalis Executor*, he made ſuch uſe of his Trade, that all the Popes his Predeceſſours, for above fifty years before, had not thundred out ſo many Briefs, Monitories and Excommunications, as he had done in the ſpace only of five years: In order to this deſign of advancing the Eccleſiaſtical Power, (to which all his thoughts were applyed) he conſtituted a new Congregation at *Rome*, whoſe buſineſs it was to contrive ways and means to amplifie and enlarge the Authority and Dominion of the Church: and all the Nuntios or Miniſters which he ſent to Chriſtian Princes, were all prepared and compoſed of the ſame humour, having ſpecial Inſtructions to cry up the Vertue and ſacred force of the Eccleſiaſtical Authority; amongſt theſe Champions none was more zelous than *Oratio Mathei* Biſhop of *Gierace*, whom the Pope had made his Nuntio at *Venice* where one day making a Speech before the *Doge* and Council; he had the impertinence, or rather the impudence to ſay, *That Alms-deeds, and other works of Charity and Piety, and frequent Communion in the Holy Sacrament, and the moſt ſublime works of Chriſtian devotion,* ad nihilum valent, *were all nothing, unleſs they were attended with reſpect and favour to the Eccleſiaſtical liberty and Authority.* To which he added: *That the Pope had commanded him to perſiſt in this Opinion to the death, and accordingly he was reſolved to endure martyrdom, rather then be remiſs or cold in advancement of the Papal Authority.* And theſe words he delivered with ſuch arrogance and ſupercilious affectation, that he ſeemed to ſay, I am Pope in this place, and expect no Reply or Conteſt, but onely Obedience.

Howſoever at firſt for ſeveral Months this deſign was not proſecuted with ſuch heat as the importance of the matter did require; for we muſt allow ſome abatement and allay for the joy and ſatisfaction which the Pope would take within himſelf for his late Atchievements: And likewiſe upon farther thoughts, he judged it not convenient to erect the Congregation he deſigned; for that it would be a means to lay open and diſcover his contrivances, and make Princes more jealous: a proof whereof was given by the Congregation which was conſtituted for management of the Affairs of *England*; which ſerved onely to give better light and aim to King *James* then reigning, and to render him more watchful and obſerving over all the actions and deſigns of the Papiſts in *England*. And moreover, the Pope having paſſed ſome few days of joy after his Inauguration, was poſſeſſed with a melancholy cauſed by an hypocondriacal Fancy, that he ſhould ſpeedily depart this life, which gave ſome retardment for a while to the heat of his actions: and indeed

deed the ground of his apprehenſion proceeded from a common report about *Rome*, that the Images of the Virgin of *Subiaco* had ſweated, which commonly fore-runs the death of Popes: alſo a *Dutch* Aſtrologer had perdicted, that *Clement* VIII. ſhould die in *March*, and that after him *Leo* and *Paul* ſhould ſucceed, and both Reign for a ſhort time. The thoughts hereof ſo diſturbed and perplexed his mind, that for the ſpace of five Months, he could not apply himſelf to any buſineſs of moment; until in the Month of *September* certain of his Friends being deſirous to cure this melancholy, aſſembled all the Aſtrologers and Diviners together in the Houſe of the Pope's Brothers, where having had a Conſultation, they all concluded, that there had been certain black and unhappy Influences which threatned the life of the Pope, but being now paſt & blown over, there remained nothing but chearful and auſpitious Omens, which promiſed long life and happineſs, and great ſucceſſes unto him.

Thus being relieved of his Melancholy, his thoughts were at liberty to reaſſume the deſign to advance the Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction; in order to which his firſt beginning was to perſwade the King, that the Council of *Trent* might be received in *France*. In *Spain* he laboured to gain an exemption for the *Jeſuites*, that they might be freed from payment of their Tenths. At *Naples* he endeavoured to have had the Marqueſs of *Morcone* called the Regent of *Ponte*, ſent to *Rome*, for condemning a Book-ſeller to the Gallies, for printing libellous Phamphlets the which he pretending to belong to the Inquiſition, was an encroachment on the Eccleſiaſtical Power, and therefore merited the Cenſure, and puniſhment of the Church. He alſo took away certain Rents and Benefices belonging to the Religious Order of *Malta*, and conferred them on Cardinal *Borgheſe*, who was his Nephew by the Siſters ſide, called *Scipio*, of the Family of *Caffarelli*, a youth of twenty three years of age. But theſe, and other matters of this nature made no great noiſe, and only ſerved to open the gate or way to particulars of greater importance, the which ſoon afterwards happened in two conſiderable Inſtances. The firſt related to the Republick of *Luca*, which obſerving that many of their Citizens having profeſſed the Proteſtant Religion were retired from their Habitations and Countrey, had in the times of former Popes forbidden and interdicted them from all Commerce or Correſpondence with their fellow-Citizens: the which Act though well approved by the Pope to be in it ſelf both pious and commendable, yet he pretended that ſuch Act of Interdiction belonged to the Eccleſiaſtical, and not to the Civil Power; and therefore required that the ſame ſhould be cancelled and made void, that ſo place and room might be opened for the Cenſure of the Church.

The ſecond related to the City of *Genoua*, where at the *Jeſuits* Colledg an Oratory or Chappel was ſet up for Chriſtian exerciſes, and here the Citizens of this Congregation agreed amongſt themſelves to favour none with their Votes at the Election of Magiſtrates, but ſuch as were entered and enrolled in this Confraternity. This reſolution being made known to the Supream Rulers of the City, they immediately diſſolved the Congregation, not knowing what might be the ill effects and conſequences of ſuch Sedition. This and other matters of like nature were ill reſented by the Pope, as enchroachments on the Eccleſiaſtical liberty;

wherefore he commanded that ſuch Orders be reverſed, and if not, then he threatned them with Cenſures and Excommunications.

But the Pope began to deal more roundly with the State of *Venice*; for being very urgent with them to aſſiſt the Emperor with Money towards his Wars againſt the *Turks* in *Hungary*, he exacted it in ſuch a manner, as Kings and Emperors require contributions from their Subjects; which though the *Venetians* could not digeſt without ſecret reſentments, yet their Anſwer was with much modeſty: *That though the Senate would gladly contribute towards a War againſt the Turk, yet being at high charge and expence to conſerve their own State, and ſecure themſelves againſt thoſe fears and jealouſies which were given them by their Neighbours, they could not apply their nerves and ſinews of War to any deſign, but what tended to their own ſecurity at home.* This Anſwer ſeemed very ſtrange to the Pope, who had learned from the doctrine of the modern Caſuiſts, That Popes might lay any Tax or Impoſition on Chriſtian Princes, and require from them whatſoever they judged for the common good and welfare of Chriſtendom. But the Pope did not think this ground to have ſufficient foundation, on which to build and commence a quarrel, but rather on the matters which did more neerly relate to the Intereſt of the Papal See.

It was not long before an occaſion of this nature offered it ſelf by means of one *Scipio Saraceno*, a Prebend of *Vicenza*, who had contemptuouſly torn off and broken the Seals which the Magiſtrates had fixed on the Epiſcopal Chancery, during the vacancy of that Office: and likewiſe finding that he could not debauch a Lady of known Vertue, whom he tempted in the Churches and Streets, and in all places where he could have any convenience to meet her; he became ſo enraged with luſt and malice, that he beſmeared with filthineſs and tar, the Gate and front of her Houſe; which being a high affront and diſgrace to the Lady, ſhe with the advice of her Friends cited this inſolent Prebend beforce the Court of Juſtice at *Venice*, who as readily and willingly appeared, being encouraged and bolſtred up by the Biſhop of *Citta Nuova*, a Perſon of great eſteem in *Venice*, and one who was Director of the Affairs of all the Nuntios and Papal Miniſters at that place. The Nuntio who was deſirous to obtain a licentious exemption of all Prieſts from the Secular Power, embraced the cauſe of the Prebendary with all readineſs imaginable, and immediately diſpatched the news hereof to the Pope, and to the Biſhop of *Vicenza*, who was then at *Rome*; where after divers Conſultations, it was reſolved as an eſſential Point, relating to the Eccleſiaſtical liberty, that the Cauſe of the Prebend ſhould be maintained and defended: and therefore the Pope who was glad of this occaſion, to aſſert the Authority and Rites of the Churches, ſtormed and raved with the *Venetian* Ambaſſadour, telling him, that he would not endure or ſuffer the impriſonment of an Eccleſiaſtical Perſon, by the Precepts of a Secular Tribunal; nor would he admit that a Judg of temporal matters ſhould take cogniſance of any Cauſe, wherein a Prieſt or Churchman was concerned. Of all which, the Ambaſſadour gave advice to the Senate.

The Pope at another Audience complained to the ſaid Ambaſſadour, that the Senate of *Venice* had ſince the death of *Clement* VIII. made a Statute of *Mortmain*, whereby Lay-perſons were forbidden and reſtrained from bequeathing or beſtowing their Eſtates on the Church; which Statute though it were founded on an old Law, yet the new one was more reſtrictive: but both of them being againſt the antient Cannons, Councils, and Imperial Laws, were in themſelves void and null, being ſcandalous and impious, in that they made the ſtate and condition of Churchmen worſe then that of infamous perſons; and therefore thoſe who made theſe Laws did incur the Cenſures of the Church: in the like terms the Nuntio at *Venice* explained the mind of the Pope unto the Senate: and when the Ambaſſadours arrived at *Rome* to congratulate the Pope for his exaltation to that dignity, he could not refrain even before the Ceremony was ended, to make his reſentments and complaints of thoſe Laws, made in derogation of the rites and immunities belonging to the Church. And thus we have laid down the true ſtate of the quarrel between the Pope and the *Venetians*: to which we ſhall add a third point, namely a Law made at *Venice* in the year *1603*. prohibiting the building of Churches without conſent and licenſe for it obtained from the Senate; which the Pope termed a piece of Hereſie.

Theſe being the three points in Controverſie, the Senate for anſwer thereunto commanded their Ambaſſadour to repreſent in their name unto his Holineſs; That the juſt Right and Title they had to judg Eccleſiaſtical Perſons in Secular Cauſes was founded in the natural Power of the Supream Prince, and confirmed by an uninterrupted courſe of a thouſand years, the which may be proved by the Pontifical Briefs extant in their publick *Archives*, or Records. That the Law of *Mort-main*, or Statute reſtraining Laymen from alienation of their Eſtates to the Church was not only enacted at *Venice*, or peculiar to the Cities under that Metropolis, but exerciſed in other Chriſtian Kingdoms and States; and that this Law was more conducing to the welfare of *Venice*, than to any other People; being that which could onely conſerve its Forces entire againſt the common Enemy of Chriſtendom, which would otherwiſe be enfeebled by thoſe daily Legacies and Endowments which were bequeathed and conferred on the Church.

The Pope was ſo netled with this way of reaſoning, that he ſat all the time uneaſie in his Seat, ſhrugging his ſhoulders and turning his head, which intimated the unquietneſs of his mind. At length he replyed, That thoſe arguments were invalid, and of no force: for that there was no foundation to be made on the accuſtomed courſe of their Judicature, which was ſo much the worſe, by how much the more they pretended Antiquity. And as to the Briefs, there was no authentick Regiſter or Record of them, but what was found at *Rome*, and that the others were forged Copies, and cheats impoſed on the Clergy. And as to their Acts and Ordinances, he was ſo well acquainted and verſed in them, ſince the time of his youthful Studies; and that having paſſed the Offices of Vice-Legat, Auditor of the Chamber, and Vicar of the Pope, he was ſufficiently aſſured, that the Law could not ſtand, and that the old Act made in the year *1536*. which takes from the Laiety a power of diſpoſing of their own private Eſtates, was in it ſelf void, and of no force, and a tyrannical impoſition on the Subject. That the Senate themſelves were ſo ſenſible of this injurious Law, that they were aſhamed to iſſue forth any Copies of it: and if in caſe a Law of this nature were found in any other Countrey, it was eſtabliſhed by the Authority and with the concurrence of the Popes; and then he concluded, that he was reſolved not to make a long work of it, for that in caſe he were not obeyed, he would make uſe of ſuch Remedies as he thought convenient, being ſo poſitive in this matter, and zealous for the Church, that he was ready to ſpill his blood in this righteous Cauſe, and in the defence thereof; That in caſe it were neceſſary to give a ſtop to the alienation of Lands, or a reſtraint of building Churches, he would always have been ready to have followed the ſentiments of the State, and to have concurred in juſt cauſes with the deſires of the Secular Council: but as to the point of drawing the Clergy to the Secular Tribunals, he would never admit that ſuch as were his Subjects, ſhould be liable to the ſentence of another Juriſdiction; this in fine was his reſolution on the three foregoing Caſes, in which he was reſolved to be obeyed, and make uſe of that Power which God had given him over all things, and over all Princes to depoſe them, and could command Legions of Angels to come to his aid and aſſiſtance.

The Senate having received theſe Informations from their Ambaſſadour, did well weigh and conſider the anger, and furious diſpleaſure of the Pope on the one ſide; and the publick liberty and the neceſſity of upholding their Government on the other: and having put both theſe conſiderations into the ballance, they returned this anſwer to the Pope's Nuntio, and wrote alſo to their Ambaſſadour at *Rome* to this effect. That they could neither releaſe the Priſoners lawfully arreſted, nor repeal or diſpence with thoſe Laws which were juſtly eſtabliſhed, leaſt they ſhould violate that natural liberty which God had beſtowed on their Republick, and which had been conſerved for many hundreds of years by the wiſdom, and with the blood of their Anceſtors. For that to admit ſuch a breach into their Power, would breed ſuch confuſion in their Government, as could not but end in a dangerous Sedition. The which reſolution was ſo unanimous and general, that not one Vote in the Senate was diſſenting, and accordingly it was ſignified to the Nuntio, that ſo they might diſabuſe and take off the Pope from thoſe expectations, which the *Jeſuits* had promiſed, of making a diviſion and Schiſm amongſt the Senators.

But theſe reaſons made little impreſſion in the mind of the Pope, nor did in the leaſt move him from proſecuting the violent courſe he deſigned, and accordingly he ordered two Briefs to be drawn up; one relating to the two Laws, and the other to the two Priſoners; for beſides the Canon or Prebend whom we have formerly mentioned, the Abbot of *Nerveſa* was alſo apprehended by the Secular Juſtice. The Crimes laid to the charge of this Abbot were ſuch, as were flagitious and of a high nature, being accuſed of having exerciſed an unlimited tyranny upon his Neighbours and Tenants; that he had robbed and taken away their goods at the prices he pleaſed to ſet; that he lived in Whoredom, and committed Rapes on the Bodies of vertuous and chaſt Women: and that in order thereunto, he uſed Magical Spells and Enchantments, and compounded ſubtile Poiſons, by which he had deſtroyed his own Brother, who was an *Auguſtine* Frier, and with him his Servant; that by his Poiſons he had macerated the Body of his Father in ſuch manner, as had reduced him to the laſt extreamity of life. That he had committed Inceſt with his own Siſter, and poiſoned her Maid, leaſt his

Crime ſhould be detected by her; beſides many other Murthers and Wickedneſs of the deepeſt dye, of which he was guilty: and this was the pretious fellow, with his Comrade the Canon of *Vicenza*, whom the Pope was ſo inſtant to defend and exempt from the Sentence of the Secular Juſtice.

The Breviates (as we have ſaid) being wrote and Sealed, were directed in this manner, *Marino Grimano Duci, & Reipub. Venetorum*, and then diſpeeded with all ſecrecy by the Pope, to his Nuntio at *Venice*: which when he had done, he called a Conſiſtory of Cardinals, and then firſt publiſhed and made known the whole matter to them, enlarging himſelf with ſuch heat and vehemence on every particular Point, as that he ſeemed impatient of any contradiction, not admitting any debate or conſultation thereupon. The Cardinals not being uſed to this manner of treatment, who according to the antient conſtitution of Conſiſtories, were not only reputed Counſellours, but Parties alſo in all matters of this moment, did murmur at this raſh and precipitate reſolution of the Pope: and having underſtood the reaſons of the Pope on the one ſide, and of the Republick on the other, were divided into various Opinions: The Conſiſtory being ended, the Cardinals *Baronius* and *Perron* uſed many arguments to the Pope in private, perſwading him to deſiſt from ſo difficult and hazardous an Enterpriſe; at leaſt that he ſhould expect a more favourable conjuncture of Affairs, rather than adventure all by a haſty and inconſiderate advice: but the Pope who was fixed on his deſign, became deaf to all Counſels which concurred not with his ſenſe.

The Nuntio having received the Briefs, delivered them on *Chriſtmas* day in the Morning to the Counſellours, at the time when they were aſſembled to hear the high Maſs; but the *Doge Grimani* lying at that time on his Death-bed, and dying the next day, the Senate delayed to open the Briefs, until according to their uſual Methods, they had compleated the election of a new Prince. Of which the Pope having advice, he immediately diſpatched Orders to his Nuntio, commanding him to proteſt againſt the Republick, and againſt the Election, as being void, and invalid, and of no power, whileſt they remained under the Cenſure of Excommunication: with this new device the Pope expected to make a diviſion and confuſion in their Councils; for he meaſuring the conſtitutions of *Venice* at the death of their Prince, with thoſe at *Rome*, during the vacancy of the See, did imagine that ſuch a Bone as this thrown into ſo numerous an Aſſembly, would beget great diſturbances and diverſity of Opinions; but this Government which hath always been firm and conſtant, and which admitted of no *Interregnum*, kept conſtant to their antient Principles, refuſing to give Audience to the Nuntio or any other foreign Repreſentative, unleſs it were to paſs the Offices of Condolance for the death of their Prince.

Thus (as we ſay) this Election admitting of no interruption, the ſame was compleated on the 10th of *January*, 1606. by the unanimous conſent of the Nobles, concurring in the choice of *Leonard Donate*, a Senatour of great eminence and eſteem for the probity of his life, his experience in Government, and knowledge in Learning: beſides his heroick Vertues and qualities which recommended him to all Mankind. After this Election, all the Ambaſſadours from foreign Princes went to congra- *An:* 1606.

tulate with the new *Doge*; only the Pope's Nuntio refrained from this Office; notwithſtanding which the *Doge*, according to the uſual form, wrote to the Pope, giving him advice of his Election; to which the Pope contrary to his former intentions, returned a favourable anſwer, giving his Nuntio Order to paſs the Complement, and in Perſon to congratulate with the *Doge*, for the honour with which he was inveſted.

The firſt thing which after the election of the Prince was tranſacted in the Senate, was the Controverſie between the Pope and the Republick; and in the firſt place the Cavalier *Peter Duodo*, was appointed Ambaſſadour to be diſpeeded to *Rome*. Then the Pope's Briefs were in the next place to be conſidered: the which being opened and read, were found to run almoſt in the ſame ſtile and tenure; one having reference to the Laws, and the other to the Priſoners, the Contents whereof were as followeth.

That whereas for ſome years paſt the Senate had in their publick Councils, tranſacted and eſtabliſhed ſeveral matters againſt the Liberties and Immunities of the Church, and againſt the Canons Councils and Pontifical Conſtitutions: And whereas the Council of the Pragadi *in purſuance of ſuch Laws made by their Predeceſſors, had in the year* 1603. *Ordered and Enacted, That no Churches or Religious Houſes ſhould be Built or Erected, without Licenſe firſt obtained from the Senate: And whereas ſuch Laws being in themſelves void, ought to have been repealed and cancelled; the ſaid Council did not only confirm, but enlarge the ſame, making thoſe Laws which were once reſtrained and limited to the City of* Venice *only, to reach and extend to all parts and places ſubjected to that Dominion, under ſevere forfeitures and penalties to the Offenders; as if both Churches and Eccleſiaſtical Perſons were ſubjected to the temporal Juriſdiction, and as if it were a capital crime and wickedneſs to build a Church. And whereas in purſuance of another Law made in the year* 1536. *whereby a Statute of* Mortmain *was made, and penalties laid on ſuch, who ſhould without Licenſe obtained from the Senate, alienate the Lands of Lay-perſons, and beſtow them to pious uſes; which Law, as it ought to have been repealed, ſo on the contrary in the Month of* March *laſt paſt, the Senate did not only confirm the ſame, but did likewiſe enlarge and extend the power thereof to all parts within their dominions: as if that Signory which is but a temporal power, had Authority with conſent or concurrence of the Pope to diſpoſe of Eccleſiaſtical Eſtates, Goods or Revenues, though left by pious and faithful Believers as an Offering for ſin, and as an eaſe to their burdened Conſcience. The which thing being damnable, ſcandalous, and contrary to the Eccleſiaſtical liberty, are null and void in themſelves, and from the obſervance of which, all perſons are diſobliged. And it is hereby farther declared, that thoſe who have been Contrivers or Legiſlators of theſe or the like Statutes, have incurred the cenſure of the Church, and a forfeiture of all thoſe Lands which they hold of the Church, and their States and Dominons are alſo liable to other puniſhments. So that unleſs every thing be reſtored to its preſtine State, perſeverance in the ſame will be an aggravation of the Crime, for which no abſolution can be given, but on terms of reſtauration of all matters to their original condition.*

Wherefore being exalted on our ſupream Throne, on which we cannot nor ought to diſſemble any matters, we admoniſh you to conſider the danger of your Souls, for which this Republick is obliged to provide: for we com-

mand under pain of Excommunication, that the aforeſaid Laws, whether antient or modern be revoked and cancelled, and that the ſame be publiſhed in all parts of your Dominions; and in caſe you refuſe to perform the ſame, We ſhall then be forced to proceed to the execution of this Our Sentence, ſo ſoon as we have underſtood the preſentation of theſe Our Letters, from the report of Our Nuntio; and afterwards you are not to expect any other citation or proceſs from us: for we are unwilling, that God ſhould in the laſt day of Judgment demand an account of this matter, and condemn us for want of performance of Our duty in this caſe. Wherefore we, whoſe end and deſign it is to govern the Chriſtian State in peace, and righteouſneſs, cannot diſſemble in caſes, where the Apoſtolical See is offended, the Eccleſiaſtical liberty trampled under foot, the Canons neglected, the Rites of the Church and the Priviledges of the Clergy violated, which is the ſum of this Our accuſation againſt you. And We do farther make known unto you, that we are not moved to paſs this Our Cenſure out of any Worldly reſpect, having only an ambition of zeal to exerciſe our Apoſtolical Government, as far as we are able, in its due perfection. And as we would not intrench on the temporal Authority, ſo neither will we permit that the Eccleſiaſtical ſhould be infringed. But in caſe the Republick would be obedient to theſe Our Commands, they would free Vs from great troubles and anguiſh of mind, which we ſuſtain for their ſakes: And they alſo may conſerve the Lands which they hold from the Church: nor can this Republick defend themſelves from the force and violence of Infidels, by any better and prevailing means, than by doing right and juſtice to the Clergy, who day and night watch over them, and pray unto God for this Republick.

The Senate having read and conſidered theſe Briefs, thoughs fit to confer and conſult with the moſt judicious and able Lawyers of their age, ſuch as *Antonio Pellegrini*, and *Eraſmus Gratiani*, together with Father *Paul* of the Order of the *Servi*, a Perſon profoundly learned in Theology and the Canons of the Church; unto theſe three, they added ſeveral other Learned Men, eminent for wiſdom and piety of Life, not Subjects only to the State of *Venice*, but belonging to other parts of *Italy*, namely *Menocchio* Preſident of *Milan*, and others; in conſideration of which cauſe, they peruſed and ſearch'd the Books and Writings of the moſt famous Doctors of *France* and *Spain*: and according to the Opinion and Sence of all thoſe Learned Men in the Law, the Controverſie between the Pope and the Republick, did relate wholly to temporal matters, unto which the Papal Authority did not extend; and that the Republick might in ſuch caſes order and determine, according to the nature and exigency of their Affairs: and in farther proof and teſtimony hereof, many Laws were cited, which had been enacted in other Chriſtian Countries and Dominions, of the ſame ſubſtance and tenure with theſe. And in this manner the Senate having received and underſtood the Opinion and report of their Doctors, returned their anſwer unto the Pope to this effect, dated the 28th of *January*. *Ann.* 1606.

With much aſtoniſhment and trouble of mind, this Republick hath been informed by Letters from your Holineſs, that thoſe Laws which for ſome Ages have been obſerved with much benefit to this Republick, and never queſtioned by your Predeceſſors, ſhould now be reprehended and repealed by the Authority of the Apoſtolical See; the which Laws are ſo ſound and ſafe for us, that the Alteration of them would ſhake the very foundation of *this Government; And we are troubled to think that ſome Perſons who were of excellent piety and vertue, that made and eſtabliſhed theſe Laws, and who are now in Heaven, ſhould be termed and branded as violators of the Eccleſiaſtical liberty. And now according to the deſire of your Holineſs, we have cauſed all our Laws, both antient and modern, relating to the points in Controverſie to be revived and examined; and we find nothing which hath been eſtabliſhed by the Power of the Supreme Prince, in the leaſt derogatory to the Papal Authority: it being apparent, that it is the duty of the Secular Magiſtrate to inſpect and conſider what kind of Companies are fit to be admitted into the City; what Edifices are fit to be erected, and what are not, and what may in time prove hurtful to the publick ſafety: for in regard, the Dominion of* Venice *doth abound with Churches and religious Houſes, as much as any other part; and that when it was convenient to erect more, a licenſe to build was not only granted, but contributions made thereunto by the publick liberality and munificence; ſo when it was neceſſary to ſet bounds and limits thereunto, this Senate made uſe of their own Power alone, without any dimunition to the Canons of the Church. And whereas the Pope hath a Power to reſtrain the Clergy from alienating their Lands and Eſtates to the Laiety, without his conſent and diſpenſation; ſo alſo hath the temporal Prince the like Authority to forbid and inhibit all Lay-perſons from making alienation of their Eſtates unto the Church. Nor do Eccleſiaſtical perſons loſe any thing by this reſtriction, but rather procure a benefit; for when the temporal Power is weakned by ſuch alienation, this State which is the Bulwark of Chriſtendom, will not be able to withſtand the common Enemy, nor afford due protection either to the Clergy or Laiety. And therefore the Senate doth not believe, that they have incurred the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſure, conſidering that Secular Princes have received that Power from God of making Laws, which no other humane Authority is able to take from them: and much leſs have the Briefs of your Holineſs any place or prevalence in matters purely temporal, which are clearly diſtinct from thoſe which are ſpiritual, to which the Papal Power doth ſingly extend. Nor can this Senate imagine, that your Holineſs, who is full of Piety and Religion, will perſiſt in theſe your Comminations, until the cauſe hath firſt been fully examined and diſcuſſed. And thus much they thought in ſhort to make known unto your Holineſs, referring all things to be treated and explained more at large by their Ambaſſadour Extraordinary.*

Theſe Letters of the Senate being arrived at *Rome*, were preſented to the Pope by the hands of the Ambaſſadour, who immediately opened and read them; but the Contents ſo little pleaſed him, that he was angry and froward all the time that they were in reading: and in fine, he told the Ambaſſadour, that thoſe Letters were no Anſwer to his Admonitory Briefs, that the Anſwer was frivolous and inſignificant; that the matter was clear and evident on his ſide, and that therefore he was reſolved to proceed unto Sentence: that the Senate muſt reſolve to ſubmit and obey, for his cauſe was the cauſe of God. *Et Portæ Inferi non prævalebunt adverſus eam.* If the Monks of *Padoua* had purchaſed more Lands than were requiſite, or conſiſtent with the welfare of the State, upon addreſs made to him, he could have applyed a Remedy, but the Senate proceeding in another manner, were Tyrants, Uſurpers, and Men of Principles different from their Anceſtours: wherefore he exhorted them not to deceive themſelves with the thoughts of protracting the time, in hopes of deciding the Diſpute by his death, for that in caſe he received not ſatisfaction therein, in the ſpace of fifteen days he would then proceed to execution of his Sentence. The fifteen days, were ſcarce expired when the Ambaſſadour *Nani* acquainted the Pope that *Duodo* was diſpatched from *Venice* in quality of Ambaſſadour Extraordinary, to inform his Holineſs more amply of all matters; to which the Pope replied, that there was no need of farther expoſtulations, the matter was clear, and he would be obeyed.

But notwithſtanding the Pope's haſt, time was protracted till towards the end of *March*, when *Duodo* the Ambaſſadour Extraordinary arrived at *Rome*; to whom the Pope would not have patience to grant all the methods of Complements, but immediately at his arrival admitted him to Audience; when the Ambaſſadour largely diſcourſing on every point in Controverſie, concluded that the Senate could not yield to the Demands of his Holineſs, without betraying that Power which God had put into their hands. But the Pope making no reply to the Arguments in particular, adhered cloſe to the Concluſion, that Eccleſiaſtical Perſons were exempted *Jure Divino* from the Secular Dominion, that he had heard enough from *Nani* of this kind of reaſoning, that the Cauſe was God's, and muſt prevail.

This reſolution of the Pope being made known at *Venice*, the Senate thought fit to communicate theſe their differences to the Miniſters of foreign Princes, deſiring their Opinions on thoſe Points. From which the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour excuſed him, not deſiring to concern his Maſter in thoſe matters, which might yield the leaſt diſpleaſure to the Pope; but the Imperial and *French* Ambaſſadours were much more frank and open in their Opinions; for the firſt did allow and approve the reaſons of the Senate, alledging the Cuſtoms of his own Country the *French Comte*, where the ſame things were practiſed, and Monſieur *de Freſnes* the *French* Ambaſſadour declared, that he could not underſtand thoſe Papal Laws, which deny unto Princes the Government of their own State, and therefore the Republick was much to be commended for preferring their liberty before any other reſpect.

At *Rome* the Cardinals of *Verona*, and *Vicenza* uſed all the Intereſt and perſwaſions they were able, to induce the Pope to defer the promulgation of his Sentence for ſome time; putting him in mind, that the Spiritual Arms were not to be exerciſed, but in caſes where they were ſure to prevail; Then ſaid the Pope, I ſhall make uſe of the Temporal: and in the mean time to manifeſt to the World my Patience and tenderneſs towards them, I ſhall grant them the term of twenty four days to conſider and repent: and accordingly having formed and printed his Monitory on the 17th of *April*, he cauſed it to be read and publiſhed in this Conſiſtory. After which he added, That he had greatly ſtudied this Point, and having conſulted with the moſt famous Canoniſts, the general Opinion of them all, was, that the Republick acted contrary to the Authority of the Apoſtolick See, and againſt the liberties and immunities of the Church; alledging in his favour the Council of *Simmaco*, and of *Lions* under Pope *Gregory*, with other Decrees made by the Councils of *Conſtance* and *Baſil*: and that the ſame was ſo declared in the cauſe againſt *Henry* II. againſt the Kings of *Caſtile*, and other Kings;

and cauſed a Conſtitution made by *Innocent* III. to be read; and to proceed the more regularly in this important matter, the Votes of the Cardinals were diſtinctly required: the number of Cardinals then preſent in the Conſiſtory were forty one, all which did either in few words aſſent, or more at large produce the Authority of the Canoniſts in confirmation of the Pope's reaſons. And indeed, little leſs than this free concurrence could be expected from them: for though ſome few out of a zeal towards the Eccleſiaſtical liberty, might really be poſſeſſed with this Opinion; yet the generality were guided by other Principles; ſome perhaps were unwilling to diſpleaſe the Pope, in expectation of preferments of themſelves or Friends; others had a proſpect of ariſing to the Popedom, and for that cauſe were willing to exalt its Power: every one had ſome conſideration or other for his own benefit, but not ſuch conſideration as was required in ſtudy of the caſe, or to find out the truth of the matter under debate. For Popes in the Conſiſtory, are always ſure to find the Cardinals pliant, and ready to yield aſſent unto whatſoever they propoſe, that is *Aſſentiri in Aſſentari.*

The Conſiſtory being riſen, the Monitory was affixed in all the publick places of *Rome*; of which a multitude of Copies both in *Latin* and *Italian* were printed, and diſpatched into all the Cities of *Italy*, eſpecially into the Dominions of *Venice*, and diſperſed into all parts by the *Jeſuits*, accompanied with Seditious Letters and Pamphlets derogatory to the honour of the Republick. The Monitory was directed to the Patriarchs, Arch-Biſhops, Biſhops, Vicars, and all Eccleſiaſtics, either Secular or Regular, who held any Dignities and preferments of the Church within the Dominion of *Venice*, and therein it was expoſed.

That whereas ſome Months paſt he was given to underſtand (that is the Pope) how that the Doge *and Senate of* Venice, *had for many years paſt made ſeveral Decrees in prejudice of the Apoſtolical See and priviledges of the Church, notwithſtanding that the ſame were repugnant to the* General Councils, *and to the Antient Canons and Conſtitutions of the Popes of* Rome: *and now more lately a Law was made in the year* 1602. *whereby Eccleſiaſtical Perſons are incapacitated to appropriate to themſelves any Lands or Eſtates. Secondly, He mentioned the Law made in the year* 1603. *which reſtrains and prohibits the erecting or building any Churches or religious Houſes without the leave or licenſe of the Senate. Thirdly, He mentioned the Law in* 1605. *which extends theſe Laws over all the Dominions of the Republick, which formerly were terminated to the City of* Venice *only; and laſtly, the impriſonment of the Canon of* Vicenza, *and the Abbot of* Nerveſa: *by which particular offences, the Eccleſiaſtical liberty being infringed, the* Doge *and Senate of* Venice *have to the danger of their own Souls and ſcandal of the World, incurred the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures to the forfeiture of their Lands and Juriſdiction, from which whey cannot be abſolved but by the Pope himſelf, who being ſatisfied with their repentance, demonſtrated by a repeal of thoſe Laws, and reſtauration of all things to their priſtine condition, hath the ſole power to receive them again into the boſom of the Church. And whereas the* Doge *and Senate after many fatherly Admonitions, have not repealed thoſe Laws, nor releaſed the Priſoners, he could in no wiſe ſuffer, that the liberties and immunities of the Church, and the Authority of the Apoſtolical See ſhould be violated and infringed: And though thoſe Laws are in themſelves void and of none effect,*

fect, yet by the example of ten Popes and more, his Predeceſſours in confirmation hereof, and by, and with the conſent and counſel of the Cardinals (with whom he had adviſed hereupon) he doth farther declare thoſe Laws to be null and cancelled: and doth farther declare and denounce Excommunication againſt the Doge *and Senate in general, in ſuch manner, as if they had been particularly named, and againſt their Succeſſours, Councellours, Adherents and Abettors, in caſe the ſaid* Doge *and Senate, ſhall not within the ſpace of twenty four days after the publication hereof (aſſigning eight days for each term of Admonition) repeal, cancel, and make void the aforeſaid Decrees, with all Writs and Orders proceeding thereupon: and without farther delay or Excuſe, ſhall not reſtore all things to their former and original condition, with promiſe never to do or perform the like again; And ſhall not conſign into the hands of his Nuntio, both the Canon and the Abbot, giving advice and notice of all unto the Pope himſelf: and for default thereof, the Excommunication to remain in force, from whence no Abſolution can be granted, but by the Pope himſelf, unleſs at the point of death: from which State in caſe the Perſon ſo abſolved ſhall recover, and ſtill continue and perſiſt in the ſame obſtinacy, he ſhall again be liable to the ſame Excommunication as before; and in caſe he die, his body notwithſtanding ſhall not be interred in any conſecrated place, until obedience be yielded unto theſe Commands by all others concerned. And in caſe after the expiration of twenty four days, the* Doge *and Senate ſhall ſtill perſiſt in their contumacy for other three days, then he did Interdict all their Dominion, forbidding all Maſſes and divine Offices to be performed therein; unleſs in ſuch places, manner and caſes as are granted by the Common Law: And farther, He did deprive the* Doge *and Senate of all their Revenue and Poſſeſſions, which they hold of the* Roman *Church, or other Churches, and of all the priviledges granted them in favour thereof; reſerving ſtill unto himſelf and his Succeſſors, a Power to aggravate and encreaſe the Cenſures and Penalties againſt them, their Adherents and Abettors therein,* &c. *And to proceed unto farther puniſhments and Remedies in caſe of continuance in ſuch like contumacy. Notwithſtanding,* &c. *Commanding all Patriarchs, Arch Biſhops and Biſhops, and other Inferiour Clergy upon penalty,* &c. *That after the receipt of theſe Letters, or notice thereof given, that they publiſh the ſame in the reſpective Churches, at ſuch times, as when the greateſt concourſe of people is preſent, and to affix the ſame at the Chuch doors,* &c.

After publication was made of this ſevere Excommunication, thundered out againſt a Republick of ſuch greatneſs and eſteem in the World: all the Ambaſſadours and Miniſters of foreign Princes reſiding at *Rome*, were greatly troubled and concerned, conſidering that an Act of this nature had ſome oblique reflection on every Prince, that profeſſed obedience or devotion for the Papal See. Wherefore every one of thoſe Miniſters reſiding at *Rome*, made their applications and addreſſes to the Pope, deſiring him to moderate and prorogue the Sentence until the matter were examined and conſidered by the Republick, and ways or means contrived for an accommodation. To whom the Pope returned this general Anſwer, That the way to compoſe and accommodate theſe differences, were to incline the Republick to a reſolution of becoming obedient; but that word Obedient, would not well paſs with the Miniſters, who made ſome reflections thereon, as unbeſeeming the degree of

Sovereign Princes, and therefore perſwaded the Pope rather to uſe ſome more moderate and gentle terms, and enlarge the time allotted for termination of the Sentence.

The news hereof being come to *Venice*, the Senate immediately and in the firſt place ordered, that Prayers ſhould be made in all Churches and Chappels, imploring the Divine aſſiſtance in that great emergency of Affairs; and in the next place they reſolved to recall their Ambaſſadour Extraordinary from *Rome*, leaving *Nani* to reſide there, leſt they ſhould ſeem to deſpiſe and ſtand in open defiance againſt the Apoſtolical See. Sir *Henry Wotton* was at that time Reſident for the King of *England* at *Venice*, when the Senate thought fit to communicate to him the rigour of the Pope's Sentence, for until then they had never mentioned any thing with him of their Controverſie with the Pope, as they had alſo ordered their Ambaſſadour in *England* not to diſcourſe any thing of that Point unto his Majeſty or his Counſellours. But when the matter came to be adviſed to Sir *Henry Wotton*, he complained that the Senate had been much more free and open to other Ambaſſadours than himſelf; and as to the pretentions of the Pope, he ſaid, *That he could not underſtand that piece of* Romiſh *Divinity, which was contrary to Juſtice and moral Honeſty.*

And now to provide againſt all thoſe inconveniencies and miſchiefs which might be the conſequences of this Excommunication, the Senate commanded all Prelates and Eccleſiaſtical Perſons, not to permit or ſuffer any Bulls, Briefs, or any other Writing to be affixed at any Church-door or publick place whatſoever, ordaining upon pain of the Prince's diſpleaſure, that every perſon whatſoever, who had any of the Copies of that Brief, which was lately publiſhed at *Rome* againſt the Republick, ſhould immediately deliver them up into the hands of the Magiſtrates in *Venice*, and to the Rulers and Governours reſpectively in all places ſubject to that Dominion: which the people ſo readily obeyed, that in a ſhort time, ſo great a number of Copies were brought in, as was wonderful to conſider, how ſo many could be printed: and ſuch diligence was uſed by the Magiſtrates, and by the people themſelves, that not one Brief was affixed in any publick place; the perſons who endeavoured to act therein, being diſcovered and prevented.

And farther, The true ſtate of that difference, which the Republick had with the Pope, was adviſed and intimated to all the Miniſters, for foreign Princes reſiding at *Venice*: and the ſame alſo ſignified to all the Agents reſiding for that Republick in foreign parts. In like manner the Senate wrote to all their Governours and Magiſtrates of Towns and Cities ſubjected to their Dominions, acquainting them with the injuries they had received from the Pope, and with the reaſons they had to defend their Laws and Liberties, all which being ſignified as was commanded, unto the Counſels and Magiſtracy of the Cities; it took ſuch impreſſion every where, that the people yielded a moſt intire and chearful obedience thereunto, ſhewing themſelves ready to defend the publick Liberty, and in maintenance thereof, every one offered Money and Arms according to his Ability: and in purſuance of ſuch Reſolution, furniſhed the ſame, as time required.

After publication made of the Monitory Brief, the Pope's Nuntio ſpent moſt of his time in the *Jeſuits* Colledge, where many of thoſe Fathers were received, who had been eminently known for the confuſions and diſturbances they had created in the World: and particularly amongſt the reſt was one *Bernardino* of *Siena*, who had lately acted the like part at *Paris*, when the *Jeſuits* were expelled from that City: and *Antonio Poſſevino*, who was famous for his Actions in *Moſcovy* and *Poland*, and skilful in the management of Intrigues: there was alſo *Barone* a *Venetian*, a bold confident Fellow, one that would have a hand in every matter of publick diſturbance: likewiſe *John Gentes*, who made profeſſion of truly ſtating all caſes of Conſcience, being endued with an excellent faculty of finding fault, and of condemning and reproving every thing which was acted without his concurrence, and of juſtifying every thing which was appointed and directed by the *Jeſuits*; all of them being excellent Inſtruments in their way, and faithful performers of the fourth Article of their Vow.

But the Nuntio having thus frequented the Society of *Jeſuits*, and learned his Leſſon in every particular, made a viſit to the *Doge*, to whom having in the firſt place expreſſed his grief for the unhappy eſtate of Affairs, he deſired his Serene Highneſs to conſider of ſome ways and means, by which theſe differences might be compoſed, and in order thereunto he promiſed his ultimate endeavours, and all the good Offices which his authority and intereſt were able to perform: which Diſcourſe he ſweetned with the moſt perſwaſive and affectionate expreſſions imaginable, often invoking the name of Almighty God; of whom when he had occaſion to ſpeak, he called him *Our Lord*, and in like manner, when he had occaſion to mention the Pope, he called him *Our Lord*; ſo that in his Diſcourſe, it was difficult to diſtinguiſh which of the two Lords he meant; only ſome obſerving perſons had taken notice, that when he intended the name of God, he kept his head covered, but when he meant the name of Pope, he always took his Cap off.

The Pope having underſtood how reſolute the Senate ſeemed in maintenance of their Laws and Liberties, and with what chearful readineſs the People obeyed them, conceived little hopes at the preſent of obtaining his deſires; and therefore judging that his Nuntio could not continue longer with honour at *Venice*, he diſpatched his Letters to recall him from thence, and intimated to the Ambaſſadour *Nani* by the Biſhop of *Soana* that he ſhould depart from *Rome*, not leaving any of his Domeſticks or Subſtitutes in his place.

At *Venice* the Superiours & Priors of Monaſteries and other Churches were convened before the Council of *Ten*, who ſignified to them, that the pleaſure of the Prince was, that they ſhould ſtill continue to officiate and perform the Divine Offices, and that none of them ſhould leave the State without licence obtained. It was alſo declared, that protection ſhould be given to ſuch as remained, and that ſuch as would depart, ſhould not carry with them the Utenſils, or Veſtments, or Riches belonging to the Church. And that in caſe any Brief ſhould be ſent them from *Rome*, or Order from their Superiors, they ſhould firſt preſent it to the Magiſtrates before it was read by themſelves; and the like Command was given to all Governors of Cities, and places under Dominion of *Venice*.

As yet the *Capucins*, *Theatins* and other Religions had not entertained thoughts of departure; for when the Monitory was firſt publiſhed at *Rome*, the Provincial and other *Capucins* held a Conſultation together, where it was concluded, that in regard the differences between the Pope and the Republick had no relation to matters of Faith, they were not obliged to ſollow the Pope's dictates ſo far in this caſe, as to abandon their Habitations and ſubſiſtence: yet afterwards the Superiours obeying the pleaſure of the Pope, expreſly commanded all ſorts of Religious Orders to depart and leave their Dwellings within the juriſdiction of *Venice*; ſaying unto them, *Come forth from them, O my People.*

The term of twenty four days being almoſt expired, when the Monitory was to Commence, the Senate called the *Jeſuits* to know their reſolution, whether they would continue in the City, or not: to which they made anſwer, That they had intentions and deſires to ſtay, but could not promiſe to ſay Maſs, excepting which, they would engage to perform all other Divine Offices and Service. The Senate taking this Anſwer into conſideration; reſolved that the *Jeſuits* ſhould either celebrate Maſs, as formerly, with all the other functions of Prieſthood, and not remain in a kind of indifferency between the Pope and the Republick, ſerving God and Mammon, or otherwiſe ſhould have intimation to depart. The which Order was ſignified to them by the Patriarchal Vicar, with poſitive Orders immediately to depart, and to conſign into his hands all the Plate, Veſtments, and Goods belonging to their Church: and in like manner Orders were given to all Governours to execute the ſame Decree in their reſpective juriſdictions. This Command being ſignified to the *Jeſuits*, they aſſembled all their Votaries into their Church, and gathered great Contributions from them; and perſwaded the *Capucins*, that when they departed, they ſhould march two and two in a rank, as in Proceſſion, with a Crucifix on the breaſt of every one, which perhaps might move ſome diſturbance in the minds of the Commonalty, who beholding ſo many Crucifixes departing from them, might apprehend alſo, that Chriſt himſelf, and the light of the Goſpel was leaving their City, which Opinion might be the beginning of ſome happy Sedition.

The *Jeſuits* themſelves were haſtned away, and forced to depart about two hours in the Night, every one carrying his *Chriſt* as they called it about his Neck; the People flocked in great numbers to ſee their departure, and accompanied them to the Boats, ſhouting and crying aloud, *Let them go to the Devil.* In divers parts of the City they had concealed and hid away the Veſſels and pretious Ornaments of their Church, and their beſt Houſhold-ſtuff, with their Library: leaving their College empty, and void of all Furniture whatſoever, or of any thing of moment, unleſs the Library given to them by the late Arch-Biſhop *Lewis Molino*, with another Library of prohibited Books. And though the *Jeſuits* of *Venice* had burnt many of their Papers, yet at *Padoua* they left divers Copies of a certain *Book* containing eighteen Rules, with this title, *Regulæ aliquot ſervandæ, ut cum Orthodoxâ Eccleſiâ verè ſentiamus.* In the ſeventeenth Rule of which, they were commanded, not to inſiſt overmuch in their Sermons, on the force and energy of the grace of God. And in the third Rule, they were enjoyned to believe according as the *Hierarchy* of the Church believed; that is, if the Church determined any thing to be white, they ſhould believe it ſo to be, though the colour appeared black to the ſight of their own eyes. And laſtly, they left unto their Diſciples and Votaries certain Rules, whereby to govern themſelves during this Interdict.

But though the *Jeſuits*, *Capuchins*, and other Orders of St. *Francis* Reformed, had abandoned *Venice*, and were retired to other Convents in *Milan*, *Mantoua*, *Bologna* and *Ferrara*; yet the *Capuchins* of *Breſcia* and *Bergamo*, (where were no *Jeſuits* to ſeduce them) remained in excellent Concord and Obedience; and ſecuring themſelves with that Protection which they received from the Senate, remained reſolute and conſtant to their Principles againſt all the Cenſures of Excommunication, and other Spiritual penalties iſſued againſt them by their Superiours; and in regard many of them were ſober and learned Men, they retorted all thoſe Spiritual Arms with great force and power of argument and reaſon.

It was certainly believed at *Rome*, that this Monitory would have produced three notable Effects: Firſt it was given for granted, that all the Religious Orders would immediately abandon the Dominions of *Venice*, by which the Interdict muſt of neceſſity have been obſerved. Secondly, That the City and People finding themſelves deprived of all the Divine Offices, would riſe in a mutiny againſt the Government, and compel them to give ſatisfaction to the Pope. Thirdly, That it would beget a miſunderſtanding amongſt the Nobility, and cauſe them to divide into ſeveral Factions, towards which the *Jeſuits* (though abſent) did labour with all the Art and Induſtry imaginable. But the Court of *Rome*, againſt their expectations, finding that all matters had a contrary effect, that Maſs and other Offices of the Church were Celebrated without interruption, that the people frequented the Churches with greater Devotion than before; that the Senate were unanimous in their Counſels, and the Commonalty quiet and obedient; they began to repent them of this proceeding, and many ſeverely blamed the Pope for being over-raſh and haſty: for that though there might be reaſon in the merit of the Cauſe, yet the proſecution of it was of that importance, as ought to have been attempered with prudence, and the conſequences well weighed, before matters were ſcrued up to that Degree, as admitted of no indifferent terms or accommodation.

Wherefore now it concerned the Pope and Clergy, to labour with Art and power of the Spiritual Arms in vindication of their Cauſe, in order whereunto the Cardinals were ſet at work to prevail with the refractory Friers and Monks to leave their Dwellings and Party, and come over to them, promiſing in reward of that good Service, honours and preferments in the Church; and on the contrary, threatned them with Cenſures and Puniſhments both Spiritual and Temporal. Howſoever they obſerved a different manner in treating with the rich Friers and the poor *Mendicants*. For to the Poor they ſaid, that if they could not obſerve the Interdict, they ſhould then depart and leave all they had for ſake of the Goſpel; and if that were not permitted, they ſhould then ſeek for the Glorious Crown of Martyrdom: But to the Rich, they thought better than to uſe this hard ſaying, *Durus eſt hic ſermo*, for though they were commanded to obſerve the Interdict, yet were adviſed not to leave or abandon their Monaſteries and Revenues; and the better to inculcate theſe perſwaſions, Commiſſaries were appointed out of the ſame Orders privately to convey themſelves into the Dominions of *Venice*, to inſtil and foment this Doctrine in the minds of the *Regulars*; but the ways were ſo obſtructed by the diligence and watchfulneſs of the Governours in their reſpective Dominions, that not a Frier durſt adventure to ſteal in, and engage in that Errand.

Seeing therefore that this courſe would not take: the next expedient was to raiſe a duſt and diſturbance in the Courts of foreign Princes. And in the firſt place, the *Jeſuits* (who were and ſtill are very prevalent in *Poland*) laboured to put an affront on *Foſcarini* Ambaſſador for the Republick to that King; cauſing two of the Gentlemen belonging to his Retinue to be diſturbed at Maſs, and expelled the Church: And the Nuntio made very warm Inſtances to the King, that the Monitory againſt *Venice* might be affixed in all publick places of his Dominions: but the King on the contrary did not only refuſe to grant this requeſt, but highly reſented the late Affront offered to the two *Venetian* Gentlemen, in ſatisfaction for which by the King's Order, the Marſhal of the Court, and the Cardinal of *Cracow*, having aſſembled the Friers together, and duly reprehended their inſolence, commanding them the next day to ſing High Maſs in their Church, to which having invited the Ambaſſadour, they obliged the Friers to aſk the Pardon for the affront offered to his Servants: And farther the King, with approbation of his Council, gave Orders to all his People to treat the Ambaſſadour and his Retinue with all kindneſs, and due reſpect: and moreover wrote a Letter to the Pope, complaining of the late deſign of his Nuntio, attempting to publiſh Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures againſt foreign Princes within his Kingdom, which was a new and an unknown practice within his State; and had been refuſed in the Caſe of *Henry* III. King of *France*, and in the Cauſe of *Ceſare d' Eſte* Duke of *Ferrara*: much leſs could he be induced to allow of ſuch proceedings againſt the State of *Venice*, whoſe Cauſe was the ſame with that of his own Kingdom. And conſidering that that State had merited well of Chriſtendom by the oppoſition they made with their Arms againſt the common Enemy, he exhorted his Holineſs to ſuperſede farther proceedings, for Cauſes which ought to be ſtifled, and which for better peace of the Church ought never to be brought into queſtion, or Diſpute.

An. 1606. *Francis Soranzo* a Cavalier of *Venice*, being at this time Ambaſſadour at the Emperor's Court, did rightly inform the *Imperial* Miniſters with the true ſtate of the difference between the Pope and that Republick: and in regard the Conſtitutions of all *Germany* were the ſame, they could not do leſs than approve the Cauſe of the *Venetians*, and condemn the Cauſe of the Pope, which confirmed the Proteſtants in their reaſons which they alledged, for detaining Eccleſiaſtical Benefices in their own hands. Howſoever the Great Chancellour, and Marſhal *Prainer* were of different Opinions, taking part with the Pope againſt the affections, ſence and Intereſt of the whole Court.

When news came firſt to the Court of *Spain* of the differences between the Pope, and the *Venetians*; the conſtancy and firmneſs of that State to the Principles of their Government, was highly applauded, being the common Cauſe of all Secular Princes. Howſoever, the Nuntio made it his buſineſs to have the *Venetian* Ambaſſadour declared in all Pulpits to be under Excommunication: The *Genoeſes* alſo who were powerful in that Court, being touched with envy on old grudges, and for having lately yielded that Point of their liberty to the Pope, which *Venice* ſtill conſerved,did all the ill offices they were able againſt the Republick : but above all the Ambaſſadour of *Tuſcany* joyned with the *Jeſuits*,ſhewed himſelf an open Enemy, and ſo prevailed with the King and Council, that a Congregation of twelve Divines was held at *Madrid* in preſence of the Cardinal of *Toledo*, to conſider whether the Ambaſſadour of *Venice* ought to be admitted into the Church at the time of Celebration of Divine Offices ? the reſult of which was, that the Ambaſſadour ſhould not be excluded, every one corcurring in that Opinion, the Nuntio and *Jeſuits* only excepted.

So ſoon as the news came to *Paris*, that the Monitory was publiſhed againſt *Venice*, *Barberino* the Pope's Nuntio made urgent addreſſes to the King, that *Priuli* the *Venetian* Ambaſſador ſhould be excluded from admiſſion into the Church ; but his deſire was poſitively rejected;both becauſe the King was willing to remain Neuter,and becauſe it was, and is a Maxim of that Kingdom, That Popes have no power over the Temporal Government of Princes, and have no Authority on account for Secular matters to proceed againſt them, or their Officers by Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures.

In *England* we may eaſily imagine what Opinion was conceived of theſe proceedings: for when *Giuſtiniano* the Ambaſſadour of *Venice* had acquainted King *James* with the ſtate of the difference between the Pope and the Republick: the King did much applaud the Laws and Conſtitutions of *Venice*, and the conſtancy and reſolution of the Senate in the maintenance of them : adding, That he would gladly ſee a free Council eſtabliſhed, which was the only means to reform the Church of God, and put an end to all Controverſies amongſt Chriſtians, which had no other original or ſource, than only from the uſurpation of Popes, and ambition of the Clergy, in which holy and ſacred Deſign, he did not doubt but that the *French* King, and all other Chriſtian Princes would readily concur; and that perhaps a beginning thereof might ariſe from theſe troubles and labours of the Republick. And farther the King added, That the Popes exalting themſelves above God, were the ruine of the Church, and that it was no wonder, that their Pride admitted of no ſerious reflections or moderate advices, being puffed up and elated by the common adulation and flattery which was uſed towards them.

The States of the *United Provinces* wrote very obliging Letters to *Venice*, proffering to aſſiſt them with Arms and Proviſions,in caſe they came to an open rupture and acts of hoſtility with the Pope.

In the mean time many effectual good Offices were performed both at *Rome* and *Venice* by the Dukes of *Mantoua* and *Savoy*, and by *Guicciardii* Ambaſſador of the Great Duke of *Tuſcany* ; and more eſpecially by Monſieur *de Freſnes* the *French* Ambaſſadour at *Venice :* To all which inſtances and applications from ſeveral Princes, the Senate thought fit to make this general Anſwer : Firſt, they returned thanks for the good endeavours and labours towards a Mediation, and then complained of the firm reſolutions of the Pope, which could not be ſhaken or made plyable by any reaſonable terms which the Republick could offer. That there could be no hopes of accommodation until the Pope by taking off his Cenſures, did open a way to Treaties and terms of Peace. That the Pope had proceeded ſo far in his injuries and affronts, as were paſt all manner of reconciliation, and yet the Republick, which was truly Catholick, would ſtill bear their due reſpect to the Pope, ſo far as was conſiſtent with their liberty, and with that right of Government which was committed to them by God.

But whilſt matters were thus in Treaty at *Venice* and *Rome*, and in the Courts of Princes; the *Jeſuits* who were vigilant and intent to do all the miſchiefs they were able againſt the Republick; did not ceaſe to diſperſe Scandals and Libels as well without *Italy* as within, and to preach and rail againſt them in their Pulpits and Schools, endeavouring to poſſeſs their Auditories with the moſt malicious impreſſions they could beget or frame in minds of Men; they alſo wrote Letters into all places defaming the Republick: ſome who would not adventure into the Dominions of *Venice*, treated on the Confines with their Diſciples and Votaries: and others in diſguiſe entered within the Dominions ſowing Diviſion and Faction in all parts, promiſing extraordinary Indulgences to all ſuch as ſhould obſerve the Interdict. They alſo forged ſeveral Letters, entitling one from the Republick of *Genoua* to the Senate of *Venice*, another from the City of *Verona* to the City of *Breſcia*, which were moſt ſcandalous and abominable Papers. Then in other Writings they juſtified themſelves for having in their Sermons inveighed againſt the Republick, calling it a *Lutheran*, Heretical and tyrannical Government, with infinite other abominable Epithets. In fine, it was proved that the *Jeſuits* were the cauſes of all theſe diſturbances, having inſtigated the Pope to this Deſign upon aſſurances, that they were able to divide the Senate, and by confuſion of their Councils to make way for the Pope's Authority. It was farther proved, That they had kept correſpondence with the Enemies of the Republick to the great damage and prejudice of the State, always interpoſing and inſinuating themſelves into publick Affairs. That they were always contriving to inveigle ſick and dying Perſons, perſwading them for the ſake of their Souls to beſtow their Eſtates and Inheritance on them, to the ruine and deſtruction of their lawful Heirs and Families. And farther, the Senate took into their conſideration their Principles, which were always Monarchical, in prejudice and depreſſion of *Ariſtocracy*, and dangerous to the Maxims and Principles of their Government. It was farther alſo alledged, that the *Jeſuits* had been the Cauſes and Inſtruments of all the tolerations, ſeditious diſorders and evil ſucceſſes which had happened in our age in all the Kingdoms and Provinces of the World: and herein not only ſome particular perſons were culpable, but even the whole Society and Order of them were dangerous and rotten in their Principles, and deſtructive to the Government under which they lived. All which being proved and made good in the Senate againſt them; It was deliberated and carried in the Affirmative by Decree of the 14th of *June*, *An.* 1606. That the *Jeſuits*, who from their firſt beginning had been received into *Venice*, and there cheriſhed and favoured, and having in recompence of ſuch Indulgence and reſpect, returned nothing but Ingratitude: being at preſent the Authors of all the troubles incumbent on the Republick, vilifying the ſame with all the Obloquy which could be uttered from the blackeſt Tongue of malice, and having been falſe Traitors, and Men of inſupportable Inſolences; the moſt Serene Republick did therefore ſpue them out, and baniſh them for ever the precincts of the State; and did Decree and Enact, that they ſhould never be again received without a concurrence of five Sixths at leaſt of the Senate, the number of which was to conſiſt of one hundred and eighty Votes. In paſſing of which Act, it is moſt apparent that their Crimes were as enormous, as they were clear and evidently proved; for the Scrutiny being made by the *Ballot*, their baniſhment was paſs'd with an unanimous concurrence, and a Decree made for their eternal Excluſion; though perhaps ſome few might be excepted who had been their Votaries and Penitents.

This perpetual baniſhment of the *Jeſuits* made the breach wider, and more difficult to be reconciled: and the Pope being ſenſible, that the hopes he conceived from the contrivances of the *Jeſuits* were vain and fruitleſs, he applied himſelf to ſome other new Inventions; one of which was a Jubilee, which was publiſhed on the 19th of *June*, inviting all Chriſtian people to pray unto God for the unity and peace of the Church, granting Indulgences, Abſolutions, and Remiſſions unto all, excepting ſuch as belonged to *Venice*, and the interdicted Churches; to which none of thoſe graces, bleſſings and pardons were to be diſpenſed. Now in regard that nothing is ſo deſirable in *Italy*, as the benefit of a Jubilee, It was conceived to be a moſt admirable Artifice to make the *Venetian* People ſenſible of their ſeparation from the Church, when they ſhould find themſelves uncapable to receive the Indulgences, and excluded from all the priviledges of the Faithful: upon which advantage the *Jeſuits* ſhewed all their Art in the Towns bordering on the Dominions of the Republick, preaching up the Bleſſings of a Jubilee, and lamenting the miſeries of that People, who by their diſobedience and contumacy, had extruded themſelves from without the Pale, and become unworthy of ſuch myſterious graces. Notwithſtanding which, the World was ſo well ſatisfied with the Cauſe and ground of this Jubilee, that though at other times Men were fond of this priviledge, and held it in great eſteem and Devotion, yet the Indulgences granted hereby were coldly received in every place: nor did the *Venetian* Commonalty ſo much repine at this loſs, as to quarrel or mutiny with their Government for want of that Spiritual Benefit.

Thus when all religious Arts failed, and the Weapons of the Church were not keen enough to do Execution, the Pope reſolved to try what might be effected by the temporal Sword; but in regard his own was not ſharp enough for the *Venetians*; he applied himſelf to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour at *Rome*, deſiring to write to his Maſter the King; giving him to underſtand, that he did entirely caſt himſelf under his Protection, deſiring his favour and Aid againſt his Enemies; and therewith delivered him two Letters, one directed to the King, wherein he expoſed the Reaſons for his proceedings againſt the *Venetians*: and another to the Duke of *Lerma*, chief Miniſter of State, in which he recommended Himſelf and his Affairs to his care and defence, and with many obliging Expreſſions and acknowledgments, called him *the Baſis of the Crown of* Spain, *on which the Catholick Monarchy was eſtabliſhed, and on which the foundation of the Church ſolely was repoſed, and depending.* This kind Letter ſo pleaſed the Duke of *Lerma*, that an Anſwer equally pleaſing was returned from the King to the Pope, and with much formality delivered by the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour attended with three Cardinals, the ſubſtance of which was: That the King was extreamly troubled to obſerve, that the breach and differences between him and the *Venetians* were ſo widened, and ſo far proceeded: but in regard the honour of his Holineſs was far engaged, he was reſolved to vindicate the Dignity of the Apoſtolical See with his Arms; and accordingly had wrote to his Miniſters and Officers in *Italy*, and other Princes depending on his Crown. This Letter being read, was the ſubject of great joy and ſatisfaction to the Pope, and all his Party, and was proclaimed through all *Italy*, much to the reputation of the Papal Cauſe; howſoever the triumph and joy hereof was ſomwhat attempered by the Propoſals which were made by *Spain* in recompence of the troubles and inconveniencies they were to receive by a War: the which Demands were; A releaſe of the yearly Tribute for the Kingdom of *Naples*; a ſurrender of *Ferrara* for a Garriſon to offend the Enemy, and of *Ancona* for an *Arſenal* and *maritime* Proviſions. The which Conditions being grievous and difficult to the Pope, were only anſwered in general terms; but the report hereof was like a Trumpet of War which alarm'd all parts of the *Venetian* Dominions: and cauſed the Senate to write immediately to their Proveditor General in *Candia* to ſend all the Gallies under his Command into the *Gulph*: Orders alſo were given to the Proveditor General in *Dalmatia* to raiſe four hundred *Albaneſes* and *Croats* under four Captains, and to embark them on ten Veſſels which were built for that purpoſe, placing forty on each Veſſel. Likewiſe thirty Captains were nominated and appointed to be ready as occaſion ſhould require.

The Pope on the other ſide, repaired his Fortifications at *Rimini* and *Ancona*, and reinforced his Garriſon at *Ferrara* with a thouſand Foot; he likewiſe baniſhed all Strangers from *Marca* and *Romagna*, and commanded the Natives thereof to return into their own Country. But to the management of this War deſigned, many difficulties occurred: for in the firſt place, there was an exceſſive ſcarcity of all Proviſions in *Rome*, and the Eccleſiaſtical State, as alſo in *Naples* and *Abruzzo*, by reaſon of which the People cryed out nothing but Peace and Bread: and on the contrary, there was great abundance of all things within the Dominions of *Venice*, from whence the People of the Pope's Country receiving the moſt part of their Proviſions were kindly affected to the *Venetian* State: but notwithſtanding all theſe difficulties, the Pope reſolved to proceed in his War, and to recruit his Troops; and for maintenance thereof new Impoſitions were laid on Salt, Fleſh and Paper, with intention alſo to lay a Tax on Wine and Timber, if occaſion ſhould require. And in the mean time the Count *de Fuentes* Governour of *Milan* gave out, that he would have an Army ſpeedily in the Field conſiſting of twenty five thouſand men, compoſed of *Germans*, *Napolitans*, *Switzers* and *Spaniards*.

Though the *Venetians* did not neglect all due care towards the proviſions of War, and to make their Defence whenſoever they ſhould be attacked; yet with more eſpecial regard they had an Eye to Plots and Conſpiracies within the State; giving Orders to their Sea Captains to ſtop all Veſſels which ſailed in the *Gulf*, unleſs ſuch as had Paſſes from the King of *Spain* for his own particular Affairs: which cauſed great embroils along the Coaſt of *Romagna* and the *Marca d' Ancono*, which ſeemed (as it were) to be blocked up: Orders were likewiſe given to hinder all exportation of Corn out of the Dominions of *Venice*; and Sequeſtrations laid on the Revenues of the Clergy, who had quitted or abandoned the *Venetian* Countries; for which cauſe many Prelates at *Rome* were forced to retrench their Families.

But notwithſtanding the Promiſes made by the *Spaniards* of adminiſtring Aid to the Pope, which at the firſt heat were poſitive and large; yet the Court at *Madrid* coming to make more mature reflections on the tenure of their former Letters, thought fit to explicate their ſence more at large, and to ſignifie to the State of *Venice*, *That it was not the intention of his Catholick Majeſty, to make a War on the Republick, but only to demonſtrate unto the World, that that Crown would on all occaſions be joyned to the Apoſtolical See.* And accordingly *D. Inigo de Cardenas* Ambaſſadour reſiding in Ordinary at *Venice*, did on the 13th of *July* preſent a memorial to the Senate, ſignifying, That the King being deſirous of doing good Offices in the mediation of Peace between the Pope and that Republick, had commanded him his Ambaſſadour to interpoſe therein, aſſuring him, that whatſoever he ſhould act in order thereunto, would be moſt pleaſing to his Majeſty. And that ſome Overtures might be made in order to this Accommodation, *Cardenas* deſired, that for a beginning thereunto, the Senate would give him leave, in their name, to deſire and ſupplicate the Pope, that he would be pleaſed to take off his Cenſures from them, being much troubled that they had ever given his Holineſs any cauſe of diſpleaſure; which being words of formality and Complement only, could not in reality be prejudicial to the right of their Cauſe; and yet were in this ſtate of things of importance and abſolute neceſſity. To which the *Doge* made Anſwer, That neither by himſelf nor by the Senate, was there ever any juſt cauſe of diſpleaſure given to the Pope; and therefore to Scandals and Diſguſts voluntarily taken, and not given, there was no other remedy than voluntary Acknowledgments.

The ſame day the *French* Ambaſſadour urged the Senate to be the firſt to make Overturns of Peace to the Pope, which could be no diſhonour to the Republick, conſidering with what reſpect and duty all Chriſtian Princes treated the Pope, and that it is *Jus Commune*, to ſubmit and humble themſelves before his Holineſs for other matters, they might with all confidence rely on the directions of his Majeſty herein, whom they had always found a true Friend, and a faithful Ally. That conſidering on what terms the King of *Spain* ſtood with them, and how he had declared himſelf of the Papal Party; it was not now ſeaſonable to diſguſt the King his Maſter, and that therefore they would be pleaſed to think of ſome Anſwer, which he might with confidence communicate to the King.

The Senate having taken theſe particulars into conſideration, gave almoſt the ſame Anſwer, as they had newly done to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour; Adding only to the *French*, 'That by way of Meditation, he 'would be pleaſed to repreſent unto the Pope; That the Senate was 'troubled, that his Holineſs would take diſpleaſure at the actions of a 'Republick, which was entirely devoted and dedicated to the glory 'and ſervice of God, to the publick quiet and tranquility of the World, 'and to the maintenance of that liberty and Power which was committed to them by Divine Right.

Theſe Negotiations being ineffectual and fruitleſs; the Senate gave Order to *Giuſtiniano* their Ambaſſadour in *England*, to inform King *James* with the progreſs and ſucceſs of all theſe Affairs and differences with the Pope: which when the King had rightly underſtood, he returned this Anſwer: ‘That he was highly ſatisfied with the conſtancy of the People, and unanimous reſolution of the Senate in defence of their Native liberty and juſtice, and of that Power which God hath beſtowed upon Princes. That the Declaration made by *Spain* in a Letter, was ridiculous, and that matters of ſuch importance required more than words: That he was highly ſenſible of the honour which the Republick had done him, in ſending him an Ambaſſadour Ordinary and Extraordinary; wherefore that he might return them the like demonſtrations of ſincere Friendſhip, he promiſed to grant and condeſcend to all the deſires of the Senate; for that he ſhould be very ungrateful and unjuſt, in caſe he ſhould deny protection to that righteous Cauſe of the Republick, which was engaged in the maintenance of that Liberty and Authority, which is the common Right of all Princes in the Univerſe. And therefore in caſe the Senate ſhould at any time be engaged in War for this Cauſe, they might be aſſured, and rely on the word of a Prince, that he would aſſiſt them with all the power he was able, and that he had given Commiſſion to his Ambaſſadour at *Venice*, to aſſure the Senate the like in his Name: And farther, The Earl of *Saliſbury* by the King's Order added, That the King was not induced to grant them theſe ſuccours, on expectation that they ſhould leave Communion with the Church of *Rome*, but only from a principle of Juſtice, by which he eſteemed himſelf obliged to vindicate the Cauſe of Princes, and the Authority of the Secular Power; as alſo from a Spirit of Animoſity, being reſolved to take that ſide, to which *Spain* was declared an Enemy: in return for which the Senate made their due acknowledgments to the King.

Whilſt theſe things were in Treaty, the *Spaniards* endeavoured to *Ann.* 1606. raiſe a War between the *Turk* and the *Venetians*, ſuppoſing thereby to drive the Senate to thoſe ſtreights, as would inevitably compel them to a compoſition with the Pope: To perform which, the Marqueſs of *Santa Croce* having received the Nuntio's Benediction, departed from *Naples* with a Fleet of twenty ſix Gallies: and having advice that the *Venetian* Armata was then at *Corfu*, he privately croſſed the Gulf, and on the 10th of *Auguſt* arrived at *Durazzo* a City of *Albania*; which being empty almoſt of all its people at that ſeaſon of the year, when the Inhabitants are for the moſt part in their Fields and Gardens, gathering their Fruits, he eaſily ſurprized the place, ſacked and burnt it, carrying away Captives about one hundred fifty five Men, Women and Children, together with thirty pieces of Canon. The news hereof coming to *Venice*, did much trouble the Senate, who apprehending, leſt the *Turks* ſhould attribute this act of Hoſtility to the *Venetians*, would in revenge thereof make War upon them: to prevent which, they immediately diſpatched advice to their *Bailo* at *Conſtantinople*, giving him to underſtand the truth of this Aggreſſion, which being performed by the *Spaniards*, and not by them, ought to be repreſented to the *Grand Signior* in ſuch manner, as might not be occaſion of any Rupture. The *Grand Signior* being rightly informed of the truth of this matter, did believe that this attempt was performed by the *Spaniards* with Artifice and deſign, and therefore gave Order to the Captain *Baſha*, or Admiral of his Gallies, to entertain a perfect good correſpondence with the *Venetians*, and joyn with them to the confuſion of the Pope and the *Spaniards*. Some few days after this, the *Turkiſh* Fleet conſiſting of fifty five Gallies, came to an Anchor not far from *Corfu*, commanded by *Gieffier Paſha*, to whom General *Paſqualigo*, who then commanded the *Venetian* Fleet and was at *Corfu*, ſent a Complement by his Secretary to the *Paſha*, which was in like manner returned with many obliging Expreſſions, telling him of the great Eſteem and Honour which the *Grand Signior* had for the Republick; and as a demonſtration thereof, had given him Commiſſion to joyn with the *Venetian* Fleet, and to make War on the Pope and the King of *Spain*, in ſuch manner, as he ſhould receive direction from the *Venetians*, acting apart, or in the ſame body with them, as they ſhould think convenient and neceſſary: and in farther aſſurance hereof, he diſpeeded three Gallies commanded by the *Bei* of *Damiata* to inform *Paſqualigo* of theſe Reſolutions, which he had received in Commiſſion from his Maſter the *Grand Signior*: to which friendly offer, *Paſqualigo* returned a like courteous acknowledgment; ſaying howſoever, that he could neither do, nor act any thing herein without Orders and Directions from the Senate; and in the mean time, whilſt theſe Advices were in going, and Anſwers expected, he prevailed with the *Turks* to withdraw their Forces from thoſe Seas, promiſing to give them timely notice, in caſe there ſhould be occaſion to deſire their Aſſiſtance.

About this time being in the Month of *August*, the Pope in juſtifica- *An.* 1606.
tion of theſe his proceedings, employed *Scipio Gobellucci* to write the reaſons and arguments which moved and directed him in this Cauſe, which Papers were diſperſed over *Mantoua*, *Milan*, *Cremona*, and *Ferrara*, and Copies thereof ſent into *Spain* and other parts: which writings the Senate taking into conſideration, It was propoſed that they ſhould be anſwered by ſome learned Hand, and that all the Letters, Reaſons and Proceedings in this Cauſe ſhould be Printed and publiſhed to the World: but this Propoſal was generally diſliked by the Senate, as a matter which would exaſperate, and keep alive the difference, and rub on the Sore, which already ſmarted too much: that the Cauſe of the Senate was ſufficiently known to the World; and that ſilence would look more like contempt, eſteeming ſuch Pamphlets not worthy the publick notice or conſideration; and would argue greater reverence to the Apoſtolical See, than to expoſe and lay it open even in thoſe matters, wherein the Republick had received moſt manifeſt Injuries. Howſoever it was impoſſible to reſtrain the Wit and Pens of ſome working Heads and Spirits, who ſtill were writing Papers on one ſide and the other, which being as yet only in Manuſcript could not be ſo publick to common view, as when they were iſſued from the Preſs: howſoever in *Milan* there was a ſcandalous Pamphlet Printed, and ſet out by ſome Churchmen; in which, againſt the Rules of all Senſe and Reaſon, it was intimated, that during this Interdict, all Marriages, being a Sacrament of the Church, were invalid, the copulation adulterous, and the Children Baſtards; the which Paper being ſpread over all *Bergamo*, *Breſcia* and *Crema*, it was thought fit that in confutation hereof

a Treatiſe wrote about one hundred and fifty years ago by *Gerſon*, ſhould be re-printed and divulged; which was ſo appoſite to the matter in hand, and ſo properly accommodated to the preſent times and differences, that nothing could then have been better nor more fitly applyed: to which was annexed a Letter without name, exhorting all Curates to attend their Flock and Charge, without fear of giving any offence to God by not obſerving the Interdict. This Treatiſe of *Gerſon* being wrote ſo many years paſt, carried ſuch Authority and weight, that *Bellarmine* eſteemed it worth his Anſwer; and *Baronius* cryed it down with ſuch paſſion, as if the belief thereof had been a total ſubverſion of the Chriſtian Religion: The Authority of theſe two learned Cardinals was ſo great and conſiderable; that the Senate of *Venice* thought fit for the better eaſe of pious and tender Conſciences, to give a Licenſe to certain learned Writers, to publiſh their Reaſons and Arguments in defence of the Republick, reſtraining themſelves always within the compaſs of thoſe Rules which the Laws preſcribe: that is, That nothing ſhould be aſſerted contrary to Faith, good Cuſtoms and Manners, and the Authority of the Prince; for peruſal and approbation of which, five Divines were appointed to aſſemble in the Houſe of the Patriarchal Vicar; and to allow all writings of that nature, with their *Imprimatur*, before any Printer ſhould dare to put them in the Preſs, or publiſh the ſame.

Thus were all the Wits ſet at work in writing, ſome on one ſide, and ſome on the other: the chief Heads which thoſe who wrote in favour of the Republick, were theſe:

"That God had conſtituted two ſorts of Government in the World, "one Spiritual and the other Temporal: The Spiritual was committed to the Apoſtles and their Succeſſors; the Temporal unto Princes, "and both were reſtrained within ſuch limits, as that one ought not "to meddle or interfere with the other. That the Pope hath no Power "to annul the temporal Laws made by Princes, nor to depoſe them, or "free their Subjects from their Allegiance to them; the which practice "though endeavoured for the ſpace of above five hundred years to be "introduced, is yet contrary to the Scriptures and the Example of Chriſt "and his Saints. That the Doctrine which teaches, that in caſe of Controverſie between the Pope and a Prince, it may be lawful to perſecute ſuch a Prince either by open War or ſecret Treaſon, and that "Diſpenſations may be given to Subjects to rebel againſt ſuch a Prince; "is a damnable ſeditious and ſacrilegious Poſition. That by Divine "Law the Clergy are not exempted from ſubjection to the Secular "Power, either as to their Perſons or Eſtates, though by many immunities and priviledges granted to them by the favour of pious Princes, "from *Conſtantine* to *Frederick* II. ſeveral exemptions have been granted according to the exigence of times and convenience of places. "That the exemptions which Popes have given to the Clergy from the "Secular Power, have not been received in many places; and where "they have been received the Conceſſions and Grants are no farther "obligatory to the Prince, than whilſt they are conſiſtent with the preſent ſtate and convenience of the Publick.

Another Point inſiſted upon was this: "That the Pope was not Infallible, but only in ſuch matters wherein God had promiſed him "his Divine aſſiſtance: which according to the Doctrine of ſome Modern Divines, was only in neceſſary points of Faith. And that the "Power of binding and looſing was only, *Clave non Errante.* That "according to the Doctrine of St. *Auſtin,* An Excommunication againſt "a multitude, or againſt any one who Commands in Chief is dangerous and ſacrilegious. That the new name of Blind Obedience invented by *Ignatius Loyola,* was unknown to the antient Church, and "every good Divine, the which as it takes away our Election and deſire of knowledge in every good work, ſo it expoſes Men to the danger of offending God, and hath been the cauſe of thoſe many Seditions, which hath ariſen in the World for the ſpace of forty years "paſt.

The Popiſh Party on the other ſide proceeded on theſe Maxims: "That the temporal Power of Princes is ſubject to the Eccleſiaſtical; "on which ground the Pope hath Power to depoſe Princes from their "Authority for Errours committed in their Government, when the Pope "judges it may be beneficial to the Church. That the Pope hath Power "to abſolve Subjects from Allegiance to their Prince, the which ſome moderate and modeſt Men explaining, ſaid, not that Chriſt had given this "temporal Power abſolutely to the Pope, but indirectly as it was neceſſary to the better Government of the Spiritual; but others who "were more bold did not think it worth the while to mince the matter, but confidently wrote, That the Pope was endued with all Authority both in Heaven and Earth, and made Supream over all Princes "of the World, who were his Vaſſals, and may puniſh them for their "faults and errours; that he is the Supreme Temporal Monarch over "all the World, and Appeals may be made to the Pope from all Temporal Princes. That he can give Laws to all Princes, and annul theirs; "As to the Exemption of the Clergy, they all denied that they were "ſubject to the temporal Law; and that this priviledge was not given "them by the favour of Princes; but (as ſome would have it) *Jure Divino,* others by the Conſtitutions, and Decrees of Councils and "Popes; but in this they all agreed, that they were not ſubject to the "Prince, not ſo much as in caſes of Treaſon; and that they were not "obliged to obey the Laws of the Land wherein they lived, but only "*Vi Directivâ.* And ſome were ſo bold as to proceed ſo far, as to ſay, "that the Clergy were Judges, whether the Laws of Princes were juſt "or not, and whether the people were obliged to obey them. That in "regard the Pope, who hath the Spirit of God, cannot err, his Sentences "are to be obſerved, whether they be juſt or unjuſt. That ſo powerful and authentick is the Opinion of the Pope, that it ought to prevail againſt all other determinations of the World. That the Pope is "God upon Earth, the Son of Juſtice, and Light of Religion; that the "ſentence of God and the Pope are the ſame, and their Tribunal the "ſame: but it is very obſervable what *Bellarmine* aſſerted; That to "reſtrain obedience due to the Pope unto matters appertaining only to "the Soul, is to reduce it to nothing; that St. *Paul* appealed unto *Cæſar,* "who was not his Judge, and not to St. *Peter,* was becauſe he would not "make himſelf in thoſe days ridiculous. That the antient Popes profeſſed ſubjection to the Emperours, was to comply with the humour "and affection of thoſe times. Others alſo have added, That the Em-

"pire of the Pope was to be introduced by degrees, and inſiſted upon "with ſome moderation out of reſpect to the infirmities of Princes who "were lately become Proſelytes to the Church.

But to return now to the matter of Treaty. Towards the end of *Auguſt* another Overture was made, which was the ſummary of all this Negotiation, though various things were afterwards treated without any effect. For about the 17th of *Auguſt* Monſieur *de Freſnes*, the *French* Miniſter at *Venice*, did in the name of his Maſter propoſe, as entrance to an Accommodation; That the Senate ſhould ſuſpend the Execution of thoſe Laws which gave offence to the Pope, conditionally that the Pope ſuſpend the Cenſures of his Monitory for the ſpace of four or ſix Months: but if this Expedient would not be accepted, then it was propoſed, That the Priſoners ſhould be conſigned into the hands of the Pope, at the inſtance and deſire of the King, without prejudice to the Right and Reaſon of the Senate; for that it was neceſſary to give ſome colour of ſubmiſſion and condeſcention to the demands of the Pope; there being no Preſident that any Pope did ever recal his Bulls, unleſs that which by Authority of the Council of *Conſtance* was repealed.

Theſe Propoſals being debated in the Senate, it was in the firſt place concluded and agreed, *That the liberty of the Publick was to be conſerved and preferred before all other worldly reſpects whatſoever.* That the Priſoners indeed might be reſigned into the hands of the Pope at the inſtance and requeſt of the *French* King, without being made a preſident in like caſes, or be a prejudice to the Liberty in times to come; but that to ſuſpend the force of the Laws, was a certain violation of it, and a ſhake of the Foundation of that Government which had for many hundreds of years been rooted and eſtabliſhed; for that every ſuſpenſion of a Law, doth argue either weakneſs in the Authority, or in the Council, which being the ſubſtance of this Conſult, it was given for Anſwer to Monſieur *de Freſnes* the *French* Ambaſſadour, as alſo to the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour *de Cardenas*, who inſiſted on the like Terms.

An. 1606. Whilſt theſe things were negotiating by the foreign Miniſters; and that the Senate was reſolved to adhere to that Principle, That *no way or conceſſion was to be given to the leaſt point or particle which might prejudice the publick Liberty:* News came about the beginning of *September*, that a new Congregation was erected in *Rome*, called *the Congregation of War*, which was appointed to aſſemble twice every Week, to conſult of the manner and means of waging the Temporal War; This new term of a *Congregation of War*, which was never heard of before in *Rome*, adminiſtred ſubject of Diſcourſe to all *Italy*, both becauſe it was contrary to the antient practices of that Court, which did always cover their temporal Deſigns with Spiritual names; and becauſe the management thereof was committed to the care of fifteen Cardinals, who were all Men of Letters, but not of Arms: howſoever they ſerved the preſent turn, for being Men of the *Spaniſh* faction, and depending upon *Spain*, it was believed, that their Intereſt and Power would have been very available in that Court for carrying forward the War, and engageing the principal Miniſters in their quarrel.

All Princes of Chriſtendom being now concerned in this difference, and great endeavours made for reconciliation; it was encharged to

Giuſtiniano Ambaſſadour to the Court of *England*, to repreſent unto that King the proviſions which were making at *Rome* for a War, deſiring that his Majeſty would prepare thoſe Forces, which he had already promiſed in defence of their Republick; for that *Spain* was arming, and threatned on all ſides to invade them: To which the King anſwered, “That he was reſolved to defend their Cauſe, not out of any grudge or quarrel of his own with the Pope; but (as he called God to witneſs) out of a principle of duty to conſerve that Liberty which God had given to Princes: nor had he any reſpect to his own particular benefit, or hopes to receive Rewards from the Republick; but only to the juſtice of that Cauſe, which was moſt juſt and pleaſing to God: and that therefore he would ſpeedily perform his Promiſe with more ſincerity and conſtancy of mind towards the Republick, than the King of *Spain* had done to the Pope, whoſe Letters and Promiſes contained nothing but froth and vanity.

Thus were all Chriſtian Princes concerned in this quarrel on one ſide or the other, ſome being intent to accommodate differences by middle and moderate terms, and others to take Parties and aſſiſt with Arms and open Violence: until at length, about the middle of *October*, the Pope taking it into his conſideration, that ſo much the longer, that this quarrel continued, and that the *Venetians* remained in their ſeparation from the Church, ſo much more did his Reputation ſuffer, and the Power of the Spiritual Authority diſcover its own weakneſs: wherefore calling Monſieur *d'Alincourt* the *French* Ambaſſadour unto him, he declared and proteſted, that he was infinitely deſirous of an Accommodation, and was ready to accept of any terms which were not prejudicial or derogatory to the honour of the Papal See: Upon which *Alincourt* entering into conſultation with the *French* Cardinals, ſome Propoſals were ſent to the Republick, and communicated by the hand of *de Freſnes*, containing a Project for making and eſtabliſhing a Peace. Nor was the King of *Spain* unactive herein; but to ſhew his zeal, he diſpatched an Ambaſſadour Extraordinary to *Venice* upon this occaſion, who declared in the Senate, that his Maſter was ſo paſſionate in this buſineſs, *That if he had two Sons, he would be contented to Sacrifice one of them on condition it might be an offering of Atonement and Reconciliation between the Pope and the* Venetian *State.*

Ann. 1607. Whilſt all theſe Treaties and Inſtances were a-foot, Letters were diſpatched from the Court of *Spain*, to the Count *de Fuentes* Governour of *Milan*, that he ſhould levy an Army to be in a readineſs for aſſiſtance of the Pope, and accordingly three thouſand *Italian* Foot were raiſed for this Service, which with the other Forces already prepared and levied in other parts: the King deſigned to compoſe an Army of twenty five thouſand Foot, and four thouſand Horſe.

The Senate of *Venice* obſerving that the *Spaniards* Armed, did not think it agreeable to the Rules of good Government for them to ſit idle, but to put themſelves in a poſture of War, to repel Force with Force, and to be in a readineſs on all occaſions which might happen. And accordingly they added ſix hundred *Italian* Foot, and one thouſand *Albanians* to the nine thouſand ſix hundred Foot, and ſix hundred Men at Arms, and one hundred and fifty *Albanian* Horſe, which were already liſted and in a readineſs. They alſo ordered Count *Martinengo* to raiſe four thouſand *French* Soldiers, and ſix hundred *Curaſſiers*: and not to be wanting in their Fleet at Sea, they ordered that to the thirty eight Sail of Gallies already equipped, twelve more ſhould be ſet out with addition of five more, which were recalled from the Iſlands in the *Levant*.

Ann. 1607. Whileſt the *Spaniards* and *Venetians* were arming in this manner on one ſide and the other; *Priuli* Ambaſſadour for the Republick in *France*, acquainted the King with all theſe preparations, deſiring his Majeſty would be pleaſed to declare himſelf in favour of the Senate: to which the King gave Anſwer, That it was not as yet time; and that there remained ſtill hopes of Accommodation; and that being moved and ſollicited herein by all the Princes of *Italy*, he was diſpatching the Cardinal *Joyeuſe* to *Venice*, and thence to *Rome*, to interpoſe effectually in this Mediation.

And indeed this Cardinal was the moſt fit and proper Inſtrument of any to effect this accord: for he was not only a Perſon of great Eſteem and Authority in the Court of *Rome*, being a Cardinal of the firſt degree and rank; but alſo of great reputation with the Senate of *Venice*; who being deſirous to commit the Office of Mediation to the Intereſt of the *French* King, whom they had found more ſincere and real to them, than the King of *Spain* and his Adherents, they received the Cardinal with entire ſatisfaction, who arrived at *Venice* about the middle of *February*.

The Cardinal ſpending little time in formal Ceremonies and Viſits, immediately entered on his buſineſs, delivered his Credential Letters, and opened his Commiſſion: and in the firſt place inſiſting, that as it was neceſſary to provide for the ſecurity and reputation of the Republick; ſo alſo it was neceſſary to contrive ſuch means as might give ſatisfaction to the Pope, whoſe Propoſals were theſe: That an Ambaſſadour be ſent from the Republick to deſire his Holineſs, that he would be pleaſed to take off the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures which he had paſſed upon them; That all the Religious, as well *Jeſuits* as others, who had left and abandoned their Dwelling and Habitations, ſhould be again reſtored. That the King ſhould give his word to the Pope, that during this Treaty at *Rome*, the Laws about which this Controverſie aroſe, ſhould be ſuſpended: And the Cardinal inſiſting more on this Point, than on any other, earneſtly urged that ſome reſolution might be taken ſpeedily and with ſecrecy, on which the King might with confidence eſtabliſh this his promiſe and aſſurance. On the laſt Point the Cardinal inſiſted with more than ordinary preſſures, declaring that the ſeaſon of the year which was now only proper for Conſultations and Treaties was but ſhort; and that the time of War and Action approached, and therefore it was neceſſary to come to a determination; and that the Senate would more eſpecially declare themſelves concerning the Laws: for as the King did not deſire nor approve, that any Decree or Law ſhould be made and recorded for ſuſpenſion of theſe Laws, nor any other thing which might prejudice the dignity of the Senate and the publick Liberty: ſo he alſo did conſider, That as the Pope had paſſed theſe Cenſures openly, and in the ſight of the World, ſo he could not take them off, without ſome apparent reaſons and cauſes, which might ſalve his reputation and his honour. And becauſe the King his Maſter did well know, that the Republick was extreamly averſe to ſuch ſuſpenſion, he was willing to touch that Point very tenderly, and eaſe them therein by taking the whole burden on his own ſhoulders, giving his word to the Pope, that thoſe Laws ſhould be ſuſpended during this Treaty, without any Decree or Declaration on part of the Republick : conditionally, that as the Pope ſhall hereupon without farther delay take of the Cenſures ; ſo the Republick ſhall promiſe unto the King not to execute theſe Laws during the time of this Treaty : the which being aſſented unto by the Senate, he did not doubt but to give ſatisfaction unto the Pope, and maintain and ſecure their Liberty, and conclude all with a happy and bleſſed Peace. As to that Article which concerned the *Jeſuits*, his Maſter's deſire was, that they ſhould be reſtored ; it being an ordinary conceſſion and grant in the concluſion of all Treaties ; that ſuch as have been Parties, Fomenters, or Abettors, on either ſide ſhould be remitted and included in the Articles , for that indeed it was not conſiſtent with the honour of the Pope, that thoſe who had ſuffered for his cauſe, and for their Obedience to the Apoſtolical Sea, ſhould be excluded and ſuffer for the performance of their duty.

To this Speech of the Cardinal the Senate made this Anſwer, That the expulſion of the *Jeſuits* was reſolved and decreed upon very ſound and mature conſiderations, and the Law againſt them ſo firmly eſtabliſhed, as could not be repealed : and yet to ſalve the Pope's reputation herein; all other Religious, ſuch as Friars and others who were Parties and Abettors of the Pope's Cauſe, ſhould be included, and reſtored to their priſtine ſtate and condition : but as to the point of giving their word to the King for non-execution or ſuſpenſion of the Laws during this Treaty, they could not recede from the determination ſo often repeated, which was, *That in the uſe of theſe Laws, they will not depart from their antient Piety and Religion profeſſed.*

But the Cardinal inſiſted and deſired to have had ſomething more plain and agreeable to his Propoſition : but howſoever (being well acquaint with the Pope's mind to agree almoſt on any terms) he made this Reply to the Senate, that though he expected to receive an Anſwer more ſatisfactory to his demands ; yet conſidering that it was the King's pleaſure that the Republick ſhould have entire contentment, he reſted ſatisfied with this Anſwer, which he deſired might be kept as a Secret, leſt being divulged, it might be interrupted by the contrivances of unquiet and malitious ſpirits.

Howſoever, the Senate reſolved to communicate all that paſſed to *Don Franciſco* the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour, who had offered a like Equivolent ; and having been to make the Cardinal a Viſit had deſired to joyn with him in his Negotiation ; which the Cardinal refuſing, *Don Franciſco* was very urgent to know all particulars, which the Senate very readily communicated to him.

Thus were the Treaties ſo far proceeded, as adminiſtred great hopes of Peace, had not the great preparations made for War by the Count *de Fuentes* Governour of *Milan*, and the diſturbances amongſt the *Griſons* rendered all things cloudy and tending to a ſtorm : howſoever the Cardinal *Joyeuſe* with ſuch Anſwer and Propoſals as he had obtained from the Senate, reſolved for *Rome*, and accordingly departed from *Venice* on the 17th of *March*.

The Cardinal was no ſooner departed, but the Marqueſs *de Caſtiglione* arrived at *Venice* with Character of Ambaſſadour from the Emperor to the Pope: And though the Duke of *Savoy* was employed for the Emperour, and then reſided at *Venice* in quality of his Ambaſſadour, yet *Caſtiglione* had Orders in his way to ſtop there and encline the Senate (as well as he was able) towards a Peace; but this Marqueſs could obtain nothing more than what was delivered to the Miniſters of *France* and *Spain*; of which the Ambaſſadour *Don Franciſco* made collection in writing, with the proceedings of the Treaty, Copies of which he ſent with diligence to *Rome*, and were not only ſhewed to the Pope, but diſperſed through all the Court, to the intent, that it might be made known to the World, that the *French* were not able to procure, or gain other terms from the Senate, than ſuch as had been already granted to the Miniſters of *Spain* and other Princes. Of which the Senate having information, thought fit for prevention of falſe Reports, to ſend authentick Copies of all proceedings to their Miniſters in foreign Courts, and particularly that of their laſt reſolution.

The arrival of the Cardinal at *Rome* filled all the Town with Diſcourſe; every one ſpeaking variouſly as his paſſion guided, ſome being of Opinion that the matters were all concluded; others of different ſentiments, believed that they were impoſſible: and indeed the Pope himſelf being diſtracted by both ſides, remained unreſolved for the ſpace of three or four days: during which time, he confeſſed himſelf to have been as it were tormented on the wrack: For he conſidered, that to yield unto the *Venetians* almoſt in every Point, was a ſcandalous diminution to the Papal Power; and to abandon the *Jeſuits* his faithful Officers, was yet more hard and intolerable; for, if for two Clergymen only there had been ſuch a clutter, how much more ought he to be concerned for a whole Order, and for the conſervation and re-eſtabliſhment of his moſt beloved Emiſſaries. But in regard the *Venetians* ſeemed reſolute in that Point, the Cardinal *Perron* perſwaded the Pope to wave the Diſpute, leſt when all other Points were agreed, it ſhould be ſaid, that the particular Cauſe of the *Jeſuits* ſhould become the Univerſal Concernment of the whole Church; and that it was neceſſary in the firſt place to eſtabliſh the Papal Authority in *Venice*, before he could hope to gain admiſſion for the *Jeſuits*: and that herein he would do well to follow the Example of *Clement* VIII. who in a Controveſie he had with *France* on the ſame Subject, was contented to wave the Point concerning the reſtoration of the *Jeſuits*, and in time obtained that, which at that preſent ſeemed impoſſible; upon which Advice, the Pope was contented to leave that matter wholly to the management of the Cardinal, with Inſtructions to perform the beſt he could therein, but not to break off upon the refuſal of it.

The Cardinal having agreed all matters with the Pope, and received Inſtructions how to manage his Intereſt (for he confided more in the Cardinal, than in any other of the Miniſters:) he in the firſt place gave account to the King his Maſter of his ſucceſs; and then taking Poſt, rode very hard to *Ancona*, from whence taking a Boat, he arrived in haſt at *Venice*, hoping in the Holy days of *Eaſter* to operate better in favour of the Pope, and prevail on the minds of the Senate, which he expected to find more gently diſpoſed in the days preparatory to that Feſtival.

The next day after his arrival, the Cardinal had Audience of the Senate, to whom he declared the ſubſtance of his Negotiations, but did not yet ſo far open himſelf, as to ſpecifie the particulars which were contained in the Pope's Breviate, though the Senate was well adviſed, that the Cardinal had no other Writing, than certain Inſtructions ſubſcribed by the Pope's own hand: but yet the reputation which the Cardinal had of being one of the firſt Degree in the Court of *Rome*, forbad all farther enquiry into his Power or Authority. The Cardinal therefore in the firſt place enlarged himſelf in a Rhetorical Speech concerning the good will and intention of the Pope, which was directed to no other end, than the good and welfare of the Chriſtian Church, being deſirous to ſupport and maintain the Papal Dignity with a conſtancy becoming the Apoſtolical Chair: and though the Pope had long ſince endeavoured to accommodate his differences with the Serene Republick, yet the concluſion had been often interrupted by the ill Offices and contrivances of Men not well inclined to the publick Peace; Howſoever his Holineſs being willing to ſurmount all Controverſie, the difficulties were reduced unto two Heads: The firſt Point was, that an Ambaſſadour ſhould be deſigned unto *Rome* before the Cenſures were taken off; and the ſecond, that the *Jeſuits* ſhould be reſtored: howſoever, ſince the Senate had made ſo much difficulty on the firſt Point; he had received Inſtructions to yield it unto them, and in the firſt place to take off the Cenſures; but as to that concerning the *Jeſuits* it admitted of longer Diſpute, of which he deſired to be heard at a more private Audience.

In concluſion, after that matters were debated for three or four days in the Senate, all came to be reſolved in this manner: "That the "Cardinal ſhould publickly in the Palace of St. *Mark*, and in the face "of the whole Senate declare that the Cenſures were taken off, or that "he did then make them void and null. For though the Senate did ſtill inſiſt on their Innocence, and that they had never juſtly incurred the penalty of the Eccleſiaſtical Cenſure, yet however it being judged an Act of no prejudice to their Cauſe, the Cardinal's Declaration was admitted: though the Senate would not conſent to accompany the Cardinal to St. *Mark*'s Church, and there after Maſs was ended to receive a Benediction from him, leſt it ſhould appear to the People, as if the Cenſures were taken off by that Benediction, which would be a tacite Confeſſion that the Senate was guilty of ſome fault, which they in no wiſe yielding unto, would not admit of the leaſt colour or appearance of Abſolution.

Secondly, That at the ſame time when the Cardinal declared the Cenſures taken off, the *Doge* ſhould deliver to his hand a revocation of the Proteſt which the Senate had made, when the Cenſures were publiſhed.

Thirdly, The manner and form was agreed for delivery of the Priſoners.

Fourthly, It was agreed, that all Friers and other Religious ſhould be reſtored again to their Monaſteries and Convents, excepting only the *Jeſuits* and fourteen other Friers who were fled for their Crimes, and not on account of the Pope's quarrel.

Fifthly, It was agreed, that an Ambaſſadour ſhould be immediately choſen, and with all convenient ſpeed ſent to the Pope.

An. 1607. The Articles being thus agreed and confirmed, the 21ſt. of *April* was the day appointed for putting matters in Execution, which were performed in this manner :

The Cardinal being lodged in the Palace of the Duke of *Ferrara*, Monſieur *de Freſnes* early attended him at that Houſe, where *Mark Ottobon* the Secretary, accompanied with two Notaries belonging to the *Ducal* Office of *Chancery*, and with other Officers of the Priſon, brought before the Ambaſſadour the two Priſoners, *viz.* the Abbot of *Nerveſa*, and *Scipio Saraceno* Canon of *Vicenza* : and then the Secretary having made his Obeyſance to the Ambaſſadour ; ſaid, *Theſe are, my Lord, the Priſoners, which our moſt Sevene Prince, according to a late agreement, hath ſent to be conſigned to your Excellency* : “ Proteſting howſoever that the ſame was done with intent and deſign only to gratifie “ his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, without prejudice or infringment of that “ Authority and Right which the Republick hath to paſs Judgement on “ Eccleſiaſtical Perſons, and to cite them before their Secular Tribunals “ of Juſtice. To which the Ambaſſadour replyed, That he underſtood it ſo, and in that manner he received them ; of which the *Ducal* Notaries taking notice, entered the ſame in their publick Regiſters. This being done, the Priſoners recommended themſelves to the Ambaſſadour's protection, who promiſed them his favour ; and cauſing them to follow him into a withdrawing Room where the Cardinal was ſeated ; He ſaid to him, Theſe are the Priſoners which are to be delivered into the hands of the Pope ; Then ſaid the Cardinal, conſign them into the hands of this Perſon (pointing to the Officer, who was *Claudio Montano* the Pope's Commiſſary, ſent to that end and purpoſe ;) who having touched them, in token of ſeizure and poſſeſſion, he deſired the Miniſters of Juſtice that they would be pleaſed to take the care and cuſtody of them.

This matter being paſt, the Cardinal with the Ambaſſadour went to the *Doge*, who after Maſs returned to the College, attended with the Signory and the *Savii* ; and having there taken their Seats, the Cardinal entered and declared himſelf in theſe words : “ I rejoyce much to “ ſee this moſt happy day, greatly deſired by me ; in which I declare “ to your Serene Highneſs, That all the Cenſures of the Church are taken off from you, as in reality they are ; and hereof I cannot but te- “ ſtifie a moſt ſenſible ſatisfaction, in reſpect to that great benefit which “ all Chriſtendom, and *Italy* in particular, will receive thereby. Then the *Doge* delivered into the hands of the Cardinal the revocation of the Proteſt, which was in this form directed to all the Prelates, to whom the Proteſt was ſent, and was to this purpoſe :

“ That whereas expedients and means have been found to make the “ Pope ſenſible of the true candour of mind, and in the ſincere actions of this “ Republick ; ſo that all Cauſes are removed of the preſent differences : “ And whereas this Republick hath always endeavoured to maintain a “ perfect good underſtanding with the Apoſtolical Chair ; ſo now more e- “ ſpecially it remains ſatisfied in having at length obtained this their moſt “ juſt deſire, of which it is thought fit to give them notice. Adding far- “ ther, *That all matters being performed on both ſides, which were moſt* “ *equal, and the cenſures taken off, the Proteſt alſo was revoked.*

In the Evening the Senate aſſembled for choice of an Ambaſſadour to be ſent to *Rome* and reſide with his Holineſs; the Perſon elected was the Cavalier *Contarini*, who in Company with three others had formerly been employed to congratulate with the Pope for his aſſumption to the Papal Chair: and herewith ended this great Controverſie between the Pope and the *Venetians*, which had diſturbed all Chriſtendom, and might have been the ruine and deſtruction of the Papal Authority, had not the Pope wiſely in time been made ſenſible thereof, and granted every thing almoſt which the *Venetians* required: In the beginning and progreſs of this whole matter, we may obſerve the ſpirit of this *Paul* V. who aſpired to make himſelf as great as *Sixtus* V. and ſeemed to follow much of his way and method; but he undertook an Enterpriſe which was too difficult and out of his power: his Errour in which, was grounded on a miſtake; that he was better able to cope or deal with a Republick than with a Monarch; for that the firſt being compoſed of divers Heads and Humours, might ſooner admit a diviſion in Councils than in a ſingle Perſon; and that many of them being zealous, and moſt of them ſuperſtitious in Religion, might be affected by Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures, and terrified by Excommunications. But the contrary was made to appear by the effects, which moſt evidently have ſignalized the Wiſdom and Conſtancy of this Republick, which would never be obliged to become pliant and flxible by all the fires of Hell, and damnation which the Pope could threaten. And indeed it farther appears, that as the Republick was of Opinion, that the Cenſures of the Pope were invalid when they were not eſtabliſhed on juſt and legal cauſes; ſo likewiſe they believed that they could not depart from the leaſt ſcruple of their temporal Power which God had given them, without betraying that Truſt which God had committed to their charge; and herein they were ſo reſolute and conſtant, that leſt they ſhould ſeem to acknowledge a fault in any one ſtep of the late tranſactions, they would not ſo much as accept of the Cardinals Bleſſing, leſt it ſhould ſeem to be given in form of Abſolution.

This Controverſie being ended, which had hitherto allayed all the joy and contentment which the Pope conceived for his late exaltation to the Papal Dignity: the *Venetians* in purſuance of the Articles agreed, diſpatched the four Ambaſſadours to *Rome*, namely *Franciſco Molino*, Procurator of St. *Mark*, *John Mocenigo*, *Peter Dudo*, *Franciſco Contareno*, all Knights and Senators of Chief Renown; whom the Pope received with all imaginable honour, being overjoyed to have put an end to a buſineſs ſo full of danger to himſelf, and in which his meaſures having failed him, he no longer argued in defence of his Cauſe, nor entertained the Ambaſſadours with Expoſtulations concerning matters paſt, which having had little foundation in any reaſons, he was deſirous to pretermit, and to have buried in ſilence.

Soon after the promotion of this Pope, in the Month of *November* 1605. that diabolical Plot of the Gun-powder Treaſon to blow up the King and Queen of *England*, and all the Nobles and Commons aſſembled in Parliament, was happily, and by God's immediate Providence, diſcovered; the particulars of which being recorded in our Chronicles, and believed to have been contrived at *Rome*, we ſhall not need to relate in this place: only that King *James* for ſecurity of himſelf and his Dominions

Baker's Hiſt. minions iſſued forth a Proclamation, commanding all *Roman* Prieſts, Semiraries and *Jeſuits*, as being the chief Incendiaries of troubles, to depart the Kingdom of *England*, and not to return upon pain of the ſeverity of thoſe Laws which were made againſt them: as alſo all Recuſants to return home to their Dwellings, and not to remain in *London*, or come within ten miles of the Court without ſpecial Licenſe. After which Proclamation, the Oath of Allegiance was preſently adminiſtred to all ſorts of people, and their names certified to the Lords of the Council who refuſed to take it. The form of this Oath adminiſtred to the Recuſants in *England* was brought to *Rome*, and examined and diſcuſſed by the College of Cardinals, who after mature and ſerious deliberation, did unanimouſly concur, that the ſaid Oath could not be lawfully taken by any true Catholick with a ſafe Conſcience. Wherefore the Pope ſignified ſo much by his Brief, exhorting his people in *England* to refuſe the ſaid Oath, and with patience, conſtancy and faith, to ſuffer thoſe perſecutions which for this cauſe were laid upon them.

In the year 1607. the King of *Congo* ſent an Ambaſſadour to this Pope called *Anthony Emanuel Vunthi*, for ſo the *Jeſuits* and other Miſſinaries into thoſe parts had named him; he was received honourably at *Rome*, where the Pope promiſed to furniſh him with ſeveral learned and godly Preachers which ſhould return with him into his own Country, and there labour to encreaſe and propagate the Goſpel; but this Ambaſſadour falling ſick ſoon after his arrival at *Rome*, was buried in the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore*, and with him ceaſed the deſign of ſending Apoſtles into thoſe parts. Howſoever the Arch-biſhop of *Goa*, in imitation of the late Ambaſſadour from *Congo*, procured Letters from the King of *Perſia* to this Pope, dated at *Spahaun* the 20th day of *January* 1608. and were afterwards followed by an Ambaſſadour called *Ali Golikek Mordar*, who arrived at *Rome* in the year 1609. and was received into the *Vatican*, where the Pope ſate on his Throne, and on each ſide the Cardinals in form and manner of a Conſiſtory.

Thoſe Writers who favour the Papal Cauſe, pretend that the King of *Perſia* ſent then to acknowledge Obedience to the Pope, who for that cauſe returned ſolemn thanks to God for having enlightned thoſe remote parts with the rays of his Goſpel, and that the Sun of Righteouſneſs was ariſen in thoſe parts, after ſo long a Night of obſcure Gentiliſm and falſe Religion. But the ſucceſs of following times proved the miſtake of this matter, the Kings of *Perſia* continued ſtill in the Doctrine of their Prophet *Ali*; and therefore it may with more reaſon be aſſerted and believed, that this Ambaſſadour from *Perſia*, was ſent in favour and at the inſtigation of ſome of the *Perſian* Subjects, who were, or had been Chriſtians of the *Armenian* Church, which by ſome Friers crept in amongſt them had been ſeduced from their own to the *Roman* Church; which was not difficult to perform, if we conſider the poverty of thoſe poor *Armenians*, who were eaſily inclined to the profeſſion of that Faith, upon promiſes of preferments in the Church, ſo that until theſe days there are ſeveral Biſhops of the *Roman* rite in *Armenia*, and Monaſteries of *Dominican* Friers.

An. 1610. In the year 1610. this Pope beatified *Ignatius Loyola*, who was the firſt Founder and Inſtitutor of the Order of *Jeſuits*, giving them leave and permiſſion amongſt themſelves, and publickly in their own Churches to invoke him as a Saint, or as one of thoſe happy Souls who live and reign in Heaven with God; but not to be prayed unto, or invoked by the Univerſal Church. But with more Ceremony and Joy, he canonized the ſame year *Charles Borromeo* the Arch-biſhop of *Milan*. In the time of *Clement* VIII. the people of *Milan* had earneſtly deſired this grace, and had begun the methods and rules of proceedings obſerved in that caſe, the which being continued until the time of this *Paul* V. were then at the deſire and requeſt of the Kings of *Spain*, *Poland* and *Sweden*, as alſo of the College of Cardinals, and Biſhops of the Province of *Milan*, conſummated and finiſhed with great pomp and expence. In the Month of *May* of this year 1610. *Henry* IV. King of *France* was wickedly and traiterouſly aſſaſſinated by *Ravillac*, the particulars of which are ſpecified in the *French* Hiſtory, the which diabolical Act, as it aſtoniſhed the whole World, ſo it ſadly affected Pope *Paul*, who had received many Obligations from that King, being endeared to him by many late circumſtances in the Controverſie with *Venice*, and upon this ſcore he deeply lamented this unhappy fate, which he ſaid was a loſs to all Chriſtendom and the Univerſal Church; and underſtanding that ſome young *French* Men, then at *Rome*, rejoyced at the fact, and ſtiled the villanous Aſſaſſinate the Deliverer of their Country, he cauſed them to be ſeized, and upon Proceſs made againſt them, he condemned them to the Gallies. And though Popes do ſeldom aſſiſt at the Obſequies of deceaſed Princes, yet he was reſolved to be preſent at theſe, which were celebrated at *Rome* with great ſolemnity, where one *Sequier* preaching the funeral Sermon of this great Prince, he beſtowed on him theſe Titles of Praiſe and Dignity, calling him the Protector of the publick Peace, the Ornament of the Catholick, Apoſtolick, and *Roman* Church, the ſole Arbitrator between Chriſtian Kings and Princes; and the delight of the Univerſe; with which the Pope was ſo well affected, that he acknowledged all that was ſaid of him, to have been true, but yet that this Elogium came far ſhort of the merit of this great Prince.

Beſides theſe honours performed to the three forementioned Parties, he beatified *Philippus Nerius*, Founder of the Order of the *Fathers of the Oratory*, called in *French*, *Les peres d' Oratoire*, and in *Spain* known by the name of *Obſervantes Minores*; as alſo the Virgin *Tereſa*, who for it inſtituted the Order of deſcalced *Carmelites*, with divers others.

But now to enumerate the many publick works done by this Pope, we ſhall find none to have exceeded him in Magnificent Structures. For in the firſt place, he highly beautified the *Vatican Baſilicon*, called by us the Church of St. *Peter*, which being begun by *Julius* II. and amplified and encreaſed by *Gregory* XIII. and *Sixtus* V. was not yet perfected until the time of this Pope, who by the help and contrivance of *Michael Angelo de Bonarora*, cauſed the old Building of *Conſtantine* to be demoliſhed, and began a moſt ſtupendous work, erecting from the very foundation, the whole body of the Church from the Chappel of *Gregory* to the fartheſt end, building the Quire, Chancel, and both the lower and upper *Portico*, from whence the Pope on certain days bleſſed the People: and in remembrance whereof this Inſcription is engraven within the Church.

Paulus V.
Pont. Max.
Vaticanum Templum
a Julio II. *Inchoatum.*
Et uſque ad Gregorii & Clementis
Sacella
Aſſiduo Centum Annorum
Opificio Productum.
Tanta Mollis Acceſſione
Univerſum Conſtantiniana
Baſilica Ambitum includens
Confecit
Confeſſionem Beati Petri Exornavit
Frontem Orientalem & Porticum
Extruxit.

But beſides this foregoing work of great Magnificence and charge beſtowed on St *Peter*'s Church, he enlarged the *Vatican* Palace, adding ſeveral convenient Stairs and paſſages into the Garden called *the Belvedere*; by which in a more direct way he might paſs into it; for that Palace is ſaid to be ſo great, as to contain five thouſand ſix hundred and fifty Chambers: He alſo enlarged the *Vatican* Library, and adorned it with the Pictures of many Men famous in their Ages, made and drawn by excellent hands; to this Library he added a place to keep the Records of the ſecret tranſactions of the *Roman* Sea, which he called *Archivium Apoſtolicum.*

Nor did his Munificence end with this work, but with more State and charge he errected a Chappel, called the Chappel of *Burgheſe*, in the Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore*, dedicated to the Bleſſed Virgin; the outſide of which, though built with Stone *digged* from *Quarries* on the banks of the *Tybur*, yet the inſide was enriched with *Numidian* and *Carian* Marble, and with *Granite* Marble, and Alabaſter fetched from *Chios* and *Phrygia*, the High Altar was ſupported with four lofty Pillars of Jaſper-ſtone beſet with Topaces, Rubies, Emeralds, Chryſolites, Onyx, Amethiſts, and divers other precious Stones from *Perſia* and *India*: and dreſſed up the Image of our Lady upon it, with rich embroidered Cloths, with Chains of Gold and Pearl, and the rareſt Gems. To this Chappel he gave a Croſs of Silver weighing one hundred twenty eight pounds, coſting two thouſand one hundred and fifty Ducats; He alſo erected the Statues of the Twelve Apoſtles in Silver, which coſt ſix thouſand Ducats of Gold, with ſix ſilver Candleſticks gilded, which coſt three thouſand Crowns: alſo two maſſy Candleſticks of Silver, which were placed at the foot of the high Altar, weighing one hundred and fourteen pounds, and coſt one thouſand four hundred Ducats of Gold. Moreover, he gave the heads of ſix Saints in Silver, which coſt two thouſand and thirty Ducats, and the Arms of ſix Saints, which coſt one thouſand two hundred Ducats; and alſo two Silver Baſons, weighing twenty three pounds, and which coſt five hundred pieces of Eight, the Crown which he beſtowed on the Image ſtudded with precious Stones, was valued at twelve thouſands Ducats of Gold, before which was hanged a Lamp of Silver weighing thirty one pounds, with many other rare and rich Gifts, which amounted in all to 31725 *Ducats* of Gold. I remember my ſelf to have ſeen and obſerved this Chappel with great admiration, and particularly noted the four Pillars of *Jaſpar* and Baſes of Braſs, and that the back of the Altar was all of *Lapis Lazuli*, and the Cupolo of the Chappel was painted by *Guido Rheni* of *Bologna*: this Chappel is juſt oppoſite to another built by *Sixtus* V. the chief Architect of which was *Domenico Fontana*, and coſt ſeven hundred thouſand Crowns, they are both additions to the *Sancta Maria Maggiore*, which is one of the greateſt Churches in *Rome*, it is ſeated on *Mons Eſquilinus*, and by ſome is named *Sancta Maria ad Nives*, becauſe that in the heats of the month of *Auguſt* it was revealed in a Viſion to thoſe who firſt founded this Church, that they ſhould build it in that place where at that ſeaſon they found Snow, which it ſeems appeared within the Compaſs of that Church, and gave meaſures for all the dimenſions of it, there being no Snow in any other part of all the City or Country.

And in regard the *Vatican* Palace was eſteemed to be ſituate in an unhealthy Air, and almoſt peſtilential in the heats of the Summer, it was accuſtomary for the Pope's in the hot ſeaſon of the year to remove themſelves to a ſmall Houſe on the *Mons Quirinus*, hiring to the great inconvenience of the Inhabitants, ſeveral Houſes for accommodation of the Servants and Followers of the Court. But this Pope *Paul* who was of a great and large Soul; not enduring to be confin'd within ſo narrow a compaſs, bought ſeveral Houſes belonging to the Neighbourhood; the which having pulled down, he in the place thereof erected that large and ſtately Palace, now called *Monte Cavallo*, from the two Horſes which are erected on a Pedeſtal before this Palace; in memory of which Building, on the Eaſtern ſide thereof there is this Inſcription engraved;

Paulus Quintus Pont. Max.
Anno Salutis MDCXI.
Pont. Sui VII.

There was no Pope that was ever more magnificent in Building than this, or who delighted more in publick Works, which tended to the common benefit of the City, either for uſe or ornament; for he enlarged the ways on the Mount *Quirinus* leading to this Palace, which were before very narrow and inconvenient, and brought ſeveral Aqueducts to it with plentiful ſtreams; many ſtreets of the City which were before crooked, he made direct and ſtreight with much Beauty and Ornament. All that part of the City which is ſituate on the other ſide of the *Tybur*, called at preſent *Traſtevere*; ſuffering much for want of Water, he refreſhed with admirable Streams flowing in great abundance, *Ex Agro Braccianenſi*, which he brought by Aqueducts at thirty five miles diſtance, partly underground, and partly with arched Work; which was divided into four Fountains, or rather Rivers of Water, falling from the top of that Hill where is now a Church and Monaſtery of *Franciſcan* Friers: and there they ſhewed us a Chappel built over that place, where St. *Peter* (as they ſaid) was crucified, and the very hole where his Croſs was fixed. On the high Altar of this Church, was that excellent and famed Piece of our Saviour's Aſcenſion, made by *Raphael Urbin*; he was himſelf ſo pleaſed with it, and ſo much admired it, that he ordered it ſhould be carried next to his Coffin when he went to be buried.

Beſides all theſe and many other publick Works which this Pope performed, he was much to be commended for his charitable Gifts and Alms to the Poor; amongſt which it was none of his leaſt acts of Charity, that he eſtabliſhed a Revenue, out of which every month there was raiſed a convenient Portion whereby to beſtow an honeſt and vertuous Maid in Marriage. He was greatly pleaſed with *Freſcati*, a Village about ten miles diſtant from *Rome*, called anciently *Villa Tuſculana*, where *Cicero* was much delighted, and made it the place of his retirement and Studies; and for that reaſon this Pope enlarged the Papal Palace there, and brought it into great reputation with the Cardinals and Nobles of *Rome*.

During the Wars between the Emperour and the Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, which happened in the Reign of this Pope, he laid a Tax on all the Clergy towards the maintenance and ſupport of the Catholick Cauſe: and a new Order of Knighthood was created under the patronage of the Bleſſed Virgin, St. *Michael* and St. *Francis*, who entered into a Vow to make War againſt the Hereticks, and extirpate them and the Hereſies they profeſſed: And about this time began that great Controverſie between the *Jeſuits* and the *Dominicans* concerning the immaculate Conception of the Bleſſed Virgin, which was rather ſmothered, than decided.

Thus did this Pope *Paul* V. paſs his time in Peace; for the quarrel he had with the *Venetians*, having given him ſome taſte of the inquietudes of War, he ever afterwards attended to a pacifick and repoſed Life, which produced thoſe excellent effects of Peace, ſuch as great Structures and munificence towards the Poor, which by unquiet Spirits are always diverted by the expences of War: And thus having conſumed his days, he departed this Life on the 24th of *January* 1621. and in the ſeventieth year of his Age, having reigned fifteen years, eight months and thirteen days; he was buried for a while in the Church of St. *Peter*, but his Body was in a ſhort time after removed from thence to his Chappel, which he had erected and added to the great Church of *Santa Maria Maggiore*. During his Reign he created ſixty Cardinals.

The Epitaph on his Monument is as followeth:

Paulus V. *Pont. Max. Patria Romanus, ex Burgeſia*
Familia
Cui perpetua Vita innocentia & ſedata Virtus;
Bononiæ Prolegato præfuit, mox à Gregorio XIV.
Cauſarum Cam. Apoſt. Auditor Creatus, & à Clemente VIII.
Ad Philippum II.
Hiſpaniarum Regem de graviſſimis rebus Legatus;
In Ampliſſimum Ordinem cooptatus inter Generales Inquiſitores
Adſcriptus.
Et Urbis Vicarius Electus, cum omnes, tantorum Munerum
Partes

Summa cum laude obiviſſet Ad Summum Pontificatum Leone XI.
è Vivis Erepto
Florens Adhuc Ætate Incredibili Patrum Conſenſu Evectus Eſt
Cumque Vigili Solicitudini Securitatem Annonæ Copiam
Juſtitiam, Et Quietem Populis Eccleſiaſticæ Ditionis
Concordiam Vero Et Pacem Univerſo Chriſtiano Orbi Semper Præſtitiſſet
Religionem Summa Pietate Coluiſſit
Urbem Magnificentiſſimis Ædificiis Ornaſſet Atque Gregoriis
Omnium Virtutum Officiis Aditum Sibi Ad Immortalitatem Aperuiſſet
E Mortalibus Raptus Grave Cunctis Sui Deſiderium Reliquit.
Sedit in Pontificatu Annos XV. *Menſes* VIII. *Dies* XIII. *Obiit Anno Sal.* MDCXXI. *Die* XXII. *Januarii.*

GREGORY XV.

THE Funeral Obſequies of *Paul* V. having been celebrated for the ſpace of nine days, according to the uſual Form and Cuſtom; the Cardinals on the tenth day, being the eighth of *February*, entered the *Conclave*, to the number of fifty, to which two others were added, who arrived at *Rome* a few days after the death of the Pope, one of which was Cardinal *Alexander Ludoviſio*, Arch-Biſhop of *Bologna*, who after many and various Factions and diverſity of Opinions in the *Conclave*, was choſen Pope: the firſt and moſt antient Party was that of *Montalto*, the ſecond of *Aldobrandino*, the third of *Borgheſe*, the fourth was that of the *Spaniſh* Faction, the fifth was of the *French*, beſides which were *Bonti*, *Sforza*, *Farneſe*, *Medici*, and *Eſte*, all which ſtood on their own bottoms, and formed diſtinct Parties of their own. When the firſt Scrutiny was made, *Bellarmine* had far the greater number of Votes, but falling ſhort of two Thirds, he was excluded, *Campori* made the greater buſtle, and ſo alſo did *Aquino*, but great and ſtrong Parties oppoſing againſt them, vacated their elections. At length Cardinal *Borgheſe* naming *Ludoviſio*, was followed by a general concurrence of almoſt all the Cardinals, almoſt we may ſay, becauſe *Campori* upon the news thereof, turned pale and ready to fall into a ſwoon, *Aldobrandino* alſo and *Aquino* fell ſick, and were carried out of the *Conclave*; and *Aquino* having now loſt all hopes of being made Pope, took it ſo grievouſly to heart, that in two days he departed this life. Thus *Ludoviſio* being elected, he was conducted into the Chappel of *Parlina*, where he was veſted in his Pontificalibus, and acknowledged and adored for Pope on the 21th of *February* 1621. and took the name of *Gregory* XV.

This Pope was born at *Bologna* on the third of *January* 1555. his Father was Count *Pompeo Ludoviſio*, and his Mother *Camilla Blanchina*, he was in his youthful years educated in the *Jeſuits* Colledg at *Rome*, where he was inſtructed in all ſorts of Humane and Philoſophical Learning: returning afterwards to *Bologna*, he ſtudied the Civil Law, in which he arrived to the degree of Doctor, and thence again ſetling himſelf at *Rome*, he gained the friendſhip of three ſucceeding Popes: by *Gregory* XIII. he was choſen and created Principal Judg of the *Capitol*; by *Clement* VIII. he was made Referendary of both Signatures, and preſided in all Civil Cauſes in the place of Deputy, to Cardinal *Ruſticuccio* the Pope's Vicar; he was afterwards aſſumed into Commiſſion with the Auditors of the *Rota*, which Office one of his Anceſtors named *Lodowick Ludoviſio*, had about one hundred and fifty years before, with great ſatisfaction and prudence admitted. He was likewiſe by the ſame *Clement* VIII. adjoyned in Commiſſion with *Maffeo Barbarini*, Clerk of the Apoſtolical Chamber (who afterwards was Pope) and ſent to *Beneventum* to appeaſe Tumults and Seditions ariſen between the Officers of the Pope, and thoſe of the King of *Spain*. And laſtly, *Paul* V. created him Arch-biſhop of *Bologna*; upon promotion to which Prelacy, he wrote a Letter to his Dioceſans, full of Charity and paternal Affection, which was Printed at *Bologna*, and is extant at this day. About this time a War was begun between *Charles Emanuel* Duke of *Savoy*, and *Ferdinand* Duke of *Mantoua*, grounded on certain differences about ſome places in the Dutchy of *Montferrat*, which were the cauſe of great trouble in *Milan* and other places of *Italy*, in regard that *Philip* III. King of *Spain* took part with the Duke of *Mantoua*: to appeaſe which diſturbances, and compoſe which differences, Pope *Paul* employed this *Alexander Ludoviſio*, qualifying him with the Title of his *Nuntio* in thoſe three Provinces, to confer with the Ambaſſadours of *France* and *Spain*; in which negotiation he ſo well acquitted himſelf, and with ſuch honour towards the Papal See, that Peace being concluded and all Diſputes ended, the Pope in reward of the pains and prudence of *Ludoviſio*, on the 20th of *November* 1616. promoted him to the degree of Cardinal, with which Title he reſided in his Dioceſe, until news came of the death of *Paul* V; when he immediately repaired to *Rome*, and entred the *Conclave* on the 18th of *February* with the other Cardinals, and on the 21th of that month was himſelf created Pope.

Some few days after which, being Crowned in St. *Peter's* Church with the uſual pomp, he took poſſeſſion of the Sovereign Power of the Church, in the Church of St. *John de Lateran*: which Ceremonies being paſt, he publiſhed Jubilies and Pardons over all Chriſtendom, to all ſuch, who ſhould with ſincere minds, pray for the proſperity and happineſs of his Reign.

At this time a War began to be inflamed between the Inhabitants and Neighbours of the *Valteline*, in which the Kings of *Spain* and *France* became involved, the cauſes and original of which doth not appertain to this Hiſtory: *Spain* being deſirous to intereſt *Gregory* in this Cauſe, offered to depoſite the Forts of the *Valteline* in his hands, making great oſtentations of their deſires to Peace and Quietneſs: but in *Rome* the Opinions and Counſels upon an offer of ſuch importance, were doubtful and divided; for thoſe who penetrated the moſt deeply into matters of Policy, were not willing that the Authority of the Church and Power of the Pope, ſhould be ſo far engaged, or that the profeſſed neutrality and mediation ſhould run ſo much hazard, for that being once accepted by the Pope, the Conditions of Peace would be rendered more difficult, and perhaps impoſſible: for if in caſe an agreement ſhould happen between two Kings, of reſtoring all things to their former eſtate; it would be difficult to conceive with what decency the Pope could reſtore into the hands of the Proteſtants (whom he eſteemed Hereticks) thoſe places which were committed to his Guardianſhip and Cuſtody. The *Venetian* Republick being of the ſame Opinion, ſent *Soranzo* Ambaſſadour Extraordinary to *Rome*, to diſwade the Pope from lending his Name and Authority to the intereſts of *Spain*: but he yielding an Ear to his Nephews, who were overcome by Penſions and Benefices from *Spain*, was poſſeſſed wirh an Opinion and Belief, that at the appearing of his Colours, all the Arms of the Enemy, would out of Veneration, fall from their hands; upon which the glorious memorial of Peace preſerved and Religion protected, would remain as an Ornament to his Name, and a Crown upon his Sepulchre. But the *French* ſhewed themſelves diſpleaſed, that *Gregory* had not expected the ſence of that Crown upon the matter, before he reſolved to accept the Depoſite: howſoever in the *French* Councils the Opinion prevailed, that the Pope ſhould accept of the Depoſite with certain limitations and reſerves; and it was declared, *that the Depoſite ſhould remain until the end of* July (it being now the Month of *May*) *within which time, the Forts being demoliſhed, and all reſtraints upon the* Griſons *and Armies removed which did oppreſs them, affairs ſhould be reſtored to their former State; which not being performed, the League ſhould ſupplicate the Pope to join himſelf to their Arms, thereby to obtain the effect.* In purſuance of theſe Reſolutions, the Duke of *Fiano* the Pope's own Brother, a dull and ſottiſh Man, was ſent with fifteen thouſand Foot and five hundred Horſe, to take poſſeſſion of the Towns to be depoſited; but had been reſiſted in the Valley, had not the Governour of *Milan* removed all obſtacles, but theſe matters came to no maturity: for amidſt theſe tranſactions, the Pope departed this life.

In the year 1622. *Lewis* XIII. of *France* was involved in great Wars againſt his Proteſtant Subjects, and rendered himſelf Maſter of the Provinces of *Poictou*, *Xantonge*, *Gaſcony*, *Dauphino* and *Languedoc*. *Philip* IV. King of *Spain* was employed in Wars againſt the *Hollanders*: likewiſe the Emperour *Ferdinand* II. waged Wars with the Proteſtants in *Germany*, and with aſſiſtance of Marquis *Spinola* and the Duke of *Bavaria*, deſpoiled the Prince *Palatine* of the *Rhine* of his Dominions; and having the plunder of *Heidelberg*, the Duke of *Bavaria* ſent the Library antiently belonging to the Princes *Palatines* to *Rome*, which by this Pope was tranſmitted into the *Vatican* with this Inſcription: *Sum De Bibliotheca Quam Hiedelberga Capta Spolium Fecit, Et Pont. Max. Greg.* XV. *Trophæum Miſit, Maximilianus Utriuſque Bavariæ Dux S. R. Imperii Archi-Dapifer Et Princeps Elector Anno* M. DCXXIII. Beſides which, ſeveral Standards taken at the Battel of *Prague*, were ſent to *Rome*, and there by the Pope's order hanged up in the Church of *Sancta Maria de Victoria*.

The ſucceſs of the Catholick Princes being to the great comfort of the Pope thus fortunate, he encouraged the Duke of *Savoy* to make War upon *Geneva*, and render himſelf Maſter of that place, whereby he would not only do juſtice to his own Right and Title, but alſo overthrow the capital Seat of Hereſie and *Calviniſm*. With the like zeal did the Pope require of the four *Venetian* Ambaſſadours, ſent according to cuſtom to congratulate his promotion to the Papal Chair; that the Republick would again admit into their State thoſe Religious People of the Society of Jeſus, which had been baniſhed from thence in the time of his Predeceſſor *Paul* V. But this requeſt being repugnant to many Laws and formalities, and the indiſſoluble bonds of Government, could not be obtained; though it was preſſed more home by the Marqueſs *de Coevre*, who paſſed from *Rome* to *Venice* in the name of his Maſter King *Lewis* II. and ſeconded with earneſt importunity, by the Biſhop of *Monte Fiaſcorie* the Pope's Nuntio, and the powerful Letters of the Cardinal *Ludoviſio*. For the Senate declared, that they could not depart from their firſt reſolution, which being founded on Decrees and ſolid Conſiderations, could in no wiſe be altered; and therefore Princes in Amity with them, ought not to preſs them unto that, which was neither permitted to them to grant, nor could they deny without doing a diſpleaſure to themſelves.

In this year *Oſman* the Emperour of the *Turks* invaded *Poland* with a powerful Army; but King *Sigiſmond* III. being aſſiſted with Money from the Pope, made a vigorous reſiſtance, and gained a ſignal Victory againſt the Enemy. *Ann.* 1622.

In this year alſo *Antonius de Dominis*, who was Arch-biſhop of *Spalato* in *Dalmatia*, deſerting his Biſhoprick and all his Eccleſiaſtical Preferments, for the ſake of the Goſpel and the true Proteſtant Religion, went into *England*, where he wrote a Book againſt the Eccleſiaſtical State: but being unconſtant and wavering in his Principles, he returned to *Rome*, where he renounced all the Principles of the Proteſtant Faith; and yet afterwards in the year 1624. in the time of *Urban* VIII. being troubled in Conſcience for his Apoſtacy, and re-aſſuming again the Profeſſion he made in oppoſition to the *Roman* Church, he was impriſoned in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, where he died; after which his Body was burn'd, together with his Writings.

The Congregation *de Propaganda Fide* was firſt inſtituted by this *Gregory* XV. as appears by his Letters Patents for the ſame, dated the 10th of *July* 1622. and for maintenance thereof he ſetled a certain Revenue to ſupport ſuch as employed themſelves in that important work.

In the ſame year alſo he canonized *Ignatius Loyola* firſt Founder of the *Jeſuits*, who was formerly beatified; likewiſe *Philip Neri* Founder of the *Oratorians*, called in *French*, *les Peres d' Oratoire*, with *Iſidore* a *Spaniard*, who had been a Husbandman, *Tereſia* a Nun that reformed the Order of the *Carmelites*, and *Francis Xaverius* a *Jeſuit*, whom they call *Apoſtle of the Indies*.

Moreover, this Pope, at the inſtance and deſire of King *Lewis* XIII. advanced the Biſhoprick of *Paris* to be an Arch-biſhoprick.

But what is more obſervable in his time, was a Diploma, which he made for the more orderly and eaſie Election of Popes by way of ſecret Suffrages, which divers had attempted to perform, but could never be perfected until this Pope wrote and publiſhed the ſame, the which Rule was afterwards practiſed at the Election of *Urban* VIII. the ſucceeding Pope.

This Pope had created eleven Cardinals, during the time of his Reign, which laſted only two years, five months, and twenty nine days, he departing this life on the 8th of *July* 1623. after which the Sea was vacant twenty eight days; his Body was carried to the Church of St. *Peter*, where it was depoſited only for ſome time, and afterwards tranſlated to the *Roman* College of *Jeſuits*, where it was buried in a moſt magnificent Chappel, erected by his Nephew Cardinal *Ludoviſio*, with this Epitaph inſcribed thereupon:

Gregorius XV.
Pontifex Ter Maximus
Terrarum Orbis bene-merentiſſimus
Multa brevi jaculatus Imperio
Quot Menſium tot Luſtrorum æquavit Annos,
Immortali dignus Nomine
Rebus præclare Geſtis
Roma pro Româ;
Pietatem auxit novo Cultu Religionis,
Religioni Aras extruxit;
Nova Sanctorum Apotheoſi
Inter quos
Ignatium Societatis Jeſu Fundatorem
Franciſcum Xaverium Anteſignanum
Gemellum Numen
Cæli Albo
Utriuſque Orbis gemellum veluti Caſtorem
Feſta Omnium Acclamatione intulit.
Feciſſet plura, ni Fato abreptus præpropero
Obiiſſet.
Lugendus ſemper, quod imperaſſet parum.
An. Sal. MDCXXIII.

URBAN VIII.

GREGORY XV. being dead, and his Funeral Rites according to Cuſtom, being performed; on the 19th of *July* early in the morning, the Cardinals to the number of fifty four entred the *Conclave*. It was the common Opinion of moſt People, that the Election would be long, and take up much time before it were determined; becauſe that as the Rules and Methods preſcribed by the Bull of *Gregory* V. for Election of Popes (which as yet had not been put in practice) might encreaſe the difficulty; ſo alſo it was obſerved, that the Cardinals were much divided in their Opinions and Votes; there being many perſons at that time, who for their Age, Vertues, and Services formally rendred to the Eccleſiaſtical State, ſtood Candidates, and eſteemed themſelves worthy of the Papal Dignity, namely four Princes, viz. *Farneſe*, *Eſte*, *Savoy*, and *Medici*, and four Nephews of Popes, *Bourgheſe*, *Ludoviſio*, *Buoncompagno*, and *Aldobrandino*; howſoever contrary to common Opinion, and beyond expectation of all, the Cardinals agreed, and on the 6th of *Auguſt* being

Sunday, and the day of the Feſtival obſerved in remembrance of the Transfiguration of Chriſt, they all concurred with common Voice in the Election of *Maffeo Barberini*, who was the fourth Pope, which the City of *Florence* had given to the Church, namely three of the Houſe of *Medicis*, *Aldobrandino*, and this *Barberini*, who was the fifth. This Pope was of the age of fifty ſix years when he was choſen; much to the wonder of the Electors themſelves, who were amazed to have deceived their own hopes by promoting a Perſon, who for his complexion and vigour might out live the greater part of them.

This Family of *Barberini* had flouriſhed for the ſpace of five hundred years in the little Republick of *Simi-Fontana*, which was ſituated between *Florence* and *Siena*, and not above two miles diſtant from the Town of *Barberini*: but this Republick being afterwards deſtroyed by the *Florentines*, the Family of *Barberini* tranſplanted themſelves to the City of *Florence*, where they lived with great honour and eſteem; and being employed in honourable places of Charge and Truſt, they rendred their Houſe moſt Illuſtrious by their Faithfulneſs, and dexterous management of Affairs.

But it will not be pertinent to our purpoſe to enumerate the many great Men of this Family; we ſhall onely name *Antonio Barberini*, who was the firſt of this name, who ſetled his Houſe at *Rome*, and was the Father of two Sons, *Francis* and *Antonio*. This latter was the Father of our *Maffeo*, who was born at *Florence* the fifth day of *April*, 1568. He had five Brothers, three of which died in their youth, but two of them had the ſatisfaction to ſee *Maffeo* inſtalled in the Papal Throne; one of which being a *Capuchin*, was called from his Cell to the Colledge of Cardinals, and dignified by his Brother with the Title of St. *Onufrio*.

But as to *Maffeo*, having been carefully educated in his youth, and having applied himſelf to all ſorts of Learning and Vertue; he was ſo greatly beloved and admired by *Sixtus* V. that at the age of twenty one years, he was made Abreviator of the principal Tribunal of Juſtice; and *Gregory* XIV. conferred on him the Signet-Office for Grants of Favour and Grace. *Clement* V. ſent him to *Fano* to be chief Governour of that City and of the Marches of *Ancona*, where by his Modeſty and ſweetneſs of his Carriage, he acquired the friendſhip and good-will of all the Inhabitants of thoſe parts. Afterwards he was made one of the ſeven Pronotaries of the Records of *Rome*; in execution of which Office, he faithfully delivered in writing all the particular Acts and Ceremonies obſerved at the two illuſtrious Marriages celebrated at *Ferrara*, between *Philip* III. King of *Spain*, and *Margaret* of *Auſtria*; as alſo between *Albert* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and *Iſabella Clara Eugenia*, Infanta of *Spain*: and being made afterwards Clerk of the Apoſtolical Chamber, he was joynedin Commiſſion with *Alexander Ludoviſio* Auditor of the *Rota*; with whom it was his good fortune to compoſe the Differences which aroſe about the limits and borders of the Eccleſiaſtical State, and the Dominions of the Kingdom of *Naples*, in determination of which, the Propoſals and Offers of *Maffeo* were applauded and accepted to the great contentment and ſatisfaction of Pope *Clement* VIII. who afterwards ſent him in quality of his Nuntio into *France*, to carry the Bleſſed Clouts to the *Dauphin*, who was born in the year 1601, and ſucceeded to his Father *Henry* IV. with the name of *Lewis* XIII. On this occaſion *Maffeo* obtained the re-eſtabliſhment of the *Jeſuits* in *France*, who had been baniſhed from thence in the year 1594.

Having thus acquitted himſelf with great honour in *France*, he returned again to *Rome*; from whence he was again ſent into *France*, with the character of Nuntio in Ordinary, Cardinal *Bubalo* (who had held that place formerly) being recalled from thence. Upon receiving this charge, *Maffeo* was farther dignified with the Title of Arch-biſhop of *Nazaret* in the Kingdom of *Naples*: *Clement* VIII. being dead, as was alſo his Succeſſour *Leo* XI. *Maffeo* was ſtill continued by *Paul* V. in his Office of Nuntio; but in the year 1607, after the differences between that Pope and the *Venetians* were compoſed, he was recalled to *Rome*, where he received the honour of the Cardinals Hat in *October* of the ſame year, with Title of St. *Peter de Monte Aurec*, which he afterwards changed for that of St. *Onufrio*, and kept the ſame until the time that he was elected Pope, when he conferred it on his Brother, as we have before-mentioned. After he was Cardinal, he was conſtituted the Pope's Legat at *Bologna*, where he reſided for the ſpace of three years; he was Protector of the *Scotch* Nation; and having reſigned his Arch-biſhoprick of *Nazareth*, he was created Biſhop of *Spoleto*, where he kept his reſidence, and ordered all matters according to the Orders and Directions of the Council of *Trent*: and to keep up the force of the Eccleſiaſtical Canons, he erected a Congregation of Caſuiſts, by whom all difficult and doubtful Caſes were explicated and determined.

He was alſo a Man of that great Vertue and Learning, that his Houſe was a *Muſæum*, and the *Aſylum* of vertuous and learned Men, and received ſuch Strangers with great humanity, who were Perſons of Parts and Learning. Wherefore *Gregory* XV. declared him Patron and Protector of the *Greeks*, and all the Oriental Nations, who coming to *Rome*, repreſented their Cauſes and Conditions, without the help and intervention of an Interpreter. And thus *Maffeo Barberini* having made many ſteps in the degrees of Honour, and prepared himſelf for the Pontifical Dignity, by the many Services he had rendered to the Eccleſiaſtical State; his turn came to aſcend unto the Popedom; for (as we have ſaid) *Gregory* being deceaſed, this *Barberini* was on the ſixth of *Auguſt* elected Pope, taking the name of *Vrban* VIII. with applauſe of the World, by reaſon of the high conceit then had of his Learning and Ability.

The Pope ſoon after his Election fell ſick of a violent Fever, cauſed by the inconveniencies he had ſuffered in the *Conclave* and the unhealthfulneſs of the Air, to the great grief and fear of the People of *Rome*, who being extreamly rejoyced with his Election, were much dejected with the danger of his death; but being recovered again, he took this Motto, *In Domino ſperans non Infirmabor*. He was of the age of fifty five years when he was firſt elected; at which time, before he would retire to cloath himſelf in his Pontifical Veſtments, he proſtrated himſelf before the Altar, and with tears did earneſtly intreat of God, that in caſe, according to his Omniſcient Providence, he foreſaw that he were unequal for ſo great a charge, or ſhould not prove an uſeful Inſtrument to the Church, that he would rather be pleaſed to ſtrike him dead, than permit him to go forth and cloath himſelf with thoſe hallowed Garments. After which, as if he would aſcribe all to the glory of God, he ſtamped this Motto on his Coyn: *Facit mirabilia magna ſolus.*

The ſickneſs of the Pope was the cauſe that his Coronation was deferred until the 29th of *September*, which was the Feaſt of St. *Michael* the Arch-Angel, whom the Popes commonly have taken for their Guardian Angel. *Alexander d' Eſte*, Prince of the Cardinal Deacons, had the honour to plant the triple Crown upon his Head, at which time the people made loud ſhouts and acclamations. And now *Urban* having a particular devotion for St. *Michael*, he erected the Image of that Angel in Braſs upon the Altar of *Sancta Patronella* in St. *Peter's* Church, and his own Perſon on his Knees in an humble poſture before him, with theſe words: *Te Mane, Te Veſpere.* And becauſe it was the cuſtom for Popes on the 19th of *November* to go in Proceſſion from the *Vatican* to St. *John de Lateran*, he performed that Cuſtom with ſuch Solemnity beyond what was uſual, that one *Maſcardus* thought it worthy his deſcription in a particular Treatiſe of that pompous Subject; in memory of which the People of *Rome* erected a Triumphal Arch in the *Capitol*, with this Inſcription on the ſide thereof.

Urbano Octavo Barberino
Pont. Max.
Antiquæ Gloriæ Reſtitutori
Authori Novæ
S P Q R
In Veteris Capitolii ruderibus
Hoc qualecunque
Recidivæ Majeſtis ſpecimen
Ponit

At the beginning of his Pontificate he confirmed the Decree of *Pius* V. againſt alienation of Church-Lands, as alſo of the Towns, Places and Demeſnes belonging to the Church. And for imploring the bleſſing of God on his Rule and Government: He ordered Prayers of forty hours continuance to be held in the Churches of St. *Peter*, St. *John* of *Lateran*, and St. *Mary ad præſepe*, vulgarly called *Santa Maria Maggiore*, and in two other Churches in ſeveral quarters of the City. He inſtituted alſo a new Order of Militia with the Title of *Knights of the Conception of our Lady*, who took the Vow, and obſerved the Rules of St. *Francis*, under the protection of St. *Michael* and St. *Baſil*. This Order was firſt honoured by *Charles Gonzago* and *Uladiſlaus* IV. King of *Poland*, who took this Knighthood on occaſion of a War againſt the *Turks*; and *Gonzaga* coming to *Rome* with a Noble Retinue, received the Croſs and Habit from the Pope. Of this Order were ſeventy Knights, whoſe Banner was a Red Croſs, carrying a Flag faſtned to it with a Golden Chain, in which was a bright Image of the Virgin with the Devil under her Feet, with theſe words, *Vince Hoc Inſigni Vere Noſtro.*

And further, at the beginning of his Reign he appointed a ſelect number of religious and grave Men to viſit all the Monaſteries both of Men and Women, as alſo all Colleges and Hoſpitals, and other publick places, to take an account and knowledge of the abuſes and diſorders committed therein, and to give their Opinions and advices for a rea redreſs of them: and of their proceedings herein, their Inſtructions were to render weekly an account unto the Pope.

He exhorted alſo all Biſhops to reſide in their reſpective Dioceſes: and not to excuſe the Cardinals from the like Duty and Obligation, he admoniſhed them in a full Conſiſtory, to watch perſonally over their Flock and Charge, for default of which, and of ſtrict Diſcipline, a depravity of Manners and looſneſs of Life was ſpread among the people: *Ut noſtræ conſcientiæ conſulamus, vos monitos eſſe volumus à cæteris Epiſcopis in hâc parte, non differre Cardinales Epiſcopos, iiſque non ſuffragari, quod dicitur, Pontifex ſcit, & tolerat, quia in nobis nulla eſt tolerantia, nulla conniventia.* But this earneſtneſs of the Pope in this Point, was believed to proceed from a deſire he had to rid himſelf from ſome troubleſom Cardinals, who were always projecting and forming matter for Intrigues in the Court.

Ann. 1625.

And now according to the Bull of *Paul* II. reducing the Jubilies to every twenty five years; the time was return'd in this year 1625. for a Jubilee, the laſt having been held in the year 1600. under *Clement* VIII. To make a preparation hereunto, a Bull was iſſued under the date of the 29th of *April* 1624. to adviſe the World that the following year was the holy year of Jubily, that ſo all thoſe who were deſirous to gain the benefit of Indulgences, might have timely notice ſo to diſpoſe their Affairs, as with convenience to repair to the Holy City, and obtain the fruits of the Holy year; and accordingly to the 24th of *December* 1624. he opened the Holy Gate, in conformity to the Ceremonies deſcribed in other places.

But before the beginning of this Jubilee, the Republick of *Venice* ſent their Ambaſſadours to kiſs the Pope's feet, and make tender of their Obedience to the Apoſtolical See, the like was performed by Ambaſſadours from the Duke of *Florence*, the Republicks of *Genoua*, *Luca*, and other Princes of *Italy*: And when in the month of *July* 1625. the Ambaſſadours from the Catholick King came to perform their Obeyſance, *Don Bartolines de Caſtro* uttered himſelf in this manner. *By this Man* (meaning the Duke of *Alcala*, who was Ambaſſadour in chief) who ‘is choſen out of the principal Miniſters of State, King *Philip* doth offer ‘and preſent to you (moſt Holy Father) all that duty and obedience, ‘which may evidence the ſubjection and reverence which he acknow‘ledges due to your Holineſs and the Apoſtolical See; and therewith ‘ſubjects all his Kingdoms, Provinces, Iſlands, Seas and People, as a moſt ‘obedient Son, and offers them at your holy Feet. Thee *Urban* VIII. ‘he adores on his knees; Thee he acknowledges to be the Vicar of ‘Chriſt our Lord, and the Succeſſour of St. *Peter*. To Thee who ‘art the Head of the Catholick Church, and of all the Chriſtian Com‘monwealth, he willingly and freely offers all Obedience, promiſing ‘and vowing to lend all his Force, Riches and Strength, both by Sea ‘and Land, in defence of the Apoſtolical See and Orthodox Religion, ‘from which no Power or other conſideration whatſoever, ſhall be able ‘to divert or ſeparate his Reſolutions.

The year of Jubilee paſſing with theſe Ceremonies and acts of Devotion, at the end thereof, being the 24th of *December* 1625. the Gate of the Church of St. *John de Lateran* was ſhut by Cardinal *Levi* Archdeacon of that Church; that of *Santa Maria Maggiore* by Cardinal

Millin, the Arch-deacon alſo of that Church, that of St. *Paul* by Cardinal *de Monte* Dean of the ſacred College: and during the time that theſe three Cardinals were employed in theſe Ceremonies, the Pope aſſiſted at the *Veſpers* in St. *Peter*'s Church; which being ended, he himſelf ſhut the Gates of the Church of the *Vatican* with the ordinary Solemnity, in memory of which, this Inſcription was engraven:

Vrbanus VIII. *Pont. Max. Portam Sanctam reſeravit, Et Clauſit*
Anno M.DC.XXV.

Howſoever, in favour to the Pilgrims, the Pope thought fit to continue the benefit and priviledg of his Indulgences, until the firſt day of the year 1626.

And now the Pope, who at the beginning of his Pontificate, had created *Francis Barberino* his Nephew, Cardinal Deacon of St. *Onufrio*; was ſtill deſigning greater honours for him; and in the year 1624. gave him the Title of Cardinal of St. *Agatha*, and made him Pretor of the Cities of *Tiburtia* and *Firmiana*, Patron and Protector of *Aragon, Portugal, England, Scotland*, &c. Library-keeper of the the Apoſtolical See, and Vice-Chancellour of the Holy Church of *Rome*; and farther to exalt him with higher honours, in the year 1625. he ſent him into *France* with the character of *Legat à Latere*, and to make his reception more ſplendid, he diſpatched *Bernardino Mari* a Patrician of *Rome* into *France*, to intreat *Lewis* XIII. that he would be pleaſed to receive his Nephew under that degree and quality. At his departure from *Rome*, the Pope delivered to him a Croſs with his Benediction; and the Cardinals accompanied him to the Gate of St. *Angelo*. At his arrival in the Suburbs of *Paris*, he was viſited in the name of the King and Queen by the Duke of *Nemours*, and other chief Peers of *France*; and at his entry he was accompanied by the Duke of *Orleans*, the King's only Brother, with a great train of Nobility of the firſt Rank and Order in that Kingdom. This Legat, who was young and but lately admitted into the Order of Prieſthood, reſerved his firſt Maſs, wherewith to treat the King and Queen, which he offered to them as the firſt fruits of his Sacrifices, celebrating it at *Fontainbleau* on the 15th of *Auguſt*, which is the day of the Feſtival of the Aſſumption of our Lady.

Being returned afterwards to *Rome*, his preſence was deſired by *Philip* III. King of *Spain*, under the ſame quality and character at his Court, to be Godfather in place of the Pope to the Daughter of the King, who was afterwards baptized with the name of *Maria Clara Eugenia*.

But not to confer all the ſtock of honour on one ſingle perſon of his Kindred, the Pope called *Anthoni Barberini* his other Nephew, Son of another Brother, from his *Capuchin*'s Cell, to rank him together with the Cardinals; it was he, who was called for a long time Cardinal *Antonio*, he was eſteemed a very upright Man, and one who obſerved the rules of S. *Francis*, notwithſtanding that his degree of Cardinal excuſed him in a great meaſure from the ſeverity of them. During the abſence of *Franciſco Barberino* in *France*, *Antonio* was chief Miniſter with the Pope in his ſtead, which at his return, he did moſt voluntarily reſign into the hands of *Franciſco*; in the execution of which, it is reported of him, that he would never be preſent at the conſultations of War, which at that time infeſted *Italy* upon a Diſpute concerning the *Valteline*, ſaying, that his Order obliged him to the exerciſe of Peace and works of Charity, the affairs of War being incompatible with his Vow and his Profeſſion.

In the year 1626 this Pope had the honour to conſecrate the great *Baſilicon* of St. *Peter*'s Church, which having been created by *Conſtantine* the Great, was afterwards enlarged and adorned by the munificence of many other Popes; and now being compleatly finiſhed by this, he with great Pomp in preſence, and with the aſſiſtance of twenty two Cardinals, of which three were Biſhops, performed all the Ceremonies and Rites of Conſecration; in memory of which, this Inſcription was engraven over the Walls:

Urbanus VIII. *Pontif. Max.*
Vaticanam Baſilicam
A Conſtantino Magno Extructam
A Beato Silveſtro Dedicatam
In Ampliſſimi Templi Formam
Religioſâ multorum Pontificum
Magnificentiâ
Redactam
Solemni ritu conſecravit
Sepulcrum Apoſtolicum
Area Mole Decoravit
O Deum, Aras Et Sacella
Statuis Ac Multiplicibus Operibus
Ornavit.

And indeed that *Area Moles*, or the *Corinthian* Braſs, with which he made the high Altar, was fetched from the roof of the *Pantheon*, called now the *Rotunda* from the form of it, built by *Agrippina*; the which Braſs not only ſerved for the high Altar, for out of the ſurpluſage of it, there was founded a great Cannon, now in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, which gave occaſion to that Libel, which was put into the hands of *Paſquin*: *Quod non fecerunt Barbari fecerunt Barberini*, And indeed it ſeems ſtrange, that the *Romans*, who are ſo curious, ſhould deſtroy ſuch a piece of Antiquity; for as I remember, I took off this Inſcription from the Architrave of the *Portico*:

M. Agrippa L. F. Cos. Tertium fecit

And underneath in leſſer Letters.

Imp. Cæs. L. Septimius Severius, Pius, Pertinax, Arabicus, Adiabenicus, Parthicus Maximus, Pont. Max. Trib. Pop. XI. *Cos.* III. P. P. PRO*Cos. & Imp. Cæs. M. Aurelius Antoninus Pius, Fælix Aug. Trib. Poteſt.* V. *Cos.* PRO*Cos. Pantheum vetuſtate corruptum cum omni cultu reſtituerunt.*

This Temple formerly dedicated to all the Gods, was now dedicated to all Saints.

The

Now as to matters of politick Government and his management thereof; the Pope found himſelf much engaged by *Gregory* his Predeceſſour, who (as we have ſaid in his Life) had accepted the *Valteline* in Depoſite; which bringing an unſeaſonable charge upon him, he complained thereof, but found no way to get out, for *Ludoviſio* had ſtrongly tied the knot, both of buſineſs and decency. And though *Vrban* by reaſon of employments exerciſed in *France*, was judged inclinable, and in a manner partial to that Court, yet it was fit that he ſhould appear ſerviceable, at leaſt in name to the deſigns of *Spain*; and indeed he was ſo in reality; for though the Depoſite of the *Valteline* was ſaid to be in the hands of the Pope, yet *Leopold* continued in poſſeſſion, and enjoyed the conveniencies and advantages, and the *Griſons* groaned under the burden; to remedy which, the Pope propoſed divers expedients, but the preliminary to all, and his chief condition, was a reimburſement of the Money which he had expended, before he would quit or part with his Truſt. The Confederates readily accepted the proffer, and willingly would have reimburſed the Pope, provided the Valley were put into their hands, and rendred to the firſt Owner when the Forts were razed and Religion reſtored. But the Pope being fearful to offend *Spain*, propoſed, that a ſtrong body of Soldiery belonging to the *Valteline*, ſhould be raiſed and united, either to the Catholick *Cantons* of *Helvetia*, or as a fourth League to the three *Cantons* of the *Griſons*. But the Confederates propoſing to themſelves the end of reſtoring things to their former ſtate, judged, that by theſe means, they ſhould be wanting to the protection, which they had promiſed to the *Griſons*, and that the *Spaniards* ſhould ſtill enjoy the predominancy and liberty of paſſage to the excluſion of all others; upon which conſiderations and ſeveral others, the Diſpute ſtill continued until the year 1627. when the Pope acquainted the Cardinals in a full Conſiſtory, that the Diſputes and Wars ariſen about the *Valteline*, were compoſed and ended on the conditions, that the Fortifications of thoſe places which were committed to his Truſt, were by conſent of the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, to be ruined and demoliſhed. To which he added theſe words; *At length* (ſaid he) *we have attained that which we much wiſhed and deſired, for by mutual conſent of both Kings, the Peace is concluded and eſtabliſhed; we have omitted nothing, which might conduce to the good of the Church, and it hath been our principal care, that the Catholick Religion ſhould ſuffer no detriment; the Kings themſelves are witneſſes hereof, and God himſelf knows, that we have always had his glory and honour before our Eyes.*

And now that the Grandeur of that Apoſtolical Chair be advanced, and the Conſiſtory gratified and pleaſed; *Vrban* in the year 1631. beſtowed the Title of *Eminence* upon the Cardinals, forbidding them to receive any other diſtinction of honour; and for eſtabliſhment thereof, a Decree was made and entred into the Records of the Congregation of Ceremonies, that the Titles of *Cardinals* ſhould be the moſt Eminent and moſt Reverend; but as to the Order of the Knights of St. *George*, inſtituted by *Paul* V. he wholly aboliſhed it. The *Illyrian* Colledg founded at *Loreto* by *Gregory* XIII. but tranſlated afterwards to *Rome*, by *Clement* VIII. conſiſting in all but of twelve perſons, he reſtored again to *Loreto* with augmentation of the Revenue, and of the Scholars to the number of thirty ſix. And in regard his hand was now employed in giving and taking away Honours, he was pleaſed to declare, that the Commonwealth of *Venice* was a crowned Head, and was to be treated with a Dignity equal to that of Kings.

About this time great combuſtions and terrible Wars threatned *Italy*; for the Houſe of *Gonzaga* which reigned in *Mantua*, was now conſidered without iſſue male, and as a dead Corps without hopes of any branches ſpringing from thence, neither could *Ferdinand* the elder Brother, nor *Vincenzo*, the preſent Duke, leave after them any other than the young Princeſs *Mary* their Niece, who, as a Woman, was excluded from the Inveſtiture of the Dutchy, had yet ſome reaſon, though doubtful to pretend to that of *Montferrat*. In her marriage therefore the pledges of Peace, or the ſeeds of great contention ſeemed to be lodged; many believed it expedient to marry her to *Charles* Duke of *Rhetel*, Son of the Duke of *Nevers*, the neareſt and lawful Heir: for this Branch, though tranſplanted to a foreign Soil, was ſprung from the ſame Root, enjoying in *France* the revenue of three large Dukedoms, *viz. Nevers Rhetel* and *Maine*. The *Spaniards* who were jealous of this Houſe, and above any thing apprehended this Succeſſion, leſt it ſhould introduce the *French* into *Italy*, promoted the pretenſions of *Ferrand* Prince of *Guaſtalla*, a branch alſo of the Houſe of *Gonzaga*, but derived farther than that of *Nevers*; but by how much the *Auſtrians* favoured *Gauſtalla* with benefits and declarations, by ſo much the more was *France* earneſt to ſtrengthen the rights of *Nevers*; with whom the *Venetians* alſo concurring in Opinion, put the Duke in mind to eſtabliſh the Succeſſion in his life-time, and therewith confirm the Peace of *Italy*. Nor was *Charles Emanuel*, Duke of *Savoy*, leſs attentive to his intereſt and game, than the others, deſigning upon the death of *Vincenzo*, (now crazy, and infirm, not ſo much with age, as with riot and luxurious living) to revive his pretended Title to *Montferrat*, and colour it with the marriage of *Mary* to his Son *Maurice*. To prevent which, *Vincenzo* with great ſecrecy called to him *Rhetel*, that he might marry him to the Princeſs, declaring him immediately upon his arrival Lieutenant General, and his Heir by ſolemn Teſtament: To perfect this Marriage nothing was now wanting but the Pope's Diſpenſation in matter of conſanguinity or nearneſs of kindred; which being obtained, the Bull ſeaſonably arrived the night before that Duke *Vincenzo* died, ſo that the marriage was conſummated whilſt the Corps was yet warm; and the day following, the Bridegroom, together with his mourning, aſſumed the Title of Prince of *Mantua*, and having in his power the Garriſon, and the Cittadel called *Porto*, required from the people an Oath of Fidelity in the name of his Father. *Gauſtalla* in the mean time publiſhed a Patent from the Emperour, empowering him to take poſſeſſion of *Mantua*, until the right ſhould be declared, and commanding the Governour of *Milan* to maintain this Decree by force, if need ſhould require: *Guaſtalla* alſo had thoughts of going himſelf to *Mantua*, but the paſſage was already ſtop'd by the anticipations of *Rhetel*: wherefore he practiſed upon *Caſal*, endeavouring to alienate the minds of that people from their new Prince, but all in vain, becauſe the name of *Nevers* was univerſally cryed up both at *Caſal*, and in the Country of *Montferrat*.

The intereſt of Princes being now diſcovered, reaſon or juſtice were no longer debated in the cauſe of *Mantua*, but calculations made of Force, Opportunity and Advantage. The Republick of *Venice* reſolved to joyn with *Nevers*, as the ſafeſt intereſt in which to maintain the liberty of *Italy*: howſoever being willing to decline the aſſiſtance of *France* and other Strangers, they deſigned a middle party compoſed of a League with the Pope and other Princes of *Italy*, by which they believed it eaſie to protect the Juſtice of *Nevers* by Negotiation, and defend themſelves on all occaſions againſt violence. This Remonſtrance of the *Venetians Urban* approved, and offered his interpoſition with powerful Offices: *But what*, ſaid he, *can be promiſed from Reaſon without Arms, in dealing with him who places Reaſon and Juſtice in nothing but Arms? The exceſs of Power in Princes makes little account of the Pope's Prayers, and their Mediation is reduced to almoſt nothing elſe, but to adorn the Frontiſpiece of Treaties with his Name.* The intentions of *Urban* were in reality conformable to his expreſſions: for he deſired to maintain *Nevers* in the ſucceſſion of *Mantua*, but abhorred to engage himſelf ſo far, as to be obliged to come to the extremity of taking up Arms. But whilſt theſe things were in mediation and diſcourſe between the Pope, and other the Friends of *Rhetel*; the Duke of *Savoy* taking the advantage of the diverſion, which the Arms of *Lewis* XIII found againſt his Proteſtant Subjects in *France*, entered with his Army into *Montferrat*, and hoped to be ſpeedily Maſter, both of that Country and of the ſtrong Fortreſs of *Caſal*, which was beſieged already by Marquis *Spinola*, Lieutenant General of the *Spaniſh* Forces in *Italy*; as was *Mantua* alſo at the ſame time by the Forces of the Emperour. At length on the 18th. of *July* 1630. in the Night the City of *Mantua* was by treachery taken by the *Germans*, and for the ſpace of three days committed to the pillage and cruelty of the Soldiers, with all the outrages which luſt, impiety and licence could ſuggeſt to mercileſs Conquerours: the Princeſs *Mary* retired into a Monaſtery, where being reſpected for her Sex and Quality, ſhe obtained licence to be carried to the Empreſs, to whom ſhe was nearly related; the Duke retired haſtily into *Porto*, where the Ammunition for full accompliſhment of the Treaſon taking fire, he was forced to ſurrender, on condition that he ſhould be convoyed by two Companies of *German* Horſe into the Country of *Ferrara*, to remain at *Melara*, where the Duke was ſupplied with Mony for his maintenance from the *Venetians*. The taking of *Mantua* in this terrible manner increaſed the hopes of the *Spaniards*, who beſieged *Caſal*, that they ſhould ſpeedily become Maſters of that important place, but their expectations were diſappointed by the coming of the *French* Troops, under the command of *Mareſchal Scomberg*, ſent by *Lewis* XIII. for relief of his Ally the Duke of *Mantua*: *Thoiras*, who was Governour of *Caſal*, defended the place with great gallantry, which gave ſuch diſcouragement to the Enemy, that upon approach of the *French* Troops the Siege was raiſed, and the Town conſerved to its lawful Maſter. In this manner was *France*, *Spain* and the Emperour engaged in a bloody War within the confines of *Italy*. But Pope *Urban*, after various troubles and Negotiations eſtabliſhed the Peace of *Italy*, and by the dexterous management of Cardinal *Mazarine*, then his Nuntio, appeaſed the differences between *Spain* and *France*, and therewith eſtabliſhed an univerſal Peace.

In

An. 1632.

In the life of *Sixtus* IV. we have ſhewed, how that that Pope married *John* his Nephew, and Brother to Cardinal *Julian*, to *Jane* the Daughter of *Frederick* Duke of *Vrbin*, by whom he had one Son called *Franciſco Maria della Rovere*, who ſucceeded in that Dukedom. And whereas for want of Heirs male, that Dutchy did of right devolve to the *Demeſnes* of the Church; yet *Sixtus* to advance the honour of his own Family *de la Rovere*, was pleaſed ſtill to continue that *Fief* in ſeparation from the Church, the which remained in ſuch condition until the year 1632. when *Franciſco Maria della Rovere*, the laſt Duke of *Vrbin* dying, this Pope *Vrban* aſſumed the property, and without difficulty united it to the patrimony of the Church: for this Pope having an Eye thereunto in the life of the Duke, who was then grown very old, kept a Prelate in that Country, which aſſiſted in all affairs; by which means after his death *Taddeo Barberino* the Pope's Nephew, Prince of *Paleſtrina*, entred peaceably with his Soldiers, and took ſuch quiet poſſeſſion thereof, as if the old Dominion had been continued, rather than a new one introduced. The Pope expecting this accident, was already in Arms under pretence of the commotions in *Italy*, ſo that in caſe, amidſt theſe confuſions, any one ſhould have deſigned to diſturb his peaceable poſſeſſion, he was in a condition to maintain his right with a puiſſant Force. But the Princes were ſo far from invading the Dutchy, that they univerſally concurred in the confirmation of his Title, adviſing him to inveſt one of his Nephews in the Principality. But the Pope conſidering the ſevere Bulls of his Predeceſſors againſt ſuch alienations, feared that he might entail a patrimony of unquietneſs and trouble to his poſterity; and therefore reſolved to annex that Dominion to the Church, againſt the perſwaſions of divers Princes, who were willing to ſee the Eccleſiaſtical State increaſe in Temporal Power; in memory of which Union of this Principality to the Church without Arms, or effuſion of blood, but only by prudence and gentleneſs, theſe words are engraven in the *Vatican*.

> *Civitates, & Ditiones Ducatus Vrbini Nomine comprehenſæ, quas à Romanis Pontificibus Feltria prius, deinde Ruveria familia beneficiario Jure poſſidebat in Franciſco Maria* II. *extinctâ utriuſque ſobole, in liberam Apoſtolicæ Sedis Dominationem conceſſere: Vrbano* VIII. *Pont. Max. Anno Salutis* MDCXXXII. *Regio autem Virorum tum Militari ſtudio, tum inſigni Opificio, & Doctrinæ laude præſtantium multitudine celeberrima eſt.*

But that the Pope might not diſpleaſe his Nephew *Taddeo* by this diſappointment, he conferred upon him the Pretorſhip of *Rome*, which had long been enjoyed by the Family of *Rovere*. This Office and Dignity which ſtill retained the antient and venerable Name of *Prætor Prætorii*, and in the times of the *Cæſars* was in great Eſteem and Authority, conſerved now little more than an empty name without power; for which reaſon foreign Ambaſſadours who were the Repreſentatives of the Emperour and Kings, refuſed to give precedency of place to this Prefect or Governour, at ſuch times when at the moſt ſolemn Functions they aſſiſted at the Chair of the Pope. The *Barberins* depending on the greatneſs of their Uncle, who was ever partial in the Cauſe, and

and Intereſt of his kindred, obſtinately maintained their pretended Right, by which the Controverſie aroſe ſo high, that the Ambaſſadours by Order of their reſpective Princes abſtained from the Churches, and from all ſolemn Meetings, at which they might be preſent with the Prefect. From this common diſtaſt of Princes aroſe another of a private nature between the Cavalier *Giovanni Peſari* Ambaſſadour for the Republick of *Venice*, and *Taddeo* the Prefect: the occaſion was this: the Prefect caſually meeting in the ſtreet with *Peſari*, cauſed his Coach to ſtop; (as the cuſtom is always in *Rome*, that when the Coaches of Cardinals, Ambaſſadors, and other great Men meet, they always ſtop and ſend Meſſages of Complement one to the other) but *Peſari* not obſerving it by reaſon that was in the dusk of the Evening, drove on without notice of the Prefect; which though *Peſari* ſent afterwards expreſly to excuſe, yet the Prefect was ſo offended, that he purpoſely deſigned to meet him another time; and that he might requite the late neglect, he corrupted the Ambaſſadours Coachman to ſtay his Horſes, feigning that his Hat was fallen off; and ſo in the mean time the Prefect paſſed without notice of the Ambaſſadour. *Peſari* intended to have chaſtiſed his Servant for this piece of treachery, but that he was reſcued by ſome armed Men from the puniſhment he deſerved.

The Court of *Rome* which is always talkative, and figuring a ſtrange kind of effects from ſuch ſhadows and appearances, made great account of theſe Formalities, diſcourſing of them with the ſame direful apprehenſions, as men in other parts uſe to conclude from bloody Battels and important Conqueſts But the Senate of *Venice* having notice hereof, was well aſſured, that by ſupport of the Uncle, the party of the *Barberins* would be too ſtrong in *Rome*; ordered their Ambaſſador *Peſari*, that for evidence of a publick Reſentment, he ſhould immediately leave the City without taking the leaſt notice either of the Pope, or his Nephews; and in the mean time at *Venice* the Nuntio was ſuſpended from Audience. To this diſguſt another quarrel was annexed, occaſioned by a Bull made the laſt year by *Urban*, whereby he Decreed to Cardinals, the Eccleſiaſtical Electors, and the great Maſter of *Malta*, the Title of *Eminence*, forbidding them to receive any other, unleſs from Kings. The Republick of *Venice*, which have always adhered to their antient Forms and Stile, and will upon no occaſion whatſoever be induced to alter and change their Cuſtoms, would never give other Title to them, than of *Reverendiſſimo, & Illuſtriſſimo*, which gave great diſguſt, and mortification to the Pope, and ſerved to increaſe the former diſcontent. To theſe were added other ſharp conteſts between thoſe of *Loreo*, Subjects to the *Venetians* and thoſe of *Ferrara*, where Cardinal *Palotta* the Pope's Legat, encroached on the undoubted confines of the *Venetians*, and impriſoning the *Venetian*, Subjects, ſhewed an intention to attempt greater Novelties; and by erecting and changing the High ways, diverted the courſe of the Waters in ſuch manner, as made the River *Po* almoſt uſeleſs. The *Venetians* provoked by theſe miſchiefs, laboured to repair themſelves with like returns: for *Luca Peſaro* Captain of the Gulf, entring into the *Sacca di Goro* with ſome Gallies, and armed Barks, ſtopped the Ships, which with Victuals, and Merchandiſe paſſed by Sea towards *Ferrara*: He deſtroyed alſo the works, which were lately made in the River to divert its courſe. The Troops alſo encreaſed on both ſides; and the Pope raiſed on his Confines a **Fort** called *della Bacchette*, to which the *Venetians* oppoſed another calling it *della Donzella*; ſo all things looked turbulent, as if they would have proceeded farther than words.

But to give a ſtop to the heat of Arms, the *French* Miniſters interpoſed, and both the Pope and the Republick giving their promiſe to King *Lewis*, not to offend each other in a hoſtile manner, there remained a large field for Treaty. The Pope aſſured the *French* Ambaſſadour *Monſieur Briſac*, that of what had hapned at *Rome* to *Peſari*, he had had no information until afterwards, much leſs that his Nephew had been concerned in the reſcue of the Coachman, and was a ſtranger to both matters; expreſſing himſelf much diſcontented for what had hapned, and that for evidence hereof he had puniſhed the Offenders with baniſhment. That as to the Title given to Cardinals of *Illuſtriſſimo* by the Republick, he was well ſatisfied, nor did he require them to alter their Stile, for that the Republick having always been connumerated with crowned Heads, they were comprehended with Kings in exception of the Title of *Eminence*, and ſo commanded the Cardinals to receive Letters from the State of *Venice* in the uſual Form; with which the Senate being ſatisfied, admitted the Nuntio to Audience.

But the Diſpute about the Confines being of more Antient date, admitted of greater difficulties: For the Pope came to lay claim to certain Lands which the *Po*, and the Sea had left, called *Alluvioni*: the conteſt ſeemed of no great value; but the Parties, eſpecially the *Venetians* judged it of great importance, becauſe it carried with it the rights, and juriſdiction of the Sea. The buſineſs at laſt was brought into *Venice* by the mediation of the *French* Miniſters, and the Treaty continued part of the year following; at length the *Venetians* declaring themſelves ready to accept any Conditions, which were conſiſtent with the juriſdiction of the Sea, to which alſo the mouths of Rivers and the *Sacca di Goro* did appertain, preſerved the antient Covenants with thoſe of *Ferrara*, and the Power to divert the prejudices of Ports and Channels, which are the Veins and Life of the Capital City. Yet ſtill the differences continued, and though they broke not forth into acts of violence and War, yet the Diſpute was not determined.

In the year 1633. one *Centini* a Cardinals Nephew, hoping that if *Urban* were dead, his Uncle would be choſen into his place, contrived the Pope's death by Witchcraft and Negromancy; for having faſhioned the Pope's Image in Wax, he wounded it with Pins and Needles, after the antient manner of Witchcraft, *In jure urget acus*, but the Villany being diſcovered, *Centini* and a Frier his aſſociate, were puniſhed according to their demerit.

But we muſt not omit to mention, in the great Hall of the *Vatican*, where the Embaſſies of Kings (termed the Embaſſies of Obedience) are received by the Pope; there is that famous Picture, repreſenting the Hiſtory of *Alexander* III. and under it was written an Elogy in humour of the *Venetian* Commonwealth, by whoſe aſſiſtance the Pope prevailed over the Emperour *Frederick Barbaroſſa*; which Elogy, this Pope *Urban* cauſed to be blotted out and defaced. *Rome* it ſelf was amazed at ſuch a Novelty, becauſe the Inſcriptions, by which the Picture in the Hall of the moſt memorable Actions of Chriſtendom were explained, had been choſen and ſelected in the time of Pope *Pius* IV. and had been approved by a Conſultation of Cardinals, and other learned Perſons, and that in particular had been extracted out of the moſt Antient proofs, the conſent of Authors, Inſcriptions, Pictures, Marbles, and out of Authentick and infinite Memorials: and though in theſe later times Cardinal *Baronius*, (who would juſtifie the Pope, and the Church in all things, which either they would ſay, or act) hath called the truth thereof in queſtion, yet the credit of the Hiſtory remains, and the praiſe of that Republick never to be forgotten. Now in regard this Pope *Urban* had defaced and blotted out the *Elogium*, he ſeemed to deny the matter of Fact, and ſuppreſs the fame of that Victory which the *Venetians* had gained, and deprive them of that merit and gratitude which was owing to them from the Church, aboliſhing out of the World the memorials, and as much as he was able, cancelling the glory of their Anceſtors, to which his Predeceſſors had not diſdained to confeſs themſelves obliged. The advice hereof greatly diſturbed matters at *Venice*, and gave an interruption to the Negotiation about the Confines which in *An.* 1635. the year 1635. was again reaſſumed by the *French* Ambaſſadour *Monſieur de la Thuillerie* at *Venice*, and by *Nani*, and *Soranzo* deputed by the Senate; the Treaty was far advanced, it being agreed to draw a line, which ſhould terminate the Land; ſo that there remained no difficulty concerning the change which the *Po* ſhould make in its Channels, for that if the *Po* ſhould change its courſe and paſs the line to the *Donzella*, then it ſhould be eſteemed to belong to the Eccleſiaſtical State, but if contrariwiſe it ſhould paſs to the *Goro*, then it ſhould belong to the *Venetians*: but this, and all other Negotiations were broken off by defacing the *Elogium*, which was ſo hainouſly reſented at *Venice*, that the Senate immediately commanded their Ambaſſadour *Roſſi* from *Rome*, with Orders neither to take leave of the Pope, nor of his Nephews, nor Cardinals, and that Audience alſo ſhould be denied to the Pope's Nuntio at *Venice*: for all confeſſed that the Republick could no more ſend Ambaſſadours to venerate in that Hall (as was cuſtomary) the Vicars of Chriſt, ſo long as their Illuſtrious Memorials were ſuſpended, if not condemned: wherefore the Republick would maintain no other Miniſter at *Rome*, than only *Girolamo Bono*, with Title of *Secretary*.

Whilſt theſe matters were acting in *Italy*, all other Countries of Chriſtendom were for the moſt part engaged in War; for compoſing of which, and in performing acts of mediation tending to Peace, the Pope was engaged; until towards the year 1640. the War and troubles came nearer home, cauſed by Conteſts and reſentments between him and *Edward* Duke of *Parma*, the beginning and end whereof we ſhall here relate.

An. 1640. *Urban* being much impaired with age, and weakned in the vigour of his Authority and Power, the *Barberins* his Nephews, took upon them to manage all matters with an exceſs of Arbitrary Command: He that poſſeſſed moſt of the Pope's favour and affection, was Cardinal *Franciſco*, who was deep in his Deſigns, conceited of his own Counſels, and eager and violent in the proſecution of what he affected. On the other ſide, *Edward* Duke of *Parma* was of a high and active Spirit, apt to reſentments, but yet being adorned with Arts both Civil and

Military, might have been eſteemed a moſt admirable Prince, had either fortune given him an Empire and Power equal to his mind, or prudence equalled his mind to his power and fortune. Many ſecret piques and diſguſts had for ſome time paſſed between him and the *Barberins*, which were concealed and covered; until at length in the year 1639. Duke *Edward* going to *Rome*, the antient diſcontents brake forth more openly: for in the firſt place the Duke thought he was not treated with that Ceremony and Reſpect which was due to his Condition and Quality; then that his Brother Prince *Franciſco Maria* was not created Cardinal as was promiſed: but what was moſt important of all, was the diſappointment of many favours and conceſſions expected from the Pope; and particularly an abatement of half *per cent.* on the revenue which the Duke paid to *Monti*, which is an annual rent antiently aſſigned by the *Farneſi* Dukes of *Parma* upon the revenues of *Caſtro*, a Dukedom they held in *Fief* of the Church: for though the Pope had made this Grant, and had not recalled it, yet it was croſſed by the Nephews, and with ſundry delays, difficulties and excuſes prolonged and diminiſhed. The Duke reſenting theſe neglects and unkindneſſes, departed angrily from *Rome*, without taking leave either of the Pope or Nephews, inveighing violently againſt Cardinal *Franciſco* and his Government. The Cardinal to requite the Duke, perſwaded the Pope to recal the Grant he had given for exportation of Corn out of the Eccleſiaſtical State into the Country of *Caſtro*, by which the people were not only ready to be famiſhed, but the beſt revenues of *Caſtro* ceaſed; for the Duke having farmed the Exportation of Corn to certain Merchants for ninety ſeven thouſand Crowns *per annum*; the Exportation being forbidden, the Merchants renounced the agreement: whereupon the ſum failing to pay the *Montiſts*, they complained to the Courts of Juſtice, and obtained, that the Duke being a Vaſſel, and ſubject to the Church, ſhould be juridically cited. The Duke imputed all to the malice and covetouſneſs of the *Barberins* to diſpoil him of his Country, and believing that he ſhould be overborn by his Enemies, who were both Judges and Parties, reſolved to fortifie himſelf againſt force, and accordingly diſpatched a Gentleman of *Montferrat* to be Governour with a Garriſon to *Caſtro*, cauſing Half-moons and Redoubts to be caſt up about the place. This being judged a Crime by the *Barberins*, and a rebellion againſt his Sovereign, a Monitory was publiſhed by the Auditor of the Chamber, limiting unto the Duke thirty days to demoliſh the fortifications of *Caſtro*, and disband the Garriſon, and otherwiſe declared him to have incurred Rebellion and Excommunication.

The quarrel being thus begun, the *Barberins* raiſed ſix thouſand Foot and five hundred Horſe with all ſpeed, under the command of *Taddeo*, the Preſect of *Rome*, appointing their Randezvous at *Viterbo*, where they fortified their Camp with a train of Artillery, and provided it with all ſorts of Victuals and Ammunition. Theſe preparations adminiſtred occaſions of various Diſcourſe and reflections to the people, who attributed the blame of all to the pride and ambition of the Nephews; for the World would not be induced to believe that the Pope, who when he was young, cultivated peace in all parts, and was naturally of a quiet Spirit, muſt needs be affected with ſtrange thoughts, and deſigns, if now in the extremity of his age, he ſhould be perſwaded to diſturb it; and ſo much the more in a conjuncture, when all Chriſtendom was torn in pieces with War and Diſſenſion, and ſtood rather in need of his paternal mediation to produce Concord amongſt Princes, than to ſee him the Author and contriver of War in *Italy*.

The Viceroy of *Naples* ſeemed above all, jealous of the event of this War; believing that the *Barberins* had engaged the *French* in the Deſign. *Ferdinand* the Grand Duke of *Tuſcany*, was alſo diſpleaſed to ſee the Pope armed on his Confines with intention to make new Conqueſts. Whereſore both the Viceroy and the Grand Duke interpoſed in the Offices of mediation; to which the Pope making ſome ſhort replies, that his reſolution was only to humble his Vaſſal, and make himſelf obeyed, gave no place or opportunity for Treaty.

The Senate of *Venice* kept themſelves ſilent for a while, which the *Barberins* interpreted (as indeed it was) an effect of their diſcontent, rather than a token of their ſatisfaction: but being at length ſollicited much by the Duke of *Parma* to intereſs themſelves in the quarrel, after various Debates, it was reſolved with general conſent, to intreat the Pope, that he would yield to the inſtances and common ſatisfaction of the Princes, who with unanimous deſires interpoſed themſelves for the Peace, by giving time and expedients for a Treaty. To the Duke they gave Counſel of moderation, and to humble himſelf in ſuch deſent ſort to the Pope as might pacifie him, and bring him honourably off from his Engagements and Enterpriſe. But in the mean time the *Barberins*, that they might prevent the importunities of Princes, haſtned their march towards *Caſtro*, upon an Opinion, that having once taken the place, the fervour with which the Mediators interpoſed for a Peace, would be abated, and matters reduced to ſuch intricacies, as that in the end the glory of the Counſels, and the Merit of the Enterpriſe would fall out to their advantage. Howſoever, to make the matter more plauſible, another Bull was publiſhed, in which the time preſcribed to Prince *Edward* was prolonged for fifteen days; and yet at the ſame *An.* 1641. time on the 27th of *September* 1641. the Pope's Army entered the territories of *Caſtro*, and appearing before *Rocca Montalto* which is towards the Sea, the Guard conſiſting of fifty Soldiers abandoned the place; and ſoon after *Caſtro* it ſelf ſurrendred upon conditions of life, and enjoyment of goods to the Soldiers and Inhabitants; and ſo the Garriſon being two hundred and fifty in number, marched forth, on the ſeventh day after the Siege was laid: which news much troubled the Duke, coming to him juſt at the time that he in perſon, and Count *Palmia*, by permiſſion of the Grand Duke, was conducting forces through *Tuſcany* for relief of the place.

Duke *Edward* being thus foiled, made new applications to the Senate of *Venice*, fearing leſt he ſhould be attacqued in his Dominions of *Parma* and *Piacenza:* and in the mean time to keep himſelf from thoſe prejudices, which in the way of Judicature, the Acts which had paſt might bring upon him, he cauſed a Proteſt to be preſented to the Auditor *della Camera*, wherein he declared, that the *Barberins* being his Enemies, he had no other Judge left him, but Force, nor hope of Favour, but from his Friends.

But the *Barberins* being flattered by all upon theſe ſucceſſes, and elated with vanity and pride, denied to give admittance to any Treaty; the

Pope ſeemed to hear with trouble the Offices brought to him by Order of the Senate of *Venice*, ſcorning to admit Mediators betwixt Sovereign, and Vaſſal.

Nor were the *French* either ſilent or unactive upon this occaſion; but laying hold on this turbulent conjuncture of Affairs, proffered the Pope the powerful Forces of their Crown to drive the *Spaniards* out of *Italy*, and raiſing his thoughts to a more noble Deſign, than that of *Caſtro*, proffered to leave the diſpoſal of the Conqueſts to his own pleaſure, and the Crown of *Naples* to his Nephews.

But *Urban* looking on theſe Propoſitions, as more ſpecious than eaſie, abſolutely refuſed them, and in deſpight of all the applications and addreſſes made by ſeveral Princes in favour of *Parma*, the Duke was declared to have incurred the greater Excommunication, and in vertue thereof to be deprived of his Dominions, and *Feifs*, and of the Dignity he held of the Holy Sea, and condemned in all charges done, or to be done: in purſuance of which Sentence, his Palaces and Goods in *Rome* were expoſed to ſale, and *Caſtro* taken into the poſſeſſion of the *Camera*, though not annexed to the Popedom by vertue of the rigorous Bull ordained by *Pius Quintus*, which forbids all alienations of Lands or Goods which were once united to the Papal Chair.

The Princes were highly moved, to find all their interceſſions, and inſtances ſo little eſteemed by the *Barberins*; and much more alarm'd when they underſtood, that the Pope demanded paſſage for his Army through the Dominions of *Modena*, againſt *Parma* and *Piacenza*, which being places unprovided for War, and the Duke of *Modena* not having force to reſiſt the powerful Army of the Pope conſiſting of eighteen or nineteen thouſand Men, conſented to grant a paſſage; provided, *That there ſhould be ſix days before the Army moved, and that in other four it ſhould have paſſed his Confines.* *An.* 1642.

The *Venetians*, and the Grand Duke, who were averſe to Arms, and not inclined to uſe them, but as their laſt remedy: yet not being willing that the Duke ſhould periſh, or the *Barberins* be accuſtomed to the happy iſſue of their Counſels, ſent a ſupply of ſeventy thouſand Crowns to *Parma*, which gave courage to the Soldiery, and credit to the cauſe amongſt the Subjects, who thence conceived ſome hopes of greater ſuccours.

In the mean time all the Offices and warm inſtances imaginable of mediation, were employed at *Rome* by the Miniſters of *Venice* and *Florence*, which produced nothing but uncertain and ambiguous anſwers, and to the Ambaſſadour of *France* it was plainly declared, that a ſuſpenſion of Arms ſhould be granted, when promiſes and aſſurances ſhould be given by the Duke's Friends, that he ſhould teſtifie due reſpect and obedience to the Eccleſiaſtical State; and that no words or inſtances ſhould be made for the reſtitution of *Caſtro*, which by reaſon of the Debt to the *Montiſts* and the charge of the War, was already forfeited to the *Camera*, and condemned thereby.

But ſuch Anſwers as theſe not ſatisfying the Princes; the *Venetians* reſolved to ſend three thouſand Foot and three hundred Horſe, to joyn with two thouſand Men ſent by the Grand Duke, to oppoſe the march of the Pope's Army into the State of *Parma*. The news of theſe Forces, and their march, and the rumour of Treaties and Leagues forming in favour of *Parma* greatly perplexed the *Barberins* ; becauſe that their Army, which was compoſed of new Men, and which expected to enter the Country of *Parma* , as to an eaſie and ſecure Triumph, was ſo terrified with the noiſe of an Enemy, marching to oppoſe them, that they ran away in full Troops, ſo that their numbers were very much diminiſhed in a ſhort time.

Urban growing ſenſible of the oppoſition which was making againſt the farther progreſs of his Arms by the Neighbouring Princes, did voluntarily, and of his own accord, offer to the *French* Ambaſſadour a ſuſpenſion of Arms for fifteen days. During this ceſſation, the *Venetians*, the Grand Duke, and the Duke of *Modena*, entered into a League to aſſiſt and give ſuccours to the Duke of *Parma* , as occaſion ſhould require ; who being encouraged by ſuch Seconds, entered boldly into the Eccleſiaſtical State with three thouſand Horſe, without Foot or Cannon, or other preparations for defence of his Camp; which was looked upon as ſo raſh and inconſiderate an attempt, that the other Confederates gave thoſe Troops over for loſt, and deſtroyed. But Duke *Edward* entering reſolutely into the *Bologneſe*, ſtrook ſuch terrour into the people, and the Army of the Pope, that all was in a moment ſeen in confuſion, and diſorder: for the Prefect retired flying into *Ferrara*, the Souldiers quitted their Quarters, the Authority, threats, or intreaties of the Officers prevailing nothing againſt their cowardiſe and fears. Thus without Bloud, and without a Battel, *Edward* prevailed, and became Maſter of the Field; which is a paſſage the more memorable, becauſe that in an Enemies Country, nothing could have been more done by an Army never ſo powerful. For *Bologha* it ſelf, a great and populous City, ſent Letters to him full of reſpect; the Governour of *Smola* ſent the Keys of the Town to meet him. *Faenza* open its Gates, and the Governour deſcended from the Walls to meet and pacifie him. *Furli* ſeemed as if it would make ſome reſiſtance, but ſoon ſurrendred at diſcretion; where he lodged only for one whole day to refeſh his Soldiers wearied with their march, and incommoded with the Rains.

Upon theſe ſucceſſes, the fear and terror which poſſeſſed the minds of the people at *Rome*, is not to be expreſſed; for that City being compoſed of a cowardly ſort of Inhabitants, ſuch as Prieſts who are unaccuſtomed to danger, and Strangers who are pleaſed with Reports and Novelties, ſeemed diſtracted by various affectations: for ſome feared plunder, others deſired diſorder, and all reproached the Government. During theſe troubles and diſorders, Guards were placed in the ſtreets, and the command of them given to ſeveral Prelates; Soldiers were levied in all places, and the Coach-horſes in *Rome*, ſeiſed to mount the Soldiers. The Prefect alſo was recalled to Court, and great murmurings againſt him for having ſhewn as much baſeneſs in danger, as he exerciſed Avarice in the Government: in his place Cardinal *Antonio* was ſent, but Cardinal *Franciſco* attended to the Arts of Negotiation, intending with hopes of Peace to amuſe the Duke, and fruſtrate the League.

Cardinal *Antonio* made his head quarters at *Viterbo*, whilſt the Duke of *Parma* was at *Aqua Pendente*: and the Cardinal having put conſiderable Garriſons into the Towns, advanced with ſeven thouſand Foot and two thouſand Horſe to *Monteſiaſcone*, intending to ſtreighten the

the Duke in his quarrels, and obſtruct his paſſage into the State of *Caſtro*: But the Duke mounting on Horſeback, and making a ſhew as if he would advance towards him, though much inferiour to the Enemy in force; yet the Cardinal retired, and would not ſtand the ſhock, chuſing rather to overcome with Prudence, than run the hazard of Fortune. So that now the month of *October* being come, and the Rains having fallen in great abundance, the approach of the Winter ſeemed a ſeaſon more proper for Treaty than for War. In the management of which, Cardinal *Barberino* laying more ſtreſs on tricks and deluſions, than on the ſubſtantial points of ſolid Reaſon in Treaties, diſpatched the Abbat *de Bagni* to the great Duke at *Florence* with Propoſals, That abſolution of the Cenſures ſhould be given to *Edward* with the forms contained in the Ceremonial. The inveſtiture of his Dominions ſhould be given to his eldeſt Son, with reſtitution of all that was paſt, except *Caſtro* and *Montalto*, with ſo much of the Country round about as was within Cannon ſhot,

Ann. 1643. Theſe Propoſitions being tranſmitted from the great Duke to the *Venetians*, were by common conſent rejected, ſeeming unreaſonable to be offered to the Duke of *Parma*, and diſhonourable to the League; wherefore the Treaties at *Venice* were more cloſely confirmed between *Gondi* the Great Duke's Secretary, the Duke of *Modena* and the Senate, being reſolved not to abandon their firſt intentions of protecting the Duke of *Parma*. But amidſt theſe Negotiations Duke *Edward* moved by the fury and impatience of his diſpoſition, diſpeeded three thouſand Foot to croſs the *Appenines*, with deſign to embark them on ſome *Tartanes* and other Veſſels, which were laid ready to receive them at that place, where the River *Magra* falls into the *Mediterranean* Sea; that ſo ſurpriſing the Rock of *Montalto*, they might eaſily make themſelves Maſters alſo of the City of *Caſtro*: but not only the Snows on the Mountains hindred the paſſage of the Soldiers ſo long, that the deſign was diſcovered at *Rome*, and proviſions made againſt it: but alſo the Soldiers being embarked, were encountred with ſuch a ſtorm of contrary Winds, as drove them to *Genoua* and *Porto fino*, where being unprovided of Victuals and Money, part of them periſhed, and the remainder was received into pay by the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour, who ſeaſonably ſent them to ſtrengthen the Government of *Milan*, who beſieged *Fortona*. Duke *Edward* angred with this ill ſucceſs, deſigned to enter the Country of *Ferrara*, which beyond the *Po* confines with the Republick; but being diſappointed herein, he demanded paſſage through *Tuſcany*, to go with one thouſand five hundred Horſe and a few Foot, for recovery of *Caſtro*: but the the Great Duke denied it, until matters were agreed and better ordered on more ſolid and more probable grounds at *Venice*; becauſe that he going forth with weak Forces, and often foiled, his unhappy ſucceſs, diminiſhed the vigour and reputation of the Arms of the Confederates equally with his own.

Thus the minds of Men being on all ſides irritated, the War proceeded: and the hot Spirit of Duke *Edward* not being capable of reſtraint, he with ſix weak Regiments of Foot and as many of Horſe, compoſed of ſeveral Nations, and one of Dragoons, entered the Country of *Ferrara*, and came to *Bondeno*, defended by *Mauriconi* a *Neapolitan* with five hundred Foot, and four hundred Horſe; but he no ſooner heard a Volley of the Duke's

Men, which in the duſkineſs of the Evening approached his Fort, but he immediately abandoned his Poſt, and ran away to *Ferrara*, where he was followed by his Garriſon: then the Duke attaqued *la Stellata*, which making ſome ſmall reſiſtance, afterwards ſurrendred. But Cardinal *Antonio* that he might hinder the Duke's farther progreſs, encamped at *Oſteria Nuova*, a convenient place between *Ferrara* and *Bologna*. Wherefore the Confederates haſtned the reſult of all their Counſels, thinking they had no time to loſe, but to cloſe with this conjuncture, before the people were delivered from their preſent fears; or that Cardinal *Antonio* ſhould have defeated or made the Duke of *Parma* to retire. Wherefore it was agreed: 'That their Forces ſhould be encrea-'ſed to eighteen thouſand Foot, and two thouſand ſix hundred Horſe: 'Theſe were to be divided into two Bodies, one in *Toſcany*, and the o-'ther in the dominions of *Modena*; and in both, the colours of the League 'were to be diſplayed: What was taken, was to be held in the name of 'all, until the Duke of *Parma* was reſtored to his own Dominions. It 'was alſo farther agreed, That the *Venetians* ſhould ſeize the Banks of 'the *Po*, and when there was occaſion of taking the Field, the Troops 'in *Modena* with thoſe of *Parma*, if they could joyn, ſhould at the ſame 'time ſecond the Enterpriſe. From *Venice* and *Florence*, the Nuntios 'were to be diſcharged, and the Revenues of the *Barberins* were to be 'ſequeſtred.

And now ſeveral feats of Arms paſſed with various ſucceſſes: for Cardinal *Antonio* had removed his Camp to *Cento*, where he ſo well fortified himſelf, that he equally defended the territories of *Ferrara* and *Bologna*: The Confederates to make ſome advance, deſired to diſlodg him; but the Cardinal being better fortified than was imagined, gave ſome demur unto their Counſels in what manner to act. But in the mean time the *Venetians* employed part of their Forces at Sea, infeſting the Coaſt with ſix Gallies, and ſome armed Barks even to the City of *Ancona*; they took alſo the Tower of *Premiero*, which being recovered afterwards by the Eccleſiaſticks, was demoliſhed: the Proveditor *Delfino* ſurpriſed alſo in the Night that ſmall Fort, called *delle Bochette*, which the Pope (as we have ſaid) had lately built. The Towers likewiſe of *del Abbate* and *di Goro* were rendered; as was *Arriano* a great Town: which in a fear drove out their Garriſon and yielded to *Delfino*. Cardinal *Antonio* on the other ſide intending to carry the War into *Modena*, took in *Spilimberto*, *Vignivola* and St. *Ceſario*, open places of the Frontier: but the Duke, with the Proveditor *Corraro* followed him with all their Army, deſirous to draw him to a Battel: and to provoke him thereunto, they reſolved to inveſt *Crevalcuore* (a good Town in the Country of *Ferrara*, but not ſtrong) in the view and ſight of the Cardinal: but this Exploit being put into Execution with one thouſand Foot and four hundred Horſe, only the Cardinal oppoſing them with a great Force, conſtrained them to retire in diſorder, leaving one of their Cannon ſticking in the mire.

The great Duke of *Toſcany* in the mean time coming in perſon as far as St. *Caſciano*, had put the Army into the Field under the command of Prince *Mathias*, but with direction of *Alexander del Borro* a valiant and experienced Soldier: Cardinal *Antonio* ſent a Body of five or ſix thouſand Men againſt them commanded by the Duke of *Savelli*; notwithſtanding which, the *Florentines* advanced into the Eccleſiaſtical State, and having taken the ſtrong Paſs of *Buterone*, attacked the City *della Pieve* where a Garriſon of one thouſand five hundred Men without force of Cannon, ſoon capitulated and ſurrendered on conditions, that they might march forth with their Swords only; From thence *Borri* with two thouſand Foot, and eight hundred Horſe made an Incurſion as far as *Orvieto*, forcing *Savelli* to retire farther into the Countrey.

Howſoever not long after, the Cardinal ſent *Valanze* to enter *Toſcany* with three thouſand Foot, and one thouſand Horſe; which he did with ſuch expedition, that he attacked *Piſtoia*, before the Great Duke could ſupply it with ſuch ſuccours as it required, yet the courage of the Inhabitants and Soldiers was ſuch, that they repulſed the Enemy, and preſerved their City: Howſoever the news hereof ſtrook a terrour into the hearts of the People of *Florence*, who for a long time had not been accuſtomed to ſo near approach of the Enemy: but the news of the ſucceſs ſoon quieted their minds; and the Great Duke to ſhew a confidence in his people, put Arms into their hands, which had not been accuſtomary for many years paſt.

Thus did matters paſs with various ſucceſſes, but moſt commonly in favour of the Confederates, until the ſeaſon proper for action ended; when the Winter approaching, the Treaties interrupted by the War, were again reaſſumed: and indeed *Vrban* diſcovered not only an inclination, but a deſire of Peace; for being burthened with years, and weary of the cares which War carries with it, was deſirous to end his days in calmneſs and quiet: and though his Nephews endeavoured to diſguiſe matters which were the moſt tragical and ſad, yet the clamours of the people, which had ſuffered under the devaſtations and preſſures of War, had come to his Ears: wherefore he conſented to a Treaty with the reſtitution of *Caſtro*, entreating the Cardinal *Bichi*, who was ſent by the Court of *France* for the Office of Mediation, to haſten the Peace; that the ſhort reſidue of his life might terminate in quietneſs: The Congregation of State erected purpoſely for direction of the Military Affairs concurred in their deſires with the Pope, to which Cardinal *Barberin*, though much againſt his will, was forced to condeſcend, knowing that with the reſtitution of *Caſtro*, a diſhonourable Peace was to be the conſequence of an unhappy War. With theſe diſpoſitions towards a Peace, Cardinal *Bichi* departing from *Rome*, and in his way to *Venice* paſſed through *Florence*, where in Diſcourſe he underſtood from the Great Duke, that ſaving his own Rights and Intereſts, the Confederates would be ſatisfied with the full reſtauration of the Duke of *Parma*. The Cardinal being arrived at *Venice*, was followed by the Dukes of *Modena*, and *Parma*; *Gondi* and *Teſti* were already there, debating with *Nani* and *Guſſoni*, whom the Senate had deputed for that purpoſe.

An. 1644.

It was now the beginning of the year 1644. when the Cardinal *Bichi* propoſed, That Abſolution and Pardon ſhould be demanded by *France* for Duke *Edward*, and that *Caſtro* ſhould be reſtored to him, and that the rights of the *Montiſts* ſhould remain as before: and that the Confederates ſhould reſtore that which they poſſeſſed belonging to the Church: And to take off the diffidence which the Confederates conceived of non-performance of Articles by the *Barberins*, he propoſed the word of *France* for *Guarantie*, upon declaration and promiſe, that their Arms ſhould be employed againſt him, that ſhould fail in execution of the Agreement.

Urban falling extreamly ſick, whilſt matters were in Treaty, *Bichi* haſtned the concluſion, conſidering that his death would cauſe great alteration in the Treaty: and as a preparation thereunto propoſed a ceſſation of Arms; to which the Confederates aſſented, being ſenſible that ſuch an accident could not happen without great revolutions in the Dominions of the Church; and that with the death of the Pope, the Authority of the Nephews ceaſing, thoſe motives would vaniſh, which had been the original and cauſe of the War: but the Pope's recovery altered all thoſe Counſels which were contrived in caſe of his death; and induced them to haſten a concluſion of the Peace. The Articles therefore propoſed by the Cardinal being debated in ſeveral Aſſemblies, were at laſt concluded and agreed; and ſubſcribed at *Venice* by Cardinal *Bichi* for *France*, by *Giovanni Nani* for *Venice*, by *Battiſta Gondi* for the Great Duke, and by the Marquis *Faſſoni* for *Modena*: and though the Duke of *Parma* refuſed to ſubſcribe upon certain difficulties he made; yet being over-ruled by the Confederates he was forced to concur. The Cardinal with this Agreement poſted in all haſt to *Rome*, being entertained in all places of the Eccleſiaſtical State, with the Acclamations and Prayers of the People longing for Peace.

The Articles ſubſcribed by the Confederates began with a Preamble and Declaration; 'That they had entered into this War with no other 'Deſign, than for the reſtauration of Prince *Edward*, reſerving in all other matters their moſt conſtant Obedience to the Pope and the Holy 'See: That all acts of Hoſtility be ſuſpended, and that the Confederate 'Princes withdraw their Forces into their own Dominions. That all 'Fortifications raiſed during this preſent War ſhall be demoliſhed on one 'ſide and the other. To the Perſons and Places which had ſerved, or 'rendred themſelves to any other Party, Pardon was granted, Priſoners were ſet at liberty, the Religious Perſons who had withdrawn 'themſelves were permitted to return, and the Sequeſtration was taken 'off from the Rents of the Knights of *Malta*, and all Rights were clearly reſerved to the Parties aforeſaid. For execution of all which, Hoſtages were given to the *French* King, and the King for ſatisfaction of 'both Parties, declared, that he having become *Guarantie* for the Peace, 'his Arms ſhould be employed againſt thoſe, who obſerved not the 'Articles, and in favour of thoſe, who executed the Accord.

Thus *Caſtro* was rendred, and the Accord on all ſides executed, and Peace enſued to the ſatisfaction of the Pope, and quiet of *Italy*; but *Urban* did not long enjoy the happineſs of this Peace; for being entered into the ſeventy ſeventh year of his age, he died on the 29th of *July* in the year 1644. having reigned twenty one years wanting eight days. He was certainly a Perſon of high Prudence, Generoſity, and fit for Buſineſs; in his youth he was eſteemed a great Poet; and excellently well verſed in all the Books of Antient Poeſie. He was very munificent in his publick Buildings: and in his own private Concernments he was no leſs ſplendid, having in his life-time erected a ſtately Monument for himſelf in a corner of St. *Peter's* Church near the Sepulchre of *Paul* III. and adorned it with pillars of Marbles according to the contrivance and direction of Cavalier *Bernini*, with this Inſcription.

Urbani

Vrbani VIII. *Barberini Florent. Pont. Max.*
In Vaticano Tumulum
Excitavit & Ornavit
Johannes Laurentius Berninus Eques.

His greateſt fault was *Nepotiſme*, or too great a fondneſs for his Nephews, and indulgence to his whole Family, which he was reſolved to make Rich and Great; and indeed he had opportunity ſo to do in the long time of his Pontificate, having reigned almoſt twenty one years; during which, at nine ſeveral Creations he made ſeventy four Cardinals, of which number of ſeventy four, three were his own Nephews, *viz.* *Franciſco Barberino*, *Antonio Barberino* the *Capuchin*, commonly known by the name of Cardinal *Barberino*, to diſtinguiſh him from the other Cardinal *Antonio*, the younger Brother of Cardninal *Franciſco*, who was Prior of the Order of *Jeruſalem*, and a Knight of the Great Croſs of *Malta*, and made General of the Eccleſiaſtical Army in the place of *Taddeo Barberino* the Perfect, who for his cowardiſe and ill ſucceſs, was recalled from that Charge.

INNOCENT X.

URBAN VIII. having (as is ſaid) breathed his laſt on the 29th of *July*; the Cardinals then reſiding in *Rome*, to the number of thirty nine, aſſembled at a Congregation, in order to diſpoſe and ſettle matters for the more quiet and regular management of Affairs during the vacancy of the Papal Chair. The day following being the ſecond day, Cardinal *Montalto* acquainted the Congregation, that he had received Orders from the Grand Duke to let him know, that Cardinal *de Medicis* could not judg himſelf ſafe at *Rome*, whilſt the Power of the City and of the Militia remained in the hands of *Taddeo Barberin* his mortal Enemy; and therefore he deſired, that either another General of the Forces of the Church might be nominated, or elſe that he might have licenſe to enter *Rome* with his own Guards of Soldiers for defence and ſecurity of his Perſon; and that otherwiſe in caſe of refuſal he proteſted againſt the legality of the Conclave, as not free nor ſecure to thoſe Members who reſorted to it. After mature conſideration of this Point, the whole Congregation of Cardinals (excepting ſome few) agreed, that it was not fit to remove *Taddeo* either from the one or the other Office; but in regard the *Spaniſh* Faction, who were cloſe Adherers to the Houſe of *Medicis*, were of Opinion, that ſome ſatisfaction ought to be given to the Grand Duke herein, it was concluded and agreed, That the Sacred Colledg of Cardinals ſhould by a Writing ſubſcribed with their own hands, give Security and Aſſurance to Cardinal *de Medicis* that nothing ſhould be attempted in *Rome* againſt his Perſon. Secondly, That two other Cardinals ſhould be joyned in Commiſſion with *Taddeo* the Perfect in the Government of the City: And thirdly, That a Lieute- *An.* 1644.

Lieutenant General ſhould be created, Independent of the Prefect, with abſolute Power over the Soldiery.

Theſe Expedients having given ſatisfaction to Cardinal *de Medicis*, and the Funeral Rites of *Urban* being performed, the Cardinals to the number of fifty five entered the *Conclave*. The Perſons which ſeemed to ſtand moſt fair for the Election, were the Cardinals *Pamphilio* and *Sachetti*, one of which, Cardinal *Barberin* was deſirous to promote; though he was moſt inclined to the firſt: for though *Sachetti* was eſteemed for a great Lover, and Friend of the Family of the *Barberins* in general, yet *Pamfilio* was reputed to be more intimate with Cardinal *Barberin*, and one who entertained a particular affection for his Perſon. Howſoever *Sachetti* was the firſt in nomination, but wanting the number of Votes required in the Scrutiny, the *Conclave* proceeded to others; all which by the contrariety of Factions and Intereſts were rejected. But at length *Pamfilio*, to whom Cardinal *Barberin* had paſſed ſome Promiſes and aſſurances of favour before the beginning of the *Conclave*, was after a conteſt of ſix weeks, by a general concurrence of all the Cardinals (five only excepted) aſſumed to the Pontifical Dignity, to which the Power and Intereſt of the *Barberins* did much contribute, who by the long Reign and Government of *Urban* their Uncle, had contracted great friendſhips, as well as enmities. Cardinal *Pamfilio*, whoſe title was St. *Euſebius*, was born at *Rome*, his Father was *Camillo Pamfilio*, his Mother *Flamonia del Bufalo*, both antient Families of *Rome*. His younger years were employed in profitable Studies, in which he became ſo great a Proficient, that at the years of Twenty he took his Degree of Doctor of the Civil Law, by vertue of which, he was made one of the Advocates of the Conſiſtory, and thence promoted by *Clement* VIII. to be Auditor of the *Rota*: by *Gregory* XV. he was ſent Nuntio to *Naples*: by *Urban* VIII. he was ſent with Cardinal *Franciſco* his Nephew in quality of the firſt Miniſters of the *Legation* or Embaſſy into *France*, and at his return was created Patriarch of *Antioch*. Afterwards he was ſent with Cardinal *Franciſco* when he went Legate into *Spain*, and bore the ſame Office and quality of the firſt Miniſter of the *Legation*, as he had done in *France*; in diſcharge of which, he gave ſuch teſtimonies of his Abilities and faithfulneſs; that the Legate being intirely ſatiſfied with his management and conduct of Affairs, left him at his departure in the Reſidency of Nuntio in Ordinary for the Court of *Rome*. In which Office, he ſo well acquitted himſelf to the ſatisfaction of the Pope, and contentment of his Catholick Majeſty, that in the year 1627. he was created Cardinal; though by reaſon of his continuance in the Court of *Spain*, his promotion was not publiſhed until the year 1629. And being returned to *Rome* in the year 1630. he received the Cardinals Hat in a full Conſiſtory. After which he was made Prefect of the Eccleſiaſtical Immunities, and laſtly Supream Judg of the Inquiſition, and Protector of the Kingdom of *Poland*: And having riſen by ſuch degrees and ſteps of Honour, he was at length elected Pope on the 15th of *September* 1644. calling himſelf by the name of *Innocent* X. in honour to the memory of Pope *Innocent*, his Uncle by the Mothers ſide. The Cardinals then preſent at the *Conclave* having after this Election performed according to the uſual cuſtom their acts of Adoration to the perſon of the Pope; *Franciſco Barberino* took the Croſs, and

Ann. 1644

and carried it before the Pope, though that Office properly belonged to Cardinal *de Medicis* the Chief Deacon, who perhaps for ſome diſlike of the Choice, and for want of concurrence in any thing pleaſing to the *Barberins*, had excuſed or abſented himſelf. And thus Cardinal *Barberin* carrying the Croſs, conducted the Pope before the High Altar of St. *Peter*, where with a loud Voice he uttered theſe words: *Annuncio vobis gaudium magnum, habemus Papam Eminentiſſimum, & Reverendyſſimum Joannem Baptiſtam Pamphilium, qui ſibi nomen impoſuit Innocentius Decimus.* *An.* 1644.

On the 4th of *October*, Cardinal *de Medicis* ſet the Tripple Crown on his Head, with great applauſe and acclamations of the People: for though this Cardinal had excuſed himſelf from carrying the Croſs before him after his Election, as his Office of Arch-Deacon did require, upon imaginations perhaps, that the Pope would become a favourer of the *Barberins* his mortal Enemies; as his gratitude to that Family might require: yet having in that Interval of time which was between his Election and Coronation, diſcovered, that his inclinations was otherwiſe diſpoſed (as we ſhall hereafter make appear) he then altered his Affections to the Pope, and became willing to plant the Crown upon his head. On this occaſion ſome Medals were ſtomped with the Image of our Lady with this Inſcription, *Vnde venit Auxilium mihi.* But his own Motto was: *Da Servo Tuo Cor Docile, ut Populum Tuum judicare poſſit.*

And now all the Ceremonies of his Inauguration being paſt, he began to apply his mind to the Government of Church and State; and in the firſt place he ordained a Congregation to inſpect and ſtate the accounts of the Church, and contrive ſome ways and means for payment of Debts: and then according to the cuſtom of former Popes, he provided for a cheap year, and to make Bread and other Victuals plentiful in the City; than which, nothing can be more acceptable to the People of *Rome*, who always labour under the ſcarcity of Bread, unleſs ſupplied from *Sicily*, or other parts.

The *Barberins* did now believe, that this Pope being ſenſible of the many Obligations he had to their Uncle *Vrban* VIII. whoſe Creature he had been; and to themſelves for his advantage to the Papal Dignity; would have protected and defended the greatneſs and Riches they had gained during the long Pontificate of *Vrban*: but his reſpects to them being changed with his condition, made it ſoon appear, that Services to Princes are acceptable, when they can be requited; but when the Obligations grow immenſe, and the Debt too great, the ſenſe of inability to make due returns, changes kindneſs into hatred; *Beneficia eouſque læta dum videntur exſolvi poſſe, ubi multum ante venêre pro gratiâ odium redditur.* Tacitus *lib.*

For ſo it fared with the *Barberins*: For whilſt matters were preparing for Coronation of the Pope, the Ambaſſadours from Chriſtian Kings demanded the place of precedency at that Ceremony before *Taddeo Barberini* Perfect of *Rome*; for though in the time of *Vrban* that place was granted to him in quality of a Prince, for the relation he had to the Pope his Uncle; which now expiring, the ſole Office of Perfect could not entitle him to a precedency before Ambaſſadours. The Marquis of St. *Chamont* Ambaſſadour of *France* appeared moſt vigorouſly againſt the Perfect, and was ſeconded by the Emperours and the King of *Spains* Ambaſſadours, who by ſeveral memorials given to the Pope, did proteſt that they would be preſent at the Solemnity of the Coronation, and poſſeſs their due rank and place which belonged to them; and if his Holineſs ſhould think fit to reſtrain them by force from giving their attendance there, they would counſel their Maſters to recal them, and never ſend others to perform the Embaſſies of Obedience. For anſwer hereunto the Pope made no great matter of heſitation, or doubt, but immediately determined in favour of the Ambaſſadours.

Though this indifference, and coldneſs of the Pope to the *Barberins*, was a great mortification to them; yet they were more ſenſibly touched, ſo ſoon as Cardinal *Antonio* was informed by the *French* Ambaſſadour, how ill his Maſter was ſatisfied with the late actions of his Family; in reſentment of which, he had Orders to require from him the Commiſſion, which conſtituted him Protector of the *French* Nation, and conſequently to take down the Arms of *France* from the Portal of his Gate; declaring that his unfaithfulneſs to his Majeſty was the cauſe of his diſpleaſure, for that in the late *Conclave* he had been an active Inſtrument in the promotion of *Pamfilio* to the Papal Dignity, whom he knew to be an Emeny to him, and entirely dedicated to the intereſt of *Spain*. The two Cardinals *Barberins* finding themſelves thus abandoned by *France*, made their ſupplications to the Ambaſſadours of *Spain* for protection; but here alſo they found their way obſtructed by the Cardinal *de Medicis*, who gave the Cardinal *Albornos*, and the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour to underſtand, that both he, and his Nephew the Grand Duke ſhould be forced to abandon the Intereſt and Service of *Spain*, in caſe they ſhould think fit to eſpouſe the quarrel of the *Barberins*, and to receive them into the protection of the Catholick King. And thus being forſaken by theſe two powerful Crowns, they were deſirous to caſt themſelves into the Arms of the Pope, as their laſt refuge and Sanctuary: to gain which, they propoſed a Marriage between the Daughter of the Prefect and *Don Camillo* the Son of *Donna Olympia*; offering to give her in Dowry all the Lands of *Montelibreto*, which they had purchaſed from the *Urſini* for a milion of Livers, together with a Revenue of thirty thouſand Crowns of yearly Penſion to be raiſed out of the Benefices which they held from the Church, beſides ſuch a ſum of ready Money as his Holineſs ſhould reaſonably require. And though *Donna Olympia* was well enough pleaſed with theſe Propoſitions, yet the Project was croſſed by the *French* Ambaſſadour, who having repreſented unto the Pope the ill ſatisfaction his Maſter would receive from this Alliance, quite broke off the Match; the Pope declaring, that he had too much conſideration for his Majeſty to be overborn by any Intereſt which might be diſpleaſing or inconſiſtent with that of *France*: and farther to take off all ſuſpition and jealouſies of this Match, and to put it almoſt into a ſtate of impoſſibility, he created *Don Camillo* Cardinal, to the great trouble and diſappointment of the *Barberins*; who being now without Friends or protection, remained expoſed to the ſcorn and injury of the People; and to the covetous deſires of the Pope, who now caſting off all conſideration to the Family of the *Barberins*, in deſpight of the Obligations he had to them, ſought for a pretence or colour to ſeize their Eſtates, and enrich his own Family.

The *Barberins* eſteeming their condition deſperate, unleſs they could regain the Protection and favour of *France*, adventured to try their antient Friend Cardinal *Mazarine*, to whom they diſpatched a Courier Expreſs with a Letter, repreſenting their caſe to the Court of *France*; The Cardinal who was a dexterous Miniſter, and ſoon hit that point of Intereſt which concerned his Maſter, did with a moſt quick and piercing judgment, conſider that the Court of *Rome* was then for the moſt part compoſed of a Faction entirely devoted to the Houſe of *Auſtria* and the Grand Duke, and of which the Pope himſelf was Chief: and that to counterpoiſe ſo prevailing a Party, it might be adviſeable to ſupport and make uſe of the *Barberins*, who having ſtill ſome Confidents and Adherents of their own, might be able upon the credit of *France*, to keep the Cardinal *Pamfilio* (formerly *Don Camillo*) the *Spaniards*, and *Florentines*, within ſome tolerable terms of modeſty and moderation. This Propoſal being debated in the Council of *France*, was judged reaſonable, and agreed, that the *Barberins* ſhould be received into Protection and favour, provided, that as pledges of their future Fidelity, they ſhould oblige themſelves to purchaſe Lands and *Demeſnes* within the Dominions of *France*.

The unexpected news of the reſtoration of the *Barberins* to the favour of the *French* King, was ſtrangely ſurprizing at *Rome*, and much changed the Scene of Affairs; for the Commonalty converting their hatred into compaſſion, did much lament the perſecutions, which the *Barberins* undeſervedly ſuſtained; but the Pope and his Party being highly incenſed againſt Cardinal *Mazarine*, by whoſe ſole contrivance, a Pardon was granted to the *Barberins*, laboured underhand with the Duke of *Orleans* againſt him, moving him by a thouſand ill ſuggeſtions to deſtroy the Cardinal, ane for his encouragement and reward, promiſed to advance his Confident, the Abbat *de la Riveire*, to the degree of Cardinal; but all theſe Artifices produced little effect, for Cardinal *Antonio*, without taking leave of the Pope, ſecretly departing from *Rome*, arrived at *Paris*; where caſting himſelf at the Feet of the King, was upon his ſubmiſſion received to Pardon and favour. And now the reſtoration of the *Barberins* to the protection of *France*, being no longer a ſecret, both the Prefect and Cardinal *Franciſco*, with that whole Family, loudly profeſſed themſelves Servants to his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, and in the teſtimony thereof, replaced the Arms of *France* again over their Gates.

The reception alſo of the *Barberins* to favour, was ſignified by the King in a Letter to the Pope, which was delivered by the hand of Cardinal *Grimaldi*, who was at that time employed in the Affairs of *France*; but this Letter operated little of good, but ſerved rather to irritate the mind of the Pope: for within three days afterwards, he erected a Congregation of five Cardinals, all Enemies to the *Barberins*, to inſpect the Affairs of that Family, and to proceed by the methods of Law againſt them: ſo that Cardinal *Franciſco*, who was eſteemed innocent and unblameable in his Converſation, and had not as yet been attacked by any, was cited to make his perſonal appearance before this Court, where an Act was intimated unto him, which annulled and made void the Diſpenſation which his Uncle *Urban* had made to indemnifie his Nephews, and exempt them from rendering an account of the publick Moneys which had paſſed through their hands: and in purſuance hereof *Taddeo*, *An.* 1645.

the

the Perfect was enjoyned to bring in all the Accounts of Expences and Moneys which had iſſued out of the Chamber during the time of his Uncle, though the Books and Receipts were in the hands and Offices of the Paymaſters. And in regard that Cardinal *Antonio* was abſent in *France*, a Brief was ſent him to appear perſonally at *Rome* within the ſpace of two months, under pain of Excommunication and forfeiture of all his Eſtate, Revenues and Benefices which he held of the Church; and in the mean time Cardinal *Franciſco* and the Prefect were obliged in a Bond of thirty thouſand Crowns, to advertiſe Cardinal *Antonio* of theſe proceedings, and not to remove any of their Goods, Houſholdſtuff, Jewels, *&c.* out of their Houſes at *Rome*, or any other place, ſequeſtring alſo the whole revenue of Cardinal *Antonio*. And whereas Cardinal *Franciſco* had been ſuperintendent over the Revenues of the Church, he was ordered not only to give an account of the Moneys, but of all other managements and tranſactions during the Government of his Uncle.

Theſe violent and ſevere proceedings againſt the Nephews of a former Pope, ſeemed a Policy diſagreeing to the inclinations and deſigns of *Innocent*, who intended to advance his Nephew Cardinal *Pamfilio*, and was as paſſionate towards his Relations as ever *Urban* had been, and more perhaps than he; for being wholly guided by the directions of *Donna Olympia Mildachini*, a Woman of untamed Pride and unſatiable Avarice; it was not to be imagined, that the Revenues of the Church ſhould be better employed, or uſed with more moderation than they were in the times of the late *Urban*.

This *Donna Olympia* was but of an ordinary extraction in *Rome*, but being married to Signior *Pamfilio*, Brother to this Pope, made the offſpring which came from her to be illuſtrious; and for govering one, who governed the Church, hath made her ſelf famous in all the Hiſtories of *Italy* and the Eccleſiaſtical State. She was a Woman which naturally affected Rule and Dominion; and therefore, becauſe her Husband croſſed her deſires, and would ſubject her to Obedience, ſhe had a quarrel to him, and held him in abhorrence and deteſtation, though his perſon was comely and handſom enough to be beloved: on the other ſide, none was more pleaſing and acceptable to her than her Husband's Brother, firſt Abbat, and then Cardinal *Pamfilio*; for though he was one of the moſt ugly and ill-favoured perſons in the World, yet becauſe he never entered on any Affair, either publick or private, before he firſt conſulted his Siſter-in-law, making her his Oracle, and preſenting her with the entire diſpoſal of his Will, ſhe became perfectly enamoured of his Perſon and Soul, and would never be ſeparated from his company. After he was created Pope, ſhe then took upon herſelf the State and Garb of a Princeſs, and ſeizing with abſolute Dominion and Authority on the perſon of the Pope, exerted her Power to ſuch a degree, that ſhe made the whole Court of *Rome* ſubſervient to her Beck, and obſequious to her Commands. The greedineſs of the *Barberins* in amaſſing Money, was the moſt exorbitant that ever had been known before in *Rome*: but when this Woman came, ſhe ſwept with both hands, making the rapine and extortion which had been uſed before, ſeem to be attempered with ſome qualifications of modeſty and mercy. For no Judg of criminal Cauſes being made without her recommendations, they all received their Inſtructions from her, which ſhe gave with ſuch Rules and Methods, as conduced to her Avarice. She ordered them to bleed the Purſe, rather than the Veins of Malefactors; that all the Fines and Redemptions of the Guilty ſhould be ſent to her, that ſhe might employ them to the uſe and benefit of the Poor; by which means, and to ſatisfie the Judges, who would always have their ſhare in the Booty, the Fines were raiſed beyond all the meaſures of Juſtice, and though complaints hereof were made unto the Pope, yet neither were the Oppreſſed relieved, nor the Judges puniſhed.

We have ſaid before, that the Pope had created his Nephew *Don Camillo* Cardinal, who was the Son of *Donna Olympia*, and at her inſtigation was declared Cardinal Patron, being a Title commonly conferred on the Pope's neareſt Relation; the which was done, to diſappoint the match between *Camillo* and the Daughter of the Prefect. But this young Gallant being of a gay and light temper, and uncapable of ſerious thoughts and buſineſs, was weary of his Cardinal's Hat, which againſt the conſent, and without the knowledg of the Pope and his Mother, he laid aſide, to marry the Princeſs *Roſſana*, who by the death of her Husband the Prince was become a Widow. The news of this Wedding was ſtrangely ſurpriſing to all *Rome*, but more eſpecially to the Pope and his Siſter, who after a conference of two hours together in private, reſolved that Prince *Camillo* and his Lady ſhould be baniſhed from *Rome*.

The diſgrace of theſe two perſonages, was as ſurpriſing to the World as was the Marriage; for there was in reality no Objection to the match, eſpecially ſince he was the only branch of the Houſe of *Pamfilio*, whoſe noble change to joyn himſelf with a Lady of Beauty, Quality, Riches and Underſtanding, was conducing to that common deſire of mankind, which is to keep up, and perpetuate their Families: wherefore there being no juſt reaſon why the Pope ſhould be diſpleaſed at the match; the cauſe of baniſhing the new married couple was attributed ſolely to *Donna Olympia*, who being jealous of having the Princeſs Partner or Corrival with her in the Government, thought fit to keep her at a diſtance from the Court. But the World in the mean time, could not but remain aſtoniſhed at this paſſage: for, it was wonderful to ſee a Pope ſo ſenſleſs, as to puniſh his Nephew for having directed his love to a Princeſs of equal quality with himſelf; whileſt he himſelf was ſo beſotted as to be given up to the extravagancy of an aſpiring Woman, permitting her to govern his Perſon, Church, State and Court, with an Imperious hand; and yet at the ſame time not to indulge his Nephew the love of a Young, Noble and Beautiful Lady, who brought a conſiderable Patrimony to the Houſe of *Pamfilio*.

Nor was *Donna Olympia* more kind, or leſs jealous of *Nicolo Ludoviſio*, Prince of *Piombino*, who was married to her ſecond Daughter, on hopes that as Nephew to the Pope, he ſhould enter into Offices and Affairs: for this Prince having been Nephew to *Gregory* XV. and Brother to that Cardinal Patron, who ſince the time of his Uncle, abſolutely diſpoſed of all the Affairs of the Church, did now hope to find the ſame fortune, and reap the ſame benefit under this *Innocent* X. But *Donna Olympia* was too wiſe to admit a Nephew into the privacies of the Pope, or a Partner with her in buſineſs: for ſhe entirely beſtowed all Benefices, whether great or ſmall; the Officers of the Datary being charged to keep them in hand, till ſhe had fully informed herſelf of the value: whatſoever Biſhoprick fell void, they that pretended to it, were to addreſs themſelves to her; Abbeys, Canons, and all other Dignities and Governments, Eccleſiaſtical or Civil, were all conferred at the pleaſure and command of *Donna Olympia*: there was no appearing with empty hands before her. The Rates of all Places were ſet, an Office of one thouſand Crowns a year for three years, was valued at one years Revenue, and for ſix years at double; and ſo proportionably: if for life, then it was valued at twelve years, and the moiety thereof to be paid in hand.

Cardinal *Panzirolo*, who was then the great Favorite of the Pope, and who tranſacted all Affairs, durſt yet act nothing without the conſent of this Lady, for ſuch an abſolute Aſcendant ſhe had over the Pope, that his Soul ſeemed to be animated with hers, and his Will ſubſervient to her dictates; and ſtrange it was to ſee her ſit in Council with the Pope with bundles of Memorials in her hands, to receive his Aſſent for formality only, unto that which ſhe had already determined: ſo that it is believed, ſhe had charmed him with ſome ſtrange diabolical Arts, Hiſtories having never given us an Example of the like nature.

And now to give farther inſtances and miracle of her Power, ſhe introduced into the place of Cardinal *Pamſilio* (who had laid aſide his Scarlet to marry with the Princeſs *Roſana*) a certain Nephew of hers, Son to her Brother, a Youth of about eighteen years of age; who was afterwards called Cardinal *Maldochino*: *Olympia* intended once to have made him Cardinal Patron, but he was ſo great a Sot, and ſo ſtupid a Fool, that he was uncapable of Buſineſs, abhorred by the Pope, and a ſhame to the College and Dignity of Cardinals. The Office of Cardinal Patron was ever eſteemed of great Honour and Importance, and when managed by a Wiſe and dexterous Perſon, was of great eaſe and relief to him who ſate in the Papal Chair: for if the Pope were ſick or abſent, he gave Audience to Ambaſſadours, and preſided in the Council; ſubſcribed Letters to the Nuntios, Legates and Governours of Provincs. But this help being as yet wanting to *Innocent*, for want of a Cardinal Nephew endued with ſome tolerable underſtanding; *Olympia* contrived to adopt *Camillo Aſtalli*, Brother of Marquis *Aſtalli*, who had married her Niece, into the Family of the Pope; with whom ſhe ſo prevailed, that he created him Cardinal Patron, and gave him the name of *Pamſilio*, though not of the Blood, nor allied to his Family. It was wonderful to the Court, to ſee a young Man of twenty ſeven years of age, raiſed on a ſudden to ſo important a preferment. 'Twas true, he was endued with a gentle behaviour and good addreſs, and with qualities of mind ſufficient to make himſelf acceptable; but yet neither his years, nor his practice in Affairs, enabled him to ſupport the great burden of Church and State. In making of this Creature, as well *Panzirclo* as *Olympia* was believed to concur; ſhe with a deſign to advance the Brother of him that had married her Niece; but he, to have an influence over all his actions, being well aſſured, that this young Man would act nothing without his direction. But whilſt *Olympia* thus governed all Affairs, the Court of *Rome* became ſcandalous, nothing but libellous Jeſts to the diſparagement of the Pope, were daily put into the hands of *Paſquin* at *Rome*; In the Courts of the Emperour, of *France*, and *Spain*, the Nuntios ſeemed to loſe much of that Reverence, which was formerly given them;and when any of thoſe Princes were refuſed the demands they made and expected from the Pope; it was often ſaid with raillery, *That if* Donna Olympia *had made the requeſt, it would readily have been granted.* It was the common Diſcourſe in the Pulpits of *Geneva*, that a Woman was Head of the Church, and the Univerſal Biſhop, and that now the myſtery of the Whore of *Babylon* was plainly diſcovered. In the Proteſtant Countries, the Comedies and Farces repreſented the Loves and Intrigues of *Innocent* X and *Donna Olympia* upon the Stage: all which the young Cardinal Patron, at the inſtigation of *Panzirolo* made known to the Pope, who being conſcious of the truth thereof, and inwardly aſhamed, reſolved often to forbid *Olympia* the Court, and all concernment or intermedling in Affairs; but knowing not how to come out with it, his inward grief ſuppreſſed his words: but at length taking courage and reſolution, he burſt out into tears, and therewith into words, Interdicting *Olympia* all farther communication with the Court.

After this, Cardinal *Aſtalli*, I ſhould have ſaid *Pamfilio*, gained ground in the affections of the Pope, and being guided by *Panzirolo*, took daily deeper root in his eſteem; *Panzirolo* likewiſe himſelf kept in great credit, and unſhaken by his Adverſaries; but being tired with the burden of buſineſs and continual watches, until after midnight, in conſultations with the Pope, he fell ſick and died, Nature effecting that which his Enemies endeavoured.

The Cardinal Patron above all lamented his loſs, preſaging thereby the miſchief, which afterwards enſued: for now *Donna Olympia* began, though *Incognita*, to frequent the Court, and by degrees to repoſſeſs her firſt Station. But we ſhall for a while leave this Lady weaving her Webs and managing Intreagues, and return again to the *Barberins*, whoſe cauſe was taken into the defence and protection of *France*.

An. 1646.

In the month therefore of *January* 1646. Cardinal *Barberin* and *Taddeo* the Prefect, in compliance with the Pope's Brief, preſented their accounts, having had but fifteen days time allotted to bring them in; and in failure thereof were to forfeit five hundred Crowns a day for every day. until they were delivered. The Accounts being given, the Pope caſt his eyes upon them with much indignation and prejudice, not allowing them for true & legal,excepting againſt the ſum with which they had charged themſelves,which the Auditors would have to be eight Millions; but Counſel pleading in behalf of the *Barberins*, deſired for juſtification of them, it might be permitted to examine the Books of Accounts which were remaining in the Apoſtolical Chamber, to which for their own diſcharge they referred themſelves. But this Demand gave no ſatisfaction or ſtop to the proceedings of Court, whereby in an extraordinary manner, and without form of Law, the Eſtate belonging to the *Barberins* in the *Monte*, was ſequeſtred, with all the other Rents belonging to them within the City of *Rome*, or any other place within the Eccleſiaſtical Dominions: wherefore the *Barbeins* being apprehenſive of farther proceedings againſt their Perſons (after conſideration held, with their Friends) both Cardinal *Franciſco* and *Taddeo* the Prefect retired from *Rome*,and other parts within the Dominions of the Church,

Church to places of Sanctuary and Refuge. In the mean time proceedings of Court againſt them were carried on with greater rigour and ſeverity; ſo that the news of their arrival in *France* was the common Diſcourſe of all *Rome*, and their reſolution therein greatly applauded by all indifferent perſons, to be prudent and agreeable to their preſent circumſtances, conſidering that the *French* King had eſpouſed their quarrel, and taken them into his care and protection. But the little eſteem and great neglect which the Pope ſeemed to ſhew to thoſe inſtances which the King made in behalf of the *Barberins*, were ſo highly reſented by his Majeſty; that both the Senate of *Venice*, and the Great Duke (though an Enemy to them) greatly fearing that this Cauſe might introduce the *French* Arms into *Italy*, interceded with the Pope to moderate the anger he had conceived againſt the *Barberins*, and to allow of ſome Conditions and Expedients of Reconciliation; but all their good Offices were not able to give any ſtop or arreſt of judgment, ſeiſure being made of their Eſtates and Revenue, without any other reaſon, than *quia hic placet*.

The news hereof being extreamly ill reſented at the Court of *France*; it was judged fit to ſend the Biſhop of *Angiers* to *Rome*, to confer with Cardinal *Grimaldi* upon this matter, that ſo a greater Authority might be given to his Negotiations. The Ambaſſadour of *Venice* being recalled from *Rome* by the Senate, before his departure thence, conſulted with Cardinal *Grimaldi* and the Biſhop of *Angiers*, in what manner to govern his Diſcourſe at his laſt Audience; and having taken his directions from them, he warmly applied himſelf to the Pope, repreſenting the danger of a War with *France*, and that it was not prudent for the Cauſe of a private Family, and to gratifie ſome particular grudges, to engage the Church and all *Italy* in publick calamities: but the Pope ſeeming regardleſs of all thoſe conſiderations, replied, That it became not his greatneſs to capitulate with his Subjects; but in caſe the *Barberins* would voluntarily come in, and throw themſelves at the feet of his mercy, he would ſhew them ſuch favour, as the World might take notice, how much the Inſtances of his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, and the Republick of *Venice* in their behalf, had prevailed upon him.

But theſe general terms and uncertain expreſſions giving no ſatisfaction to the *French* Court, the King wrote to his Ambaſſadours at *Munſter*, where the general Peace of Chriſtendom was then in Treaty, ordering them to give that Aſſembly to underſtand the Paſſion he conceived for the Cauſe of the *Barberins*, was ſuch as would obſtruct all proceedings, unleſs ſome Expedient were contrived, and ſome Conditions provided for their ſecurity and reſtoration: by which the Pope was made ſenſible, that the King reſolved to carry theſe matters to the higheſt extremity.

The Abbot of St. *Nicolas* having now for ſome time remained at *Rome*, and informed himſelf of the true ſtate of the Controverſie with the *Barberins*, he demanded Audience, and being thereunto admitted, he preſented his Letters of Credence, which the Pope received with many obliging expreſſions; letting fall a few Tears from his Eyes, when he declared how much he loved the *French* Intereſt, and how affectionate he had ſhewed himſelf thereunto, even to a Paſſion; of which his Chriſtian Majeſty was ſo ſenſible, that had the whole Power of the *Conclave*

clave been in the King, he was perſwaded, he would have created him Pope, in excluſion of all others in the World. But the Abbat was little ſuſpriſed with thoſe Tears, eſteeming them no indications of his mind, but his uſual preparations to important Treaties; proceeded to diſcourſe in favour of the *Barberins*, whom he beſeeched to receive again into his grace and good will; which though his Maſter might expect from him, as a point of Juſtice, yet he would take it as an act of kindneſs and Obligation to himſelf.

That the *Barberins* ſhould make their ſubmiſſion in ſuch humble terms, as he ſhould require and direct; and all things ordered to the greater reputation and glory of his Holineſs; that the refuſal hereof would diſturb the quiet of Chriſtendom, obſtruct the general Peace in Treaty at *Munſter*, and hinder the ſuccours which were then preparing to give the Catholicks in *England*; and in fine, would be the cauſe of great confuſion and diſturbance in *Europe*. In anſwer hereunto, the Pope deſired the Abbat to repreſent unto the Queen Regent how much the *Barberins* had ruined the Church by the expence of more than twenty Millions, which they had charged upon the People by unſupportable Impoſitions, to maintain a War againſt the Duke of *Parma*, for which no juſtifiable account could be given; that they had ſo abuſed the Authority and Government of the Church in the laſt years of their Uncle's Pontificate, that all the World cryed out for juſtice and vengeance againſt them: and if now after all theſe miſchiefs they ſhould find refuge and protection for their crimes in *France*, the Nephews of Popes would for the future become licentious, and not fear what they acted or deſigned, when after the example of the *Barberins*, they might hope to find a Sanctuary and impunity for their crimes, if not in *France*, yet at leaſt in *Spain* or *Germany*, or ſome other Prince, where they were able to make an Intereſt or a Friendſhip. That the Avarice, and ambition of the *Barberins*, was beyond all example; having purchaſed a Revenue of above two hundred and ſixty thouſand Crowns a year, beſides their many Benefices and immenſe Riches, which they had concealed, and the magnificent furniture of their Palaces, which out of reſpect to their Majeſties of *France*, he had ſuffered to remain without ſeiſure or confiſcation. With theſe and the like Arguments was the cauſe of the *Barberins* debated between the Pope and the Abbat without any effect, and the Audience ending without ſatisfaction to either ſide; the Cardinals of the *French* Intereſt concluded, that nothing would be done until ſuch time, as that the ſucceſs of the Siege of *Orbetello* were known, and the Fate of that place determined.

For now the Faction of the *Barberins*, and particularly Cardinal *Grimaldi*, being ſenſible that nothing would operate ſo eaſily with the Pope, as the near approach of the *French* Arms to the Dominions of the Church, prevailed with Cardinal *Mazarine* to ſend a Fleet to the Siege of *Orbetello*. In purſuance of this deſign (which was kept with great ſecrecy) the *French* Fleet commanded by the Duke *de Breze*, and aſſiſted with ſome Troops by Prince *Thomas* of *Savoy*, landed their Forces at the Port of St. *Steffano*, of which they eaſily made themſelves Maſters, as alſo of the Lands of *Talamone*, which the *Spaniard* had guarded with a very inconſiderable Garriſon; and afterwards the Duke *de Breze* came to an Anchor before the Port of *Orbetello*. *An.* 1645.

The news of the *French* Arms before *Orbetello* alarm'd the City of *Rome* with great terrour; and ſo ſenſibly affrighted the Pope himſelf, that he evidently diſcovered a mind much more flexible to the Cauſe of the *Barberins* than formerly, moderating his Sentence, and granting many things in their favour, which he had lately refuſed. The other Princes alſo of *Italy*, who were their implacable Enemies, growing ſenſible of the near approach of danger, became earneſt Interceſſours with the Pope, to give all the ſatisfaction he was able to the Crown of *France*; to which the Pope lending a gentle Ear, was contented that the ſurrender which Cardinal *Antonio* ſhould make of himſelf at his City of *Avignon*, ſhould be eſteemed as a point of ſubmiſſion; and from thence receiving Letters from him, he ordered the Commiſſioners of the Chamber to take off the Sequeſtrations which were laid on their Revenue and Eſtate; for which firſt ſtep of Grace, Cardinal *Grimaldi* returned thanks to the Pope in a full Conſiſtory. But no ſooner was *Orbetello* ſuccoured by the Marquis of *Torrecuſo*, who was diſpeeded with a conſiderable body of Men by the Vice-King of *Naples*; and the *French* forced to raiſe their Siege, and return to *Tolon* with the loſs of the Duke of *Breze* their Admiral; but the Pope reaſſuming again his antient diſpleaſure and hatred againſt the *Barberins*, retracted all the favours and conceſſions he had lately granted to them, and inveighing againſt Cardinal *Mazarine* with bitter words, called him a Betrayer of his Country, and unworthy the Purple with which the Church had cloathed him; having for the ſake of his own ambitious deſires, and envy to the flouriſhing Eſtate of the Houſe of *Pamfilio*, endeavoured to involve *Italy* in a moſt ruinous and dangerous War.

An. 1647. But theſe invectives which the Papal party uſed againſt the Cardinal, ſerved to no other end than to provoke his choler, and whet his deſires of revenge: ſo that having fitted out another Fleet not inferior in number and ſtrength to the former, commanded by the *Mareſchals de Milliarey* and *Pleſſis Praſlin*, they quitted the deſign againſt *Orbetello* and *Portohercole*, and ſailed to *Piombino* and *Portolongone* in the Iſland of *Elba*; the firſt being a place bordering on *Tuſcany*, and opening a paſſage into the dominions of the Pope, was eſteemed convenient and advantagious againſt the Princes of *Italy*, and ſuch as might curb the Pope, and render him more reſpectful to the Intereſt of *France*; the other being ſituate between *Naples* and *Milan*, was judged of great importance for intercepting ſuccours and correſpondencies between one and the other Territory. The firſt attempt therefore was made upon *Piombino*, which being defended by ſome few Troops of *Spaniſh* Horſe, and a weak Garriſon within, upon appearance of a Battery of five Pieces of Cannon raiſed againſt it, capitulated and ſurrendered it ſelf. The ſucceſs of *Piombino* ſtrook a terror into the Defendants of *Portolongone*; which notwithſtanding was for ſome time defended by the Garriſon; but the *French* having prepared ſome Mines, and being ready to make a general ſtorm, the Defendants demanded a Parly, and ſurrendered upon honourable Conditions; the which places the *French* looked upon, as ſo conſiderable, as might be worth the labour and charge of ſtronger Fortifications.

The news hereof being brought to *Rome*, did immediately ſilence the Party oppoſite to *Mazarine*, and again moliſie the mind of the Pope in ſuch manner, that he began to give favourable Audiences to the *French* Miniſters, and to hearken again with ſome gentleneſs to thoſe Propoſals, which were made in behalf of the *Barberins*; howſoever, he could not frame his mind to the promotion of Frier *Michael Mazarin* to the degree of Cardinal, for his heart was ſo full of diſtance againſt his Brother the Chief Miniſter of *France*, that he could not contain his reſentments, but ever vented them ſo often, as he had occaſion to diſcourſe with any of the *French* Nation.

It happened at that time that the Duke of *Guiſe* being at *Rome*, was admitted to Audience with the Pope, and received with all the expreſſions of joy and tenderneſs imaginable, it being the cuſtom of *Innocent* to abound in his exceſſive demonſtrations of love towards that Nation, which he inwardly abhorred and deteſted. The Duke having this opportunity took the liberty to lay before *Innocent* the preſent State of all *Europe*, and particularly that of *France*, which was now governed entirely by Cardinal *Mazarin*, a Perſon ſo wedded to the Intereſt of that Crown, that it were injuſtice to ſeperate one from the other, and that indeed he was ſo riveted in the favour of the Queen Regent, and of all the great Men of that Court (ſome few perſons only excepted) that his Holineſs could not exerciſe effects of his diſpleaſure againſt the perſon of the Cardinal, without diſobliging the noble Court and Nation of *France*. That the Cardinal deſired nothing more than the favour of his Holineſs, and to live in peace and amity with the Court of *Rome*, on which condition, and upon the leaſt demonſtration of kindneſs, the Cardinal would be ready to yield all obſequious ſubmiſſion to his moſt Holy Perſon, and would adore and reverence him with higheſt eſteem. But to make the firſt ſtep herein he told him, that it was neceſſary to call Frier *Mazarin* from *Aix*, where he was Arch-biſhop unto *Rome*, and freely and generouſly to confer upon him the Dignity of Cardinal; for that by this means obliging the Arch-biſhop, and detaining him by preferments near his Perſon, he would eaſily become his Creature, and probably ſo influence his Brother, that all miſunderſtandings and diſguſts between the Courts of *France* and *Rome*, being reconciled a happy correſpondence, and peace would enſue for the future. The Pope approving his Diſcourſe and propoſal of the Duke, immediately gave order to call Frier *Mazarin*, then reſiding at his Arch-biſhoprick of *Aix*, unto *Rome*, with promiſes of advancement; of which the Duke gave advice to Cardinal *Mazarin* his Brother; but this Expedient was ſo little ſatisfactory to the Cardinal, who was ever ſuſpicious of the Pope's good inclinations to himſelf and Family, that he endeavoured to diſſwade his Brother from the danger of an affront, being perhaps unwilling to receive any Obligations from the Pope, whom he believed, could never be heartily reconciled to his Perſon and Intereſt: but the Arch-biſhop was ſo ambitious of the Scarlet, that contrary to the perſwaſions of his Brother, he poſted to *Rome*, where after ſome few months, he was created Cardinal, to the great ſatisfaction and joy of the Duke of *Guiſe*, and of all the *French* Party, who expected from thence the happy fruits of Peace, and of a perfect underſtanding between *France* and the Papal See.

Howſoever the mind of the Pope was not yet quitted, nor could he forget his quarrel to the *Barberins*, though he ſeemed to be ſo far appeaſed, as to admit of the return of Cardinal *Barberin* to *Rome*, which grant was obtained by the Marquis *de Fontena*, who ſucceeded the Abbat of St. *Nicholas* in the Agency for *France*; but howſoever he could not ſo far prevail, as to obtain the like favour for Cardinal *Antonio*, whom the Pope deteſted, and would not hear of his admiſſion, until he had given in his Accounts, and anſwered the Crimes of which he was legally accuſed, as his Brother had already performed. Nor would the Pope admit the Son of *Taddeo* the Prefect, a youth of about eighteen years of age, to execute the Office, during the abſence of his Father, retired (as we have ſaid) to the Court of *France*; though preſſed with the moſt warm inſtances imaginable, by the Marquis *de Fortena*, the Pope poſitively refuſing it as a judged caſe already by the College of Cardinals, in the time of *Sixtus* IV. when the Son of *Antonio Colonna*, though in joynt commiſſion with his Brother, was declared uncapable to exerciſe that charge in the time of his Minority.

For indeed the Pope did not much conſider the applications made from *France* in any Affair, nor was he greatly concerned to ſatisfie their Miniſters, knowing that the Civil Wars at that time, had ſo employed the hearts and hands of that Kingdom, that no miſchief could be derived from thence. Nor did *Innocent* ſhow himſelf much more favourable to any Nation, for the Emperour could obtain no other help in his Wars againſt *Sweden*, than a few Indulgences; ſo that he was forced to patch up a Peace to the diſadvantage of the Empire and the *Roman* Religion. The *Spaniards* received nothing but flat denials to all demands, as the *Conte d' Ognate*, and the Duke *dell' Infantado*, who were then Ambaſſadours did often complain. The *French* required nothing beſides the reſtoration of the *Barberins*, for if the *Spaniards* could obtain nothing, who had been chief Inſtruments in the Pope's Election, what could the *French* expect, who remained as out-lawed people, and as Enemies to himſelf and party. Nor did *Innocent* after the Example of other Popes, intereſt and concern himſelf much in the quarrels between the Chriſtian Princes: or like thoſe, who eſteeming themſelves the univerſal Fathers, interpoſed by the Agents in the Offices of Peace and Mediation; but *Innocent* caſting off theſe cares, and by the advice and counſel of *Donna Olympia*, being deſirous to excuſe the charge and expence of Nuntios in foreign Courts, as uſeleſs and unneceſſary; took up new Maxims and grounds of State: having an Opinion, that the interceſſions of Popes availed little with Princes, until their own conveniencies and preſſures by War inclined them to a Peace.

It is reported, that *Innocent* looking out one day at his Window, ſaw two Porters at Fiſty-cuffs; ſome that were ſtanders by, would have parted them, but the Pope forbad it, giving Order that they ſhould fight it out: They after half an hours ſcuffle, being weary and out of breath, gave over of themſelves, and without other mediation parted: which when the Pope ſaw, he turned to *Panzirolo* (who was then living) *So* (ſaid he) *will the* French *and* Spaniards *do*; *for when they are well wearied with beating one another, they will part and agree of themſelves without the mediations of others.*

But *Innocent* was not ſo wholly averſe from ſending Nuntios into foreign parts, but that with concurrence and approbation of his *Olympia*, he was ready to ſpend Money in Negotiations, which were judged beneficial and neceſſary for the welfare of the Eccleſiaſtical State: in purſuance of which aim, conſidering it of abſolute neceſſity to have a Miniſter at the Treaty of *Munſter*, where the general peace of Chriſtendom was in debate; he appointed *Fabio Chigi* a *Seneſe* to be preſent at that Meeting, who with *Aloiſio Contareni* a *Senator* of *Venice*, and both Men of experience, where by general conſent admitted Mediators: The Emperour's Commiſſioners were *Lodowick* Count of *Naſſau*, and *Iſaac Volmar* Doctor of the Civil Law, to them afterwards Count *Trotmanſdorff*, a perſon of extraordinary Abilities, was ſuperadded. *Avoſſie* and *Servient* appeared in behalf of *France*. Count *Pignoranda* and one *Antonio à Sequanis*, who with his two Pages in a ſlaſhed Suit and a tattered Coach, was of greater importance to the Work, than half the Meeting, beſides were Commiſſioners for the *Spaniard*; and count *Oxenſterne* and *John Sauge Oſnabrugge* for the *Swede*; who being Proteſtants had a Seat appointed for them apart, that they might not mingle with the Catholicks. *Paw* of *Amſterdam*, and *Knute* the *Zelander*, Commiſſioners for *Holland*, were of greater eminency than thoſe from the other Provinces: to *Avoſſie* and *Servient*, *Longueville* of the blood Royal of *France*, was afterwards added, entering *Munſter* with a train like an Emperour. Theſe were the chief Miniſters which graced the Meeting at *Munſter*, beſides ſeveral Acceſſories ſent by their reſpective Princes. *Fabio Chigi* being of a mild and patient temper, did diligently remove all ſuch things, as he judged might obſtruct or retard the buſineſs of Peace; but *Contareni*, though a Man of able parts, yet being paſſionate, did ſometimes proceed with more violence than warineſs.

It will not be pertinent to this Hiſtory, to relate the particulars of this Treaty, what Jugling and what Sophiſtry was practiſed. How much Money; how much time was idly thrown away; how many Letters were written in Ciphers, and how many deciphered; what inſiſting upon Punctilos; never did an Aſſembly more gloriouſly play the Mad-men, as if this Serious Meeting had been held about the place of Princes, not for the Peace of Chriſtendom. In ſhort therefore, as to what concerns our purpoſe, The *Hollanders* impatient for a peace, looking on the *French* ſucceſſes with a jealous Eye, reſolved to improve the preſent opportunity, and without the advice and conſent of the *French*, to ſtrike up a perpetual Peace with *Spain*. The *French* reſenting this manner of proceeding by the *Hollanders*, ſent to the *Hauge* to complain, but without any effect, that people after their uſual cuſtom, preferring their quiet and eaſe from War, before the Leagues and Faith, and Promiſes made with, and given to their Allies. And thus this Aſſembly, the moſt famous next to that of *Trent*, for the reſort of divers Nations, was diſſolved without any effect.

Chigi the Pope's Nuntio, labouring much toward the general Peace, had ſtill in his Eye the deſign of conſerving the Revenue and Immunities of the Church, free and entire; but finding that by the Articles of this haſty Peace, a great part of the Eccleſiaſtical Revenue was remitted, and many Benefices of the Church abandoned to the diſpoſal and poſſeſſion of Enemies to the *Roman* See, did in a ſolemn manner proteſt againſt this Peace, remonſtrating all the damages and loſſes which did thereby accrue to the Apoſtolical Chair: And ſo well, and with ſuch Art did *Chigi* manage this and other Affairs, that at his return to *Rome*, he was promoted by this Pope to the degree of Cardinal; and afterwards had the good fortune to ſucceed him in the Papal Throne.

At *Oſnaburgh* almoſt at the ſame time, was the agreement of the *German* Peace concluded, without the Intervention of the *Spaniards*; by which means the *Swedes* gained the *French* Aſſent to the Capitulations, but the Princes and Free-States of the Empire, having little to ask beſides the exerciſe of their Religion, reſted ſatisfied with the enjoyment thereof, and liberty of Conſcience to ſerve God after their own faſhion, which ſo angred *Chigi* the Nuntio, that he tore the Papers about the Peace, reſolving never more to interpoſe therein.

During theſe tranſactions abroad, the Pope continued in his perſecutions againſt the *Barberins* to the utmoſt ſeverity, and yet being in converſation with Cardinal *Barberin*, he would with much tenderneſs weep and lament the unhappy fate of their Houſe, terming his tears effects of compaſſion (which he had always ready to vent) which others called tears of joy, to ſee the poor Cardinal at his feet, reduced by him to the utmoſt extremity of Fortune. All which ill treatment was againſt the former pretenſions and promiſes of the Pope, who had given faithful aſſurances to the Marquis *de Fontenay* Ambaſſadour of *France*; that in caſe this Cardinal would return to *Rome*, ſo as that he might have one hours Diſcourſe with him, he would forget and pardon all the late quarrels, and would enter into as ſtrict Friendſhip with him and his Family, as he had ever entertained with them before he was Pope; but contrary to this Faith given, the Cardinal was entertained with all the contempt and ſcorn imaginable, notwithſtanding that *France* had declared it ſelf engaged the quarrel, and reſented all the Affronts given to that Houſe in the ſame manner, as offered to their own natural Subjects, or to any Family of higheſt quality and eſteem with that Court. Notwithſtanding which, it had been the ultimate conſummation of all the joys which would have happened to the Pope, could he have only allured the Cardinal *Antonio* by promiſes, and perſwaſions to *Rome*; for then in deſpight of all his Vows and Engagements, he would have ſacrificed his Family, his Reputation, and his very triple Crown in ſatisfaction of his Revenge, and for deſtruction of that perſon whom, (Cardinal *Mazarine* excepted) he hated above all things in the World.

An. 1651. Never was the Intereſt of *France* in that low ebb in *Rome*, as it was in this year, when the Civil Wars and diſtractions of that Kingdom rendered its Power leſs formidable abroad. And ſo the Pope preſuming on the ill ſtate of thoſe Affairs, little eſteemed the character of Ambaſſadour which the Bailly of *Valency* maintained at *Rome* for the Crown of *France*, ſuffering him to receive many Affronts from his Soldiers, without redreſs or ſatisfaction; for which cauſe the Ambaſſadour retired to *Tivoli*, whileſt the Pope contrived to diſpoſſeſs him of the Palace of the *Barberins*, which he inhabited at *Rome*; telling the Ambaſſadour of *Venice*, that whenſoever a reconciliation ſhould be made between him and *France*, the firſt Article ſhould be, that the *French* Ambaſſadour ſhould quit the Palace. The Bailly of *Valency* being ſenſible of all theſe matters made his complaints to the King his Maſter; upon which he received Orders to expoſe and lay before the Pope, all the ill uſages and ſcornful treatment, which his Majeſty had received from him ſince his aſſumption to the Papal Chair; and accordingly being admitted to Audience, he repreſented, That all thoſe Cardinals, whom *Lewis* XIII. his Father of glorious memory had gained to his Party, and allied by his Friendſhip, were now become the only mortal Enemies of his Holineſs, ſome of which he had exiled from *Rome*; and others, whom he had permitted to remain in the City, he had rendered ſo uneaſie in their Habitations, that baniſhment was much more deſirable, than the liberty he gave them to reſide and breathe within the precincts and air of his Court. Witneſs the Cardinals, *Brichi*, *Grimaldi*, *Antonio* and *Mazarine*, all which received ſuch daily affronts and diſcountenances, for devoting themſelves to the Crown of *France*, that it was a capital crime ſo much, as to own a concernment for that Party. That he had made *Medicis* the Protectour of *Spain*, but *Barberin* retained no more than a ſhadow of it for *France*. In ſhort, he omitted no inſtances whereby he might make known the injuſtices done to the Houſe of *Barberin*: and the affronts offered to the King; and particularly by the ſuccours given to *Naples* and *Pontolongone* to the prejudice of *France*. But the Pope returned no ſolid Anſwer thereunto, but broke out into paſſion and a hundred exclamations, which after his nanner he accompanied with Tears; and in fine, complained of the Cardinals devoted to the *French* Intereſt, to be perſons in whom he could not confide, nor receive ſatisfaction in their Society or Correſpondence.

The Pope being in this manner diſturbed and tormented with the continual importunities of the *French* in behalf of the *Barberins*, entered into conſultation with his moſt intimate Confidents of the *Spaniſh* Faction, concerning the means whereby he might eaſe himſelf, and throw off theſe daily vexations. This matter being conſidered, an Expedient was projected, to draw off the *Barberins* totally from the *French* Intereſt; and having joyned them by the *Pamfilian* and *Spaniſh* Party, the Faction of *France* would be inconſiderable in the *Conclave*; and to give a beginning thereunto, the Pope would often ſmile and caſt a gratious Eye on Cardinal *Barberin*, ſo often as he ſaw him in the Conſiſtory, ſeeming as it were to entertain ſome thoughts of entire reconciliation with his Family. The *Spaniards* alſo to inſtil this Opinion, and make it to be ſwallowed more glibly down, offered ſome advantageous Propoſitions of Marriage for the Princeſs *Paleſtrina*, with a conſiderable Perſon of their Country; not that the *Spaniards* had any ſuch real intentions, but only by this Overture to give occaſion unto *Barberin*, to write unto Cardinal *Mazarine* and Cardinal *Antonio*, giving them to underſtand, that ſince the *Spaniards* had offered a convenient Match for his Niece; it was not reaſonable to neglect that Propoſal, unleſs they reſolved to provide more honourably for her in *France*, where ſhe was depoſited as a Pawn for the fidelity of her Family with the Queen Regent.

The Ambaſſadour at *Rome* obſerving by theſe paſſages, that *Barberin* was ſtaggering in his adherence to the *French* Intereſt, ſignified his thoughts thereupon to the Count *de Brienne* principal Secretary; adviſing it as abſolutely neceſſary for confirmation of the *Barberins* in their engagements no *France*, that the Queen ſhould match the Princeſs with one of the moſt illuſtrious Families of the Kingdom; not that any Portion

tion was required from her Majeſty; for that this Lady had ſufficient of her own Eſtate, beſtowed by her Uncle *Urban* VIII. to make her acceptable to the greateſt Peer of *France*; only that ſhe would be pleaſed as a Jewel from her Cabinet, and with other obliging Circumſtances, to beſtow her on ſome great Lord that was moſt devoted to the Intereſt of her Majeſty. And farther, the Ambaſſadour preſſed, that it was neceſſary to give the Cardinal *Barberin* ſome ſpeedy anſwer thereunto, leſt deſpairing of any ſubſtantial benefit from *France*, he ſhould cloſe with the *Spaniards*, who had promiſed to reſtore him forty thouſand Crowns a year, which he held in Abbies within the Dominions of his Catholick Majeſty, ſo ſoon as he had given teſtimony of his detachment from the *French* Intereſt. That the Cardinal apprehended, that *Mazarine* had no real kindneſs for him, and would never aſſent to the marriage of the Princeſs *Paleſtrina* with any conſiderable Match, which he reſerved for one of his own Nieces.

The ſubſtance of the Ambaſſadour's Letter being well conſidered, it was judged neceſſary to gratifie the *Barberins* with ſome thing more than words; and accordingly Cardinal *Barberin* was made Grand Almoner of *France*, and Cardinal *Antonio* created Biſhop of *Poictiers*, which the *French* Ambaſſadour ſignified to the Pope with ſuch formality, as gave matter of Diſcourſe to all the Court. But notwithſtanding all theſe evidences of favour, the conſtancy of the *Barberins* was not able to withſtand the favourable conjuncture, which offered it ſelf for an entire reconciliation with the Pope: for none was more ready to embrace this offer, than Cardinal *Antonio*; who now having been almoſt eight years an Exile from *Rome* and *State*, and living in foreign parts at the expence of ſome Millions, beſides the ſequeſtration of his Revenue from the Church, was infinitely deſirous to cloſe with any reſonable Propoſitions which might reſtore him to favour, and his Eſtate.

The deſign hereof was projected by *Donna Olympia*, who made this Propoſition to Cardinal *Franciſco*: that in caſe he would aſſent to the marriage of the Son of *Taddeo* the Prefect, with the Daughter of her Daughter, by Prince *Juſtiniani*, ſhe would reſtore the *Barberins* to all their Offices, Revenues and Intimate Favour with the Pope; provided that this Reconciliation ſhould be valued the price of her Portion.

The *Barberins* looking on this unexpected Offer as a bleſſing from Heaven, made this ſpeedy and ſhort Anſwer, *That they ſhould eſteem themſelves much honoured and happy in ſuch an Alliance*; for having been for almoſt eight years under a Cloud, and a great part of their Revenue ſeized; they began to fear, that if *Innocent* ſhould die, his Succeſſour would detain their Revenues, and confer them on his own Relations. *Donna Olympia* had contrived to have the match with the eldeſt Son of *Donna Taddeo*; but the *Barberini*, though very earneſt to have the matter concluded, yet pretended, that the eldeſt reſolving to be a Cardinal, had relinquiſhed his Birthright to his youngeſt Brother, who in recompence thereof, had made a reſignation of his Abby to him that was the elder. This was a ſubtle Maſterpiece of their Art, for by this means being reſtored, they got another Red Cap, a thing not known of before, to have three Cardinals at the ſame time of the ſame name and Family.

Theſe reſolutions being carried on with great ſecrecy, advices thereof were diſpeeded in Characters to Cardinal *Antonio*; who wearied with the promiſes and expectations of *France*, and with the delays of Cardinal *Mazarine*, who (as he was perſwaded) deſigned no good to his Family; joyfully embraced the Propoſition, and immediately with privacy conveyed his Niece the Princeſs of *Paleſtrina* unto *Padoua*: the unexpected news whereof, and the ſtrange change of Affairs in the Court of *Rome*, ſurpriſed the whole World, but more eſpecially the Queen Regent of *France*, and Cardinal *Mazarine* the chief Miniſter, who now began too late to conſider of the cold entertainment given the *Barberins*, and that more ſubſtantial preferments ſhould have been beſtowed on them, to confirm and ever oblige them to the Intereſt of *France*: for indeed they were grown very high in their own imaginations, and could not ſtoop to a mean or an indifferent way of living; for when they conſidered of the long Reign of twenty years of their Uncle; during which they had miſſed of the Dukedom of *Urban*, which devolved to the Church in the year 1631. by the deceaſe of that Duke, who died without Heirs; and when they farther conſidered how they were defeated of their project deſigned upon the Republick of *Lucca*; and ſucceeded not in their War againſt the Duke of *Parma*, whom they intended with all the *Farneſi* to drive out of *Caſtro*, and all their Principality by force of Arms; when I ſay, they conſidered theſe matters, they could not with patience read the Hiſtories of *Sixtus* IV. *Alexander* VI. *Clement* VII. *Paul* III. who had not Reigned half the time of *Urban* VIII. and yet were able to make their Nephews free Princes; they could not but much reproach their own fortune and conduct; to repair which, they reſolved to cloſe with this preſent favourable opportunity, breaking through all their ties and promiſes, and engagements to *France*.

And now Cardinal *Antonio* being returned to *Rome*, the Scene was miraculouſly changed; for not only was *Charles* the eldeſt Son of *Taddeo* created Cardinal, and their Niece married to the Duke of *Modena*, a Prince of a noble deſcent; but Cardinal *Barberin* was admitted to the Cabinet-Counſel which was compoſed of the Pope, *Donna Olympia*, the Cardinal Patron, and *Monſignor Azzolini*, who was Guard of the Briefs, a place of great care and truſt: they now governed with *Donna Olympia* all the important Affairs of the Church; and were in ſuch high eſteem with the Pope, who denied them no favours, that being Men well practiſed in the Government, and in the manner of Popes Favourites, they ſo well managed their own affairs, that in the two laſt years of *Innocent*'s Reign, they licked themſelves whole, and repaired the loſſes, which their eight years abſence and diſgrace had brought upon their Eſtates. Nor is it to be wondered, that the Pope ſhould add another Cardinal to this Family, though there were two already of great eſteem therein, ſince there was this juſtice and reaſon for it. It hath been an antient and common cuſtom, for Popes to beſtow their own Cardinals Hat on the kindred of that Pope, from whom he had received his: ſo that *Innocent*, who was created Cardinal by *Urban* VIII. and being obliged to relinquiſh his Red Hat ſo ſoon as he was created Pope, was alſo obliged to beſtow it on one of the *Barberins* at their inſtance; but they being under a cloud of his disfavour, could not obtain this juſt requeſt, until after their reconciliation, when it was not farther to be delayed or refuſed to them. *An.* 1653.

So ſoon as the *Barberins* were fully reſtored and received into intimate favour with the Pope, the Power of the Cardinal Patron began to decline, being ſeldom or never admitted to ſecret Conſultations: ſo that Ambaſſadours to make the ſhorter work, omitting the uſual addreſs by way of the Cardinal Patron, applied themſelves to the *Barberins*, to whom the Pope began to diſcloſe all the ſecrets of his heart, being confident of ſucceſs by the reputation they had gained in the management of Affairs for the ſpace of twenty two years of their Uncle's Reign; ſo that there remained but a ſhadow of Power to the adopted Nephew. For as the Authority and Intereſt of the *Barberins* encreaſed, ſo that of the Cardinal Patron abated: at firſt the Pope ſeemed very cold and neglective of him, but at length burſt out into ſtorms of rage and indignation againſt him: he forbad him his preſence, baniſhed him the Court, deprived him of the Title of *Cardinal Patron*, diſclaimed the Adoption to be his Nephew, with expreſs Order, that he ſhould no longer be called *Pamfilio*, but *Aſtalli*: all his Revenues, Offices and Preferments were ſequeſtred, and at length was baniſhed from *Rome*, and not permitted to carry any of his moveables with him. Theſe extravagant changes and ſports of fortune, made moſt Men laugh, none being able to aſſign the Cauſe or Original thereof. For they could not attribute it to his Avarice or his unjuſt gains: for beſides his ordinary Emoluments, which might be worth to him about fifty thouſand Crowns a year, attended with a great expence, he had not laid up one farthing: the poor Man had once made a little Money of a vacant Benefice, which ſo ſoon as *Donna Olympia* had ſmelt out, ſhe ran with open mouth to the Pope and complained, and cauſed him to refund all into her Apron.

Azzolini by excluſion of *Aſtalli* being created Cardinal, was admitted into the Cabal, where deep deſigns and plots were hatching; the *Barberins* ſuggeſted the conquering of the Kingdom of *Naples*, blaming the Pope, for not making his advantage of the Inſurrection of *Maſinello* in the year 1647. Howſoever in this declining Eſtate of the *Spaniards*, the deſign upon *Naples* ſeemed very feaſible. The *Barberins* promiſed to maintain an Army of ten thouſand Men at their own coſt, until they had reduced that Kingdom to the Dominion of the Church: provided that the principality of *Salerno* might remain to their Family, independant of any other Prince: and with ſuch fancies and projects as theſe, did they tire and torment the decaying carcaſs of the dying Pope. But as the Pope daily languiſhed, ſo *Donna Olympia* was ever more induſtrious, taking bribes with both hands, beſtowing Benefices and Livings in all parts of *Italy*; having in the *Marca* only, which is but a ſmall Province, diſpoſed of three hundred thirty ſix Benefices, which were commonly known, beſides what had paſſed underhand: and at that time the Sin of Simony was become ſo ſcandalous and common, that People began to abhor Churchmen, and hate their Miniſtery, to which they had attained by abominable practices.

Theſe tranſactions at *Rome* were equally diſpleaſing to the Courts both of *France* and *Spain*; who now conſidering that the two Parties and Families of *Pamfilio* and *Barberin* were united in one, they imagined them able to ſtand on their own bottoms, and to have power ſufficient to elect a Pope, in deſpight of thoſe two Kingdoms, or oppoſition of the *Medices*; The *Spaniards* were moſt of all vexed at this Conjunction, entertaining an inveterate hatred againſt the *Barberins*, to whom they attributed all the Affronts and neglects paſſed upon them, in the time of their Uncle, and judged the loſs of *Piombino*, and *Portolongone* to proceed from them, and on ſcore of their quarrel with the Pope: the *French* alſo though angry enough with the perſon of Cardinal *Barberin*, whom they conſidered as unconſtant, faithleſs and wedded to his own Intereſt; yet entertained more gentle thoughts of Cardinal *Antonio*, whom having obliged with the honour of *Grand Almoner* of *France*, with the Biſhoprick of *Poictiers*, and the Order of the *Holy Ghoſt*, they imagined, that the impreſſions they had made upon him, by ſuch obliging favours could never be defaced by time, or altered by a new Converſation: Nor did they wholly loſe all hopes of conſerving this Intereſt, which was the cauſe, that when the *French* Ambaſſadour at *Rome* made his Complement to young *Barberin* Son of the Prefect on his promotion to the degree of a Cardinal; he put him in mind of the good correſpondence which had paſſed between his Uncle *Vrban* VIII. and the Court of *France*; what affection that good Pope demonſtrated to *Henry* IV. and after him to *Lewis* XIII. and afterwards to his preſent Majeſty now reigning; the memory of which was ſo grateful to him and the Queen Regent, that they could not but rejoyce in all the good fortune of their Family, wiſhing it might ſtill advance and be exalted to a greater height of grandeur and glory. And now all the Art was, and great labour uſed by the Pope, *Donna Olympia* and Cardinal *Barberin* to draw off Cardinal *Antonio* from his partiality and concernment which he had a thouſand times vowed in the Intereſt of *France*, the which abated much of their confidence to him, and gave a ſtop to many of their great deſigns: the *French* Ambaſſadour endeavoured to keep him firm by many obliging favours; the Pope perſwaded him to a neutrality, which was moſt agreeable to a good *Italian* and a religious Cardinal: his Brother urged him to caſt off the blue Ribbon of his Order, as incompatible with the great Croſs of *Malta*, and to entertain no intimate communication with the *French* Ambaſſadour, nor to affix the Arms of *France* over the gate of his Palace: but *Antonio* giving no ear to any of theſe inſinuations, *Franciſco* plainly told the Pope, that the only way to reclaim his Brother from the *French*, was to ſhew his diſpleaſure by refuſing to reſtore to him the Offices and Places of Truſt which *Vrban* VIII. had conferred upon him, and to beſtow that of Great Chamberlain on his Nephew *Charles* lately made Cardinal: but this courſe ſeemed too violent both to the Pope and *Donna Olympia*, they took a contrary way, and cauſed a Brief to be carried to Cardinal *Antonio* for reſtitution of all his Offices and Places; the which was delivered him by the Prince of *Paleſtrina* his Nephew, that ſo he might ſeem to have gained theſe favours from the *Pamfilians*; and not from the *French*: After which Cardinal *Antonio* with all liberty avowed his concernment for *France*; which appeared much more generous to the Pope, than the diſſimulations of Cardinal *Barberin*, in whom the Pope could never retain a perfect confidence, nor an entire affection; that it is believed, had the Pope lived but ſome years longer he would have been as weary of the *Barberins*, as he had declared himſelf ſatisfied in them, after ſome few months experience of their conduct the misfortune of this Pope was,that he never knew how to make choice of a wiſe Chief or Director of his own Party. Cardinal *Pamfilio* was ever eſteemed as a Partiſan of *Spain* and of the *Medices*. His whole Family, Mother, Children, Daughters, Sons in law and Daughters in law were engaged in mortal Feuds one againſt another. The Faction of the *Barberins* was not well united: for the greateſt part of the Creatures of *Urban* VIII. entertained a ſecret rancour and venom againſt Cardinal *Francis Barberin*, who after having vowed himſelf a thouſand times to the Intereſt of the Pope, of *Donna Olympia*, and that Family; turned his Coat, and endeavoured with all obſequious diligence to be received into the Service and friendſhip of *Spain*.

Thus having continued the Hiſtory of the *Barberins* with almoſt an uninterrupted courſe or mixture of other Affairs; we muſt return a little back to other paſſages of moment which intervened in the Reign of this preſent Pope.

After the death of *Edward* Duke of *Parma*, which happened in the year 1649. the *Montiſts* wanting the uſual payments agreed by the Duke in the time of *Urban* VIII. and afterwards confirmed by him at the concluſion of the late Peace, made their complaints to the preſent Pope; upon which Licenſe was obtained, and Briefs were iſſued from the *Camera* to proceed againſt the Lands and Eſtate poſſeſſed by that Duke in the ſtate of *Caſtro*. The proſecution of this matter was more violently carried on by the perſwaſions of *Donna Olympia*, becauſe ſhe was diſſatisfied with that Duke for not ſelling to her his *Naboth*'s Vineyard, which was a certain Caſtle in the Dominion of *Caſtro*; and becauſe, as ſhe ſuppoſed, he had been inſtrumental in perſwading the Princeſs of *Roſſano*, who was his kinſwoman to take Sanctuary under the protection of *France*, from the Wiles and Plots of her Step-mother; The Officers and Soldiers of the Duke made reſiſtance againſt the Commiſſioners of the *Camera*, who came to make ſeiſures for payment of the *Montiſts*; which greatly enraged the Pope, who was impatient, and frowned at the leaſt oppoſition made to his Commands; but the Great Duke of *Toſcany* apprehenſive that the conſequences hereof might be an engagement to a ſecond War, he endeavoured by means of Cardinal *Albornozzi* to compoſe the differences, making divers propoſitions to facilitate the payments and tatisfie the *Montiſts*: but whilſt theſe matters were depending, it unfortunately happened that the Biſhop of *Caſtro* was murdered by certain Aſſaſſinates, who attended his paſſage on the confines of the Eccleſiaſtical State. The Pope being furiouſly enraged by the perpetration of this impious fact, which he attributed to the machinations of the Duke of *Parma*; immediately diſpeeded certain Troops under the command of *David Vidman*, and *Girolamo Gabriel* to lay Siege unto the City of *Caſtro*.

At that time the *French* being Maſters of *Piombino* and *Portolongone*, and having an Army in *Lombardy*, under the command of the Duke of *Modena*, and *Mareſchal du Pleſſis Praſlin*, kept the *Spaniards* in awe, and gave countenance to the deſigns of the Duke of *Parma*, in maintenance of his right invaded by the Pope: the Duke encouraged by hopes given him by the *French*, and with an opinion that the Pope, who was aged,and loved eaſe and quietneſs, would gladly compound upon reaſonable terms, ſo ſoon as he found himſelf preſſed by any vigorous oppoſition: he therefore imitating the example of his Father raiſed a conſiderable Army, which he committed to the conduct of Marquis *Gaufrid* with Others to march directly into the Dominions of the Pope; and leſt in their paſſage thither they ſhould commit Violences, or acts of Hoſtility, or burden the people, he furniſhed Money ſufficient to defray all the charges neceſſary for maintenance of the Army; whereby he might make appear the caution he uſed to give no offence, and that his War was only defenſive, and deſigned to no other end, than to protect and maintain his own Subjects and Eſtate. This tenderneſs of doing hurt to any, had been well accepted and interpreted, if the Succeſs had anſwered the hopes and expectations of the Duke: but the contrary happened out; for ſo ſoon as *Gaufrid* was entered into the Dominions of the Church, he was encountred by the Marquis *Mattei* a knowing and an experienced Captain, to whom the Pope had committed the charge and defence of thoſe Countries; and being ſtrenghned by a conſiderable force, and with many Gentlemen Voluntiers, who came from *Ferrara* and *Bologna* to ſignalize their Valour; he gave Battle to the Enemy, and ſoon routed and defeated the Army of *Parma*; the General *Gaufrid* ſhamefully flying, fell under the heavy diſpleaſure and diſgrace of his Prince; and being accuſed by his Enemies of many enormous Crimes and miſcarriages, and of not having obſerved the Orders of his Maſter, he was with much ignominy put to death; whereby he gave a new Example to the World of the mutability of fortune, which from an obſcure beginning and birth being raiſed on a ſudden to the higheſt degree of reputation and eſteem with his Maſter, was with as ſwift a turn tumbled, and precipitated down to an abyſs of ſhame and diſhonour.

The Garriſon of *Caſtro* loſing all hopes of relief and ſuccours by this defeat, ſurrendred the Town upon Articles into the hands of the Pope; who being enraged for the murder committed on the Biſhop, commanded for expiation of that Offence, that the City ſhould be demoliſhed; and accordingly it was ſo entirely ruined, that not one ſtone remained upon another. The Duke in the mean time being terrified with theſe acts of ſeverity, and with the victorious Arms of the *Pamfilians*, who threatned the other Dominions of *Parma*; and finding that neither *French*, nor *Spaniards*, nor other Princes did much take his cauſe and ſufferings to heart, he reſolved to compound with the Pope by the ſale of the Dukedom of *Caſtro* and *Ronciglione* with all the Territories and dependences thereunto belonging, with Power howſoever of Redemption within the ſpace of eight years. And thus ended theſe differences for the preſent, which ſeveral years afterwards broke out into new troubles; and will ever remain an occaſion of quarrel and ſcandal, until ſuch time as equal expedients and proportionate to juſtice are given for mutual ſatisfaction. After the City was thus deſtroyed, the Pope ſet up a Pillar with this Inſcription: *Here was* CASTRO; and ſeveral Croſſes in the places, where Churches had been with the ſame Motto: The Biſhoprick of *Caſtro* with all the Benefices, and Emoluments thereof was afterwards annexed to the neighbouring Metropolis of *Aquapendente*.

It is very certain, that this Pope was extreamly rigorous in doing juſtice, well vers'd in buſineſs, and might have deſerved the character of a skilful, and an underſtanding Perſon, had he not blemiſhed his

Reign with his unpardonable weakneſs towards a rapatious Woman: and therefore we ſhall as well repeat his good actions, as his bad, and give the Reader ſome inſtances of his Vertues, as well as of his Vices.

He was a ſevere lover of Juſtice in his Officers, and would puniſh thoſe Crimes in them which ſavoured of partiality or corruption, Examples hereof we have in many kinds: and particularly it is not to be forgotten, that a certain Nobleman of *Rome* having been guilty of many enormous Crimes, could not be protected from his Juſtice by the Power and Intereſt of his Friends and Relations; for having threatned one of the Judges to be revenged one day upon him, in the vacancy of the Sea; he was apprehended, and accuſed upon thoſe words; which though they would bear no action in rigour, yet they were ſo ſeverely interpreted againſt him, being aggravated by his former Offences, that he was condemned to die, and accordingly ſuffered in the publick face of all the City. Another inſtance we have of his fortitude in the puniſhment of a Judge of the Court for Bribery, whom he committed to Priſon, and afterwards condemned to the Gallies. With the like impartiality and reſolution he puniſhed the people of *Firma*, for having in a Mutiny and Sedition killed Viſcount *Ubert* their Governour: in proſecution of which juſtice, he ſent Count *Vidman* his chief Captain with ſome Troops againſt the City, that thoſe, who were the principal leaders in this Sedition might without fear or favour be brought to condign puniſhment: and accordingly ſome were impriſoned, others baniſhed, others fined, or ſent to the Gallies, or put to death; and that he might attemper in ſome meaſure Clemency with his Juſtice, he enclined a favourable Ear to the ſubmiſſive petitions of that People, and received them into his gracious favour and mercy. Nor was his juſtice leſs eminent in the puniſhment of *Maſcambruno*, who was Sub-datary of the Apoſtolical Chamber, in which Office having behaved himſelf without regard to the faith and integrity required; he forged many falſe Writings, affixing the Pope's Seal to them, and counterfeited his Hand, beſides many other accuſations of bribery and corruption; all which being proved againſt him, he was deveſted of his Office and dignity of Prieſthood, and publickly executed in the face of the whole City.

It is alſo farther to be added in commendation of this Pope, that he reſtored the Elogy, which *Alexander* III. had inſcribed in the great Hall of the *Vatican* in memory of the aſſiſtances, which the *Venetians* had given to the Church; and which *Urban* VIII. without any juſt cauſe or reaſon, had blotted out and defaced.

He was alſo munificent in publick Buildings and adornments of the City, and according to the generous temper of his nature had been much more, had not his Moneys been intercepted by *Olympia*. Howſoever he enlarged the common Priſons of the City, and built others, which were before ſo narrow, and ſtreight as to be noiſom, and unhealthy to the Priſoners. He alſo finiſhed the Walls of the City on the other ſide of the *Tyber*, which were begun by his Predeceſſour *Urban* VIII. He farther repaired, and adorned the Church of St. *John Lateran*, being much decayed ſince the time of *Conſtantine* the Great, who had built it for a Chappel to his Palace, and had been neglected by former Popes. But more eſpecially munificent was he towards the great Church of

St. *Peter*; for that a Memorial might remain of his Beneficence amongſt other Pope's, to that place he added many and various Works, and beautified thoſe places which wanted Ornament; but what the particulars were will beſt appear by this following Inſcription, which was engraven over the great Gate of this Church.

Baſilicam
Principis Apoſtolorum
In hanc molis Amplitudinem
Multiplici Romanorum Pontificum
Ædificatione perductam
Innocentius X. *Pont. Max.*
Novo C Ælaturæ Opere
Ornatis Sacellis
Interjectis in utraque Templi Ala
Marmoreis Columnis
Strato è Vario lapide
Pavimento
Magnificentius Terminavit.

Beſides all which publick Works, many others are recorded of him by *Ciconius*, in the life of this Pope to whom the Reader may be referred.

In the beginning of 1649. the year of Jubilee approaching, he cauſed great proviſions to be made for entertainment of Pilgrims; and that there ſhould be no want of Bread and Wine in the City, he ſent Officers and Purveyors into all the neighbouring Countries to buy up the Corn, and fill up the Granaries in the City; and leſt in ſo general a concourſe of people who flocked to enjoy the Indulgences and Pardons granted at that ſeaſon, Proviſions ſhould be raiſed to exceſſive Rates, care was taken to moderate the prices, and render every thing cheap and commodious for Pilgrims. On the 24th of *December* 1649. the year of Jubilee began, when the Pope in preſence of all the Cardinals, Ambaſſadours and Magiſtrates of the City opened the Holy Gate, which being again ſhut by him at the end of the following year, this Inſcription was engraven upon a Croſs of ſtone over the portal of the Gate:

Innocentius X. *Pont. Max.*
Portam Hanc Sanctam Reſeratam, & Clauſam
AB Urbano VIII. *Pont. Max.*
Anno Jubilei MDCXXV.
Aperuit & Clauſit
Anno Jubilei M D. CL.

About this time a Book was publiſhed in *France*, written by an unknown Author, which aimed to ſubvert the Pope's Authority, by proving that there was an equality in Order, and Government between the Apoſtles St. *Peter* and St. *Paul*; or that the Authority of St. *Paul* was not ſubordinate to that of St. *Peter*. This Book falling under the examination and ſcrutiny of the Inquiſition, was condemned as heretical;

and the ſame Cenſure was paſſed thereupon by the Pope, who cauſed a Brief againſt it to be affixed in all publick places of *Rome*.

But the Opinions of *Janſenius* Biſhop of *Ypres* more ſucceſsfully prevailed in *France*, and *Flanders*; for prevention whereof, and to give a ſtop to the farther ſpreading of thoſe Tenents which were five in number, a Congregation compoſed of Cardinals and Divines was appointed by *Innocent* to examine the ſeveral Articles, and to give their Opinion upon the ſame. And to quicken the Pope, and make him more zealous in the Work; both the King of *France*, and Queen Regent ſent their Letters to the Pope, deſiring him in a matter of ſuch importance (the determination whereof would tend to the ſettlement and quiet of Mens minds and Conſciences) to interpoſe with the final Sentence of his Infallibility and Apoſtolical Doctrine. In like manner moſt of the Biſhops of *France* deſired the Pope's diſtinct determination of every one of thoſe five Propoſitions: for though *Urban* VIII. of happy memory had in general terms publiſhed a Bull againſt the Book of *Janſenius*, and had confirmed the Decrees of *Pius* V. and *Gregory* XIII. againſt *Michael Baius*, whoſe Doctrines concurred with thoſe of *Janſenius*; yet were not convincing to the multitude for want of a diſtinct explication, and particular Sentence againſt every one of thoſe five Propoſitions: wherefore the Pope after diſcuſſion of all thoſe Points by the aforeſaid Congregation, at which he was for the moſt part perſonally preſent; he promulged theſe his determinations thereupon, and affixed theſe diſtinct Notes and Cenſures to every Propoſition; which we have thought fit to deliver in *Latin*, in ſuch manner as they are ſet down by *Ciacconius: in vitâ Innocentii* X.

Primam predictarum Propoſitionum ſcilicet.

Aliqua Dei præcepta hominibus juſtis volentibus & conantibus ſecundum præſentes quas habent vires ſunt impoſſibilia; deeſt quoque illis gratia, quâ poſſibilia fiant. Temerariam, impiam, blaſphemam, Anathemate damnatam, & hæreticam declaramus, & uti taleus damnamus.

Secundam, Interiori gratiæ in ſtatu naturæ lapſæ nunquam reſiſtitur: Hæreticam declaramus, & uti talem damnamus.

Tertiam, Ad merendum, & demerendum in ſtatu naturæ lapſæ non requiritur in homine libertas à neceſſitate, ſed ſufficit libertas à coactione: Hæreticam declaramus, & uti talem damnamus.

Quartam, Semipelagiani admittebant prævenientis gratiæ interioris neceſſitatem ad ſingulos actus, etiam ad initium fidei, & in hoc erant hæretici, quod vellent eam gratiam talem eſſe, cui poſſet humana voluntas reſiſtere, vel obtemperare. Falſam & Hæreticam declaramus, & uti talem damnamus.

Quintam, Semipelagianum eſt dicere, Chriſtum pro omnibus omnino mortuum eſſe, aut ſanguinem fudiſſe. Falſam, temerariam, ſcandaloſam: & intellectam eo ſenſu, ut Chriſtus pro ſalute duntaxat Prædeſtinatorum mortuus ſit; impiam, blaſphemam, contumelioſam, Divinæ pietati derogantem, & Hæreticam declaramus, & uti talem damnamus.

But notwithſtanding this infallible determination the *Janſeniſts* keep up their Party in *France*, and will not be run down unleſs confuted by more convincing Arguments.

Towards the end of this Pope's Reign, *Francis Piccolomini*, General of the *Jeſuits* Order, ſignified to *Innocent* the intentions of *Chriſtina* Queen of *Sweden* to relinquiſh her Kingdom, and embrace the *Roman* Catholick Faith, which that ſhe might profeſs in greater liberty, and more to her Chriſtian Edification, ſhe reſolved to make the Holy City of *Rome* the place of her habitation, where ſhe reſolved to ſpend the remainder of her days. This news was received with great joy at *Rome*, but more eſpecially by the Pope, who finding his ſtrength decaying and languiſhing, was much troubled, that his life would not laſt until he could ſee the Queen of *Sweden*, and a general peace reſtored amongſt Chriſtian Princes.

This Pope at ten promotions, created thirty nine Cardinals according to *Livello*, but *Ciconius* enumerates forty, of which two of them were afterwards Popes, namely *Fabio Ghigi*, who was *Alexander* VII. and *Benedetto Odeſcalchi*, who is *Innocent* XI. now at preſent reigning.

After the month of *September* 1654. the Pope began to decline paſt all hopes of recovery; and though he were nurſed by *Donna Olympia* with all tenderneſs and care, yet old age was ſuch an incurable Diſeaſe, that there was no Herb or Medicine in Nature to cure it: and yet this good Lady did what ſhe could to prolong his life, ſhe kept him from the diſturbances of Buſineſs, not admitting any Perſon to diſcourſe at his Bed-ſide, unleſs in her preſence, and then ſhe would mind them of the Pope's weakneſs, and interrupt Ambaſſadours in the midſt of their Audience, deſiring them to defer their Buſineſs until a time that he might be in a more ſtrong and able diſpoſition of health. It is ſaid, that the Pope continued ten days without any uſe of Reaſon, in which time *Donna Olympia* got at leaſt half a Million; for ſhe made uſe of her time, ſetting every thing at low and mean Rates, ſo that ſhe did not want Chapmen for all vacant Benefices and Eccleſiaſtical preferments. At length on the 7th of *January* 1655. *Innocent* died at his Palace of *Monte Cavallo*, which is *Mons Quirinalis*, after he had governed ten years, and three months and twenty three days, being aged eighty years and eight months. His Body was interred for ſome time in St. *Peter's* Church, but was afterwards removed by Prince *Pamfilio* to the Church of St. *Agnes*, where he erected a ſtately Monument in memory of his Uncle *Innocent* X.

The death of the Pope was no ſooner divulged through the City, but all People began to rejoyce; the Cardinals were pleaſed in expectation and hope of their own promotions; the Clergy were pleaſed becauſe the Church was freed from the Simony and ſcandal of *Donna Olympia*; and the Commonalty rejoyced for the enjoyment of that liberty, which is commonly indulged at the vacancy of the See; and every one expected that *Donna Olympia* would be torn in pieces by the multitude, who had long ſince threatned her, being the perſon whom they perfectly hated. Howſoever nothing happened, for as they ſay in *Rome*, *When the Dog is dead, all the malice dies with him.* And ſo it fared with *Donna Olympia*; who being allied to many great Families was protected by them, none daring to offer her any injury, leſt it ſhould be revenged by her more powerful Relations.

ALEXANDER. VII.

INNOCENT X. being dead, and the eight or nine days paſt, which are, according to cuſtom, appointed, for the ſolemn celebration of the Funeral Rites of the deceaſed Pope: The Cardinals after having ſung the Maſs, which they call *de Spiritu Sancto*, or the Maſs invoking the Divine Inſpiration of the Holy Ghoſt, to aſſiſt them in the election of the Pope; and having heard a Sermon to that purpoſe, preached by Abbat *Roſpiglioſi*, they entered the *Conclave* on the 18th. of *January* 1655.

It would require much time to ſet down all the paſſages of this *Conclave*; for indeed the Intrigues were ſo many, and ſo various, that they daily twiſted and ſtreightned the knot of difficulties in ſuch manner, that little leſs than three months time was required to unty it; and then alſo it was rather cut than unlooſed, when the Cardinals were wearied with their own diviſions, factions and contrivances. For beſides the uſual factions of *Spain* and *France*, there aroſe a third, called *the Flying Squadron*, which conſiſted of the new Colledge of ſuch Cardinals as had been created by *Innocent* X. and conſequently the friends of *Donna Olympia*, who reſolved, if poſſible, to continue an Oar in the Boat of St. *Peter*, ſtickled very hard to have the Election fall on ſome of the new Colledg, under whom ſhe hoped to find good quarter, and to enjoy the ill-gotten Goods and Riches ſhe had amaſſed by Simony and other Villanies; to effect this, and to manage this Party to beſt advantage, ſhe propoſed to put this *Flying-Squadron* under one Head, which ſhe nominated to be *John Carlo de Medicis*, who for his Noble Birth and Seniority, having been the firſt Cardinal that was created by the late Pope, might deſerve to be the Chief Director of that Intereſt; but the *Squadron* refuſed that formality, ſaying, *That each of them had a Head of his own, and Feet to walk upon*; nor would *Maldachini*, who was Nephew to *Donna Olympia* be perſwaded into this Combination; but rather declared himſelf openly to be her Enemy; howſoever his Power was little in the *Conclave*, though he made more noiſe than all the reſt, which his Aunt termed *the braying of an Aſs, whoſe Voice never reached to Heaven.*

To prolong the length of this *Conclave*, there were twenty two Pretenders, moſt of them having conſiderable Intereſt, and all of them high expectations. The wiſe and antient Cardinals, ſuch as *Sachetti*, *Barberino* and *Chigi*, reſolved to ſuffer the fury of the *Conclave* to vent it ſelf by divers Excluſions, before they were offered to the Scrutiny. So *Maculano* and *Palotta* otherwiſe called Cardinal of St. *Clement* was excluded, with *Gaultieri*, *Cherubino*, *Corrado* and others: At length *Sechetti* was nominated, but was excluded by the *Spaniſh* Party, who for the ſake of the *Conde Duca Olivarez*, with whom he had maintained a quarrel ever ſince the time he had been Nuntio in *Spain*, bore a perfect hatred to him: and though by means of the *Flying Squadron* thirty three Voices appeared for him, yet *Spain* was ſtronger, by the addition of other Cardinals to the *Conclave*, namely the Arch biſhops of *Naples*, *Prague*, *Genoua*, and others, all which were united to the intereſt of *Spain*: Cardinal *Barberino* was the next that was put to the Scrutiny, in favour of whom appeared ſo great a number, as affrighted Cardinal *de Medecis* the inveterate Enemy of that Family. It was once alledged againſt him, that his Uncle had been lately Pope, and therefore that it was ſcarce practicable to have the Tripple Crown planted on the head of the Uncle, and ſo ſoon after on the head of the Nephew: for though *Paul* II. ſucceeding his Uncle *Eugenius* VI. yet it was after ſeveral intermediate ſucceſſions of other Popes, in like manner *Alexander* VI. ſucceeded *Calixtus* III. ſo did *Pius* III. to *Pius* II. and *Julius* II. to *Sixtus* IV. and *Clement* VII. to *Leo* X. But for *Barberino* to ſucceed ſo ſoon after to his Uncle *Vrban* VIII. only with the interpoſition of one ſingle Pope, would have been an action without Example, and unknown to former Ages. At length the Cardinals weary of a three months impriſonment, reſolved to come to a concluſion; and the rather, becauſe that the People would not longer endure to be without a Governour: there having been ſuch Villanies committed during the vacancy of the Sea, that none deſired the prolongation thereof, but diſſolute Perſons, whilſt Men of honeſty and ſubſtance lived in danger and without protection: wherefore I ſay, they were reſolved to make an end by the Election of one, who ſhould be grateful and acceptable to all Parties, and this was *Fabio Chigi*, who afterwards called himſelf by the name of *Alexander* VII.

This *Chigi* was one of the new Colledg, being created Cardinal by *Innocent* X. and therefore it was not probable that he would prove an Enemy to the Houſe of *Pamfilio*, nor conſequenty to *Donna Olympia*, if he were endued with a Soul inclined to gratitude. On the othe ſide, the Enemies to that Lady, were ſo well aſſured of juſtice, zeal and vertue of *Chigi*, that he would never ſuffer ſuch Scandals and Villanies offered to the Church to remain unpuniſhed, that they could not apprehend he would ever favour the cauſe of that Woman. The *Medici* fearing leſt *Sachetti* ſhould at laſt be elected, concurred in *Chigi*. The *Spaniards* always eſteemed him of their Party, and partial to their Intereſt; *Barberino* likewiſe deſirous to do ſomething which might put a Complement, or an Obligation on *Spain* concurred with the others: the only difficulty was that of *France*, to overcome which, Cardinal *Bichi*, who was extreamly active in this Election undertook to deal with *Sachetti*, who was one of the Leaders of the *French* Party, and to perſuade him to a concurrence: in management of which he highly exalted the Wiſdom, Religion and Vertue of *Chigi*, to be in every reſpect qualified for this eminent Dignity; that being every way fitted to do ſervice to God and his Church, it would be a blemiſh to Religion, and the Catholick profeſſion to have ſuch a Perſon laid aſide, from a meer punctilio of diſtaſt or unreaſonable diſ-ſatisfaction: With theſe and ſuch like Arguments he prevailed with *Sachetti* to write a Letter to Cardinal *Mazorene* to encline him to a good Opinion and eſteem of *Chigi*; whom *Sachetti* repreſented ſo effectually, that *Mazarine* gave his aſſent and approbation. So that all difficulties being overcome, *Chigi* was with the common Votes of the whole *Conclave* elected on the 7th of *April*, 1655. in which they were ſo unanimous that there was not one diſſenting Voice found in the Scrutiny, which ſeldom happens; and *Roſetti* himſelf, who once ſwore, that he would cut his hand off before it ſhould contribute to *Ghigi*'s Election, gave his Vote alſo in the end.

Fabius Chigi was born at *Siena*, in the year 1599. his Father *Flavio Ghigi*, and his Mother *Laura Marſilia* both of *Patrician* Families, but by misfortunes of the World and other accidents, were much declined from their antient ſplendour: his Father dying when he was young, his Education was committed to his Mother, who took care to have him inſtructed by the beſt Maſters in Grammar, Philoſophy, Divinity, and ſtudies of the Civil Law. Being arrived at the age of eighteen years, his Brother *Auguſtine* perſwaded him to try his fortune in *Rome*, which is commonly the place which raiſes Men of parts and induſtry to higheſt Preferments: his Eſtate was indeed very low and mean, the Patrimony of his Father being divided amongſt a numerous iſſue of Brothers and Siſters: wherefore to help his fortune, *Auguſtino* procured him Letters of recommendation to Marquis *Sfortia Pallavicinio*, a Gentleman of great Wit and Parts, then living at *Rome*, who diſcovering more than ordinary ingenuity, and vertue in *Chigi*, introduced him to acquaintance with Pope *Urban* VIII. who ſoon took a great liking to him for his faculty in Poeſie, and particularly for being an Admirer of *Horace*; in imitation of whom he compoſed many Odes, which were extreamly delightful to *Urban*, who himſelf was an excellent Poet, and in his youthful days had wrote many Poems with much Elegancy. By theſe means *Chigi* became a chief Favourite of the Pope, who diſcovering in him a mind capable of higher matters than a ſtrain of Poeſie, recommended him with much affection to his Nephew *Franciſco Barberino*.

Chigi being of a gentle and tractable diſpoſition, and extreamly modeſt, comported himſelf towards *Barberino*, with a behaviour free from affectation and flattery; and yet in ſuch a ſincere and pleaſing manner, that *Barberino* preferred him to the Charge and Office of Inquiſitor General, in which Capacity he was ſent to *Malta*, where he ſo well acquitted himſelf to the ſatisfaction of thoſe Knights, that having finiſhed the time alotted him by his Commiſſion; he returned to *Rome* with Letters and Teſtimonials from the Grand Maſter, applauding his actions and comportment during the whole time of his reſidence; and with this particular Character, *That* Malta *had never before been made happy with any Perſon equal to him in merit*. And having given this firſt Eſſay of his abilities, the Pope conſtituted him his Vice-Legat in *Ferrara*, where he alſo ſo well demeaned himſelf, that in the ſpace of three years, there was not any who complained againſt his juſtice; but was eſteemed by all for a juſt, and an impartial Judge.

Being returned to *Rome*, it was not long before he was diſpatched to *Cologn* in quality of Nuntio: which employment may ſerve for an evident proof of the great eſteem which the Court of *Rome* conceived of him; when in that conjuncture of affairs, all the World being diſ-united and at variance, there required a Miniſter of more than ordinary conduct and dexterity, to manage the difficulties of Treaties then in action; for having to deal between the Catholicks and Proteſtants, he could not act with due Equity towards the latter, without giving ſcandal to the former, and granting that which was detrimental, and derogatory to the Power of the *Roman* Church. And though the Negotiations of

Chigi for the Intereſt, and in favour of his Maſter the Pope were ſuch, as rather obſtructed than forwarded the concluſion of the Treaty; yet the Emperour and King of *Spain*, *Hollanders* and *French*, growing weary with the troubles of a bloody War, agreed of themſelves without being obliged to the Pope for his Offices of Mediation: for on the contrary, the Articles agreed were ſo detrimental to the Eccleſiaſtical State; that the Pope was ſo far from having a hand in the making of them, that he wholly diſowned and proteſted againſt them by his Nuntio *Chigi*; who in that dexterous and diſcreet manner ſo well repreſented his Maſter's complaints to the Imperial and *Spaniſh* Miniſters, that they could not but allow the reſentments of the Pope to be juſt, for which they had no excuſe, but the unhappy ſtate and urgency of their affairs: but as to the perſon of *Chigi* and his conduct, every one remained ſatisfied, giving him the character of a prudent, wiſe, and an able Miniſter.

Theſe Negotiations at *Cologne* rendered him more capable to ſerve the Papal Intereſt at *Munſter* in quality of the Pope's Legat, in which he behaved himſelf with ſuch equality of mind and good temper towards the Proteſtants, without offence to the oppoſite party, that with general ſatisfaction he acquitted himſelf in this great charge: all which being obſerved and known to *Innocent* X. he was in reward of his many Services promoted to the degree of Cardinal; and afterwards was made Secretary in the place of Cardinal *Panzirolo* deceaſed, a perſon of that judgment, and quickneſs of parts fit for buſineſs, that his equal perhaps was not again to be found in any part of the World. And yet *Chigi* pleaſed the Pope as well, or perhaps better than *Panzirolo*; for *Innocent* being on his death-bed, where Men commonly put off all diſguiſes of diſſimulation, declared that of all the Cardinals, there was none more fit to ſucceed him than *Chigi*. Howſoever in the *Conclave* there was ſcarce any talk or diſcourſe of *Chigi* for the firſt three months; until at length being named, the whole Colledg concurred with unanimous Votes in his Election; the news of which was received in the City of *Rome* with extraordinaray joy and ſatisfaction of the People.

The firſt ten days after his promotion, he ſpent in ordering the ſtate of his publick and private Affairs, giving Audience to Ambaſſadours, and receiving Viſits and Complements from Cardinals and Civil Magiſtrates: And on the 18th of *April* he was Crowned after the manner of other Popes, in the great *Portico* of St. *Peter's* Church; after which Ceremony was ended, he was publickly heard to uſe this ſaying, *Vivo Ego, jam non Ego, vivit verò in me Chriſtus*: I live, but not I, but Chriſt who liveth in me; which was the Motto he commonly inſcribed over the Chambers of his private Retirements.

In the next place, he wrote his Letters to the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, acquainting them with his promotion to the Apoſtolical Chair; and having given them the paternal Benediction, he perſwaded them to Peace and Concord amongſt themſelves, and to turn their Forces againſt the *Turks* for aſſiſtance of the *Venetians*, who were a match unequal to contend with ſo mighty an Emperour.

But before we proceed farther, it is to be expected that we ſhould make an end of the Story of *Donna Olympia*, who remained all this while between hope and fear, in what manner *Alexander* would deal with her. Prince *Pamfilio* was one of the firſt who went to congratulate with him: and her Ladyſhip that ſhe might not be the laſt, to expreſs her joy, ſent her *Maggiordomo* or Steward to pay her Reſpects, declaring the great joy ſhe conceived to ſee one created Pope, to whom her Kinſman had opened the way by making him Cardinal, and her joys were conſummate, in that ſhe had always repreſented him to *Innocent* as a Perſon of extraordinary Abilities, ſo that ſhe could not but ſhare with him in the advance of his fortunes. The Pope anſwered little and in ambiguous terms; ſo that to diſcover his more deep and real thoughts, Cardinal *Azzolini* was employed, who making great profeſſions in her behalf endeavoured to draw from the Pope ſomething of his intentions towards her. But *Alexander* who profeſſed always to do things leiſurely, was not very open in declaring himſelf, which gave *Olympia* the firſt occaſion of diſtruſt: and indeed ſhe had very much reaſon, for every day made new diſcoveries of the corruptions and abuſes ſhe had exerciſed both in Civil and Eccleſiaſtical matters. The Datary was wholly corrupted by the Simonies ſhe had introduced, all Places ſold, no Treaſure left, beſides a thouſand other Villanies and Miſchiefs ſhe had committed.

There was not a day paſſed, but the Pope had his hands filled with Memorials againſt her; ſo that his zeal for the Church could not without ſcandal ſit ſtill, and let ſlip ſuch horrid Crimes without Puniſhment.

At the report hereof, the Lady trembling with fear, ſent Cardinal *Barberino* to diſcourſe the Pope before matters were gone too far: but the Pope was too zealous, and wiſe to hearken to any ſmooth and eloquent Speeches in her behalf: and therefore poſitive in his reſolutions ſent his expreſs Commands to *Olympia* to leave *Rome* in three days, and in eight to be at *Orvieto*, which is a City about thirty miles diſtant from *Rome*, from whence ſhe was not to remove without new Orders from the Pope. There was no oppoſing theſe poſitive Commands, which were neither to be queſtioned nor delayed; ſo that her Ladyſhip privately departed the City, for fear of being affronted by the Rabble, who every where made Songs and Jeſts of her; the ſame day that her Ladyſhip quitted *Rome*, the Pope began to take the examination of Witneſſes for drawing up the Proceſs, but the work was too tedious to be ſpeedily finiſhed; for ſo many ſeveral Charges and Impeachments came daily againſt her, that there was no end, nor could the Books be ſhut up though ſwelled to incredible Volumes. Wherefore to make ſhort work, the Pope commanded ten of the moſt material Points to be filled againſt her, to which ſhe was in the firſt place to give anſwer, before a ſubſequent Charge was to be formed: and in the mean time, it was the diſcourſe of the Town, that the Pope reſolved to ſequeſtre her Eſtate and impriſon her Perſon.

But whilſt Affairs went on in this manner, a dreadful Viſitation of Peſtilence in the year 1656. fell upon *Rome*, which ſo afflicted the City, that not only Trade and Commerce was interrupted, but the common Courts of Juſtice were ſhut up, ſo that the farther proſecution of *Donna Olympia* ceaſed: but the Juſtice of God took up the Cauſe againſt her, and the divine Vengeance reached this guilty Wretch by a ſtroak of the Plague, of which ſhe died at *Orvieto* ſome few months after her perſecution.

It was computed that ſhe left no more than two millions of Crows in ready Money, beſides Lands and moveables ineſtimable, and what ſhe had already beſtowed on her kindred. After her death there was nothing more done, and not much more talk'd of her, for the Prince *Pamfilio*, as Heir to her Eſtate, quietly poſſeſſed himſelf of all, taking his Habitation in her Palace in the *Piazza* of *Navona*, which is the faireſt in all *Rome*: only it is ſaid, ſhe left ſome few Legacies amongſt her other kindred, which did not exceed three hundred thouſand Crowns.

When *Alexander* came firſt to the Papal Chair, he publickly declared againſt *Nepotiſm*, and with ſome direful aſſeverations that he would never rule by his Kindred, nor enrich his Family with the ſpoils of the Church: whilſt he continued in this humour he proſecuted *Donna Olympia* with as much ſeverity and rigour as the methods and courſe of Law would allow; ſo that after her death it was believed, he would have confiſcated all her Eſtate to the uſe of St. *Peter*: but it ſeems the deteſtation of her Crimes, and his anger for all her evils, died and vaniſhed with her perſon; only 'tis ſaid that he drew away about a million of Crowns from Prince *Pamfilio* her Heir, to beſtow on his own Kindred (robbing *Peter*, as we ſay, to pay *Paul*.)

But this ſturdy humour againſt his Kindred continued not long, before he ſuffered himſelf to be overcome by the yerning of his own bowels towards them, and by the perſwaſion of ſome Cardinals his Confidents, who obſerving a deſire in him to break his late proteſtation, met his wiſhes with their arguments of love towards his own Blood and Relations; for why ſhould he be ſingular, and leſs kind to himſelf and Family than other Popes? or why ſhould the Houſe of *Chigi* remain only obſcure and mean? whilſt the *Barberini* and *Pamfilii* were opulent, and exalted, and all the Princes of *Rome* derived their Riches and greatneſs from the favour and benefice of Popes, who had been their Predeceſſors.

Theſe conſiderations melted the tender heart of *Alexander* in ſuch manner, that towards the end of the firſt year of his Pontificate, he called his Brother *Don Mario* with his Son *Flavio*, and *Don Auguſtino* the Son of his Brother *Auguſto*, unto the Court; and being now provided with a Brother and two Nephews, he uſed them with as much indulgence, as other Popes had ſhewn to their kindred; giving the World to underſtand how little Men are acquainted with their own hearts, and how eaſily they change their reſolutions and affections, with the alteration of their fortunes and encreaſe of their humours: but leſt it ſhould ſeem ſtrange to the World, that after ſome ſolemn proteſtations againſt *Nepotiſm*, he ſhould without other methods introduce his Nephews into Offices, and the principal benefits and profits of the Church, he with much formality to a publick Conſiſtory demanded the Opinion of the Cardinals, whether the admittance of ſuch faithful friends, as his Brother and Nephews might not rather be uſeful, than detrimental to the Church? The Cardinals who are always civil to the Pope, and ready to concur with his deſires; every one entertaining an expectancy of being Pope himſelf, when it might be his own caſe, and might feel the like warm inclinations towards his own blood; would not be ſo rude as to exclude his Family from their ſhare in the Government; but rather encouraged him to indulge his own Family, and be as kind to his, as his

Predeceſſors had been to their Relations: and leſt the World ſhould by this admittance of a new *Nepotiſm*, imagine or ſuſpect that the Revenues of the Church ſhould be employed to the raiſing of the Family of *Chigi*, and that the times of *Urban* VIII. and *Innocent* X. were returned; he ordered Briefs to be iſſued againſt Simony and other corruptions with more ſevere terms, and under other more execrable maledictions than had formerly been uſed; He renewed alſo antient Decrees againſt Penſions and Gifts: and farther Ordained, that ſeveral vacant Benefices ſhould not be ſupplied, but that the Revenue of them being received into the Apoſtolical Chamber, ſhould be employed towards extinguiſhing the vaſt Debts of the Church.

And that he might farther engage and inſinuate himſelf into the minds and good will of the People, who conceived high thoughts of him, and demonſtrated unuſual expreſſions of joy at the beginning of his Inauguration; he exerciſed his paternal Love and Charity towards them in three ſeveral calamities which befell the people of *Rome*, and followed one, as it were, on the neck of the other.

In the year 1656. the City (as we have ſaid) was viſited with ſuch a raging Peſtilence, which continued for two years, as rendered it almoſt deſolate; during which time the Famine had been as deſtructive, and made an end of thoſe which the Plague had left, had not the Poor been relieved and comforted by the generous care and pious charity of this Pope. No ſooner was the Peſtilence ceaſed, but the *Tyber* ſwelling with inordinate Rains, ſurpaſſed its Banks with ſuch a deluge, as drowned all the *Campagne* and lower Villages of *Rome*: but thoſe which were ſeated on higher elevations of Hills, were environed ſo with the Waters on all ſides, that for the ſpace of fifteen days, they could have no communication with their Neighbours for relief and ſuſtenance; only the Pope taking compaſſion on his People, employed great numbers of flat-bottomed Boats, laden with Proviſions to paſs from one Village to another, for the ſuccour and ſuſtenance of the Inhabitants; after which, he took all the courſes and expedients poſſible to moderate the price of Wheat, that the People might be ſupported, and not die with Famine. After two ſuch extream Calamities many of thoſe who eſcaped the Peſtilence and the Deluge, periſhed by a fatal Earthquake, which overturned almoſt all the Villages in the Country of *Romagne*; to repair which, and rebuild their Towns, the Pope like a common Father, was highly liberal and bountiful in his Contributions.

Soon after the enſtalment of Pope *Alexander*, the Chriſtian Princes ſent their reſpective Ambaſſadours to *Rome* after the uſual cuſtom, to pay (as they call it) their Acts of Obedience and homage of the Pope. Thoſe who were moſt conſpicuous and eminent were the Duke *de Crequi* ſent from the Crown of *France*, and the Cardinal of *Aragon* from his Catholick Majeſty: they were both received with great honour and reſpect at the Court of *Rome*; but if either of them had acquired a greater eſteem than the other, it was the Duke of *Crequi*, a perſon extreamly handſome and well faſhioned, of a moſt antient and illuſtrious Family, firſt Gentleman of the King's Bed-Chamber, and in all things ſo well accompliſhed, that the Court of *Rome* eſteemed it ſelf highly honoured by the preſence and adminiſtration of ſo noble a Perſonage:

his only fault was, that he was haughty, and of an humour ſo fierce,as became a Camp better than the more polite, and gentle Comportments of an *Italian* Court, or the converſation of Eccleſiaſtical Perſons.

Howſoever, his deportment was pleaſing enough to the Pope and Cardinals, ſo long as *Don Mario* and the Nephews comported themſelves, (as they did at firſt) within the limits of ſome reaſonable modeſty; but ſo ſoon as they began to paſs thoſe terms, and become inſolent, this Ambaſſadour could not long ſuſtain their pride, before their reſentments broke forth into outragious violences: as we ſhall have occaſion to diſcourſe when we come to the year 1662.

An. 1656. In the year 1655. *Chriſtina* Queen of *Sweden* renounced the Proteſtant Religion in which ſhe had been educated, and with it her Crown, which ſhe reſigned to her Kinſman *Charles Guſtavus*, conſerving to herſelf a Rent of one hundred thouſand Crowns a year out of the Dukedom of *Pomerania*: and making publick Profeſſion of the *Roman* Catholick Religion, ſhe reſolved to ſpend her days at *Rome*, where ſhe might enjoy it in the moſt pompous and triumphant manner; and where ſhe might not only delight herſelf in Converſation with grave Cardinals, and the moſt learned men in the World, (of whom ſhe was a great Admirer) but alſo being favoured by the Pope, could on all occaſions have recourſe to him for Pardons, Indulgences, and his paternal Benediction. Wherefore leaving her Kingdom, ſhe apparrelled herſelf in the habit of a Man; in which diſguiſe, paſſing through *Denmark* and the lower *Germany*, ſhe came by way of *Holland* to *Bruſſels*, where in the Privy-Chamber of the Arch-Duke *Leopold*, at that time Governour of the *Low-Countries*, and in preſence of him and all his Nobles on the Eve of *Chriſtmas*, ſhe ſolemnly abjured the Hereſies of *Luther*, and made profeſſion of the *Roman* Catholick Faith. The Plague raging that year at *Rome*, ſhe deferred her journey thither, until health was reſtored to that City and Country; at which time *Alexander* VII. being created Pope, ſhe proſecuted her deſign of ſetling her Habitation in *Rome*, which ſhe having ſignified to the Pope, and received his licenſe, ſhe made at his deſire, another ſolemn Abjuration of *Lutheriſm* at *Inſpruck*, which might diſpoſe and prepare her more ſolemn Reception into *Italy*. When the Queen was in *Germany*, the Pope diſpatched *Luke Holſten* a *Hamburgher* by Nation, who was keeper of the *Vatican* Library, to make her Majeſty a Complement in his name; the which Perſon was the more acceptable to her in reſpect of the fame and reputation he had acquired of, being the moſt learned Man of that age. When ſhe approached near unto *Rome*, he ſent four Nuntios to meet her, *viz.* the Arch-biſhop of *Thebes*, the Arch-biſhop of *Ravenna*, with the Dean, and Clerk of the Apoſtolical Chamber, where attendance was truly Royal and Magnificent: at her entrance into the City, ſhe was met by two Legats *à Latere*, namely, Cardinal *John Charles de Medices* Brother to the great Duke of *Toſcany*, and Cardinal *Frederick* Brother of the Lantgrave of *Heſſen*, who with a pompous train conducted her to the *Vatican* Palace, where ſhe was lodged with all the Royalty appertaining to a Queen. Many and various were the Ceremonies which paſſed at the reception of this great Perſon; after which on *Chriſtmas* day ſhe was confirmed by the Pope in St. *Peter*'s Church, who ſuperadded the name of *Alexandra* to that of *Chriſtina*.

An. 1657.

In the year 1657. the *Venetians* were hardly preſſed by the formidable Power of the *Ottoman* Arms; and being unable by their own force to wage a War againſt that potent Enemy; the Senate omitted no applications or Addreſſes to perſwade forein Princes to yield them ſuccour either by Men or Money. But Wars raging in all parts of Chriſtendom adminiſtred trouble, and care ſufficient for every Prince to conſult and provide for his own Affairs and ſafety. The *Czar* of *Muſcovy*, to whom the *Venetians* ſent their Ambaſſadour; promiſed fair, and gave good words, but with little other effect; it being difficult to concert matters, or engage affections, or reconcile the Intereſt of Princes ſo remote. Thus the *Venetians* becoming deſtitute of all ſuccours from forein Powers, addreſſed themſelves to the Pope, as their ultimate refuge in all their diſtreſſes, beſeeching his Holineſs to grant them ſuch ſums of Mony as might ſupply their preſent occaſions. But alas, *Rome* being but newly recovered from a languiſhing ſtate of Peſtilence, and from other calamities before mentioned; during which, immenſe ſums had been iſſued from the publick Treaſury to ſuſtain the Commonalty in their ſcarcity and want; the Pope alledged juſt Cauſes to excuſe the diſburſment of Mony from the Treaſury, which had of late years been miſerably exhauſted by the avarice of thoſe who had had the management of it: Howſoever, though the Pope pretended himſelf not able to iſſue out Money from his own Exchequer; yet he hearkned to ſome Propoſals and expedients for raiſing it, by the ſale of certain Lands and Rents belonging to the two Ordes of the *Crociferi*, and of the *Stanto Spirito*; which the Pope's Authority, and the cauſe for which the were ſold, being for maintenance of a War againſt Infidels, and of the Chriſtian Cauſe againſt *Turks*, was ſufficient to warrant and hallow the ſale, and give a lawful Title to any Purchaſer. The Order of the *Crociferi* was very ancient, and poſſeſſed ſeveral Monaſteries diſperſed in all parts of *Italy*; but that of the *Spirito Santo* conſiſted of three Monaſteries onely, and all within the Dominion of the Republick, by which they had been endowed under the Protection and Government of the Council of Ten: howſoever, the deſolation of theſe Monaſteries could not paſs without the ſevere Cenſures and Reflections of the World: and though the Friers of thoſe Orders were much fallen from the integrity of their ancient inſtitution, and become corrupt and debauched in their lives and manners, yet their clamours could not be ſuppreſſed, nor the calumnies which they daily uttered againſt the Pope and the Republick be quieted. Howſoever a Bull being paſſed, and a Decree of the Senate for ſale of the Lands, together with thoſe of ſome other ſmaller Monaſteries; the Pope's Nuntio with three Senators were commiſſionated to ſell, and paſs the Title to the Purchaſers, whereby the Senate raiſed above a million of Ducats, which were all employed to carry forward a War againſt the *Turk*. Whileſt this good correſpondence paſſed between the Pope and the Republick, and that the *Venetians* had daily need of ſuccours and aſſiſtances from the Church; it was thought a convenient ſeaſon in the heat of theſe Negotiations, for the Pope to propoſe the reſtoration of the *Jeſuits* to their poſſeſſions on the Dominions of *Venice*, from whence they had been baniſhed on occaſion of the differences between *Paul* V. and the *Venetians*. *Carlo Carafa* Biſhop of *Antwerp*, then Nuntio at *Venice*, repreſented the Pope's deſires herein at a full Senate, laying before them the conveniencies they might expect, and benefits they might reap, by cloſing with the Pope's demands in this Caſe, which ſeemed to be much changed ſince the firſt Original Decree and bando againſt them; for that thoſe *Jeſuits* who had fomented the diviſions, and Sedition were already dead; and that thoſe who were to ſupply their places, would be more cautious and careful for the future, in what manner they incurred the diſpleaſure of the Republick: theſe conſiderations being ſeconded by warm inſtances of the *French* Ambaſſadour to the ſame purpoſe, the matter was carried in the Senate for reſtoration of the *Jeſuits*, and though the antient Decrees of the Senate in this caſe were poſitive and rigorous to the contrary, and that Cavalier *Soranza* greatly oppoſed the admiſſion; yet the preſſure of Affairs, and the neceſſity of gratifying the Pope was ſuch, that that former Decrees were repealed, and the Laws againſt the *Jeſuits* made void; and in this manner, and on this occaſion in the year 1657. they again reſtored to their poſſeſſions within the *Venetian* Dominions, the Church of the *Crociferi* being conferred upon them in the City of *Venice*.

The whole Court of *Rome* being gratified by this conceſſion; not only the Pope, but the Cardinals alſo concurred in their liberal contributions towards maintenance of the War againſt the *Turk*: of which five eſpecially were ſignally bountiful and munificent above the others; namely, *Antonio Barberini*, who gave one hundred thouſand Ducates in Gold; Cardinal *Mazarin* gave two hundred thouſand; *Franciſco Barberino* and *Flavio Ghigi* agreed to maintain three Gallies at their own expence; and laſtly, Cardinal *Nicholas* who was a Count of the Bath, not having ſufficient Eſtate in ready Money to make ſuch a contribution as he deſired, ſold his Palace and Houſhold-ſtuff and Vineyards, that he might be regiſtred amongſt the Benefactors to this War.

At this time alſo the *Ottoman* Arms prevailed againſt the Emperour in the upper parts of *Hungary*, ſo that *Varadin* was taken, and the *Turks* became very formidable: Wherefore that Pope *Alexander* might not ſeem leſs ſollicitous for conſervation of the Emperour, than he was for the *Venetians*; he iſſued conſiderable ſums out of his Treaſury, and laid a Decimation on the Revenue of the Clergy over all *Italy*, wherewith to aſſiſt the Imperial Arms: and farther wrote Letters to the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, then buſily employed in a Treaty at the *Pyreneans*, that having concluded a Peace amongſt themſelves, and confirmed and ſtrengthned the Alliance by the Ties and Obligations of a Marriage, they would have reſpect to the Wars in *Hungary*, which were carried on by the *Turk* to the deſtruction and ruin of the Chriſtian Cauſe.

But we are not here to omit, that this Treaty of the *Pyreneans* which was held in the Iſland of *Pheaſants*, where the Marriage was concluded between the preſent King *Lewis* XIV. and *Maria Tereſa Infanta* of *Spain*, was acted and carried on between Cardinal *Mazarin* and *Don Luis d' Haro*, without the meditation and concurrence of this Pope *Alexander*; which ſeems the more ſtrange, in regard that this very Pope was Nuntio at *Munſter*, and once managed that Treaty there in behalf of *Innocent* X. with great applauſe and proof of his abilities and integrity, and was perſonally known to the Cardinal; many therefore and various were the reflections on this Point by the Politicians of thoſe times; and many Writers on this Subject have aſſigned divers Cauſes and reaſons for it. Some would have it, that during the time that Cardinal *Mazarine* and the Pope then in quality of Nuntio were together in *Germany*, ſeveral differences had ariſen between them, not then reconciled; and that the Nuntio had always ſhewed ſome partiality towards the Court of *Spain*; for which cauſe *Mazarine* had oppoſed the election of him to be Pope; and though afterwards he had been ſweetned by the character and commendations which *Sachetti* had given of him; yet ſtill ſome acrimony remained on the ſpirits of the Pope, becauſe he obſerved an averſion in the Cardinal, to treat the Peace in any part where the Pope did reſide; he alſo obſerved with what indignity to the Papal See he had treated the Cardinal of *Retz*: and with what neglect and almoſt contempt he comported himſelf towards his Nuntio at *Paris*. Moreover, the Pope was not a little diſpleaſed to obſerve what backwardneſs and delay was uſed by the Court of *France*, not only in ſending the Extraordinary Embaſſy of Obedience to *Rome*, but the Ordinary alſo of Reſidency: nor was the Pope ignorant of thoſe ſlight and contemptible expreſſions, which both the Cardinal and his Favourite the Biſhop of *Omodei* publickly uttered with ill reflections on his Perſon. On the other ſide the Cardinal complained of the Pope's Ingratitude; for that after he had ſo freely concurred in his Election, he always evidenced an averſneſs to comply with him in the moſt reaſonable Demands, and ever favoured that party which interfered with the Intereſt of *France*; ſo that the Cardinal would often ſay, that the Pope offered him frequently injuries, that ſo, if at any time he did him right, it might ſeem to proceed from favour, rather than from the motives of Juſtice. Theſe matters and the like occaſioning coldneſs of correſpondence, it is no wonder that Writers ſhould attribute the reaſon of the Pope's excluſion from this Treaty of Peace to the preceeding Cauſes; when as the moſt reaſonable Obſtacle might be the Pope's incapacity, to moderate and concur in the terms of this Peace: for whereas the foundation of this Peace between the two Crowns, was eſtabliſhed on the Articles concluded and agreed at the Treaty of *Munſter*; which the Pope having condemned, diſannulled and proteſted againſt, it could not be expected, that the Pope ſhould be called and made a Party to that Treaty, unleſs they had reſolved to raiſe difficulties by that oppoſition and obſtructions, which would have been made by the Pope and his Miniſters.

In ſhort, the Marriage being celebrated between the moſt Chriſtian King and the *Infanta Maria Tereſa*, the only Cauſe and Object of the Peace, was afterwards the original of many quarrels and diſorders in Chriſtendom. For the *Spaniards* not having been ſo ſtrict and wary as the importance of the matter required, did not take care to Pen the Inſtrument of *Renuntiation*, which the *Infanta* ſigned to the Dominions of her Father, and all her Paternal Inheritance with ſuch ſtrict terms, but that there was ſtill a Gate open to pretenſions: nor was the form of the Oath ſo ſtrict and expreſſive, but that there was place left for evaſions, as the Ambitions of Men, and their deſire of Dominion ſhould govern and tranſport them; from whence great Confuſions and bloody Wars have riſen, as the Annals of our times are able to atteſt.

In the beginning of this year, a quarrel aroſe at *Rome* between the *Conteſtabile Colonna*, and the *Cavalier Chiaia*, Captain of the Pope's Guards, cauſed by a Diſpute they had for a Bank or Seat at a Comedy. Another quarrel this *Colonna* maintained with the Ambaſſadour of *Toſcany*, for not reſigning to him the principal place at a Viſit which they made to the Princeſs *Farneſe*: Another quarrel he created not long after at *Milan* with the Prince of *Avellino*, on occaſion of a Diſpute about the Title of *Excellency*; all which had proceeded farther than to words, had they been to be managed by other meaſures, than thoſe of wiſe and cautious *Italians*. *An.* 1660.

About this time the Duke of *Bracciano*, Father of the Cardinal of that name, dying at *Rome*, the Duke of *Nerula* his Brother, a Perſon of great parts and abilities, ſucceeded to the Eſtate and to the Inheritance; taking on him the Title of *Highneſs*; which he cauſed his Subjects to Inſcribe in all the Memorials and Writings they made to him. Howſoever, ſuch as were Foreigners and Independent to the Duke, refuſed to give him other Title than that of *Excellency*; until the Cardinal *de Retz* was perſwaded to paſs that Complement upon him; and then the Prince *Pamfilio*, and all the Princes of *Rome*, who were in any wiſe conſiderable for Birth, Riches or Power, began to aſſume the honour of *Highneſs*: to prevent which and the many Controverſies which might ariſe from theſe beginnings, the Pope gave Order, that Title of *Highneſs* ſhould be given to no Prince, who was Vaſſal or Feudatary of the Church, unleſs to the Duke of *Parma* only, and as to all the Families deſcended from Popes, as alſo to all the *Roman* Barons, they were not to pretend to a Title above that of *Colonna* and *Orſina*, which was no other than that of *Excellency*.

In the year 1661. one *Francis Borri* born at *Milan*, vented ſtrange and unheard of Hereſies and Enthuſiaſtical Doctrines at *Rome*, drawing unto himſelf many followers and Diſciples, by a feigned Hypocriſie and diſſimulation, tending to ſublime Notions and elevations of a ſpiritual Life. The Doctrines he taught, which he pretended to have received from Divine Inſpiration, were, That the Bleſſed Virgin was really a Goddeſs; becauſe ſhe was Mother of the Word Eternal, which was God. And to expreſs this Myſtery to his Diſciples, he maintained, that the Bleſſed Virgin was the Holy Ghoſt Incarnate in the Womb of St. *Anne*. And for this reaſon, he ſtiled the Bleſſed Virgin, moſt Holy Goddeſs, and only Daughter of the moſt High. *An.* 1661.

He taught farther: That in the Holy Euchariſt, there was not only the Natural Body of Chriſt, but that of the Virgin *Mary* joyned with it.

That beſides Hell, and Purgatory, and Limbo, there was a fourth place appointed for the receptacle of Infidels. That the Book of *Eccleſiaſtes* wrote by *Solomon* was not Scripture, but a Treatiſe full of Errours, compoſed by him at the time when he remained in Original Sin. And that it was not neceſſary to make confeſſion of ſecret ſins in the Ear of a Prieſt.

Theſe and many other wild Fancies being figments formed in the hot and diſturbed Brain of *Borri*; the Inquiſition had no ſooner notice of, but they ſent out Warrants to take him, of which he having notice, fled firſt to *Inſpruck*: howſoever his Hereſies were examined and condemned by the Inquiſition, and he who was the Author of them, was burnt in Effigie: of which when *Borri* had notice, he went to *Strasbourg*, where to be revenged of the Pope, he burn'd him alſo in Effigie. Thence paſſing through *Holland*, he vented a thouſand chimerical Opinions at *Roterdam*. Thence he went to *Coppenhagen* in *Denmark*, where he made profeſſion of Chymiſtry, and wherein he was ſo excellent an Operator, that he created a real belief in King *Frederick* III. that he had the Philoſophers Stone, by which he was able to turn any metal into Gold: but that King dying, his Son *Chriſtian* V. was far from ſuch a belief, and diſcovering him to be an Impoſtor, gave him five hundred Crowns and a Paſſport, and ſo diſmiſſed him from his Dominions. *Borri* afterwards deſigned to travel into *Turky*, was in *Moravia* on his way thither, ſeiſed by the Emperour's command and ſent to *Rome*, where being ſentenced by the Inquiſition, he was in the year 1670. condemned to perpetual Impriſonment. The which ſtory I the more willingly mention, becauſe I remember in the year 1678. to have ſeen him at *Rome*, a Priſoner in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*.

The Duke of *Crequi*, who (as we have ſaid) reſided at *Rome* with character of *Ambaſſadour Extraordinary*, from his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, was at firſt received and careſſed with all the ceremony and reſpect which that Court was able to expreſs; but afterwards the Duke in the greatneſs of his Spirit, not being able to ſupport the pride and diſdain which he obſerved to be lodged in the Breaſt of *Don Mario* the Brother, and the Cardinal *Ghigi*, Nephew to the Pope; he retired to evidence the little eſteem he had for them, by preferring other Cardinals before them in his Viſits. The Pope highly reſenting his neglect and want of due reſpect, received the Ambaſſadour at all his Audiences with much coldneſs and indifferency, refuſing to grant him any thing which he demanded of favour to the King his Maſter or his Subjects. The Pope alſo plainly told the Ambaſſadour, that he had deferred to make the Complement which he owed to the Ambaſſadreſs his Lady, until firſt he had done him right, in performance of that honour which was due to his Kindred and Relations.

Whilſt this ill correſpondence continued between the Pope and the Ambaſſadour, it happened, that a quarrel aroſe between two *French* men and three *Corſi*, who were of the Pope's Guard (which had lately been recruited with one hundred and fifty Soldiers of the ſame Country of *Corſica*.) The cauſe of which was this, Two *French* Men to ſhew their bravery undertook to diſarm the Night Petrol of three *Corſi*, which they eaſily effected, becauſe the Officer which was with them, commanded them not to fire their Carbines or make reſiſtance, for which default, he was caſhiered the Service, and declared uncapable of farther Office; and the Soldiers alſo were puniſhed for cowardiſe and neglect of their duty. It is reported alſo, that *Don Mario* upbraided the *Corſi* with ignominous terms; ſaying, that they knew not how to make uſe of their Arms; and that upon any other default of this nature, he would ſhave their heads, and ſend them to the Gallies. The *Corſi* to excuſe themſelves, laid ſome fault on Cardinal *Imperiale* the Governour, who to acquit himſelf and recover his honour, ordered the Bailiffs and Officers, which he had employed to make ſearch for ſome perſons in a Houſe adjoyning to the Palace of *Farneſe*, where the *French* Ambaſſadour lodged, to make farther ſearch for them into the very Houſe of his Excellency, during the time that he was at Maſs in the Chappel.

The Ambaſſadour had juſt reaſon to reſent this Affront and Indignity offered to his Sanctuary (the Houſes of foreign Miniſters being ſo eſteemed at *Rome*) but the quarrel was higher enflamed by a certain *French* Man, who that Evening, as he paſſed through the quarters of the *Corſi*, uttered ſome indiſcreet words of ſcorn and contempt againſt them, for which they purſued him as far as the Ambaſſadour's Stables; who hearing a noiſe, ſent ſome of his Servants to appeaſe the tumult: but his endeavours rather enflamed than quieted the diſturbance, for the *Corſi* being gathered in great numbers, began to fire their Carbines at the Ambaſſadour himſelf whilſt he looked out at his Windows, killing ſome of his Lacquies with three or four more, who caſually happened to be then preſent with the Ambaſſadour. And not content with this outrage, put themſelves into a Body and in Military order, with their Colours flying and Drums beating, came and preſented themſelves again before the Palace *Farneſe*; on which appearance the Ambaſſadour cauſed the Gates to be ſhut: during this Tumult, it happened that the Lady Ambaſſadreſs returned home, whom when the *Corſi* eſpied, theſe barbarous beaſts fired a Volley of ſhot into her Coach, and killed a Page who attended at the Boot; with which unexpected accident the Lady being affrighted, fled for refuge into the Palace of Cardinal *d' Eſte*; who ſoon afterwards, with a Guard of two hundred Men, conveyed her ſafe to the Duke her Husband, though Cardinal *Imperiale* the Governour, had ordered the Captain of the *Corſi* to obſtruct the paſſage of Cardinal *d' Eſte*; but when this Cardinal ſent *Imperiale* word, that he ſhould anſwer the leaſt diſorder which ſhould happen hereupon, with the loſs of his life; he conſidered better upon it, and deſiſted from giving farther interruption.

The Duke of *Crequi* paſſed all the Night following in conſultation with the Ambaſſadours of *Spain*, *Venice*, *Malta*, and with others whom he eſteemed well-affected to the Crown of *France*; all which greed, that the Dignity and Character of ſacred Embaſſies was wounded and violated by this outrage. On the other ſide, the Cardinal *Imperiale*, *Don Mario* and others of that faction, held long conferences concerning the management of this Affair: for to juſtifie it, the matter was too foul and barbarous to admit of any plea or excuſe: and therefore it was reſolved to give it the name of a *Riot* and *Tumult*, raiſed by inſolence of the Soldiery; and that all the Family of the *Ghigi*, both Men and Women, ſhould make their Viſits and Condolence to the Ambaſſadour and his Lady, expreſſing abundance of ſorrow and trouble for the late miſfortune, which they ſolely attributed to the inſolence and fury of Soldiers, and not to any deſign or premeditated Act of the Commanders. But this Wound was too freſh and ſore to be ſalved with a remedy of ſuch vain excuſes; conſidering that the Gates of *Rome* were by expreſs Order left open all the Night, to afford means and opportunity for the *Corſi* to retire and make their eſcape.

The news of what had paſſed at *Rome*, was brought to the King whilſt he was performing the Ceremonies of his Birth-day at St. *Germains*; which though it diſturbed his Majeſty, and took much off from the Revels and Jollity of the day; yet no ſudden reſolution was taken until ſome days after. In the mean time Letters arrived both from the

Pope and the Queen of *Sweden*, repreſenting the matter as a meer accident, cauſed by a ſudden and an unreaſonable outrage of the Soldiery, for which neither the Pope nor his Kindred, nor the Commanders could be accountable; and with this account the King began to be ſo well ſatisfied, that he had once thoughts to paſs it by, and ſhew no farther reſentments of it. But whilſt this was mediating, Letters came from the Duke of *Crequi*, adviſing, that by reaſon of the ill treatment he received from the Court of *Rome*, the common proviſions for the ſupport of his Houſe, were in a great meaſure reſtrained; ſo that he ſhould be forced with his Family to leave *Rome*, and to retire into the Dominions of the Duke of *Toſcany*. This Advice and new matter of Affront ſo enraged the mind of the King, that he immediately commanded the Nuntio to depart his Dominions, which was executed ſo effectually, that he was conducted by a Guard to the confines of *Savoy*.

In the mean time the Pope being deſirous to excuſe and protect Cardinal *Imperiale*, was contented to take the blame upon himſelf; and to manage the matter, he conſtituted a ſelect Congregation of Cardinals, *viz. Roſpiglioſi*, *Chigi*, *Borromeo*, *Imperiale*, *Pio*, *Sachetti*, *Corrado* and *Farneſe*, to examine and diſcourſe the matters in diſpute in a Political manner, and to give their Opinions by what ways and means things might beſt admit of an Accommodation. The Cardinal *Chigi* alſo obtained licence to be admitted to a Viſit with the *French* Ambaſſadour; but it ſignified little, for the Ambaſſadour appeared ſullen and reſerved; ſaying, that he had no quarrel with the *Corſi*, nor had he reaſon to blame them for executing only the commands of their Maſters.

On the firſt of *September Crequi* departed from *Rome*, in company with the Duke of *Ceſarini*, who having ſhewed ſome concernment and partiality for the *French* Party, lay under the diſpleaſure and indignation of the Pope. So ſoon as the Ambaſſadour was gone, diſcontents flew yet higher than before; for it was not only adviſed to commit Cardinal *d' Eſte* into the Priſon of St. *Angelo*, but alſo to deprive both him and *Mancini*, of the degree and dignity of Cardinals.

But howſoever, it was thought neceſſary to appeaſe the King by ſome pleaſing Lenitives, and by means which might pacifie his juſt Anger and diſpleaſure: To which end, the Pope diſpatched divers affectionate Letters to him, full of ſorrow and reſentment for the late unhappy miſchiefs: divers Propoſals were alſo diſpatched to the Duke of *Crequi*, tending to an Accommodation; and Edicts publiſhed againſt the *Corſi*, who were criminals in this Action, deſiring all Princes into whoſe Dominions they were fled, not to allow or grant them protection. And farther in deteſtation of this late fact, a Company of the *Corſi*, which were not concerned in the Riot, were disbanded and caſhiered from ſervice of the Pope.

In the mean time *Crequi* remained at *Radocofani* (which is within the Dominions of the Great Duke) expecting Orders from the King in what manner he was to behave and govern himſelf: which being come, with the forms of adjuſtment, and ſome private inſtructions in favour of the Dukes of *Parma* and *Modena*; the Abbat *Roſpiglioſi* (Nephew of the Cardinal of that name) was diſpatched to the Ambaſſadour with Inſtructions and Propoſals: but this Treaty taking no effect, *Raſponi* was employed: but then the Duke propoſed two Alternatives, the one was totally excluded, and the other admitted of ſo many exceptions; that *Crequi* deſpairing of any reconciliation, went to *Luca*, and thence *Ligorne*, from whence paſſing into *France*, he added more Fuel to the Fire, encreaſing the differences which were as yet too freſh and new to be reconciled. The two alternatives were as follow:

"That *Caſtro* and *Rociglione* ſhould be reſtored to the Duke of *Parma*, and the Valley of *Camachio* to the Duke of *Modena*: the moſt "Chriſtian King requiring no other ſatisfaction for the late injuries he "received, than that he might be able to do juſtice to the two Princes "his Allies and Friends, who had reſigned themſelves to his defence "and protection. And to the end that Ambaſſadours from his Majeſty "and other Princes might for the future live quietly at *Rome* with their "Families, and enjoy the priviledges and immunities which appertain "to them according to the Law of Nations; no Deſign ſhould be enterpriſed againſt them, without the conſent and knowledg of the "Sacred Colledg.

"That the Proceſſes at Law againſt the Duke *Ceſarini* ſhould be ſuperſeded, and reparations made him for all detriment done to his Eſtate, and diſparagement to his Honour. And that likewiſe proceedings at Law, whether Civil or Criminal againſt any Perſon on this occaſion, ſhould ceaſe after the twentieth of *Auguſt*. That all Corps of "Guard after that time, and quarrels of Soldiers be removed out of *Rome*; "and after this, That the manner how the Duke *Ceſarini* is to be received into *Rome*, be treated and agreed with himſelf.

But in caſe the Pope did not judg fit to aſſent and agree to theſe Propoſals, then this Alternative was offered:

"That *Don Mario* be baniſhed to *Siena* for five years. That Cardinal *Ghigi* be ſent Legat into *France*, to make the Pope's excuſe at "his firſt Audience, upon the matters which lately happened in *Rome*. "That at his ſecond Audience, he ſhall ſupplicate his Majeſties Pardon both for himſelf and his whole Family; and that the form and "circumſtances of this Addreſs, ſhall be ordered and concerted with "the Ambaſſadour *Crequi*. That Cardinal *Imperiale* be degraded and "deprived of his Hat. That the Captain of the Guards be caſhiered and for ever baniſhed. That a *Pyramed* be erected amidſt "the late quarters of the *Corſi* at *Rome*, with an Inſcription ſpecifying "the Crime for which they were baniſhed, and for which they "were rendered uncapable for ever more to ſerve or bear Arms in "*Rome*.

Theſe were the firſt draughts of thoſe Propoſals which *France* offered in order to an Accomodation; which being brought to *Rome*, did greatly trouble the mind of the Pope, with many melancholy and diſtracted thoughts; of which he eaſed himſelf in a full Conſiſtory, complaining of the hard terms exacted from him by the King of *France*: For reply whereunto ſome of the Cardinals, & particularly *Azzolino*, ſpake loudly againſt the Propoſals, encouraging the Pope to a fortitude of mind, and to ſtand ſtiff upon his terms, rather demanding ſatisfaction from the King, than yielding to terms derogatory to his Honour. Howſoever the Pope being ſtreightned in his thoughts, and being divided between the apprehenſions he conceived of a War againſt the Church, and the tenderneſs he had for his Relations, his own Honour, and the Reputation of the Sacred Colledg, which he eſteemed wounded in the perſon of Cardinal *Imperiale*; he inclined rather to the ſecond Alternative, than to the firſt: and accordingly he deſigned to ſend Cardinal *Chigi* his Legat into *France*: and *Imperiale* was to be removed from his Government in *Rome*, and ſent Legat into the *Marca.* But becauſe this change appeared to the King rather a promotion than a puniſhment, he was ſent to *Genoua*, there to reſide, until he could contrive means to reconcile himſelf to the King: but becauſe the Brief did not denote this dimiſſion under the term of Baniſhment, exceptions were made thereunto as diſſentaneous from the pleaſure of his Majeſty: but as to *Don Mario*, the Pope ſeemed to grant whatſoever was deſired, and to ſacrifice him and all his Relations, for the quietneſs and peace of the Church; but this was only a flouriſh and an exceſs of words, as afterwards appeared in the ſequel, when matters came to be put in execution. As to the *Corſi*, whatſoever was demanded, was condeſcended unto.

But things being in this imperfect manner agreed; this year ended with fears and apprehenſions of an enſuing War. And in the mean time *Avignon* revolting from the Pope, the Inhabitants pulled down the Arms of the Church, and expelled the Papal Offices from the City: the People crying aloud for *France*, and their return to that Dominion, from whence they had been unjuſtly alienated by connivance or indulgence of former Kings: and now they erected the Arms of *France* in all publick places; and reſtored or renewed the Antient Inſcriptions, which vindicated and atteſted the Right which the Kings of *France* held unto that City.

To augment all theſe difficulties, *Spain* ſeemed inclining to the concernments of *France*; for which reaſon the *Venetians* appeared the moſt proper Inſtruments to be employed in the Offices of Mediation; and accordingly the Ambaſſadour of that Republick reſiding at *Paris*, called *Luigi Grimani*, received Inſtructions to treat in favour of the Pope; and indeed the way of Treaty was the only remedy which *Rome* could propoſe; for the King of *Spain*, to the great admiration of the World, had granted leave for the *French* Troops to march through *Milan* into the Eccleſiaſtical State. The Duke of *Savoy* adhered to the *French* Intereſt; *Genoua* being weak and unable to reſiſt, durſt not deny a compliance; the Duke of *Parma* and *Modena* for their own conveniencies and hopes of benefit, became parties in combination againſt the Pope. So that *France* nouriſhing vaſt Deſigns by this conjuncture of Affairs, kept up their diſſatisfactions in the Court of *Rome*, which they pretended to have been augmented and enflamed by that honourable treatment and reception which the Pope had given to *Charles* Duke of *Loraine*, who was fled from *France*, and ſhrouded himſelf under the protection of the Church.

An. 1663. About the beginning of this year Cardinal *d' Eſte* and the Duke of *Crequi* arrived at *Paris*, where they gave a full relation of all matters which had lately paſſed in that Outrage, committed by the *Corſi*; with all the particulars of the Treaty which had been acted at St. *Quirico*: But they repreſented things in ſuch ſevere terms, as greatly exaſperated the mind of his Majeſty, and cauſed him to reject all the Briefs, Papers and Letters which were ſent from the Pope and Cardinals for their juſtification; ſo that nothing was now diſcourſed of at *Paris*, but War and the manner how to carry and manage the *French* Arms in *Italy*; which were ſo feared and apprehended at *Rome*, that all the conſultations of the Conſiſtory were to facilitate the Negotiations, and give ſuch ſatisfaction as might prevent a War.

In the mean time *Aloiſé Grimani* Ambaſſadour for the Republick of *Venice*, then reſiding at *Paris*, uſed all means poſſible to bring matters to a reaſonable underſtanding: in which he ſo well ſucceeded, that he procured a new Deputation for Plenipotentiaries to be nominated, and appointed by both ſides, and the place for Treaty to be *Lions*: So on the twentieth of *February* in Inſtrument was ſigned by the Ambaſſadour *Grimani* and the Duke of *Crequi*, and ſubſcribed alſo by Monſieur *Tellier* Secretary of State and War; whereby it was concerned and agreed to enter upon a Treaty at the place aforeſaid, and that Plenipotentiaries ſhould be ſent thither with Commiſſions from his Majeſty.

Thus for ſome time whilſt the troubles were a little appeaſed and quieted; the Court of *France* paſſed the *Carneval* with their uſual jollity; and entertained it ſelf with celebration of the marriage between *Madmoiſelle de Valois*, and the Duke of *Savoy*, the Count *de Soiſſons* repreſenting the perſon of the Duke at the ceremony of Eſpouſals. The which few days after was followed by the marriage of *Madmoiſelle Mariana Mancini* Niece of Cardinal *Mazarini*, with the Duke of *Buglion* great Chamberlain of *France*.

And now the Plenipotentiaries preparing for their meeting at *Lions*: *Aloiſé Sagredo* arrived at *Paris* in quality of Ambaſſadour for the *Venetians*, and to ſucceed in the place of *Grimani*, who was to be aſſiſting in the Office of Mediation at *Lions*; *Grimani* and Monſignor *Raſponi* Plenipotentiary from the Pope met at the time and place appointed; but the Duke of *Crequi* on pretence of the Queen Mothers ſickneſs, or rather becauſe he deſired to be waited and attended for, came not to *Lions* till towards the middle of *May*: where entring on their Conference, matters were proceeded to a hopeful condition of agreement; when on a ſudden they were unppily interrupted by the Title which the Pope ſent to *Raſponi* to be his Nuntio Extraordinary to all Chriſtian Princes: for whereas the *French* King had abſolutely determined, not to receive any perſon from the Pope with Title of Nuntio uutil the differences were accommodated between himſelf and *Rome*; the Treaty was by Order of the King broken off upon that punctilio; but afterwards was by Order renewed again at *Bonvicino*, a place ſituate on the Frontiers of *Savoy*; the Parochial Church of which is in the Dominions of *France*; and on the other ſide of the Bridge, (which is the Territory of *Savoy*) is an ancient and famous Monaſtery of *Carmelite* Friers; thither as we have ſaid the Treaty was transferred, where beſides *Crequi*, *Raſponi* and *Grimani*, there were preſent the Agents for *Modena* and *Parma*, and the twelve Conſuls of *Avignon*; *Raſponi* took his quarters on the ſide of *Savoy*, and the other on that of *France*.

Here the particulars were again debated; and the Pope was perſwaded to condeſcend to all the pretenſions of *France*, excepting only to the reſtitution of *Caſtro*, on which the King peremptorily inſiſted, becauſe he had engaged his Honour and Authority therein, by the Articles of Peace made at the *Pyreneans*. The Pope on the other ſide inſiſted, That it was not in his Power to paſs an Act ſo prejudicial to the Apoſtolical

Chair, and contrary to the many Bulls of his Predeceſſors. And thus whilſt both ſides inſiſted reſolutely on this Point with many delays and punctilios, which obſtructed a concluſion, the King diſpatched an expreſs to *Rome*, to know the ultimate reſolution of the Pope on that Point: and when anſwer was returned, that by reaſon of the Sentences paſſed by the Tribunals of Juſtice, and that *Caſtro* was in the *Camera* annexed to the Triple Crown, and incorporated into the Dominions of the Church; he could not aſſent to have it diſmembred from St. *Peter's* Patrimony: ſo ſoon, I ſay, as this news came, the Treaty broke off, every one returning to his Place and Country.

During this Treaty at *Buonvicinio*, great preparations were making at *Rome* for a War; and when it broke up without agreement, then contrary to all expectation the Troops were disbanded, and the Officers Reformed; though in the mean time the *French* Troops began to march into *Italy*, which was the occaſion of a witty ſaying: *That at* Rome *they armed, when they knew not with whom they were to have War, and diſarmed when they knew not with whom they ſhould have Peace.* And yet it is probable, and by moſt believed, that there was never any real deſign of Rupture by either ſide; but that the pretenſions and preparations for this War were only in appearance, and made ſubſervient to other Projects: though to make it appear real, the Duke of *Beaufort* was ſent with a Fleet of Ships on the Coaſt of *Italy*, the approach of which gave an Allarm at the very Gates of *Rome*; but afterwards diſappeared and ſtood off again into the Sea, pretending to be driven to *Calari* in *Sardinia*, by Tempeſts and contrary Winds.

And though neither the Pope nor King (as was believed) were in earneſt in matter of a War; yet the ill correſpondence between them, was judged prejudicial to Chriſtendom, and obſtructive to thoſe ſuccours which were intended againſt the *Turk*, who had then lately made himſelf Maſter of *Newhauſel*, and was triumphant in *Hungary*. Wherefore the *Venetians* with more warm inſtances than ever laboured to renew the Treaty; in which Office the *Spaniards* alſo judged themſelves obliged to join, becauſe they deſired to keep the Arms of *France* diſtant from *Italy*: and both one and the other uſed their endeavours ſo effectually with the Pope and the King; that they both conſented to enter into another Treaty: and accordingly the *French* King conſtituted *Monſignore Bourlemont* then at *Florence* to be his Plenipotentiary, and the Pope ordained *Raſponi* with a like Power from him; *Piſa* being the place appointed for the Treaty: where after ſome few days of debate, all matters came to be concluded, and agreed in form and manner following:

‘ That his Holineſs to pleaſe the moſt Chriſtian King, had aſſented ‘ to diſmember *Caſtro* from the Patrimony of the Church: conditionally ‘ that the Duke of *Parma* within the ſpace of eight years pay the ſum ‘ of eight millions ſix hundred and nineteen Crowns to the *Camera*: Of ‘ which ſum having paid one half, he ſhall be inveſted and reſtored ‘ into one half of the Principality. And in caſe that any diſpute ſhall ariſe ‘ touching the diviſion of the moiety, the ſame ſhall be determined by two ‘ Arbitrators indifferently choſen, and they not agreeing, the difference ‘ ſhall be referred to the Umpirage of a third Perſon. Or otherwiſe ‘ the *Camera* making the diviſion, the Duke ſhall have Power to chuſe;

‘ or otherwiſe if the Duke makes the diviſion, then the choice ſhall be in the Power of the *Camera*.

‘ That the Duke of *Modena* ſhall renounce all his pretenſions to *Comacchio*. And the Pope at the Inſtance of the King, ſhall in lieu thereof, give and ſurrender unto the ſaid Duke *Mont d' Eſte*, which was valued at two hundred and fifty thouſand Crowns, or thereabouts; and ſhall remit to him the Intereſt which he ows to the *Montiſts*, which was eſtimated at fifty thouſand Crowns; together with a donative of forty thouſand Crowns, or in lieu thereof ſome Palace in *Rome* to the Duke's ſatisfaction. And that the Pope ſhall give a Bull of *Jus Patronatus Perpetui* to the Houſe of *Eſte*, of the Abby of *Pompoſa* and *Bondeno*, to which the Popes ſhall never pretend Right or Title.

‘ That the Cardinal Nephew ſhall be ſent Legat into *France*, where at his firſt publick Audience with the King, he ſhall repeat theſe very words: That his Holineſs is extreamly ſorry for the late barbarous outrage committed againſt the Perſon of the Duke of *Crequi*, his Majeſties Ambaſſadour; in which matter he prays his Majeſtie to believe, that neither he nor any of his Family was concerned or was culpable, the truth of which he ſhall atteſt unto his Majeſty with all the aſſurances of reſpect and reverence to the Perſon of his Majeſty. That Cardinal *Imperiale* be diſpeeded into *France* to juſtifie himſelf; in regard his Majeſty is pleaſed to grant him liberty ſo to do, and will accept of his ſubmiſſion.

‘ That his Holineſs ſhall reſtore Cardinal *Maldachino* to his priſtrine ſtate and condition, and free him of all damage and intereſt: and for better ſecurity, ſhall ſend a Brief to the King of ſuch Tenour.

‘ That ſo ſoon as the Ratification of this Treaty ſhall arrive at *Rome*, *Don Mario* ſhall immediately depart from thence, and ſhall by a Writing under his hand, and upon the faith of a Gentleman, declare, that he was no way concerned in the late Riot of the *Corſi*; the which ſhall be confirmed by a Brief of the Pope, avouching and giving aſſurance of his innocence of that Fact: And that he ſhall not return to *Rome* until ſuch time that his juſtification being carried to the King by the hand of the Legate, his Majeſty ſhall declare his pleaſure therein.

‘ That *Don Auguſtino* ſhall upon approach of the Duke of *Crequi* to *Rome*, go forth to meet him as far as St. *Quirino*, in caſe he comes by way of *Toſcany*: if by Sea, then ſhe ſhall meet him at *Civita-Vecchia*; if by *Romagna*, then at *Narni*; and ſhall there make known to him the great trouble which the Pope hath conceived for the late accident.

‘ That *Donna Beronice* and the Princeſs *Farneſe*, ſhall go and meet the Lady Ambaſſadreſs as far as *Ponte Molle*, where they ſhall both teſtifie the extraordinary ſorrow they conceived for the late miſfortune which cauſed her departure, and the joy they have for her return and happy underſtanding of all matters.

‘ That his Holineſs ſhall in a moſt effectual manner inſtruct his Miniſters to make known unto the Ambaſſadour, the high eſteem he hath for a Perſonage of his Quality, who repreſents the Perſon of ſo great a King, who is eldeſt Son of the Church.

‘ That the Duke of *Ceſarini* ſhall be reſtored to the poſſeſſion and enjoyment of his Goods and eſtate.

'That the like ſhall be obſerved and practiſed towards all Perſons 'who have had any concernment in the late matter.

'That the whole Nation of the *Corſi* ſhall be declared uncapable to 'ſerve, not onely in *Rome*, but in any other part of the Eccleſiaſtical 'State. And that the Captain of the Guards in *Rome* ſhall be caſhiered 'from his Office.

'That a Pyramid ſhall be erected in *Rome* over againſt the place 'where the *Corſi* held their Corps of Guard, with an Inſcription de'claring the Crime for which they were baniſhed from the Eccleſiaſtical 'State.

'That ſo ſoon as the Cardinal-Legat ſhould arrive at *Paris*, and the 'former particulars were accompliſhed, that then the King would again 'reſtore *Avignon* to the Pope: It being agreed that neither any of the 'Inhabitants, Strangers, or Sojourners there living, ſhall be troubled or 'queſtioned for any thing they ſaid or acted in the revolt of that 'City, which happened on the twentieth of *Auguſt* 1662. or for any 'thing which paſſed on this occaſion from that time, until the day 'that his Majeſty reſtored it to the Pope.

Theſe Particulars thus agreed, and ſigned by the Plenipotentiaries, were ſent to *Rome* and *Paris* to be ratified and confirmed; and in the mean time the Pope laboured to excuſe the baniſhment of *Don Mario*, and the ſending of Cardinal *Chigi* in quality of his Legat into *France*; but neither the one nor the other would be diſpenſed with. Wherefore *Don Mario* retired to *Sora* in the Kingdom of *Naples*; and Cardinal *Chigi* began his Journey with a noble Equipage and Attendance of Prelates and Gentlemen, amongſt which was Monſignor *Colonna*, appointed to reſide at *Avignon* in quality of Legat for the Pope. The Cardinal being entred into *France*, was received in all places with great honour and ſplendid entertainment; and being conducted to *Fontainbleau*, where the Court then reſided, he had his firſt Audience with the King; all things paſſing to the mutual ſatisfaction of both Parties. Some days after, Cardinal *Imperiale* arrived at *Paris*, to accompliſh another Article of the Treaty; where having juſtified himſelf according to agreement, the King accepted his ſubmiſſion, and returned him with Teſtimonials, ſignifying the entire ſatisfaction he received by his Addreſs.

The other Points in the Articles being to be executed at *Rome* by the Duke of *Crequi*, the Cardinals *d' Eſte* and *Maldachino* arrived there, and were received by the Pope, and the Court according to the Formalities agreed. And the Duke being likewiſe mollified by the Addreſſes which the Queen of *Sweden* made to him, as alſo by the Application made to him by the Cardinals *Corrado*, and *Azzolino*, who always ſpake loud and boldly againſt the *French*, all Animoſities were appeaſed, and theſe troubles ended, which had adminiſtred great vexation and unquietneſs to the ſpirit of the Pope, during three years that they had continued.

The Controverſies of *France* being thus happily compoſed, *Don Mario* had licence to return again to *Rome*; and the Pope had time to inſpect the turbulencies in *Spain*, which were growing into dangerous conſequences, upon Diſputes raiſed concerning the Immaculate Conception of the Bleſſed Virgin. The *Dominicans* violently maintained the contrary Tenent, in oppoſition to the *Jeſuits*; in which the Diſciples of both ſides became ſo concerned, that what could not be determined by a Moderator in the Schools, was in danger to be decided in the Fields or Streets by the Sword. To prevent which, the King ſent the Biſhop of *Piacenza* to the Pope, deſiring his Sentence and Determination of the queſtion, as being the Oracle to whom they were to have recourſe for ſolution in all difficulties of this nature. The Pope who was a great Favourer of the *Jeſuits* and their Doctrines, conſulted the queſtion with ſuch who were inclined to that Opinion; and after ſome days conſideration, he determined for the Immaculate Conception: which though he would not enter, or enumerate amongſt the Doctrines of Faith; yet he publiſhed a Bull, denouncing ſeveral Penalties and Cenſures, againſt thoſe who ſhould either publickly or privately maintain the contrary. And in the ſame year, he canonized *Francis Sales* Biſhop, and Prince of *Geneva*; who by his Treatiſe called, *An Introduction to a Holy Life*, hath given ſufficient Teſtimony of a devout, and ſpiritual Soul.

An. 1665.

This year alſo the *Sorboniſts* at *Paris* undertook to cenſure and condemn two Books; the one of *James Vernant*, who aſſerts the Pope's Power, and Infallibility of the Pope in derogation of Councils, Kings, and Biſhops; and the other of *Amadeus Guimenius*, who defends the Morals of the *Jeſuits*: the Pope being diſpleaſed with this confidence of the *Sorboniſts*, who being but a Colledge only, ſhould preſume to determine Caſes of ſuch high nature, complained to the King, who in compliance with his Holineſs, aſſembled a Congregation of Biſhops at *Pontoiſe*; the which being met, paſſed a Cenſure on the *Sorboniſts*; not condemning their Opinion, but their preſumption; for that being but a private Colledg, they ſhould uſurp a Power which appertained to the Congregation, and not unto them. The Pope not ſatisfied with theſe imperfect proceedings, amends them at *Rome*, and by a Bull condemns the Opinions of the *Sorboniſts*, under penalty of Excommunication. But this Doctrine of the Pope's could not be digeſted by the Parliament of *Paris*, who appeared Favourers of the *Sorboniſts*; howſoever leſt theſe queſtions ſhould engender diſcords, and cauſe great trouble in the State, they were ſilenced, and by the King's Authority ſuppreſſed, every one being under ſevere Penalties forbidden to diſpute or handle queſtions of this dangerous conſequence. Wherefore theſe Points being laid aſleep, rather than eradicated, are ſometimes revived, and ſuffered to be ſtarted whenſoever they are ſeaſonable, and judged commodious for the welfare of the State.

The ſame year likewiſe the Pope condemned the five Propoſitions of *Cornelius Janſenius* Biſhop of *Ypres* concerning Grace and Free-Will; and confirmed the Edict which *Innocent* X. had made againſt them. Notwithſtanding which, ſo little regard was had thereunto, that thoſe Opinions are ſtill maintained and defended both by Words and Writings. But now to proceed to his Acts and publick Works.

That *Alexander* VII. might not appear leſs ſplendid in his publick Monuments, than other Popes: he repaired many Ruines, enlarged and adorned many Streets, much to the Ornament of the City, and convenience of the Inhabitants.

The *Pantheon*, which was a famous Temple of Old *Rome*, built by *M. Agrippa*; and afterwards by *Boniface* IV. dedicated to the Bleſſed Virgin, he repaired and altered with much advantage: for whereas formerly they deſcended unto it by ſteps, he filled the low places with rubbiſh, ſo that an entrance was made thereunto upon a level; and having raiſed the Pillars which were almoſt buried in the Earth, he therewith erected a ſtately *Portico*, making it a magnificent ſtructure, which before was filled up with dirt and rubbiſh, caſt thereunto by the neighbouring Market.

The *Forum* or Market-place where the *Columna Antoniana* ſtands, he cleanſed and removed all rubbliſh from it, and ſo beautified it on all ſides, that it is now a pleaſant and convenient part of the City.

The *Archigymnaſium Romanum* which was begun by *Leo* X. he finiſhed and adorned with a ſumptuous Library; the Chamber for which, he erected at his own charge, and ſupplied it with excellent Books for the common uſe of Learned Men.

He alſo deſigned to build a Colledg, wherein to entertain the moſt Learned and Famous Men of the Age, invited thereunto from all parts of the World. So that where any one was eſteemed excellent and famous in any Science, and eſpecially if he were learned and an acute Diſputant in Divinity; he might be here entertained with a convenient ſubſiſtence: to ſupport which, and make a Revenue for this Colledge, he deſigned the deſolation of ſome Monaſteries, which having formerly been ordained with holy Diſcipline, and to a good end, were now fallen from their original and primary Inſtitution: but whilſt he was contemplating and contriving this Deſign, he became infirm, and afflicted with a Chronical Diſtemper, which abated the heat of his proceedings, which afterwards ended, and were wholly laid aſide by his death.

He erected a noble and magnificent Hall, adjoyning to the *Vatican*, which he called an *Archivium*, or a place to lodge all Papers and Writings relating to the Apoſtolical See; that is, all Papers rendering an account of the Negotiations of Nuntio's in the Courts of foreign Princes: Likewiſe the Letters written to Popes from the Governours and Miniſters of Provinces belonging to the Church; ſuch Letters alſo as had been written concerning the Rights and Priviledges of the Papal Chair: for which there having formerly been no certain place allotted, wherein to conſerve them, they were diſperſed and ſcattered in divers places, and many of them in the hands of ſuch, whoſe Uncles or Relations had been Popes.

The *Vatican* Library he encreaſed with an addition of all the Books of the Dukes of *Vrbin*, both Manuſcripts and Books Printed; And leſt whilſt he was intent to the adornment of *Rome*, he ſhould ſeem forgetful of his own City; he beautified the Cathedral Church of *Siena*, which by demoliſhing the Houſes which ſtood near it, he had a large and open *Area* to it, removing all impediments which obſcured or obſtructed the Project. The barbarous *Latin* which is written about the outſide of this Church is very obſervable, the words are theſe:

Omnis centenus Romæ ſemper eſt Jubilenus
Crimina laxantur, cui pœnitet iſta donantur,
Et confirmavit Bonifacius, & roboravit.

Whilſt *Alexander* was employed in theſe, and other greater Works, he was eſteemed to have neglected thoſe aſſiſtances which former Popes have uſually given and contributed for ſupport of thoſe Princes, which have been borderers and in War with the *Turk*, who is the grand Enemy of Chriſtendom. Wherefore that he might give ſome inſtances to the contrary, in the year *1666.* he equipped his Fleet of Gallies under command of *Bichi*, and having joined them with the Gallies of *Malta* (which by their Inſtitution are obliged to ſerve under the Standard of the Church,) they entered the *Archipelago*, and committed ſome ſpoils on the *Maritime* Towns or places under Dominion of the *Turk*; in which having paſſed that Summer without any action very memorable, they returned towards the end of the year to their Winter quarters: and this year the Pope recruited the Regiment which he maintained in *Dalmatia* with two hundred Soldiers. *An. 1666.*

During the twelve years of this Pope's Reign, he created thirty eight Cardinals, of which eight were made in the laſt year of his life; namely *Roberti* his Nuntio in *France*, *Viſconti* his Nuntio in *Spain*, *Julio Spinola* his Nuntio to the Emperour, *Caracciola* Auditor of the *Camera*; likewiſe *John Dolfino* Patriarch of *Aquileia* was made Cardinal at the inſtance of the *Venetians*, *Ghidobald de Thun* Arch-biſhop of *Saltzburg* at the deſire of the Emperour, the Duke of *Vendoſme* in compliance with *France*, and the Duke of *Montalto* to pleaſe *Spain*. And farther to exalt and dignifie the degree of Cardinals, he appointed a Congregation of the Sacred Colledg to conſider and direct ſome Formulary, or Rules which might ſerve to augment the Prerogatives of Cardinals in oppoſition to the pretences of the *Roman* Barons: one amongſt which was, that the little Bell, which was carried and ſounded before the Cardinals ſhould be no more in uſe; for that the luſtre of their Purple was ſo evident, as needed no ſuch mean Signal to make them known.

In fine, Pope *Alexander* having reigned twelve years with frequent fits and agonies of the Stone; at length being worn out with buſineſs and extremity of his Diſeaſe, he died on the twelfth day of *May* 1667. in the ſixty ninth year of his Age, having reigned twelve years, one month, and ſixteen days. Some time before his departure out of this World, he made a ſhort Diſcourſe to the Cardinals concerning the frailties of hamane life, from which the greatneſs of Popes was not exempted: and which was more demonſtrable in him, by reaſon of the Chronical diſtemper, under which he had for many years laboured; concluding at the laſt with exhortations to elect ſuch a Pope, who might correct and make amends for thoſe Infirmities to which he had been ſubject.

This Pope was naturally of a good habit of body, but much weakned by a diſſection which was made for the ſtone in his Bladder, when he was at *Colen*; he was lean, and not very robuſt in his limbs, but howſoever had ſuch ſtrength in the gripe of his hands, that ſcarce any one could quit himſelf from him, whom he had ſeized. He was of a middle ſtatute, of a pleaſant Air in his Countenance, and of excellent grace in Elocution, which was not much altered by the loſs of his Teeth, which were looſned, and falled out by a continual defluxion of rheum upon his gums. He was very facetious and pleaſant in his Converſation, and delighted himſelf very much in reading the antient *Latin* Poets: Wherefore when the Cardinals came to congratulate his Election to the Pontificate, he made uſe of that Verſe out of *Virgil*,

> ——— *Dies, quem ſemper acerbum*
> *Semper honoratum* (*ſic vos voluiſtis*) *habebo,*

This Pope was endued with natural parts in an extraordinary manner; and was very polite in his dreſs, and in his way of living: Howſoever in the courſe of his years he gave an inſtance and example to the World, what difference there is in thoſe qualifications which are required to make up the virtues of a Prince, and of a private Perſon, or of a Pope and a Prelate. For whilſt he only wore the Purple of a Cardinal, he governed himſelf in ſuch a mean between the defects blamed in the Pope that Reigned, and the Virtues deſired and expected in a Succeſſor, that he appeared the only deſireable Perſon in the World, to whom with moſt confidence the Keys of St. *Peter* might be delivered. But being arrived at the top and ſummary point of his Ambition, of his deſires and deſigns, he lived with much leſs caution and induſtry than before, and giving way to that vanity of Genius, which he had formerly ſuppreſſed or diſguiſed; he ſo amuſed himſelf in the oſtentation of Buildings, that he neglected both the concernments of Princes, and the care of his People: And whilſt he laboured to exalt and enrich his Nephews and Kindred, he died unlamented, and much abated in that reputation, with which he entred into the Papal Chair.

CLEMENT. IX.

THE Funeral Rites of *Alexander* VII. being performed according to the ſolemn cuſtoms of former Popes, and the Cardinals having held ſeveral Congregations, at which Audience was given to the Ambaſſadours of foreign Princes; and the *Chigi* with other Officers of the Church and City being confirmed in their ſeveral places, the Cardinals entred the *Conclave* on the ſecond day of *June* 1667. But firſt, and before they entered, a great Diſpute aroſe concerning the place where the *Conclave* was to be held; for that the *Vatican* being ſeated in a bad Air, was at that ſeaſon of the year reputed almoſt contagious, at leaſt ſo incommodious by reaſon of the exceſſive heats of the Summer, that it was judged pernicious to the health of all the Colledge; and therefore *Monte Cavallo* was propoſed, as a ſituation more ſecure, and which with the expence of two thouſand Crowns might be rendered as commodious as the *Vatican*: The Perſons appointed to overſee the Work, were the Cardinals *Barberino*, *Orſino*, and *Eſte*; who having conſidered thereof, made their report, that the

Houſe of *Monte Cavallo*, was not capable of being made convenient to receive the *Conclave* in ſuch form, as in the *Vatican*; where after the manner of *Conclaves*, the Cells of the Cardinals are all on the ſame floor; the which, and many other inconveniencies,rendered that and all other places in *Rome* uncapable to receive the *Conclave* in ſuch form, as was ever practiſed at the *Vatican*; and therefore it was the place choſen and appointed as formerly. Notwithſtanding the badneſs of the Air and the heat of the Seaſon, which ſerved to haſten the Election; for though the Cardinals were divided into many Parties, and adhered to their ſeveral Intereſts; yet being wiſe men, they knew to prefer health and long life, before other conſiderations whatſoever.

Wherefore the Cardinals entering the *Vatican*, the third of *June* was the firſt day of the *Conclave*, which was divided into five ſeveral Parties or Factions: the firſt was that of the *Chigi*, which was the moſt numerous of any, conſiſting of thirty four Votes; the ſecond was that of the *Barberini*, compoſed of ſixteen; the *Spaniards* of nine, and the *French* of ſeven; and laſtly the *Flying Squadron* made up of the *Pamfilians* and other Male-contents, formed a party of about ten Voices: of which *Imperiale* and *Azzolini* were the chief, who joying themſelves to the *Spaniſh* Cardinals, oppoſed at the firſt Scrutiny, the Election of *Farneſe* in ſuch manner, that he ſeemed excluded from all poſſibility of being Pope: howſoever his Party had certainly prevailed, had not *Barberino* with his Aſſociates oppoſed the Choice: for though *Farneſe* was a Perſon qualified with all the knowledg of Political Laws and Eccleſiaſtical Canons; yet the memory of what had paſſed between his Uncle *Urban* and the Duke of *Parma*, was too freſh to be in a few years ſo well reconciled, as to engage the *Barberini* to that Intereſt.

Wherefore *Barbarino* caſting his Eye on another Perſon, aſſembled all the Creatures of his Uncle *Urban* VIII. to favour the Election which he deſigned. And having hereunto joined the Cardinals of the *Flying Squadron* with ſeveral others, he went to the Apartment of Cardinal *Chigi*, to whom in the name of his Party, he gave him to underſtand, that they were ſufficiently ſenſible, that the Power of his Enemy in the *Conclave* was ſuch, that none was in a poſſibility of being created Pope without his aſſent and concurrence; and therefore they were come to know which of his Creatures he judged worthy of his ſuffrage. To which *Chigi*, after having returned thanks to *Barberino*, made this Reply, That all his Friends were beloved and eſteemed by him with that equality of affection, that he knew not how to prefer one before another; or by the nomination of one to diſoblige others. Whereunto *Barberino* made Anſwer, That ſince his Eminence was not pleaſed to name any,he would propoſe *Roſpiglioſi*,which *Chigi* ſeemed readily to accept; but in reality his mind was contrary, as appeared by the Scrutiny, in which his Vote was otherwiſe diſpoſed. And indeed *Chigi* had no great affection for the perſon of *Roſpiglioſi*; having not only taken ſome diſguſt againſt him in the time that he ſerved in quality of Secretary to his Uncle *Alexander* VII. but alſo had diſcovered the bad inclination which many others of the *Chigian* Party had to him: at which *Barbarino* did not openly demonſtrate any great reſentment, hoping that by ſuch delays and controverſies, he might ſpin a Clue ſo fine, as would lead and conduct him to the heighth of his deſires; and indeed he had improved his intereſt ſo well, that he had attained to nineteen Votes. In the mean time endeavours were made for the Cardinals *Brancacci*, *Spinola*, *Elci*, and others, which prolonged the iſſue of Affairs, which every Cardinal by reaſon of the heats and ill Air, deſired to conclude, that ſo they might be enlarged from their confinement, which began to be ſo unhealthful, that many of the Cardinals fell ſick; as alſo their *Conclaviſts* who attended them, and Cardinal *Sforſa Palavicino* died: the which gave ſuch an allarm to the whole *Conclave*, that the Cardinals reſolved on a diſpatch, which in all probability appeared moſt eaſie in the Perſon of *Roſpiglioſi*. The Intereſt which moſt oppoſed it, was that of *Chigi*; againſt which the other Cardinals uniting their Power, induced *Chigi* to concur, leſt a Pope ſhould be choſen in deſpight of his oppoſition and againſt his conſent; wherefore *Chigi* and *Barbarino* agreeing upon the matter, concerted with the factions of *France* and *Spain*, though the Cardinal *Vandorme* was not well pleaſed with the Choice.

In fine, all Parties agreeing, the Cardinals haſtned into the Chappel; where *Barbarino* and *Azzolino*, having procured thirty one Votes for *Roſpiglioſi*; *Chigi* and his Party came in and concurred with the reſt, ſo that of ſixty four Cardinals then in the *Conclave*, *Roſpiglioſi* was elected and created Pope by ſixty one.

Thus after eighteen days that this *Conclave* had continued, *Roſpiglioſi* was on the twentieth of *June* proclaimed Pope by Cardinal *d' Eſte*, with theſe words, which are according to the uſual form:

> *Annuncio vobis Gaudium magnum. Habemus Eminentiſſimum, & Reverendiſſimum Dominum Cardinalem Julium Roſpiglioſum in Summum Pontificem, qui vocatur Clement Nonus.*

After which the uſual Adoration followed, which was performed by the Cardinals, and the Pope being habited in his Pontifical Veſtments, was carried in proceſſion with attendance of all the Cardinals to St. *Peter*'s Church. And on the 26th of *June* he was there Crowned, according to all the Rites and Ceremonies of Popes.

Julio Roſpiglioſi was born at *Piſtoia*, a City in the Dominions of the Great Duke of *Toſcany*; his Family was Noble, and much more illuſtrated by his own Vertues and Fortune; for being naturally of a quick and lively underſtanding, he plentifully anſwered the expectation of his Parents, rendering abundant fruits in return of that care and expence they had employed in his Education: and being arrived at ſome maturity of age, *Urban* VIII. then reigning, obſerved a genius in him fit and proper for buſineſs; ſo that the firſt ſtep he made to Preferment, was by the favour of *Urban*, who made him Auditor to his Nephew Cardinal *Barberin*, when he ſent him in a ſolemn manner with the Character of his Legat in *France*, and then into *Spain*; with Inſtructions to compoſe the differences about the *Valteline*, and eſtabliſh a happy Peace between the two Kings: in which employment he ſo well diſcharged and acquitted himſelf, that *Urban* made him his Nuntio in Ordinary to the Court of *Spain*; the which Office, though commonly conferred but for three years, yet *Roſpiglioſi* made himſelf ſo pleaſing unto and eſteemed by his Catholick Majeſty, and ſo uſeful to the Intereſt of *Rome*, that his Commiſſion was continued for the full ſpace of eleven years, to the intire and plenary ſatisfaction both of the Pope and the King.

After the death of *Urban* VIII. thoſe who had taken the Government into their hands under *Innocent* X. beholding *Roſpiglioſi* with an Eye of Envy and Emulation, cauſed him to be recalled from his reſidence of Nuntio, to make room for ſome other Favourite. After which returning to *Rome*, he lived in a private manner without other preferment, than of one of the Canons of *Santa Maria Maggiore*, until the death of this Pope; when during the vacancy of the Sea, he was by the unanimous conſent of the Colledg of Cardinals, conſtituted Governour of *Rome*; which at that time was always ſo licentious, that it requires a ſober, ſevere and vigilant Officer to reſtrain the abuſes and outrages which are daily committed in the City.

Afterwards *Alexander* VII. being elected Pope, to whom the Abilities and Vertues of *Roſpiglioſi* were ſufficiently known, he choſe him for his Secretary of State; and to render him the more conſiderable in that Office, he conferred on him the honour of the Cardinals Hat; in which employment he gave ſuch teſtimonies of his abilities and integrity, that *Alexander* would uſually ſay, *That he was ſerved by a Secretary after his own heart, on whom he could confidently rely and repoſe all his cares.* And indeed his Services were not only pleaſing to his Maſter, but in ſuch manner conſpicuous to the whole Colledg of Cardinals and to all *Rome*, as ſerved him for a ſtep to that high promotion to which he ſucceeded.

And now *Roſpiglioſi* being Elected, Crowned and Eſtabliſhed in the Papal Chair (as we have ſaid) under the name of *Clement* IX. he in the firſt place rendered thanks to every Cardinal in particular, for the ſuffrage he had given him, and then to them all in generall in a full Conſiſtory; where he delivered himſelf with ſuch eloquent expreſſions and with ſuch excellency of Speech, as gave ſufficient proof of the gift of Rhetorick, with which he was naturally endued, and which with an admirable elocution, adorned all the Speeches which he made in publick.

It hath been the cuſtom of Popes to perform ſome Act after their Coronation, which may reconcile the minds of the people to them; and accordingly this Pope, that he might give ſome Eſſay of his liberal and generous inclinations towards the Publick; he in the firſt place took care, that Proviſions might be cheap and pentiful at *Rome*, and eaſed the People of ſome Taxes with which they were burdened; and on this occaſion he cauſed certain Medals of Gold and Silver to be ſtamped, with the impreſſion of a Pelican, and with this Motto: *Non ſibi, ſed aliis Clemens.*

Mnreover, To give ſome indications of his Mind to the World concerning thoſe reſolutions which he had taken to govern with Prudence, Wiſdom and ſevere adherence to Righteouſneſs and Judgment, he ſtamped this Motto on the firſt Money he coyned: *Conſtantia Silverii ad imitandum propoſita.* For he himſelf being elected Pope on *Silverius* or St. *Sylveſters*'s day, who was a Pope firm and ſteady to his reſolutions, and unmoveable in matters which related to the welfare of the Church, he took his Omen for an Admonition, obliging him to govern with the ſame Spirit, which animated his Predeceſſour *Sylverius*.

Wherefore, attending to the welfare of his Subjects, and to the advancement of the Chriſtian Cauſe, he eaſed (as we have ſaid) his People of ſeveral Taxes, and in lieu thereof charged himſelf with a Debt of a Million of Crowns: to extinguiſh which, and to make that proviſion which the *Venetians* required againſt the *Turk*, who that year hardly preſſed the City of *Candia*, he aſſented to the diſſolution of certain Religious Houſes, which ſeemed ſuperfluous and of little benefit or concernment to the Church; namely, the Canons of St. *George* in *Alga*, the *Geſuati*, the *Jeronimites* of *Fieſole*; which being places remote and of no great uſe, were formerly under the conſideration of *Innocent* X. and *Alexander* VII. and by both marked out with deſign to be reduced, when the emergent preſſures of the Republick ſhould require a ſupply. And now that time being come, for the *Vizier Kuperlee* had for above the ſpace of a whole year beſieged the City of *Candia*, had ſtrongly intrenched himſelf, and being daily re-inforced with new ſupplies, was in a probable and fair way to gain the Town, and therewith to become Maſter of all the Iſland of *Candia*. Wherefore the Pope iſſued his Bull, granting licence to the *Venetian* Republick, to ſell the Lands and Revenues belonging to thoſe places afore-mentioned within their Dominions, and to make uſe of the Money to carry on their War, and expel the *Turks* from the Kingdom of *Candia*. In this conjuncture the Pope intended to avail himſelf of the urgencies and neceſſities of the Republick; and to induce them thereby to conſent to the abolition of certain Laws, which were and had been very derogatory to the Power of the Court of *Rome*: but the wiſe Republick adhering to the ſame principles which influenced them in the time of *Paul* V. declared their unſhaken conſtancy and reſolution, to admit no innovation of ſuch a nature as was demanded: of which the Pope being well adviſed, relinquiſhed his pretenſions; it ſeeming unſeaſonable to take an advantage on the preſent emergencies of the Republick, to obtain that from them, which could not be granted without unhinging the whole frame of the publick Liberty.

And though the ſuppreſſion of theſe Convents proceeded currently within the Dominions of the Republick; yet on this occaſion great difficulties and diſputes aroſe between the Court of *Rome* and the Governments of *Milan* and *Naples*. For at *Milan* they pretended that theſe Convents being of Royal foundation, could not be diſſolved without the Kings conſent; and at *Naples* they refuſed to admit, that the Money ariſing from the diſſolved Convents, ſhould be diſpoſed according to the will and pleaſure of the Court of *Rome*; denying all Power to the Arch-biſhop to intermeddle therein, as Delegate to the Pope, by vertue of his Eccleſiaſtical Authority: and, this Controverſie was maintained with that heat, that the Provoſt of *Naples* oppoſed the Arch-biſhop with armed Bands, when he came to execute the Decrees of *Rome*; on which the Pope made uſe of his thundering Excommunication: howſoever they availed little; for the heats were blown into a flame, and the matters become ſo intrigueſom, as not to be compoſed until the time of *Clement* X. the ſucceeding Pope.

Howſoever, this Pope being in an extraordinary manner zealous for the ſucceſs of the Chriſtan Cauſe againſt the *Turk*, and ſollicitous for the preſervation of *Candia*, omitted no means which might conduce to the ſafety of it. And therefore after the example of his Predeceſſours, he laboured to engage the Chriſtian Princes in a holy League againſt the *Turk*: but in regard that it could not poſſibly be performed, until ſuch time as a Peace was concluded between *France* and *Spain*: the Pope recalled his Nephew Cardinal *Roſpiglioſi* from *Bruxels*, where for the ſpace of three years he had reſided in quality of Internuntio, by Commiſſion from *Alexander* VII. ordering him in his return home to paſs through *Paris*, and in a private manner to complement the King, endeavouring to diſcover the inclinations of his Majeſty to a Peace with *Spain*, and how he was diſpoſed to yield thoſe ſuccours, which were neceſſarily required for the preſervation of *Candia*. In purſuance hereof, *Roſpiglioſi* performed the Offices enjoined him by his Uncle ſo well, that he inclined the mind of his Majeſty to ſuccour *Candia*, which was languiſhing and almoſt ready to expire, and to yield it ſelf to the prevailing Arms of the *Turk*: and hence it was, that Count S. *Paul*, the Duke of *Beaufort*, and *Monſieur la Feuillade*, with many other Cavaliers adventuring themſelves in this generous Enterpriſe, at leaſt prolonged the fate, though not able to divert it or reſcue *Candia* from the ſubjection of it's unchriſtian Enemies. Moreover, *Roſpiglioſi* made thoſe impreſſions of kindneſs and good correſpondence between the King and the Pope, as continued during the whole term of his Uncles Reign: and as an evidence of this friendſhip, the Pope upon return of his Nephew at *Rome*, diſpatched the Arch-biſhop of *Thebes* in quality of Legat in Extraordinary into *France*, and *Frederick Borromeo* with a like Character into *Spain*; which Legats finding a diſpoſition in both Kings towards a Peace, ſo well negotiated in behalf of the intereſt of *Rome*, that *Lewis* XIV. of *France*, and the Queen Regent of *Spain* (her Son being in his minority) appointed *Auquiſgrane* for the place to treat a Peace, of which the Pope was by mutual conſent of both Kings ordained the ſole Umpire and Moderator. The zeal which affected the Pope for the ſuccour and relief of *Candia* was ſo great, that he laboured with all his Power to bring the Peace between the two Crowns to a ſpeedy iſſue; but the *French* King proceeding in a proſperous courſe of his Arms, concluded that his ſucceſſes did merit and require the grant of ſuch conditions from his Catholick Majeſty, as were not conſiſtent with the honour and welfare of that Crown, and therefore reſolved to make an entire Conqueſt of the *Franch Comte*, before he entered into farther Treaties, or reſtrain himſelf within any narrower bounds or limits than thoſe he deſigned.

Whereupon the Prince of *Conde* being declared General for this Expedition, in the beginning of the year *1668*. he marched to *Digion* in *Burgundy* to prepare millitary Affairs in a readineſs to begin early the enſuing Campaign: the King alſo, notwithſtanding the inconveniencies of the Winter ſeaſon, thought fit to be there preſent in Perſon, which gave that life to action, that neither cold or rains, or ſhortneſs of the days, interrupted the progreſs of the War; the Officers and Soldiers iſſuing from their Winter quarters, with the ſame chearfulneſs as in the Summer, readily inveſted the moſt conſiderable places of the *Franch Comte*, which in a few days ſurrendered themſelves to the victorious Arms of the *French*; leaving the World to wonder at thoſe effects of fear, which a ſudden ſurprize had produced; for thoſe Cities and Fortreſſes which in other times *An.* 1668.

had valiantly ſtood out for many months againſt the Sieges and ſtorms of their Enemies, did now ſhamefully yield ſo ſoon as they diſcovered the *French* Banners diſplayed before their Walls. To this ſucceſs the ſurpriſe of the action did much contribute; for had the King deferred this enterpriſe until the Summer, 'tis more than probable, that he might have encountred a greater oppoſition by the union of the *German* Princes, who in a ſeaſon fit for Armies to take the Field, would ſcarce have ſuffered ſo conſiderable a part as the *French Compte*, to be lopped off and diſmembred from the Body of the Empire.

This ſudden and unexpected ſucceſs begat a jealouſie in the neighbouring Princes; and was the firſt moving Cauſe which gave beginning to the Triple League between *England*, the *United Provinces*; and *Sweden* leaving a door open to other Princes to be comprehended (as they ſhould ſee cauſe) in the ſame Agreement.

This Sacred Alliance became the common diſcourſe of all *Europe*, and many happy effects were expected as conſequences thereof. In which conjuncture our *Clement* IX. renewing his former ſollicitations for Peace, procured a ſuſpenſion of Arms; and though he deſired that *Rome* or *Venice* ſhould be the places appointed for this Treaty: yet *Aquiſgrane* being eſteemed a place more convenient for the Electoral Princes, who were much concerned in this Accommodation, it was by common conſent ordained for the only place of Treaty.

And now *France* at the inſtant preſſures of ſo many powerful Princes inclining to hearken unto Propoſitions of Peace; and the King calling to remembrance his Articles with the King of *Portugal*, not to make a Peace with *Spain* in excluſion of him; he immediately ſent his Advices to *Lisbon*, adviſing that King to diſpatch his Plenipotentiary to *Aquiſgrane*, which was appointed for the place of Treaty.

This intimation being given to the Court of *Portugal*; the Count *Olivarez*, Son of the late Favourite, being then a Priſoner at *Lisbon*, taken at the Battel of *Canal*; began to propoſe ſeveral Conditions in order to a Peace; for which afterwards receiving a Commiſſion from *Madrid*; a Treaty was ſeparately ſet on foot without concerning *France* in it. At this time the Earl of *Sandwick* reſided at the Court of *Spain* in quality of Ambaſſadour from his Majeſty of *Great Britain*, a Perſon ſo well affected by both Courts, that by mutual conſent of both Parties, he was in the place of the King his Maſter, choſen Umpire of the Peace between the two Kingdoms. This Overture being acceptable to our gratious King, he ſent his Orders and Inſtructions to the Earl of *Sandwich* to remove from *Madrid* to *Lisbon*, there to be Arbitrator of the Peace, and in order thereunto to perform all the good Offices of Mediation. The Plenipotentiaries being accordingly aſſembled at *Lisbon*; after ſome few Conferences between the Earl of *Sandwich* and Count *Olivaraz*, a Peace was concluded and publiſhed in the Month of *March*, without any reſpect or conſideration to the agreement contracted the year before with *France*, or the endeavours of the Abbat of St. *Romain* to the contrary. And indeed the People were grown ſo weary of a War, which had continued for the ſpace of twenty eight years, that they were ready to have broken out into a common mutiny, had the leaſt interruption been given thereunto; the Commonality ſcarce tempering their rage againſt the *French* Miniſter, for labouring to diſappoint that happineſs they had ſo long deſired.

Some few days after the Peace was proclaimed: a Sentence of Divorce, declaring the Marriage void between the King *Alphonſa* and the Queen, was publiſhed, grounded on the ſuppos'd impotency of the King her Husband, whereby the Matrimonial knot was diſſolved, and both Parties freed and ſtated in a lawful ſeperation with power to diſpoſe of their own Perſons. The confirmation of this act of Divorce was a ſubject of ſerious conſideration to the Pope, but afterwards when it was to extend ſo far, as to make the Prince lawful poſſeſſour of his Brothers's Wife and Dominions, it was ſo much the more weighty and worthy conſideration: but at length reaſons of State and conveniencies of that Kingdom overſwayed the ſtrict Rules and Canons of the Church.

But in the firſt place, we muſt underſtand that this Divorce was the conſequence of a general revolt of the People from their King; for they being guided by a prevailing Party, in oppoſition to the *Conde de Caſſel Meglior* Chief Miniſter of State, murmured againſt the Government, and perhaps not without ſome cauſe; for the King himſelf being given to Wine, practiſed ſuch extravagancies as were intolerable, and which did not paſs without ſome reflections on the Favorite, though as to himſelf, he managed all things with prudence and good conduct: Moreover, the *Conde* oppoſing the Peace with *Caſtile* on other terms, than ſuch as were agreeable to the method and Articles concluded with *France*, became diſpleaſing to the People, that he was diſplaced from his Office, and the Prince admitted to the ſole management and direction of Affairs. But the Conſpiracy ſtopped not its courſe at this period: for the Queen hereupon retiring into a Monaſtery, and declaring the diſſatisfaction ſhe had to the King her Husband, demanded the Juſtice of the Country (upon the cauſes given) to diſſolve the Matrimonial knot by a ſentence of lawful Divorce. The People at this news were ſtirred with great commotions, and being naturally enclined to Novelty, joined with the Princes Party to chuſe him Governour of the Kingdom, committing the Perſon of the King to ſafe cuſtody, until the States of *Portugal* ſhould otherwiſe provide in caſes of this great emergency. The States being aſſembled about the beginning of the year, approved the reaſons for depoſing the King, and confirmed the Regency on the Prince: and upon hearing the Cauſe between the King and Queen, the Marriage was found void and null; and accordingly an Inſtrument of Divorce was formed and publiſhed, and licenſe given to the Prince to take the Queen for his Wife, on ſuppoſition that ſhe was ſtill a Virgin, and unknown to his Brother. The caſe though ſtrange to ſcrupulous Ears and Conſciences, was not yet without former examples. For in *Poland*, *John Caſimiro* ſucceeded the Crown, and to the Wife of his Brother *Vladiſlaus*. And in former Hiſtories of *Portugal*, it is recorded, that the Nobility deſired *John* III. to match with the Queen *Eleonora*, relict of King *Emanuel* his Father: and therefore this caſe was not without a Precedent, which after diſſolution of the Marriage and publication of the Queens divorce from *Alfonſo* VI. might confirm, and make lawful the eſpouſals with the Prince his Brother.

A particular account of all theſe Occurrences being given at *Paris* by the *Sieur Verjus*, who then reſided at *Lisbon* for the Crown of *France*: The Cardinal *Vandoſme* then Legat *à Latere* from the Pope to the moſt Chriſtian King, immediately diſpatched a Brief of diſpenſation into

Portugal, in the name and by the Authority of Pope *Clement* IX. confirming the former Sentence given by the States and Juſtitiaries of that Kingdom; leaving this Example to the World, that there may be a Caſe wherein a younger Brother may lawfully uſurp the Dominions of his Elder; and righteouſly poſſeſs himſelf of his Wife and of his Crown. But the Prince *Don Pedro* not ſatisfied with the ſingle diſpenſation of the Cardinal *Vandoſme*, who for the ſpace of two months only was commiſſionated to the Legat *à Latere* at *Paris*, to aſſiſt at the Baptiſm of the *Dolfin* in behalf of the Pope; did for better aſſurance diſpatch Father *Villa* a *Jeſuit*, the Queens Confeſſor unto *Rome*, to procure a more authentick diſpenſation from the Pope himſelf. The Caſe being new and ſtrange and difficult, to find a way how to make this matter with its preſent circumſtances to become legal: the Pope troubled within himſelf, propoſed the caſe in publick Conſiſtory, where after long debates on both ſides, the queſtion ſtill remained dubious and undecided; until it was averred, that the Queen was ſeveral months gone with Child: the which circumſtances altered the cauſe, and then the convenience of the Marriage was not farther alledged, but the neceſſity thereof urged, both for the reputation of the Queen and ſafety of that Kingdom, which could not otherwiſe be ſetled but by the Pope's definitive Sentence, confirming the legality of the Divorce; and though the Pope hereupon granted his Bull, diſpenſing both with the Marriage and tranſlation of the Power, yet the minds of the contrary Party were not ſo quieted, but that ſeveral Conſpiracies were contrived againſt the life of the Prince; and particularly a certain Prieſt was apprehended with a Dagger in his Pocket, and confeſſed that he deſigned therewith to ſtab the Prince, judging it an action meritorious and pleaſing to God, to deſtroy a perſon guilty of Rebellion and Inceſt, who had uſurped the Kingdom, and raviſhed away the Wife of his Brother. Wherefore the Prince was in a manner conſtrained for their own ſecurity, and for ſettlement of himſelf in the Adminiſtration of Affairs, to remove the King from the Eyes of the People, and accordingly he was tranſported into the Iſlands of *Terœras*.

The *French* (as we have ſaid) having gained their point by the Conqueſt of the *French Comte*, the *Spaniards* having concluded a Peace with *Portugal*; and the Triple League being well formed and concluded, the conjuncture of Affairs ſeemed propitious, and tending towards the calm of Peace; to improve which, the Pope laboured with inceſſant ſollicitations between both Kings, to commence that Treaty which was once propoſed, to be held at *Aquiſgrana*; and now more inſtantly deſired by him, not only in relation to his Office of Mediator between Chriſtian Princes, but in zeal to the Chriſtian Cauſe, which then ſuffered in the City of *Candia*, which with the whole Iſland was then in danger, and ready to yield to the Arms of the *Turks*; hoping that upon concluſion of the Peace, the force of Chriſtendom would be converted from it ſelf and complyed againſt the common Enemy (as we may believe.) But the Interceſſion and good Offices of the Pope did not ſo effectually operate towards the concluſion of Peace, as the Negotiations of the Triple League were available: by means of which, the Peace was projected firſt on the 15th of *April* at St. *Germans*, and afterwards concluded between both Crowns on the 27th of *April* at *Aquiſgana*, otherwiſe called by the *French Aux la Chappelle*, in form following:

“ That for the future, and ever hereafter, a good, firm and inviolable
“ Peace and a perpetual League, and mutual friendſhip ſhall be eſtabliſhed
“ between the two Kings, their Heirs and Succeſſors: and that as good
“ Brothers, they ſhall mutually to the utmoſt of their Power be aſſiſting
“ unto the welfare, honour and reputation of each other; and ſhall faithfully,
“ as far as is poſſible, avoid every thing, which may tend to the
“ hurt, loſs or damage of each other.

“ That ſo ſoon as the Articles of this Treaty ſhall be exchanged and
“ ratified, the Peace ſhall be publiſhed, and then all Acts of War and hoſtility
“ ſhall ceaſe; and both Parties ſhall attend to the performance of
“ the Covenants, by ſurrender of Towns and Fortreſſes, and releaſe of
“ Priſoners without Delay, Ranſom or any Charges whatſoever.

“ That the moſt Chriſtian King and his Succeſſours ſhall for ever
“ hereafter remain lawfully poſſeſſed and Maſters of *Charles Stadt*,
“ *Binch, Aeth, Doway, Scarp*-Fort, *Tornay, Audemont, Lille, Armentiers*,
“ *Cotray, Berguen, Fuernes*, with all the Royalties, Guards, Caſtles,
“ Territories, Dependencies and Subjects, with all the rights and immunities
“ both Eccleſiaſtical and Secular thereunto appertaining, in
“ the ſame Form, Title and plenary poſſeſſion as they were formerly enjoyed,
“ claimed and poſſeſſed by his Catholick Majeſty.

“ One the other ſide, the moſt Chriſtian King ſhall ſpeedily after publication
“ of the Peace, withdraw all his Forces from the *French Comte*, and
“ ſhall really, effectually, entirely and faithfully reſtore and ſurrender
“ to his Catholick Majeſty all that Country without delay, and without
“ reſerving any part or parcel thereof unto himſelf.

“ That all other places taken, or to be taken, until publication of the
“ Peace, ſhall in like manner be mutually reſtored and ſurrendred.

“ That the Treaty of the *Pyreneans* ſhall remain in its full force and
“ Virtue, (excepting that part only, ſo far as concerns the Kingdom of
“ *Portugal*, with which *Spain* hath already concluded a Peace) but as to
“ all other matters and things not expreſſed in this Treaty, reference ſhall
“ be had to the *Pyrenean* Peace.

“ That thoſe Kings and Princes who are deſirous to enter into the
“ Guarantie for the Peace, may reſpectively give their Inſtruments of Promiſe
“ and Obligation to each King, for maintenance and execution of
“ whatſoever is contained and agreed in the aforeſaid Treaty.

“ That this Treaty agreed and covenanted by the Plenipotentiaries,
“ ſhall be ratified by their Majeſties reſpectively, and regiſtred in the
“ Councils and Chambers, or Courts of Juſtice, in ſuch manner as was
“ obſerved in the *Pyrenean* Treaty: and that Orders be accordingly iſſued
“ within the ſpace of three months after publication of this preſent
“ Peace.

This was the ſubſtance of matters agreed at *Aix le Chappelle*, ſo called by the *French*: but antiently *Aquiſgrana*, from *Grano* (as ſome think) the Brother of *Nero*; who for the convenience of ſome hot Waters, ariſing near thereunto, built a Town and a Fortreſs; to which he gave his own name, with the adjunction of *Aqua* in reference to the Waters: it is now an Imperial Town ſituate between the *Moſel* and the *Rhine*, famous for being the place where the *Roman* Emperours were firſt Crowned and Inaugurated; and where *Charles* the Great was interred, whoſe Monument is there to be ſeen.

But now having touched on the Treaty concluded at this place, ſo far as concerned *Clement* IX. who was a promoter thereof, it will be impertinent to this Hiſtory to recount the Councils, the ſucceſſes and proceedings which iſſued thereupon. Nor will it be to our purpoſe to rehearſe the Inſtrument by which the Triple League was eſtabliſhed between the King of Great *Britain*, the King of *Sweden* and the States of the *United Provinces*, with the various Acts and ſucceſſes thereupon. Nor is it to our purpoſe to declare the diſturbances given to this Peace by the pretenſions which the *French* made to the dependencies, which were ſo comprehenſive, as took in almoſt all the Dominions belonging to the *Spaniards* in the *Low Countries*; for the better interpretation, underſtanding and limitation of which word (*Dependencies*) a meeting was appointed at *Liſle*, at which the Commiſſioners for both Crowns were to be preſent, and debate the Controverſie. Wherefore to return now to the Affairs of *Italy*, and the actions of *Clement* IX. we find him after the concluſion of this Peace extreamly intent and zealous for the the relief of *Candia*, and urgent both with *France* and *Spain* to ſend ſucceſſors thereunto. In purſuance of which, his endeavours in *France*, (as we have ſaid) were very ſucceſsful, great ſuccours being ſent to *Candia* as we have related in our Hiſtory of the *Turks*; and indeed the correſpondence was ſo good between his Chriſtian Majeſty and this Pope, during the whole time of his Reign; that nothing ſeemed to be denied which was requeſted by either; for the Pope at the Kings deſire granted a Bull, allowing him to nominate and conſtitute ſuch Perſons as he ſhould judg fit in all Churches, Benefices and Monaſteries, and in all Biſhopricks and Archbiſhopricks within his own Dominions. In return of which kindneſs, and as a ſignal of this good correſpondence, the *French* King allowed the Pope to demoliſh the Pillar, which was erected at *Rome* in the time of *Alexandeder* VII. for a memorial of the baniſhment of the *Corſi*, and to deface the Inſcription engraven thereunto; in like manner the Pope gave licenſe to the *French*, to take away and demoliſh the Croſs which was erected at *Rome* over againſt the Church of St. *Anthony* in the time of *Clement* VIII. in memory of the converſion of *Henry* IV. to the *Roman* Faith. So that now the other particulars concluded at the Treaty of *Piſa* not as yet executed began to wear out, and to be forgotten, and the late warm interpoſition of *France* in behalf of the Duke of *Parma*, for what related to *Caſtro*, became cold and remiſs. For though in the days of *Alexander* VII. the Duke had provided his Money according to the time allotted him by the Treaty, upon payment of which, *Caſtro* was to have been redeemed; yet the Pope found out ways to avoid the receiving thereof; pretending that other Creditors were ready to attach and ſequeſter the Money, ſo ſoon as it ſhould be brought within the Walls of the City: but this being only an excuſe and an artificial pretence of the Pope, the Duke of *Parma* reſolved to expect the arrival of the Duke of *Chaunes* at *Rome*, then coming in quality of Ambaſſadour from *France*; to whom making his complaint, he might moſt properly by his means challenge a performance of that part of the Treaty, which was in his favour concluded and agreed at *Piſa*. But this Expedient failing, and the Ambaſſadour taking this matter a little to heart: the Duke ſupplied his Money at *Rome* by Letters of Credit and Bills of Exchange, which though refuſed by the Count notwithſtanding the many addreſſes, and Proceſſes made according to the Methods and formalities of Law; yet all proved ineffectual, and little regarded by the Intereſt of *France*, even to the very time of this preſent Pope; of which coldneſs and unconcernment of his Chriſtian Majeſty in this matter, wherein he once ſhewed ſo much zeal and affection, various cauſes have been aſſigned; of which none ſeems to be more probable, than the engagements of *France* in the *Low-Countries*, during the time of *Alexander* VII. and afterwards the kind correſpondence held with this *Clement* IX. of which the Crown of *France* being entirely ſatisfied, was unwilling to be importunate, or diſturb the quiet of the Church for the ſake of a foreign Prince, whoſe intereſt had no influence or concernment at that time with the welfare and conveniencies of *France*.

As the Pope was inſtant with his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty to ſend Forces into *Candia*; and obtained by his ſollicitations a ſtrong Fleet under the command of the Duke of *Beaufort*, which carried the Banner of the Church: ſo alſo he was not remiſs or backward to ſend and engage his own Fleet of Gallies, under the conduct and command of his Nephew *Vincenzo Roſpiglioſi*, which with the Gallies of *France* and *Malta* made up the number of twenty nine. Nor was *Clement* leſs urgent with *Spain*, than with other Princes, to enter and engage in this common cauſe of Chriſtianity; ſo that having occaſion to ſend the Abbat *Arroldi*, who was Biſhop of *Milan*, in quality of his Internuntio to *Bruxels*, he gave him particular Inſtructions to ſollicite the Catholick Princes of *Germany* to concur with the reſt in contribution towards the relief of *Candia*: in which Act the Internuntio ſo well ſucceeded, that the Elector of *Bavaria*, the Biſhop of *Argentina* or *Strasburg*, and ſeveral other Princes of the *Rhine* adminiſtred effectual ſuccours to the preſent neceſſity of that languiſhing place. But the ſucceſſes of this War and the ſtate of *Candia* have been our Subject and Theme in another Hiſtory.

In the mean time whilſt theſe Affairs were in agitation, the Cardinals *Palotta* and *Farneſe*, two of the chief Ornaments of the Colledge departed this life: in place of whom the Pope promoted Prince *Leopold* of *Toſcany* to the dignity of Cardinal; a Perſon though of excellent qualifications of mind, and of unblameable converſation in the days of his youth, yet reaſons of State had prevented his juſt advancement, and Title to the Purple, until the time of his old Age. After which he promoted *Portocarrero* with ſeven others to the ſame degree of Cardinals, *viz. Altieri* who was Maſter of the *Camera*; *Nerli*, who was Secretary of the Briefs; *Pallavicino* Dean of the Clerks of the *Camera*; *Creti* Dean of the *Ruota*; *Bonaccorſi* Treaſurer General, *Accioli* Auditor General of the *Camera*, and Father *Buona* Abbat of St. *Bernard* in *Piedmont*, beſides which he created *James Roſpiglioſi* his Brother's Son, and *Emanuel Theodoſio*, who draws his Pedigree from the Dukes of *Aquitaine*, ſo that during his Reign at three promotions he created twelve Cardinals, and not more.

The moſt important Affair during the Reign of this Pope, was the Siege of *Candia*, which (as we have ſaid) ſo affected him, that he employed all his thoughts and endeavours towards the relief thereof; *Nicholas* the fifth was not ſo much troubled for the loſs of *Conſtantinople*, nor *Hadrian* VI. for the ſubjection of *Rhodes*, nor *Pius Quintus* for the ſurrender of *Cyprus*, as our *Clement* IX. for the ill ſucceſs and concluſion of the *Cretian* War; in which the Duke of *Beaufort* being loſt, with many *French* Cavaliers, and other generous Heroes from divers parts of Chriſtendom, the City was delivered into the hands of the *Turks*: the fatal news of which being brought to him by the *Venetian* Ambaſſadour; the Pope (as is reported) was ſo affected therewith, that grief taking a deep impreſſion in his heart, he ſuddenly fell into a ſpecies of Apoplexy, from which firſt Fit, though he at preſent revived, yet melancholy ſuppreſſed his ſpirits in ſuch manner, that in the ſpace of one month following, he on the ninth of *December* 1669. expired his laſt breath, having lived ſeventy one years or thereabouts, and governed the Pontificate two years, five months and eighteen days. He was univerſally lamented, being a Man of a publick Spirit and great generoſity, ſo that his Family was rather impoveriſhed than enriched by his advancement to the Papal Authority. He was a Perſon not ambitious or deſirous of the vain glory of this World, of which that he might give a teſtimony at his death, he forbad his Relations to raiſe any magnificent Monument in recommendation of him to poſterity, leaving behind him ſome few words for a ſhort Epitaph to be inſcribed on the Marble, which was to cover him; which were ſcarce ſufficient to denote the Character by which he was to be known and recommended to Poſterity: to ſupply which his Succeſſor *Clement* X. at the deſire of the Publick, and in gratitude to the memory of his deceaſed Friend and Benefactor, inſcribed on the pedeſtal of a Pillar (which *Clement* IX. at the foot of the Bridge *Ælius* had repaired at his own charge) a brief Narrative of his life; and having likewiſe erected a ſtately Monument with his Statue thereupon in the Church of S. *Peter*, he adorned it with this Inſcription:

Clementis IX.
Æternæ memoriæ Pontificis
Magni Cineres
Ne abſque ullo Sepulchri Honore
Sicut Ipſe juſſerat Humi laterent,
Clemens X. *Pont. Max.*
Benefactori Suo,
Et ob Spectatum Fidei Zelum,
Ob Egregiam Erga Omnes Beneficentiam
Et Charitatem
De Re Chriſtiana Optime Merito
Grati Animi Monumentum
Poſuit
Anno Domini MDCLXXI.

This Pope being dead was generally lamented by all People of what Degree, or Nation, or Quality ſoever: for he was of a moſt gentle and eaſie temper, delightful and pleaſant in his Converſation, and ſtudied ſincerely the welfare of the Church, without much regard to the advancement of his Family: in his Diet he was very abſtemious, and lived much after the faſhon of the Primitive Chriſtians. He was ever zealous of a good correſpondence with Kings and Princes ſubject to the Papal Sea, and always endeavoured to reconcile them one to the other; as appears by his endeavours at *Aix la Chapelle*, where a Peace was concluded between the two Crowns of *Spain* and *France*. And when the difference aroſe between the Queen Regent and *Don John* of *Auſtria*, he interpoſed in ſuch manner by his Nuntio Cardinal *Borromeo*, that with much ſucceſs he reconciled matters and diverted a ſtorm which might have engaged *Spain* in ruinous troubles.

Though this Pope from the humility of his Spirit, was not very forward to raiſe Columns of his own praiſe, or engraven Inſcriptions like other Popes on every fair Marble, that was erected in the moſt publick and conſpicuous places of the City: yet the People of *Rome* did voluntarily, and of their own accord ſupply ſeveral Eulogies to the honour of his memory, of which we ſhall add this one, which is worthy to be rehearſed; for being engraven in the *Area* of the Capitol on the Triumphal Arch of *Septimius Severus*, being a compariſon of this Pope with that Emperour in theſe words.

> *Triumphale Septimii Severi Cæſaris Nomen, ne quæras Lector. Ad Orientem Clementis* IX. *P. O. M. Majeſtatem obſcuratur: Quid prodeat, Severus? Ubi Clemens elucet, Legationem ille Gallicam ſuâ ferociâ funeſtavit. Hiſpanicam iſte munificentiâ beavit, ſuâ ſibi purpuram ille cruore tinxit. Hic ſudore, manu ille, hic mente firmavit Imperium, bellorum ille flammas accendit; hic conatur extinguere Tributa, ille auxit; hic levavit; uterque rei frumentariæ Amplificandæ ſtudioſus, ſed ille Ambitionis Ingenio, hic Genio Charitatis. Supra Cæſarem in cunctis Pontifex. Spectacula ille Pop. Rom. dedit, hic unum ſe Gentibus Omnibus adorandum Spectaculum fecit.*

CLEMENT X.

CLEMENT the Ninth dying (as we have ſaid) on the ninth of *December* 1669. his Funeral Obſequies were celebrated with the uſual Rites and Ceremonies practiſed in honour to deceaſed Popes. After which the Cardinals entred the *Conclave* to make election of another Succeſſour to S. *Peter*; but ſuch were the difficulties which aroſe thereupon, by reaſon of the many Candidates which appeared, to the number of no leſs than twenty two; all which both for years, gravity, wiſdom and Authority, ſeemed worthy of the Papal Dignity; that until the end of four months and twenty days the different Intereſts could not agree and be reconciled; and at length concurred in the Election, rather out of wearineſs than ſatisfaction in their Choice.

Cardinal *Chigi* was then at *Florence*, when he received the firſt news of the death of *Clement* IX. where entring into a private Cabal with the Great Duke and Cardinal *Medici*; and with ſome other Aſſociates of the *Spaniſh* Intereſt, they pitched upon one of theſe four, namely *Elci*, *Celſi*, *Bonviſi* and *Vidoni*, but with eſpecial regard to the excluſion of *Barberino*; but as this was an account made up without their Hoaſt, ſo it had a ſucceſs accordingly, and they forced to another reckoning.

Chigi to ſtrengthen his Party made his addreſſes to the *French*, pretending great ſervices for that Crown; and in the mean time deſpiſed the intereſt of the *Flying Squadron*: but the Duke of *Scion*, being then arrived from *France* in quality of Ambaſſadour, made ſcorn of the applications of *Chigi*, ſo ſoon as he diſcovered his practices with the *Spaniards*: and indeed his double dealing abated much of his reputation in the *Conclave*, where he might have formed a ſtrong Party, had not his ambition to become ſole Arbitrator weakned his Intereſt, and brought all his words and actions under ſuſpition.

This Opinion of *Chigi* gave a beginning to the Combination between *Barberino*, *Roſpiglioſi*, and the *Flying Squadron*; which ſtrong Parties ſtanding in oppoſition each to other, fifty days were paſſed without any effect, and ſo reſolved were *Chigi* and *Barberino*, that one ſaid, *He would eat Cherries, and the other Figs in the Conclave*; with which ſayings all Parties growing warm, Cardinal *Eſte* declared openly with excluſion againſt *Chigi*, *Retz* againſt *Medici*, and the *French* King againſt *Elci*; with which *Medici* growing angry, replied, that if *France* excluded *Elci*, that *Spain* ſhould do the like by *Vidoni*.

Thus Factions daily increaſing, and new difficulties ariſing, *Chigi* and *Medici* the two great ſticklers in the *Conclave* grew more calm, and leſs concerned for thoſe whom they had once deſigned to promote; and to make appear how diſintereſted they were, put every Perſon, that was qualified, into ſome hopes of being choſen. Amongſt the reſt they complemented *Carpegna* one of the *Spaniſh* Faction, and a favourite of the Great Duke. From him they paſſed to Cardinal *Pio*; and then to *Odeſcalchi*, againſt which laſt were not many exceptions, only that the *French* Party eſteemed him too much inclined to the *Spaniſh* Intereſt: and though the reputation of *Odeſcalchi* was high, and his merits great, yet his time being not yet come, all endeavours for him vaniſhed into Air, he alſo himſelf beſeeched *Chigi*, as it were upon his knees, to deſiſt from farther actions in his favour: howſoever the *Conclave* being impatient of farther delay, ſeemed generally inclined to make choice of *Odeſcalchi*; yet ſome eſteemed him too young, others too moroſe and auſtere; and *Chigi* himſelf freely diſcourſing with *Celſi*, taxed him for want of practice in buſineſs, and that having addicted himſelf much to ſpeculation and ſtudy, imagined that he would prove unpleaſant in his humour; and that Abbat *Marc. Antonio* being his Brother, it was more than probable he would be created Cardinal and Favourite; who alſo being a Perſon of an auſtere life and ſevere Vertue, might concur with the Pope in deſigns to reform the Vices and Luxury of the Clergy. Which conſiderations being weighty and prevalent with the *Conclave*, his excluſion was publickly declared.

After which every one was at a ſtand, and in expectation of what Time, and the power of *Barberino* and others, would produce. *Chigi* had laboured to the utmoſt of his power to advance one of his Friends; but all proving ineffectual, he gave them at leaſt the ſatisfaction, that nothing had been wanting on his part. *Medici* was well contented with the excluſion of *Nerli*, who was a Creature of *Roſpiglioſi*, becauſe *Altieri*, who was under the ſame notion of a Friend, and dependant on that Family, was ſtill in nomination.

In the mean time the aged Cardinals, zealous for the honour and ſanctity of the *Conclave*, exclaimed againſt the delatory proceedings, which gave ſcandal to the World, and cauſe of complaint to the People, who by reaſon thereof were impoveriſhed by the deadneſs of Trade, and oppreſſed by the extortions of the *Mons Pietatis*, which during the vacancy of the See, exacted four times more from indigent Perſons, that the known rates allowed by Law and the juſtice of the Popes.

The Ambaſſadour of *Spain* more concerned than any other for theſe delays, having Audience in the *Conclave*, requeſted the Cardinals in the name of his Maſter to agree to their Election: for whereas they had an Authority free and independent of temporal Crowns, and ſecular conſiderations, they were obliged to proceed in the ſpeedy choice of a Succeſſour to St. *Peter*, and of a Paſtor to the Univerſal Church, and not ſuffer the ſame to become ſubſervient to Intrigues and private Intereſts; which as they were daily more ſcandalous, they gave occaſion to the World of diſcourſe, as if the inſpirations of the Holy Ghoſt were baniſhed the *Conclave*, the divine Illuminations damped and eclipſed by the interpoſition of Secular deſigns.

It was ſtrange to obſerve, how on a ſudden after this diſcourſe, the humour of the *Conclave* was altered: the old Cardinals, weary of their reſtraint, would yield to the Election of any, provided they might gain their liberty; and the young Men were ready to give their ſuffrages for whomſoever the Leaders of their Party and Intereſt ſhould direct: ſo that now Merit, and Vertue, and experience in Government were laid aſide, and a Pope choſen by thoſe who were moſt obſtinate and tenacious of their Opinion, and could hold out longeſt.

Thus different Intereſts began to agree; and *Chigi* and *Medici* to entertain diſcourſe with *Barberino*, propoſing to pitch upon the Creature or Favourite of the Houſe of *Roſpiglioſi*, to which both theſe leading Factions were well inclined: the Perſon nominated was Cardinal *Emilio Altieri* generally grateful to the whole *Conclave*, for his great Age, having paſſed the years of eighty: *Chigi* took occaſion hereupon to complement *Barberino*, declaring, that rather by divine Inſpiration than humane fanſie, he had fixed on the ſole Perſon of the World, whom he had reſerved in his breaſt as the moſt worthy of this Dignity, for that he was a Man who never concerned himſelf in Embroils and Intrigues of different Parties; never was a Penſioner of *France*, or *Spain* or depended on the favour of *Italian* Princes, or was obliged by any of the *Roman* Families. *Barberino* on the other ſide, vowed that the nomination he had made of *Altieri*, was rather an effect of his good wiſhes towards *Chigi*, than to his own Family: for that he was not ignorant of the great Obligations which Cardinal *Paluzzi* the Creature of *Emelio Altieri* had unto him, by whoſe means only he was the firſt prefer'd to be Auditor of the *Camera*, then to be Prelate, and laſtly to be a Cardinal; all which were ſuch good Offices, as would certainly oblige *Altieri* in caſe that to the preceeding kindneſſes which he had performed towards his Favourite he ſhould add, that alſo of being an Inſtrument to advance himſelf unto the Papacy.

In the mean time great Intereſts were made for *Odeſcalchi*, and his Party was ſo earneſt thereupon, that they deſigned ſecretly to elect him by Acceſſion, as a more ready way than by Treaties, or making Parties:

But *Barberino* was zealous for *Altieri*, and inſtant to have his Election paſſed without other diſpute or conſideration. Howſoever *Chigi* was a little wavering, becauſe he doubted whether *Paluzzi* would prove conſtant to him, and bear him the ſame reſpect in the time of his proſperity, and under the circumſtances of the Pope's favour as he had teſtified to him in his former condition of fortune: wherefore that he might ſecure him the better, he addreſſed himſelf to *Paluzzi*, perſwading him to believe, that his endeavours for the promotion of *Altieri*, were in a great meaſure founded on that friendſhip and good will which he owed him; and for that reaſon, before he would engage his Party and Intereſt in his Election, he would be aſſured that *Altieri* ſhould promiſe to adopt *Paluzzi*, and create him Cardinal Nephew, than which nothing could be more juſt and due to a Perſon of his Wiſdom and Talents, and practiſed in all Affairs of the Court of *Rome*. Having ſaid thus much, *Chigi* conducted *Paluzzi* to *Medici*, and they together with *Buglion* and *Barberino* went to the lodging of *Altieri*; to whom the Dean, Cardinal *Barberino* with a loud Voice and profound reverence made the ſame Complements as were accuſtomary to Popes elect: with which *Altieri*, being ſurpriz'd, made Anſwer with tears in his Eyes, *That he was unfit for the performance of ſo great a function, which might more eaſily be ſuſtained by any of their Eminences than by himſelf*, and pointing to Cardinal *Brancacci*: *Behold*, ſaid he, *the Man whoſe Virtues, Godlineſs and Abilities have rendered worthy of this high Exaltation*. By this time the Cell or Lodging was filled with Cardinals, who with one Voice, *An.* 1670. (two only excepted) proclaimed *Altieri* Pope on the twenty eighth day of *April*, and having performed the uſual Ceremonies of Adoration, and other matters practiſed at the Election of Popes; he took the name of *Clement* X. to the great joy and ſatisfaction of the People of *Rome*: who praiſed God for having given them a Prince choſen from the number of their own Patricians, who was of a gentle and placid nature and temper, and grateful to all the Princes of *Rome* and *Italy*.

This Pope, now *Clement* X. was born at *Rome*, in the Reign of *Sixtus* V. and in the time of *Paul* V. was firſt admitted into Eccleſiaſtical Orders. *Gregory* XV. teſtified a high eſteem for his Perſon, and recommending him to his Nephew *Urban* VIII. diſpeeded him into *Poland* with the charge of Auditor to the Nuntio; and after his return conſtituted him Governour of *Loretto* and of all the *Marca*, and laſtly of *Ravenna*, to which he added the Biſhoprick of *Camerino*. *Innocent* X. ſent him his Nuntio into *Naples*, where he reſided at the time when *Maſanello* made an inſurrection of the People. Whilſt the See was vacant by the death of *Innocent* X. the Colledge of Cardinals gave him a Commiſſion to treat with the Duke of *Parma*, and with the Governour of *Milan*. *Alexander* VII. ſo ſoon as he was promoted to the Papal Dignity, made him Secretary of the ſacred Congregation of Biſhops and Regulars; and had therewith conferred on him the dignity of Cardinal, had not ſome Perſons who were emulous of his worth, prevented the good intentions of the Pope towards him. But *Clement* IX. having received ſufficient teſtimony of his Abilities by a long courſe of Services to the Church, made him Chief of his Bed-Chamber, and on the 29th. of *November* 1669. promoted him to the dignity of Cardinal.

The firſt action performed by this Pope, after his Election was to declare Cardinal *Paluzzi* his Nephew by Adoption, obliging him to take the name of *Altieri,* and the Arms of his Family, which were ſix Stars Argent in an *Azure* Field; the which he performed in ſo much haſte, that before he deſcended from the Stairs of the *Vatican,* he embraced his new Nephew, and publiſhed his Title before all the College; he alſo declared Signior *Carpegna* a *Roman,* to be *Datario* then already Auditor of the *Rota,* and *Frederick Borromeo* to be Secretary of State; the which are the three greateſt Offices and preferments in the Court of *Rome.*

But nothing occaſioned ſo much diſcourſe in *Rome,* as the choiſe and adoption of *Paluzzi* into the Family of *Altieri*; to which he had no other Relation, than that his Nephew *Don Gaſparo Paluzzi* was married to *Donna Laura Altieri* Niece to the Pope. The Politicians and ſpeculative Men of *Rome,* who undertake to prognoſticate ſtrange events of things from ſmall and inconſiderable matters, formed divers Judgments on this new Adoption. Some reflecting on the poverty of the Houſe of *Paluzzi* which was greatly indebted; and on the humour of the Cardinal who had employed his whole Eſtate in purchaſing Offices, and was covetous in his nature; (as moſt *Romans* are) did conclude, that the Court would be inclined to a ſordid Parſimony, the Officers Mercenary, and all Benefices ſet to ſale in a manner as ſcandalouſly Simoniacal, as they were in the time of *Innocent* X. But others framing a more charitable Opinion of *Paluzzi,* believed that he conſidering himſelf no other than as an adopted Nephew, from whom the World expects a gentle comportment, would contain himſelf within narrower terms of modeſty than Nephews of the natural blood, to whom Men with leſs envy allow more freedom and licentiouſneſs in their actions; and that calling to mind the fate of Cardinal *Aſtalli* adopted into the Family of *Pamfilio,* would ſerve himſelf of that Example, to govern in all the exerciſes of his Power. On the other ſide, ſome reflecting on the old Age of the Pope, who was entered into a Station of Life, which inclined to repoſe and freedom from turbulent thoughts, imagined that the Pope would caſt all his cares and troubles into the hands of his ſuppoſed Nephew, who conſidering the life of this *Clement,* which according to the courſe of Nature could not be of long continuance, would make uſe of his time and amaſs Riches after the Example of the *Ludiviſi,* who were of the Kindred of *Gregory* XV. and had in the ſpace of two years ſo well improved their fortunes, that beſides immenſe ſums of ready Money which they had accumulated and heaped up, they had alſo erected many ſumptuous Palaces, and purchaſed Lands, Mannors and Seignories, by means of evil Arts well known to the World.

Thus every one framed his Predictions of the event of matters according to his own conceit and fanſie; the truth of which was ſoon illuſtrated by the Negotiations of *Paluzzi,* (whom for the future, we intend to call by the name of Cardinal *Altieri*) for now to give the firſt Eſſay of his Power and management, it was obſerved, that when the Pope (as is uſual at the time of Coronation) received Memorials, and granted Favours, and Benefices to ſeveral Petitioners, ſuch graces ſeemed freely given and accepted with a thankful mind; until the Grants coming to be executed, *Altieri* gave an unexpected ſtop to them, denying them to paſs the Seal; on pretence that the Pope was ſurprized and ill informed, or had paſſed them to others before for want of memory, incident to old Age; by which Artifice this good Cardinal diſpoſed of all Offices, Benefices and places of Truſt, according to his own pleaſure, which was always regulated by the Rules of greateſt Profit. Though this early manner of Negotiation made a noiſe, and cauſed great murmuring at Court; yet *Altieri* continuing firm to his Principles, and to the method which he had chalked out unto himſelf, gave expreſs Orders to the Maſter of the Pope's Chamber, and to all the Attendants near his Perſon, not to admit of any Addreſſes, or ſuffer Petitions to be preſented to the Pope without his knowledge and permiſſion; ſo that the Pope ſeemed to be (as it were) beſieged in the *Vatican*, and ſerve only for a Cipher, or a property to *Altieri*, and remain as a Statue without Eyes or Ears. This manner of dealing gave occaſion to many witty Men at *Rome* (according to their cuſtom) to publiſh *Paſquils* (which we call Libels) one of which was affixed on the Pope's Picture, hanging over the door of his Bed-Chamber, and was this, *Qui ſtô, per Inſegna*, that is, I am here for a Sign; alluding to the perſon of the Pope, who ſerved only for a ſhadow, whilſt *Altieri* governed all with a deſpotical Power. In like manner they affixed a Paper at the door of *Altieri* with this Inſcription, *To the moſt Eminent Cardinal Signior* Palzzi Altieri, *by Title* Cardinal Patron, *but in reality Pope himſelf.* Another of like nature was affixed at the Pope's Chamber door, To His Holineſs *Clement* X. our Lord and Prince, living under the tuition of Cardinal *Altieri*.

On the eleventh of *May* after his Election, he was Crown'd in S. *Peter*'s Church with the uſual Ceremonies; three days after which, he held a private Conſiſtory, whereat he returned thanks individually to every Cardinal for his good will and ſuffrage at his Election: and according to the Politicks of former Popes, he made ſome Laws and Orders for the regulation of the Markets, and for ſupplies of the City with Victuals and Proviſions, that the People might at the beginning of his Government find Peace and Plenty.

But theſe plauſible and ſpecious appearances which coſt little to the Pope, great diſcontents aroſe in the Court of *Rome*, by reaſon of the exorbitant Power of the Cardinal Nephew; who aſſuming all matters into his own hands, ſuffered no applications to be made unto the Pope but by his means and interceſſion: nor would he ſuffer the Seals to paſs for any Livings or Benefices without a payment of Money for and in conſideration thereof unto himſelf, in which he was ſo ſtrict, that a Living of ten Crows a year did not eſcape him without ſome acknowledgment. And for better management of this Simonaical Traffick, he appointed Brokers in the Palace to ſet up an Office, and there publickly to profeſs, and without ſhame to bargain and contract for Offices and Benefices. This ſcandalous manner of dealing diſcouraged all Men of Virtue and Merit, from hopes of obtaining Employments, for ſince Money, and not Deſert was the ſtep to all preferments, good Men for the greateſt part were excluded, and none but a ſort of progging, and traffiquing Clergymen advanced to Benefices and Places of Truſt.

Thus did this adopted Nephew play his part, when a great ſwarm of Kindred appeared at Court, pretending to be allied either by blood, or alliance to the Pope: for though when he was only a ſimple Prelat, and had no great matter to diſpoſe of, few or none would own his Relation:

tion; but being now advanced to the Pontifical Chair, every Citizen of *Rome* would be his Kinſman, and frame a Scheme or Tree of his Pedigree, deducing their linage by one Branch or other from the Family of *Altieri:* all which finding an adopted Nephew ſurreptitiouſly crept into the favour of their Kinſman, and themſelves excluded, openly murmured againſt *Paluzzi*, and complained of the injuſtice and ill fortune: but he little regarded their clamours, ſuffering none of them to approach the Pope, or challenge kindred, unleſs the Family of the *Maſſimi*, of which he advanced ſome to Places of Truſt and Profit.

The College of Cardinals, though much divided in their inclinations, yet the greateſt part of them could not ſupport the deſpotical Government of *Altieri;* who though he could not abſolutely reſtrain the Cardinals from acceſs to the Pope; yet he made their Audiences difficult to be obtained, and often cauſed them (upon I know not what excuſes) to be deferred until other days and times, when he contrived to be always preſent, that he might be a witneſs of their diſcourſes, and prevent that freedom which they deſigned with the Pope.

This deſign of Cardinal *Altieri* was greatly promoted by the retirement of Perſons powerful for their Riches and Intereſt from *Rome:* for ſoon after the Election of the Pope; the Ambaſſadour of the moſt Chriſtian King, and the Cardinals of *Retz* and *Boglion* were returned into *France*, and Cardinal *de Eſte*, whoſe Power was ſufficient to ſhake the mightieſt Favourite, was gone into his own Country: Cardinal *Antonio* was ſick, and languiſhing in his Bed; and the *Flying-Squadron*, whoſe pretences were only pure zeal for the univerſal good of the Church, were contented to let matters paſs according to the humour of *Altieri*, hoping that the Pope by reaſon of his age could not hold out long; and that therefore it were better to employ their time in forming Parties againſt the next *Conclave*, than to contrive means and Artifices to defeat and ruin the Power of *Altieri*; but they were much deceived in their meaſures, for the good old Man was ſo luſty and hearty, living without much care, that he was likely to outlive the youngeſt of the *Squadron.* Nor was the Marquis of *Aſtorgas* Ambaſſadour of *Spain* much more concerned than others, for he having other deſigns of gaining the good will and favour of the Citizens of *Rome*, little cared in what manner the Intrigues and Affairs of the Court ſucceeded.

Wherefore the only dangerous and formidable Enemy was the Dean Cardinal *Barberino*, a perſon of that Reputation and Wit, as was only capable to ſtand in competition with the Power of *Altieri.* But neither his Policy, Art, nor Intereſt could be vailable againſt this Cardinal Nephew, who exerciſed a more abſolute Power than any other Favourite had enjoyed in the Place before him; the continuance of which being very uncertain, he caſt about him divers ways, whereby to advance and eſtabliſh the greatneſs of his Family, which under the happy circumſtances of his preſent flouriſhing condition, was not difficult to procure. For in *Rome* there are many Noble and Rich Families, which aſpire to an alliance with the kindred of the Pope's Regnant; which though it be an honour of no long continuance, yet they have commonly had the opportunity to accumulate Riches during the life of the Pope, and afterwards remained with the priviledge of being numbred amongſt the Princes after his death.

The Prince *Carbognano*, who was a principal branch of the Houſe of *Colonna* (which for its Power, Riches and Nobility yields to none in *Rome*) had two Sons, the eldeſt of which was called the Duke of *Baſanello*, and the ſecond Duke of *Anticoli*, the firſt was married to the Siſter of the Conſtable *Colonna*; but having no Children, or Heirs, the Riches and Opulency of all that Family was to devolve by right of Inheritance to the Duke of *Anticoli*; of which Cardinal *Altieri* having well conſidered, treated of a marriage between him, and *Donna Tarquinia*, Great Niece to the Pope, eſteeming it the beſt and moſt advantageous Match in all *Rome*. Prince *Carbognano*, the Father, who was of an open and eaſie temper, gave ear to the Propoſal with much ſatisfaction; but the Duke of *Baſanello*, not ſuffering his younger Brother to be advanced by theſe means to a degree above himſelf, refuſed to give his aſſent unto the Match, unleſs he alſo might be received into an equal rank with his Brother, and enjoy the honour of thoſe prerogatives, which appertain to Nephews, and Princes allied to the Papal Throne. *Altieri* declining all rubs and difficulties which might obſtruct the Match, entertained *Baſanello* with hopes and expectations of the conditions he deſired: but ſo ſoon as the Marriage was celebrated and conſummated; he then excuſed himſelf, ſaying, that upon better thoughts, he found that ſuch an inſtance could not be given without drawing many ill conſequences with it; howſoever, that the Pope would think upon it, and do what was poſſible; but in reality ſuch words gave no ſatisfaction, being interpreted for a flat and formal denial.

Hence at firſt aroſe ſome coldneſs, which afterwards proceeded to an open quarrel and defiance between *Baſanello* on the one ſide, and *Altieri*, and *Anticoli*, on the other: ſo that both parties exerciſed their thoughts in ways of revenge upon each other. The genius of *Italians*, which is naturally ready in ſuch contrivances, prompted *Baſanello* to a matter wherein he might moſt ſenſibly wound *Altieri*; for knowing that the expectation of Riches was the ſole aim and deſire of the Cardinal; he laboured to diſappoint his hopes, by defeating his Brother *Anticoli* of all that Eſtate which deſcended to him by the death of the Prince *Gallicano*, which amounted unto three thouſand Piſtols a year, beſides Plate, Jewels and other Riches; and were bequeathed to *Baſanello*, and at his abſolute diſpoſal, without regard to any deſcendency: but that ſo much Riches might not be loſt, or be alienated from the Family of *Colonna*, he ſettled them upon the Duke of *Sonnino* Brother of his Wife, and of the Conſtable *Colonna*.

This unexpected defeat, to the prejudice of *Anticoli*, touched *Altieri* in the moſt ſenſible part, which was his own intereſt and honour; in return of which he contrived a Revenge ſpun with a like thread, and of the ſame nature with the former; in which becauſe moſt of the *Roman* Princes and foreign Miniſters were concerned, it may not be impertinent to this Hiſtory to make a ſhort relation thereof.

Prince *Ceſarini* lately deceaſed, had left immenſe Riches to his Family; but wanting Heirs male, and leaving only two Daughters, the Inheritance deſcended to Monſignor *Ceſarini* Brother to the Prince, who was Clerk of the *Camera*; which to enjoy with ſo many Seignories, Baronies and Lordſhips thereunto belonging, this good Prelat made no ſcruple to abandon his Offices, and the expectations of a Cardinals Cap, to enter into a fair Revenue of above ſixteen thouſand Piſtols *per annum*; but having waſted his body by the ſins of his youth, he found himſelf not fit to marry, and conſequently without hopes of legitimate Heirs: for which reaſon, theſe Riches deſcending to the two Daughters, the Prince their Father left in his Will and Teſtament, that ſuch as ſhould have the fortune to marry his Daughters, ſhould be perſons devoted, and ſincerely adhering to the party and intereſt of *France*.

The Duke of *Sonnino* formerly called Abbat of *Colonna*, and Brother of the Conſtable, had forſaken his Eccleſiaſtical preferment to marry with the ſecond Daughter, on condition that the eldeſt, engaging herſelf by promiſe to be a Nun, ſhould renounce all right and title to the moiety of the Eſtate with her younger Siſter.

The condition of this Affair being known to *Altieri*, he took his advantage to reek his revenge on the Houſe of *Colonna*, judging it a proper means to pay them off in the ſame coin; for as the Duke of *Baſſanello* had formerly defeated *Anticoli* of the Eſtate of Prince *Gallicano*; ſo now he contrived to deprive *Sonnino* of the Inheritance belonging to the Princeſs *Ceſarini*, and which ſhould inevitably have devolved unto him, in caſe the Princeſs had remained conſtant to her reſolution, and had renounced the World, within the incloſures of a Nunnery. But *Altieri* ſuggeſting to the young Lady the pleaſures and conveniencies of marriage, made eaſie impreſſion into her frail heart, cauſing her to waver and ſtagger in her late reſolutions: and whereas the Vow ſhe had made of perpetual chaſtity, was the chief ſcruple which obſtructed the change of her Will; that knot was eaſily untied by the ſolution of her ſpiritual Father and Confeſſor, and other Prieſts and Friers, who were made the Inſtruments of this deſign; and in caſe there ſhould ſtill remain any ſcruple of Conſcience, the infallible power of the Pope himſelf was at hand to clear the doubts, and diſpence with all the Engagements, Vows and Promiſes to God or Man, by which ſhe ſuppoſed herſelf bound and obliged, and to make all this good, the Pope proffered to take her into his protection.

The Princeſs *Ceſarini* being thus overcome, and reſolved to marry, the Cardinal provided her with a Husband, giving her the opportunity to ſee *Don Frederico Sforza* his Nephew, who was a brisk young Gallant, and capable to make impreſſion in the tender heart of a Lady diſpoſed towards the thoughts of marriage. The Conſtable of *Colonna* on the other ſide deſpairing of all hopes to perſwade the Princeſs to the continuance of her Vow, concurred with the other party in his aſſent to her marriage, provided ſhe would accept of *Don Lelio Orſini*. This Propoſal much alarm'd the Cardinal, as alſo the Duke of *Gravina*, who though he was one branch of the Houſe of *Orſini*, yet having married one of the Pope's Nieces with a conſiderable Portion in ready Mony, and with aſſurances of a Cardinal's Cap for his Brother, (who was a *Dominican* Frier) was eaſily perſwaded to concur with *Altieri* in the advancement of the Pope's Family. The Intrigues of this Affair were various, and admitted of more particulars than are required in this Hiſtory; but in ſhort, the power of *Altieri* was not only ſuperiour to that of *Colonna*, and his plots more ſubtle, and his labours more indefatigable; (for he was the moſt aſſiduous Man in the World to promote his own intereſt) but alſo he had a greater Aſcendant over the affections of the Princeſs, in the perſon of *Sforza*, who was young, gentle and of good addreſs, whereas *Don Lelio* was a Man in years, and of a weak and infirm complexion, and ſo given over and inclined to devotion, that they gave him the name of *Mangia Santi*, or the Saint-Eater, wholly and intirely applying his mind to gain Indulgences, and Jubilees, and Pardons: howſoever upon the propoſals of this Marriage, he ſtrained his humour into the Mode of a Gallant, feigning a brisk and aiery behaviour; which being forced and affected became him ſo ill, that it ſeemed almoſt ridiculous, and could ſtand in no competition with the more natural garb and comelineſs of *Don Frederico*.

Howſoever the Intereſt which was made in behalf of *Don Lelio* by importunity of the Mother, and the perſwaſion of other Friends, was ſo prevalent that the young Lady remained in a doubtful condition, which of the offers ſhe ſhould embrace. This indifferency much troubled *Altieri*; and therefore to ſecure is point againſt all attempts and aſſaults of the Mother and others; he removed the Princeſs from the Monaſtery of St. *Katharine* of *Siena*, wherein ſhe reſided, to that of S. *Ann* on the other ſide of the *Tiber*, where *Sforza* had an Aunt that lived a profeſs'd Nun: and for better ſecurity from ſecret practices, Guards were ſet by expreſs Order from the Pope to hinder all communication with the Princeſs. But not only was it thought neceſſary to prevent all private ſuggeſtions; but the affection of the Lady towards *Sforza* was to be kept up by ſome lively repreſentations of Love, which were conſtantly to be inſtilled into her mind by ſome able and proper Inſtrument: to perform this Office, none ſeemed more able, nor better qualified than Monſignor *Altoviti* the Patriarch of *Alexandria*; who was highly eſteemed in the City, and of great reputation for the devotion and ſanctity of his life, and for the experience he had in the affairs of the Court of *Rome*: moreover, he was ſuper-intendent over this Convent of St. *Ann*, and lived in hopes of being a Cardinal, and of other promotions in the Eccleſiaſtical State, ſo that no perſon could be more proper for this Employment, than this good Prelat.

Whilſt the Princeſs thus remained cloſely watched, and beſieged within the Convent; the Family of *Colonna* murmured, and talked loud againſt the Cardinal, complaining of his injuſtice and inſolent violence which was intolerable to Princes of *Rome*: but ſay what they could, *Altieri* was reſolved to hold his prey faſt, and improve his Intereſt with her by means of the good Prelat *Altoviti*; who having the care and protection of that Convent committed to his Care and Truſt, had the opportunity without much ſuſpition to make frequent Viſits to the Lady, and to carry Billiets from her to the Cardinal, declaring her reſolution to be entirely governed by him and his Holineſs. But this daily correſpondence and intercourſe of Letters had not long continued, before the Spies of *Colonna* had diſcovered the Intrigues, which were managed by this Prelat, and the Aunt of *Don Frederico*, who alſo was as ſubtle as any Woman, and the more cunning for being a Nun. The Conſtable of *Colonna* and others of that Family being well informed of theſe proceedings and of all theſe affairs, diſſembled them by a more than ordinary reſpect to the perſon of *Altoviti*, whom, whenſoever they met, they ſaluted with ſuch profound reverence, as if he had been Pope, profeſſing more than ordinary reſpect to his perſon and ſanctity of his life.

The good Prelat believing theſe demonſtrations of kindneſs to be all real, openly paſſed over the Bridge of Saint *Siſto* without fear or ſuſpicion, in the ſight and view of the Lords of *Colonna*; when ſome bold Ruffians or Aſſaſſinates aſſaulted him in his Coach, firing two Carbines upon him, one of which ſhot him with a Bullet, which paſſed his Neck, and came out under his ſhoulder: the poor Prelat finding himſelf thus mortally wounded cryed out for help; at which lamentable Voice many Prieſts and Friers came about him to prepare him for death; but Chyrurgions coming in, and finding that the wound was not mortal, he took courage, and in few weeks his wound was perfectly cured. This accident afforded matter of diſcourſe to the whole Town, and Libels or *Paſquils* were ſcattered and affixed in all publick places: others wrote Verſes and Elegies on *Altoviti*, as if he had been already dead; of which we ſhall only repeat this Diſtick:

Barbare! quid violas violento tingere tentas
Sanguine? quas tingi Murice Roma dabat.

This violent attempt on the ſacred perſon of a Prelat was ſcandalous to all the World; and every one believed that the Pope would have ſo highly reſented it, as in deſpight of the Family of *Colonna*, and of their greatneſs, have revenged an Act ſo infamous as this, by juſt puniſhment of the Offenders: but contrary to all expectation, when the Governour of *Rome* went to the Pope's Palace to receive Orders, in what manner to govern himſelf in this important Affair; the Cardinal *Altieri* ſeemed very cold and remiſs, giving little or no encouragement, or direction to the Magiſtrates to examine or enquire into the matter, ſaying, *That Officers of Juſtice ought as well to be Politicians as Judges.* In the mean time the Conſtable *Colonna* ſeemed little concerned, and neither gave outward demonſtrations of joy, nor affected a diſſembled ſorrow; but reſerving himſelf in a moderate mean, appeared publickly at Exerciſes, *Operaes* and other divertiſements as uſual; nouriſhing a ſecret concernment, that he had revenged himſelf on his Adverſary, and that his power and greatneſs had ſeated him above the reach of the Cardinal. On the other ſide, the Cardinal rejoyced to hear *Colonna* evil ſpoken of, and that he had incurred the Odium, or hatred of all the good and vertuous Men of *Rome*, and eſpecially of the Clergy; and farther to dilate and heap an infamy of this deteſtable Act on a Family which he abhorred; he cauſed a Narrative thereof to be wrote and ſent unto all Courts and Countries, by ſuch Pens as he had choſen and cauſed to be dipped in the moſt bitter Ink of Invectives.

This was all the ſatisfaction that *Altoviti* could obtain, notwithſtanding the ſacredneſs of his Perſon, being a Prelat and Patriarch, and one that had ſacrificed his reputation and life for ſervice of the Court. And though the Nephews of other Popes have on occaſions leſs injurious and diſhonourable to the Papal See, hazarded the quiet and ſafety of the Eccleſiaſtical State; yet *Aliteri*, ſcorning to inſiſt on ſuch low and trivial punctillio's, delighted himſelf with the thoughts, that in deſpight of all the power and contrivances of *Colonna*, he ſhould gain his point and ſufficiently mortifie that Family by the marriage of *Sforza* with the Princeſs *Ceſarini*.

And indeed the matter ſucceeded accordingly; for after all theſe, and many other particulars which cauſed diſturbance; the *French* Ambaſſadour who was the Duke *de Eſtreé,* and the Duke *Ceſarini* Uncle of the two Ladies interpoſed between both parties, and in fine made this agreement: That both Siſters with their Husbands ſhould live under the protection of *France* (as determined by the Will of their Father) and ever more profeſs and adhere to that Intereſt. That their Uncle *Ceſarini* who was infirm and impotent in his Bed without hopes of poſterity, ſhould leave the Inheritance of his Eſtate to his two Nieces, to be equally divided between them; Which terms of Accommodation being indented and ſubſcribed reciprocally by both Parties: the Cardinal obtained his ends, and the rage of *Colonna* appeaſed, and Prince *Sonnino* ſatisfied, who had married the younger Siſter upon the Promiſes, and Vows which the Elder had given to renounce the World, and the Inheritance, and live within the retirement of a Convent.

Thus ended the embroils of this Intrigue, injurious to none but poor *Altoviti*; which having been acted in other parts, might have produced many Tragical Effects; but in regard the Scene was at *Rome*, where love and juſtice give way to Policy, and to deſigns for conſervation of Families; Arms and paſſion were overcome by Plots and ſubtil Contrivances.

Whatſoever matter occurred in the time of this Pope, we muſt attribute to the perſon, paſſion and conduct of *Altieri*; for *Clement* being an old Dotard, and not deſirous to be troubled with buſineſs, was ſerved by a Nephew which fitted his humour, and only made uſe of his name and Authority to govern with an abſolute and deſpotical Will. The firſt movement which regulated all his Actions was a paſſion, and an exorbitant deſire to agrandize his own Name and Family; and in order thereunto, as he was naturally partial to the *Spaniſh* Faction, ſo he believed a conſtant adherence to that Intereſt to be moſt correſponding to thoſe deſigns.

In the year 1671. four Cardinals died at *Rome*, of which *Antonio Barberino* was one. At *Genoua* new differences aroſe concerning the Inquiſition, which were afterwards compoſed to the mutual ſatisfaction both of the Pope and that Republick. This year being the year following after the Inauguration of the Pope, *Don Pedro d' Aragon* Vice-King of *Naples* appeared at *Rome* with a ſplendid Retinue, to perform the Embaſſy of Obedience (as they call it) which is done by the yearly preſent of a white Genet; this Ceremony was at other times performed by the Ambaſſadour of *Spain* reſiding at *Rome*; but to ſhew a greater honour perhaps to the Pope, the Vice-King was qualified with the Title of *Ambaſſadour Extraordinary*; after whoſe return into *Spain* the Marquis of *Aſtorgas* was conſtituted Vice-King of *Naples*, and Father *Nitardo* Inquiſitor General of *Spain* was dignified with the Character of *Ambaſſadour*, and becauſe that honour is inconſiſtent with the ſimple condition of a religious perſon, the Pope adorned him with the Title of Archbiſhop of *Edeſſa*; who the year following with ſeveral others was promoted to the dignity of Cardinal.

An. 1672. This year alſo pope *Pius Quintus*, who was a *Dominican*, or of the Order of *Preachers*, was canonized, being a hundred years after his deceaſe. There alſo happened a diſpute concerning Precedency, between *Don Gaſparo Altieri* one of the Pope's Nephews, and General of the Pope's

Forces, and commandator *Bichi* Ambaſſadour of *Tuſcany*, which difference was determined in favour of the latter.

In the mean time violent diſturbances aroſe in *Poland*, on occaſion that King *Michael* had removed the Primate of that Kingdom, and the Great General *Sobieski* from their Places and Offices of Truſt, which afterwards were accommodated by the Pope's Nuntio Monſignor *Bonviſi* on terms more neceſſary than convenient, or rather by the approach of the *Turks* who with a formidable force had taken the ſtrong fortreſs of *Keminiec*, and were entred into the bowels of *Poland* as far as *Leopolis*; the news hereof made a great noiſe at *Rome*, but little diſturbed Cardinal *Altieri*, who being intent to other deſigns, did not much trouble his head with the thoughts of ſending Nuntio's to the Chriſtian Princes, whoſe buſineſs was to incite them to adminiſter help and ſuccour to the afflicted *Poland*, oppreſſed, and almoſt over-run with *Mahometan* Arms; for his Opinion was (as they ſay) that the interceſſion of the Pope's Miniſters in matters of that nature, were only formalities, and ſuch as conduced little to real effects, for that Princes well diſpoſed, and zealous for the Chriſtian Cauſe, or ſuch as were united in the ſame common Intereſt, which was to expel and drive an Enemy ſo powerful and dangerous far from them, would move on the principles of their own ſafety, without any other incitements or motives from their common Father the Pope: and indeed *Altieri* ſearching for the nature of mankind within himſelf, did conclude, that not Religion, but intereſt of State only governed the World. Howſoever that he might afford ſome teſtimonies of his care and affection towards *Poland*; he raiſed the ſum of three hundred thouſand Crowns, by impoſitions on Eccleſiaſtical Benefices in *Italy*, of which he ſent fifty thouſand into *Poland*, and the remainder he inveſted in buildings, furniture and moveables for his own ſervice. Soon after which King *Michael* dying, the confuſions of that Kingdom increaſed, and to other Seditions and Controverſies amongſt them, was added that grand point of diſpute concerning a Succeſſour to the Crown; for conſervation of which, though *Altieri* was not ſo liberal as to contribute great ſums of Money; yet to pleaſe and gratifie the *Spaniards*, he was deſirous to have a hand in the preferment of a King to them, naming Prince *Charles* of *Lorain* as a perſon qualified with all Royal abilities and endowments required in a King: and indeed though none was more worthy of a Crown than that generous Prince; yet the Nobles of that Kingdom informed of the Pope's endeavours, reflected thereon as prejudicial to their right of Election, having never received Kings at the nomination or recommendation of *Rome*; and therefore proceeded to the election of *John Sobieski*, a perſon capable to ſuſtain a Crown to the benefit and glory of that Kingdom, which being invaded by the formidable Arms of the *Turks*, could never be reſcued from ruine and deſtruction, but by the valour and fortune of *Sobieski*, whom God raiſed not only for the protection of *Poland*, but for the defence of *Germany*; having by his Heroick march from his own Country in the year 2683. to raiſe the Siege of *Vienna*, ſignalized his Valour and Proweſs, to ſuch a degree as Romances deſcribe Heroes, and the generous Actions and Atchievements of mighty Princes.

It hath been a priviledge granted by the See of *Rome* to the Kings of *Poland*, immediately after their Election, to beſtow a Cardinal's Cap on any Perſon whom they ſhould propoſe; according to which Power, the new King nominated the Biſhop of *Marſeglia* for that Perſon, to whom he deſigned that honour. It was indifferent to *Altieri* whether the Scarlet were beſtowed on him or any other, had not the *Spaniards*, to whoſe Intereſt he was extreamly partial, ſuggeſted the contrary; pretending that the King ought to nominate a Subject of his own, and not of a foreign and ſtranger Prince; for that in regard the *French* King was able to inſinuate into all Courts, by flattery and bribery he might eaſily obtain a nomination for one or other, who ſhould either by Nation or Intereſt be ingaged in that Faction; and ſo in time the whole *Conclave* become *French*, and entirely dedicated to the devotion of that King. And whereas it might be objected, that the refuſal of the King of *Poland*'s deſire, would much diſoblige him and the whole Nation, which ſtood much on their points and Prerogatives: The *Spaniards* anſwered, That the Election of the Great Marſhal *Sobieski* to the Crown of *Poland*, having not been performed according to the uſual Rules and Methods obſerved in that Kingdom, could not continue or be confirmed; for that the Nobles of *Lituania* had not given their Votes and Suffrages thereunto: that the greateſt part of that Republick deſired an unmarried Prince, who might eſpouſe the Widow of the deceaſed King; and in fine, that all the Nobility of *Poland* remained unſatisfied with this Election; and being greatly divided in their Opinions, ſome alteration might ſpeedily be expected. *Altieri* ſuffering himſelf to be thus miſguided with theſe ſuggeſtions of the *Spaniards*, wrote to the King of *Poland* in the name of the Pope, deſiring his Majeſty to fix on ſome other perſon of a more indifferent temper, and who was a Neuter, and leſs engaged to either of the Crowns: by which he would perform ſo ſignal a kindneſs to his Holineſs, as would ever oblige him to prefer the intereſt of his Kingdom in matters of greater moment.

The King highly reſented this manner of proceeding of the Court of *Rome*, being aſtoniſhed to find, that thoſe, who had uſed all endeavours to diſappoint him of his Election, ſhould now have the boldneſs to demand ſuch a favour from him, as he could not grant without diſhonour to the Crown which he had lately received, and therefore teſtified his reſolutions to perſiſt in the nomination he had made; to which *Altieri* not judging fit to condeſcend remained firm in his denial; and therein being reſolved until the death of this Pope, an ill correſpondence paſſed between *Poland* and *Rome* during the Reign of this *Clement* X.

An. 1673. Though all theſe difficulties were made in exception to the perſon of the Biſhop of *Marſeille*, yet *Altieri* was more eaſie and favourable to the Family of the late Pope; and accordingly about the beginning of the year 1673. *Felice Roſpiglioſi* was advanced to the degree of Cardinal, whereby the Pope in gratitude to *Clement* IX. returned the Hat he had received from him, to a perſon of the ſame name and Family: at the ſame time alſo he promoted *Peter Baſadonna* Knight and Procurator of St. *Mark* for the Republick of *Venice*, to the ſame degree, together with Monſignor *Nerli* a *Florentine*, and then Nuntio at *Paris*. This year alſo the College of Cardinals loſt four of their number, three of which were principal Members, and Perſons great in their Worth and Offices, *viz.*

Frederick Borromeo Secretary of State, *Imperiali à bury*, and an active Cardinal, as alſo *Gualtieri* and *Roberti*.

In this year the moſt Chriſtian King deſigned to reform the Order of St. *Lazarus*, and caſt it in to ſome other model; for that this Order being almoſt worn out, and the Conſtitutions of it, either abrogated or out of uſe; his Majeſty judged it more convenient to renew it again, and eſtabliſh it upon ſome other foundation; and in purſuance of this reſolution, a new Chief, or General was appointed for this Order. This right of *Regalia*, or *Jus Patronatus* which his Majeſty had on this occaſion exerciſed in the *Gallican* Church, greatly offended Cardinal *Altieri*, who to vindicate the Papal Authority, in oppoſition to the King's uſurped Pretences, perſwaded a certain *Gaſcon*, who was come to ſeek Preferment at *Rome*, to accept the honour of Abbat of the Order of St. *Lazarus*, and to qualifie him for his dignity, the Title of Abbat of *Colombiere* was conferred upon him. This ſimple *Gaſcon*, for no other would be ſo vain, as to accept of an Employment ſo intrigueſom and difficult as this, not having the Talent, or capacity to manage an Affair of this weight and moment, ſigned and diſpatched away the Orders requiſite for regulation of his Abby; and though his friends and acquaintance diſſwaded him from an Enterpriſe ſo offenſive to the King; yet this bold *Gaſcon* perſiſted in his folly, being therein encouraged by the Creatures of *Altieri*.

The Duke *d' Eſtreé* then Ambaſſadour for *France* at *Rome*, highly reſented this pretence of the Pope in derogation to the Right of his Maſter, but more eſpecially was offended with the *Gaſcon* who had conſpired with the Cardinal to deprive the King of his Right and Prerogative. Wherefore the Duke being highly incenſed, ſeized the Scrivener who had drawn up the Abbat's Memorial to the Pope, and after ſevere Words and Reproofs, cauſed him to be impriſoned: the Abbat in the mean time fearing the like Treatment, retired into a priviledged place within the juriſdiction of the Pope's Palace, and under the protection of the Cardinal, who allowed him a Penſion for his neceſſary maintenance. At length the Abbat inſtigated by his Friends, and encouraged by *Altieri*, departed from *Rome*, and paſſed the *Alps* in *France*; where ſo ſoon as he was arrived, he was ſeiz'd by the King's command, and committed to Priſon, where we ſhall leave him to the Law, and the diſpoſal of the Order of St. *Lazarus* to the Pleaſure of His Majeſty.

This, and other diſcontents encreaſed the ill correſpondence between the Duke *d' Eſtreé* Ambaſſadour of *France*, and the Cardinal; which *Altieri*, tho' an *Italian*, could not conceal or diſſemble; for being paſſionately affected to the Intereſt of *Spain*, received the News of the *French* Conqueſts and Succeſſes againſt *Holland*, with regret and diſpleaſure; either diſapproving the Intelligence as falſe, or otherwiſe relating it with ſuch Circumſtances, as much abated and eclipſed the Glory of thoſe Victories: all which ſerved to inflame the differences between the Duke and the Cardinal.

But none was of greater Conſequence, than that which intervened between the Cardinal, and all the Ambaſſadours and Repreſentatives for forreign Princes reſiding in the Court of *Rome*: the occaſion and matter whereof was this.

An. 1674. It being now the year 1674. immediately preceding the year of Jubilee, when more than ordinary proviſions are made for entertainment and ſuſtenance of Pilgrims, who croud in great numbers to obtain the Indulgences, Pardons, and Diſpenſations which are granted at that holy time: It happened, that the Farmers and Collectors of the Cuſtoms, and Impoſitions which are laid on all ſorts of Victuals and Proviſions, made complaints of the great damage which the Pope ſuffered in that branch of his Revenue, from the abuſes and frauds of forreign Miniſters; who having all proviſions for their Families allowed to them free from Taxes and Impoſt, did under that pretence, colour the goods and proviſions of others, and thereby raiſed conſiderable ſums of Money to their own advantage, which belonged and appertained to the Apoſtolical Chamber. The Farmers had often complained of theſe abuſes in the times of other Popes, and though many remedies and expedients were propoſed for prevention of the Cheat; yet they produced nothing beſides affronts, and blows to the Officers.

At length *Altieri* who eſteemed himſelf more politick and powerful than all the Nephews of preceding Popes; reſolved on occaſion of the approaching Jubilee, to raiſe the Farm on proviſions to a more exorbitant price than ever was known; and to obviate the complaints of the Cuſtomers; he publiſhed an Edict, That all Ambaſſadours and Cardinals ſhould for the future pay the Taxes, and Impoſitions on their Domeſtick Proviſions, in ſuch manner as all other perſons, not exempted by priviledges, were obliged to pay.

This Edict being publiſhed, greatly ſurprized, not only the Miniſters from forreign Princes, but the whole College of Cardinals, who finding themſelves hereby deprived of their chief benefit and priviledge, murmured, and talked loud againſt the arbitrary and irregular Government of Cardinal *Altieri*; who little regarding the empty air of words, returned no other anſwer, than *that the Pope was Maſter of his own Family and Dominions.*

The Ambaſſadours then reſiding at *Rome*, were the Cardinal *Landgrave* of *Heſſe* for the Emperour, the Duke *d'Eſtreé* for *France*, Cardinal *Nitardo* for *Spain*, beſides the Repreſentatives of *Venice*, the Grand Duke, *Genoua*, and other leſſer Princes; all theſe being diſobliged, and ſenſibly touched by the loſs, or ſuſpenſion of their priviledge, entred into conſultation together of the method whereby to proceed; when after ſome debate they agreed to go together to the Palace of *Monte Cavallo*, where the Pope was then lodged; and there without any previous Ceremony, or notice taken of the Cardinal Nephew, to demand Audience immediately of the Pope. Accordingly theſe forreign Miniſters being on their way thither, which made a great noiſe and combuſtion in the City of *Rome*; the Cardinal at the alarm rouſed up himſelf, and inſtantly comanded the chains of the City to be drawn, the Gates of the Palace to be ſhut, and Guards placed at all Avenues, to hinder and obſtruct the paſſage of the Ambaſſadours; who being in this manner diſappointed of their Audience, returned home full of anger and indignation, reſolving in revenge of this Affront, never more to acknowledge the Cardinal for Nephew of the Pope, or treat with him under thoſe circumſtances, or give him the name of *Altieri*, but of *Paluzzi*; and in the mean time they cauſed a relation and ſtate of the whole matter to be drawn up in writing, ſubſcribed by the hands of all the Ambaſſadours and forreign Miniſters, the which was diſpatched by every one of them, to his reſpective Prince.

Notwithſtanding the late Obſtructions given them by *Altieri*, the Ambaſſadours found a way to obtain Audience of the Pope, to whom having gained admittance, they repreſented, That the cauſe and ſubject of their diſcontent, was the exorbitant and irregular Government of his Nephew, who to the prejudice of their honour, had laid thoſe Impoſitions upon them, from which they were exempted by the priviledge of their Character; and though both their Maſters and themſelves were well-affected and zealous towards the Apoſtolical Sea, yet they could not but make a great difference between the duty they owed to his Holineſs, and their ſubmiſſion to the Cardinal *Altieri* in all his indirect proceedings. For Anſwer hereunto, the Pope, who was of a mild and gentle temper, replied with his uſual ſoftneſs, in juſtification of his Edict, that the Debts which lay on the Apoſtolical Chamber were vaſt, amounting to many Millions of Gold; for eaſe of which, he was enforced to intrench for a ſhort time on their priviledges; which ſhould not longer continue, than until the end of Jubilee, which would be terminated at the expiration of the following year; during which, the Chamber being obliged to more than ordinary charges and expence, was enforced to excerciſe unuſual means for its reimburſments: and therefore he hoped, that they would become ſuch charitable Benefactors to the Church, as for its better ſupport and ſubſiſtence, to part with ſomething of their own rights, for advancement of ſo great a good; eſpecially conſidering, that during the time of his Pontificate, the Eccleſiaſtical State had not been charged with any new Taxes or Impoſitions.

Theſe and the like diſcourſes uſed by the Pope in favour of his Nephew, and his proceedings, gave no ſatisfaction to the forreign Miniſters; who therewith diſpleaſed, returned immediately from their Audience to their own dwellings, without the leaſt notice taken of the Cardinal Nephew; which neglect was intended as an affront to him, it being the cuſtom for Ambaſſadours after they came from Audience with the Pope, to viſit the Nephew, and communicate their Affairs to him, craving his aſſiſtance and furtherance in their buſineſs; but now the Ambaſſadours to evidence their farther reſentments, judged it not only fit to diſown *Altieri* by omiſſion of this Ceremony, but even (as far as they were able) to diveſt him of his Adoption, vouchſafing no other name to him, than that of *Paluzzi*.

This neglect, and ill correſpondence with *Altieri*, continued for the ſpace of ſeveral months, which much abated the reſpect of the people towards the Cardinal, and cauſed him to fall low in the eſteem of the Court; and as a conſequence thereof, Kings and Princes returned no Anſwer to his Leters, though accompanied with the Pope's Briefs, and worded with all the terms of ſubmiſſion and humility, that could be expreſſed. *Altieri* conſidering the circumſtances of his condition, and the age of the Pope, (who according to the courſe of Nature could not laſt long) endeavoured by all means poſſible, to procure a good underſtanding between himſelf and the Ambaſſadours, and eſpecially to ſet himſelf right with *France*: in order hereunto, a Congregation of Cardinals was deputed, conſiſting (as was believed) of Men diſintereſſed, and unbiaſſed by any faction, whoſe incumbence it was to propoſe, and contrive middle and indifferent terms towards an Accommodation. In like caſes, as well as in this, it hath been the practice to ordain a Congregation of this nature; which being compoſed for the moſt part of aged and unactive Men, ſuch as had given over the World, moved ſlowly in all their Determinations, and with that phlegm, that their Conſults and Propoſals commonly concluded in nothing: the like ſucceſs this Deputation found, the meeting and debates of the Cardinals being delayed from day to day, without other iſſue or effect, and in the mean time, the Execution of the Edict ſeemed to be ſuſpended, or to die of it ſelf; the Cuſtomers and Collectors of the Taxes, not daring to exerciſe their power in virtue of this Edict. *Altieri* alſo had given them ſome intimation, not to inſiſt with too much reſolution and rigour thereupon, with promiſes of Abatements on their Farm, ſuppoſing that time would compoſe the differences, and allay the indignation which the Ambaſſadours had conceived againſt him: but finding it to the contrary, that their anger was kept alive with ſcorn, and diſreſpect to his Perſon and Office: and that though the Kings of *France* and *Spain* were engaged in Wars one againſt the other, and that their Ambaſſadours at *Rome* were on that ſcore at odds, and unfriendly one with the other: yet they agreed and entertaind a good underſtanding together in what concerned the quadruple knot which they had ſealed againſt him. *Altieri* fearing the conſequences of theſe matters, reſolved to caſt himſelf into the hands of *France*, but the Duke *d' Eſtreé* refuſed to accept of any Terms or Conditions with him; wherefore he applied himſelf to the other Ambaſſadours with deſign to break the Combination; but encountring the ſame difficulties, he applied himſelf to the Court of *Spain*, where the Counſels and Conſiderations being of a different nature, regarding the quiet of *Italy*, rather than animoſity to the perſon of *Altieri*, Orders were diſpatched to Cardinal *Nitardi* to cloſe with him, and to enter again into a good correſpondence with the Court of *Rome*.

The Emperour taking the ſame meaſures, gave Orders to the Cardinal *Landgrave* to acknowledge *Altieri* as formerly for the Pope's Nephew, and to retain a good correſpondence with him: the Senate of *Venice* following the example of theſe two great Monarchs, ordered their Miniſter alſo to accept terms of Reconciliation; by which means *Altieri* ſtood fair again with all the Ambaſſadours, excepting only the Duke *d' Eſtreé*, who had other ſcores to reckon with him.

When the news came to *Rome*, that the Court of *Spain* had given Order to their Ambaſſadour to reconcile himſelf with *Altieri*: thoſe who in that City have little more to do, than to diſcourſe of the Politicks, and make their reflections on the Acts of Princes; were of Opinion, that *Altieri* had made ſome offers to aſſiſt the *Spaniards* in regaining the City of *Meſſina* from the *French*; which the Duke *d' Eſtreé* having diſcovered, adjoined that quarrel to other matters of diſcontent; but ſuch conjectures as theſe could have no foundation, nor gain belief amongſt thoſe, who underſtand the conſtitution of *Rome*, and the nature of the Cardinal, who was more inclined to heap up for himſelf, than ſow for others. But the more probable Opinion was, that *Spain* was deſirous to ſtand fair with the Pope, becauſe *France* was at odds with him, giving thereby a Teſtimony to the World of the unquietneſs of that

Nation, which is contented with nothing of moderation; and in fine, that their behaviour towards all is inſolent and inſupportable. An. 1675.

The year 1675. which was the Jubilee or holy year, being entered, the City of *Rome* was after the uſual manner filled with multitudes of Pilgrims and Strangers, who crowded to obtain the benefit of Pardons and Indulgences, which are plentifully iſſued and beſtowed at that time. That year ſix Cardinals were Created, namely *Alexander Creſcentio* a *Roman*, *Mareſcotti* of *Bologna*, *Rocci* a *Roman*, *Albritii* a *Neopolitan*, *Spada* a *Roman* and *Philip Howard* of the Illuſtrious Family of *Norfolk*, who was a *Dominican*, having been Great Almoner to the Queen of *England*; this advancement was much facilited by her Majeſties recommendations. The which promotions the *French* King would not own, becauſe the Biſhop of *Marſeglia*, whom the King of *Poland* had recommended, (as we have related at the beginning of this Pope's Reign) was rejected, to pleaſe the humour of the *Spaniards*. And indeed herein his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty ſeemed to have juſt cauſe of diſcontent: for though in the year 1671. *Ceſar d' Eſtreé* Brother of the Duke of that name, and called Biſhop of *Laon* was created Cardinal; yet that honour being conferred at the nomination of the King of *Portugal*, in recompence of ſome ſervices rendered to that Crown, and united only to the bare recommendations of *France*, it was not eſteemed as a favour done to that King, but to *Portugal* only, of which Kingdom *d' Eſtreé* was made Protectour. Howſoever *Altieri* would not underſtand it for other, than a favour done to *France*, without which and the intereſt of the Duke *de Eſtreé* his Brother, them Ambaſſadour at *Rome*, it had ſcarce been obtained: for that Duke, amongſt other Commiſſions brought from *Rome*, had particular inſtructions to demand of the Pope the reſtitution of *Caſtro* and *Ronciglione* to the Duke of *Parma*, according to the Treaty of *Piſa*; but that being a morſel not eaſily digeſted by the Pope, *Monſieur d' Eſtreé* made his way thereupon to gain the Cardinal's Cap for his Brother, by a relaxation of that demand.

About the beginning of the year 1676. there aroſe a Controverſie An. 1676. between the Pope and the Vice-King of *Naples* concerning the ſeizure of certain *Banditi* within the juriſdiction of the Eccleſiaſtical State, by Officers from the Vice-King; upon which Diſpute, the Son of the Duke of *Sora* was baniſhed from *Rome*, upon pain of death in caſe he ſhould return.

This Pope Canonized *Cajetan Tienne*, Founder of the Order of *Regular Clarks*, *Francis Borgia* General of the *Jeſuits*, *Philip Beniti* Reſtorer of the Order of the *Servillians*, *Lewis Bertran*, and *Roſe* of St. *Mary*, both of the *Dominican* Order.

Under theſe Circumſtances *Altieri* remained with *France*, when Pope *Clement* X. died; ſome few houres before whoſe death *Altieri* preſſed him to fill up the four vacant places of Cardinals, and though the Queen of *Sweden* and Cardinal *Barbarino* joyned with him in the ſame requeſt; yet the Pope would not hearken to them, nor grant their deſire. And when at laſt *Altieri* became more importunate with him than before, deſigning to ſupply the four vacan places with Creatures of his own, who might be able to fortifie his Intereſt againſt the next *Conclave*: the good Pope turned to him, and with ſome Anger ſaid: *You may well content your ſelf, that you have been Pope for ſix years, Suffer me now to follow my own inclinations, and be Pope for ſix hours only.*

It was now generally concluded and believed that *Altieri* was ſo fallen into diſreputation with the whole College of Cardinals, and with the People of *Rome*, and ſo hated by all the Prelates, that immediately after the Pope's death, he would be removed from all his Offices, and deprived of his Suffrage in the enſuing *Conclave.* But *Altieri* had ſo well feathered his Neſt during his Reign under his reputed Uncle, that his Riches procured him Friends, and reconciled the minds of thoſe who were moſt eſtranged from him; ſo that he conſerved his Office of Chamberlain with other honourable Charges; and obtained a confirmation for his Nephew *Don Gaſparo* in his place of General, and afterwards entered triumphant into the *Conclave:* only his main task was in what manner to reconcile himſelf to the favour of the moſt Chriſtian King; in regard the Cardinals of that Party declared, that they would neither act nor treat with *Altieri*, until he had firſt given ſatisfaction to his Majeſty.

INNOCENT XI.

SO ſoon as *Clement* X. had expired his laſt breath, *Altieri* who was Cardinal Chamberlain gave notice thereof to all the Officers of the Houſhold; upon which news, all the Prelates and Grooms of the Bedchamber in decent and mourning Habits repaired to the Palace of *Monte Cavallo*, where they found the Body of the Pope laid out on a Pallet covered with Crimſon Velvet; and there in preſence of them all, *Altieri*, whoſe Office it was, brake the *Sigillum Piſcatorium*, or the Pope's Seal in pieces; and the Notaries of the *Camera* took an Inventory of all the Goods found in the Palace. After which the body of the Pope was delivered to thoſe who were to embalm it, and then the Bell of the *Capitol* was rung out, to give notice of the death of the Pope to all the City. And now Cardinal *Altieri*, having nothing more to do at *Monte Cavallo*, repaired to his own new Palace near the *Jeſu*, attended with a numerous Train, where he received the Viſits of Cardinals, Princes, Ambaſſadours, Prelates and Nobles who came to condole with him for the death of his Uncle.

During the time that the Funeral Obſequies were ſolemnizing, the Cardinals were buſied in forming Parties againſt the time of Election: the firſt day of which was the ſecond of *Auguſt*, when a conſiderable number of Cardinals being aſſembled in St. *Peter's*, entered in form of Proceſſion two by two with gravity and Order into the *Conclave*; the next day ſome others were added to them, in all to the number of fifty two; ſo on the third day of *Auguſt* the *Conclave* was ſhut, and Guards ſet by the Prince *Savelli*, to whoſe Office it appertained, as Marſhal of the *Conclave*. On the 4th inſtant the Maſs of *Veni Creator*, being ſung, the Cardinals began the Choice by way of Scrutiny. The Perſons nominated were *Vidone*, *Barberigo*, *Odeſcalchi*, *Spinola* and *Cerri*, all which had almoſt an equality of Votes: *Odeſcalchi* had eleven; but proceeding towards the Evening by way of Acceſſion, ſeven Votes only appeared for him.

On the ſixth day in the Morning, Scrutiny being made, twenty ſeven Votes were given for Cardinal *Corſini*; but in the Evening, fourteen only appeared at the Acceſſion. Howſoever, things were ſo promiſing and favourable, that *Chigi* who chiefly managed this Affair, in the behalf of *Corſini*, certainly believed, that he had gained his point, but Cardinal *Nitarao* Ambaſſadour for *Spain*, oppoſing the Election, drew off all the *Spaniſh* party, which being followed by the faction of the Grand Duke *Corſini*, was wholly abandoned, and but one Vote left him at the Evening when Acceſſion was made.

Chigi not diſcouraged with this ill ſucceſs, was ſtill plotting to bring in the *French* Party to his Aſſiſtance; but was countermined by *Altieri* and the *Flying Squadron*. During which, another party was ſet up, called the *New Squadron*, conſiſting of certain Cardinals who pretended great Zeal, and to be ſolely moved from a ſincere and godly principle, to promote a Perſon to the Chair of St. *Peter*, who was eminent for his Religion and Wiſdom, without any regard to wordly or ſecular intereſt. The Chief or Head of theſe Profeſſours, was Cardinal *Gravina*, who having from his firſt entrance into the *Conclave*, fixed his Eyes on Cardinal *Odeſcalchi*, could never by any oppoſition, or difficulty to the contrary, be removed from his deſign of promoting (as he judged) the moſt worthy perſon of all the *Conclave*. On this occaſion *Gravina* exerciſing all his intereſt and art, Scrutiny was again made, and then thirty ſix Votes appeared in favour of *Odeſcalchi*; which number being great, and ſufficient to ſecure the Pope's Election; a rumour was immediately ſpread, that the Pope was choſen, which drew ſuch a concourſe of people to the gates of the *Vatican*, that the Guards were doubled to keep off the throng from crowding into the precincts of the *Conclave*. Notwithſtanding which, at the Acceſſion ſome of the foreſaid number fell off; for *Altieri*, and *Chigi* had laboured under hand, ſeducing ſeveral with vain hopes, to promote ſome Creature of their reſpective Parties; and the *Spaniards* on farther conſiderations, ſpan out the time with delays, expecting firſt to receive directions from the Court of *Spain*, before they proceeded to a final reſolution.

The *French* Cardinals inclined chiefly to the election of *Roſpiglioſi*, but in caſe his intereſt ſhould fail, they approved of none ſo well as of *Odeſcalchi*; for though he was a ſubject of *Spain*, yet his Vertues, and the ſincere intentions of his mind towards the welfare of the Church, reconciled him to all Parties and Intereſts. The Cardinals which compoſed this *New Squadron* were ſixteen in number, the Chief of which was *Gravina*, who ever remained immoveable, and would never nominate, or propoſe other than *Odeſcalchi*; the other Cardinals were *Cibo*, *Barberino*, *Litta*, *Buonviſi*, *Caraffa*, *Howard* of *Norfolk*, *Roſpiglioſi*, *Acciaoli*, *Homodei*, *Albici*, *Nitardo*, *Roſetti*, *Pio*, *Vidone*, and *Odeſcalchi*: the which Party with their Adherents, was ſo ſtrong, as to ballance at any time the Election, and to exclude any whom they were pleaſed to reject.

Howſoever the party of *Odeſcalchi* was not ſo ſtrong, but that it admitted of another balance; for *Barberino* and *Chigi* began a negotiation in favour of *Fachenetti*, which was in ſo probable a way to ſucceed, that Scrutiny being made in the Morning, twenty two Votes appeared for him, and at the Evening eleven only upon the Acceſſion.

Whereupon *Gravina* and the zealous Cardinals renewed the Scrutiny again for *Odeſcalchi*, by which twenty nine were given in his favour; which number with the former favourable Scrutinies did clearly manifeſt that the *Conclave* was generally inclined to his Perſon: which occaſioned a common rumour through all the Town, that the Pope was made, and that *Odeſcalchi* was choſen; which was ſo confidently reported, that the people began to aſſemble, with intention to rifle and plunder the Palace of that Cardinal, had it not been defended by a Guard of Soldiers. And indeed the *Conclave* had then really proceeded to have compleated their choice, and by Acceſſion, created him Pope, had not Cardinal *d' Eſtreé* ſuſpended the proceedings by a Requeſt he made; that their Eminencies would be pleaſed for ſome ſhort time to defer the ultimate point which determines their Election, until the arrival of ſome *French* Cardinals, who by order order of the King were now on their journey towards the *Conclave*; which he propoſed (as he ſaid) not to thwart or alter the Choice they had made of ſo worthy a Perſon, in which he alſo concurred; but that his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty might have opportunity thereby to join with them in ſuch a ſacred Election, by the conſent and approbation which he was ready to yield thereunto.

In the mean time not to remain idle, ſeveral Deſigns were put in practice in behalf of divers Cardinals: *Conti* was one that was ſet up, and his intereſt promoted by Cardinal *Azzolino*; but this perſon failing, the next in nomination was *Piccolomini*, ſupported by *Chigi* and *Azzolino*, and founded on the intereſt of *Spain*, and the Great Duke; who to allure *Altieri* to a concurrence with them, they engaged that *Piccolomini* being elected Pope, he ſhould advance *Bichi* (who was the intimate Friend of *Altieri*) to the degree and dignity of Cardinal Nephew: but this offer prevailed not upon *Altieri*, who had other deſigns and intentions in his proſpect. *Chigi* failing herein, reſolved to try the fortune of Cardinal *Spinola*, who though a *Genoeſe*, was yet a perſon of great worth and learning, and well practiſed in publick Affairs, having reſided for ſome time with the Emperour in *Germany*, in quality of Nuntio from the Pope; but this would not do neither, for being put to the Scrutiny, no more than ſeven Votes were preſented for him. Then Cardinal *Creſcentio* was propoſed and offered to the *Spaniards*, and to the Faction of *Pamfilio*: but this intereſt being manifeſtly oppoſite to the Crown of *France*, and to the Duke *d' Eſtreé* Ambaſſadour for that King, and by conſequence, to all the *French* party; there remained little hopes of ſucceſs for him or his Promoters. Then new Scrutinies being again made, *Odeſcalchi* had fourteen Votes, *Alberici* nine, old *Carpegna* had ſeven, *Albici* five, *Gaſtaldi* nine, and *Creſcentio* three.

Thus did the *Conclave* trifle away their time until the thirtieth of *Auguſt*, when the Cardinals *Retz*, *Buglion*, *Bonſi*, and *Maldachino*, arrived at *Rome*; ſo that it was expected that very ſpeedily an Election would follow, and that according to common Opinion, the perſon would be no other than *Odeſcalchi*, though at the ſame time *Albritio* by the dexterous management of *Altieri*, *Carpegna*, and *Colonna*, was put into a fair courſe of promotion: but his hopes were ſoon daſhed by oppoſite parties, and the different intereſts became ſo embroiled, and intrigueſome, that in all probability the Election was not likely to ſucceed in ſeveral months.

On the firſt of *September* the Cardinals *Retz*, *Buglion*, *Bonſi* and *Maldachino* entred the *Conclave*, accompanied with a numerous train, and a concourſe of people, crying out after them for a ſpeedy Election, and for a *Roſpiglioſi* or an *Odeſcalchi*. Thus were the people as well without, as the Cardinals within inclined generally to the election of *Odeſcalchi*; with whom alſo the *French* Cardinals agreed, and by additional Votes ſtrengthned his Party: but in regard his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty carried at that time a mighty ſtroak in the *Conclave*, as he did in all the Councils of *Europe*, it was judged convenient not to conclude on this important matter without the aſſent and approbation of his Majeſty. To this end Couriers or Poſts were expreſly diſpatched with advices, and informations from the *French* Cardinals; and in the mean time, (as is very obſervable, and never before practiſed) the whole *Conclave* fixed their Eyes on *Odeſcalchi* as the perſon deſigned and marked out for this eminent employment; and from that very time paid him the ſame honour duty and reverence, as if he had been already promoted to the Papal Throne.

And now the Cardinals had little more to do than to quarrel amongſt themſelves; *Colonna* and *Maldachino* had a Diſpute with very ſharp words, reviling each other, with Fool, and Beaſt; but the moſt conſiderable was that between Cardinal *Howard* of *Norfolk*, and the Cardinal *Buglion*; for that the latter had not returned the Viſit, which the former had made to him; in excuſe for which *Buglion* freely declared, that it was the Kings poſitive Command to him, not to acknowledge the Cardinals of the laſt promotion, either by Ceremony, or Complement, or any Treaty, or Negotiation whatſoever. But the Cardinal of *Norfolk* would not allow of this Excuſe, inſiſting on the King's good will, and gracious favours towards his Perſon; when in his journey, and paſſage through *France* from *London* to *Rome*, he was pleaſed to honour him with his own Coaches, and to give Orders to the Governours of all Cities, through which he was to paſs, to treat him with a reſpect due to the Character of a Cardinal, and to the dignity of his Illuſtrious Family; the which favours his Majeſty would never have beſtowed in that gracious manner, had his intentions been different, and not inclined to allow him for a Cardinal, under which notion he was treated, and received in all parts of *France*. But this was not the private or ſingle caſe of the Cardinal of *Norfolk*, for all that promotion was concerned in the quarrel, which the *Conclave* conſidering as dangerous, and ſuch as might cauſe great diſorder and confuſion, they immediately diſpatched a Letter to his Majeſty ſubſcribed alſo by the *French* Cardinals, beſeeching his Majeſty that he would be pleaſed to order his Ambaſſadour the Duke *de Eſtreé*, the *French* Cardinals, and all his other Officers and Miniſters at *Rome*, to own and viſit the ſix Cardinals of the laſt promotion, created by the late Pope *Clement* X. which would avoid many inconveniences and diſturbances in the *Conclave*, to the great prejudice and hinderance of that important Affair now incumbent upon them. Until anſwers were returned to the foregoing diſpatches the *Conclave*, not to be idle, employed themſelves upon ſeveral Scrutinies in favour of *Maſſini*, *Cerri*, *Fachinetti* and others, but none of them ariſing to that number of Votes, which on all occaſions appeared for *Odeſcalchi*, all other trials became faint and inſignificant. So that the general inclination of the *Conclave* ſeemed in deſpight of *Altieri*, and the endeavours of his Adherents to the contrary, to be entirely fixed and ſetled on the perſon of *Odeſcalchi*; to whoſe promotion nothing was now wanting, but the concurrence and approbation of his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty.

In ſhort, on the 19th of *September* the Courier returned from *France*, of which ſecret intelligence was given to the *French* Cardinals in the *Conclave*, and that the anſwers were highly in favour of *Odeſcalchi*, as a perſon grateful, and in every kind acceptable to his Majeſty. On the twentieth the Duke *d' Eſtreé*, Ambaſſadour of *France*, was introduced into the *Conclave*, where he preſented the Letters from his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty to the College of Cardinals in anſwer to thoſe lately ſent by them: and then in a moſt eloquent Speech he repreſented unto them the neceſſity there was to proceed to the ſpeedy election of a Pope, whoſe Government was now more than neceſſary to the Chriſtian World. That in the College of Cardinals there was ſo many perſons of Vertue, that they had an ample Field for their Election; yet conſidering, that the Vicar of Chriſt was to be of the number of thoſe, who did tranſcend in all the Vertues and Graces of Religion, and ſuch as would reform the abuſes and corruptions, which to the ſcandal of the Chriſtian Church, were crept into the Court of *Rome*: he would recommend unto them one who was of a publick Spirit, ſincere and diſintereſted, deciphering unto them thereby, though without naming, the very perſon of *Odeſcalchi*: and having praiſed and applauded Cardinal *Barberino*, and giving God thanks for the great piety and zeal of that Man, he retired, leaving the *Conclave* to their free Election, in which now there appeared no farther difficulty, in regard the major part had received a plenary inſpiration from *France*.

And here on this occaſion it would be no impertinent Query, whether the Court at *Paris* was not as much concerned in the choice of a Pope, as the *Conclave* was at *Rome*. But this will not be ſtrange or new; for *Hadrian* the firſt, and *Leo* the third gave a power to approve, or diſallow the election of the Pope unto *Charles* the Great; and *Leo* the eighth confirmed the ſame priviledge to *Otho*: And when the Church hath been powerful, it hath made Emperours; and when Emperours have been victorious and proſperous, they have made Popes.

But to proceed, that Evening a great number of Cardinals went to the Cell of *Odeſcalchi*, and kiſſed his hand, which was the irretractable aſſurance and engagement of their Votes for him: but the good man ſhewed ſome unwillingneſs and reluctance thereunto, deſiring them with tears in his Eyes to chooſe ſome other Subject more able to ſupport the great load and burden of ſo mighty a weight. Howſoever being at length overcome by the Arguments and Perſwaſions of his Friends, he conſented thereunto, upon condition, that they would aſſent unto, and ſubſcribe certain Articles for reformation of the Eccleſiaſtical Government which he then propoſed to them; which the Cardinals approving, a great part of them ſubſcribed that Night, and ſwore to maintain them, as did the others in like manner the day following. And now *Altieri* finding that it was to no purpoſe to ſtruggle and contend longer; and fearing leſt the Election ſhould be made without him, he became the moſt forward of any to make the Scrutiny, being followed by all his

Creatures, who were nineteen in number; ſo then the Choice was immediately determined by the Acceſs; and on the 21th of *September* 1676. the whole *Conclave* with once Voice and Mind declared *Odeſcalchi* to be the Pope of *Rome*, the Vicar of Chriſt, and the true and undoubted Succeſſor of St. *Peter*: and then Cardinal *Barberino* who was the Dean of the College, was the firſt by the duty of his place to lead the others to Adoration; and was afterwards followed by all, one after the other, according to their Offices and Seniority.

The Adoration being performed, he was veſted in his Pontifical Habit, taking the name of *Innocent* XI. in remembrance of his Benefactor, who had aſſumed him into the Degree and Order of Cardinals; after which, he was conducted into the Chappel with the accuſtomed Ceremonies, and being placed by the Altar, he there received the ſecond Adoration, which being finiſhed, the Maſter of Ceremonies demanded, whether it was the pleaſure of His Holineſs that the Nobility then attending without, deſirous to kiſs his Feet, ſhould be admitted in to pay the duty and devotion which they owed to the Succeſſor of St. *Peter*, which being granted, the Queen of *Sweden* was the firſt introduced to perform that Complement; after her followed the Ambaſſadours and Miniſters of the Crowned Heads, after whom came the Princes, Prelates and Nobles, all which having kiſſed the Feet of the Pope, teſtified the exceſs of joy they conceived for the promotion of a Perſon ſo worthy of all honour unto the Papal Chair.

After which a Door was opened over the Great *Portico* of St. *Peter's* Church, into which the Maſter of the Ceremonies led the way, carrying a Croſs before the Pope and Cardinals, which the people with great reverence adored at a diſtance, and the Cardinal *Maldachino*, who was firſt Deacon, preſenting the Pope before them, pronounced with a loud Voice theſe following words after the accuſtomed manner, *Annuncio Vobis gaudium magnum: habemus Pontificem Eminentiſſimum, & Reverendiſſimum Dominum, Cardinalem Benedictum Odeſcalcum, qui ſibi Nomen impoſuit Innocentius* XI. It is not to be expreſſed with what joy the common people, and the City entertained the news of the Pope's advancement; the Bells were rung, and all the Cannon of the City were fired, and the Soldiers diſcharged many Vollies of their Muſquets with ſounds of Drums and Trumpets; and ſeized on the Coach and Horſes, and the very Coachman's Cloak, which they challenged to themſelves for their fees. During which Solemnity, and whilſt *Te Deum* was ſung, no alteration appeared in the countenance of the Pope, unleſs it were a more than uſual penſiveneſs and mortification, not diſcovering the leaſt vanity, or loftineſs in his looks, which other Popes were never able to conceal; but bleſſed, and croſſed the People with a flood of tears which fell from his Eyes. Some perſons may weep for joy, but tears from what paſſion ſoever they proceed, are always the Indications of a ſoft and gentle temper, when men of a more hardy nature, evidence the ſwellings and elevations of their Heart by a proud and a ſupercilious countenance.

Benedictus Odeſcalchi was born at *Como*, a City in the Dukedom of *Milan*, in the year of our Lord 1611. his Father was called *Livio*, and his Mother *Paula Caſtella*, and both of Noble and Patrician Families in *Como*, with a Revenue of thirty thouſand Crowns a year, belonging to the Houſe of *Odeſcalchi*. In his youth he was educated by the *Jeſuits*, and by them inſtructed in Grammar and humane learning. He afterwards ſtudied the Civil and the Canon Laws, partly at *Rome*, and partly at *Naples*; and though he was never eſteemed for a Polemical Divine, yet he had the reputation of one who knew the World well, and practiſed in the nature of Mankind and the Art of Government. In the time of *Urban* VIII. he was made one of the *Prothonotaries* of the Apoſtolical Chamber, and afterwards was created Preſident of the ſame: he was alſo made Chief Commiſſary for gathering the Taxes and Duties ariſing in the Province of *Marchio*, which were laid on the people at the time of Wars in *Italy*. After this buſineſs was over, he was conſtituted Governour of *Macerata*, and the Province thereunto adjoyning. By *Innocent* X. he was made one of the Clarks of his Chamber, and not long after in the year 1645. he was aſſumed into the College of Cardinals, having the Deaconry beſtowed on him of the Saints *Coſma* and *Damianus*: and being afterwards tranſlated into the Order of Prieſts, he had the Title conferred on him of St. *Onuphrius*, and by the ſame *Innocent* ſent to *Ferrara* with the Title of Legat: in which Office having acquitted himſelf with great honour, he was made Biſhop of *Novareſe*, where he reſided for ſome years, but afterwards was removed from thence at his own deſire, by reaſon of the heavineſs of the Air in that place, which did not well agree with the conſtitution of his body. Being at *Rome* he was employed in many Affairs of the Church, and called to ſerve in divers Congregations of Cardinals: on which occaſion he was made Protectour of ſeveral Colleges and Monaſteries; and in all he behaved himſelf with ſingular prudence, modeſty and vertue, until he was aſſumed into the Supreme degree of the Papal Throne: to which having (as we have ſaid) been elected on the 21th of *September*, he was Crowned with the uſual Ceremonies on the 4th of *October* following.

After the Election and Coronation of the Pope were finiſhed, the *French* Cardinals prepared for their return to *France*; but before their departure they paid their Viſits to the Cardinals of the laſt promotion, who had not hitherto been acknowledged by the King, for the reaſons before mentioned. But thoſe quarrels being now vaniſhed by the change of Affairs in the Court of *Rome*, the Viſits were returned, and a good correſpondence again renewed and eſtabliſhed.

So ſoon as this Pope had taken the Government of Affairs into his own hands, he began a reformation in ſeveral particulars: and in the firſt place conſidering that *Nepotiſm*, or the advancement of Nephews both in Riches and Power was odious to the People, and of great damage to the Church; of which examples had been given by thoſe Popes, who having been over tender and indulgent to their own Families, had ſuffered their Nephews to blemiſh the honour of the Church by Simoniacal corruptions, and by their Avarice and Ambition to exhauſt the Treaſure of the Apoſtolical Chamber; this Pope therefore (as we ſay) conſidering theſe matters, reſolved to give the firſt Example hereof in his own Family; and accordingly refuſed to receive his Nephew *Don Livio* into any part of the Government, forbidding him to receive, or return Viſits under the Notion of Nephew to the Pope. But that this Nephew might not complain of the ſeverity of his Uncle, or judge his

Eſtate nothing improved by this fortune of his Family, he relinquiſhed unto him all his Temporal Eſtate, amounting unto thirty thouſand Crowns of yearly Revenue.

But in regard that Princes are not able to ſupport the whole burthen of their Government on their own ſhoulders: the Pope, not having reſpect to his own Relations, but to ſuch as were fit and adequate to theſe great undertakings; made choice of Cardinal *Cibo* for his Secretary of State, being a perſon endued with a great and generous Soul, and a clear underſtanding, zealous for the welfare of the Church, and dexterous in the management of Publick Affairs. This beginning gave encouragement to good and wiſe Men, who conceived hopes by an inſtance of this nature, that Vertue and Wiſdom would return again into uſe and faſhion: and the Court of *Rome* in general rejoiced, to find themſelves freed from the pride, inſolence, and covetouſneſs of Nephews. Howſoever the Family of *Altieri* was continued in their Military Employments, and others confirmed in their reſpective Offices; but becauſe War was extrinſecal, and not the Trade or Profeſſion of the Church, which was now in peace with all the World, he retrenched the Pay or Penſion belonging to the Officers of the Papal Army; cauſing them to remain ſatisfied with the Name and Dignity, without the Benefit or Profits of their reſpective Commands; which proved of great eaſe to the Apoſtolical Chamber. Howſoever knowing that Authority is not to be maintained without Power and Force; and reſolving to become Maſter of *Rome*, he encreaſed the number of his Archers; in the liſting of which, he took not every fellow that came to offer his ſervice, but ſuch only as were ſober Men, not given to quarrels, or to commit ſuch inſolences as the *Corſi*, who were the cauſe of great diſturbance to *Alexander* VII. Howſoever on the other ſide, not to receive inſults from Ambaſſadours or other Repreſentatives of Kings, or Nobles and Princes of *Rome*, in prejudice to Juſtice, and the rules of ſevere Goverment, he abſolutely denied to them the priviledge to protect Miſcreants and Criminals within the Precincts, or certain limits aſſigned by themſelves to be Sanctuaries for all Villains and Murtherers, that ſhould fly for refuge to thoſe quarters: and in purſuance of this reſolution, he ſeized a certain famous *Bandito* at *Riccia*, where the Prince and Princeſs *Chigi* have a Seat and poſſeſſion; the which was admitted without any oppoſition made thereunto.

Farther, the Pope confirmed the ſeventeen Articles which were ſigned (as we have ſaid) in the *Conclave* by all the Cardinals; being ſuch as for the moſt part tended to a Reformation of manners, and to an amendment of thoſe abuſes which were crept into the Church. And farther, to demonſtrate his great zeal for the welfare and reputation of the Papal See, he openly reproved the vanity of thoſe Cardinals, who pleaſed themſelves with fine Coaches, and rich Liveries, giving them to underſtand, the incongruity there was between thoſe worldly Gayeties, and the profeſſion of thoſe who had devoted themſelves to that ſober and ſerious life, which becomes the gravity of a good and a holy Prelat. And in regard that in times of preceding Popes, many unworthy perſons by the force of Money and Simonaical dealings, were ariſen to Epiſcopal Dignities: the Pope appointed four Cardinals, and four other Clergy-men, to examine the lives and manners of ſuch, who aſpired to the degree of Biſhops; ordering them to admit none thereunto, ſuſpected, or in the leaſt blemiſhed with an ill fame, or taxed of ignorance, as well as a debauched converſation. And in order to a thorough reformation, the Pope drove out all the Courteſans and Strumpets from *Rome*, and perſons openly ſcandalous and diſſolute in their manners; and amongſt others, he baniſhed a Gentleman of quality into *Germany*, for having made a violent attempt on the chaſtity of a Lady of approved Modeſty: All Houſes for play, or gaming for Money, were put down, and all lewd and unlawful Aſſemblies were forbidden. And in regard the Barons of *Rome* had by the priviledge of their Nobility, raiſed themſelves above the reach of their Creditors. The Pope ordered Cardinal *Cibo* to make a narrow inſpection thereinto, and to pay the Debts of the Barons out of the Money of the Chamber; by which means theſe Debts being aſſigned over to the Chamber, a payment of the ſame might more eaſily be forced by vigour of that Law, which enforces the proceedings of the *Exchequer*.

To theſe Acts of Juſtice, the Pope added one of great generoſity towards *Chriſtina* Queen of *Sweden*, who having by the late Wars loſt the greateſt part of her Revenue in *Sweden*; in recompence thereof he allowed unto her, a Penſion of twelve thouſand Crowns a year. And having laid theſe firſt foundations and beginnings of good Government: the Pope's next work, was to labour in the promotion of a Peace between the two Crowns, and all other Chriſtian Princes; that laying aſide all differences and quarrels amongſt themſelves, they might unite their forces for the good and welfare of Chriſtendom, againſt the common Enemy, the *Turk*: to this effect he wrote Letters to the Emperour, and to the Kings of *France* and *Spain*, exhorting them to Peace and Concord, of which he offered himſelf to be the Mediator, and to be aſſiſtant thereunto in Perſon, provided that the place appointed for the Treaty, were aſſigned in ſome City of the Catholick Religion: On the other ſide, he animated the King of *Poland* to continue his War againſt the *Turk*, and not lay down his Arms until he had recovered *Kaminiec*, and revenged himſelf of the Affront put upon him by the late *Viſier Kuperlee*, who had taken Contribution under the notion of Tribute from his City of *Leopolis*; and to enable and encourage him thereunto, he remitted to him the ſum of fifty thouſand Crowns.

An. 1677. But whilſt the Pope laboured for Peace abroad, he was not able to keep himſelf, nor his Court free from diſturbances at home: for the Marquis *del Carpio* who reſided at *Rome* in quality of Ambaſſadour for his Catholick Majeſty, being informed of the great want his Maſter had of Soldiers to ſend into *Sicily*, adventured to make ſome levies of men in *Rome*, pretending that the *French* on ſome occaſions, had practiſed the like; but the People not being ignorant of the bad pay, and ill treatment of the *Spaniards*, came very ſlowly to enroll their names: and moreover, a report was rumoured abroad, that many people were wanting, who were hid in Cellars by the *Spaniards*, till an opportunity preſented to tranſport them into *Sicily*. This report, whether it were true or falſe, yet ſerved the turn of ſuch who delighted in Troubles and Seditions; for being entertained with ſome malice in the minds of the people, they conceived ſuch an abhorrence of the *Spaniſh* Nation, that they affronted them in all places, which ſometimes proceeded to fightings,

ings,and ſcuffles,in which ſeveral were killed and wounded; but the *Spaniards* being few in number and the weaker ſide,were at laſt forced to keep within their quarters, for fear of the multitude. The Pope to ſuppreſs theſe tumults,and prevent diſorders, puniſhed ſeveral perſons, who were guilty of the Riots, with juſt ſeverity; but the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadour not contented herewith, pretended ſome higher and more exemplary ſatisfaction;at which the Pope grew angry,declaring that the Ambaſſadour was in arrear to him, and obliged rather to give than to demand ſatisfaction: upon which the Ambaſſadour to ſhew his reſentment, refuſed to appear at Court, and at the ſame time the Vice-King of *Naples*, without any cauſe or reaſon, denied Audience to the Pope's Nuntio at that City. This manner of proceeding was highly diſpleaſing to *Innocent*, whoſe anger was the more encreaſed on the ſcore of other abuſes introduced into *Rome* by pretended priviledges of forreign Miniſters; who aſſumed to themſelves a juriſdiction, (as we have ſaid) within certain limits, which they chalked out to themſelves, to make a Sanctuary, or place of refuge for Criminals and Out-lawed Perſons. And conſidering by how much more the Franchiſes and Priviledges of publick Repreſentatives encreaſed in *Rome*, by ſo much was the Pope's Authority diminiſhed and abated, he therefore grievouſly took occaſion to complain in the Conſiſtory of the ill uſe, which Ambaſſadours and other Miniſters made of their priviledges; to the great ſcandal and reproach of the Government; that he had long expected that the Princes themſelves ſhould have renounced ſuch irregular pretences, and out of love to juſtice have become inſtrumental to bring wicked men to puniſhment, rather than to be Protectours of Aſſaſſinates and Out-lawed perſons; but ſeeing that his expectations and patience was all in vain; he was now reſolved for diſcharge of his Duty and Conſcience, to provide for the ſecurity of his own People. Howſoever he could not without ſome ſad reflections on the indiſcreet and unreaſonable importunities of ſome forreign Miniſters, find himſelf conſtrained to take ſuch meaſures in his Affairs, as would prove diſpleaſing to them; for that it was unreaſonable, whilſt his mind was employed in cares and contrivances for the propagation of the Faith, for reformation of the Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline, for the eſtabliſhment of Peace and Concord between Chriſtian Princes, and other matters conducing to the good and benefit of the Commonweal of all Chriſtendom; he ſhould be diſturbed and interrupted in theſe proceedings by the very Miniſters of thoſe Princes, for whoſe welfare, and for the peace of whoſe People, he was in continual care and labour; wherefore not being able longer to ſupport ſuch impertinencies; he was reſolved to become Maſter in *Rome*, as other Princes were in their own Dominions; and in purſuance thereof he Publiſhed an Edict, forbidding all perſons whatſoever to affix the Arms of any great perſonage over his Shop; it being a mark, that that Family had renounced the Authority of their Prince the Pope, and put themſelves under the Protection of that Ambaſſadour, or Prince, or Nobleman, whoſe Arms they had affixed over the Portal of the Houſe, or entrance to the Shop. This reſolute Act much ſurprized the minds of thoſe whom it concerned, and eſpecially the *Spaniards*, who made a falſe judgment of the temper of *Odeſcalchi*; conceiving him to be ſo wary and cautious in his actions, that he would never engulf himſelf in the ſame circumſtances of Affairs, which had given a diſturbance to his Predeceſſour, during the whole courſe of his Pontificate. Howſoever the Pope continuing firm and conſtant in his reſolution, the *Spaniards* remitted ſomething of the ſtiffneſs of their Pride; for conſidering that the circumſtances of their preſent Affairs, would not admit of a diſunion with *Rome*, the Ambaſſadour deſired to have Audience of the Pope; the which was refuſed to him, until the Nuntio had received Audience at *Naples*; and that the King of *Spain* by ſpecial Letters under his own hand, had deſired that his Ambaſſadour might be heard on ſome emergencies, and urgent occaſions; upon which, and at the perſwaſions of the Cardinals *Barberino*, and *Cibo*, the Ambaſſadour was admitted to Audience; which having produced a true and right underſtanding between both Parties, the Ambaſſadour departed with ample ſatisfaction acquieſcing in the late proceedings of the Court.

The Thorns which have ever been moſt prickly and pungent in the ſides of Popes, were their Conteſts with Kings or crowned Heads, or when the Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical Authority contended with the Temporal, as may appear by that notable Controverſie between *Paul* V. and the Republick of *Venice*, and in other matters of ſmaller moment between Kings and Popes, both before and ſince that time. The point of the *Regalia*, hath been an antient Diſpute for many Ages in *France*; the which was in ſome ſort determined in the year 1431. by the Council of *Baſil*, where it was ordained that Cathedral Churches and others ſhould have a freedom of Elections: This afterwards was confirmed by a great Aſſembly of *French* Clergy gathered at *Bourges*, and addreſſed to the King *Charles* the 7th. deſiring him to undertake the protection of that Council: At that time the Council of *Baſil* ſent to the King an abſtract of their Decrees, conſiſting of thirty ſeven Articles, by which Decennial Councils, and the Authority of Councils above the Pope, was eſtabliſhed, *&c.* together with an abſtract of the Decree they had made concerning Elections. All which were conſidered at that Aſſembly, where the Dauphin, and the chief Nobility of *France* were preſent, and by their advice, the famous Pragmatick Sanction was made in confirmation of thoſe Articles; which was obſerved during the Reign of *Charles* the 7th. but *Lewis* the eleventh eſteeming it the Intereſt of *France* to maintain a good correſpondence with the Papacy, was inclinable to wave the advantage of this Sanction.

An. 1478. In the beginning of the Reign of *Charles* the 8th. an Aſſembly of States being called at *Tours*, the third Eſtate petitioned, that the Pragmatick Sanction might be again renewed and confirmed; calling thoſe who were preferred by the Court to be Court-Biſhops; ſo it was again put into force and practice, much to the diſpleaſure of the Pope; notwithſtanding which, *Lewis* the 12th. made a perpetual Edict in confirmation of it. *Francis* the firſt ſucceeding to the Crown, and having vaſt deſigns in *Italy*, thought it not his intereſt to ſtand at a diſtance with *An.* 1515. the Pope; and therefore was willing to treat with him about the aboliſtion of the Pragmatick Sanction on ſuch terms, as might reconcile his own Prerogative with the Pope's Authority. This deſign occaſioned an Interview between the King and the Pope at *Bologna*, and thence the Concordat was produced, which was afterwards put into the form of a Bull, and confirmed by the Council at *Lateran*. The ſum of which was this: *The King and the Pope agreed to divide the Promotions to all Prelacies between them; for the King was to nominate the Perſon within ſix months after a vacancy, and the Pope was to confirm him if no lawful exception did lie againſt him.* All which is ſo fully and learnedly treated by Dr. *Burnet* in his Hiſtory of the Regale or Rights of Princes in diſpoſing of Eccleſiaſtical Benefices and Church Lands, and deduced down to this preſent time; that there is no place left for our enlargement thereupon, unleſs we add ſome few and ſhort remarks on the behaviour of this *Innocent* XI. towards his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty on this occaſion. It is manifeſt by Hiſtory, that when the Emperours flouriſhed with great Power and Riches, they created Popes, or at leaſt they had the confirmation of them: and when Emperours were low, and were oppreſſed by adverſe Fortune, the Popes forced them to be beholding to the extenſive reach of the Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, which by ſome ſide-wind, or far-fetched notion of Spiritual Concernment, reduced almoſt every thing under cogniſance of the Church.

Dr. *Burnet.*

According to this natural courſe of worldly affairs, *Lewis* the 14th, the moſt Chriſtian King being high and proſperous in his fortune, reſolved to put a period to the proceſs for the Regale which had continued near thirty years, and at laſt in the year *1673.* came to a concluſion, and Declaration was made; “That the King had “Right of Regale in all his Dominions without diſtinction, except “only in thoſe Sees, that had purchaſed their exemption from it: And “therefore all Biſhops who had not yet regiſtred their Oaths of Fidelity “in the Chambers of Accounts, were required to do it, and to take out “a Writ upon it for cloſing the Regale, otherwiſe their Biſhopricks were “ſtill to be looked on, as under it. All the Biſhops of *France* unwilling to incur the diſpleaſure of their ſucceſsful Monarch, ſubmitted; excepting the Biſhops of *Alet* and *Pamiers*.

It was now under the Reign of *Clement* X. an old doting Pope, who having his parts and underſtanding enfeebled by old Age, he committed the management of the Pontificate to the ſole direction of Cardinal *Paluzzi*, afterwards adopted by the Pope, and called *Altieri*; a Perſon, who from his firſt beginning was diſtaſteful to the Court of *France*, and not until this time well reconciled unto it, as we have at large declared in the foregoing Life. This was the time, I ſay, when open Claim to the Regale was renewed in favour of the King, and when the Pope himſelf was ſcarce able to diſtinguiſh his Intereſt; and *Altieri* was ſo thwarted and oppoſed by the Court of *France*, that he had enough to do to conſerve his own perſonal Intereſt, much leſs to vindicate and contend for the Rights of the Church in a caſe ſo litigious as this.

In *January 1676.* the King's Right was claimed in diſpoſal of the Deanry of *Alet*; the Diſpute of which was left unto the Biſhop to maintain, for the Pope being under the foregoing Circumſtances, took little cogniſance thereof, either by himſelf or his Cardinal. But this good Pope dying in the month of *Auguſt* next following, the Controverſie fell to the lot of *Innocent* the 11th to maintain, and to diſpute in oppoſition to the eldeſt Son of the Church. This quarrel was increaſed by a Conteſt at *Pamiers*; where one *Paucet* was provided in Right of the Regale to be Arch-deacon of *Pamiers*, but was rejected by the Biſhop and Chapter: howſoever the Regale prevailed, for the Arch-Biſhop of

Tholouſe was on their ſide, and gave Judgment in favour of the Regaliſt. But on the contrary, the Biſhop of *Pamiers* acquieſced not with this Sentence, but made his appeal to the Pope, who was now engaged in the Controverſie, and the matter lodged in his hands.

“ Wherefore the Pope in the year 1678. wrote his Brief to the *French* King, and in ſoft and yet preſſing terms complained of the Innovaſions made on the Liberties of the Church, and the Authority of the Council of *Lions*: and after ſeveral Arguments to perſwade him to deſiſt from this Enterpriſe; he concludes, that he cannot forget thoſe Popes his Predeceſſors, who upon the like occaſions had endured long, and great afflictions.

But theſe Allegations ſatisfied not the King, who pretended that the Rights of the Regale were inherent in the Crown, and had been enjoyed by his Anceſtors, and by them derived down to himſelf. The Pope on the other ſide affirmed, that the Secular Powers had no right to things ſacred, but as it was derived to them by the Authority of the Church; and that the Church had not granted any ſuch Right, having expreſly limited it by the Council of *Lions*, which hath now been obſerved four hundred years.

This Controverſie ſeemed to lie dormant from *September* 1678. to *December* 1679. until it was again revived, and ſtirred in the See of *Pamiers*, in that point which concerned the vacant Benefices and the mean Profits; for the King's Officers ſeized on them likewiſe, ſo that the good old Biſhop had nothing to live on the laſt twenty months of his life, but the Oblations and Charities of his People. On this occaſion the Pope wrote to the Cardinal *d' Eſtreé* to interpoſe in this Affair, as being a Perſon more than ordinarily concerned in the dignity of the Apoſtolical See. To which the Cardinal made anſwer in the ſtyle of a Court-Biſhop, extolling the King's merit, his zeal for the Faith, and reſpect for the Apoſtolical Chair; what he had done for the ſuppreſſion of *Calviniſm*, and Hereſie within his Dominions, and how bravely he had defended the Chriſtian Cauſe againſt the *Turks*: and in fine, he laid down the dangers which would follow, if any diſſention ſhould ariſe between the King and the Church.

At length Cardinal *d' Eſtreé* was diſpatched to *Rome* with a Letter of Credence, and Orders to treat immediately with the Pope himſelf; but it ſeems his Negotiations produced little alteration; for the Pope continued ſteddy and conſtant to his Principles. And on the other ſide, the Parliament of *Paris* became as zealous for the King's Right and Authority; for which the King's Attorney General pleading, made little eſteem of the Pope's Cenſures which were paſſed for Obedience to the King's Orders “ The Church, ſaid he, may indeed have an Authority to puniſh Men for Hereſie and an ill Life: but the World was now too well enlightned, not to diſcern that the Thunders of *Rome* had been for ſeveral Ages vainly employed for extending its Authority beyond all due bounds; the limits of which were to be found in the Canons of the Church, by which the Pope, as well as others ought to govern himſelf. And therefore deſired that the laſt Brief ſent by the Pope might be ſuppreſſed, which was accordingly done by a Judgment of the Court of Parliament on the laſt of *March* 1681.

And to give a farther Authority to this Judgment, an Extraordinary Aſſembly was called of all the Biſhops then reſiding at *Paris*; where were preſent ſix Arch-Biſhops, twenty ſix Biſhops, and ſix that were named to Biſhopricks, to whom the Agents of the Clergy repreſented the Invaſions made on the Liberties of the *Gallican* Church by the Pope's Brieſs, both in general concerning the Regale, and in particular in the Affair at *Pamiers*, and the Nunneries, and concerning a Book of *Gerbais* a Dr. of *Sorbonne*, *De Cauſis Majoribus*, which were equally contrary both to Church and State, to the Canons and the *Concordate*, by which the Pope upon a ſimple Complaint without any Appeal, did by the plenitude of his Power, judge at *Rome* concerning the validity of Elections, and the Authority of Arch-Biſhops and Primats, *&c.* The iſſue of which Aſſembly was this: They aſſerted the Authority of National Churches for judging of all matters both of Faith and Manners: and in the concluſion agreed to make an Addreſs to the King, praying him to give leave either for a National Council, or an Aſſembly General: the latter of which was conſented unto by his Majeſty, and ſummoned to meet the firſt of *October* following. Thus far concerning the Regale we have extracted in ſhort by way of Epitome from the Treatiſe of Dr. *Burnet* on that Subject. Now as to what followed. The Aſſembly met at the time appointed; at the opening of which, the Biſhop of *Meaux* preached a moſt Eloquent Sermon with much applauſe: After which the point of the Regale was put to the queſtion, and argued learnedly on both ſides; and in concluſion the greateſt part were of Opinion, that the Right unto the Regalia were inherent in the Crown, and that the pretenſions thereunto were Uſurpations by the Church, as appears by this following Declaration.

The Declaration of the Clergy of the Gallican *Church concerning the Eccleſiaſtical Power.*

We the Arch-Biſhops and Biſhops, Repreſentatives of the *Gallican* Church, being by command of his Majeſty aſſembled at *Paris*, together with others of the Clergy in the ſame manner delegated with us, after long debate, and mature conſideration have thought fit to declare, and determine theſe ſeveral particulars following:

1.

Firſt, That a Power is given by God to St. *Peter* and his Succeſſors, who are the Vicars of Chriſt, and to the Church, to order and regulate all Spiritual matters; but not to intermeddle in Civil or Temporal matters, according to that ſaying of our Lord, *My Kingdom is not of this World.* And again, *Give unto Caſar the things that are Caſars, and unto God the things which are Gods.* And agreeable hereunto is that of the Apoſtle, *Let every Soul be ſubject to the higher powers, for there is no power but of God; the powers which are, are ordained of God, and whoſoever reſiſteth the power, reſiſteth the Ordinance of God:* Wherefore Kings and Princes by the Law of God are not liable in Temporal matters to the Eccleſiaſtical Power, nor by the Power of the Keys can they be Depoſed either directly or indirectly, or can their Subjects be abſolved from their Fealty and Obedience to them, or from their Oaths of Allegiance; the which we confirm and determine, as principles not only neceſſary for conſervation of the publick peace and tranquility, but for the better government of the Church; and as truths agreeable to the Word of God, the tradition of the Fathers, and to the example and practice of Saints and Holy Men.

2.

Secondly, That the Apoſtolical See, and the Succeſſors of St. *Peter*, who are the Vicars of Chriſt, have a full and plenary power in all Spiritual matters; in ſuch manner as is given to them by the Holy Oecumenical Synod of *Conſtance*, which is received by the Apoſtolical See; and in ſuch manner as hath been confirmed by the conſtant uſe and practiſe of the Popes of *Rome* and the whole Church, and obſerved by the Religion of the *Gallican* Church, and decreed by the Authority of the General Councils in the fourth and fifth Seſſions. And the *Gallican* Church doth condemn the Opinions of thoſe, who eſteeming thoſe Decrees of doubtful Authority, do endeavour to reſtrain them to certain times of Schiſm, and invalidate the preſent power thereof.

3.

Thirdly, Hence it is, that the 3d exerciſe of the Apoſtolical power is to be regulated by Canons eſtabliſhed by the Spirit of God, and thereunto all the World is to bear reſpect and Reverence. Likewiſe the Rules, Manners and Inſtitutions received by the Kingdom and Church of *France*, as alſo the cuſtoms of our Forefathers are to remain unalterable: the which is a clear demonſtration of the greatneſs of the Apoſtolical See, that the Statutes and Ordinances thereof are eſtabliſhed and confirmed by, and with the conſent of the Churches.

4.

Fourthly, In queſtions of Faith the Pope is Chief Judge, and his Decrees extend themſelves to the Churches in general, and to every one in particular; nor can his judgment be repealed, unleſs by the conſent and determination of the Univerſal Church.

5.

Fifthly, Theſe particulars received from the Doctrine of our Forefathers, we have by the inſpiration of the Holy Ghoſt Decreed to ſend unto all the *Gallican* Churches, and the Biſhops preſiding over them. And we do all concur in the ſame ſence and meaning of them.

Subſcribed by Arch Biſhops, and Biſhops, and Clergy as before related and regiſtred, as required by the King's Attorney General, *March* 23. 1682.

An. 1681. The Pope, who during his Reign had not as yet aſſumed any to the degree of Cardinal to ſupply the places of thoſe who were dead: the College was diminiſhed twenty ſix in their number; which when the Pope conſidered, and that old Men were every day dying and falling off, he was inſpired to repleniſh the places with a ſupply of ſixteen new Cardinals, which were theſe that follow.

1. *John Baptiſta Spinola* of ſixty ſeven years of Age, a *Genoeſe*, who was Governour of *Rome*, and Secretary of the Congregation of *Regulars*,

2. *Anthony Pignatelli*, a *Napolitan* of ſixty ſix years of age, Biſhop of *Lecca*, and Maſter of the Pope's Chamber.

3. *Stephen Branchacio*, a *Napolitan* of ſixty years of Age.

4. *Stephen Agoſtini*, of ſixty five years of age, Arch-Biſhop of *Heraclea*, and Datary to the Pope.

5. *Francis Bonviſi*, of *Lucca*, aged ſixty three years, Arch-Biſhop of *Theſſalonica*, and Nuntio reſiding at *Vienna*.

6. *Savo Mellini*, a *Roman*, aged thirty ſeven years, Arch-Biſhop of *Cæſarea*, and Nuntio in *Spain*.

7. *Frederick Viſconti*, of *Milan*, aged ſixty three, Auditor of the *Rota*, and Arch-Biſhop of *Milan*.

8, *Marco Gallio*, of *Como*, aged ſixty nine years, Biſhop of *Rimini*, and Vice-gerent of *Rome*.

9. *Flaminio del Tayo*, of *Siena*, aged eighty years, Auditor of the *Rota*, and Chief Penitentiary.

10. *Raymond Capizucchi*, a *Roman*, aged ſixty nine years, Maſter of the Palace.

11. *John Baptiſta de Luca*, a *Napolitan*, aged ſixty four years, Auditor to the Pope.

12. *Laurentio Brancati*, of *Laurea* in *Calabria*, aged ſixty four years, Library keeper of the *Vatican*.

13. *Urbano Lacchetti*, of *Florence*, aged forty four years, Auditor of the Apoſtolical Chamber.

14. *John Franciſco Ginetti*, a *Roman*, aged ſixty years, Treaſurer of the Apoſtolical Chamber.

15. *Benedict Pamfilio*, aged twenty eight years, Grand Prior of *Rome*.

16. *Michael Angelo Ricci*, aged ſixty five years, Secretary of the Congregation of Indulgencies.

The other ten Hats remaining, were kept in the hand of the Pope for a reſerve wherewith to gratifie Kings and Princes, whenſoever they ſhould deſire to have ſome of their own Creatures preferred to that Dignity. All the ſixteen preceding Cardinals took their promotion very patiently, and without much reluctancy; excepting *Tayo* who was eighty years of age, and *Ricci*: both which made ſome modeſt refuſals, as unworthy of that great honour, but the Pope inſtantly conſtraining them, they with humility ſubmitted. And here it is obſervable, that this Pope is not very forward to create Cardinals, but rather inclinable to leſſen and reduce their number, which of late years hath increaſed to that degree, as to become a burthen to the Church.

But to return unto the Aſſembly at *Paris*, which after many Debates and deliberate Conſultations held upon the point of the Regale: At length by the Arch-biſhop of *Paris* they offered theſe ſeveral Propoſals by way of accommodation between his Majeſty and the Pope.

That thoſe on whom the King in Right of his Regality beſtows any Eccleſiaſtical Benefices, ſhall in the vacancy of the Sees have their approbation, and Miſſion from the Vicars General.

That the Chapters which are in poſſeſſion of beſtowing Prebends, and other Dignities, ſhall continue to diſpoſe of them, whilſt the See is vacant

That in the Churches where the collation is alternative between the Biſhops and the Chapters, the ſame ſhall be obſerved during the vacancy of the Sees that are under the Regality, the King having the turn which the Biſhop ſhould have had.

That where the Biſhops diſpoſe of the Prebends jointly with the Chapter; the King ſhall in the vacancy of the See appoint a Commiſſioner, who ſhall have the ſame power and place in the Chapter, as the Biſhop had.

Howſoever, no farther proceedings were made in this matter, becauſe the Pope appeared reſolute to maintain his priviledge and juriſdiction: and the Cardinal *d' Eſtrée* who had ever ſince the beginning of this year been at *Rome* to try and bend the mind of the Pope, gave little hopes to prevail with him: wherefore it was thought fit that the Controverſie ſhould remain in ſuſpence, rather than be ſarther preſſed to the breach of that amity, which interceded between the common Father, and the eldeſt Son of his Church: ſo the King holds his Right, and the Pope hath not relinquiſhed his Claim, but remains ſtill in a capacity to re-aſſume the ſame, when either he, or his Succeſſours are ſtrengthened with circumſtances of time, and force to make good their Demands.

It is known to all the World, that in the Church of *Rome*, vain and ſuperſtitious Opinions have been ever growing for divers Centuries of years; ſome of the moſt wild and extravagant of which, certain Popes have been weeding out; but with that negligence and in-attention, that where one hath been deſtroyed, twenty have ariſen. Hereof the preſent Pope *Innocent* the XI. being ſenſible, (who is certainly one of the moſt underſtanding, and moſt worthy, of thoſe that ever ſate in the Papal Chair) hath ſuppreſſed an Office, called, *The Office of the Immaculate Conception of the moſt Holy Virgin,* approved by *Paul* V. who granted, *unto whoſoever ſhould devoutly recite the ſame, an hundred days Indulgence,* as may appear by his Bull of *July* 10th. 1615. Printed at *Milan.* This Office he entirely aboliſhed, Decreeing, "That no perſon of what Or-"der, Degree, or Condition ſoever, ſhould dare to keep, read, Print, or "cauſe to be Printed the ſaid Book; and requiring that whoſoever "ſhould have the ſaid Office in his keeping, ſhould forthwith deliver "the ſame to the Ordinary, or to the Inquiſitors of the place. The which Decree was Publiſhed, *Feb.* 19. 1678.

Moreover, this Pope in his Wiſdom hath ſuppreſſed a multitude of idle and fooliſh Indulgences, which many cheating Prieſts carried into remote Countries, and raiſed Money thereupon from the ignorant people. Of which kind were thoſe Indulgences granted by *John* II. and *Sixtus* IV. to thoſe who ſhould recite the Prayer of Charity of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

By *Eugenius* the 3d. to the Revelation made to St. *Bernard,* of a blow or ſtroak on the ſhoulder of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

By *John* the 22th. to thoſe, who kiſs the meaſure of the Soal of the foot of the Bleſſed Virgin.

By *Leo* the 10th. to thoſe who wear the Cord of St. *Francis,* Printed firſt at *Rome,* and then at *Milan, Anno* 1665.

To them that ſhall ſay the Angelical Prayer, when the Clock ſtrikes, to the Image of the Immaculate Conception of the Virgin *Mary,* Printed, in a Circle with the Moon under her feet.

By *Paul* V. and *Gregory* XV. to thoſe who ſay, *Bleſſed be the Holy Sacrament.*

Likewiſe thoſe Indulgences for fourſcore thouſand years, copied out of the Antient Table, which is ſaid to be kept in the *Lateran* Church, to thoſe, who ſay this truly pious Prayer, *O God, who for the Redemption of the World*, &c.

Beſides which, this Pope ſuppreſſed a multitude of other Indulgences as vain and idle as the foregoing: and declared, "That though according to the Doctrine of the Council of *Trent*, the uſe of Indulgences may be uſeful to the people, and doth Anathematize ſuch as ſhall deny, that there is not a power in the Church to grant them, yet he is deſirous that the Doctrine thereof be rightly underſtood, and a moderation uſed in the granting of them, leſt by a too great facility or eaſineſs, the diſcipline of the Church be corrupted and enfeebled.

This Doctrine of Indulgences hath been a prickly and a contentious point, and the Original Cauſe of the preſent diviſions and ſeparations amongſt Chriſtians; for from thence *Luther* began his quarrel, and took the firſt riſe and ground for a Reformation; and indeed the matter on the part of the Church of *Rome* was ſo ſcandalous and abuſive, that the very common people in all their ignorance were able to diſcover the fraud and Cheat that was in them: ſo that the Wiſe and Learned Men at the Council of *Trent* knowing that this Doctrine was not ſolid and would not hold water, they ſlightly touched thereupon; and though it was the chief matter, for which that Council was aſſembled; yet nothing was farther determined therein, *than only that Indulgences be uſed with ſuch moderation, as was approved by the Antient Cuſtom of the Church of God.*

Now it is a moſt certain and an undeniable truth, that Indulgences were never in uſe with any Nation of the Eaſtern Churches either in the Primitive times or afterwards. And indeed neither were they in practice in the Weſtern Churches, from times of Ancient date, that is, from before the time of *Urban* II, which was about the year of Chriſt, 1095. and then alſo they were not very common, and granted only to remit the rigour and ſeverity of Penance enjoined by the Confeſſor: which reaſons this Pope *Innocent* XI. wiſely conſidering, and the many abuſes of this Doctrine, did attempt the means to regulate the extravagance thereof.

Beſides the ſuppreſſion of theſe Indulgences, this Pope condemned ſixty five Propoſitions about Caſes of Morality, which were ſcandalous, and divers of them maintained by the ſubtile diſtinctions of the *Jeſuits*, the preamble to which condemnation ſaith, that this preſent *Innocent* XI. in purſuance of the ſame work commenced by his Predeceſſor *Alexander* VII. did by and with the advice, concurrence and aſſiſtance of the moſt Reverend and Eminent, the Cardinals, as alſo of the Inquiſitors General, and many other Divines, gather and weed out from ſeveral Books, Theſes, and other Papers lately written, a great number of ſcandalous and pernicious Doctrines in Morality, tending to the debauchery of Manners, and to the encouragement of a looſe and a diſſolute life in Mankind.

But in nothing more hath the Vertue, Piety and care of this Pope been conſpicuous, than in thoſe large Aſſiſtances and Contributions he made to the Emperour, whereby to enable him to carry forward his War againſt the *Turk*, who is the formidable Enemy of all Chriſtendom. Nor did he only furniſh him with great ſums of Money at divers times, but invited and inſtantly exhorted the King of *Poland* to undertake that Heroick Act, whereby the City of *Vienna* was delivered, and all *Auſtria* reſcued from deſolation, and from being a prey to the *Mahometan* Arms: And farther, his Negotiations prevailed to engage the *Venetians* in the ſame War, and to complicate a triple League between theſe Princes.

Thus have we ſeen, that during the Reign of this Pope, nothing hath been acted by him, but what was deſigned to the common Good of his Church and State: for having laid aſide all the private conſiderations of his Nephews, and Family, his cares have been diverted towards the Common Good, ſo that being freed from the importunities of a Cardinal Patron, and the unſatiable Avarice of Favourites, and other dependencies; his Government is much leſs ſubject to *Paſquils*, or libellous Cenſures; but on the contrary applauded and honoured by all wiſe and good Men: ſo that continuing in this ſteady courſe through the whole remainder of his Reign, he may be eſteemed and numbered in the rank and degree of the good Popes.

F I N I S.

AN INDEX

Of the Principal matters in the Lives of the POPES: written by *B. Platina.*

For the Names of the Popes themſelves, ſee the Table at the beginning of the Book.

A

A*Bimelech*, Chieftain of the *Saracens*, 121, 124.
Abraxas of *Baſilides* the Heretick, 16.
Acephali Hereticks, 77.
Adauctus a pious *Roman*, 45.
Adelphonſus, King of *Auſtria* and *Gallicia*, 149.
Adrian, Emperour, his qualities and works, 15, 10, 17, 19.
S. *Ægidius*, a *Grecian*, 133.
Ælius Pertinax, Emperour, 25.
Æmilianus, Emperour, 37.
Æneas Sylvius, created Pope, 389.
Ætius, a *Roman* General, 75.
Agarens, who they are, 108.
Agrippa Caſtor, a learned Chriſtian, 16.
Aiſprandus gets the Kingdom of *Lombardy*, 129.
Aiſtulphus King of the *Lombards*, 137, 139, his death, 140.
Alalchis Duke of *Trent*, 120.
Alaric King of the *Goths* takes *Rome*, 70.
Albericus, Marqueſs of *Tuſcany*, 180.
Albert Duke of *Auſtria* choſen Emperour, 363.
Alboinus, 94.
Aldeprandus King of the *Lombards*, 137.
Alexander Severus Emperour, 31.
Alexander Biſhop of *Cappadocia*, 35.
Alexius Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, his treachery to the Chriſtian Forces, 217.
Allocephalis, a nick-name for *Ravenna*, 116.
Almeric King of *Jeruſalem*, 242.
Amadeus Duke of *Savoy* ſet up for an Anti-Pope, ſubmits, 377.
Amalaſunta, Queen of *Italy*, 87.
S. *Ambroſe* choſen Biſhop of *Milan*, 66. appears to the Emperour *Conrade*, 198.
Amoreus, a King of the *Saracens*, 135.
Anaſtaſius gets the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, 130.
Anaſtaſius a Heretick, 133.
Anaſtaſius the Library-keeper, 171.
Anatolius Biſhop of *Laodicea*, 42.
Andrew Earl of *Bremen*, 251.
Andrew King of *Hungary*, 258.
Angelot, a Cardinal, murther'd, 369.
Antioch beſieged by the Chriſtians, 219, taken 220.
Anti-Pope; See *Schiſm*.
Antonius Pius, Emperour, his Virtues, 18.
Ant. Verus Emperour, 20, 21.
Antonius Heliogabalus, his vicious life, 30.
Antony the Hermit, 54.
S. *Antony* Canoniz'd, 262.
Apelles, a Heretick, 25.
Apollinaris, Biſhop of *Hierapolis*, 21. Another Biſhop of *Laodicea*, his Heretical Opinion, 69.

Apollonius a learned Chriſtian martyr'd, 24.
Aquila tranſlated the Old Teſtament, 17.
Aquileia deſtroy'd, 76.
Arator, a Chriſtian Poet, 88.
Arcadius Emperour, 70.
Arioaldus K. of the *Lombards*, 106.
Ariſtides a Philoſopher, converted to Chriſtianity, 15.
Arithpertus King of the *Lombards*, 127. loſes his Kingdom and life, 129.
Arius the Heretick, 51, 56. his death, 57.
Arnulphus Emperour, 173. Another of that name, Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, 221. Another, a great Preacher, murther'd by the procurement of ſome Prieſts, 234.
Aſterius, an *Arian* Philoſopher, 59.
Athanaſius, Biſhop of *Alexandria*, 56.
Athaulphus King of the *Goths*, 71.
Athimus, a King of the *Saracens*, 134.
Attila King of the *Hunns* invades *Illyricum*, 73. fights the joint Forces of the *Romans*, *Goths*, &c. 75.
Adoneus Biſhop of *Roan*, 122.
S. *Auguſtin* Biſhop of *Hippo*, 71. his body tranſlated, 135.
Avignon taken by the *Saracens*, 134. re-taken, 135.
Aurelianus Emperour, 41.
Aurelius Commodus Emperour, 20, 23, 24.

B

Babylas the Martyr, his Body remov'd, 62.
Baianus Prince of the *Bulgarians*, 188.
Balahac a King of the *Perſians*, 232.
Baldequan King of *Damaſcus*, 233.
Baldus a great Lawyer, 320.
Baldwin of *Bulloign*, 217. gets a Signiory in *Aſia*, 218. made King of *Jeruſalem*, 224. taken Priſoner, 232.
Baldwin Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, 265.
Baltaſar Coſſa, Anti-Pope, reconcil'd to the Pope, 352.
Banderesii, what, 320.
Bardeſanes a Chriſtian Writer, 25.
S. *Barnabas* the Apoſtle, 5.
S. *Bartholomew*, his Body tranſlated, 158, 190.
Baruti, taken by the Turks and raſed, 291.
Baſil the learned Biſhop of *Cæſarea*, 67.
Baſilides the Heretick, his death, 16.
Baſſianus, See *Caracalla*.
Bede, the Venerable, when he lived, 126.
Beliſarius, 88. comes into *Italy*, 91. beats *Vitiges* from *Rome*, and takes him Priſoner, 92.
S. *Benedict*, 87. his body tranſlated, 137.
Berengarius I. King of *Italy*, 173. made Emperour, 178. the ſecond of that name, 181. the third, 184.
Berengarius of *Tours*, a learned Man, 190. condemned for a Heretick, 203. recants 205.
Bernard, Abbat of *Clairvaux*, 227.
Bernardus King of *Italy*, 154.
Beryllus, a Heretick, 32.
Biſhop not to be ordain'd by fewer than three Biſhops, 13, 22. to be attended by ſeven Deacons when Preaching, 14. the accuſation of a Layman not to be admitted againſt him, *ibid.* when cited by the See Apoſtolick to be receiv'd again by his Flock without a Certificate, 17. not to be cenſur'd by the Metropolitan without conſent of his fellow-Biſhops, 19.
Biſhops of *Rome* allow'd to wear a golden Diadem, 51.
Blaſtus, a Heretick, 25.
Blood of Chriſt, a Relique at *Mantua*, 151.
Bocca di Porco, a name not fit for a Pope, 160.
Bodies of Saints tranſlated, 163.
Boemund, a great General, engaged in the Holy War, 217. wounded, 220, dies, 225.

Boetius and *Symmachus* impriſon'd, 85.
Bohemians receive the Chriſtian faith, 182.
Boleſlaus King of *Bohemia*, 183.
Bonacoſſi Lords of *Mantua*, 300.
Boniface Biſhop of *Mentz*, 133. Another of that name Earl of *Corſica*, 156. Another of *Monferrat*, 255.
S. *Bridget*, a *Scotch* Virgin, 87.
Britain ſurrendred to the Emperour *Claudius*, 3. converted to the faith, by whom, 24.
Bulgarians, their application to the See of *Rome*, 170.

C

Cucanus King of the *Avares*, 144, 126.
Caſarea Queen of *Perſia* turns Chriſtian, 113.
Caligula Emperour, why ſo called, 2. his Vices, *ibid.*
Bened. *Cajetan* Pope, 294. How he cajoled his Predeceſſor, 295. His Speech to a *Gibelline*, 295. taken by the *French*, 298.
John Cajetan made Pope, 283.
Callinicus Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, 127.
Candia ſold to the *Venetians*, 225.
Candidus a Chriſtian Writer, 27.
Canutus King of *England* comes to *Rome*, 199.
Capocio a *Roman* Citizen, 263.
Capua beſieged by the *Saracens*, 293.
Caracalla Emperour, his Vices, 28.
Caroloman King of *Auſtraſia*, 137.
Carrareſi Lords of *Padua*, 300.
Carthage, the Decrees of the Council there confirm'd, 71. taken by the *Vandals*, 73, 74.
Carus Emperour, 43.
Caſſiodorus the Monk, 88.
Caſtruccio Governour of *Luca*, 307.
Cataphrygians, Hereticks, 23.
Catharine of *Siena* canoniz'd, 401.
S. *Cecily* marty'd, 31.
Cerinthus his Heretical Opinions, 39.
Charles Martel King of *France*, 131. defeats the *Saracens*, 132. and the *Burgundians*, *Friſons* and *Viſigoths*, 134. his death, 137.
Charlemagne King of *France*, 142. routs *Deſiderius* the *Lombard*, 146. goes to *Rome*, *ibid.* his Donation to the Church, 147. his Victories over the *Saxons* and *Spaniards*, *ibid.* and *Gaſcons*, 148. other his Succeſſes, *ibid.* goes again to *Rome*, 150. Crowned Emperour, 151. dies, 152. the extent of his Empire, *ibid.*
Charles the *Bald*, 158. declar'd Emperour, 170.
Charles III. declar'd Emperour, 171.
Charles Earl of *Anjou*, 274. gets the Kingdom of *Naples*, 276.
Cincius a potent, but ſeditious Citizen of *Rome*, 188, 228.
S. *Clara* Canoniz'd, 272.
Claudius Emperour, 3. Author of the ſame name, 40.
Clemens conſecrated Biſhop of St. *Peter*. 6.
Clemens Alexandrinus, 23.
Clement an Anti-Pope, 215.
Clergy ordered not to let their hair or beards grow long, 13, 22. to be admitted into holy Orders in publick only, *ibid.*
Clodoveus the firſt Chriſtian King of the *French*, 80. baniſhes the *Arians*, 84.
Clugny, the Monaſtery, when, and by whom built, 172.
Colonneſes perſecuted bitterly, 295. out of favour again, 358.
Comets appearing, 115, 120, 131, 296.
Commodus, See *Aurelius*.
Communion-Office at firſt plain, how enlarg'd, 17.
Conrade of *Monferrat* aſſaſſinated, 253.
Conrade of *Schwaben* Emperour, 198.
Conſecration of Churches ordain'd, 19.
Conſtantine Emperor, 48, 50, his munificence, 52, 53. baptiz'd, 55.

Conſtantine, Son of *Heraclitus*, 110. routed by the *Bulgarians*, 117. Another of the ſame name Leprous, 148.
Conſtantine an Anti-Pope, 142.
Conſtantius Cæſar, 44, Emperour, 47. Another of the ſame name, 58, 59. Another who ſpoils *Rome*, 114.
Conſtitutions, See *Decrees.*
Corporal to be made of fine Linnen only, 17.
Council of *Nice*, 51. Of *Conſtantinople*, 117, 169. Of *Lions*, 280. Of *Conſtance*, 345. Of *Baſil*, 362. General *Council*, where, and when holden, 118.
Court of *Rome* when remov'd to *France*, 310. returns to *Rome*, 322.
Creſcentius Conſul of *Rome*, 192.
Holy *Croſs* found by *Helena Conſtantine*'s Mother, 48. brought from *Jeruſalem* to *Conſtantinople*, 108.
Cunigunda Empreſs, 197.
Cup in the Holy Sacrament, Orders of *Pius* I. if any be ſpilt, 20, 21.
S. *Cyprian* Biſhop of *Carthage*, 36. martry'd, 37.
S. *Cyril* Biſhop of *Jeruſalem*, 69.

D

J. Damaſcenus, a learned Divine, 81.
Damiata beſieged by the Chriſtians, and retaken, 258. delivered, 259.
Dantes Aligerius a learned Man, 297.
Deacons appointed to attend a Biſhop when he Preaches, 14.
Decius Emperour, 35.
Decrees of *Anacletus*, 13. *Evariſtus*, 14. *Alexander* I. 16. *Sixtus* I. 17. *Teleſphorus*, 18. *Hyginus*, 19. *Pius* I. 20. *Anicetus*, 22. *Soter*, 23. *Eleutherius*, 24. *Victor* I. 28. *Zephyrius*, 27. *Caliſtus* I. 28. *Anterus*, 33. *Stephen* I. 38. *Felix*, 41. *Eutychianus*, 42. *Caius*, 43. *Miltiades*, 50. Of the *Nicene* Council, 52. Of *Sylveſter*, ibid. Of *Damaſus*, 63. *Siricius*, 65. *Anaſtaſius*, 67. *Zoſimus*, 71. *Boniface* I. 72. *Stephen* III. 144. *Gregory* III. 136. *Nicolas* I. 168.
Deſiderius King of the *Lombards*, 140. takes ſeveral Cities in *Italy*, 145. is overthrown by *Charlemagne*, 146
Devil in the ſhape of *Moſes* beguiles the *Jews*, 74.
Didymus a learned Chriſtian, 65.
Dionyſius Biſhop of *Corinth*, 23.
Dioſcorus the Heretick, 77.
Diſciples of Chriſt, their ſeveral Provinces, 1.
Dominic, 256. Founder of the Order of Preaching Friers, 257. Canoniz'd, 262.
Domitian the Emperour, his Character, 11.
Donation of *Charlemagne* to the Church, 147. Of *Maude* the Counteſs, 226.
Donatus, a Sectary, 59.
Dorothea, a Virgin, her Chaſtity, 50.
Dorotheus, a learned Chriſtian, 42.
Dulcinus and *Margaret*, Hereticks put to death, 300.

E

Eaſter obſerv'd always on a Sunday, upon what occaſion, 20, 25.
Ebionites, Hereticks, 52.
Ecelino, Tyrant of *Padua*, 270.
Edeſſa taken by the Turks, 236.
Edmund Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, Canoniz'd, 268.
Edward, Prince of *England*, his Voyage to the Holy Land, 278. ſtab'd, *ibid.* being King, he mediates between the Kings of *France* and *Aragon*, 289. War between him and the *French* King, 291. obtains a great Sea-Victory over 'em, 311. Another by Land, 315. beſieges *Paris*, 318.
Egeſippus, a learned Chriſtian Writer, 22, 83.
Elizabeth Daughter to the King of *Hungary* Canoniz'd, 262.
Eliſha's Body found, 80.
Ember-Weeks, when firſt inſtituted, 28, 31.

Emmanuel II. Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, his treachery to the Chriſtians, 237.
Encratitæ, Hereticks, 21
Engliſh firſt make themſelves Maſters of Great *Britain*, 73.
Ephrem Syrus, a learned Writer, 67.
Epiphanius Biſhop of *Salamine*, *ib.*
Epiphanius Biſhop of *Pavia*, 82.
Eſte the Family, Lords of *Ferrara* and *Modena*, 300. 28 of that Houſe hang'd at once, 302. drive the Church Forces out of *Ferrara*, 307.
Ethelwolph King of *England*, 164.
Evagrius a learned Chriſtian, 71.
Eudocia the Catholick, 80.
Eunomius a Heretick, 61.
Euſebius, ſurnam'd *Pamphilus*, and why, 48.
Euſebius Emiſſenus, 58.
Euſebius of *Cremona*, 76.
Eutropius Epitomizer of the *Roman* Hiſtory, 73.
Eutyches the Heretick, 76.
Exarchate of *Ravenna* extinguiſh'd, 140.

F

Faſt not to be obſerv'd on a Sunday, 50.
Fauſtus Biſhop, 83.
Flavianus Biſhop, 77.
Florence made a free City, 289.
Florianus Emperour, 42.
Florinus a Heretick, 25.
Forlimpopoli ſack'd and ruin'd, 114.
S. *Francis* Founder of the Order of Friers *Minors*, 257. Canoniz'd, 262.
Frangipani a *Roman* Family, 229.
Fratricelli a holy Brotherhood, 297.
Frederic Emperour, engag'd in the Holy War, 251.
Frederic II. his Conteſts with the Pope, 260. *Frederic* III. comes to *Rome*. 378.
Friſcus, of the Houſe of *Eſte*, murthers his Father, 301.
Fucinus, the Lake, drein'd, 3.
Fulgentius Biſhop, 83.
Fulk, Earl of *Anjou*, King of *Jeruſalem*, 236.

G

Galba Emperour, his good and bad qualities, 7.
Galerius Emperour, 47.
Gallienus Emperour, 37.
Gallus Emperour, *ibid.*
Gaſcons ſubdu'd by *Charlemagne*, 148.
Gemblours the Monaſtery, when, and by whom built, 182.
Gennadius Biſhop, 78.
Genoeſes routed by the *Venetians*, 271. a mortal hatred between 'em, 281, 326. defeat the *Piſans*, 289. invade *Cyprus*, 321.
Genſeric King of the *Vandals*, 74. routed, 78.
Germanus Biſhop, 82.
Geta Emperour ſlain, 28.
Gibellines and *Guelphs*, 264.
Gildo, a General of the Empire, ſets up for himſelf, 70.
Giſulphus D. of *Benevent*, 125. Another, 202.
Gloria Patri when added to the ends of Pſalms, 63.
Godfathers and *Godmothers*, a Decree concerning them, 19.
Godfrey King of *Jeruſalem*, 221. defeats the Army of the King of *Babylon*, *ibid.*
Gordianus Emperour, 34.
Goths driven from *Rome*, 91
Granada in *Spain* ſeiz'd by the *Saracens*, 126.
Gratianus Emperour, 66.
Gratian who compil'd the Decrees, 257.
Gregorius Baticus a learned Biſhop, 65.
Gregory Nazianzen, 67.
Gregory, Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, a *Monothelite*, 117.
S. *Gregory*, his body tranſlated, 159.

Grimoaldus, Duke of *Beneventum*, 112, 114. makes himſelf King of the *Lombards*, 115. his death, *ib.* Another, 150.
Guelphs and *Gibellines*, when firſt ſo diſtinguiſh'd, 264.
Guido Bonatus an Aſtrologer, 286.
Guy of *Luſignan* King of *Jeruſalem*, 248. taken Priſoner, 249.

H

Hannibali and *Vrſini* two factions at *Rome*, 285.
Hawkwood an Engliſh-man, 319. the Pope's General, 320. in ſeveral Services, 321, 331, 332.
Haydo Governour of *Aquitain* rebels, 155.
Haydo Brother to Venerable *Bede*, 126.
Helcheſaites Hereticks, 35.
Helena, Mother to the Emperour *Conſtantine*, finds the Holy Croſs, 48.
Henry Duke of *Bavaria*, Emperour, 196.
Henry II. Son of *Conrade*, Emperour, 199.
Henry III. Emperour, 206. depriv'd by Pope *Gregory*, 209.
Henry IV. Emperour, 225.
Henry of *Luxemburg* invades *Italy*, 302. is Crowned at *Rome*, 303.
Henry King of *England* meets the Pope, 235. ſatisfies him about the murther of *Thomas Becket*, 245.
Henry, Son of *Richard* of *Cromwel* murther'd, 279.
Heraclea taken by the Chriſtians, 218.
Heraclius Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, 248.
Heraclius a learned Chriſtian, 27.
Heraclius Emperour, 104. his Actions. 105.
Hermes a Chriſtian Writer, 20.
Hilarius Biſhop of *Poictiers*, 65.
Hilarius Biſhop of *Arles*, 76.
Hildebrand, a Monk, 202. made Pope, 207.
Hilminoline a *Saracen* General, 256.
Holy-Water, See *Water*,
Holy-War, See *War*.
Honorius Emperour, 70.
Hoſt ordered to be made of Unlevened Bread only, 16.
Hubert a Biſhop in *Bretagne*, 122.
Hugo de Sancto Victore, 233.
Hungari, a *Scythian* People, 173. come into *Italy*, 180, 181.
Hunns, a *Scythian* Nation, 173, 179.
John Hus burnt for a Heretick, 346.
Hymns added to the Divine Service, 17, 18, 125,

I

James, ſurnamed *Juſtus*, his Acts and martyrdom, 4.
S. *Januarius* his Body tranſlated, 156.
Iconium taken by the Chriſtians, 218.
S. *Jerom* the learned *Presbyter*, 69. his death, 72.
Jerom of *Prague* burnt for a Heretick. 346.
Jeruſalem taken by *Titus*, 9. permitted by *Julian* the Apoſtate to be rebuilt, 62. taken by the *Saracens*, 108. recover'd by the Chriſtians, 221. retaken by the *Saracens*, 250. diſmantled, 258.
S. *Ignatius* his martyrdom. 13.
Images in Churches ordered by the Emperour to be pulled down, 132, 141. Decrees thereupon at *Rome*, 144. at *Nice*. 148.
Inventio Crucis. 48.
Inundations of the *Tiber*, 131, 149, 167.
Joan Queen of *Naples* kills her Husband, 313.
Pope *Joan*, 165.
S. *John* the Apoſtle baniſh'd into *Patmos*, 12.
John Biſhop of *Bergamo*, 121
John Arch-Biſhop of *Ravenna* ſubmits to the Pope, 168.

John King of *Jeruſalem*, 258.
Joppa taken by the Chriſtians, 222.
Joſephus, when he liv'd, 8.
Jovinian Emperour, 63.
Irene Empreſs of *Conſtantinople*, 149.
Iſidore Biſhop of *Sevil*, 105.
Jubilee firſt kept every fiftieth year, 296.
Julian, ſurnam'd the *Apoſtate*, 59. 61. his death. 62.
Julianus Emperour, 65.
Julius Africanus an eminent Writer, 33.
Juſtin Martyr, when he liv'd, and his Works, 18.
Juſtin Emperour, 86.
Juſtinian I. Emperour, 88. his Actions, 89.
Juſtinian II. terrifies the *Saracens* into ſubmiſſion, 121. breaks faith with them, 123. is depoſed and his Noſe cut off, 124. reſtored, 126. his ſeverity upon his Enemies, 127. and ingratitude to his Friend, 128. ſlain, 129.
Juvencus a noble Chriſtian, 56.

L

Lactantius Firmianus when he lived; 48.
Lambert a holy Martyr, 125.
Latinianus a Biſhop, 102.
Lent firſt Inſtituted, 28.
Leo Emperour, 78, 79. his Edict againſt Images, 132.
S. *Leo*, his Body tranſlated, 125.
Leodegarius Biſhop of *Autun*, 122.
Leontius makes himſelf Emperour, 124. depoſed, *ibid.*
Lewis ſurnamed the *Godly*, Emperour, 153.
Lewis King of *Bavaria*, 154.
Lewis Son of *Lotharius*, 100. Crown'd King of *Italy*, 161. being Emperour, comes to *Rome*, 167.
Lewis King of *France*, engages in the Holy War. 267.
Lewis of the *French* Blood Royal, canoniz'd, 295.
Libanius the Orator, 71.
Licinius Emperour, 49.
Lions, a Council there, 280.
Lombards, their coming into *Italy*, 96.
Lotharingia [*Lorain*] why ſo called, 160.
Lotharius Emperour, 154, 160.
Lucca made a free City, 289. taken by the *Germans*, and ſold, 308.
Lucifer Biſhop of *Cagliari*, 59.
Lucina, a *Roman* Lady, leaves the Church her Heir, 47.
Lucius King of *Britain*, 24.
Lucius an Heretical Biſhop, violent againſt the Orthodox, 64.
Luithprandis King of the *Lombards*, 129. takes *Ravenna*, 131. beſieges *Rome*, 134. his Character, 136.
Luke the Evangeliſt, 10.
Lupus Duke of *Friuli*, 114.

M

Macarus Biſhop of *Antioch*, a *Monothelite*, 117.
Macedonius a Heretick, 61.
Mahomet the Impoſtor, 105.
Malchion, an eloquent *Presbyter*, 38.
Manes a *Perſian* Impoſtor, 41.
Manfred Prince of *Tarento*, 267. made King of *Sicily*, 270. is kill'd, 275.
Manichees their Hereſie, 42.
Marcion the Heretick, 19.
S. *Mark* employ'd by S. *Peter* to write his Goſpel, 4. his Body tranſlated to *Venice*, 158.
Marriages, a Decree concerning them, 23.
S. *Martin*'s body works a Miracle, 172.
Martyrs, their Acts ordain'd to be written and preſerv'd, 33, 34. *Maſſes* yearly to be celebrated upon their account, 41.

Mathild or *Maud*, a noble Counteſs, 204. her death, 206.
Mauritius Emperour, 98.
Maxentius Emperour 48, 49.
Maximian Herculeus Emperour, 44, 48. *Maximian Galerius Cæſar*, 44. Emperour, 47.
Maximine Emperour, 33, 49.
Maximus the Tyrant, 77. a learned Chriſtian of that name, 127.
Melito Biſhop of *Sardis*, 20.
Merlin the *Britiſh* Prophet, 79.
Meſſalina Wife to the Emperour *Claudius* put to death for Adultery. 3.
Mezelindis a Woman of incomparable chaſtity, 116.
Milain taken by *Sforza*, 377.
Minutius Felix, when he liv'd, 31.
Modeſtus a Chriſtian Writer, 25.
Monothelites, a Council held concerning them, 117.
Montaniſts Hereticks, 21.
Guido Monfert murthers *Henry* Son of *Richard* of *Cornwall*, 279.
Simon Montfort, 256.
Moors invade *Calabria*, 176.

N

Names of Popes when firſt chang'd, 160.
Naples taken by *Beliſarius*, 91. beſieg'd, 253.
Narſes the Eunuch, 94.
Nepos a Heretick, 39.
Nero Emperour, his Vices, 6. kills himſelf, 7.
Nerva Cocceius Emperour, his character, 12.
Neſtorius his Hereſie, 74.
Nice in *Bithynia*, a Council there, 51.
Nicetas an Eunuch, Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, 141.
S. *Nicolas* his Body tranſlated, 216.
Nicopolis taken by the Chriſtians, 218.
Nogaret a *French* Cavalier, 298.
Normans have a part of *France* allow'd them to inhabit, 172.
Novatianus his Hereſie, 34. oppoſed, by whom, 36.

O

Odoacer King of the *Heruli* invades *Italy*, 79.
Olympius the Exarch, 111.
Optatus Milevitanus, when he liv'd, 66.
Holy *Orders* not to be conferr'd at once, 65. nor upon maim'd or infirm perſons, 67. nor Foreiners without Teſtimonials, *ibid.* nor on Servants, 71. nor Debtors, 72.
Organs introduced firſt into the Church, 114.
Origen a learned Chriſtian, 27, 29, 32.
Oſtia the Harbour there, by whom made, 3.
Otho Emperour, an Account of his life, 7.
Otho II. Emperour, 184. conquers *Boleſlaus* King of *Bohemia*, 183. comes to *Rome*, 185.
Otho Abbat of *Clugny*, 207.
Otho Duke of *Burgundy* engag'd in the Holy War. 251.

P

Palæologus [*Michael*] aſſumes the Empire of *Conſtantinople*, 272.
Pallavicino, a powerful *Gibelline*, 270, 273.
Pamphilus a learned *Presbyter*, 43.
Pantheon given to the Chriſtians, 103.
Papias Biſhop of *Hierapolis*, 14.
Papias the *Lombard Gloſſographer*, 257.
Paris, when, and by whom made an Univerſity, 152.
Pariſhes, *Rome* when firſt ſo divided, 14.
Paſchal an Arch-deacon, endeavours

vours to make himſelf Pope, 123. convict of Sorcery, *ibid*
S. *Paul* the Apoſtle, 5. beheaded, 6
Paulus Samoſatenus a Heretick, 26, 40
Paulus Diaconus when he liv'd, 147
Pelagius his Hereſie condemn'd, 69
Pepin Duke of *Auſtraſia*, 124. King of *France*, 137, 141. his Death, 142
Pepin Son of *Charlemagne*, 149, 150. dies at *Milan*, 151
Pepin Son of *Lewis* the Godly, King of *Aquitain*, 154
Perinus King of *Cyprus*, 321
Pertheris King of the *Lombards*, 120
Peter an Hermite, excites the Chriſtian Princes to the Holy War, 217
Peter Abelardus a learned Man, 238
Peter of *Verona* canoniz'd, 268
Peter King of *Aragon*, 287. his Kingdom given away by the Pope, 288
Peter Luna Anti-Pope, 338. his death, 356
Petrarcha a learned Man, 311
S. *Petronilla*, S. *Peter*'s Daughter, her Body tranſlated, 141
S. *Philip* the Apoſtle, 10
Philip the Emperour, 34
Philip King of *France*, engag'd in the Holy War, 251. returns home, 253
Philippicus Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, 129. depoſed, and his Eyes put out, 130
Philo Judæus, when he liv'd, 8
Phocas Emperour, 101
Photinus a learned Biſhop, 18. Another of that name, an *Ebionite*, 65
Photinians, Hereticks condemn'd 52
Picenninus a great Commander, 361
Piſans overthrown by the *Venetians*, 253. by the *Genoeſes*, 289. their City taken by the *Florentines*, 339
Piſtoia taken and raſed, 301
Plague through *Europe*, 98
Platina the Author of this Hiſtory, impriſon'd by Pope *Paul* II. 403 and tortur'd, 410
Pliny the ſecond, occaſions a perſecution of the Chriſtians to be ſtay'd, 13
Polycarp, Biſhop of *Smyrna*, 19
Polycrates, Biſhop of *Epheſus*, 26
Poſthumus, an Uſurper in *Gallia*, 38
Pragmatic Sanction, 396
Presbyters, not to be ordain'd but by a Biſhop, 65
Primates, who are to bear that Title, 22
Priſcian the Grammarian, 88
Priſcilla a *Roman* Matron, builds a Cemetery, 47
Priſcillian his Hereſie condemn'd 65
Probus Emperour, 43
Projectus a Biſhop martyr'd, 116
Ptolemais beſieged by the Chriſtians, 251. taken, 253. retaken by the Infidels, 292

Q

Quadrageſimal Faſt, See *Lent*.
Quadratus a learned Diſciple, 14
Quintilian's Works, when and by whom found out, 382
Quintillus Emperour, 40
Quotiliani, Hereticks, 25

R

Rabanus a learned Monk, 159
Racherius Biſhop of *Verona*, 182
Rachis King of the *Lombards*, 137
Ravenna, the Church there reconcil'd to that of *Rome*, 116 the pride of their Biſhops repreſs'd by the Pope, 119. the City taken by the *Lombards*, 131. the Exarchate extinguiſh'd, 140

Raymund a Commander in the holy War, 217. a Debate between him and *Boemund*, 220
Reggio ſurpriſed by treachery, 320
Remigius Biſhop of *Rhemes*, 80
Rhodes taken by the *Turks*, 111
Rhomoaldus Duke of *Beneventum*, 119
Richard King of *England* engaged in the holy War, 251. ſtrikes up a Peace with *Saladine*, 253. is taken Priſoner, 254
Robert Guiſcardi, a great General, 202. defeats the *Saracens*, 203. and *Greeks*, 204
Rodulphus King of *Burgundy*, 181. of *Habſpurg*, Emperour, 280. ſells to ſeveral Cities of *Italy* their freedom, 289
Rome ſack'd by the *Vandals* 77 beſieg'd by the *Lombards*, 96
Rothifredus King of the *Normans* 171
Ruffinus a *Roman* General, 70

S

Sabellius, Author of the *Sabellian* Hereſie, 39. his Hereſie condemn'd, 52
Sabinus King of the *Bulgarians*, 141
Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, various Decrees about it, 16, 17, 20, 27, 125
Saladine King of *Egypt*, 246. defeats the Chriſtians, 249. takes *Jeruſalem*, 250. his Death and Character, 254
Sanctuaries in Churches firſt Ordain'd, 106
Saracens, why ſo call'd, 107. their inſult upon *Libya* and *Affrica*, 121, 124. and *Spain*, 126. and *France*, 131. defeated, 132. enter *France* again, 134. and are again overthown, 135. Shipwrack'd, 162. routed by Pope *Leo*, 163. driven out of *Italy*, 171. returning again they are vanquiſh'd by Pope *John* XI. 180. driven out of *Sicily*, 196. beſiege *Toledo*, 256. are allow'd a City in *Italy* to inhabit, 264. 270. take *Sardinia*, 300
Saxons converted to Chriſtianity, 125, 147
Scaligeri, Lords of *Veronna*, 300
Schiſms in the Church, 36, 58, 72, 84, 89, 91, 121, 122, 141, 143, 166, 177, 186, 190, 192, 199, 206, 209, 229, 233, 234, 242, 308, 325, 365.
Sclavi receive the Chriſtian Faith, 187
Scotus the learned Schoolman, 164
S. *Sebaſtian* his body tranſlated, 159
Sedes ſtercoraria, the reaſon of it, 165
Serapion, Sir-nam'd *Scholiaſtes*, 59
Severians Hereticks, 21
Severus the Emperour, his Character, 26
Sforza defeats the *Venetians*, 376 takes *Milan*, 377
Sicardus Duke of *Beneventum*, 157
Sicily deliver'd from the *Moors*, 158
Siconolfus Prince of *Beneventum*, 161
Sigebert of *Gemblours*, 226
Sigiſmund King of *Bohemia* and *Hungary* choſen Emperour, 343 comes to *Rome*, 359
Simeon a Diſciple, crucified, 13
Simon Magus, an account of him, 3, 4
Sophronia a chaſte Virgin, 50
Spaniards forc'd to receive the Faith, 147
Staniſlaus Biſhop of *Cracow* canoniz'd, 268
Stilico a *Roman* General, 70
Stone upon which Chriſt ſate brought to *Venice*, 232
Strabo, Brother to Venerable *Bede*, 126
Sueropylus Prince of *Dalmatia*, 187
Syracuſe, a Church there falling down kills many, 216

T

Tacitus Emperour of *Rome*, 42
Tamberlane vanquiſhes the *Turks*, 338
Tarſus taken by the Chriſtians, 218
Tartars ravage as far as *Europe*, 259. 267. ſome of their Noblemen receive the faith, 280
Tatianus a learned Chriſtian, 21
Taxillo Duke of the *Boiarians*, 141 148
Tertullian the famous Chriſtian Writer, 29
Theodorick King of the *Goths*, 75 invades *Italy*, 79. his Actions. 81. impriſons Pope *John*, 87
Theodolinda, Queen of the *Lombards*, 99
Theodore Biſhop of *Ravenna*, 116
Theodorus a Heretick, 92
Theodoſius Emperour, 66, 68. Another of the ſame name, 73. Another, 130
Theodotion a learned Chriſtian, 23
Theophilus Biſhop of *Antioch*, 20
Thomas Becket Canoniz'd, 245
Thomas Cantilupe, Biſhop of *Hereford* Canoniz'd, 306
Thomas Aquinas Canoniz'd, *ibid.*
Tiberias taken by the Chriſtians, 222
Tiberius Emperour, 1. Another, 97. Another, 124
Titus the Emperour takes *Jeruſalem*, 9. his Character, 10
Toledo beſieged by the *Saracens*, 256
Totilas King of the *Goths*, his Actions, 94
Toto Duke of *Nepi*, 142
Trajan Emperour his Character, 13, 14
Tranſamundus Duke of *Spoleto*, 136
Tranſlation of the Bible by S. *Jerom*, 64
Treaſure how found by a *Saracen*, 202
Trebellius Prince of the *Bulgarians*, 126, 128
Tripoli taken by the *Turks* and raiſed, 291
Tryphon a learned Chriſtian, 1
Turks, their firſt ſucceſſes, 139 take *Edeſſa*, 236. *Baruti* and *Tripoli*, 291. routed by the Chriſtians at *Belgrade*, 386
Farriani, a powerful Family in *Lombardy*, 286, 302

U

Valens a *Roman* Emperour, 94. overthrown by the *Goths*, 65
Valentinian the Emperour, 64 74
Valentinian Hereticks, 18
Valerianus Emperour, 37
Vandals ravage as far as *Africa*, 73
Venetians forbidden to ſell Chriſtian Slaves, 138. the firſt Increaſe of that Commonwealth, 157. they take *Comachio* and burn it, 184. fight ſucceſsfully againſt the *Saracens*, 232. ravage the borders of *Greece*, ibid. defeat the *Piſans*, 253. ſeize ſeveral Iſlands in the *Archipelague*, 256. rout the *Genoeſes*, 271. a mortal hatred between 'em, 281, 326. put to flight by the *Anconeſes*, 282. ſet under an Interdict by the Pope, 201. defeated by *Francis Sforza*, 376
Veramundus Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, 232
Veſpaſian Emperour, 9
S. *Ugibert*, a Nobleman of *Lorain*, 182
Ugutio Fagiolano Governour of *Piſa* and *Lucca*, 304
Viconti a powerful Family in *Lombardy*, 286, 302. make themſelves Maſters of *Milan*, 307
Victorinus an Uſurper in *Gallia*, 38 Another of that name Biſhop of *Poictiers* 43. Another, 65
S. *Vincent* his body tranſlated, 165
Vinigiſius Duke of *Spoleto*, 150

Vitellius Emperour, a ſhort account of his Life, 8
Viterbo made a Biſhop's See, 254
Vitiges a Gothiſh King in *Italy*, 91
Beſieges *Rome*, ibid
Vldericus King of *Bohemia*, 199
Vrſini and *Hannibali*, two factions at *Rome*, 285
Vſun-Caſſan King of *Perſia*, his Meſſage to the Pope, 388

W

Holy *War*, ſeveral Expeditions to it, 217, 251, 254, 255, 258, 262, 267.
Holy *Water*, when firſt ordered, 16
Water to be mix'd with the *Wine* in the Sacrament, *ibid.*
Wenceſlaus King of *Bohemia* murthered by his Brother, 183
Whites and *Blacks*, two Factions in *Italy*, 297. A Hiſtory of the *Whites*, 335
Wickliff, his Opinions condemn'd 346
William Earl of *Angouleſm*, Sirnam'd *Sector-ferri*, 176. Count of *Calabria*, 231. King of *Sicily*, 243
William, Sir-nam'd *Longſword*, 247
Women ordered not to touch the Elements or Veſſels of the Altar, 17. 23. nor the conſecrated Pall or Incenſe, 72

Z.

Zara taken by the *Venetians*, 355

AN

INDEX,

Of the Principal matter contain'd in the Continuation of the Lives of the POPES.

A

Acolti a Conſpirator againſt *Pius* IV. 156
Adrian Schoolmaſter to *Charles* V. choſen Pope, 41
Aldebrandino Cardinal, created Pope and nam'd *Clement* VIII. 211
Alexandra ſuperadded by the Pope to the name of *Chriſtina* Queen of *Sweden*, 327
Alfonſo Cardinal of *Siena* ſtrangled, 33
Alphonſus King of *Naples*, 13. ſurrenders his Crown to his Son, 14
Altieri (Cardinal) choſen Pope, and nam'd *Clement* X. 360
Armada of the *Spaniards* againſt *England* deſtroy'd, 198
Articles of Peace, between the Emperour and Pope, 54, 55. between the *Spaniards* and *French*, 353
Aurange the Prince thereof, General of the Imperial Army, 57

B

Bajazet Emperour of the *Turks*, his Preſent to the Pope, 11
Banditi their inſolence, 172. ſeverely puniſh'd by *Sixtus* V. 179
Barberino (Cardinal *Maffeo*) choſen Pope, and call'd *Urban* VIII. 272 his Family how preferr'd, 276 the animoſities of *Innocent* X. againſt them, 296, to 311.
Barbaroſſa overthrown by *Charles* V. 70. appears upon the coaſt of *Italy*, 81
Battel of *Ravenna*, 26. of *Pavia*, 48 of *Lepanto*, 161
Battory (*Stephen*) K. of *Poland*, 194
Belvedere at *Rome*, by whom built, 11
Beſſarion (Cardinal) an Intimado of *Sixtus* IV. 1. Legat to the King of *France*, 2
Bologna taken by the *French*, 24
Borgheſe (*Camillo*) choſen Pope, and call'd *Paul* V. 227
Borgia (*Caeſar*) the Pope's Baſtard, made a Cardinal, 13, 14. ſpoils the Countrey of the *Orſini*, 15 procures the aſſaſſination of his Brother, *ibid.* his abominable cruelty and rapine, 16, 17. made Duke *Valentino*, 17. his Cup-bearer miſtakes his bottles, 18, impriſon'd, 20. enlarg'd, 21. is cut in pieces, 22
Borri an Enthuſiaſtical Heret. 331
Borromeo (*Charles*) a holy man, a Confident of *Pius* IV. 181. Canoniz'd, 203.
Bourbon, (*Charles* Duke thereof) ſlain before the Walls of *Rome*, 56
Buda taken by the *Turks*, 52
Buoncompagno (*Hugh*) choſen Pope with the name of *Gregory* XIII. 163

C

Camilla, a poor Siſter of *Sixtus* V. how receiv'd by him, 176. a *Paſquil* upon her, 161
Candia much preſs'd by the *Turks*, 349, 355. relief for it attempted in vain, 356

Caraffa (*John*) made Pope by the name of *Paul* IV. 109. the Family hated by the People, 118. and puniſh'd by the Pope, 121.

Cardinals exil'd by *Julius* II. how receiv'd by *Leo* X. 30. ſome under that Character very young, 29, 68, 90, 107, 204. number of Cardinals limited, 205. dignified with the Title of *Eminence*, 278

Caſimir King of *Poland*, 3

Caſtagna (*John Battiſta*) created Pope by the name of *Urban* VII. 205

Caſtro utterly demoliſh'd with an Inſcription, 315

Charles King of *Spain*, 33. Emperour, 39. Crown'd, 61. renounces his Imperial Dignity, 116

Charles VIII. of *France* aſſiſts the Pope, 10. claims the Kingdom of *Naples* and enters *Italy*, 13. gains and loſes *Naples*, 14. dies, *ibid.*

Charles IX. King of *France*, 126

Chigi (*Fabio*) created Pope under the name of *Alexander* VII. 321

Chriſtina Queen of *Sweeden*, 319 abjures the Reformed Religion and comes to *Rome*, 327

Cibo (*John Baptiſta*) made Pope with the name of *Innocent* VIII. 8

Colonneſes and *Urſini*, a fewd between 'em, 9. reconcil'd, 10. both ſuffer much from *Cæſar Borgia*, 16. *Colonneſes* vigorous Imperialiſts, 52

Congo, an Embaſſie from thence to the Pope, 262

Conventus, the word gives offence at the Council of *Trent*, 94

Congregation for propagating the faith inſtituted, 270

Corteſans uſed unkindly by *Pius* V. 158

Council againſt the Pope's mind appointed at *Piſa*, 25. Another call'd at the *Lateran*, *ibid.* that at *Piſa* declar'd a Conventicle, 27. its acts and decrees abjur'd, 31

General Council indicted at *Mantua*, 73. then at *Vicenza*, ibid. after all at *Trent*, 78. begun there, 80. prorogu'd to *Bologna*, 85. tranſferr'd to *Trent*, 90, 93. debates there, 94, to 103. prorogu'd for two years, 104. renew'd, 125. 127. Tranſactions there, from 128, to 156

Cranmer Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury* depriv'd, 111

Duke of *Crequi* the *French* Ambaſſadour affronted at *Rome*, 332 a quarrel thereupon, 333, to 340

Cyprus demanded by the *Turks* of the *Venetians*, 160. invaded and taken by them, 161

D

Dalmatia invaded by the *Turks*, 75

D'aubuſſon Maſter of *Rhodes*, 6

Denmark, the Pope's Nuntio denied admittance there by the King. 126

Diet at *Regenſpurg*, 77. at *Noremberg*, 80. at *Worms*, 82. at *Auſpurg*, 85

Divorce of *Henry* VIII. and Queen *Katharine* debated, 59. Of *Henry* IV. of *France*, and *Margaret* Dutcheſs of *Valois*, 221. Of *Alphonſo* of *Portugal* and his Queen, 351

E

Elizabeth Queen of *England* denies admittance to the Pope's Nuntio, 126. Excommunicated, 159. and depoſed by the Pope, 162. well eſteem'd by *Sixtus* V. 182. yet much hated, 197

Eminence, the Title beſtowed on Cardinals, when, 278

England, the State of Affairs there upon throwing off ſubjection to the Pope, 74. returning to its Obedience, how ordered by the Pope, 111

F

Fachinetti Cardinal, choſen Pope and nam'd *Innocent* IX. 210

Faenza taken by the *Venetians*, 22

Farneſe (*Alexander*) Pope under the name of *Paul* III. 67

Farneſe (Prince *Alexander*) a Commander againſt the *Turks*, 165

Governour of *Flanders*, 197

Ferdinand I. King of *Naples* defeated by the Pope's Forces, 6. makes War again, 9. violates his Faith, 10. his Death, 13. *Ferdinand* II. quits his Kingdom, 14

Ferdinand of *Spain* honour'd with the Title of *Catholick King*, 13

Ferrara the Dukedom devoles to the Church, 215

Fiſher Biſhop of *Rocheſter* made a Cardinal, 68

Florence ſurrendred to the Imperialiſts, 62

Florentines favour the Houſe of *Medici* againſt the Pope, 5. join with the King of *Naples*, 9

Franche Compte ſeiz'd upon by the *French* King, 349

Francis I. King of *France*, 31. taken Priſoner, 48. maintains unchriſtian correſpondences with the *Turks*, 63

Francis II. K. of *France*. 118. dies, 126

Friers Mendicant and Secular Prieſts a Diſpute between 'em determin'd, 4

G

Gaſton de Foix a *French* Commander ſlain, 26

Geneva, the City hated by the Pope, 124

Genoa taken by the *French*, 88. the Magiſtracy there give offence to *Paul* V. 229

Ghiſler (*Anthony*) made Pope by the name of *Pius* V. 157

Gonſalvo a brave Commander, recovers *Naples* from the *French*, 15

Gregorian Account, when begun, 169

Guiſe, the Duke thereof aſſaſſinated, 199. and the Cardinal put to death, *ibid*

Gunpowder-Treaſon in *England*, 261

H.

Hats red, granted to be worn by Cardinals Friers, 209

Henry VIII. King of *England*, 25, 28. writes a Book againſt *Martin Luther*, 37. his Divorce debated, 59. throws off all ſubjection to the See of *Rome*, 64 Excommunicated, 66

Henry II. King of *France* ſlain, 118

Henry III. of *France* aſſaſſinated, 202

Henry King of *Navarre* excommunicated by the Pope, 161. acknowledged King of *France*, 202 profeſſes the Catholick Faith, 214. marries *Mary de Medicis*, 222. murther'd by *Ravillac*. 203.

I

James I. King of Great *Britain*, 223

Janſenius his Opinions, 318. deminations of the Pope upon them, 318, 341

Japanneſe Ambaſſadours to *Gregory* XIII. 171. kindly receiv'd by *Sixtus* V. 176

Jeſuits Colledge at *Rome*, by whom built, 170. their Services to the Chnrch, 171. not openly favour'd by *Sixtus* V. 148

Jew at *Rome*, converted by *Pius* V. 159

Ignatius Loyola canoniz'd, 262, 270

Index expurgatorius by whom publiſh'd, 116

Indulgences reſtrain'd by the Pope, 214, 384

Inquiſition by whom contriv'd, 110

Interim of *Charles* V. what, 87

Interview of the King of *England* and *French* King at *Boloign*, 64 of the Pope and *French* King at *Marſeilles*, 65

Inundation of the *Tiber*, 218, 326

Don John of *Auſtria* General of the Fleet againſt the *Turks*, 161, 165

Italy divided into Factions, 6. embroil'd in War, 9. invaded by the *French* and their Confederates, 23. clear'd of them, 27

Jubilee celebrated by *Sixtus* IV. 3 by *Paul* III. 83. by *Julius* III. 90. by *Gregory* XIII. 166. by *Urban* VIII. 275

K

Key of the H. Sepulchre preſented to the Pope by *Bajazet* Emperour

rour of the *Turks*, 11

Kinred unreaſonably preferred by Pope *Sixtus* IV. 2, 3. and by *Alexander* VI. 12. not much regarded by *Adrian* VI. 45. nor *Paul* III. at firſt, 68. indulged by *Paul* IV. 110, 114. diſregarded by *Pius* V. 159. too much indulged by *Urban* VIII. 293. the preſent Pope *Innocent* XI. not fond of 'em. 382

Knighthood, a new Order inſtituted by *Paul* V. 266

L

Lance which pierced Chriſt's ſide preſented to the Pope by the Grand Signior, 11

Lautrec General of the *French* in *Italy*, 57, ſucceſsful, 56. dies, 59

League of ſeveral Princes and States againſt the K. of *Naples* and D. of *Milan*, 14. Of many *Italian* Lords againſt *Borgia*, 16. *League* of *Cambray* againſt the *Venetians*, 22. Of the Pope and King of *Spain* with the *Venetians*, 25. Of the King of *England* and the *French* King, 57. the Triple League, 350

Lepanto, the Battel there, 161

Letter Apoſtolical publiſhing the *Jubilee*, 218

Lewis XI. of *France*; favours the *Medici* againſt the Pope, 5

Lewis XII. enters *Italy*, and poſſeſſes himſelf of *Milan*, 15. gains and loſes *Naples*, ibid. is excommunicated, 25. dies, 31

Lucca, the Magiſtracy there give offence to *Paul* V. 229

Lucretia the Pope's Baſtard, how beſtow'd by him, 15

Ludoviſio (*Alexander*) choſen Pope, and nam'd *Gregory* XV. 267

Luther his firſt appearance in *Germany*, 36, 37. his Sectators increaſe, 62

M

Mahomet the Great dies, 6

Malateſta (*Robert*) General of the Pope's Forces, 6

Malta, a Controverſie there between the Maſter and the Knights, 169

Mantua, the troubles there, 279, 280

Marignano General for the Emperour, retakes *Siena*, 105

Marriages of ſeveral Princes of the ſame name, 217. of *Lewis* XIV. and *Maria Tereſa* Infanta of *Spain*, 330

Mary Queen of *England*, her acknowledgment of the Papal Power, 106. her Ambaſſadours, how receive'd at *Rome*, ibid. and 111.

Matthias King of *Hungary*, 3

Maurice Duke of *Saxiny*, 104

Medicis, the Family diſoblig'd by *Sixtus* IV. 4. a Plot againſt 'em, 4, 5. one of them murther'd, *ibid.* *John* of that Houſe made Pope with the name of *Leo* X. 29. *Julio* another Pope with the name of *Clement* VII. 46. the Family driven out of *Florence*, 57. *Alexander* made firſt Hereditary Duke of *Florence*, 62. *John Angelo de Medicus* Pope by the name of *Pius* IV. 119. *Coſmo de Medicis* made great Duke of *Tuſcany*, 159. *Alexander* choſen Pope, and call'd *Leo* XI. 205

Meſſina ſeiz'd by the *French*, 374

Milan, its various Fortune, 15, 27, 30, 31, 39, 49, 52, 71

Modena taken by the Pope's Forces, 24

Monaſteries ſuppreſs'd by the Pope's permiſſion, 328, 348

Montalto (Cardinal) choſen Pope with the name of *Sixtus* V. 172

Monti (Cardinal) choſen Pope by the name of *Julius* III. 90

Munſter, the Treaty of Peace there, 307

N

Naples beſieged by the *French*, 59

Nepotiſm declar'd againſt by *Alexander* VII. 325. but practis'd, *ib.*

Nerius (*Philip*) canoniz'd, 263, 270

Nitardo Inquiſitor General of *Spain* made a Cardinal, 368

Novaro, its ſtout reſiſtance of the *French*, 30

Nuntio's from the Popes denied admittance by ſeveral Princes, 126. 180.

O

Obeliſc raiſed by *Sixtus* V. 186.
Odeſcalchi (Cardinal) choſen Pope, and call'd *Innocent* XI. 380.
Donna Olympia, her Character, 298. and managements, 299, 300, 301, 310, 311, 312, 313, 319. confined to *Orvieto*, 324. dies of the Plague, *ibid.*
Orſini, See *Urſini*.
Oſnaburg, a Peace concluded there, 308.
Otranto ſeiz'd by the *Turks*, 6.

P

Palace of the *Farneſe*, 68.
Palatine of the *Rhine* deſpoil'd of his Dominions, 269.
Pamfilio (Cardinal) made Pope, and call'd *Innocent* X. 594.
Paris made an Arch-Biſhoprick, 270.
Parma, *Edward* Duke thereof, his Conteſt with *Urban* VIII. 284, to 292.
Paſquil upon *Sixtus* V. 191.
Pavia, the Cardinal thereof aſſaſſinated, 24. the City beſieged by *French* King, 48. taken by *Lautrec*, 56.
Perſia, an Embaſſi from thence to the Pope, 262.
Peſcara the Marqueſs a noble Commander, 48.
Peter-Pence, the paying of 'em a great Duty, 111.
Philip de Comines ſent with ſuccours to the *Florentines*, 5.
Piccolomini (*Francis*) choſen Pope, with the name of *Pius* III. 20.
Pinarolo Tutor to *Sixtus* IV. 1.
Pius V. Canoniz'd, 368.
Plague in *Italy*, 168, 324, 326.
Plot of *Sixtus* IV. againſt the lives of the *Medici*, 4, 5. Of ſome Villains againſt *Pius* IV. 156.
Poland, great Conteſts there about chuſing a King, 167, 195, 369.
Pool (*Reginald*) made a Cardinal, 68. ſent Legat to the Council at *Trent*, 80. almoſt choſen Pope, 89. recall'd from his Office of Legat in *England*, 116.
Portugal, great troubles there, 168.
Prieſts Secular and Mendicant Friers, a long Diſpute between 'em determin'd by the Pope, 4.
Progreſs of *Clement* VIII. from *Rome* to *Ferrara*. 216.
Proteſt of the King of *France* to the Pope, 94.
Proteſtants routed by the Imperialiſts, 84.

Q

Queens of *Cyprus* and *Boſna* entertain'd by the Pope, 7.

R

Ravenna taken by the *French*, 26.
Ravillac murthers *Henry* IV. of *France*, 263.
Reformation deſign'd by *Adrian* VI. 44. by *Marcellus* II. 108. by *Marcellus* II. 108. by *Paul* IV. 117. by *Pius* V. 158.
Relations, See *Kinred*.
Rhodes taken by the *Turks*, 42.
Rome taken and ſack'd by the Imperial Army, 56. and ſpoil'd by the *Urſis*, 59.
Roſpiglioſi (Cardinal) created Pope with the name of *Clement* IX. 346.
Rovere (*Francis*) created Pope, with the name of *Sixtus* IV. 1.
Rovere (*Julian*) made Cardinal, 2. and Pope, with the name of *Julius* II. 20.

S

Salvian, Arch-Biſhop of *Piſa* in a Plot with the Pope againſt the lives of the *Medici*, 5. hang'd, *ib.*
Saraceno, Prebendary of *Vicenza* occaſion of the quarrel of *Paul* V. with the *Venetians*, 230.
Saxony, the Duke excommunicated, 38.
Sebaſtian K. of *Portugal* ſlain, 168.
Sfondrati (*Nicolas*) created Pope, and call'd *Gregory* XIV. 207.

Sforza D. of *Milan*, taken and ſent into *France*, 31. His Heir reſtor'd to his Dukedom, 52. dies, 71.

Shoomaker of *Materata*, a Story of him, 183.

Siena revolts from the Emperour, 104. recover'd, 105.

Simony practiſed and puniſhed by the Pope, 12. Debate about its qualifications, 117.

Sobietzki (*John*) choſen King of *Poland*, 369.

Soliman the Magnificent, 42,52,61.

Spalato (A. *de Dominis*) the ArchBiſhop thereof, 270.

Spain, the Kings thereof when firſt honour'd with the Title of *Catholick*, 13.

Statue of *Paul* IV. ignominiouſly uſed by the People, 119.

Strozzi General for the *French* in *Tuſcany* defeated, 105.

Stuart (*John*) D. of *Albany*, of the *Scotch* Blood-Royal, General of the *French* in *Naples*, 48.

Swiſs-Cantons, their Embaſſie to the Pope, 187.

Switzers, their actions in the Pope's Cauſe, 27, 30, 31.

T

Teſera the Virgin, Canoniz'd, 203, 270.

Theatines, the Order when firſt inſtituted, 110.

Title of *Catholick* given to the King of *Spain*, 13. of *Defender of the Faith* to the King of *England*, 37.

Treaty at *Munſter*, 307. at *Oſnaburg*, 308. of the *Pyreneans*, 329. at *Aix la Chapelle*, 352.

Trent, a General Council appointed there, 78. begun, 80.

Trivulſe General of the *French* takes *Bologna*, 24.

Tunis taken by *Charles* V. 71.

Turks ſeize *Otranto*, 6. alarm *Chriſtendom*, 35. take *Rhodes*, 42. and *Buda*, 52. beſiege *Vienna*, 61. invade *Dalmatia*, 75. 160. demand *Cyprus* of the *Venetians*, 160. take it, 161. receive a great overthrow at *Lepanto*, 161. ſucceſsful in *Hungary*, 214. invading *Poland*, are deſeated, 270.

U

Vanoccia Harlot to *Alexander* IV. 16.

Vatican Library much improv'd by *Sixtus* IV. 7. much more by *Sixtus* V. 186. by *Paul* V. 265. by the addition of the *Palatine* Library, 269. by *Alexander* VII. 344.

Venetians bandy againſt the Pope, 5. are excommunicated by him, 7. abſolv'd, 9. a formidable League againſt them, 22. ſtripp'd of all their Acquiſitions in *Italy*, 23. regain ſome Towns, 27. their Victory at *Lepanto*, 162. make Peace with the *Turks*, 166. kind to the Nuntio of *Sixtus* V. 190. they are are quarrel'd with by *Paul* V. 230, to 261. diſoblig'd by *Urban* VIII. 283.

Vienna beſieg'd by the *Turks*, 61.

Vitelli Count of *Tiferno* againſt the Pope, 4.

Uladiſlaus King of *Bohemia* excommunicated, *ibid.*

Urbin the Dutchy ſeiz'd into the Pope's hands, 32, 35. reſtor'd, 42. devolves to the Church, 281.

Urſini and *Colonneſes*, a Diſcord between the two Families, 9. are reconcil'd, 10. both ſpoil'd by *Caſar Borgia*, 16. *Urſini* cauſes a great tumult at *Rome*, 170.

W

Wedneſdays auſpicious to *Sixtus* V. 157.

X

Xaverius (*Francis*) a *Jeſuit*, Canoniz'd, 270.

Z

Zizime, Brother to the *Grand Signior* brought to *Rome*, 11. dies, 14.

Zuinglius oppoſes the Pope, 37.

FINIS.